

As near conversation as possible

the collected letters
of William Colenso

Volume 1

The missionary years 1834–1852

The trader and public service years 1853–1878

collected by Ian St George



I think *we* agree in this, that letter-writing
should be as *near* conversation as possible.

(William Colenso to Robert Coupland Harding
4 January 1894)

Contents

Introduction

Fossils of feeling 7

William Colenso: some personal reminiscences (RC Harding) 8

Literarum personæ 11

Colenso's Bush accommodation 17

Acknowledgements and conventions 21

The letters (in chronological order)

Volume 1

The missionary years 1834–1852 23

The trader and public service years 1853–1878 148

Volume 2

The sage years 1878-1899 325

Introduction

The Rev. William Colenso was a diligent correspondent in his later life, of which his last fifty years are well represented among surviving private and public letters.¹ He wrote to his friend JD Hooker in 1897,²

I have been and am very busy, mostly in the writing way—letters, public & private; as I keep a tally of my scrawls—much like Crusoe his days on the desolate island—I find, I have written from Augt. 1, to Decr. 31st,—427 letters, some very long.

and to Lady Hyacinth Hooker in 1898,³

I am still very busy, daily at it, mostly writing letters...

He reckoned that in 1894 he wrote 859 letters; in 1895, 837;⁴ in 1896, 899;⁵ and in 1898, 1081.⁶ Even on the eve of his death, as his friend Coupland Harding told JD Hooker, “The day before his departure he had been busy with many affairs—dictating answers to some of the letters that were accumulating, &c., and had methodically arranged his plans for the morrow.”⁷

His private letters to Allan Cunningham, WJ Hooker and JD Hooker have been published in *Colenso's collections* (2009. NZ Native Orchid Group, Wellington) and many of his public letters in English in *Give your thoughts life: William Colenso's letters to the editor* (2011. Otago University Press).

In his surviving letters Colenso mentioned what must have been a quite extended correspondence with several other scientists in New Zealand and “various parts of the world”. So far only his letters to Kew have been found, but there may well be caches in Australia, “U.S.A., Russia, Germany, France, Spain and Italy, besides England”. As a single illustration, he and Lorenzo Gordin Yates wrote often to each other. Yates, associated with the Santa Barbara Natural History Society, was a collector of natural history objects. He became an Honorary Member of the Hawke's Bay Philosophical Institute, and Colenso an Honorary Member of the Santa Barbara Society. In the early 20th century the Society broke up, and its assets, including Yates's papers, were sold to a number of public and private collectors. My enquiries in the US have so far not discovered the letters from Colenso.

Colenso's letters refer repeatedly to his concern with meeting mail deadlines—in the early days taking the opportunity of any whaler or supply ship calling at Ahuriri, but later completing his letters Home in time to catch the monthly, then fortnightly postal ships offloading at Panama, Suez, San Francisco or Brindisi for onward carriage to England.

Most of the many letters written to Colenso have been lost. He wrote to Harding, “I have been doing some *strange* work of late! going through *old* letters & Mss., have already

burnt *several hundreds* of letters—from 1835 downwards, saving their envelopes & stamps,—& *occupied in like manner today*—& have a full week's work of same sort before me.”⁸

Again, to Harding, “did I tell you, I destroyed over 1000 letters in the winter of '96,—& of (say) *half* of their envelopes—before I thought of preserving any! and now I have *many more* to destroy—some very old, no doubt.”⁹

He had earlier revealed his concerns about the fate of his papers in a “private and confidential” letter to Harding, “Several years ago, in an *old Will* (since cancelled) I left *all that* to Dr. Hector: then again, in a subsequent one,—to have *all papers* put up securely for (say) 50 years after decease, and placed in custody of Colonial Museum: and, again, that was subsequently abandoned—save, as a matter of course & of law, my eldest son would inherit, leaving them to take their chance—to the flames! I have become *careless* in those matters, seeing I have not been treated well (*in reality*) by both Church & State—in so saying, including *all Powers*! And my *Home friends*, most being of nearly same age as myself—cannot, *must not*, be troubled *re* these matters.”¹⁰

Again, to Harding, “Had you my dear Mr. Harding remained at Napier it was my intention to have endeavoured to obtain your assistance, and to make you by will Literary trustee with full powers, &c, &c, but your removal to Wellington prevents all that: at same time, nothing has yet been done by me, to conserve anything; neither can I bring myself to act, for I do not know a single person (beside your self) in whom I could fully confide.”¹¹

In the end he did nothing, and on his death his papers simply became part of his general estate. It is difficult now to ascertain exactly what happened to them.

His elder son Latimer was the beneficiary. He must have arrived in Napier mid 1899, when he “made haste to dispose of his windfall.”¹² Latty had been brought up by his mother, with, no doubt, all the bitterness involved. Colenso wrote, “My oldest son ... is *not* a true and hearty friend of mine: our correspondence has never been open and full, but necessarily reserved & distant (especially on his part), a great & heavy grief to me!”

Bagnall and Petersen suggest that Latimer either burned the bulk of his father's papers (“to the flames” his father had unhappily predicted) or consigned them to a disused well. They continue, “Henry Hill, it is reported, obtained possession of a mountain of material for the auction price of 5/-.... Some years later a similar nest of papers was found in the servants' cottage. Again, many were destroyed....”¹³

On 6 August 1902 The Hon. Mr Bowen moved in the House, “That the Government be requested to take steps to inquire into the position of the literary remains of the late William Colenso....” but by then it was too late.

Wellington's *New Zealand Times* carried a response from Henry Hill, “Special to the Times”....

1 A truism: people keep letters written by famous people and most people achieve fame in the latter half of their lives. On the other hand many of the letters written by Colenso survive only as drafts kept by their author.

2 Colenso to JD Hooker 13 August 1897: see *Colenso's collections*.

3 Colenso to Lady Hyacinth Hooker 19 February 1898: see *Colenso's collections*.

4 Colenso to Harding 1 January 1896.

5 Colenso to his nephew William Colenso 30 January 1897.

6 *Evening Post* 13 February 1899.

7 Harding to Hooker 17 April 1899: see *Colenso's collections*.

8 Colenso to Harding 26 November 1896.

9 Colenso to Harding 12 May 1898.

10 Colenso to Harding 4 March 1892.

11 Colenso to Harding 11 October 1892.

12 *Daily Telegraph* 18 January 1900. I can find no record of the date of Latimer's arrival in Napier, but Colenso's land was being surveyed in June 1899 before being sold, presumably on Latimer's orders.

13 Bagnall & Petersen p.448.

Mr H. Hill, Inspector of Schools for Hawke's Bay, who was an intimate friend of the late Mr William Colenso, F.R.S., has something interesting to say of the literary remains of the deceased, regarding which the Hon. C.C. Bowen recently asked a question in the Legislative Council, with a view to the publication of his Maori Lexicon and the preservation of the fruits of Mr Colenso's lifelong botanical studies in New Zealand.

Mr Bowen's statement that valuable manuscripts of the late scholar had been sold to buttermen is not far from the truth. Mr Hill bought a number of boxes of old books and publications that were issued from the church missionary press when established at Paihia, in the Bay of Islands, but these included no manuscripts of any sort. "A few days after the sale," says Mr Hill, "I heard that a woman in the town had purchased several manuscripts, with a number of other books, and these I subsequently obtained, among them being the original day and waste book of the printing press, containing the records of the first books printed in New Zealand; but I have not been able to trace any of Mr Colenso's diaries, which I know were continuous from the time of his arrival in the colony up to the time he met with an accident at Woodville, three years or so before his death."

With regard to Mr Colenso's botanical studies, Mr Hill says deceased's plants were left to the Hawke's Bay branch of the New Zealand Institute, and these Mr Hill was deputed to receive from the executors of the will. Subsequently they were sent to Mr Cheeseman, curator of the Auckland Museum, who is engaged by the New Zealand Government on the preparation of a new edition of the "New Zealand Flora". The specimens were sent to Mr Cheeseman by Mr Hill, on the approval of the society, and all expenses in connection with their transit were met by the Government. They are to be returned to the Philosophical Institute in Napier, and if it is the opinion of Sir J.D. Hooker that the plants should be sent to Kew, Mr Hill will bring the matter before the Hawke's Bay Institute. No one has touched the plants except Mr Cheeseman, who has arranged them for easy reference.

Commenting upon the subject, the "Hawke's Bay Herald" expresses regret that the interest in the Colenso papers did not show itself at an earlier date, when it would have been possible perhaps to take steps to preserve intact for the benefit of the colony such of the papers of the late Mr Colenso as were of public value.

"Although the Government declare that they have the Lexicon manuscript," says the "Herald," "we have heard of at least two gentlemen in the colony who have what appear to be portions of the collections made by Mr Colenso for the dictionary. This should be inquired into. Still more surprising is the loss of Mr Colenso's early diaries. We had occasion at different times to ask Mr Colenso for certain information which necessitated reference to those records. The accounts of the early trips through the forest which then occupied the southern part of this province and of the Maori settlements he visited were of the greatest interest and value. They have often been quoted in the Native Land Court to settle disputed questions of title, yet they were all sold for waste paper. It is fair to say that we believe the executors were not to blame for this. But it is unaccountable that some opportunity was not given to the Government to acquire these records of early settlement. We understand that they are still in existence in the colony. Perhaps it is not too late to secure them. They are of no possible value to

anyone but the Government, and they should certainly form part of the public collection of books and papers affecting the early history of the colony."¹⁴

Adelaide Professor of English Edward Ellis Morris was in New Zealand in January 1900 looking at historical sites visited by Captain Cook, including Napier. He wrote, "On my leaving Napier an incident occurred which wears a comic aspect. Napier was the home of the late Mr. Colenso, the well-known Maori scholar. Having seen sundry remarks of his about traces of Cook quoted in books, I made inquiry what had become of his papers, and found that the bulk of them had come into the hands of a friend and admirer.¹⁵ A visit to this gentleman won speedily from him a promise that he would look through the papers and send me any printed documents that might be of service. Most kindly he began the search at once. I went on board the steamer at 8 in the evening. There were cricketers returning northward, there was a crowd, there was cheering. After the vessel had cast off, the gentleman, it seems, came breathless on the scene with a parcel of documents, and consulted the good-natured Irish policeman on the wharf, who promptly volunteered to fling the parcel on board. He flung, and it fell into the sea. "Oh! Mr. Constable," one is tempted to exclaim, "you little know the mischief you have done"; nor, indeed, do I, for I know not what was in the parcel that wasted its lore upon the waters of "Hawkes Bay."¹⁶

How achingly sad. Today these papers would be regarded as an historical treasure. A single example will illustrate: Colenso wrote, "In a *registered* packet, with this, I send 16 letters from Woon¹⁷ & other (& *the Chief*) old Wesleyan Mission Missionaries—I have *plenty more*, similar, but these may well suffice. Those letters will speak for themselves, *you* will note the great difference in *both writing & style, &c.* of the letters of Woon & J. Hobbs.—When you have quite done with them, return to me in *regd. packet*."¹⁸

Fossils of feeling

What can we learn from collections of private letters? will we discover new facts to flesh out our knowledge of the life we are studying? Are private letters somehow a window on the psyche with an analytic glass to guide us to a clearer view of the character and personality of the writer?

Or do we just enjoy eavesdropping on the private communications between two others? That certainly, but perhaps more than that: Janet Malcolm wrote,

"Letters are the great fixative of experience. Time erodes feeling. Time creates indifference. Letters prove to us that we once cared. They are the fossils of feeling. This is why biographers prize them so: they are biography's only conduit to unmediated experience.

¹⁴ *New Zealand Times* 28 August 1902

¹⁵ Presumably Henry Hill.

¹⁶ Morris EE 1900. On the tracks of Captain Cook. *Trans N.Z. I.* 33: 505.

¹⁷ Rev William Woon was the Wesleyans' printer at their Mangungu Mission station.

¹⁸ Colenso to Harding 13 January 1891.

Everything else the biographer touches is stale, hashed over, told and retold, dubious, unauthentic, suspect. Only when he reads a subject's letters does the biographer feel he has come fully into his presence, and only when he quotes from the letters does he share with his readers his sense of life retrieved. And he shares something else: the feeling of transgression that comes from reading letters not meant for one's eyes. He allows the reader to be a voyeur with him, to eavesdrop with him, to rifle desk drawers, to take what doesn't belong to him. The feeling is not entirely pleasurable."¹⁹

If we expect too much we may be saddened by "the bathetic realisation that Great Writers are not really all that Great most of the time", as *The Guardian's* Kathryn Hughes was: we may be disabused of "our pervasive cultural myth that letters are somehow a 'deep' form of communication, bulletins from the most profound reaches of the soul".²⁰ And we may agree with Vincent Kaufmann when he tells us "there is nothing more tedious in a writer's work than his correspondence".²¹

I disagree. Private letters from a century when there were no telephones or other electronic ways of conversing from a distance, are not tedious: not, perhaps, as tedious as today's emails might prove. "I have *hazarded* all I have scribbled—but I have done so, as if I were confidentially talking with you," Colenso wrote to McLean. He was taking a *risk* saying what he did in that letter.²²

To Harding he wrote, "I think *we* agree in this, that letter-wtg. should be as *near* conversation as possible";²³ and to Luff

I often wish that we were nearer each other, for I still miss your kind calls and our free and easy conversation. I have no one now to call and talk, & when I go to town I cannot join in the talk of the day—races, cricket, football, sheep, wool, rabbits,—and the getting of money anyhow, but quietly & usuriously without working! I thank God that I have plenty to do, and a hearty good mind to do it (indeed it is daily night-too-soon for me!)—still I should like to have a friend with whom I could converse freely—now & then.²⁴

Letters, then, took the place of those "free and easy" conversations: "I have a suspicion that there were several (?) enquiries, *or* remarks, in my last, unnoticed by you! *With me*—writing should be *in lieu of conversation* & conseqly. replied to," he admonished Harding.²⁵

But to Luff, "I *can not*, do what I will, fancy you in England with your environments. Would we could converse by electricity, or telegraph (spiritual, or mental); a *future* generation may do this."²⁶ Ah, indeed.

Further, private letters, along with old newspapers and diaries, provide the deepest immersion into the writer's times. If you want to know about nineteenth century Hawke's Bay (and who wouldn't?) Colenso's letters will

show you his place and time more vividly than any secondhand history. The apparently insignificant experiences he relates combine to recreate a complex reality that we can no longer experience directly, yet which provides material for an understanding of issues, public opinion and the symbolic world of that Victorian time and place.

"In literature, all letters are in some sense purloined letters," wrote Vincent Kaufman, and yet some private letters seem self-consciously addressed to a future generation—not always as obviously as Mark Twain's 1880 letter to Joseph Twichell (giving news of his baby), when he broke off in midsentence and addressed a reader of 1960:

"...somebody may be reading this letter 80 years hence. And so, my friend (you pitying snob, I mean, who are holding this yellow paper in your hand in 1960,) save yourself the trouble of looking further; I know how pathetically trivial our small concerns will seem to you, and I will not let your eye profane them. No, I keep my news; you keep your compassion. Suffice it you to know, scoffer and ribald, that the little child is old and blind, now, and once more toothless; and the rest of us are shadows, these many, many years. Yes, and your time cometh!"

For the most part Colenso's letters are unselfconscious, ordinary communications, replies to enquirers or the senders of specimens, purposeful and businesslike. But there are also several groups of protracted correspondence over some years: those to McLean moving from friendly, generous, to guarded, to suspicious, to formal. Those to David Balfour, John Drummond and Andrew Luff relaxing into easy gossip and a considerable degree of personal revelation—as he wrote to Luff on 13 August 1881, "I trust you will see that I have again written to you in my old free open & friendly style—just as you were here in this room with me, and we were conversing together *as of old*."

None, however, of those letters that have survived, are more revealing—of self as well of others—than those to Robert Coupland Harding over 24 years from 1875 to 1898. They were both printers: they shared a love of print, of books and newspapers, and Colenso's letters are full of items of such mutual interest. He continually updates his young friend, exiled from Napier to Wellington, with the local news and Napier doings. But the letters are full of much more than that. Harding acted not only as a kind of sounding board, but also as a proxy son for the lonely old man on Napier hill—a son who shared his profession and his interests.

Colenso, ever jealous of his ethnological and historical knowledge, critical of those who either failed to acknowledge his early contributions to their work, or who (at least in his view) made errors, became acerbic in his late years to the point (at least in Dr Hocken's opinion) of nastiness. His conviction that others were plagiarizing his work began to verge on paranoia. He complained to Harding of failing memory, kept lists to remind himself of tasks to be done, repeated himself in his letters—in fact, began to exhibit the signs of mild dementia. Colenso to Harding 8 June 1898, "You say, in your last, that my last to you was 'the brightest you ever had from me' !!! and I have not the slightest recollection of it..."

The letters to Harding were an outlet for Colenso to express his grief, loss, worry, suspicion, grievance, jealousy,

19 Malcolm J 1994. *The Silent Women: Sylvia Plath and Ted Hughes*. Knopf, New York.

20 Kathryn Hughes. JD Salinger's letters show that great writers are not great all the time. *Guardian Weekly* 4 February 2011.

21 Vincent Kaufmann 1994. *Post Scripts: The Writer's Workshop*. Translated by Deborah Treisman. Harvard.

22 Colenso to McLean 31 July 1868.

23 Colenso to Harding 4 January 1894.

24 Colenso to Luff 14 October 1883.

25 Colenso to Harding 4 October 1896.

26 Colenso to Luff 23 August 1876.

remorse—and his joy, childish delight, self-satisfaction, pride, sentimental reflection, gratitude and love.

This correspondence must rate as one of the most important collections of letters to have survived from New Zealand's past.²⁷ It is a New Zealand *taonga* in the Mitchell Library, Sydney.

Coup Harding would depict Colenso on his own bookplate—and he would write, from personal reminiscences, the most detailed and perceptive of Colenso's obituaries.—

William Colenso: some personal reminiscences

(By Mr. R. Coupland Harding, Wellington)²⁸

Nearly eight and thirty years ago—it was in the month of March or April, 1861—the writer, a boy of eleven years of age, and a recent arrival in Napier, was in company with his father in a house in which the furniture and effects, including the library, were being sold by auction. Always a book-lover, he with another lad of about his own age, looked longingly at some of the volumes. Many were quite new, for the local bookseller had availed himself of the opportunity to work off a quantity of stock. Popular editions of “Cook's Voyage” and “Bruce's Travels” were put up, but they went beyond his limit. Interesting as the books were, they did not prevent his noticing a gentleman of striking appearance, to whom also the books seemed to be the attraction of the sale. Of medium height, with handsome features, keen and penetrating eyes and broad intellectual brow, he would in any company have attracted notice even if it had not been for his dark and abundant hair, which at that time flowed in heavy curls upon his shoulders, completely framing his countenance and giving him a singularly venerable appearance. As the sale progressed, quite a little pile of books fell to his share; and just as the final lots were passing under the hammer, he bought a parcel of what are known in the trade as “juveniles”. One of these he handed to each of the surprised lads. “I have seen enough to know that you are fond of books” he said; “here is one for each of you. You,” to the writer, “were disappointed, I know. I hope this will please you.” It was a classic in its way—St. Pierre's “Paul and Virginia” and “Indian Cottage”, with over a hundred wood-cuts by French artists. It has long since gone the way of all picture books in a large family. A few months later the two lads met again—apprentice and “devil” respectively in a printing office, and compared notes, when the writer learned that the unknown gentleman was “Mr. Colenso. I thought everybody knew him.”

Slight as was the incident, it illustrated features of character, which became more and more evident in the course of years—the abiding love of books; the keen observation; the insight into character; and more than all, the kindly and practical sympathy with the young in all their higher aspirations, to which many a schoolboy or

schoolgirl student of nature in all parts of the country could testify. To all such his time, his paternal advice, and sometimes his books, were freely given.²⁹

Boy as he was, the writer had known the name of the stranger, and heard much of him. The three year old province of Hawke's Bay was then in the struggles of infancy. Newspapers then—I do not think there were thirty in New Zealand all told—were live organs in every sense. On a remote coastal sheep-station, visited every two weeks by the mail-man, the “Herald” was read and re-read from title to imprint, and in the literary and political battles of the day,

“Always with a fearless heart,
Taking, giving, blow for blow,”

William Colenso was in the van. Quaint, eccentric, odd, sometimes to the last degree, were his “Tracts for the Times”, but always with the sub-stratum of solid argument and practical suggestion; tremendous were his battles with opponents such as George Worgan the aged, and Charles Pharazyn the youthful—both of whom preceded him (the latter very recently) to the Unseen Land. Readers of his voluminous newspaper correspondence could not fail to form some idea of his extensive stores of information, his methodical style, his British pugnacity, and indomitable energy. They would note certain curious mental “kinks” and personal prejudices ostentatiously displayed, but only personal acquaintance could reveal the beauty and spirituality of the hidden life—the unfathomable kindness of his nature.

Of all places, perhaps the printing office was the best to make such an acquaintance. No reference was ever made to the first meeting for nearly thirty years, when the writer found that it had not been forgotten. A constant contributor to the Press, Mr. Colenso knew every person in both printing offices. When the late Mr. James Wood, an admirable journalist, but with no practical knowledge of the trade, started the “Herald” in 1857 with no assistance save two half-trained lads from Auckland (both of whom are in New Zealand still), the press work of the paper was sometimes open to criticism. The tradition still lingers, and it is perfectly true, that Mr. Colenso paid the office a visit, and removing his coat and turning up his sleeves, instructed the boys in the art of washing the inking-rollers.

Thirty-eight years ago Mr. Colenso had not entered actively into politics, save as a disputant or advocate in the Press. Often I have regretted that his unbounded energy led him into so uncongenial a field, withdrawing him from pursuits for which he was better fitted, and in which his work, being such as none other could do, was of immeasurably greater value to his fellows. At the time of the incident narrated in the opening paragraph, he had just unsuccessfully contested the Napier seat in the first General Assembly. The auction sale was in the house of his successful opponent, who, to the disgust of his constituency, and his supporters in particular, after travelling to Auckland at the public expense as M.H.R. resigned immediately on arrival, never even taking his seat, and sent instructions to his agent to realize his property. Small as this incident was, it had large results, including a change of Ministry. Mr. Colenso at once offered himself for the vacant seat, and was championed by the newly-started paper “The Times”. He was opposed by the late H.B. Sealy, of the Provincial Lands Department and in later years Resident Magistrate, but this time was elected by

²⁷ Among the Harding papers there are several jottings and short messages, undated and written on scraps of paper. They have not been included here.

²⁸ *The Press* 27 February 1899.

²⁹ The old man on Harding's bookplate is said to be Colenso, but it could be any old bibliophile.

a substantial majority. Meantime, Parliament had met and Napier was unrepresented. Steamers did not run to Auckland every week. Telegraphs as yet were not dreamed of. Those were troublous times when Browne (also passed away) was Governor. Hostilities were still smouldering at Taranaki, and bands of disaffected natives were stirring up strife on the West Coast to the very gates of Wellington, while in Central Auckland the powerful "King Movement" was being steadily organized. Worst of all, there was no unity of counsel or purpose in the Colony. House and country alike were almost evenly divided on the ever-lasting Native Question. All unknown to the Napier folk, a direct motion of want of confidence in the Stafford Ministry had been tabled by the late Sir William Fox. What they did know was this—that questions of far-reaching import were under discussion, and that, thanks to the prank of Mr. H.P. Stark, they were without a vote in the matter. By the first opportunity the new member left, and after a leisurely passage his steamer entered the Waitemata, and was signalled at Port Albert. A longwinded orator was eloquently denouncing the Stafford Ministry and all its work when a slip of paper was passed to him, and, to the surprise of the House, he at once collapsed. So did the debate, and the vote was taken. That slip contained the significant words, "Cut it short—Colenso's coming!" Directly afterward, the member for Napier arrived and took the oath and his seat—but all too late. The Stafford ministry had just been defeated by a majority of one! But for Stark's resignation, the whole course of New Zealand history might have been changed. Hawke's Bay was Staffordite almost to a man. Stafford had drafted and carried the New Provinces Act, which had given Hawke's Bay its constitution; "the three F's"—Fox, Featherston, Fitzherbert—had been its uncompromising opponents. The change of administration was one of the most revolutionary and far-reaching in its effects that New Zealand has known. For with the Fox Ministry came in the "new institutions" which were to settle for ever the native difficulty; and the failure of which, well-intentioned as they were, was demonstrated by ten successive years of strife and bloodshed.

Mr. Colenso was a notable figure in all the Parliaments he attended, and I still remember the criticisms of an Auckland scribe who had been strongly impressed by his grave and imposing figure, and specially by his flowing locks. A year or two afterwards he cut them off, and the portrait taken in 1855 might easily be taken to represent him as he appeared ten years later. No more conscientious or industrious member ever sat in Parliament; but as a politician he was not a success. He grew less popular and less in touch with his constituents as years went on, and seemed to be the only person who did not realise the fact. Conscious of duty faithfully performed, he came forward as of old—on the last occasion receiving a paltry number of votes, and being out-numbered by candidates of such inferior calibre, that he withdrew finally from the political stage.

In the Provincial Council, on the contrary, where he represented the town for many years, he was always one of the most useful members, and his services were appreciated, as he was, I believe, always elected until he purposely disqualified himself in order to give undivided attention to his lexicon. His intimate knowledge of the district and people, his good sense and unquestioned integrity, here met with a suitable field. For some years he was Provincial treasurer, and as he rode daily to his office on a tall and ancient white horse, his figure was a familiar one to young and old. In later years, as Inspector of

Schools, he visited the length and breadth of the Province, and endeared himself to the children throughout its bounds, giving to many of them their first impulse to the study of natural history, in which, as he always insisted, they would find delight yielded by no other pursuit.

I must not be understood to disparage his work in the Assembly, much of which was of a solid and substantial kind, such as more popular men could have done. He had a keen eye for flaws in a Bill or in an argument. He was a very advanced Liberal as the times went; but would not be recognised by the Party who claim the title to-day. One of his most notable speeches was on the Masters and Servants Bill of an old Canterbury veteran, who had seen service in India, and whose ideas had been largely shaped thereby. Possibly the Labour leaders of to-day never heard of that Bill. Their fury if they could read it would be worth contemplating. It received unmeasured condemnation from Mr. Colenso, sustained a signal defeat, and was never again heard of.

On the painful subject of the Maori Lexicon I will not dwell. Its history could not be even briefly told in a column of the paper. In 1861 (his first session) he moved a resolution to the effect that the time had come for the state to make an organised attempt to rescue the dying language of New Zealand from oblivion; and the resolution was carried. At that time he was not in a position to undertake the work, and it was his intention to hand over all his thirty years' collection of words, proverbs, songs, &c., gratis, as a nucleus. Numerous old chiefs and tohungas, possessing vast stores of legendary lore—some of them men who had seen Captain Cook—were then living, and could have assisted. In 1865 the Government, urged by Mr. Mantell, took up the subject, and in 1866 Mr. Colenso, then to some extent at liberty, was urged, as the one man in New Zealand best qualified for the task, to take it up. Seven years was fixed for the completion of the work, the remuneration to be £300 a year. A change of Government took place, and the petty jealousies which are the curse of party politics, came into play. First, the free postal facilities were withdrawn. A circular requesting the co-operation of officers in native districts was so framed as to imply very clearly that the Government were quite indifferent on the subject. Then, before half the appointed time had passed, the author was notified that it was time that a large portion of the work should be in the press! Replying that this was impossible as he had not so much as begun his fair copy for the printer, he was notified that payments were stopped, pending investigation. The manuscript was examined by qualified persons, who reported that a vast amount of work had been done; that thousands of pages had been written, from the first letter to the last, involving, as such work does, much cross-reference; that seven years was altogether too short for a work of such magnitude, and that the author had more than performed his part during the time he had been engaged.

All this was withheld from Parliament, and the House and country were officially informed that the author had undertaken the work three and a half years ago, had regularly drawn his money, amounting to over a thousand pounds, and had not a single page ready for the printer. Supplies were stopped, and all remonstrances and suggestions from the author were unheeded. He had retired from his salaried public offices, cut down his correspondence, dropped all his favourite scientific pursuits, and now found the work thrown back on his hands. The breach of faith was monstrous, and a litigious

man would certainly have recovered heavy damages. Then a sample portion, in completed form, was demanded, to be laid before the House. The A portion was so prepared. The Government printed the title, preface, preliminary notes, &c. with a wealth of blank pages, followed by a few lines of actual text, apparently to throw contempt on the work, and then “lost” the copy, which was discovered 18 years after in a pigeon hole, and was printed (partly at the author’s own cost) only last year by the present Government. The manuscript, which will probably equal some two thousand or more pages of printed matter, has been bequeathed to the State, with the request that they take up and print the work. It may be noted that Mr. Colenso’s rough manuscript is far better than the bulk of the fair copy that passes through a printers hands.

Mr. Colenso’s books—his historical ones in particular—while possessing a singular charm for many readers, repel others by their discursiveness; in fact I have known a schoolmaster condemn his style as “vicious”.³⁰ So, with his oratory, his style was peculiar and never popular. Two causes contributed to this: his long practice in writing minute, technical and scientific descriptions, and his habit for many years of thinking, speaking, and writing in Maori. To one or other of these habits all his singularities of diction may be referred. I remember once hearing him describe how he carried some point in a large assembly of natives. “First”, he said, “I quoted a proverb of the olden time—that always gains their attention and approval—then I followed it up with the old fable of the fight between the land and water birds. By that time they were in a mood to follow my argument.” And as the memory of one of the most unfortunate of his hustings speeches flashed on my mind, I could not but think how entirely unsuited such methods are for an audience of free and independent electors, and with what impatience and occasional derision such a gathering will greet an oration which starts with a proverb and an apologue. I had, years before, on his last appearance as a candidate, heard him begin a speech with a fable (by Southey, if I rightly remember) about a certain “little water-wagtail”. The larrikins guffawed and jeered, but they did not know their man. He was not to be put down, and not one jot of the water-wagtail story did he abate. So, once, at a Wesleyan anniversary, he provoked a smile by reference to the Cornish Methodist-maidens with, “their pretty sulphur-coloured ribbons”. Years afterwards he published in the “Transactions” a valuable article on the colour-sense of the Maori. Therein may be found the origin of the quaint comparison. His inveterate habit of marking off, numbering, dividing and sub-dividing his points, may be traced to the natural history methods of classification.

The New Zealand Institute, while appreciating his unequalled scientific papers, were curiously blind to the value of his historical memoirs, the most original records of our early history ever published. If he had not had the means to print them privately they would never have seen the light. The paper on his early crossings of the Ruahine range was rejected. It is now nearly out of print, and highly prized by collectors. His “Jubilee Paper”, describing the first establishment in New Zealand of the printing press, and the printing of the first Maori New Testament, was accepted, conditionally on his submitting to its abridgement by the Council. His reply was a most emphatic negative. With some difficulty he recovered the manuscript, and, he said, “It was a spectacle! Three hands had been over it in

succession; one with a blue pencil, one with a B.B., and another with red ink, and there was little enough left when the third had done with it. The man with the blue pencil seemed to have had quite a vindictive pleasure in striking out everything of historical interest.” The manuscript was enlarged, an appendix added, and lithographed plates, from beautiful pencil sketches of his own, made in 1838, and forms a most important historic document.

Well do I remember my parting with him (not for the last time, I am glad to say), on leaving Napier eight years ago. When I rose to leave, he brought out certain small mementoes he had laid aside for me from his stores of early printing. But there seemed an unspoken thought behind, and a most inopportune faculty of mental induction came into play, and I seemed to divine, to my real disquiet, what each word and action was leading up to. And, last of all, as a climax he produced a copy of his precious book, the rarissima Maori New Testament of 1837, composed and bound by his own hands, as his parting gift. I could not but dissemble—it was intended for a surprise, and as such I received it; but such was the transparency of his nature that I had, all unwittingly, perceived his secret thought for a quarter of an hour. Need I say that the little volume in pigskin is the one most precious volume of my library?

He was wonderfully methodical with his letters, registering all he wrote and received (and he sometimes wrote over a thousand in a year), and docketing his inward correspondence in the original envelopes, fastening them in parcels with a band. In fact, some of his old correspondence was on the curiously-folded letter paper in use before envelopes or postage stamps were invented. Several times I told him that he possessed a small fortune in old New Zealand stamps alone yet a few months ago he told me that he had lately destroyed over a thousand very old envelopes with their letters, without remembering the value of the stamps.

He has lent me for perusal letters of some of the earliest missionaries (Mr. Woon, the Wesleyan, another Missionary Printer, whose venerable face and figure I remember with affection in the village of Wanganui—“Petre”, then, according to the postal department was one of them). Treasured among them were affectionate childish notes—commissions to buy trifles in some far-away town—thanks for welcome gifts. One of the little boy writers lies in a northern cemetery, having passed away in middle age; another is a grey-headed grandsire. Parted by death—long parted by estrangement; but the old letters, mementoes of the old affection, were treasured to the end.

Of his charities time would fail to speak. His munificent gifts to the poor of his native town are known by all, and had the undesirable results of flooding him with begging letters. Like all generous men, he was sometimes deceived by a plausible vagabond but as a rule his help was as judiciously as it was kindly given. In his friendly assistance to students and lovers of nature he always acted as if he was receiving instead of conferring an obligation. Some years ago, botanising in the woods far inland, he chanced upon the humble abode of a foreigner. The man had quite a collection of coins and medals, gathered at various times, and was an enthusiast, displaying unusual knowledge of the subject. His visitor’s face beamed with pleasure—the pleasure of a kindly deed in anticipation. For his mind reverted to a neglected volume in his library at home—a standard authority on numismatics, with many fine copperplate illustrations. On his return to town the book was looked up and despatched, with his regards, as a gift to

30 “viscous” perhaps, but certainly not “vicious”.

his friend in the bush, who would be able to do what its possessor had hitherto failed to do—make good use of it.

Two years ago, corresponding with Mr. Leo Grindon, the venerable botanist and philologist of Manchester, I sent him a copy of the “Ruahine” pamphlet. He wrote of it in enthusiastic terms. “The narrative reads like a romance, and is far more delightful and interesting to me than anything I have had in my hands for a very long time. The botany is splendid. Happily, I have sufficient idea of almost all the plants mentioned, to absorb all that is said about them.... I lay the little book with my treasures for perusal again and again. Many of the adventures and recitals are charmingly novel. I appreciate, also, I hope, the piety of many of the sentences, and am simply delighted with the poetic extracts. Some are new to me; all are appropriate.”

Of his really beautiful end genuine piety, his simple and unfaltering trust in Divine Providence, it is well to speak, as it shaped and influenced his whole character, becoming more apparent with advancing years. His daily habit, in his morning devotions, was to read the Church Lessons for the day not only for private edification, but to share in the communion of fellow believers. When from infirmity he could attend only the Sunday morning service, he made it a practice in the privacy of his home to mentally review Church after Church where his ministerial friends were engaged—those of other denominations as well as his own—and pray for a blessing on each by name. To strangers he might seem to be merely a polemic; by some of the rigidly orthodox he was rated as something of a heretic; but his religion was of the soundest—the kind that shapes the life and action.

When he landed in 1834, drunkenness was fearfully prevalent, and he and others formed the first New Zealand Temperance Society, the “rules” of which constituted the first book in English printed in New Zealand. His temperance pledge he faithfully kept throughout his life. It was a pledge of an early phase of the movement and did not apply to fermented liquors. To the end of his days he held spirits and tobacco in utter detestation. To prohibition orators and leagues he had an almost equal aversion.

The Napier papers have published some lines: “I am weary; lay me low,” apparently under the impression that they were his own. This is a mistake. They were adapted from a little poem, anonymous, I think, which went the rounds about twenty-five years ago.³¹ He had the habit of copying lines which took his fancy and sending them to friends. There were stanzas in the original which, not suiting his purpose, were omitted. He was not, to my knowledge, addicted to verse-writing. The only rhyme I know of his composition is a playful political squib, making no pretensions to poetry, published anonymously in the “Herald” early in 1860.

Much more might be written from the memoirs of thirty-eight years of close friendship and intimate correspondence, but I forbear. More than a week has passed since he was called hence, departing gently in his sleep, but I have not yet realised the fact. “To me he had seemed”—to use a striking expression, from Fennimore Cooper’s story of “Mark’s Reef” where the hero speaks of the blank that followed his father’s death—“to be one of the fixtures of the earth.”



Bookplate designed for the late R. Coupland Harding by D. H. Souter.

*Literarum personæ*³²

Alexander Alexander 1820–1873 had a trading store at Ahuriri in 1846, the first European building in the district. He married Hārata, a Ngāti Te Ūpokoiri woman. 12Aug47, 13Dec62.

Charles Frederick Baker 1803–1875 Church Missionary Society pioneer missionary. He preached in the Bay of Islands from 1828 to 1843, the East Coast (Uawa) until 1857 and then Auckland and Tauranga. 2Jan53.

David Paton Balfour 1841–1894 sheepfarmer, station manager, roading supervisor, diarist, was born in Scotland, and joined the goldrush to Otago in 1862, worked on a sheep station at Moeraki, attended night school in 1864 and quickly became literate. He supported himself with work on various South Island stations. Balfour moved to Hawke’s Bay in 1866 and purchased land up the Mohaka River. Later he managed Gwavas station, and in 1873 took up employment with John Kinross who owned Mangawhare station and Glenross. Balfour studied astronomy and botany, the latter enabling him to collect plants for Colenso. He had accumulated an extensive library, which in 1878 he made available to the station staff and community; they had previously contributed money of their own to buy books for winter reading. A poignant diary entry on 13 May 1883 shows us the farmer-scientist: “Tried to mount some things for Microscope but did not succeed very well. Tried to burn off some Manuka in old Station paddock and succeeded better”. When in 1889 Kinross became bankrupt owing him over a thousand pounds, Balfour was forced out of Glenross and moved to Puketapu. He became a Hawke’s Bay County Council roading supervisor, but, weakened by influenza, he drowned at Puketapu on 13 July 1894 while trying to rescue a sheep from a drain. Balfour wrote an account of his life for his children, and that, together with a number of letters and his diaries (begun in the 1880s), are valuable sources of information about contemporary life in New Zealand.³³ 106 letters 17Mar75 to 6Sep89.

³² I am grateful to Ann Collins, Colenso family historian, for some material in this section, reproduced from her “The Will, Codicil and Estate of William Colenso (1811-1899)” 2010.

³³ Brownlie, M. David Paton Balfour. Dictionary of New Zealand Biography, updated 22 June 2007. www.dnzb.govt.nz/. Balfour’s papers are in MTG Hawke’s Bay in Napier.

³¹ Also wrongly attributed as “Valedictory” by Adam Lindsay Gordon (1833–70).



DP Balfour



TF Cheeseman

Mrs Barkwith Woodville resident. At the Presbyterian Bazaar “The ‘bran tubs’ were looked after by Mrs Burgess and Mrs Barkwith” (*Bush Advocate* 21 August 1888). 18May95.

E. Bibby owned the section next to Colenso’s at Waipawa. 2 & 11Jul87.

D Black Wairoa, tenant of property belonging to Andrew Luff. 11May78.

Peter Bourke Postmaster, Napier 1863–1870. 1Sep63.

George Ferguson Bowen 1821–1899 Colonial Governor. 22Dec71.

Walter Lawry Buller 1838–1906 lawyer, naturalist; his *A history of the birds of New Zealand* is a NZ classic. 31Oct82, 18Nov83.

John Burtton Kumeroa, sent Colenso a deformed huia bill. 17Jul86.

James Busby 1802–1871 British Resident, a consular representative, in New Zealand from 1833. 16Feb39.

Edward Catchpool 1805–1874 printer, public servant and perfectionist; Sub-Collector of Customs, Deputy Postmaster and Harbourmaster, later appointed Provincial Treasurer in Hawke’s Bay. 10Mar62, 6 & 25Nov63, 23Nov64, 2Dec64, 2 & 12Aug65.

Robert Cathcart 1855–?seaman, settler, lighthouse keeper. 23Dec78, 31Mar79.

Frederick Revans Chapman 1849–1936 lawyer, judge, ethnologist. 14Jul92.

Thomas Frederic Cheeseman 1846–1921 came with his parents to Auckland in 1853. An enthusiastic, largely self-taught botanist, he made a survey of the Waitakere ranges, which he published in 1872 as the Botany of the Titirangi District etc. In 1874 he followed his friend Thomas Kirk as secretary-curator of the Auckland Institute and Museum, a post he held for the next fifty years. He built up a large and comprehensive private herbarium which forms the basis of the present collections in AK. In 1900 he was asked by the government to write the *Manual of the NZ Flora*, which was published in 1906. He followed this in 1914 with two volumes of illustrations of the NZ Flora in collaboration with W. Botting Hemsley of Kew, with drawings by Matilda Smith. A second, enlarged, rearranged but not greatly altered edition of the Manual was published

posthumously in 1925.³⁴ 20Nov75, 25Dec75, 5Jun79, 11Aug80, 25Dec82, 9Nov83, 13Jun84, 22Sep84, 17Oct84, 15Mar86, 23Apr86, 4May86, 26Jun89, 21Apr94, 23Jan95, 16Dec95.

George Clarke 1798–1875 missionary catechist, interpreter, based at Kerikeri, founded the Waimate Mission Station, secretary of the Northern District Committee. 23Sep39.

Dandeson Coates d.1846 Lay Secretary of the Church Missionary Society, London. An able administrator, he guarded the CMA position as a voluntary lay society, but the CMS sought episcopal patronage, Henry Venn was appointed, and Coates’s influence waned. 18Feb34, 1Nov34, 15Jan35, 16Mar35, 9Jan36, 9Sep36, 6Apr37, 30Aug37, 27Aug40, 30May44, 19Nov44, 18Jun46.

HP Cohen d.1907 Napier auctioneer and local body politician. 5Jul92.

Robert Cole joined Selwyn’s mission party to NZ, stationed at Wellington where his duties were with Europeans rather than with Māori. Colenso would stay with him in Wellington. 28Oct53.

Elizabeth Colenso 1821–1904 missionary, teacher, translator, William Colenso’s wife, who left him for Auckland in 1853, taking William’s son Wi with her. 27Mar54, 20Jun54, 4Oct54.

Ridley Latimer Colenso 1845–1928 left Napier for Auckland with his uncle in 1853. He was later educated at St John’s College, Cambridge, married an English girl (of 15 summers) Maude Hamilton and settled there, apparently living on funds from his father. He worked as a teacher between 1881 and 1891, but is recorded as living on his own means in 1901. He appears to have worked as lawyer, teacher and tutor. His only child May died in 1897. After his father’s death he moved to Kilmuir Inverness Scotland where he built a substantial house, which he called “Whare o Noho”. Latty and Maude travelled often, she dying in Nice, France in 1917.³⁵ Colenso sent him his “autobiography” in August 1883; the accompanying letter has not been found.



RL Colenso

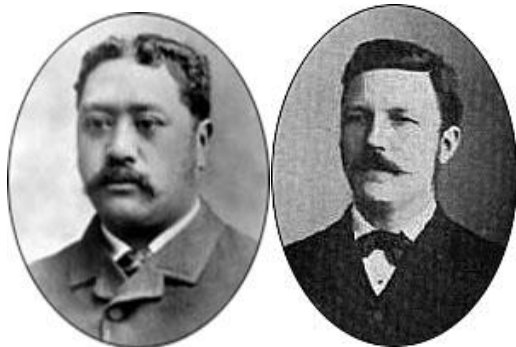


Will Colenso

³⁴ Hatch ED. NZ orchidologists. In St George IM & McRae DP. *The NZ orchids, natural history and cultivation*. NZNOG, 1990.

³⁵ Raynor, Dick. Information on Ridley Latimer Colenso: <http://www.lochnessinvestigation.com/ridleylatimercolenso.htm>

William Colenso 1845–1942, “Will”, nephew, son of William’s brother Richard Veale Thomas Colenso. He took over his father’s painting and decorating business in Cornwall. Was a talented artist, orchid breeder and photographer. He was active in public affairs in Penzance, Mayor 1901 to 1902 and involved in the distribution of the Colenso Dole until his death in 1942. 8Mar76, 11Feb93, 19Oct93, 5Aug94, 4Nov94, 22Jan95, 26Feb95, 18Mar95, 6May96, 21Jul96, 30Jan97, 14Feb97, date?, 30Aug97, 18Oct97, 13Jan98, 11Mar98, 5Jun98, 30Aug98, 14Oct98, 17Nov98.

Wiremu Colenso³⁶

John Drummond

William “Wiremu, Willie, Wi” Colenso 1851–1903, son born to Ripeka Meretene and taken away by Elizabeth Colenso in 1853 but returned some years later. Educated in Napier, he then became a mariner. After some years he visited Penzance and in 1880 married a cousin Sarah Veale Thomas Colenso, daughter of William’s brother Richard Veale Thomas Colenso. His father financed a house for the couple in Trewithen Road, Penzance and in his will and codicil took great care that it did not fall into the hands of Wiremu’s wife. It passed on to her brother William after her death in 1929. Jan87, date?, 3Sep93, 9May98.

Colonial Secretary 23Dec48, 12Sep62, 26Sep62, 23Oct62, 10Dec62, 23Jan64, 25Jul91.

Samuel Costall Government Printer to 1896. 12May96.

John Davidson West Clive farmer. 26Dec77.

Richard Davis 1790–1863 farmer, missionary, in NZ from 1824, farmed and taught at Waimate, established Kaikohe mission, ordained in 1843. 30Dec42.

Benjamin Daydon Jackson 1846–1927 botanist and taxonomist who wrote the first volume of *Index Kewensis*. Secretary Linnean Society. 29Dec84, 15Jun85, 15Feb98.

Frederick Irving de Lisle d.1819 registered medical practitioner in NZ in 1871, District Health Officer for Hawke’s Bay, member of the management board of Napier Hospital. 31May93, 28Dec96, 24Jan97, date?, 19Feb97, 5Aug97, 23Dec97, 19May98.

Margaret Tresa de Lisle b. White, his wife. 16Aug97, 1Sep97, 27Sep97, 23Dec97, 8Mar98, 4Jun98, 5Dec98, 26Dec98.

George Didsbury 1839–1893 Government Printer 1864–1893. 7Nov85.

William Dinwiddie 1863–1937 nephew of Peter Dinwiddie, part owner of the *Hawke’s Bay Herald*, newspaperman and one time secretary HBPI. 2Aug93.

R. Dixon & Co. general merchants, Fenchurch St, London. 16Mar47, date?, 23Oct48, 4Sep50, 15Jan52, 4Mar52, 10Dec53, 17Jul55.

John Drummond 1854–1930 was born in Glasgow in 1854 and came to New Zealand with his parents in 1866, settling in Hawke Bay. He was apprenticed to a leading engineer and eventually formed his own engineering company. He was active in public affairs including road boards, river conservation and serving as a councilor and mayor on the Waipawa County Council. He was also interested in military matters, serving in the Napier Battery and Dannevirke Rifles. He represented NZ in shooting competitions.³⁷ 32 letters 22Jan80 to 27Oct82.

William Colenso Drummond 1888–1918, son of John Drummond, died at Dannevirke after serving as Captain in the New Zealand Rifle Brigade in Suez and Egypt.³⁸ 21Jul96, 30Jan97, 18Oct97.

John Davies Enys 1837–1912, born Cornwall, arrived in Lyttelton 1861 with cousin JB Acland. Owned Castle Hill Station. Interested in geology, botany and biology. In 1870 elected to Provincial Government for Rakaia. Returned to Cornwall, selling the Castle Hill property after arranging for the presentation of the font carved from Castle Hill limestone to the Christchurch Cathedral.³⁹ 30Aug80, 11May83.

“Eraiha” pseudonym for a man Colenso assumed was James Grindell, overseer on the Wairarapa roads. 18Nov45.

Edward John Eyre 1815–1901 explorer, blundering Lieutenant Governor 1847–1854 to George Grey. 13 & 14Mar51.

George Thomas Fannin Napier public servant, secretary to the Hawke’s Bay Education Board during Colenso’s time. date? 91.

Isaac Earl Featherston 1813–1876 doctor, politician, provincial Superintendent. 5May57, 22Aug57.

Ethel Florance Woodville schoolgirl whose academic ability attracted Colenso’s attention. 18Nov93, 10Jun97, 21Dec97, 13Nov98, 20Jan99, 27Jan99.

James Stuart Freeman Hobson’s private secretary. Logan Campbell called him the most “disgustingly immoral swindling scoundrel in town”—ie, in Freeman’s Bay. 3Jul40.

John Philip Gell 1816–1898 clergyman, friend of the Franklins in Tasmania, secretary of the Tasmanian Society. 7 & 20Mar43, 27Mar45, 20Jan46.

William Gisborne 1825–1898 was appointed Under-Secretary in the Colonial Secretaries Office in 1856, thus becoming the senior public servant in the Colony. 14Nov62.

37 *Cyclopedia of New Zealand (Taranaki, Hawke’s Bay & Wellington Provincial Districts)*, 1908, Christchurch available on the internet from New Zealand Electronic Text Centre, www.nzetc.org/tm.

38 Auckland War Memorial Museum Cenotaph Database online at <http://muse.aucklandmuseum.com/databases/cenotaph/>

39 <http://www.nzetc.org/tm/scholarly/tei-PlaNine-t1-body-d1-d387.html>

36 Photograph sent to Ann Collins by Sarah Carter, member of the Colenso family.

Edward L Godfrey one of three Land Claims Commissioners appointed in 1840 to investigate all pre-Treaty land purchases made by Europeans. 9Jan41, 8Jul41.

William Francis Robert Gordon d.1936 New Plymouth photographed Māori and Europeans who served in the New Zealand Wars of the 1860s, also accomplished at wood engravings and sketches. 5Feb89, 25Mar89, 13Jul92, 24Jul96, 11Jan97, 28Sep97, 20Oct97, 20Oct97.

George Grey 1812–1898 soldier, explorer, colonial governor, premier, scholar. 17Jul62, 23Aug62, 29Aug63, 18Mar67, 6Dec67, 18Nov71, 20Feb72, 24Feb76.

Samuel Edward Grimstone 1818–1872 acting Colonial Secretary in 1848. 15Mar48, 4May48.

Ronald Campbell Gunn 1808–1881 Tasmanian botanist, public servant and politician. 31Dec46, 13Mar47, 18Jan48, 8Apr49, 17Sep50, 10Aug51.

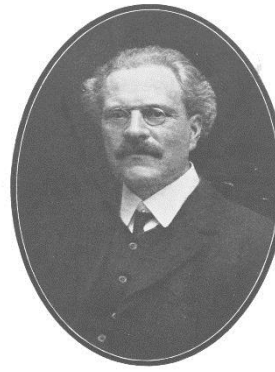
Julius von Haast 1822–1887 German geologist who founded the Canterbury Museum. 3Jun64, 21Jun67, 27Jul67, 14Nov67, 24Apr68, 12Jan71, 13Jul71, 1Jan72, 9Jul78, 27Aug79, 16Sep79, 26Nov79, 10Jan80, 27Sep80, 28May81, 3Nov81, 13Nov81, 31Mar85, 18May85, 5Jun85, 6Aug85, 28Aug85.

Octavius Hadfield 1814–1904 first priest ordained in NZ, married Henry Williams's daughter, worked at Otaki and Waikanae, briefly Bishop of Wellington. 2Feb52.

Hamahona. Hamahona ("Samson") of Wharerangi (not to be confused with Wharaurangi) does not appear anywhere else in Colenso's writing. 13Jan45.

Augustus Hamilton 1853–1913 was a scientist and collector, latterly Director of the Dominion Museum. He came to New Zealand in 1876 and became a teacher in primary schools at Thorndon, Okarito, and Petane, where he joined the Hawke's Bay Philosophical Society, becoming secretary, and established the first Napier Museum. In 1890 he was appointed Registrar of the University of Otago, and wrote a long list of papers on botany, zoology, and ethnology in the *Transactions*. He also began his outstanding work—*The Art Workmanship of the Māori*. In 1903 he was appointed Director of the Colonial Museum.⁴⁰ An extensive correspondence with Colenso seems to have perished. date? 88.

Te Hapuku Ngāti Kahungunu rangitira c.1797–1878 approved of land sales and cooperation with Europeans, fought with them against the Hauhau. 9Jul47.



Augustus Hamilton



R Coupland Harding

Robert Coupland Harding 1849–1916 was born in Wellington in 1849, a year after his parents immigrated. His father was a printer, bookbinder, painter and glazier. In 1850 the family moved to Wanganui, and then following a fire in 1858 they moved to Napier. Here Coup met William Colenso, and having printing in common they became fast friends. He completed his apprenticeship, then his father bought the *Hawkes Bay Times* and Coup worked on this as a printer and compositor until 1874. From the 1860s he was collecting typefounder specimens; after 1874 he began publishing Harding's *Almanac of typography*. There were 11 editions distributed internationally. He also started to publish the *Typo* journal—again internationally distributed. In 1890 he moved from Napier to Wellington, but his business failed by 1897. For the rest of his working life he was a journalist and editor of Wellington's *Evening Post*.⁴¹ His son William Colenso Harding was born in 1894 and died in 1901. 282 letters 29Dec75 to 19Jan99.

Thomas Bennick Harding father of RC Harding, bought the *Hawke's Bay Times* in 1865 and sold it to his son in 1873. 1Sep83.

James Hector 1834–1907, born in Edinburgh, studied medicine there, established his scientific reputation in Canada, and was then appointed director of the Geological Survey of Otago in 1861, and as a result of his success was appointed director of the Geological Survey and Colonial Museum in Wellington in 1865. He married the daughter of the Speaker of the House, Sir David Monro; he edited the *Transactions* and wrote 45 scientific papers himself. Hector is often said to be responsible for establishing a sound footing for scientific study and research in New Zealand.⁴² 107 letters 2Sep64 to 8Nov97.

40 Philipps WJ. Augustus Hamilton. *Encyclopedia of New Zealand*, 1966. www.teara.govt.nz/1966/H/HamiltonAugustus/HamiltonAugustus/en accessed 12 Dec 07.

41 Shep, Sydney. Introduction to *Typo: A Monthly Newspaper and Literary Review* (1887–1897): www.nzetc.org/tm

42 Dell, R. K. "Hector, James 1834 – 1907". Dictionary of New Zealand Biography, updated 2 June 2007, <http://www.dnzb.govt.nz/>



James Hector

Emily Hill

Philip Hedgeland MA Prebendary of St Mary's Church, Penzance, married Wiremu and his cousin Sarah at St Mary's on 8 September 1880. 28Nov81.

Emily Hill (b. Knowles) 1847–1930, teacher, temperance worker, suffragist.⁴³ The *Hawke's Bay Herald* of 23 September 1883 carried, "The meeting in the Athenæum Hall last night under the auspices of the Napier branch of the Women's Franchise League was well attended, the hall being filled. Mrs Henry Hill, president of the league, occupied the chair." 2Oct89, 14Jul91, 29Dec93, 2Oct94, 16Feb95, 6Sep98.

Henry Thomas Hill 1849–1933 educationalist who succeeded Colenso as School Inspector for Hawke's Bay. 18Jul83, 31Jul83, 1Sep86, 12Nov87, 14Feb92, 23?Sep94, 15Nov85, 18May98.

William Hobson 1792–1842 naval officer, British Consul to NZ and Lieutenant Governor. 27Jun40, 30Dec40.



TM Hocken

Katherine Hollis

Thomas Morland Hocken 1836–1910 Dunedin doctor, collector of books and manuscripts, he gave his collections to the people of Dunedin in 1897, spent three years in Britain researching and acquiring documents relating to New Zealand (including Colenso's reports to the CMS), and after his return wrote *Bibliography of Literature Relating to New Zealand*. His collections form the basis of the Hocken Library.⁴⁴ He only kept one letter from Colenso! 16Mar95.

Katherine Hollis b. Buckland 1868 Worked at Baddeley's hotel in Dannevirke, where Colenso stayed. 19Sep94, 27Feb96.

John Johnstone printer and publisher, Edinburgh. 15Jul44.

Karaitiana Takamoana ?–1879 Ngāti Kahungunu leader, educated at Colenso's school and later involved in selling the Waipukurau and Ahuriri blocks to Donald McLean. He supported the government against the Hauhau and Te Kooti and in 1871 he entered Parliament as member for Eastern Māori, an office he held until his death. 12Feb76.

Renata ("Leonard") Kawepo ?–1888 Ngāti Kahungunu leader, missionary, enslaved in his youth, lived at Waimate where he was educated and baptised. He came with Colenso to Hawke's Bay in 1844, but later they fell out over land purchases and leadership. 7Jan50.



Renata Kawepo

Karaitiana Takamoana

Jean Lampila 1808–1897 missionary, ordained at Hokianga in 1842, established the Roman Catholic mission at Whakatane, thence to the Urewera, Poverty Bay and Hawke's Bay. 23May52 (in CMS letter of 12Oct52).

Samuel Locke 1836–1890 Resident Magistrate for Hawke's Bay, Taupo, Poverty Bay & Wairoa. 29Aug77.

Thomas Lowry pastoralist, graduate of the University of Cambridge, arrived in NZ in 1846 and founded Okawa station. 13Dec62.

Andrew Luff was a Londoner who came to New Zealand about 1858 and became a land agent in Napier. He took his family back to London in 1874 to educate his sons at Dulwich College, returning about 1880 to work as a land agent in Wellington. Colenso looked after his business affairs while he was in England. 70 letters 5May75 to 21Feb93.

Herman Marius Lund c.1853–c.1917 was a Dane who migrated to NZ in about 1876, and was a clerk at Tahoraiti, stationmaster at Ormondville and Makotuku, a keen collector of coins. 3Jul84, 27Jul84, 3Aug95, 30Dec97, 29Aug98.

J. McCulloch collector of rates, Foxton. 11May78.

LW McGlashan Auckland supplier of Brett's *Historical Series: Early New Zealand* to Colenso in 1890—perhaps the remedy hawker LW McGlashan & Co. of Albert St. 25Dec90.

John Mackay Government Printer after Costall in 1896. 24Sep97, 25Sep97,

Donald McLean 1820–1877 immigrated to New Zealand 1840. Learned Māori early, and was appointed Protector of

⁴³ Upton V. Dictionary of NZ Biography.
http://www.dnz.govt.nz/dnzb/alt_essayBody.asp?essayID=3H26

⁴⁴ Strathern GM. Te Ara, an encyclopedia of NZ 1966.
<http://www.teara.govt.nz/en/1966/hocken-thomas-morland/1>.

Aborigines by FitzRoy in 1843. Then as Police Inspector he travelled widely in the interior, and was involved in major land purchases by the government (and Maraekakaho in Hawke's Bay for himself). He became Chief Land Purchase Commissioner in 1853, Superintendent of Hawke's Bay province in 1863, and in 1866 defeated Colenso in the election for the House. He became Government Agent to the East Coast in 1868, then Native Minister for the Fox government. He was tipped as a future Prime Minister, but his health failed and he died after an early resignation at age 57.⁴⁵ 84 letters 21Oct50 to 4Dec76.



Donald McLean



GM Thomson

Gilbert Mair 1799–1857 was a Scot who arrived in the Bay of Islands in 1824. He helped Henry Williams build the schooner *Herald*, which he later commanded in mission service until it was wrecked on the Hokianga bar; later trader, gum, timber and flax exporter, involved in representations to the British government to have New Zealand declared a British colony, and in the formation of the Kororareka Association, a controversial attempt at settler self-rule. He rowed Colenso ashore in 1834. In 1842 he disposed of his trading station and other interests and moved his family to Whangarei. 15Apr43, 8May43, 15May43, 15Jul43, 27Sep43, 1Mar44, date?Apr44, 16Jul44.

Walter Baldock Durrant Mantell 1820–1895 public servant, politician, naturalist, son of Gideon Mantell, palaeontologist. 6Mar65, 2Sep67, 24Oct70, 9, 26, 30Nov70, 15Dec70, 6Dec71, 12Nov75.

Robert Maunsell 1810–1894 successful Waikato missionary, foremost te reo scholar of his time, translator of the Old Testament into te reo. 4Apr42.

TR Moore of Waimarama purchased *Buller's Birds* and complained to HBPI Secretary Colenso about the cost of binding. 20Jun89.

William Morris Colenso's nearest neighbour in 1844, at his Rangaika whaling and trading station. 23Mar48, 27Jun49, 14Oct52.

Thomas Morrison 1846–1909 printer at the *Hawke's Bay Herald* from 1863, later became its Wellington Correspondent. 6Jul86.

Hans Peter Mortensen 1862–1846 was born in Norway; his family emigrated to New Zealand aboard the *Høvding* in 1872, and settled in Norsewood. His father Johann opened the Mortensen Accommodation House, where the

Napier-Woodville coach changed horses, and where Colenso would stay when in Norsewood. The house, known as "Fernhills", burned in 1888. Colenso corresponded with Hans until the 1890s, and sent presents to the Mortensen children.⁴⁶ Hans wrote "Reminiscences of the early pioneers in Norsewood", a copy of which is in the ATL. 3Jun94, 12Aug94, 13Nov94, 5Jan95, 21Feb95, 4Mar95, 25Mar95, 18Jun95, date?95, 20Dec95, 14May96, 16Jul96, 6Sep96, 18Oct96, 6Jan97, 10Sep97.

Andreas Olsen arrived in the *Høvding* and settled in "the Bush" near Norsewood, next to Fernhills where Colenso stayed. He collected specimens from the Ruahine for Colenso. 9Apr95, 6Dec96.

John Davies Ormond 1832–1917 Superintendent of Hawke's Bay, Minister of Public Works, member of the Legislative Council, landowner. 3Nov76 (3).

Richard Owen 1804–1892 English biologist, comparative anatomist and palaeontologist who shares with Colenso the first deduction that moa bones were those of a giant struthious bird. 20Jan46, 22Jan51.

Mrs Prebble widow, fruiterer, Napier. 1898?

Puhara Hawaikirangi d.1858 in battle, Ngāti Kahungunu rangatira, Roman Catholic of Pakowhai, sided with Te Hapuku in support of cooperation with Europeans. 24Jul50.

William Rathbone politician, JP, arrived in Waipawa in 1859 and the following year began business as a General merchant. 3Jul76.

WB Rhodes & Co. William Barnard Rhodes 1807–1878, merchant, investor, politician: "the millionaire of Wellington." 21Jul76.

Major Matthew Richmond 1801–1887 New Zealand colonial administrator and a politician, Chief Police Magistrate in Wellington when Colenso wrote to him. 12Jan46.

Sir William (Captain) Russell 1838–1913 cabinet minister, and Leader of the Opposition from 1894 to 1901. 28Oct80, 8Feb82, 11Feb82, 5Jun82, 8Mar92.

Henry St Hill 1807–1866 Chief Magistrate at Wellington, later member of the House of Representatives. 14Apr51.

George Augustus Selwyn 1809–1878 consecrated first Bishop of New Zealand in 1841. 22Mar43, 19Nov45, 7Sep52.

Willoughby Shortland 1804–1869 first Colonial Secretary for NZ, acted as Administrator after Hobson's death until Fitzroy arrived. 3Nov40, 9Jan41.

Benj. Smith & Co. estate agents and licensed land brokers, Wellington. 18Aug76.

John Alexander Smith 1814?–1899 the first honorary curator and secretary of the Auckland Museum. 10Nov56.

Hector Straith (Major) secretary of the CMS London. 3Jan54.

George Malcolm Thomson 1848–1943 was a science and natural history schoolteacher, and later a Dunedin MP. He came to New Zealand in 1868. He wrote several books on

⁴⁵ Bagnall AG. Te Ara, an encyclopedia of NZ 1966.
<http://www.teara.govt.nz/en/1966/mclean-sir-donald/1>

⁴⁶ Ball OE. "The families of 'Fernhills' and their Garfield neighbours, pioneers of Norsewood". Feilding, 1997.

botany and natural history, and had three papers on flower fertilisation published in the *Transactions*.⁴⁷ 6Mar82.

Tiakitai ?–1847 Ngati Kahungunu rangatira who never converted to Christianity, drowned at sea. 7Mar45.

Ann Tindall English cryptogamist who lived at Kirby Misperton Hall in north Yorkshire. 8Jan98.

Jane Emily Tucker 1817–1896 Colenso's sister. 20Dec74.

Henry Venn 1796–1873 abolitionist, honorary secretary of the Church Missionary Society from 1841 to 1873. 20Jan47.

Robert Vidal secretary of the Central Committee of the Church Missionary Society in NZ. 28Nov53.

HG Warren secretary Tomoana freezing works. 27Jul97.

Te Wereta (Arthur Wellington Kawekairangi) d.1867 Ngāti Kahungunu rangatira of Whaurangi, Wairarapa, sold land to McLean. date?45.

John White 1826–1891 appointed compiler and writer of an official Maori history, published in six volumes between 1887 and 1890 as *The ancient history of the Maori, his mythology and traditions*. 26Mar88.

Taylor White 1837–1914 owner of Glengarrie station, ethnologist who wrote several papers for the *Transactions*. 25Dec90.

William Williams 1800–1878, missionary, explorer, linguist, first Bishop of Waiapu; at first a close friend of Colenso on early missionary journeys, but later cut off all contact, even omitting Colenso completely from his book on the Church of England's origins in his diocese. 25Feb50, 4Mar52, 28Nov53, 29Dec53.

George Thomas Wilkinson d.1906, an authorised interpreter under "The Native Lands Act," Returning Officer for the Western Maori Electorate, Native Land Purchase officer at Otorohanga, JP, Government Native Agent for Waikato.⁴⁸ 12Nov85.

William Ward Yates, with his brother, HL Yates, started the Hawke's Bay *Times* in 1861, selling it a few years later to TB Harding. He was a committee member of the Napier Athenæum and Mechanics' Institute in 1870. 8Nov86, 17Jan88, 8Feb89, 7Apr92, 20Apr92, 28Mar98?, 1Dec98, 12Dec98.

Colenso's Bush accommodation

Colenso wrote some of his letters from hotels and boarding houses in the Seventy Mile Bush during his excursions from Napier—and when he was in Napier he often wrote longingly of the Bush.

Bagnall and Petersen: "He saw that the roads and villages... would give a ready approach to plant communities not

studied since his last missionary tour," and that in 1882, he, "in the refund youth of his early seventies, made day-long excursions from headquarters in the village hotels."⁴⁹ He recorded visits to the Bush district villages Hampden (Tikokino), Kaikoura (Otane), Waipukurau, Takapau, Norsewood, Matamau, Dannevirke and Woodville.

Colenso had walked or ridden through the district on his missionary duties until 1852, and as school inspector (by coach) briefly in the early 60s and again 1872–1878. Railway construction started in Napier in 1872, the line reaching Hastings in 1874, Takapau in 1877, Woodville in 1887, and Palmerston North via the Manawatu Gorge in 1891. It opened up the Central Hawke's Bay hinterland for Colenso, who wrote to JD Hooker,⁵⁰ "I am so very liable to take severe colds from draughts, but not from being in the 'open'; almost always in Railway carriage, but never in buggy, gig, or on top of coach."

Thus, until 1887 passengers bound for Woodville would take the train to Makotoku, and onward by coach...

Coaches

COBB & CO'S ROYAL MAIL COACH.

MAKATOKU TO WOODVILLE AND PALMERSTON.

ON and after December 1st intending passengers for Woodville and Palmerston must leave Napier by the 3 p.m. train on **MONDAY, WEDNESDAY, and FRIDAY,** resting at Makotoku all night, leaving by coach following morning at 6 o'clock.

JAMES MACARA,
Proprietor.

133

Colenso's friend Andreas Olsen lived near the Makotoku station and Mortensen's accommodation house was a short distance further, along what is now Garfield Rd. It was an easy walk or ride toward the mountains via Gundries Rd or Norsewood township.

As the flats and foothills were cleared he took the daily journey to the receding bush by gig.⁵¹

Country publicans ran risky businesses, and many of these old country pubs have disappeared.

Firstly, brewers and publicans had organized opposition to Seddon's 1893 Electoral Bill, which included "Womanhood Suffrage". They failed of course, and when voting by women was introduced in 1894 women, in support of a powerful teetotal movement, voted for the "local option", giving communities the power, through licensing committees, to decide on liquor sales, essentially voting against easy access to alcohol. Many districts voted for "no-licence", though Hawke's Bay voted for "reduction". Consequently a number of country hotels closed. Colenso had publicly supported a more moderate stance, and expressed his disappointment: "In my opinion the Licensing Committee of 1884 did a great wrong to the Public—and

⁴⁹ Bagnall AG, Petersen GC 1948. *William Colenso: his life and journeys*. Reed, Wellington, p.423. New edition Otago University Press 2013.

⁵⁰ 18 October 1885: see *Colenso's collections*.

⁵¹ "I, on April 1st, fine day – (Ch. duty finished, my last there) I hired gig, & driver, & went – road in capital order, horse excellent...." (Colenso to JD Hooker 2 July 1897: see *Colenso's collections*).

⁴⁷ Hatch ED. NZ orchidologists. In St George IM & McCrae DP. *The NZ orchids, natural history and cultivation*. NZNOG, 1990.
⁴⁸ Obit. Taranaki Herald, 8 February 1906, Page 6.

particularly to the *travelling* public—by so closing all those hotels....”⁵²

Secondly though, these grand 19th century wooden structures burned easily: the incendiary combination of open fire heating, naked flame lighting, almost universal tobacco smoking and inebriated inattention must have accounted for the demise of many.

Kaikoura (Otane)

Kaikoura was too easily confused with Kaikoura South, so the name, often in any case misspelt, was changed to Otane. Colenso wrote

... the name of the rising township of Kaikoura, erroneously spelled Kaikora (sometimes Kikora)... The old proper name, Kaikoura = (to) eat fresh-water prawns, or, (an) eater of fresh water prawns,—arose from the fact of that crustaceous shellfish (koura) being formerly found in the little stream there, where the Maoris used to go and catch them for food; whereas Kaikora literally means, to eat sparks of fire!—if indeed it can be said to mean anything at all in Maori.⁵³

He stayed there: “I hope to leave for Bush &c. on Wednesday next, spending a few days at Kaikoura (Sandys) and at Gow’s....”⁵⁴ and “at first I staid at Kaikoura (Fletcher’s) a few days.”⁵⁵

“An excursionist” wrote, “Fletcher’s Hotel is a notable building in close proximity to the Railway Station and affords first class accommodation to settlers on the Coast and travellers to and therefrom or passengers by train. Doubtless the host will ere long be retiring with a fortune.... I saw the thoroughbred horse ‘Ananias’ at Fletcher’s stables. He is a splendid animal and a fine specimen of the Traducer blood.”⁵⁶

Fletcher’s Hotel in Otane township has been burned and replaced four times (a modern single-storey building occupies the site now); the hotel on the main road burned in 1889; I can find no record of “Sandy” or “Sandys”.

Waipawa

On 29 May 1887 Colenso wrote to Andrew Luff, “I stayed at Betine’s Waipawa, it was nice, quiet, & clean.”

He wrote to Luff from the Imperial Hotel, Waipawa on 12 April 1889. The publican of the Imperial Hotel was a Mr. Limbrick. “It is a large two-storeyed wooden building with a balcony, and is a valuable property, embracing, besides the hotel, two adjoining cottages and a large stable, and has been built on an excellent plan. The rooms are large and well lighted, furnished with excellent taste, and every precaution has been taken for escape in case of fire. The ground floor contains a dining room with accommodation for sixty guests, a conveniently-appointed commercial room, three comfortable sitting rooms, and a billiard room.

The first floor contains about twenty comfortably-furnished bedrooms, and a bathroom with hot and cold water. An excellent table is kept, the tariff is moderate, and the bar is stocked with the best brands of wines, spirits, and cordials.”⁵⁷

Waipukurau⁵⁸

Colenso wrote that he stayed at “Gow’s Hotel, Te Waipukurau”.



The Tavistock then (above) and now (below)



HR Russell first erected the Tavistock Hotel in the late 1850s about half a mile from what was to be the site for the Waipukurau railway station. When the railway from Napier reached Waipukurau, the Hotel was rebuilt as a large two-storeyed wooden building, with a verandah in front, and a balcony on two sides. There were two large dining rooms, capable of seating over 100 guests, a well-appointed commercial room, several comfortable sitting rooms, and a bar stocked with the best wines, spirits, ales, and other beverages, about thirty comfortable bedrooms, two well-furnished sitting rooms, and convenient bathrooms and toilets. A large billiard room occupied a detached building, and there was a commodious stable that contained twenty stalls and ten loose boxes. Horses and vehicles could be obtained for hire. The Tavistock was the stopping place for the Porangahau coach.

Peter Gow and Alexander Scrimgeour became the next proprietors of the “Tavvy” in 1875. Gow would have known Colenso as a member of the Hawke’s Bay Philosophical Institute in the 1880s. He ran the hotel for 25 years.

The building was shifted to a new site in Ruataniwha St near the railway line. I believe it is the only hotel still standing in Central Hawke’s Bay that Colenso stayed in.

52 “The hotel question at Makatoku.” *Hawke’s Bay Herald* 21 May 1885; see *Give your thoughts life*.

53 1883 *Three literary papers read before the Hawke’s Bay Philosophical Institute during the session of 1882:—I and II, On Nomenclature; III, On “Macaulay’s New Zealander.”* Daily Telegraph Office, Napier. 41p: Paper 1: on Nomenclature.

54 Colenso to John Drummond 23 Aug 1880. See also http://johnmudgway.com/index_files/Page384.htm

55 Colenso to Drummond 16 January 1882.

56 http://johnmudgway.com/index_files/Page384.htm

57 *The Cyclopaedia of New Zealand (Taranaki, Hawke’s Bay & Wellington Provincial Districts)*.

58 <http://www.penneylaneonline.com/2008/12/15/the-tavi/> ; <http://mp.natlib.govt.nz/> ; <http://www.nzetc.org/tm/scholarly/>.

Takapau

Colenso mentioned staying in Takapau (J Stewart collected specimens from Takapau, and Colenso received some specimens from him while there; Stewart was a member of the HBPI in 1880-81). *The Cyclopaedia of NZ* (1897) said of Takapau, “The township has churches, a public school, one hotel, an accommodation house, a public library, a large public hall, and various stores. The business of the post and telegraph office and other Government departments is conducted at the railway station.” The original hotel was a 15 room, 2 storey building which was opened on 1 January 1877. In 1907 a fire swept through the wooden hotel and completely destroyed it.⁵⁹ A two-storey brick building now occupies the site.



Takapau Hotel before the 1907 fire.

Norsewood

Colenso lodged at “Fernhills”, a guesthouse 1km south of Norsewood (the first house on the right going east, after Garfield Rd, aka Friberg Line). A plaque near the house reads “With affectionate remembrance and thanks to our Pioneer Ancestors Johann Fredrik and Anna Maria Mortensen, Emanuel and Helena Frederikson, Elizabeth and Leonhard Andersen. Erected 1997”. Fernhills was owned by Mortensen in Colenso’s time, but his accommodation house burned in the great fire of 1888. Andreas Olsen, who collected many Ruahine specimens for Colenso, lived next door.⁶⁰ The present house (still known as “Fernhills”) dates from 1907. Dannevirke historian Michael Stone interviewed Bella (Elizabeth) Andersen in 2002 when she was aged 99—she recalled conversations between her father and sister about Colenso coming to stay at Fernhills. Oline Ball recalled playing as a child with “Colenso’s blocks, a lovely set of shaped children’s play blocks which he gave to Emily, the eldest of Hans and Olene’s children.” There are three Colenso letters (on other than botanical subjects) to Hans (Johann’s son) Mortensen in the Alexander Turnbull Library.



Fernhills in Colenso’s day (above) and today (below)



Matamau

Bagnall and Petersen wrote that Colenso “...hastened off for three weeks in the bush to be reached from Towers’s Roadside Hotel, Matamau.”⁶¹

Colenso wrote, “And here I would particularly mention the Central Hotel at Matamau,—in the very midst of 70-mile-Bush. At this Hotel I have often staid,—On some occasions a month at a time (owing to wet weather), on others a fortnight, or a week; and that, too, under both Landlords,—the first one Mr Towers, and the present one Mr Baddeley.”⁶²

And again, “... seeing that there is no hotel on the long and almost dreary line of highway of more than 40 miles, and the only road, between Waipawa and Danevirke, (over which all stock—often “mobs” of sheep each containing many thousands—have to be slowly driven in all kinds of weather,) (he hoped) that the new Licensing Committee will see their way reasonably clear to grant a License to one hotel on that long, line of road; and, also, to one hotel upon the Railway line through the Bush, which is also greatly needed. For, (as I showed in a letter in your columns about a year ago,) really good hotels, kept by suitable people, and furnished with pure and proper drinks of all kinds in use among us, (not adulterated trash which is poison!)—under also the lawful supervision of the police—such would prove to be a great means of bringing more money into those at

⁶¹ Bagnall & Petersen.

⁶² “Mr Colenso on bush licenses.” Colenso to Hawke’s Bay Herald 10 June 1884. There was a vigorous correspondence in the newspaper columns at this time, between teetotalers and moderates like Colenso. He wrote to JD Hooker, “I have been also hard at it! fighting in our 2 Locals,—(1) against the wretched fanatical Teetotalers w. their “Local option”,—who have just closed 4 Hotels in the woods on the Royal Mail Coach Lines (where I have often stayed many weeks) and now there are none for 40–50 miles! (12 July 84). See *Give your thoughts life and Colenso’s collections*.

⁵⁹ Photo at <http://www.takapau.co.nz/aboutus.htm>.

⁶⁰ Ball OE. *The families of ‘Fernhills’ and their Garfield neighbours, pioneers of Norsewood*. Feilding, 1997.

present poor parts, and therefore a great blessing to that Country, and particularly beneficial to the travelling public,—of whom I am one.”⁶³

Towers started the Matamau Hotel in 1881, and later Charles Baddeley bought it. It no longer exists. Other hotels on the Ormondville-Matamau Rd were the Settlers Arms and the Makotuku hotel (the latter closed in 2004 but a single-storey structure still stands: John Charles Davis was proprietor in Colenso’s time).

MATAMAU HOTEL.

S. B A D D E L E Y
begs to inform the public that,
havinw taken the above hostelry, he is prepared to supply the best accommodation to travellers.

Persons travelling through the Seventy-Mile Bush will find this Hotel a convenient stage.

None but the best Liquors kept.

Good Stabling.

S. BADDELEY Proprietor.

32

Dannevirke

A correspondent to the Bush Advocate wrote,⁶⁴ “Many of your readers will regret to hear that our worthy scientist, the Rev. William Colenso, is about leaving our district for the winter, he having pressing duties to attend to in Napier. He has been residing at Mr Baddeley’s Railway Hotel for some time past, not only as a matter of choice for the unsurpassing salubrity of the locality and its bracing climate, but for its proximity to a splendid fern bush, and other notable novelties in the wild shrubbery line, amongst which in good weather he invariably took his eager walks in the interest of science.” In 1885 Charles Baddeley took over the Railway Hotel in Dannevirke, and conducted it for about ten or twelve years, when he sold out to one Scrimgeour and began sheep-farming nearby. For a time he also had an interest in the Matamau Hotel.

Colenso wrote, “It so happens that I have been residing here nearly a month in the oldest hotel in the township....”⁶⁵ And again, “I remain *here*, partly on account of its *altitude* (always enjoying better health here), partly kind motherly care & treatment from the widow-mistress of this hotel.”⁶⁶

63 The hotel question at Makotuku. *Hawke’s Bay Herald* 21 May 1885.

64 29 May 1888: see *Give your thoughts life*.

65A reply to Old Ratepayer. *Bush Advocate* 30 October 1890 from Dannevirke.

66 Colenso to JD Hooker 2 July 1897 from Dannevirke. Charles Baddeley’s widow was running the hotel. In these latter years, when Colenso was in Dannevirke as locum for the local clergy, he wrote, “Here I may add — in serving Dvk. & Wdv., I pay my own expenses—travelling & hotel (this latter at 10/- per diem exclusive of extras!)—13 September 1890 to JD Hooker. See *Colenso’s collections*.

RAILWAY HOTEL, **DANNEVIRKE.** Patronised in London by H.M. King **EDWARD VII.**

THE appointed house for the Commercial Travellers and Warehousemen’s Association.

Wines and Spirits of the best quality.

SIX LARGE SAMPLE ROOMS.

Speight’s Dunedin Beer always on tap.

Speight’s Bottled Ale and Stout by the bottle, dozen, or case.

Good stabling and paddocking.

A NDREWS AND L AVELLE.
PROPRIETORS.

The Railway Hotel has gone. A modern single-storey hotel occupies a site near the railway station.

Woodville

We... stayed at the “Woodville Club H.”,—and I enquired particularly after *you* from the host Murphy.⁶⁷

Colenso wrote of a display of bleached ferns, “I saw this elegant and peculiar specimen of art-decoration—so chaste and simple and yet so strikingly lovely—at the Club Hotel, in Woodville, in the larger parlour upstairs; I often admired it. There it stood, conspicuous among other ornaments, on the top of a high dark-coloured piano.”⁶⁸

In 1883 the Abercorn Arms, which he referred to as “Bickerton’s” was built.⁶⁹ The *Wanganui Herald* reported in 1883 “The new house being built by Mr Murdoch and McKenzie will be known as the Abercorn Arms and has a substantial and comfortable appearance. The site is opposite the Club, and in addition to the bar and bar parlor on the ground floor, the building contains private rooms and bedrooms, dining and commercial rooms and kitchen. Upstairs there are nine bedrooms, double and single, parlors and private suite and bathroom. The rooms open into a very wide passage, leading to an enclosed balcony at the rear of the building whence a magnificent view of the surrounding country may be obtained. A bathroom is also provided and the proprietor of the hotel means to vie with others in establishing first-class accommodation.”

The Abercorn Arms lasted four years, and burned in 1887, to be replaced by the “Masonic”.

In 1896 Colenso wrote to Hans Mortensen, “...my lodgings was at the ‘Commercial hotel,’ near the Railway Station” (Woodville).

67 Colenso to Andrew Luff 15 May 1884.

68 Colenso W. Bush jottings: No. 2 (Botanical). *Trans NZ Inst.* 1892; 25: 307–319.

69 The *Hawke’s Bay Herald* of 14 April 1884: “At the last ordinary monthly meeting of the Abercorn Masonic Lodge a pleasing part of the business of the meeting was the presentation of a Past Master’s jewel to Bro. L. D. Bickerton, on the eve of his departure for Woodville.”

COMMERCIAL HOTEL

WOODVILLE

H. L. JULL

PROPRIETOR.

THIS Hotel is now the most complete in Woodville, having just been refurnished throughout within two minutes' walk of the Railway Station.

H. L. JULL will be glad to see all his old friends, and will guarantee to make them comfortable.

The Stopping Place for all the Coaches from Pahiatua and surrounding districts.

WINES AND SPIRITS OF THE
BEST DESCRIPTION.

Rooms for Families wishing to spend a day in the Bush Districts. 10

[TO THE EDITOR OF THE DAILY TELEGRAPH.]

SIR,—In your issue of the 6th instant you say “The railway time-table requires further alteration to allow travellers from Woodville to get something to eat on the journey; *there is nothing to be had at Tahoraite.*” Such a statement is not correct, as dinner is on the table at Tahoraite for passengers coming from Woodville, &c. It is no fault of mine if the coach will not wait 10 minutes for the passengers to dine. —I am, &c.,

P. S. MACDONALD,

Proprietor Tamaki Hotel, Tahoraite.

[The Tamaki Hotel is, we should think a good two miles from the railway station, and the coaches from Woodville do not stop there for dinner as they have to get to Tahoraite to meet the train from Napier at 12.25 p.m. The Tamaki Hotel provides an excellent dinner for passengers from Napier. Our remarks applied to passengers from Woodville to Napier.—Ed. E.T.]

The Commercial hotel burned in 1898. The Club Hotel burned in 1935.⁷⁰

Hampden (Tikokino)

Colenso also mentioned visiting Hampden in his letters to Drummond.⁷¹ He received specimens from SW Hardy of Hampden. Hardy is listed as a member of the Hawke's Bay Philosophical Institute in 1883 and 1886. Tikokino, north of Ongaonga was originally named Hampden after Sir John Hampden, and was settled in anticipation of the main railway line from Napier to Wellington passing through the town. But the railway was laid south through JD Ormond MP's Ormondville, and Hampden became known for the milling of totara and kahikatea from the surrounding bush. At one time 20 timber mills were working in the area.⁷² An early general store, Old Flynn's Store, built in 1894, still stands on SH50, and the hotel, the second on the site after the first (built in 1864) was destroyed by fire, is still called the Sawyer's Arms after the foresters who used to drink there.

Tahoraite

School Inspector Colenso wrote to Andrew Luff in 1875, “I rode in one day from Porangahau to Waipukurau—and in another day rode back: & was not I tired!! I have been also to Danneverke, & on to Tamaki Hotel, *walking*—& then walking back in pain to Railway Hotel—and was not I tired!”

The *Daily Telegraph* of 19 December 1884 says,

Acknowledgements and conventions

I wish to thank the staff of the libraries and museums from which most of these letters are sourced: the Alexander Turnbull Library (ATL), New Zealand National Archives (Archives), the Hocken Library (Hocken), the Auckland Museum Library, Hawke's Bay Museums Trust Ruawhara Tā-ū-rangi (MTGHB), Puke Ariki New Plymouth, the Australian National Library, the Mitchell Library Sydney, the Morrab Library and the Penlee House Gallery, Penzance, the herbarium and library at the Royal Botanic Gardens, Kew and the library of the Linnean Society.

I am grateful too to the private owners of letters, referenced in the text.

I have delved often into *Papers Past* and congratulate and thank its staff.

I also acknowledge colleagues in the Colenso Society whose help and support, one way or another, I value highly: Peter Wells, Ann Collins, Sydney Shep, Gillian Bell, Sarah Carter, Kay Morris Matthews, Tony Gates, Gordon Sylvester, Bev. Park, Pam Hyde. I am grateful to Frith Driver-Burgess for translating the two letters in te reo.

Every substantial unpublished letter I could find has been transcribed: no doubt there are more but this sequence gives a pretty comprehensive picture of the man and his view of his life and times.

I have not reproduced a good number of variably legible drafts of brief or undated notes to the printers and editors involved with Colenso's work—Coupland Harding, the Government printers Sam Costall and John Mackay, and James Hector—nor those to the Native Minister about the Lexicon, of which an incomplete list contains 70 letters,⁷³ which—perhaps mercifully—were lost in the 1906 Parliamentary fire. Nor have I transcribed a fascinating set

⁷⁰ Fire destroys Woodville's Club Hotel; *Manawatu Evening Standard* 6 Aug 1935; Page: 6[8].

⁷¹ eg 22 January 1880.

⁷² Tikokino, “an eclectic mix of history, art and country gardens.” www.centralhawkesbay.co.nz/discover_tikokino.shtml accessed 12 Dec 2007.

⁷³ NZ National Archives: Maori Affairs: Index to Registers of Inward Letters in English 1863–1892.

of letters written to school teachers and others during Colenso's period as Inspector of Schools.⁷⁴

For the great majority my colleagues and I have transcribed from images of the original manuscripts: for a few I have relied on typescripts, by GC Petersen or AG Bagnall, of original manuscripts that are not accessible to me.

References are in sequenced superscript Roman numerals. Colenso's own marginal notes and footnotes are included in the text or as footnotes identified by "WC:". I have referred to the source documents I accessed—often photocopies of the originals.

For his letters I have put the year first in the heading, then the month and day. I have generally put the recipient's name and address at the beginning rather than at the end, as was the way then. The original pagination of many of the longer letters is marked with figures in bold square brackets, thus: **[14]**.

Colenso's handwriting is not difficult, but some of the pages of his letters have become semitransparent with writing on the backs showing through, have faded, been torn, crumpled, written over or suffered inkblots or other stains and are difficult to read: I have inserted asterisks where I have not been able to read a word or passage.

The idiosyncratic spelling is Colenso's, including the early American spellings, which he later claimed he abhorred. At times he used the old "thorn" letter "þ" for "th"—as in "þs" for "this", "þt" for "that" and "þe" for "the." At times he used a "W" with an apostrophe above it for "Wh" in te reo: I have approximated with the symbols \ddot{W} and \dot{w} . I have transcribed æ, Æ, œ, Œ as in the manuscripts. I have left the macron off te reo vowels (including that in the word Māori) where Colenso left it off (almost always).

Underlined words & phrases go to italics, double underlines go to underlined italics, triple underlines go to double underlined italics. All dashes are transcribed as em-dashes, except where there is a range, when I have used an en-dash eg, 5–10 leaves, 1 January–1 February.

All spellings, abbreviations etc are as written: "&c." for "etc." usually. He wrote many of his abbreviations as superscript: I have not done so, for the sake of ease of reading. I have transcribed superscript only for dates like 12th but not for abbreviated words like Comm^{ee}. or Dec^r. (Colenso would write Comm^{ee}. and Dec^r.).

Fullstops where he has them, all commas as is. Multiple dashes as he has them — — —. Ampersand (&) where he has it. Xy. for Christianity, Xn. for Christian, Xmas for Christmas where he has them. He always wrote "Baptize," but otherwise his use of "-ise" or "-ize" is inconsistent.

Capitals as he has them, but note: Colenso's lower case e, s, v, w, y and c all look pretty much like his upper case, and he was inconsistent in his capitalisation. He almost invariably used small caps for GOD and LORD.



William Colenso

⁷⁴ See "Inspector of Schools: Correspondence and Reports. July 1872—18 May 1878. Bound volume, MTGHB m58/34.

1834 February 18: to Coates⁷⁵

To, Dandeson Coates, Esqr.,
Secretary of the Church Missionary Society.

Com. of Cor. Feb. 18/34.

Sir

Understanding that your Society is in want of a person, to go out to New Zealand as a Missionary-Printer,—I offer to it, my services unreservedly.

First:—as a Printer, I feel myself competent for “Press and Case,” in the common routine of the Trade:—

Second:—as a Bookbinder, knowing that Art, also, which might be of service, combined with the Printing Department, there:—

Third:—aware of the value of the Religion of Christ, whatever also, is, or may be, in my power, I wholly dedicate myself to carry forever the cause of the Cross, against the mighty—

In offering myself, Sir, to your Society, I beg to state, that 'tis not, I trust, (with regard to myself,) from *any worldly motive*, as the offers I have, or, (in the event of your accepting my services) may refuse, would be far more lucrative.

With Regards to my Character, I would refer you, Sir, (in London,) to Mr. Watts, your Printer. (in whose employ I have been near *four* months) and to the Rev: J: Dyer:—and in my native Town, (Penzance, Cornwall,) to the Church Minister—the Wesleyan and Dissenting Minister—and to the principal inhabitants.

To the consideration of your Society, Sir, (under God,) I commit myself:—Trusting that, if it is His will, it may be pleased to accept my services—if not—refused them:—

Awaiting your answer

I remain

Yr: mo: ob: servt.

William Colenso Jr.

1834 April 23: to Mr Flamank⁷⁶

Penzance, April 23rd, 1834.

Mr Flamank

Sir,

Prior to my leaving
Penz. for London in Octr. last—I was admitted
a member of the Penz. Institute *****
I say, I continued a member thereafter for
9 months.

Having ***** the situation of
missionary ***** that—

⁷⁵ ATL Micro-Ms-0309; 88-103-1/04.

⁷⁶ The original (ATL MS-Papers-9131) is faded almost to complete illegibility, but is clearly a draft of a slightly different version of the next letter, to the Mechanics Institute at Penzance. Possibly Rev W Flamank DD who entertained John Wesley at his house when he visited Cornwall; St Austell 1803; Boscarne 1817.

***** of the Globe—New
Zealand. If ***** to
*** that *****
vantage *****
specimen *****
Ichthy *****
and ***** at every
opportunity *****
when ***** special formation
for *****
might become *****.

Judge then, Sir, of my feelings when on
my approaching to the *****
denied admittance *****
having been a member *****
for a week or two *****
my name, I could not get *****
obliged to retire quietly *****.

How many ***** been
***** by paying *****
***** in the language of the *****
***** My happy lot to *****

***** when
that distant land *** the ***. In the *****
Should the Almighty be pleased to spare me
my health & strength, **** shall ***** devoted
***** and enrichment (if possible) of the
Penzance Institution.

Whether the ***** restated now
official *****
that remain *****
Institution *****.

1834 April 23: to Penzance Institution⁷⁷

Penzance
April 23rd. 1834,

Respected Sir,

When in October last I left my native town for London, next to the regret of leaving family and friends, I think, was that of leaving the Institution of which I was a member.

Having accepted the situation of Missionary Printer to the C.M.S. in N.Z. the Institution immediately occurred to my recollection, and my spare time I said should be devoted to furthering the interests of it. Specimens of the Botany, Geology, Ornithology, Entomology, Conchology and Ichthyology of that interesting portion of the Globe it was my intention to transmit at every opportunity to the Institution.

Judge than, Sir, of my surprise at being last night refused admittance, although I stated that I had been a member—that 'twas only in consequence of my leaving for London, that I had not continued as such.

⁷⁷ This was the Mechanics Institute at Penzance. ATL MS-Papers-9131, faded manuscript; and ATL 80-038, typescript in the Petersen papers.

I gave my name, but 'twould not avail, because I, who was only home for a fortnight, had no Ticket. Had I known that such a strict rule prevailed I could have provided one. Whether the doorkeeper over-stretched his official authority or not, I cannot tell.

Still, Sir, my leisure time, when in that distant land, should God spare me health and strength, shall be partly devoted to the enrichment (if possible) of the "Penzance Institution."

I am, Sir,
Yours most obediently,
W.C.

1834 November 1: to Coates⁷⁸

Sydney, New South Wales, Novr. 1, 1834.

To Dandeson Coates Esqr.

Dr. Sir,

By the blessing of GOD we are safely arrived at this "halting place," from which we trust soon to proceed to New Zealand.—

I premise, that I need not enter into a detail of Incidents which occurred on the Voyage, as, I believe, that my dear Brother Wade, will send you a full account of whatsoever he deems worthy your attention.—I would merely say, that we were blessed with *more* comforts than I expected, thanks to the Almighty, the Society, and Capt. Aitken, who is, I firmly believe, as a Captain, a worthy man.

I trust, Sir, that the Passengers who accompanied us, and the crew of the "Prince Regent," will yet *have* to thank GOD for our coming out in her.—I am, I trust, thankful for His mercies, and I don't consider it the least to have such a companion as Mr. W.R. Wade.

In a letter which I received from the C.M.H., bearing date April 24th, 1834, I read,— "The Society will supply with whatsoever shall appear to be needful both *in books* and other articles."—I have again, to acknowledge the great goodness of the Society in granting me so many comforts as I have already received: but I would venture to inquire—as I find there is not a single Book, save the valuable Bible which you were so kind as to give me, Sir, sent on board for W.C.—whether there are any allowed? If so, I should be glad to have a few pr. first opportunity: two or three of the Society's *Greek* works, I should be thankful for, as they would, to me, be a desideratum.

I have yet one more request to prefer—that you will, Sir, be pleased to order £5, to be sent to my Father, at Penzance, every *half-year*, commencing at Midsummer next. In doing *this*, you will greatly oblige and benefit me.

Praying, that you, Sir, and *our* Society at Home, may be abundantly blessed by GOD, through Jesus Christ;—and, that we, your co-workers in the Vineyard of Christ, may be united by the Spirit in the bonds of Love and Peace,

I am,
Dear Sir,
yours faithfully,
Willm. Colenso.

P.S. Please remember me to Mr Watts—and to the Clerks in your office—Sir.

1835 January 15: to Coates⁷⁹

Paihia, Bay of Islands, New Zealand,
January 15th, 1835.

To Dandeson Coates, Esqr.,

Dear Sir,

The LORD GOD of Israel who never slumbers nor sleeps hath, in his manifold mercy, brought us safe to our "desired haven"!—Truly we are bound to offer a Long-year, a triumphant strain of ascription to our GOD, "who only doeth wondrous things"!

At Sydney, day after day rolled by, and we could not hear of any vessel about to sail for New Zealand.—At last we engaged the "Blackbird," a small Schooner, of only 67 tons register,—and, on Tuesday the 9th. Decr., went on board, in order to commence our second voyage:—She did not weigh anchor, however, until the next morning, and was not much under weigh more than 3 hours when she ran ashore on a small isle, within Port Jackson, called, "Sharks' Island," there she stuck fast for a few hours, but was got off, without damage:—we again proceeded, and, in the evening, *once more* anchored *within* Port Jackson.—The next morning we bade adieu to the shores of New Holland.~

At Sydney we found several friends—the Revd. Rd. Hill, did everything in his power to contribute to our comfort during our stay; for which I feel exceedingly thankful.—We also saw the Revd. Messrs. Cowper, Styles, & Marsden, and were at the residence of the latter at Paramatta.—We were, also, introduced to a Capt. Brown of the XV. Madras Infantry, who was, *I believe*, Sir, Secretary to the Church Missionary Committee, there;—he accompanied us in the "Blackbird" to New Zealand, on a visit to his brother:—he is a true disciple of Jesus.—

But to proceed with our Voyage:—for three weeks were we beat about, by contrary winds, in the South Pacific in our little bark;—which was not only very dirty and crammed with cargo, but very leaky! her leaks gained on her considerably, she drew, at last, 7 inches an hour, and kept a hand almost constantly pumping—but He who holdeth the winds in his fist, and ruleth the raging of the seas, kept us, by His Almighty power from any harm! and, on Tuesday the 30th. Decr. allowed us to tread the shores of New Zealand!

We found our dear Brethren, who rejoiced to see us, in health.—The next morning the natives surrounded us, crying, "Ka pai Mihanere," (very good Missionary,) when the Revd. W. Williams gave them to understand that I was a Printer, and come out to print books for them, they were quite elated;—no hero of "olden time" was ever received by his army with greater éclat. they appeared as if they would deify me! During the week I was busily employed with the natives in landing the goods; and, on Saturday, the 3rd. January, 1835,—a memorable epoch in the annals of New Zealand—I succeeded in getting the Printing Press landed.[2]—I was obliged to unpack it on board, but, I am happy to say, it is all safe on shore.—Could you, my dear Sir, but have witnessed the natives, when it was landed, they danced, shouted, and capered about in the water, giving vent to the wildest effusions of joy, enquiring the use of *this*, and the place of *that*, with all that eagerness for which uncivilized nature is celebrated. Certes, they had

never seen such a thing before!—I trust soon to be enabled to get it to work. May the Father of mercies—to whose cause I desire to rededicate myself, body, soul, and spirit,—grant me strength and ability to work it for His glory! May it be instrumental, under His blessing, in bringing thousands to the Cross of our Immanuel!—and of rending that sombre pale of darkness and gloom, which “the Prince of the power of the air” has so long successfully wrapped around the inhabitants of these islands!

Our first Sabbath in this land, was *one*, that will not, I trust, be easily forgotten.—After the Service, and a Sermon in the native language by the Revd. H. Williams—which was attentively listened to by about 60 natives, who exhibited more order and regularity, my dear Sir, than I have found, I am sorry to say it, in many places of worship in civilized, Christian England!—a little native was baptized, by the name of “Piripi,” (Philip.)—May he be added to the church triumphant!—The Revd. A.N. Brown preached a Sermon in English, and we commemorated the dying love of our dear Redeemer! Surely ’twas a “festal day.”—Our *first* Sabbath in *this* land—the *first* in the year—blessed with witnessing the celebration of both Sacraments, and, what is far greater, of feeling an interest in the blood of Jesus, is more than we could have expected.—Truly the LORD is still good unto us—He hath not, blessed be his name, notwithstanding our manifold sins, forgotten us!

Throughout the Islands there appears to be, dear Sir, a universal movement—a mighty stirring of the People—the Chiefs of distant tribes come down to Waimate, and this place for Books and Missionaries! These seem to be the nil ultra of their ambition. I have seen them, myself, gladly bring their store of Potatoes for a book! May the LORD put into the hearts of the Christians of England, a universal answer to this universal cry, and question!—indeed, all Christians, who *have known the love of GOD in their own hearts, will, must, come forward, in some shape or other, “to the help of the LORD against the mighty”!* Would that I had the nature of a polypi, I would not hesitate to cut my members to pieces, instantly, and say to each, “Go forth, in the name of the LORD!”

The Committee of Missionaries, dear Sir, have thought proper to station the Press at Paihia; of course, I am here also:—so is Mr. Wade, for the present. Mr. Flett, also, remains here, for the present. The Revd. A.N. Brown⁸⁰ [3] with his wife and family, is waiting for a fair wind, to carry him to his new station,—Puriri.—Several new stations are formed, and others forming, more will be added when there are labourers to “go forth”! Whilst in England, I heard a *great deal* about Missions, and might have sometimes entertained an idea of the accounts published being exaggerated, but, I *now* find that it is not so—*quite the contrary*.—

It is a gladdening sight to see and hear the natives at Prayers.—It is generally conducted by a baptized native Christian,—whose tall commanding figure,—book in hand,—loosely wrapped in a blanket,—or flax mat,—after the manner of the ancient toga, forcibly reminds me of Raphael’s cartoon of “Paul preaching at Athens.”—Their language conveys in the sound, something *peculiarly devotional*.—The Confession, Lord’s Prayer, and other portions of our beautiful liturgy, sounds, in the native tongue, really awe-inspiring.—Every morning and evening, the Chief and the Slave—the Cannibal Warrior and the

“smiling babe”, are to be found prostrate before the mercy-seat of our Saviour and their GOD! If anyone’s heart wants animating towards Missions, he should witness this sight;—if he did not soften, he must be, indeed, “harder than the nether mill-stone.” I can now adopt the language of the Prophet:—“From the uttermost parts of the earth, have we heard songs—glory to the righteous!—even the name of the LORD GOD of Israel, in the isles of the Sea”!

I wrote you, dear Sir, a *short* letter from Sydney, and I hope you have been so kind as to attend to my requests. Please present my best respects and Christian love to Revd. W. Jowett and the Revd. J. Dyer. (Fen Court, Fenchurch St.) not forgetting, Mr. Northover and *all* enquiring brethren.

We left England without any printing paper, but I hope it will arrive by the time I am ready for it.

But I must, Sir, close:—I fear I have trespassed already, on your patience, at least.—May the “GOD of Israel” keep and bless you, in your “goings out and comings in”,—and, when your “labour of love” below is finished, give you, through Jesus Christ our Redeemer, a peaceful entrance into the New Jerusalem!

So prays, an *unworthy* Missionary of Christ,
called,
William Colenso.

1835 March 16: to Coates⁸¹

Paihia, Bay of Islands, New Zealand, March 16th., 35.

To Dandeson Coates, Esqr.

Dear Sir,

The “Vigilant” being about to sail in a few days, I embrace this opportunity of writing you, in order to “report progress”.—

Since the date of my last (Jany. 31.) which I trust came to hand in due time, I have been busily engaged in cleaning and setting up the printing press and getting it into working condition:—laying cases, composing and working off 2000 copies of a post 8vo./ tract of 16 pps: containing Paul’s Epistles to the Ephesians and Philippians.—A printer in London cannot form a correct idea of the disadvantages which I laboured under in the getting this up and sending it out. In consequence of not having a single lead I was obliged to substitute paper and spaces for blank lines.—I hope the leads, &c, will speedily arrive.—I have a native assistant, a fine sharp boy of about 15 years of age; if he proves steady he will be a valuable acquisition. He rolled nearly all the 2000 copies, and though he labours under a great disadvantage in my not understanding the language yet he gets on remarkably well.—I trust, dear Sir, that, considering all things you will be pleased with this little “pukapuka,”—12 copies of which you have enclosed for your government. I should have wished to put covers to all of these little silent messengers, but we have no paper for that purpose; the one enclosed with a [2] pink cover, is covered with blotting papers. I trust that the Society will, (if there is not some already sent) send out a few reams of colored paper for this purpose.

80 The Fairburns left Paihia for Puriri in 1834.

81 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

This “first fruits” of the New Zealand Press, which the Lord hath been pleased to allow *me* to begin and complete, is very much liked by the natives.—May it, being the “Word of GOD,” be the means of making thousands “wise unto salvation”—and the preface, as it were, to a more glorious diffusion of Gospel light over these benighted lands!

The work of the Lord is going on:—every day shews us, not only negatively but *positively*, that Satan’s sway over the hearts of the inhabitants of these islands, is becoming less and less powerful;—for this, “Glory to God in the highest;” shall be our song—and “Thy kingdom come,” our daily prayer.

I intimated in my last a hope, that the printing paper would arrive by the time we were ready for it: I am sorry to say, that it has not yet made its appearance; I trust soon to see it, else I shall be led to suppose, (from the circumstance of its being about to follow us immediately from England,) that it is lost. We now await its arrival in order to commence printing the New Testament.—May GOD give me strength and ability to do *His* work.

I have written my Parents by this ship, and [3] given them directions to purchase several articles for me, you will, therefore, Sir, be pleased to pay in at Sir J.N. Lubbock’s & Co’s. bank, 11, Mansion House Street, the sum of Sixteen Pounds, (on my account,) with instructions to pay it through their Banker at Penzance, to my Father at that place.—

We have heard that our Society has received a munificent donation of £9000.—“Truly God is good to Israel!”—for this His name shall be praised.—

My health is, I am happy to say, pretty good; but I have had such a succession of colds lately that I am not yet exactly settled, but trust through the blessing of GOD to be soon.—

I have many interesting things to write on, but my brethren will, doubtless, give them in *their* communications.—

Beseaching you, dear Sir, and all friends, ever to remember us in your prayers; and praying that the blessing of GOD may rest on our Society, and on all its laborers,

I am, dear Sir,

yr. mo: ob: servt.

Willm. Colenso, Jr.

P.S. You may send, Sir, the £16. to Penzance, through any other Bank,—or by any other way, which you may think proper.

Mar. 28th, pr. “Portsea”—the Vigilant having sailed, earlier than I expected.—

Please forward the 2 little Tracts, enclosed in the Bot., to Mr. Vyvyan, when you send down the “Record,” to the West of England, or at your *earliest* convenience.

1836 January 9: to Coates⁸²

Paihia, Bay of Islands.
Jany. 9th/36.

Dandeson Coates Esqr.,

Sir,

After a long silence occasioned by pressure of Business, I once more take up my Pen to write you, Sir,—although at this very moment I have more than a dozen different things to do!

I am glad to have to present you with another portion of God’s word in the Native tongue—the Gospel of St. Luke, which I have been permitted to begin and finish since I last wrote—I struck off 1000 copies, have bound upwards of 400, and am going on with the remainder—I cannot bind them fast enough for the Natives, they are very impatient to obtain them. I am at a loss for somewhat to cover these Books—in the case of Binding Materials sent from England was *only one* piece of colored cloth for this purpose—when there ought to have been at least a dozen—this piece is all used it covered about 250. I have also printed 600 copies of the Addition, Multiplication, and Shillings and Pence Tables for the Natives—and 200 Circular Letters, (part of the number in English & part in Native,) for the British Resident, J. Busby, Esqr.,—The printing those things, binding those Gospels, and repairing and binding Native Books, (those 4to. Native Books printed in the Colony, are poor things, they reflect *no* credit on the Printer—*less* on the Binder—and still *less* on the Editor—it has been computed that there are not less than 1000 errors in the work! I have already seen, in the course of reading to the Natives, &c, near 400!) have occupied my time till now—I am going on with the binding the remainder of the Gospels—and hope in 3 or 4 weeks to commence printing the New Testament. My work has lain rather heavy upon me, and little to shew for the time engaged therein—but it must not be forgotten, that I have almost everything to do with my own hands. I have *no* assistant in the work—and when I shall have a native assistant I know not. The Lad whom I mentioned in my last letter, has left me, having behaved very ill and very ungratefully to me, he left of his own desire, for I was too fond of him [2] to turn him away bad as he was.—Yet I see the goodness of GOD in it, Sir, for I was too strongly attached to him—he had made great proficiency in the business. The time is hardly yet arrived, I fear, for natives to settle down to steady employ of any kind—they are so independent—the veriest slave never considers himself your servant, and, having no sense or idea of gratitude, for a word leaves you instantly! For hard outdoor work they may do tolerably well—even there they will not work steadily—but for steady, in-door, quiet employ, this generation, for the present, must not be mentioned. Sometimes I am without a native, and have, in addition to my employment, to Hew wood & fetch water, &c &c &c, which, work as fast as I will Takes some time—often have I lain down exhausted and awoke after 2 or 3 hours sleep tired!—Still, and it is all one as if my work was lighter, God strengthens me!

Month after month rolled away and no Paper arrived—but a few days ago 100 Ream, unfortunately of two different qualities, made its appearance, with this we commence the Testament. I have also received a Lot of Type from England but in *very bad* condition, owing to the manner in

82 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

which they were packed—one box I understand went to pieces at Sydney owing to its being old & rotten—*several* Leads, &c, were broken and rendered useless. It may not be amiss for me, Sir, here, to say a word or two in plainness on this subject:— 1. When the Society sends out a Printer, or a “Mechanic” it would, in my humble opinion, be advisable to condescend to ask him what will be wanted! and what will be useful? and to be, in a measure, guided by his professional reply.—Now in the equipment of this Printing Establishment some tens of Pounds might be saved and yet the Printing office benefitted! The same in a measure applies to the Binding Department.— 2. With many of those parcels of Type, &c, no Invoice or Bill has arrived, and I know not their weight or quantity.—The “Tariff” by which they were selected, too, would be desirable as they are *not* selected according to the “run of sorts” in the N. Zealand Language, so that the consequence is that when you have composed a few pages you have to stop!—so I believe it is the opinion of many of those who are termed “fair tradesmen”—that anything will do for New Zealand!

A short time since I opened a Box, which was shipped on board the “Sovereign,” Capt. Baker, Novr. 21, 1833. containing what *had been* a small Iron Press, and [3] some Type.—If it were possible the person who sold and packed the Press and Type, should, at least, be compelled to pay for the Type, which pr. Invoice amounts to £15.7.6—now worth a few shillings as old metal! who ever heard of an *Iron* press being put loosely in a large Box with Type, and nothing to keep them from battering against each other!—The Type is all “pie,” and I expect totally useless, for the various Irons of the Press were broken to pieces!

Allow me to say a word or two, Sir, on the selecting Paper, &c. for us for Printing—we do not want a *fine* paper, but a *strong* paper:—the *coarseness* is of little consequence—let it be made of *linen*-rag, and not that rotten-bleached stuff, whitened by acids, fit only for the delicate finger of an English Lady to handle—such a Paper as the coarse, old, Linen Paper you might have seen, Sir, in your school-boy days, in School-books—strong—durable. With regard to what the Committee may select for binding the New Testament, I have to observe that a suitable *cheap* canvas might be obtained—or the stout sheep, I should recommend, such as is used by the Bible Society—this I think would only cost about 2d or 3d pr. Book. In sending Mill-board for the Test. covers, I hope you will send sufficient, as, at present, in consequence of having only enough for the covers of about 250 Books—St. Luke’s Gospel—I am obliged to paste together Brown Paper, which is not only not so good but takes a considerable deal more Labour.—

I have entered on my 2nd. year in N. Zealand. Oh! may the LORD enable me to serve Him *better this* year than I did the last—His work is nobly going on around about us—*many* were baptized last half-year, and *many* are enquiring. I had the great pleasure to partake of the LORD’S Supper the other day @ Waimate with 70 natives, and last Sunday it was administered there to *upwards* of 100 Natives, and those only a portion of the Chrisn. Natives of that Station!

I refrain from saying more on these heads as my Brethren, doubtless, send all necessary Information. Excuse this scrawling Letter—the ship has been under weigh this morning—I must therefore close.—

I have received a Letter from dear Mr. Jowett, but cannot now stay to answer it. Praying for you all—that you and we

may be one in Him and He in us—and beseeching your prayers in return.

I have the honor to be,

Dr. Sir, yr: mo: ob: sert.

William Colenso

I send you a copy of a note received yesterday from a Chief called Wari at Wangaruru, a native place on the Coast outside Cape Brett,—where I suppose I shall pay a visit in a week or two.

E kara, e Peka,—Maku te tahi pu hei pupuhi mo Hiro
ma te Kapahu ano e tika hei urungi.”

“Na, Wari.”

Sir, father, the Baker—
(Give) For me one gun, (a Book) to enable (me) to shoot Hiro (the evil spirit) as the compass truly sets straight, (or guides) the rudder, (or steerer.)

From Wari.

The words in parentheses are supplied—the natives call a Bible or Gospel—“a gun”! W.C.

1836 September 9: to Coates⁸³

Paihia, Bay of Islands
Sepr.9/1836

D. Coates Esqr.,

Sir,

In great haste, the vessel having fired her gun, I write you these few lines to request you to pay my father on account of Salary, the sum of £11. Eleven Pounds—and charge the same to the a/c of—

Yours very truly

William Colenso.

1837 April 6: to Coates⁸⁴

Paihia, Bay of
Islands, April 6 1837.

D. Coates, Esqr.

Sir,

Please pay the *Bearer* the Revd. F. Wilkinson, the sum of Two Pounds, and charge the same to the account of

William Colenso.

£2..0..0

83 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

84 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

1837 August 30: to Coates⁸⁵

Paihia, Bay of
Islands, Augt.
30 1837

D. Coates, Esqr.

Dr. Sir,

Please pay my Father, Mr S.M. Colenso, Penzance, the sum of Two Pounds, ten shillings, and charge the same to the a/c of

yr: mo: ob:
William Colenso.

1838 March 24: to the CMS secretaries⁸⁶

Sirs and Brethren

Two years have rolled by since I last wrote you: and yet I am spared and permitted to write you again.—And what shall I say? Oh! let me, as it is my bounden duty, commence with a song of assumption and thanksgiving:—

“Blessing and honor and glory and power be unto the Lamb for ever and ever: He hath put down the mighty and exalted them of low degree!—The Scriptures of the New Covenant are printed, and ere this reach you will (D.V.) be in circulation! Through the blessing of GOD on your unworthy servant, the Testament was finished printing in December 1837, and I was enabled to get a few bound up for my Brethren, so as to present them on the 1st. Jany. 1838, forming, as you may suppose, a most acceptable New Year’s gift. May GOD bless His word! and may many New Zealanders prove it to be, what it is, indeed, the word of GOD! able to make them wise unto Salvation!

Trials great and many occurred during the progress of this Book through the press: Satan, evidently, fought against the publication of it, but once more are we called on to set to, our seals that God *is* true, and to say with the Psalmist—Though “many are the afflictions of the righteous, yet GOD delivereth him out of them all”! 5000 copies have been struck off, and I am now engaged in binding some for the Natives, but am getting on but slowly, from having no assistant, and from having, necessarily having, a multitude of other things to attend to. I have only 6 copies by me bound, the which I send you, and hope to forward you a few more by next opportunity. I hope you will be pleased, on the whole, with the Books; I trust you will when you take all the disadvantages, under which we labor, into consideration.

The Prayer Book has been revised and corrected, and is likely to be given into my hands for press, when I am prepared to receive it, that will be, I trust, in about a month or 6 weeks. For Prayer Books and Hymns there is a very great demand. A Grammar, English and New Zealand, has been commenced, and the 1st. halfsheet (Demy 12mo.) is now ready for press:—this also, I hope, will soon be struck off.—

Our Committee were pleased, in their last meeting, to fix the Press at this station: I trust the LORD directed them in their decision. Their reasons for so doing are, doubtless, transmitted to you by this opportunity.—

The Revd. W. Williams having been appointed by the Northern Missionary Committee, to visit the East Cape and neighbourhood, I accompanied him, for two reasons:—1st., as an assistant, to which I was, also, deputed by the Committee, and 2nd., for relaxation; my required and constant attention to the duties of the Press having necessarily and greatly confined me within the precincts of our Station. We sailed from this place on the 1st. Jany., 1838, and, (having in our way called at Tauranga, where we spent a few days,) [2] we on the 16th. landed at Warekahika, (“Hick’s Bay in Map.)—we journeyed on, under the Cliffs on the Sea Coast, until the 27th., when we reached Turanga, (Poverty Bay) and on the 29th. went on board our vessel, which had come to that place to meet us as appointed, and returned:—we landed at Paihia on the 13th. of February, much gratified with our visit.

The Districts which we passed through—and the adjacent parts—are thickly peopled: the villages are large, some containing 1, and 2,000 souls:—the people, (in some places most particularly) heard the Word of God with attention and eagerness—a proof of which we had in their continual enquiries—their eagerness to obtain Books, (which, alas! they could not read,) and their pressing entreaties for Teachers to instruct them. In some places—though a Missionaries’ foot had never trod their soil before, nor had they ever beheld a Missionaries’ face—they do not work on the Sabbath, and as a further proof of their willingness to receive the “new word”, in one place they had been keeping 2 days in a week as a Sabbath, instead of one, being taught to do so by a Native who had at one time been in the employ of the Mission., at the Northward. The head chiefs committed their sons to our care for Instruction, which by the blessing of God we hope to be enabled. *Here* is an immense field of labor awaiting the self-denying faithful servant of Jesus—I say *self-denying and faithful*: for such especially must he be who enters on this extensive cure, in order to be free from blood-guiltiness. *Here* is, also, a field white unto harvest; the people are ready, in some places, to cast away their superstitions, and to listen to that which is able to guide their feet into the way of peace. And, as they are living in peace, and are related in a greater or lesser degree one with another—either by consanguinity or interest—their neighbours would, perhaps, be soon brought, seeing the example of those around about them, to seek for a refuge from the wrath to come.—I should have written more particularly and largely on this subject, but I suppose that the Revd. W. Williams will send you his Journal:—it not being expected, I believe, for *me* to keep a journal, consequently have I none to forward.—

I have received a little canvas for binding the Testaments for the Natives; but the quantity is so very small; it will only serve for 3 or 4 copies: if there has been none in addition sent since, please send us sufficient for, at least, the 5000 Copies.—

And now, Fathers in the Christian race! Brethren in the common cause! allow me to address you, and through you the Committee on a subject which has for a long time been *near* indeed to my heart.

When you communicated with me in England, I engaged with you to leave the land of my fathers as a Printer, and, at

⁸⁵ Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

⁸⁶ Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

that time, I had no other thought, no other wish,—(though it must be confessed, that *when* I was in the Country, I was often led to think that I should one day become an ambassador for Christ, how or when, I know not; this was an idea which I had ever had, even from my childhood.) I arrived in this land, and on my landing, much to my surprise, and much *then* against my will, was I required to assist in the English Services on the LORD’S-DAY. [3] GOD blessed me in this work; I soon had a share in the Native Services assigned me, and, 6 months after I landed, I was enabled (oh! The goodness of GOD!) to speak extemporaneously to the Natives in their own tongue:—from that time to the present have I had a full share, not only in all the spiritual duties of this Station, but, also, in visiting the institutions, in examining candidates, &c, &c,—I *now* feel, that I cannot attend to all—that I cannot attend to both. My mirror shews me the shadow of an attenuated countenance, produced from over-exertion, for from before sunrise until 10, 11, and 12 at Night am I continually engaged. I feel that in endeavoring to serve both the Press and the Pulpit, I, in a sense of the word, miss both: my discourses from want of reflection and from fatigue are not exactly what they should be; though I know—and here I would give *all* glory to GOD—that I am for this often most indescribably strengthened; and from want of necessary rest I feel often when working that at this rate my days will soon be numbered:—LORD’S-days, for instance, I have often to go upward of 30 miles, (20 in a boat and 10 on foot through the “bush”), preach 3, 4 & 5 times, visit sick, &c, &c, &c.—

I wish, Brethren, to lay my days out to my Redeemer’s glory who hath loved *me* and given himself *for me*! I wish to spend and be spent in His Service, and now the question is, How can I do it most effectively? It is this which I wish to bring before you, for your most serious consideration—I write this after much prayer—after much thought—after 3 years experience in the work;—and am forced to believe that my path is plain for me to go forth amongst the Heathen, as an Herald of the ☩. A few reasons I here subjoin:—

1. I believe, as in the presence of the LORD, that *He* has called me to *this* work.
2. He has given me, in a particular manner, the Native Language.
3. He has given me favor in their sight.
4. He has given me a love for preaching, with all its attendant hardships, in this land not few or small; for Travelling; and for the Natives.
5. He has given me a constitution naturally good, fitted perhaps to “rough” the hardships of the wilderness; and an adaptation, as it were, for being much amongst this people.
6. He has taken all fear away from me in regard of what the Natives may or can do.—

I have long been of opinion that one reason why our Mission does not flourish more is, from want of an every-day knowledge of the people: an hour or two on the LORD’S-day is not sufficient to see them; we ought to be daily moving amongst them. This is now the opinion of many of my Brethren, but, who is to go? is the question. Most of the Missionaries have large Families, and this with the secular affairs of their Stations, keep them at home—and of those who have not, some are, from a delicate state of *health*, from want of adaptation to the Natives, or from want of *that* knowledge of the language, &c, kept at home. This, combined with the reasons aforementioned and the

knowledge that the Heathen are crying for Instructors, and that there is no-one to go amongst them, constrain me to offer myself to go forth as a *Travelling Missionary*.

How is this to be effected? I wish you, my Brethren, to send *me* out an assistant Printer, as soon as possible; if married and young the better. By that time I shall have had 2 years more experience in the Land. I *then* wish to go forth on trial for 12 months, and then, (providing that this meets your approval, and that of the Committee here,) to return to England, to see my parents and family whom I affectionately [4] remember, *once* more, and disentangled, in order that I may war a good warfare and serve Him faithfully who hath called me to be a soldier—to offer myself as a Candidate for Holy Orders, and thus go forth, in the strength of my blessed Jesus, against the armies of the aliens.

Why wish to enter Holy Orders? why, my Brethren;—Not, GOD knows, for an earthly consideration—but, 1st.—That I may be grounded & strengthened in the lawfulness of my calling—and that I may *know* from an outward as well as an inward call that I am *sent*:—2nd.—That I may become the spiritual guide of all *that* flock which the LORD shall permit me to collect together:—and, 3rd.—That I may, as a Travelling Missionary,—having to visit places where no other will for some time perhaps be able to follow,—be allowed the unspeakable privilege of baptizing those whom the LORD shall give me.—

Let it not, Fathers and Brethren, be objected to me—that I *am* a *printer*. HE who called his prophets from the plough, and from among the herdmen of Tekoa, and his Apostles from the Fishery, may surely send a Herald from the Press?

More, at present, on this subject I will not say:—If it is of the LORD, He *will* dispose you to convert—open the way for me—and prepare me for this important work. If it is *not*; may He, of His infinite mercy, bring it to nought.

I have not made my intentions public, as yet, to my brethren here. I merely write you *this*, Fathers and Brethren, that you may be enabled to weigh and consider the matter, and, perhaps, kindly to let me know your opinion, that I may be guided thereby in taking any further steps in this affair.

Many thanks are due from me to dear Mr. Jowett, for his kind and affectionate Letters: I have 4 now lying before me, the last bearing date June 30/37. May his Master bless him, and fulfill him daily with the benediction of His Heavenly Grace.—

Oh, *pray* for us! pray for *us*! If ever your Mission in this land wanted prayer, it does *now*. The coldness within!—the darkness without! Zion *is* languishing! Satan *is* triumphing! Hell is populating! and your Servants are—through the mercies of their Guide—enabled to say—“Faint; yet *still* pursuing”.—

May the LORD be with you! Praying that we may *all prove* that blessed promise—“the LORD shall guide thee continually.”

I remain,
Fathers and Brethren,
yours most truly
William Colenso.

Please transmit to my Father the sum of Twenty six pounds, £26, stg: and charge the same to the a/c of

Willm. Colenso.

1838 June 4: to the CMS Secretaries⁸⁷

Paihia, Bay of Islands,
New Zealand,
June 4th., 1838.

Sirs and Brethren,

My last Letter to you was dated in March last, and sent pr. "Seringapatam", together with 4 copies of the New Zealand Testament, which, I trust, you safely received.—

Since the date of my last, I have been engaged in Binding: have bound near 300 copies; and am now about commencing the Prayer Book. I get on but slowly from want of assistance; however my conscience exculpates me from the charge of Idleness.—

I send by the "Buffalo", (which came in here, on her passage to England, 2 nights ago,) 6 more Testaments; 1 for Mr Knight, which, please, let him have pr first opportunity, and 1, from Mr. Davis, [2] for Revd. I.N. Coleman: making 8 in the parcel now sent.—

With regard to the principal subject in my last communication, Brethren, allow me to say that the desire of my heart to go forth amongst the people is unchanged, save that I long more earnestly to be set at liberty—that I may be enabled more fully to declare among these poor benighted Tribes, in the strength of my Master, the Word of Reconciliation.

A Native was shot at Hokianga about a fortnight ago; for the murder of a white man. He was tried—Mr Busby presided—sentenced to death, and shot accordingly. My *Brother* Turner says, in a Letter to me, "I have a good hope concerning him."—

At Kaitaia, the Revd. Hy. Williams baptized 49, and at the Waimate the Revd. W. Williams baptized 48, about 3 weeks ago.

Sickness prevails to a very [3] great extent at present among the natives, hundreds are now ill around about us.—

I look forward with great delight to a trip among the Natives in January next. I propose (D.V.) to go, on foot, from hence by the Eastern Coast, to the East Cape and the Mahia—thence to Waikato, and from there up the Western Coast to Hokianga. By strict application to my work *now*, I shall get my Brethren here to grant me an holiday in the Summer; and no schoolboy ever rejoiced more to get one, than I shall to get out, once more, among these, our children of the wild.—

My health has been pretty good—save that my eyes have been a little affected by ophthalmia. I trust that the LORD will, however, restore to them their wonted strength.

By a Schooner from the Colony, which came in this morning, we hear of the death of our beloved Father in the Gospel, the Revd. S. Marsden: he fell asleep in Jesus on the 12th. May [4] last. No particulars have yet reached us.—

May the Lord be with you—Fathers & Brethren, to guide you *all*, and that continually prays

your devoted Servt.,
William Colenso.

1839 February 6: to the CMS Secretaries⁸⁸

Paihia, Bay of Islands,
Febry. 6, 1839.

Sirs and Brethren,

My last Letter to you, was dated June 4/38, which, with 8 Testaments were sent by H.M.S. "Buffalo": I hope you received them in due time.—

It pleased God, of His infinite goodness and mercy, to lay His fatherly hand upon me very shortly after the date of my last—before, indeed, the "Buffalo" was out of the Bay—though brought very low, He was with me, He rebuked the disorder, and, contrary to my expectations, He has restored me to health, and permits me to labor a little longer in His Service. Two months however, passed by before I recovered my strength, so as to be able to attend to my duties.—

Since then—we having thought it expedient to divide some Testaments into parts, for the readier distribution in visiting distant places, for Schools, &c., &c.—I have been engaged in Binding:—have bound a 1000 of these Parts, i.e. 200 Gospels Matthew; 200 Mark & Luke; 200 John—Romans; 200 Corinthians:—Philemon; & 200 Hebrews—Revelations. In printing, I have printed 500 Copies of the 1st. halfsheet of the N. Zealand Grammar, demy 12mo.; composed "Order of Confirmation", 4 pp., post 8vo., and printed 200 copies; composed "Order of Consecration of a Burial Ground", 4 pp. post 8vo., and printed 100 Copies; composed 1st. ½-sheet of Prayer Book, demy 12mo., and printed 7000 copies; and, composed a Tract, demy 12mo., 24 pp., and printed 1000 Copies; this Tract was written by myself. At present, I am engaged with the Prayer Book, which is very much wanted.—

By this ship, the "Elizabeth," Convy. I send you, copies of the first ½ sheet of Prayer Book, and of the first ½ sheet, also, of the N.Z. Grammar, of the Tract, of the Confirmation and Consecration Services, of the Declaration of Independence, (made by the Chiefs on the arrival here of the pretensions of Monsr. Thierry,) of the British Residents Manifesto, &c., &c., &c.—

Sickness has prevailed among us to a very great extent; there is hardly, perhaps, a person to be found in this place and its vicinity who has not been visited in a greater or lesser degree with Influenza: Here, however, we have to record our gratitude to *our* GOD, who (as [2] always) "in the midst of wrath remembered mercy", and so the plague has ceased: few have been the number of cases in which this disorder proved mortal.—

On the 21st, Decr., we were unexpectedly and agreeably surprised by the arrival of the Bishop of Australia, who came in H.M.S. "Pelorus," Capt. Harding, accompanied by the Revd. O. Hadfield; on Saturday, the 22nd., he landed at the British Resident's, and on Sunday, the 23rd., he preached, in the morning, at Paihia, and in the Afternoon at Kororareka. On the 4th. Jany., he consecrated the Burial Ground at this place, and, also, that at Kororareka; on the 5th. he held a Confirmation, confirming 44 Native adults, and 20- whites (mostly Missionaries' children). On the 6th. he admitted the Revd. O. Hadfield to Priest's Orders, and, on the 7th. he sailed for the Thames—where, on the 11th., he confirmed 3 of Mr. Fairburn's children, and baptized 2

natives; and, on the 12th, he sailed thence for Norfolk Island. The Bishop, I am happy to say, gave general satisfaction: the white Residents and Settlers, opposed, as many of them are, to us, seem to have been pleased with the Bishop. Two Addresses were presented to his Lordship, one from ourselves, the other from the British Resident, Settlers, and Residents in the Bay. A third was presented by the Kororareka Settlers, but was, I believe, declined acceptance; this might be called an opposition address,—what it contained I don't know, but I have heard, that its phraseology reflected much on us, one thing therein, I know, was a request to be furnished with a Ministry by his Lordship, though we have a Church there, and Service regularly performed there every Sabbath-day—the palce, also, within sight of, and only 3 miles from, Paihia. This same body of people applied, 3 days ago, to Dr. Lang, (whose vessel called here to repair in her way to England,) to supply them with a Minister, promising largely what they would do, in case he granted this request. One man, also, applied to the Doctor to baptize his children, this, however, the Dr. (on Mr. Mair's, an old resident, shewing him who and what the applicant was,) refused to attend to. Dr. Lang paid us a visit, and saw my 2 lads working at the Press (I have just got 2 youths to do a little work there) at which he expressed himself gratified. Mr. Mair took him to visit the Kawakawa village, with which (as Mr M. informs me) the Doctor was much pleased.—

Accounts from the Southward are both gloomy and pleasing:—eleven persons were surprised by the Rotorua Tribe, whilst engaged in fishing, who were immediately killed and eaten within sight of the Station. [3] We, ourselves, are tinctured with it! Oh! may the vine-dresser in mercy, dress His vine, purge, prune & chastise her, and *cause* her, yet, to bring forth fruit. I know that a blessing will, yea, *shall*, be bestowed on those “who mourn in Zion,” at seeing the desolations. Brethren, I, unworthy I, do conjure you by the mercies of GOD that *you do not forget your privileges* (John xiv. 13, 14; Ps. lxxxi. 10), but that you “pray without ceasing” to GOD *for us*, that we become not a “reproach to our neighbours, a scorn and derision to them that are round about us.”—

With regard to my proposals in my Letter of Mar. 24/38, allow me to say, my mind is unchanged:—If a steady Printer could be found to take the Printing off my hands, I should rejoice to go amongst the Heathens. I believe that GOD would protect me every where, and I *long* to go forth. Hundreds and thousands there are who have not yet heard of the word of GOD, nor will *they* hear until some one, who is made to care *not* for this world nor its fleeting pleasures, be found to visit them. Brethren! I say no more, only, “Here am I; send me!”

Brethren! excuse my way of writing.—If I offend any one thereby, it is not done intentionally. I have no wish to offend any one, no, not in the least. Hoping and praying for better days, yea, for an outpouring of GOD'S spirit from on high, and, taking Nil desperandum, Christo Duce, for a motto for 1839——, and Praying, also, that the LORD may be with you *all*, always,

I remain,

Sirs & Brethren, Yours mo: truly
William Colenso.

I also enclose in the parcel; herein-spoken of, 5 parts of the Testament and 2 Testaments.—W. Colenso.

1839 February 16: to Busby⁸⁹

(Copy of Lne: to J. Busby Esqr., in ansr. to his of the 14th. Inst, requesting Information on Capt. Fitzroy's evidence.)

Paihia Miss. Station
Feb'y 16/39.

To J Busby Esqr
Residency
Waitangi

My dr Sir

In ansr. to yrs. of the 14th. Inst., request. Infn. on pt part of be evidence of Capt. Fitzroy, R.N., relative to be state of N.Z., given by him before the Com. of the Ho. of Lds: wherein he says:—

“An example occurred to myself, &c &c &c ————.”

I have to reply:—

1. That I had not any Consultation with Capt Fitzroy on the subject.—
2. That I do not recollect the circumstances alluded to by Capt. Fitzroy; neither can I find any allusion to the same in my Journal of pt date.—
3. That Mess. Baker, & Ashwell, & myself were the only Missionaries residt. at Paihia at the time of Capt. Fitzroy's visit.
4. That Mr Ashwell cod. not have had interfered in any such matter at that time from his having only been a few days in the Land, conseq. not knowg. the Language. I mention ps., as Mr A. is at present residing in one of the Southern Stations.
5. That since my residence in the Bay of Islds (bet. 4 and 5 years) I have not heard of a single attack being so much as talked of by Natives against a British Vessel.

Yrs &c

W.C.

(copied this for Mr Busby, Feb. 28/39: he sendg. origl. to Engd.)

1839 August 10: memorandum⁹⁰

Augt. 10th. 1839

Memoranda of a Convn. which took place between the Revd. H. Williams and myself this morning—

Revd. H.W. called on me and proposed my going to Kororareka tomorrow (Sunday) to hold service, to which I assented.—Some conversation about the proceedings of the R.Catholics ensued: I gave him a paper to read, contg. an acct. of a trial, in which a R.C. priest was the plaintiff, and, as it was 9 o'clock, rose to go to the Pg. Office, requestg. him, if he was agreeable, to sit & read the paper. He then sd. he wished to have some convn. abt. my lad's taking a blanket from one of his boys the evg. before—adding “it has never been the custom so to act when a lad did amiss,

89 ATL Ms-Papers-4855. As Colenso explains, this is a draft which he copied for Busby, “he sending original to England”.

90 ATL Object 1005636 from MS-Papers-0032-0221; inexplicably, this is among the McLean papers, suggesting Colenso may have given McLean a copy at some time, perhaps in reference to land purchases by missionaries.

but to see the Master of the lad & acqt. him with the behavr. of the lad, &c &c,” and that I had “acted very improperly” in so acting. Here I sd. that *he* had acted so many times—at which he got warm, and denied it, challengg. me to adduce an instance—I soon recollected the case of Kahukoka, &c, wch I related, when he declared, ’twas not so—I reminded him that. in so doing “he charged me with a downright lie,” whc he, slapping the table with his hand, repeated it, adding ’twas impossible for him so to have acted, as ’twas contrary to his principle—whc he had followed for near 17 years, &c, &c. I sd. since then you thus chge me with a downright lie, our convn. had better end here, &c.—For that affair took place between *us two*. He asked me to give up the lad’s blanket—I refused to do so “unconditionally”—he sd. the cases were not parallel—I sd. they were—he sd. the action of my lad was a “dirty trespass.” I sd., allowg. that, I acted then as you wished me, gave an utu, &c.—He sd. that no time had elapsed in that case, but in this I had gone quietly to bed, &c &c—I sd. that there, *I* went to him, here ’twas evidently his, or his lads, to come to me—as to time, that no time had elapsed in pt. of law—he havg. come as early as he could—I had the Natives talkg. to at the time, more than 20, they left at past 8, P. all, 2 fr. Natives (Robert & John Tupe) were here *when they were leavg.* these 2 infd. me that H.W. retd. late from Korora. ill, slept in boat, and that tho he had fixed that p. at Korera., he was so unwell as to go to lie down—these reasons were sufft. to keep me (had it been my place) from going to him that night. He again asked me to give up the B., I refused “unconditionally”—as I had often taken his lad’s clothes, and given them up, but now I wod. make an ex: especy. as I had often been insulted by his lads, and also, in this case, Messrs. F. & B’s lads had restrained them selves from touching that wood on my speakg. to them & that in this, tho I had spoken to his lads, they went and cut it up. He sd. in thus speakg. I insulted him as the Master of his lads. I sd. No; for it was the fact, &c; at this he got warm, very warm & sd. “You are an Insolent Man” I sd. I had never insulted him in my life, that I had always respected him. He sd. “Your lang. has been most insulting”—I sd. “I am detd. Sir, not to be irritated by anything you may say; but I pray you don’t use that language to me for ’tis more than old Adam will quietly bear, &c.” “Why,” sd. Mr. W. “did you not complain if my lads had insulted you” &c, I sd. that I had sevl. times, & that it had not been done lately, for when Mr. Ashwell was here, he was the objt. of yr. ridicule. He sd. “You and Mr. Ashwell are a pair of you,” &c. I replied, “You must think, Sir, and let think on this matter,” He sd. “for this 4 or 5 years you have behaved in this unbecoming manner &c” I sd. that I again repeated it, that his lads had ever behd. most insultingly to me, and more than that, that no other Missy. wod. have retd. Natives in his employ that had so repeatedly behd. themselves amiss to a brother Missy. as his lads had behd. to Mr A & myself”.—He sd. “I was never so insulted by anyone in all my life as by Mr. Ashwell, save yourself.” I repeated—“Our convn. had better end here, after what he had sd.” He sd. “Yr. conduct has been most extraordinary”—I said—“That, Sir, is a mild & bland expressn. after what you have just said—I pray you don’t back out of your repeated assertions in that kind of way Sir.” At this he rejoined with increasg. warmth—“I tell you, that the strongest possible terms I know of cannot convey the Insolence of your language and your improper conduct to me before the Natives.” (this was accomp’d. with peculiar gestures of his fist, the skirts of his dressing gown, &c &c, all which declamn. only convinced me more deeply that he was in a great passion)—I then sd. “You will bear

witness of my calmness under all this—I have only to say, “I wish I had some witness to your repeated expressions, or that you wod. give me those words in writing”—He exclaimed, “Write them down, I’ll sign them.”—He was then going out, and he asked me again to give up the B., I firmly repd. not without an utu as I did in the affair of the pails. [He had before sd. that he wod. give the lad a new B. & chge it to my a/c—when I repd. I wod. not allow it—& sd. that if he gave his lad a new B. I wod. give mine a reward for doing what he had done,—he sd. that my lad wod. not have touched Pare’s (?) blanket, if he had he wod. have been “gobbled up”—I sd. if P. had laid hands on my boy I wod. have laid hands on P.—he said that P. was a Goliath—well sd. I gt Goliath was overcome by little David; that I knew not whose garmt. it was, save it was that of an offender, and that the boy was his, and that I blamed my lad for not bringing me more—he sd. if it had been so his lads shod. have been Muru for Muru”]

I then sd. “You will please bear in mind, Sir, in conseq. of these assertions of yours, that all our convn. on any subject must henceforth be at an end.”—to this he replied, “certainly so”—I again repd. the sentence, layg. emphasis on “You will *please bear in mind, Sir,*”—and adding “Unless you retract those words”—to which he replied—“That I’ll never do unless you make an apology”—To which I repd. “It is most laughable, Sir, to think you cod. suppose such a thing”—

Here our convn. ended.

Blessed be the LORD! for keepg. me throughout in calmness and collectedness. Oh, GOD, do thou pardon all thou didst see amiss in me, and do thou pardon thy servt. W. also, givg. him to see his errors.

“Exurgat Deus!”

(written within 2 hours after the convn. took place)

Augt. 10/39.—3 P.M., sent for by Revd. H.W. to go to see him at the Kotekotinga, to take also my lad Kauri, went, overtook him on the rocks—went on together, arrd. there, Mr. W. sd. “Now Mr. C. point out the 2 logs you spoke of”—I repd. “I had nothing to say *now* in this matter” My boy sd. “Tena te rakau i tatakia; na te tai ia i kawae ai ki reina” went to it—Mr. W. asked my lad who had sawn it—“Matou”—who saw his lad chop it—“Naku”—when—“I te ra honi ware—when did you muru him—“Nonapo”—why did you leave it so long—“Naku i mea kia purangatia nga wahie ki reina, nga wahie i tatakia ai, a muri iho haue mai ana ratau, tangohia ai, na reina au ka wakatakairi ai, &c—“Mr. W. turned to me & sd. “You see Mr.C. the damage done, &c—I repd. I had nothing to say abt. it—I had now for the first time heard the story from Kauri, I had not sent the lad to muru—and he (Mr.W.) had already from the morn’g’s. proceedgs. put the case out of my power. Mr.W. asked me to give up the B. I sd. No I would not give it up [unconditionally]—after what had already passed: that things were now come to a crisis. He sd. he shod. mentn. the matter to 2 or 3 indivds.—I repd. I intend to bring it bef. the Committee. He sd. “after being so many years in the work, I wouldn’t think of asking a second time such a boy as you”—I made no reply—but fell back a bit.

Ito—Nau i pokanoa ki nga rakau a te W.—. Na te riri i pokanoa ki nga r. a te W.—

1839 September 23: to Clarke⁹¹

*Copy of a Letter from Mr. Colenso
to Mr. Clarke, Sept. 23/39.*

Paihia, Sept. 23/39

My dear Sir,

I beg to inform you that I have received, from Mr. Wade, your official letter to him of the 19th. Inst. containing the Resolutions of Comee. respecting the Press, and am happy in finding that Mr. Wade is "empowered to take the requisite steps for the erection of necessary buildings" at Waimate, and sincerely hope that the necessary assistance will be rendered him, so that he may be enabled to fulfil the wishes of the Parent Comee. on this head, as speedily as possible.

With regard to the Resolution—"That the Press be immediately removed to Kerikeri, and that Mr. Kemp be requested to make room for its reception in the Store, where it may be erected and continued at work," I confess I am not a little surprised; and that

1st. Because there is no reason whatever assigned for its temporary removal to that Station;
& 2d. Because that its removal to any place, as a mere temporary arrangement, prior to its being removed to the Waimate, (the location assigned it by the Parent Comee.) is not only uncalled-for, but must unavoidably be attended by hindrance in its working, together with needless loss of time, and damage of property:—for it would take me, no small period of time to get all the Type, &c., &c., in a condition to transport across the Bay to Kerikeri, then to unpack them & get all to rights for a temporary sojourn of a few months, & then, again to take to pieces and pack up for the second removal to the Waimate. Saying nothing of the extra trouble and labour to Mr. Kemp, nor of expense to the Society.

I make no remark, my dear Sir, in reference to the peremptory removal of the Press and myself to Kerikeri, nor of the "requesting of Mr. Baker to hire a small craft" for that purpose, before even Mr. W. or myself were informed of such a step being about to be taken; nor of all this being done without any Member of Comee. having held the least consultation with either Mr. W. or myself on the subject.

On the whole, I am, from a serious consideration of the hindrance to the work of the Press, of the loss of time, & of the unnecessary expense & probable damage to the Society—compelled most seriously to object to the removal of the Press to the Kerikeri Store, there to be worked as a temporary arrangement, prior to its being located at Waimate; and shall necessarily be obliged to write to the Parent Comee. on the matter in question, unless the Resolution passed by the N.D. Comee. on this subject be rescinded.

I am,

My dear Sir

Yours respectfully

(Signed) W. Colenso

Printer.

1840 January 24: to the CMS Secretaries⁹²Paihia, Bay of Islands, Jany. 24th. 1840.—

To the Secretaries of the Church Missionary Society

Frs and Brethren,

1. My last Letter to you was in Feby. 1839 pr. the "Elizabeth," Capt. Corry, which together with a small parcel of Books then sent, I trust you safely received. Since then I have been employed in the Printing Department in getting out the following Books:—

Prayer Book, 36 pp. demy 12mo	27,000
Pukapuka Wakaako, 24 pp. demy 12mo	10,000
Pukapuka Kauwau, 4 pp. demy 12mo	4,000
Kupu Ui, 8 pp. demy 12mo	3,000
Lessons for Schools	2,000
Catechisms, 16 pp. post 8vo. (unfinished)	10,000
Prayer Book, 36 pp. demy 12mo (do—)	6,000
Pukapuka Aroha, 24 pp. demy 12mo.	2,000

The *Prayer Book* contains the Morning and Evening Services of our Church; a Collection of Hymns, & a few additional Prayers, this has gone thro 3 Editions, the 1st. of 4,000, the 2nd. of 3,000, and the 3rd. of 20,000,—making 27,000 Copies. *Pukapuka Wakaako*, is, as will be seen, a Primer, written, &c, by myself. *Pukapuka Kauwau* is the address of His Lordship the Bishop of Australia, to the Natives; translated by Revd. W. Williams. *Kupu Ui*, is a kind of Mass-book intended for Schools, written by the Rev. R. Maunsell. *Prayer Book*, last mentioned, of 6,000 Copies, is intended for the complete Edition of the Prayer Book now in printing, of which the first two and last half sheets are printed. There is a little difference in the 2nd. half sheet from that in the small p. book now in circulation, inasmuch as it has a few Typographical alterations, and, also, in pp. 23 & 24, it has a part of the Athanasian Creed, which falls into its proper place in those pages. *Pukapuka Aroha*, is the Tract noticed in my last, written by myself and adopted here by a newly-formed Tract Society, (a branch of the Religious Tract Society, and called the New Zealand Auxiliary Religious Tract Society.) We printed 2,000 copies for them, they supplying Paper and paying for the Printing. This Society is composed of all persons who are interested in the Cause of Christ and who subscribe to support the same. J. Busby Esqr. Revd. W. Williams, Messrs. Wade, Baker, Ford, Clendon, and Mair, form the present Committee. They have lately met, and (having previously read) have adopted a portion of another Tract of mine in the Native Language, so as to make one of 24 pp., being an Exposition of the Errors of Rome. They have now a third of mine in the course of Reading, which I hope they will also receive. You will also perceive among the Books now sent a few little Notices concerning an Institution originated by Mr. Busby; hitherto, however, it has not received the support required, nor will it, I suppose, until Mr. B. visits England. A few *small* allotments of Land which he sold the other day realized upwards of £800! "One-tenth" of this and of all future net proceeds of Sale is laid aside "for Religious and Educational purposes." A second sale of some of his allotments of Land, takes place in a few days, when, I dare say, another Sum will be obtained to be added to the former.—

2. Since I last wrote I have been enabled to pay a few visits to the Natives in the Wilderness. On Wednesday, March

91 Hocken MS-0498/012/343.

92 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

20th., I left this place on an Excursion to the Northward. [2] Arriving at the Waimate, and joining Mr. Wade, we proceeded together to Hokianga, down river to the N. Head, and up the N.W. Coast to Wāro, (nr. Kaitaia,) visited Kaitaia Station, from where Mr. Wade remaining behind, I proceeded to Cape Maria van Diemen, the “*Reinga*”, i.e. the Hades of the New Zealanders. Returning, I crossed the Island (here very narrow) to the N.E. Coast, to Houhora, (Mt. Camel,) once more visited Kaitaia, returned, again, to the N.E. Coast, proceeding by the same to the Bay of Islands, visiting several villages in my way home; reaching the Station, on Friday, April 12th. In this journey, too varied and interesting to be described in detail in the compass of a Letter, I saw much to *encourage* and much to *discourage* us. On the one hand it was pleasing to observe the progress which the Gospel was making—on the other, it was painful to witness the opposition still made by many against the Truth; strange to say (not so, either, when the human heart is considered,) those who would not listen to the Gospel from us, have readily joined themselves with the Romish Church, and, in so doing, have not, as you may suppose, abated in their opposition to us and to our word. On June 19th. I left Paihia on a visit to the Natives on the outer Coast, from Wangaruru on to Owae and returned on the 25th. of the same month. On September 24th., I left, on a visit to the same, and returned on the 1st October. On Decr. 7, I left the Bay in a little vessel for Wangarei, (Mr. Busby, who was going thither, having kindly offered me a free passage,) arriving there, I visited the different villages in that neighbourhood, found that nearly all were professing to be Christians.—I returned by way of the Coast to Owae, and Bay of Islands, reaching this Station on Decr. 24. I experienced very severe weather during this trip which made travelling very heavy. Wangarei had not been visited since I had carried the Gospel thither in Feby., 1836, 4 years since, although we have had communication from time to time with the Natives, and they have received Books from us. The route by which I returned was the one by which that Venerable Servant of Christ, the Revd. S. Marsden, had travelled over; no Missionary besides himself had ever gone over that ground. Dear Mr. Marsden! his preaching, the places where he slept, where he rested, where he fell in scaling the cliffs, &c., &c., are remembered and pointed out by the Natives, and, at some future day, may be, perhaps, cherished, as Mementos of the first Minister of Christ who visited the shores of New Zealand! Thus, you will perceive, my dear Sirs, that my time has been fully occupied. The Seed has been sown in *much weakness*, it is true, alas! *too* true, but it is *not* the Planter, *nor* the Waterer, but *GOD alone*, who *gives* the Increase.

3. The Society’s Letter, of Novr. 1838, pr. “Achilles,” did not reach us until the 19th of September, 1833,—I had received Rev. Mr. Jowett’s Letter to me, a day or two previous, and the Lord had enabled me to make the desire of my heart (which I made known to you in my last Letter of March 24/38,) a matter of prayer to Him—that He would be pleased to incline me this act in accordance with the wishes of the Society:—and which I hope I shall ever be enabled. The subject has, however, been very much on my mind of late, and I have been enabled, I trust, to lay it before the Lord; my thoughts thereon I subjoin for your consideration.

4. When I accepted the offer made me by the C.M.S. to go out to New Zealand as their Printer, I had no other intention, no other wish, than that of always acting, as such in fact, my dear Sirs, when on board the “Prince Regent,”

on our passage from England, [3] I attempted to hold an Afternoon Service in the Steerage of the Ship with the Passengers there, I was obliged to discontinue the same from a hesitancy in speaking, which was exceeding painful not only to myself but to the bystander also, and my Brother Wade was of opinion, as well as my self, that I should never, perhaps, gain the N. Zealand language, so as to speak it fluently. I mention this merely to show that up to the time of my landing, in N. Zealand, I had not entertained such an idea, as that of being engaged in Ministerial work. However, shortly after my landing, I was approached to take the Afternoon English Service in Paihia Chapel, against this I made many remonstrances, for ’twas much against my inclination.—I was quite unused to such a duty, and, to say the truth, was afraid and ashamed to take it upon me, having to hold Service & preach before the British Resident, the wives and families of the Missionaries, and the different people who attended the Chapel. True, I might have *read* a Sermon of some one of the Divines of our Church, but there lay the greatest difficulty, namely, the *power* to read, to enunciate, to give utterance to words, which I had not at command. How, then, did I manage? Why GOD helped me, strengthened me, yea, was my *strength*, and, though many times have I gone to Church, trembling, ready to fall down by the way—yea, I have sat down to my solitary meal on the week-day, having the dreaded duty on the approaching Sabbath to meet, and I have been so acted on, as to be sickened at the mere prospect of the same—yet out of all, and in all, the LORD delivered me. Time passed by, and the Morning Service was, also, allotted me; and, shortly after, no less than 5 Services on the Lord’s day fell to my share, (2 English and 3 Native) which GOD, in His infinite Goodness enabled me to get through.—So fulfilling towards His unworthy Servant, His most gracious promise, “As thy day is, so shall thy strength be”. I relate this, my dear Sirs, in order that you may perceive two things, *first*, that it was not by myself, nor of myself, nor through myself, in any way whatever, that I first opened my mouth in the LORD’s cause:—this, to me, is of great consolation; hence, I argue the lawfulness of the desire, continually cleaving to me, to Preach the unsearchable riches of Christ. I may, in some humble measure, say, with Paul, “I neither received” what I preached “of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ”. For I had had no Books granted me by the Society, and few, very few of my own; this was, doubtless, a blessing, for it drove me to examine, and diligently to compare Scripture, in order that I might be, in some measure, ready for the duties of the LORD’s House. *Second*, that I have always been thus employed, and in being *thus* employed, I was blessed in my labours. However this state of things could not possibly continue long; for, according to the Constitution and Canons of our Church, it was, to say the least of it, irregular, and could only be endured until such time as it could be remedied. That time, *then* at a distance, is now arrived, or nearly so; and it will soon be an unfrequent thing for a Layman to stand up in the pulpit here, or at Kororareka; or at any other of the Chapels which may be erected, belonging to the Church of England, in the Bay of Islands. This, according to our Church is as it should be, and, I firmly believe, that such a regulation [4] will be by far for the best. But, what are persons in my situation to do? Sit down, quietly.—Give up those posts we once occupied, and in which we were blessed. *No*, my Brethren, *that cannot be*.—At least, I answer for myself,—*I cannot now go back*. I have borne, though but in a small degree, the burden and heat of the day, and I cannot *now*

withdraw my hands from the Plough. I have been listened to and looked up to by the Natives,—I have been privileged and blessed by the LORD among them,—I have kept myself from purchasing Land (having not a single foot of ground) in order that no obstacle should thus arise through me against the Gospel,—I have led a single life that I might be the more fully enabled to give my time to the Work of the LORD—I have, moreover, sat down, and well-considered the subject, and, allow me, my dear Sirs, most respectfully to say, I cannot give up the post, which, for more than Five Years I have been enabled to occupy—that of preaching the Gospel of Christ. I am willing to remain with the Press, and, in so doing, I want no assistance, at present, other than what I may get here, but I cannot, conscientiously, make up my mind to remain with the Press, and not to open my mouth in the Cause of the LORD. He first called & sent me forth, and though I *then* went very reluctantly to the work, *now* it would be criminal in me to leave it; in short, my conscience would not permit me to take such a step. I have been for 5 years, in the constant practice of preaching & teaching among Whites and Natives; on Shore, in chapels, in the Houses of the Settlers, in the Grog-shops, and in the open air, on board of vessels, &c, &c: I look at my own Insufficiency and utter unworthiness, and at the greatness of the responsibility resting on those who enter into the sacred duties of the Ministry: I endeavor to make up my mind to decline the duty, but, I cannot, I dare not; for whenever I attempt to bring myself to the conclusion that it would be better to give up those duties and to give myself wholly to those of the Press, I feel a something which I cannot describe—a something which reminds me of Paul's expression, when he said, "Necessity is laid upon me, yea, woe is me if I preach not the Gospel." At this time, too, for one acquainted with this place and people to be silent,—now that Rome is endeavoring to establish herself under our very windows—now that so many of our countrymen are settled here—would be a matter of joy to Satan. My Brethren, I only wish to be useful, but let me be useful to the full extent of my capacity for usefulness. Permit me to be faithful to what the LORD has been pleased to entrust me with.—I have but a few years, at most, to run, (for, to borrow the phraseology of the world, "Active exertion in N. Zealand will assuredly bring on premature old age.") I have been, I trust, and may be (since it is the Committee's wish that I should remain with the Press,) usefully employed in three ways, in Printing, Writing and Preaching, and those three duties *might* be united in my remaining with the Press. I think, however, that I have fully shewn that the time has arrived, or if not so, is at hand, in which a Layman can not, consistently, be permitted [5] to take a share in spiritual labours; consequently, the only means by which I could continue to pursue those duties I have hitherto fulfilled would be by obtaining Ordination. If, Sirs and Brethren, it still be your wish that I should remain with the Press, grant me this, also, to enter into Orders, and I am settled in my work. By your permitting me to enter into Orders, I shall be lawfully enabled to assist the Minister of the Station in which I may reside, and thus fulfill a duty which I owe to my GOD. Here, I would say, that I wish it to be distinctly understood, that, in my remaining with the Press, under the abovementioned arrangement, I should ever consider the attending to the operations of the Press, (in a similar manner to what I have hitherto done) to be my primary charge and duty, as long as the Society should think proper to continue me in the said situation.

5. I could here adduce many, very many reasons, why this should take place; Time, however, will not permit. One remark in passing, I would beg permission to make, and that is, *That all preachers should be Ordained Missionaries, and, That all should be first tried in the field of labour before they be admitted to the solemn and sacred office of the Ministry.* Be not offended, with me, my dear Sirs, when I say, from what I have seen, and heard, and known, during more than 5 years of practical experience in the Mission Field, it is my decided opinion and firm conviction, that it is actually more needful for Missionary Students to be on probation in the Fields of Missionary Labour, than for them to be on trial within the walls of a College or Institution. A man may be able to compose a most excellent Discourse, he may write an elegant and classical Latin Essay, yea, he may pass his Greek Examination with ease and applause, and, yet, be very unfit for a Practical Missionary; and make, after all, but a very sorry figure in the field. This, however, is a digression, but, my dear Sirs, you have my free thoughts on this subject.

6. You will, ere this, have heard from Mr. Wade, who, I believe, has made you acquainted with what he is thinking of doing. In his leaving N. Zealand, his situation of Superintendent of the Press will become vacant, and which situation, I suppose, you will not again fill up, at least, not by specially appointing an extra person to that office,—You will have heard from him about the Press—its present locality—the attempt to move it to the Kerikeri, &c, &c. With regard to the *place* where the Press shall be stationed, allow me to say, that I think it is quite time that *that* point be finally settled. Six years will nearly have rolled by, when this reaches you, and yet the Press,—the importance of which is admitted by all, and the beneficial influence of which is seen throughout the Land—stands in the little room, where it was first temporarily placed; still, in a great measure, inefficient, from being *unsettled*. Much of the Types, which came from England, with us, in 1834, remain in the papers and Boxes in which they came, and the trouble I have had, in consequence of being in want of room, no one knows, [6] nor can imagine. The one little room in the Baker's house, which has ever been occupied by the Press, being the only place hitherto used for compositing, roll-work, wetting paper, washing Types, &c, &c. Reasons there are for its being stationed at the Waimate, but, I think, there are weightier reasons now for its remaining at Paihia. 1st., Here is a stone building, fitted, when finished, (and which a few weeks would complete) for its reception: At that Station, there is no building, and the time that it would take to get one up (under existing circumstances) is, doubtless, very great. 2nd., This Station is on the sea side close to the anchorage; a great part of the Books, &c, would require to be shipped off for the Southward Stations, the nearness of this Station to the water is, therefore, a consideration: that Station, is some 10 or 12 miles from the head of the Kerikeri river, from whence, at least, all Materiel for printing, &c, would have to be taken to the Waimate, and to which, all Books, &c, must be again conveyed, in order to be sent to very nearly *all* the other Stations; the road, too, in winter, is often impassable. I have little doubt myself, but that my Services in Spiritual duties, have been a Cause of why the Committee of Missionaries, wished Paihia to be the Station for the Printing Press.—Still, I think, it can hardly be doubted, but that Paihia will always be the principal Station of the C. Mission, in the N.D. of New Zealand; its natural situation being such as to demand and ensure the same. As to the Kerikeri Station, as a situation for the Press,

I could not, conscientiously, consent to be stationed there—for, I should not only have no one to preach to, but I should, probably, have no one to speak to, for days together.

7. I suppose the Committee are aware, that the breaking up of the Kerikeri Station, has been for some time contemplated; and, I have little doubt but that it will soon be accomplished. It cannot, with propriety, I think, be called, a *Mission Station*, for there is nothing within it to call for the labor of a Missionary; this, I think, will appear to be very plain on referring to the Chart now sent,—there being no Natives living within the Station, save the few Domestics of Mr. Kemp, and those 2 or 3 *little* villages, on the coast, which are visited from it, are as near Tapuna and Wangaroa, (from which places they are also visited,) as they are to Kerikeri. And, even those Native Villages, will, like many others, soon become abandoned, the land having been just purchased by Europeans. Natives will not, (in fact, as they are they cannot) live on land which they have sold: so that a Tribe, which for years has been residing on the shores of this Bay, may, tomorrow, be found leaving for some other place on the coast, or some one of their possessions in the Interior, 10, 20 or 30 miles off. It has also been proposed to sell the Kerikeri Station, Lands, Houses, & Store; this, I think, (indeed I have told the Brethren so) had better not be done just now; were those Houses *here*, in the Bay, [7] the present might be a desirable period for selling the same. I would humbly suggest that they should be offered to be Let by Tender, in 2 or 3 Lots, at an yearly rent, for a term of 7 or so years; but by no means to be sold privately (i.e. the Sale confined to the Body of Missionaries and, a rule similar to this, my dear Sirs, in my humble opinion, should be adopted relative to *all* lands and Properties, of the C.M.S., which it may be deemed advisable to Let or Sell, in this Island. I thus speak, (though I may be deemed a meddler in the affairs of others,) from what I have seen, and heard, and in so speaking, I trust I am actuated by a single desire for the *welfare of the Society*.

8. I have heard, my dear Sirs, of your being about to appoint a Deputation to visit your Mission in N. Zealand. I hope, that ere this reaches you, some suitable person will have arrived here. Should such, however, not be the case, I sincerely trust that no time will be lost in sending out a person of sound judgement and experience, as well as of piety, to enter on this office—a person who will not take any thing for granted because such-a-one said it, but who will examine for himself. I forebear saying any thing more, at present, on this subject, save, that it is my humble opinion, that the sooner such an Inquiry is entered into the better for the Society as well as the Mission.

9. There are a few things connected with the Press, which I would here beg to make known to the Committee, for their Information, and for future guidance. 1. Whether it is the Society's wish that their Press should be employed in printing for the Officers, who may be appointed by the British Government to N. Zealand? supposing such to be by them required. 2. Whether it is the Society's desire that Public work generally—at least as far as it may be practicable—should be executed at their Press? Many times already, have I been applied to, on this head; I think, myself, that for the present, this should not be done at the Press of the C.M.S. 3. Whether the Society would not always grant the printing of Religious Tracts, and other works of a Religious and useful nature, for the N. Zealanders, at their Press, without having, in every case, to

apply to the Committee of Missionaries here? I ask this, because some of the Missionaries are opposed to any Tracts whatever being printed, and, because, that, very lately, the Committee of Missionaries refused the Auxiliary Tract Society permission to print a Tract of 24 pp., against Errors of Popery, at their Press, although the Committee of the Auxiliary Tract Society, who had read and approved of the Tract proposed, was partly comprised of Missionaries.

10. I think, myself, that the Press should have some representative in the Committee of Missionaries here; otherwise it will never have that efficiency which it requires, in order that it may be always and usefully employed. Your Committee were pleased to order that I should not sit in Committees here,—for which, (as far as I, *privately*, am concerned,) I would most sincerely thank them; only wishing that some other reason had been assigned than that of being called away from the [8] duties of the Printing Office—for every year I spend many weeks in travelling among the Natives, without interfering with those duties. The Committee of Missionaries finding, that I was excluded from Home, found a reason for the excluding of Mr Wade also, which they have ever done to this day. It is a sad, yea, a very sad theme for reflection, when I think on the apathetic indifference shewn towards what is, at present, of the very first Importance in N. Zealand—i.e. The Press. No one seems to care to *do* any thing for it, or towards the making it more efficient; here, however, Justice calls upon me to remark: that it is not in the power of everyone to aid its exertions—in one thing only there appears to be alacrity shewn, and that is in the taking up of Books, when finished, for distribution.—

11. I don't know, my brethren, whether you have thought it proper to seek for a Printer for your Pg. Office in N. Zealand; or, whether such a person has been directed by the LORD to you or not. But should such a person be sent out by you, at any future period, allow me, I pray you, to suggest that he be, *first*, a married man, *second*, that he be appointed at a salary from your Committee, without any allowances whatever for contingencies, and, *third*, that he have nothing to do in preaching, teaching, giving out medicine, or in any thing else, but to attend to his duties in the Printing-office.

12. Enclosed, in the small parcel of Books, which go by this Ship, you will find a return of the work done at your printing press in N. Zealand, from the commencement in 1835, to the present time, which, I trust, will prove satisfactory. The Edition of 5000 Testaments, you will perceive to be fast expending. I have heard that it is proposed by the Committee of Missionaries, that the next Edition be printed in England. I cannot say when the large Prayer Book will be finished as I have but a very small quantity of Copy by me, and I know not when I will receive any more. I understand, however, that the Psalms are translated, perhaps in a few days they will be placed in my hands.—

13. I suppose that the other Missionaries will inform you of what more especially falls under their Notice.—

14. The Romish Bishop has received a reinforcement of five priests, at present they are pretty quiet, and doing but little, but I have no doubt but that they will be soon actively employed. Would that Luther's example had been followed and the Press usefully and actively employed against them! I heard the Popish Bishop address a young man, who the night previous had murdered and buried a woman, and,

also, wounded a man very badly; saying, “*Me inoi koe a Mata Maria ma te ripeneta*,”—literally, [9] “And pray thou to the Mother Maria for the repentance”! I send you, in the parcel, one of the R.C. Bishop’s Books, which, though not Native, I dare say, Mr. Knight; if he can decipher the same, and is still in your office, may be able to translate. Time won’t permit my doing so; but I here give a literal translation of the concluding prayer on the 4th. page. “Hail! praise to thee; O Maria filled with grace; with thee the God; thou amongst women art praised, [or blessed,] and Jesus, the fruit of thy womb, is praised [or blessed,] also. O Saint Maria, the mother parent of Jesus Christ our God, pray thou for us, a poor sinful people, today, and at the hour of *our* death.” This last pronoun “*our*” is the native word which includes the person or persons addressed—consequently Mary is thereby included.—This little Book now sent is the only one which the R.C. Bishop has got published; I doubt not, but that he is busily engaged in preparing others, for he is an active man.

15. I beg to request permission of the Committee to allow me to visit England, in about 2 years hence; i.e. as near that time, (January 1842) as the work in the Printing Office and opportunity for going home may allow of my doing so. I make this request of mine known to the Committee of Missionaries, now about to sit, together with that which I have herein made of being admitted to Orders, that they may report their opinion thereon.

16. I send you pr. this vessel, the “Matilda,” enclosed in a parcel, the following Books:—

10 small prayer Books	10 Primers
6 Bishop’s address	6 Class Books
4 Lessons	10 Catechisms, (first sheet)
6 Tracts	3 half sheets large pr. Book; sig E
Sundry notices of	Chart of Paihia District
Victorian Institutions,	
Return of Books, printed	1 of Popish Bishop’s Books.

17. Since the foregoing was written, H.M.S. “Herald,” has arrived, came in the Bay and anchored, on the morning of the 29th. Jany. (bringing Lieut. Governor Hobson and suite. His Excellency has issued 2 Proclamations, (copies of which are enclosed in the parcel of Books, &c.)—has assembled together some of the Chiefs at Waitangi, and has got some to sign the Treaty. The Principal Articles of the Treaty are, 1. The Cession of the Sovereignty of their respective Tribes to the Queen of Great Britain. 2. Their consenting to sell their Lands only through the person appointed by the Government. 3. Their being entitled to the Rights of British Subjects, on their Signing the Treaty. Forty five Chiefs signed the document, several refused to do so; there are not many Chiefs of the first rank among those who have signed. This morning (Monday, Feb. 11.) His Excellency went to Waimate, and tomorrow he goes on to Hokianga; and in a few days to the Southward, in the “Herald,” to Issue his Proclamation, and to get the Natives [10] to sign the Treaty. I have little doubt, myself, but that the Natives will come forwards ready enough to sign the same, at the same time, I believe it will be from ignorance of the Articles. [Last week 2 persons, baptized, in the Hokianga district, quarrelled, when one cleft the other’s face asunder with his axe, so that he died: and since that, in the same neighbourhood, a Chief of the Romish Bishop’s party, coolly and deliberately killed a man for the stealing of an handkerchief. Chiefs believe they have a right to do as they please with their slaves, and, for a false accusation, cursing, trespassing on sacred places, Sorcery, &c, &c, they

are invariably punished with death—and often without Inquiry.] As to their being aware that by their signing the Treaty they have restrained themselves from Selling their Land to whomsoever they will; I cannot for a moment suppose that they can know it. A proof I can adduce; Hara, a chief of the second rank, in this neighbourhood, and one who wished the Treaty to be signed, and who came forward and signed the same, has since offered to sell his Lands, and, on the person, to whom he offered them, saying, “it was irregular, &c, Hara replied, “What! do you think I won’t do as I like with my own?” I believed, and do believe, that the Natives did not fully understand what they signed: believing this, and finding no other person would, I took it upon me to address His Excellency, at the Public Meeting, when the first person was called up to append his Name to the Document. I asked His Excellency, whether His Excellency supposed that the Native Chiefs knew what they were about to do, &c &c. His Excellency, in reply, stated that he had done his best to enable them to understand the same, &c, &c,—I mention this circumstance, my dear Sirs, that in the event of a reaction taking place, you may know the very root from whence such a reaction proceeds.—It is also possible that you may hear of my having addressed His Excellency on this subject from another quarter. Interests are beginning to clash—beginning did I say? they have long since *begun* to do so—and the *dearest* must be supported. Oh! how thankful should I be to the LORD, (though I sometimes feel my poverty,) that HE has kept me from becoming possessed of Land, and, by that means seeking my own welfare before that of my Redeemer, the Society, or the poor New Zealander! I must be enabled to send you *speedily* an account of the Meeting, from notes taken by myself on the spot: But have not time at present to fill out the same, and be given the requisite Information.—

18. You will see, my dear Sirs, that what I supposed, in Par. 4, would soon come to pass, has, since my writing, of the same, approached much nearer to consummation. N. Zealand being annexed to N.S. Wales as part & parcel of the same, the Bishop of Australia is now our Diocesan, and I believe, that I may safely say, that His Lordship would never allow such a departure from the discipline of our Church to take place, as for a Layman to stand up in a pulpit, in that church or chapel belonging to the Church of England in his Diocese—at least not in the neighbourhood of the Bay of Islands, the Capital of New Zealand.[11] I pray you, therefore, my dear Sirs, to take my prayer herein made into your most serious consideration

19. I am much concerned, my dear Sirs, at the enormous expenses yearly incurred by this Mission.—As an Individual causing a portion of the same, I may, perhaps, be permitted to offer my opinion thereon. Three years since I proposed to the Brethren here that they should take the subject effectually into consideration. From that time to the present I have thought of and spoken on the greatness of the expenditure, very many times: and, now, I venture to send you my thoughts on the same. I think, my dear Sirs, that if each individual in your employ was paid direct from Home, in *one yearly Sum*, without any allowance for personal contingencies, (so to speak) a saving of some hundreds pr. ann. would accrue therefrom to the Society. At present there is hardly an article in common use which may not be easily obtained at one or other of the many Stores in the Bay of Islands. Even were it otherwise, the Missionaries continually send to England for many things on private account, and why not send for all? supposing such to be

necessary. Again, Slop Clothing, &c, are daily getting into disuse as articles of trade with the Natives. Cash, in the shape of Gold or Silver, is what the Natives now seek after. European Garments of the first-rate quality are the commodities that meet with a *ready* Sale. I am often surprised at seeing the shew of Dresses on the Lord's-Day; and cannot help sometimes contrasting my own appearance with theirs: I have seen Natives with a new and complete handsome Dress at Morning Service, and with a different new dress at Evening Service, on the same day. For my own part, I believe, that whilst the Kerikeri Store remains a Depôt for Goods, the Expenditure of your Mission in this Land will not be materially lessened. This, at first, may appear somewhat paradoxical, but so it is. There is, at present, a continual Drawing of one thing and the other from the Store, which, were they not to be had, or not to be obtained on Public Account, could, perhaps, be easily done without. Again our Vessel, the Columbine, might, in my humble opinion, be dispensed with: at present there are general vessels from the size of the Columbine downwards, trading to several ports and harbours in N. Zealand, to *all* places where we have Stations; and their number is annually increasing. And, I think it will be seen in the last year's accounts, that some hundreds of pounds have been expended in Shipping, exclusive of what the Columbine has cost. I don't wish to say too much on these subjects, my dear Sirs,—yet, whilst I would remember that there is “a time to be silent,” I must, also, to do my duty, remember that there is “a time to speak.” I believe, that you will find, on referring to your accounts from N. Zealand, that our Society gains but little by their Farm at the Waimate; I speak in reference only to Profit gained by Farming. Now, the end for which that Farm was begun—believing that to be, to give the N. Zealanders an insight, &c, into Farming,—is, in a certain degree, attained: besides, there are many Farms now in N. Zealand, where the Natives may, if so inclined, receive [12] instruction in the Art of Farming. Would it not, my dear Sirs, be worth consideration, to Let the Farm, *now*, at a good yearly rent, whilst Land is much sought after and brings a good price, and to have a permanent yearly gain arising therefrom to the Society? I am firmly of opinion, that by thus dealing, with us with regard to Salaries,—by giving up the Farm, Letting the same, and selling the Cattle—your Committee would be enabled to effect a great annual saving in the expenditure of the New Zealand Mission.

20. The following is the amount of Items which I yearly receive from the Society:—Self, Salary £30. Ration, £26.; 5 Lads, Clothing, & Food £27.10— Total, £83-10-0 *pr. annum*. This is quite sufficient for *one* person to live on in any other Station in N. Zealand, than in *this*, be that person Clergy—or Layman; but in this Station that amount is *not* sufficient; it has cost me more every year than my Income, which overplus has been supplied thro' the liberality of my friends. Thus I don't wish for a penny more from the Society, nay, I would much rather endeavor to do on less, and will, if there should ever be a necessity for my so doing.

21. I have taken on myself to make the foregoing remarks; and now, I pray you, my dear Sirs, to pardon me in all that I have written here amiss; be assured, if such has been done by me in this Communication of mine, it has not been done intentionally. I have ever, hitherto, been silent on these matters, perhaps too fully so, and in my thus writing I have, I trust, been actuated solely by a wish to serve the LORD and the C.M. Society; how much soever I may have failed in so

doing. I am well aware that in several paragraphs of this Letter, the pronoun *I*, may appear to be much too prominently and proudly placed, and perhaps, it is really so, yet I pray you, my dear Sirs, to take into consideration, that I had to write about myself, and that, too, in a very peculiar way; *naturally* I shrink from coming forward into Public notice but in a case like the present—a Cause which I believe to be Jehovah's—a cause which has to be heard at the distance of several thousand miles from the scene of action—a cause, too, concerning which this is probably the last communication—I was desirous of *so* writing, as, however much I might be misunderstood by others, to possess a clear conscience that I had done my duty in the matter in question. I hope, also, that the Importance of my present Letter, at least as far as regards myself, together with my 12 months' silence, will be a sufficient apology for the very great length of this Communication.—

22. Please pay my Father the Sum of £36.1.6, charging the same to my account. It would be well perhaps for me here to remark, that the last account sent to me from the Society of £122.—Balance due to the Society was not actually due from me to them, though down in my name, but due for others here: this has since been properly arranged. Should Mr. Knight, [13] whom I have requested to get me a few articles, apply to you for wherewith to obtain the same, please let him have what he may require, on my account. Probably a Mr. Rodda, of Penzance, may write to you for £3. or £4. on my account; be, pleased, also, to grant him the amount which he may request of you.

23. I have sent by this vessel two small Boxes, directed to the care of Mr. Knight, for Sir W.J. Hooker, Regius Prof. of Botany, at Glasgow University, should Mr. K. not be at hand to take charge of them, will you be so kind as to have them received and forwarded by Steam as soon as convenient: they contain Botanical Specimens. I have written Sir William concerning the same.—

May the LORD direct you, my dear Sirs, in all things! May HE lead the way, and grant us all Grace to follow—
is the prayer of

Your obliged and devoted Servant,
William Colenso.

P.S. By a Note just received from Mr. Busby, I find, that the allotments of land at his place, (referred to by me in par. 1.) were sold by auction yesterday, when “27 Building allotments came to £982! about £422 *pr. acre*! From this you may form some idea of the value of Land, desirably situated in N. Zealand.—

Feby. 13th. Finally closed. Yesterday, much to my surprise, Mr John Flatt made his appearance in this Station! He arrived at Hokianga last week, and is come here expecting to get a situation under the Governor. What he intends doing, in case he does not succeed, I don't know. He had some Conversation with His Excellency, while in Sydney, and from what passed between them at that meeting he is now come hither.

W. Colenso.⁹³

⁹³ With this letter Colenso sent copies of Hobson's proclamation of 30 January 1840 on his appointment and duties; Hobson's proclamation declaring the invalidity of land purchases before 30 January 1840; and the prospectus of the Victorian Institution of 29 January 1840.

1840 February 13: to Clarke

Paihia Feb. 13, 1840.

My dear Sir

Having written the Parent Committee on an important subject concerning myself, it is but right I should embrace the earliest opportunity of acquainting the Comee. of Missys. with what I have done, in order that they may be enabled to take the same into their consideration and record their opinion thereon.

2. In the beginning of the year 1834 the Church Missionary Society sought me, and engaged me to come to New Zealand, and at the close of that year I arrived in this land. My duties were confined to the Printing Office: but very shortly after my arrival, as you well know, I was desired to assist in the Lord's Day English Service, and, as soon as I had gained a sufficient knowledge of the New Zealand language, a share in spiritual duties in Native tongue was also assigned me.

3. In March 1838 I wrote the Parent Comee., desiring them to send out a Printer, that I might be released from the Press, and permitted to go forth on trial, for 12 months, as a travelling Missionary: and, then, provided my offer met their approval, together with that of the Comee. of Missys., to present myself as a Candidate for Holy Orders. The answer of the Parent Comee. to this application of mine, you have in the public letter pr. "Achilles", dated (I think) Nov. 1838. in which the Society wished me to remain with the Press.

4. I have, however once more written to the Par. Com., in which communication I have informed them that I was willing to remain with the Press provided I could continue to preach the gospel amongst both Whites and Natives as I had hitherto done; that I could not remain with the Press unless I was permitted to do so: that I could not see how it was possible for me to continue to do so and had done from the constitution and canons of our Church, and from the great change which has taken, and it is taking place in this Land, without I obtained ordination. And that therefore, I applied to them, to grant my admission to Orders, that I may be continued to be employed in those Spiritual duties which I had been called to, blessed in, and privileged with, for more than 5 yrs. I also requested permission to be allowed to visit England in about two years, ie, as near that time (Jany. 1842) as the work in the Printing Office and opportunity of my going home may allow off my doing so. Adding, I make the request of mine known to the Comee. of Missys. together with that which I have herein made of being admitted to orders, that they may report their opinion thereon.

5. Therefore, my dear Sir, I have to request, that the Comee. of Missys. will be pleased to consider the propriety of the application made by me to the Par. Com. to be admitted to Orders, with regard to my moral character, my eligibility for that office, and the prospect of my being usefully employed therein, and, also, the request which I have made to be permitted to visit England in 1842.

6. I have believe, my dear Sir, I could not say anything myself as to what I have been, or may be enabled to do as a Missionary amongst the Natives. I am fully known to all the Missionaries: I have gone in and out and dwelt amongst you for more than 5 yrs. My abilities and disabilities, my fitness and unfitness for the work in which I am engaged, must be

well known to you all. And, I feel somewhat convinced that my brethren, the Com. of Missys., will perceive that this request of mine arises not from a desire after any new employ, but as a necessary consequence arising from the present state of things. I ask for nothing new: I only seek for that which will enable me to continue doing what I have done among you according to my ability—i.e. to preach the gospel. For my own part, I am fully persuaded that the Lord hath called me to this work; had I not so believed I had never continued in it. There is not, my dear Sir, a plurality of things before me, one of which is now to be chosen by me. I have been enabled to decide, (I trust the Lord,) and that decision is, that as long as I live I preach the Gospel in New Zealand,—for necessity is laid upon me, yea, woe is me if I preach not the gospel; may the Lord enable the Com. of Missys. Faithfully and conscientiously to consider this matter; Praying that you may be guided therein.

Sd. Wm. Colenso

1840 ?date: to Davis

Dear Sir,

I suppose you will copy the foregoing into your Indent: please do so *verbatim*; as a serious misunderstanding took place—either through the copier here, or the person who looks after those things at "home"—in an indent sent to England in ____ 38, (?) I ordered—"1500 lower case g's"—and, after waiting until the Box arrived, I found to my chagrin and surprise, that they had sent "1500 q's"! a Letter not in use.—

Sd. W. Colenso.

1840 June 27: to Hobson⁹⁴

Sir,

It should appear that in May last, Mr Mair chartered a small Vessel to go a Trading to the Bay of Plenty placing a younger man (whose name is J.W. Fedarb) on board as trading master. This Vessel touched at Tauranga, and Fedarb was furnished by Mr Stack (one of our Missionaries) with a copy of the Treaty and instructions to get as many signatures from the chiefs, at the places at which he should touch, as he possibly could. He, accordingly, copied the Treaty, and has got it signed by several, as Your Excellency will perceive by the enclosed Document.—At Opotiki the chiefs, who are well-disposed towards us, the Prot. Misss., wished him to make a distinction bet. them & those who had made a profession of adherence to the R.C. Bp.—wh. he did by prefixing a † before their names: there were four names so prefixed, but one, aflds, begged to have the mark erased, as he wod. belg. to them no longer. I mentn. this as accounting for the erasure in the document.

It shod. also appear, my dear Sir, that Mr Stack had desired Fedarb to give them a little Tobacco, &c, which he has done from the stores he had in chge. the property of Mr Mair. The Bill for which I enclose—

⁹⁴ ATL MS-Papers-0675. Annotated "Copy of a Note to Governor accomp. Document from Opotiki".

Fedarb was once in my employ; this accounts for his bringing *me* the Documents &c.—wh. I now have the honour to transmit to Yr. Excellency.

Hoping that Yr. Excellency enjoys good health, and praying for a cont. of the same

I am
My dr Sir
Yr mo ob servt
WC

1840 July 3: to Freeman⁹⁵

Paihia
July 3/40

Sir

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of yr. official Letter of the 30th. ult. in which you desire to be informed as to my willingness to chge. myself with the Paihia and Waimate Letters for distribn., &c.

In answer to which, I beg to state:—That I shod. be most happy at all times to do any thing in my power for the Public Benefit (consistent with my duty as a Missy. and Servt. of the C.M.S.)—and, if, Letters for Paihia and Waimate only (with the addn. of those for the Mission generally) without the Letters, &c., for the Hokga. District be intended—I shod be quite willing to take on myself the chge. of recg. them. It must however be understood, that I am often, when engd. in travellg. among the Natives, necessarily from home; and, that I have not the least ambition to be gazetted as a post office keeper.

I have the honor to be, Sir,
Yr. mo. ob. servt.

1840 August 27: to Coates⁹⁶

Dandeson Coates, Esqr.,
&c, &c, &c.

Paihia, August 27th., 1840.

My dear Sir,

In speaking to our Storekeeper, a day or two ago, and desiring him, as usual, to forward me some Printing paper from the Public Store at Kerikeri, he informed me that the Paper was nearly finished; at which, I confess, I was somewhat surprised; not having entertained an idea of the kind. I immediately applied to our Secretary, to ascertain if any had been ordered, on which he referred to his Copies of Indents, and wrote me back, in answer, saying, “that none had been sent for.” A Vessel being now about to sail for Sydney, I write this, (with the Secretary’s and other members’ approbation), in order that some printing Paper may be forwarded us by very first ship.—

In my Letter of Jany./36, I remarked on the *quality* of the paper required for the New Zealanders: and am sorry to have to report that the paper which we have hitherto used is very inferior—not in *appearance*—but in durability. It is very sad to see some of the New Testaments—not 3 years in use—quite destroyed; arising from the wretched quality

of the paper.—A paper bleached with acids, and thus rendered so rotten, that even in passing through the Press, drying and folding, it deteriorates very much: the surface roughens, the strength passes, and it tears with hardly any resistance.—

If, Sir, a paper could be procured, made from *Linen* rag, the extra expense would be more than met in the durability of the Material. But if such a paper could not easily be obtained, I would recommend that it be slightly sized—somewhat in the manner that [2] writing paper is; which, I think, would be some help towards making Books for the New Zealanders more lasting.—

“Babbage, on Manufacturers,” has an article on paper of great justice, and which ought to be read by all persons who are purchasers of paper, or publishers of works. From what little I have seen, I can, at least in part, affirm the same to be correct.

We are advanced in printing the Psalms to the XCth.—and, with the LORD’S blessing, I trust that the Book of Psalms will be complete by the middle of November. At present the Correcting and preparing “for press”—correcting and revising for “working off”, compositing, warehousing, &c, all falls on *one* person, which makes the duty rather heavy. To complete the Psalms we shall require about 60 Ream: which is about the quantity at present in the Store.—

Pray send us, Sir, at least, 200 Ream of strong Demy printing paper, of 20^{ths}. to the Ream: as soon as possible.

My Last Letter to you, Sir, was dated Jany./40, pr. Matilda, which I trust came safely to hand.

Praying that the Lord our God may guide you and us, *all*, continually

I am, Dr Sir,
Very sincerely yours
William Colenso.

1840 November 3: to Shortland⁹⁷

Copy of Letter to Wy. Shortland Esqr. on age of Native Boy—Novr.3/40

My dr Sir

I have been given to understand that a little native lad of mine, named *Raru*, (who was confided to my care by his parents when at Poverty Bay 3 yrs ago, and who Native like has absented himself from me for these 3 or 4 days past) has, without my knowledge been out in yr. Boat to day.—I am of course, certain, that his being my lad was not known to you—and, should be obliged, if he presents himself tomorrow, in your not allowing him to enter your Boat.—I would, my dr Sir, most cheerfully assist you with hands to man yr. Boat, were I situated as I formerly was with respect to Natives—but, *o tempora o mores*, my whole estab. incldg. the little fellow, only consists of 2!—so you may guess I have several things to do which I wod. rather I cod. have done for me.—

I am under engagt. to the Chief of P. Bay to return the lad this Summer; were I not I would gladly part with him, for

95 ATL MS-0585. From typed copy.

96 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

97 ATL MS-Papers-0675. From typed copy. Colenso’s draft at ATL 80-038-09

tho I have taught him to read & write, &c, he, unlike his relatives, whom I retd. a few months since, has behaved very badly to me.—

Pray excuse my troubling, &c
Believe me Very faithfully yours

1840 December 30: to Hobson⁹⁸

To Capt Hobson R.N.
Lieut Govr.
&c &c

My dear Sir,

Your very kind Note of the 24th. Decr., I duly received, and would pray Your Ex. to pardon my not embracing the first opportunity of answering the same. I put off the doing so until I could forward a copy of the “Gazette” which Your Excellency has been pleased to honor me with the execution of. Herewith I send a copy for Yr. Excellency’s Inspection, which I trust will give satisfaction.

I shall, I trust, be enabled (during the present exigency) to execute what little printing Your Excellency may require *as* a “Gov. Gazette”, but as my present duties are exceeding onerous, and as I have no one to assist me, in the compostg., &c—I would humbly suggest, that the “Gazette” be published once a month, and that the Notices &c be made as brief as possible.

Awaiting Yr. Excellency’s comms.
I am,

My dr Sir
Yrs try
W.C.
Decr. 30/40.

1841 January 9: to Godfrey⁹⁹

Paihia, Jany. 9/41

E.L. Godfrey Esq.
&c &c &c

My dear Sir,

On returng. last night from a visit which I had been paying to the Natives, on the Coast, I found yours of the 30th. ult. awaiting my arrival.—

I am happy to find that in the execution of the “Gazette Extraordy.”, I have, in any measure, been enabled to give satisfaction.

In ansr. to your request—to my becoming Interpreter to the Land Commission at Russell—I regret (when I consider the absolute need of some efficient and disinterested person to fill that important office) that it is utterly impossible for me to assist you, for, as I said before, my present duties are more than I can (without the most strenuous & unremitting endeavors) possibly perform.

You speak, my dr Sir, of “an ample remuneration, &c”—allow me to say, (whilst I trust I can both discern & appreciate the motive that prompted the generous offer,) that neither pecuniary remuneration nor worldly honor could possibly have influenced me, in my leaving the Land of my Fathers, my connexions, & prospects, & coming to this country, to fill the situation which I at present do, and I trust, that such never will. In the little that I have been, or may be, enabled to do for H.M. Govt., Remuneration, permit me to remark, (unless circumstances with regard to myself sadly alter) I never wish to hear mentioned.

I trust, my dear Sir, that you will yet find a fit person to fill the office of Interpreter on this important occasion.—

I have written to Col. Secy., in conseq. of a Letter wh. I have recd. from the Secy. of the Com. of Misss., on the subject of my doing any future printing for H.M. Govt., wh. I have reqd. him to make known to His Exy. & the Land Commissr.

I am, My dr Sir
With every respect
Very truly yrs
W.C.

1841 January 9: to Shortland¹⁰⁰

Paihia, Jany. 9/41

Willoughby Shortland, Esqr.,
Col. Secretary
&c, &c.

My dear Sir

On the 30th. ulto. I had the honor of writing His Exy. the Lieut-Govr. (in ansr. to a Letter which I had received from him) on the subject of my printing the “Gazette Exy.” &c,—in which I expressed my willingness, as far as compatible with my duties, to execute what I could in the Ptg. Dept. for H.M. Govt. in N.Z.—

—On the same day I left Paihia on a visit to the Natives who reside on the Coast; owing to Indisposition I was obliged to return much sooner than I intended, arriving here last evening. On my return I found several Letters awaiting me, one of which, from “the Secretary of the Com. of Missions. of the N.D. of N. Zealand”, is the cause of my now writing you.—A Copy of which Letter I enclose for His Exy’s. Information.

You will, of course, my dear Sir, readily perceive that, in conseq. of my having recd. these Instructions, I shall not in any case be able to print anything more for H.M. Govern., without first receiving the sanctions of the Com. of Missionaries, and which, I think, may best be obtained by applying to them thro’ their Secretary.

Praying you to be pleased to make this known to His Excellency the Lieut-Govr., and, also, to the New Zealand Land Commissrs. for their information, with as little delay as possible—

I am
My dr Sir
Yours very truly
W.C.

⁹⁸ ATL MS-Papers-0675. From typed copy annotated “Copy Note to Lieut. Govr. Hobson Decr. 30/40.”

⁹⁹ ATL MS-Papers-0675. From typed copy annotated “Copy of a Letter to Col. Godfrey, of the N. Zealand Commission, in ansr. to his, wishing me to become Interpreter, &c.”—

¹⁰⁰ ATL MS-Papers-0675. Annotated “Copy of Letter to Colonial Secretary, in conseq. of a Letter from Secy. of N.D. Com., on subject of printing.”

1841 January 15: to the CMS Secretaries¹⁰¹

Paihia, Bay of Islands,
New Zealand, Jany. 15, 1841.

My dear Sirs

1. My last Letter to you, via Sydney, which I trust you have received, was dated August 27/40. It was a request for a supply of Printing Paper, of which Article we were then nearly in want. The New Zealand Auxiliary Religious Tract Society has kindly lent us a few Reams; this will keep our Press a-going for some little time.—

2. A vessel being about to sail for England, affords me the opportunity of reporting the progress of your Press in New Zealand, during the last 12 months. I hope the accounts enclosed, of work done and Issues made, will prove satisfactory. I have been obliged, almost necessarily so, to do a little printing for His Excellency, the Lieut. Governor. A few copies of different proclamations, &c, done by me for him, you have here enclosed. You will, also, find Copies of the Psalms, which I have also been privileged with the editing and Printing of,—of the Catechisms, edited by Revd. W. Williams,—of part of Daniel and the Book of Jonah, which I have been enabled to translate,—and a kind of Almanack, for the present year, calculated & written by myself. The Copies of Psalms which are bound in Black Cloth, shews the manner in which we shall bind them for the Natives. We have not yet been able to get any bound for distribution among them; some, however, I am happy to say, are now in a course of Binding. The 3 parts of the New Testament sent, are merely intended to shew how we intend sending out the few Testaments we have remaining. We are at present going on with the Prayer Book; and (the Psalms being finished,) are advanced in the Collects, Epistles & Gospels, to “the Gospel for the Monday before Easter”. This Book has advanced but slowly, but, by GOD’s blessing, we shall get it done in time.—

3. I also enclose copies of 2 Tracts in the New Zealand language, against the errors of Rome. They were refused permission to be printed at your Press here, (the person I can not now exactly state,) but, through the [2] kindness of Mr. Busby, and others, *out of the Mission*, (who advanced the money for the purpose,) 8,000 copies were printed at Sydney and Hobart Town. I intended to have sent you a literal translation of them, and hope, “if the LORD will,” soon to do so, that you may be the better enabled to judge of their tendency. In the absence, however, of a Translation, you may form some idea of their real Character, from learning that they have all been disposed of, at 12/- pr. Hundred, as follows:—

To S.D. Committee 1,000 copies
To Wesleyan Missy. Committee 4,000 copies
To N.Z. Auxy. R. Tract Society 1,400 copies, and
To Revd. R. Maunsell, and Revd. R. Taylor, and Messrs Baker, Kemp, Shepherd, Matthews, Puckey, Ashwell, and others in the Mission, and J. Busby, Esqr., Mr. Mair, and others out of the Mission, the remainder. For want of funds my Ms. was obliged to be considerably curtailed. These Tracts contain an exposition of 12 only of their errors; whereas my Ms. contained 19.—I hope, by and bye, to be enabled to get it all printed.—

4. In March last, the printing-press was removed from the room which it had occupied in Mr. Baker’s House in this

settlement, to the unfinished Stone House, erected by Rev. W. Williams, in which I have always resided. This was done merely as a temporary measure: as Mr. Baker was about removing to Waikare, and His Excellency the Lieut. Governor was waiting to take up his abode in Mr. Baker’s House, the same having been let to him. I hope before this reach you, to receive your Committee’s determination relative to the final location of the Press.—

5. During the past year I have only been able to make *one* journey among the Natives, through having so very much to do at home. On the 7th. April, I left the Station, on a visit to the Natives in Wangarei and neighbourhood; we went overland, and returned by the same route on the 17th., experiencing very bad weather. I fear that I shall not possibly be able to give much time to journeying during the ensuing year. I live, however, in hope of better days, but of this I must not—dare not—assure myself.—[3]

6. The Committee of Missionaries were pleased, in August last, to appoint me to the office of Sub-Editor and Superintendent of the Press; and also, in consequence of the great rise in the price of every necessary, to make some trifling addition to my Salary. Of those Resolutions of theirs, you have, doubtless, been made acquainted.—

7. There has been much more work done in the Binding- and Printing-office, than what is actually shewn in the Returns. Natives’ old books, rebound and repaired; small Books folded and stitched; &c, &c, have taken up no small portion of my time. I wish to be found every year increasingly abundant in labour, but, I have a presentiment, that I shall never do such another year’s work for the C.M.S., if at all, again, on earth. My own head and fingers, through GOD’s blessing, have done all—in translating, copying, editing, compositing, reading, correcting, revising, folding, warehousing, packing, &c, &c,—yet this is but a portion of my present labour in N. Zealand. And though I have had enemies, neither few nor small, to contend with, praise be GOD! I can do *all* things through Christ strengthening me.—This makes a poor heart glad in the midst of all my toils; yea, and therefore I will rejoice, for HE *is* with me!

8. You will, I dare say, hear, of numbers who have been baptized, &c, &c,—would that you could hear of a tithe of them—in point of numbers—who were bringing forth the Fruits inseparable from a living Faith.—It is a sad and awful subject for reflection: yet I fear that it is generally the case, that vital godliness, *heart* religion, is little, if at all, known among the Natives of New Zealand. For, notwithstanding the extended increase of knowledge among them and also the great addition to the number of professing Christians, their besetting sins of Avarice, deceit, laziness, and ingratitude, appear to be daily gaining ground upon them: of course, I speak only of Natives who profess to have embraced the Christian Faith. Of all that I have seen published about the Natives of this country, I think that the account given by His Lordship the Bishop of Australia was nearest the truth. His Lordship’s [4] remarks were quite correct so far as he knew, but were he acquainted with all—the little every-day occurrences of life which shews the man—I dare to think, he would not have written any thing near so favorably of them as he did.

9. The Residents, Emigrants, & others in this Country, are all, more or less, in a ferment, about the Land, and the “Land Question”. The Commissioners are soon to sit, shortly after which, it is to be hoped, for the peace and

¹⁰¹ Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

welfare of the Country, things will assume a more flourishing and placid aspect. The present Government cannot please all parties, and, consequently, is not liked. I think it almost a sign that we are indeed living in the “latter days,” when I perceive, even here at the Antipodes, the same anarchical, ultra-republican spirit, which appears to have pretty nearly circumambulated with rapid strides the whole globe. Surely the times, spoken of by the inspired Apostles Peter and Paul, (2 Peter, II, 2 Tim. III, &c.) are come, or, at all events, at hand! Oh! may I, seeing the error of the wicked, and experimentally knowing that I have the roots of the same evil in my own heart, be enabled to cleave the closer to Christ: thus, shall I be preserved from falling.—

10. It is not my intention, my dear Sirs, to say much about passing events, numerous, new, and strange, as they are. But, I think, I may in all truth say, that, the words of God,—my own heart,—the temptations of the world and the Devil—the spiritual wants of the Natives—and six years’ residence in the New Zealand Missionary field, all, all combine in assuring me, that it is almost a matter of Impossibility for a man to be a Missionary among the Heathen and a possessor of Lands and Cattle, &c, &c, *the same having to be looked after or attended to, in any way, by himself*. Wealth, even in civilized countries, has generally Care, if not Pride also, in his train; and Care too often brings Anxiety, Self, Parsimony, Avarice, &c, &c, *ad infin.*;—if it be so, how much more is it to be expected that such is the case in uncivilized lands, where moral restriction exists not? I most willingly acknowledge and [5] firmly believe, that a man, abounding in possessions, and flocks, and herds, may, by the Grace of GOD, become a useful settler in a Heathen Land, and may be of great utility in the little circle around about him. But even this is by no means an easy thing in a Land like this; where the Natives (supposing them to be, in part at least, his workmen,) unused to constant labour, would very soon perceive that they were working for their employer’s profit; which alone, among this suspicious people, would be quite sufficient to neutralize all the efforts he might make for their spiritual welfare. Were, however, such a Settler *not* to employ Natives as Laborers, the constant trespassing of Cattle on their plantations, would alone prove a fruitful and never-failing source of discontent, bickering, and quarrelling: for the Natives, from never manuring their ground, only plant one or two, or at most three of four years in one place; hence their cultivated lands are seldom fenced in; and hence, also, the continual inroad of the Cattle of “the Stranger” on their little all. And then, (to place the case in a more favorable point of view,) if we suppose such a settler possessed of a “Cattle run,” (as is, perhaps, the case with some,) large enough to allow his Herds full liberty of roaming hither and thither in search of food, without at all coming near any Native Cultivations; yet, even in this case, there would be often heard, some such expressions as—“You have got all our best land—You have got the Lands of our Fathers—You have got our Lands for nothing—Our Fathers foolishly sold their Lands to you—You, who profess to have come hither for our interest, have taken advantage of our ignorance—You coaxed them to part with their Lands, when they said, No, No, &c, &c,”—which, as I before observed, would, to say the least of it, have a tendency to destroy all such a person’s exertions for their spiritual good; however disinterestedly he might endeavor to act in the matter. Oh! that the LORD, who has hitherto graciously kept me from this snare, would mercifully

vouchsafe to waken me every [6] morning, with, “Love not the world, nor the things that are in the world, &c.”—

11. The following is a List of Books, &c, now sent, in a parcel, pr. this vessel, “the Mars”:—
 4 Copies Psalms of David,
 6 ditto ditto, with morning & evening Service of our church, and Hymns,
 10 ditto Daniel and Jonah,
 6 Almanacks,
 3 parts of Testament,
 Sundry papers printed for H.M. Government in New Zealand,
 3 Copies of an Exposition of the Errors of Rome, part I.,
 3 ditto ditto ditto part II.,
 Returns of Books printed, and Issued, and of Books bound, for the year 1840,
 and, a small parcel, enclosed, for Mr. Broughton.

12. The Romish leaven is, I fear, slowly spreading amongst the people. The RC. Bishop, Jesuit-like, grasps at every thing that presents itself in the manner and acting of your Society’s labourers, which he thinks may be advantageously urged against the Protestant Cause. He has, I fear, through his specious plausibility, made also successful use of the Holding of Land by the Missionaries, against the Cause of Christ in New Zealand. And, as the Natives become more and more oppressed by the continual arrival of the “White Man” among them, so will Rome, unless GOD prevent, too fatally succeed through her insidious and wily accusations against the Protestant Missionaries. Their Priests now are scattered in different parts of the Northern Island; two, also, are in the Middle Island; and the R.C. Bishop is now absent, in his Brig which he has purchased, on “an Apostolical tour” (? voyage) to the principal Islands of the S. Pacific. Unfortunately (thinking as I do, I make use of this term,) the Brethren [7] speak of Rome’s exertions in New Zealand, as “a mere nothing”—or, suppose that, “the New Zealanders have too much good sense to listen to Rome”—or, that, “’tis only the last throes of the beast.” It may be so, and I would hope that it is really so, but I would say, as a Christian Soldier—enlisted under the Great Captain of our Salvation, and bearing in mind my Baptismal Vow, “manfully to fight under His banner, against sin, the World, and the Devil; and to continue Christ’s faithful soldier and Servant unto my life’s end”—never to drop the 2-edged sword which He has so entrusted me with, until either the enemy had quitted the field, or my Master had called me home. May GOD grant that when HE shall be pleased to call me, I may be found in the Van of Battle, having my armour on!

13. In conclusion, my dear Sirs, (hoping soon to hear from you, in answer to mine of Jany./40.) I pray you to pardon all that may *seem* to be amiss in this Communication of mine. And, praying that HE, whose name is “Faithful and True,” and who delights in “Keeping mercy for thousands,” and in fulfilling His most gracious promises, may mercifully vouchsafe unto us *all*, that as our day so our strength shall be—

I am,
 Dear Sirs,
 very faithfully yours
 William Colenso.

1841 February 24: to Davis

Paihia Feb. 24. 1841.

My dear Sir,

1. A Public letter having arrived from the Parent Com. dated August 15. 1840, & in which, I think it is very apparent that they decline acceding to the request made by me in my letter; & I having been given to understand that my letter to the Comee. of Missionaries dated Feb. 13. 1840 might probably not be considered as fully conclusive with regard to myself, are the reasons for my now addressing you.

2. Will you therefore be pleased to inform the Comee. of Missionaries that it is my intention to resign the situation I now hold of Printer to the C.M.S. in New Zealand on the 31 Dec. now next ensuing.

3. As it is not my intention at present to communicate again with the Parent Com. on the subject, I would thank you to transmit a Copy of this letter (which I desire to be entered on the minutes of Com.) to them per very first opportunity. I am &ca

(Sigd.) W. Colenso.

1841 July 8: to Godfrey¹⁰²E.L. Godfrey Esq
&c &c &c.

Paihia July 8/41

My dr Sir

Yours of the 27 ult. requestg. my a/c on behalf of the C.M.S. for ptg. perfd. for the Commissr. together with 3 Receipts for the same, came duly to hand, and would have been ansd. ere this had I not day after day delayed doing so in waiting for the sailing of the Vict. She is now, however, about to sail, and I lose no time in forwarding you the same, enclosed, and hope they will be satisfactory.

Our Missn. Schooner Columbine is about to proceed forthwith to Auckland. Mr S. Williams goes & returns in her. You can, my dear Sir, if it meets with your approval, hand over the amount of the Bills receipted either to Mr S.W. or to Capt. Gratton the master of the Schooner.

Believe me
Ever most truly yrs
WC

102 ATL 91-169-1/2. Clearly a draft. On the reverse is another draft, apparently referring to maps lent to Lady Franklin: "Mr C. sends his comp. to Mr F., & would be obliged in his giving the Bearers of this Note, 2 Charts & a ms. map of the N. Island, done up bet. 2 Mill Boards, wh. Mr C. understood from Lieut. Beckham were left in Mr F's. care on his leavg for Sydney. The Charts &c were lent by Mr C. to L.F. on her Ladyship's late v. to the NI."

1841 July 30: to the CMS Secretaries¹⁰³Paihia, Bay Islands, N. Zealand,
July 30th., 1841.Secretaries,
C.M.S. House,
London.

My dear Sirs

1. My last Communication to you, was dated Jany. 15th., 1841, which, together with a parcel of Books, (both pr. "Mars," homeward bound whaler,) I trust you have safely received.

2. Your Letter to us, of December 19/40, came to hand a few weeks back. I feel myself bound to thank the Committee for their kind decision therein expressed respecting myself, and trust, that no impediment whatever may arise to frustrate the carrying the same into effect. In consequence of that decision, I cannot *now* have any reason to assign to the Committee for my returning to England; which, I hesitate not to say, was solicited, in order that (since I could not any longer with conscientious approval serve the Society, to whom I trusted I was still devotedly attached,) I might seek a situation, in New Zealand, more congenial with my inclinations, under some other Christian body. For the present then, my dear Sirs, I most willingly consent to remain in New Zealand; and would hope, through the LORD's blessing, I may never again have to ask permission to return to England:—a step, which, believe me, I shall *never* be induced to take, unless impelled thereto. I very much regret that the Letter from Revd. Mr. Veres to me, (alluded to in Res. 3, of Com. of Corr., and, also, in par. 9, of your Letter to us,) has not been received. I have made every enquiry after it, at the Post Office here, and suppose that it could never, at least, have reached New Zealand. Shortly before your Letter to us arrived, I wrote (as a last resource) the Bishop of Australia, on the subject of admitting me to Orders; to which I have not yet received his Lordship's answer. No vessels having come in from Sydney, since the arrival thither of that which took my Letter.

3. By the vessel which takes the Mail containing this Letter, I send a paper parcel directed to you, in which are,—a faithful & literal English Translation of those two Tracts (sent in last parcel) against the errors of the Romish Church.—Copies of those Tracts, in which the typographical errors are corrected,—and, a Ms. of Extracts from my Journal. The latter is for my Father, (who has often expressed his surprise at my never having given him any Information relative to my movements in N. Zealand,) and I would be much obliged in your forwarding it to him, by *Coach*, as soon [2] as convenient. Should Mr. Broughton, or the Revd. J.W. Colenso, of Harrow, apply to you for a sight of the same, you will please to allow them to peruse it, ere it be sent on to my parents; but with the express understanding, that it must be returned to you as soon as possible, in order that it may be despatched on to Cornwall, without any *great* delay. For I am very sure, that my parents, (who, perhaps, are far too anxiously solicitous on my account,) will not be satisfied until they receive it. I enclose, corrected printed Copies of those Tracts, in hopes that either yourselves, or the Protestant Association, or the Rel. Tract Society, will kindly print us a few thousands for

103 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

distribution.—For I applied to our Committee, held a few days ago, that some Tracts might be printed against the errors of Rome, and received an answer thereto, “This request to remain over.” The English Translation I should have sent you before, but Lady Franklin (who has been paying N.Z. a visit,) much wished for a copy of the same; the doing of which has necessarily detained the Translation. Nearly the whole of the 8000 Tracts printed, are distributed; and I have already had evidence of their usefulness.—To mention an instance:—At Kororareka, the other day, the R.C. Bishop was endeavouring, as usual, to gain over a Chief of note, who had recently arrived from the neighbourhood of Cook’s Straits, desiring him to conform “*ki to Mahi Matua*,” (to the Mother Church) telling him, that the Church of England was wrong, &c, &c. The Chief replied, that he would not have any thing to do with him or his Church. The R.C. Bishop, however, was not to be so easily induced to cease his specious oratory, on which the Chief took out one of those Tracts, (which he had brought with him from his village,) saying, “*Haere mai; he aha tenei e meinga nei e te Aroho pono ke ti Hahi pokaka o Roma?*” (Draw hither, what (is) this here said by the True Love concerning the contrarily-inventing Church of Rome?) On which, the Bishop gathered up his robes and walked quickly away, much to the chuckling satisfaction of the Natives there assembled. Should any be printed, pray let them have covers stitched on them, and, I think, it would also be advisable to have both made to form *one* Book. Since my last Letter the R.C. Bishop has had an accession of 4 Priests and 8 Catechists, together with a Printing press, &c, &c.—

4. I hope, my dear Sirs, that you have forewarded us a good supply of printing paper. Our press had holyday for about 10 days (!) (not so, however, the printer,) when a small supply arrived from Sydney: this will soon be expended. I hope in a [3] very little while to send you copies of the Prayer Book, complete with all its Services; in the printing of which I am now advanced to the Solemnization of Matrimony.—

5. I would here beg to submit these requests of mine for the kind consideration of the Committee. 1. That the Committee be pleased to grant their Printing-Office a Bracket Timepiece with a large face, as I have had no small difficulty in getting the workmen I have hitherto employed in being any thing like punctual to their hours. 2. That the Committee be pleased to grant me a *good* silver Hunting watch, as the one I had kindly given me in England by the Society, was well nigh worn out, and cost me more in repeated repairs than its original price. I have advantageously sold it for £4., which Sum the Com. will be pleased to accept in part towards another: it should, however, be a *good* one; as here they scruple not to charge £1.1.0 for merely rectifying a watch! 3. That the Committee (seeing that I have never received any Books from the Society) will be pleased to grant me the following Books:—
Burnet’s History of the Reformation,
Mosheim’s Ecclesiastical History,
Milner, with Scott’s continuation,
Nowell’s Catechism,
Canons of the Church of England,
Jewell’s apology & reply,
Fox’s Martyrs—*complete* ed.,
McCulloch’s Commercial Dictionary, *last* ed.,
Latin Vulgate, and
a good and *comprehensive* Latin Dictionary,
with any others they may think proper.

6. You will please advise the paying of £5.5.0 on my account, to Mr. J. Reynolds of Penzance, for shoes supplied; and also, of £12.10.0 to Coney, 125, Minorias, for Linen, &c. I confess, I was not a little surprised at Coney’s writing to N. Zealand for payment of his small a/c, the order for which he had received through the C.M. House. I trust that his doing so was entirely of himself. Once for all, permit me to say, that I am *not* a *pecuniary* Debtor to the Society, neither, by GOD’s blessing, will I ever become such, whatever the account at *home*, in my name, may apparently shew against me; I take care to keep *within* compass, and to *square* my little accounts *here yearly*. I cannot comprehend Coney’s a/c, as delivered to me; he says, the *whole* amount I owe him is £13.9.2, but only mentions items, in his Bill to me, amounting to £11.15.1. I have written him saying, [4] that if he shews Mr Coates my being indebted the sum of £13.9.2 to Mr Coney, Mr Coates will discharge the same: which I will thank you to do.

Please procure and send me, 1 ream of *good* T.W. Foolscap, faintlined blue as for *long* folio. I have so very much writing to do now, in Translating, preparing for press, &c, &c, (in addition to my duties in the Pg Office,) that such paper will prove a valuable auxiliary.

The blessed boon of 5,000 Testaments have arrived, and are in Circulation. It will not be long ere the whole will be disposed of. Even with this supply, I am obliged to deny them to some who come with their *dollar* in their hand to purchase a “Covenant.”—Last week, Mr Davis’ third son, Coleman, died; he had been ill for several weeks. The father is greatly affected at his loss, but bows, as a Christian, to the dispensation; knowing whose the rod is, and who appointed it.

The vessel sails this evening: so I must hurry off to the Post office on the opposite shore. May the Lord, grant, my dear Sirs, that you and me may be graciously guided by Him in all things to His praise and glory!

And believe me
very truly and sincerely yours,
William Colenso.

1841 November 17: to the CMS
Secretaries¹⁰⁴

Paihia, Novr. 17th., 1841.

The Secretaries
C.M. House,
Salisbury Square,
London.

My dear Sirs,

1. My last Letter to you was dated September 17/41, since which I have been permitted to make a journey to the Natives residing in *Wangarei* Bay and villages adjacent. And am now about leaving the Station on a visit to the Natives residing at the East Cape, and other places in the large parish of the Revd. William Williams; and so fulfil a promise made by me unto those Natives some time ago.

2.—Through the blessing of GOD on my labours, I have been enabled to finish the printing of the Prayer Book—(a few

104 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

copies of which I send you by the vessel which takes this to England.)—it has been a long while, indeed, in crawling through the Press, but, when all the labour whereof, from the translating to the striking-off, is duly considered, and, that much, too, of that labour has devolved on myself, I venture to think that it will be pretty evident, that no time has been lost in the getting it out. Of this Book, the greater number of the Collects were translated by the Rev. William Williams: The Sacramental and Matrimonial Services by Mr Puckey: and the remaining Collects, with the epistles from the Old Testamnet, Thanksgivings and Prayers, Communion of Sick, visitation of ditto, Communion, Rubrics, and Articles of Religion, by myself. The last, alone, required much time and considerable and close attention in Translating, Correcting, Revising and Re-revising, ere they became what they now are. Thankful and humble, however, I would be, in reviewing the goodness of the LORD towards *me*! “Who am I, and what my Father’s house?” and, “Whence is this to me?” I often ask. When I landed in New Zealand, nearly seven years ago, I often besought the LORD in prayer, to grant me health, strength, and ability to print the New Testament and Prayer Book: He has been pleased to hear and answer my request—and now, what remains? He also knows! *This* is my natal day, (a solemn day to me) and I may not see another here! Oh! for grace to say continually, in and under *all* circumstances, “Good is the will of the LORD.”—

3. I, also, send you copies of the Almanack for 1842, which I have been enabled to calculate and prepare; a portion of Isaiah, translated by Revd. R. Maunsell; and a few copies of a prayer used here for the Governor. We are [2] now proceeding with the printing of the *Exodus*; and have to commence directly the reprinting of the *small* Prayer Books, Primer, and Catechisms, our large editions of each being all Issued.—

4. The Paper, and other stores, pr. “William Wise,” have just arrived, all in good condition. We were using the *last* of our Demy when the Brig came in!

5. On my return from Wangarei, I found that the Roman Catholic Priest had given Revd. H. Williams a challenge to a Public Discussion, to take place at *Kororareka* in the New Zealand language; which Mr. Williams accepted. The Discussion took place on the Tuesday and Wednesday, the 26th. and 27th. ult., on the one side, were the four Roman Catholic Priests, on the other, were Mr Williams and myself. I assure you, my dear Sirs, I went to the field with much fear and trembling,—not, as to the ultimate result—but as to my own incapacity and utter unworthiness for such a situation. GOD, however, graciously strengthened us, and we were more than conquerors through the Testimony of Jesus! I could scarcely have considered it possible for men holding ministerial offices in a *professing* Christian Church to be so very ignorant of Scripture—or, that such men could possibly prevaricate in the manner these did. GOD enabled us, not only to beat down all their arguments with the plain words of Scripture, but, also, to preach to them the Truth as it is in Jesus. I could but fancy that I plainly saw the same Spirit, which has always so manifested itself in many of their unhappy Church against our Reforming Forefathers! They hesitated not to affirm, over and over, that our New Zealand Testament was all false! being not the word of GOD, but merely words of our own!! One solitary text of Scripture was all they brought forward during the whole of the first day’s discussion; and this was done to defend their Image-worship, &c, namely, *Joshua VII. 6*. They laboured

most assiduously, to get us to quit the taking up the plain word of GOD, but they could not succeed. Unhappy men! they found, I am sure, on some occasions, that the sword of the spirit was two-edged. Had I leisure, I should much like to give you an outline of the meeting, from my Notes and other Memoranda, but, really, have not time to do so. It grieved me much, however, to hear them tell the Natives [3] with a triumphant air of assurance, that, by their latest Letters England was again returning to her right mind and to the only true Faith and Church! and that “Pusey, a great Doctor among them, is the great instrument employed by the LORD in this matter”!! Oh! how is the fine gold become dim! how is the faithful city become a harlot! I do not think they will beat all desirous of encountering us again, for some time at least; and would fain hope, that both good to the Natives and glory to the LORD may arise from this meeting. It has, in a measure, opened the eyes of the Protestant community to what the Romanists really are; and has caused many of the former to become exceedingly dissatisfied with the latter.—

6. I enclose, in the small parcel of Books, Notes of my late visit to Wangarei; which I would thank you, my dear Sirs, to pass on to my Father at Penzance; as I have not time to make a copy of the same.

7. The Natives are, in general, pretty tranquil throughout the Island; and the different members of the Mission enjoy good health. His Lordship the Bishop of New Zealand, whose arrival has been for a considerable time expected, has not yet arrived. The Land Commissioners are pursuing the investigation of Claims to Land, and have several knotty cases to unravel: I fear it will be no easy matter for them to do justice to *all* parties. A proclamation has just been issued to restrain persons from cutting Pine Timber, which has given great dissatisfaction.—Mr Burrows is still residing at Kororareka. The Columbine has not yet been offered for sale. In fact, *another* vessel is spoken of as about being purchased!

Praying that the Lord may ever more guide and direct us,
I am,
My dear Sirs,
Yours most truly & obediently
W. Colenso.

1842 April 1: to the CMS Secretaries¹⁰⁵

Paihia, Bay of Islands, New Zealand,
April 1st, 1842.

Secretaries,
C.M. House,
London.

My dear Sirs,

1. The “Mandarin” being about to sail for Calcutta, affords an opportunity of forwarding letters for England, via that port. My last letter to you was dated Novr. 17/41, with which I also forwarded a small parcel of Books.

2. When I last wrote, I was about proceeding to the East Cape and neighbourhood. Accordingly I left this Station on the 19th. of November, and returned again on the 22nd.

February. I am copying out my Journal at intervals, and hope to send it home in a few weeks.—

3. The Paper, and other printing Stores per “Mandarin,” have been received all in good condition. I am very sure that we ought to be thankful for the abundant supply so kindly and promptly granted us.—

4. The Natives about us, have been, and are at present, in a very unsettled state. On the 20th. of November last (as I suppose you have already been informed,) a barbarous murder was committed on Mrs. Robertson, (the widow of a Capt. R., who was drowned here a short time ago,) three children, and her Servant, a man of Colour. They resided alone on one of the small islets in the outer part of this bay. It was soon traced to a young chief, named, *Maketu*, who had long borne a bad character. He was speedily apprehended, examined, and sent to Auckland gaol; and tried and executed, at that place, about 3 weeks ago. As might have been expected, it has caused a great deal of commotion among the Natives. A plan was talked of as being concocting by them, to make a simultaneous rise and murder every white. Several hundred Natives, all armed, have assembled in this Station. As yet, however, no violence has been offered, and I would hope that peace may be preserved. In February last, a baptized Native, employed on the Revd. H. Williams’ farm, murdered his companion in cold blood! What made the matter worse (if possible) was the circumstance of Mr. Williams being there at the time, and the poor creature, who was murdered, had been brought up, along with his murderer, from childhood in this Station, and in *one house*! Alleged connexion with his wife (another baptized Native;) was the ostensible cause of his committing the dreadful deed. The offender was soon lodged in gaol, where, however, he remained but a very short while, for the Magistrate, hearing that the Natives intended to rescue him by force, liberated him. One teacher has probably proclaimed Mr. H. Williams to be *Judas*! Another has said, “We can do now without a white Missionary.” Another has torn up his Testament, [2] and that, too, just after receiving the Sacrament. Another has stuck up a notice at his place that the faith is, by him, cast aside. Another has declared that he will be (re-) baptized by the Romish priest; while others are falling through adultery, robbery, &c.—A party headed by *Te Tirarau*, one of the most powerful chiefs of the N.D., has been to Kaipara, and plundered and burnt to the ground the house, store, &c, of a Mr. Forsyth, a Settler there; the alleged cause is, that Mr.F. had been to some one of their burying places and taken skulls and bones away with him; which charge is, I believe, in part, at least, correct. This party has since been to Wangarei, on the Eastern Coast, and have taken away (report says) £200. worth of property from the Settlers there. The cause in this case, was the selling, by the *Wangarei* Chiefs, of a piece of land to some whites, which land was “*tapu*”, (i.e., hallowed, reserved,) in consequence of a sister of *Te Tirarau* having been killed, roasted and devoured on it, a few years ago by the *Ngatimau* tribes. Both of these Cases are now about being investigated by the Government. I would fain hope that the worst is past, but, I fear that it will not prove to be so. I have long ago seen enough to lead me to expect a day of reaction, and, therefore, while grieved at such a deplorable state of things, I am not taken by surprise by them. Sifting times generally prove, I think, times of blessing to GOD’s people; and I *know* that “the LORD knowest them that are his,” and that He will keep them in the day of His anger; yet, where *such* are in New Zealand I cannot say. Still, I would hope that He

has a *hidden* little flock even here. *Maketu*, was baptized by the Rev. — Churton, previous to his execution. Poor creature! he spent his days, while in prison, in a very light and careless manner, singing native songs, &c; I fear he did not know much of the state of mind requisite for receiving the Sacrament of Baptism. Mr. Churton, too, could know but little of the man, or the New Zealand language.—

5. I very much regret that the parcel of Books sent by me to the “Mars” whaler for you, should have been by *them* put in the Mail-bag, and so have cost the Society £7.12.0. As I have sent 2 or 3 parcels since I fear that you have had further and similar demands. For the future, however, I must endeavour to arrange matters better, and make up my packages in a little box.

6. His Lordship the Bishop of New Zealand, has not yet arrived; we are looking out every day rather anxiously for somewhat of him.—[3]

7. I take the liberty to enclose a Letter addressed to Mr. Bates, as it contains money, in a draft on you, for £30.

Hoping to write you again, my dear Sirs, very shortly.— And, desiring a continuance of your prayers for us—that we may, in these peculiar times, be blessed with a share of the serpent’s wisdom combined with the dove’s harmlessness.—

I am,
my dear Sirs,
Ever most truly and obediently yours,
William Colenso.

1842 April 4: to Maunsell¹⁰⁶

1842 April 19: to the CMS Secretaries¹⁰⁷
Paihia, April 19th. 1842.

Secretaries,
C.M.S. House,
London.

My dear Sirs,

1. I wrote you on the 1st. current, per “Mandarin,” via Calcutta, since which your Letter to us, of October 1/41, has been received.—

2. I would thank you to cause the enclosed Letter for Mr. Bates, containing a Draft on yourselves for £30 to be delivered to him. Pray excuse my troubling you with the same, as I have no acquaintance in London to whom I might apply to execute a similar commission for me.—

3. Having written you so very recently, and intending to write you again very shortly, I have nothing at present to communicate. Save, that we have at last received Information of several of the Government Offices at Auckland being totally consumed by fire. They were close together in a row, and built of wood, so that, on the fire seizing one, it was not long ere the whole was in flames.

¹⁰⁶ Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491. Enclosure No. 4 in Colenso’s letter to the CMS Secretaries of 13 December 1852 (below).

¹⁰⁷ Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

We have not heard whether any of their Books or papers were destroyed.—

Praying that the LORD will graciously vouchsafe us to dwell in the light of His reconciled countenance through Jesus Christ,

I am,

My dear Sirs,

Ever most truly and obediently yours

William Colenso.

1842 July 26: to the CMS Secretaries¹⁰⁸

Paihia, July 26, 1842

My dear Sirs

1. My last Letters to you were dated respectively April 1st., and 19th./42; since which yours of Nov. 24/41 to us, have been received.—

2. The Bishop of New Zealand, his chaplains, and all Missionaries have arrived here. His Lordship first landed at Auckland in the Thames; he subsequently came to this place, where he remained a fortnight; during which time he visited Waimate and Kerikeri Stations. Mrs. Selwyn having arrived, his Lordship left for the Thames, Port Nicholson, and other Colonial Settlements, taking Mr. Reay and others with him.—

3. Enclosed in a small box, (which I have directed Messrs. Campbell to forward to you by the same ship which takes this thence to England,) are 100 Copies of the Bishop's Sermon, which he preached both at Auckland and Paihia. It is *said*, "Published at the request of the Congregation," but it should be understood that only 3 persons so requested it, and two of those three I have since heard state, that "His Lordship will have, ere long, to alter his opinion from what he has therein advanced, when he shall have learned somewhat of the Native character." I deem it necessary to mention this, as, from what the Bishop has said in his Sermon, persons at the distance of 16,000 miles may indeed be led to suppose, that this is not merely a land flowing with milk and honey, but really the very choicest portion of GOD's heritage. To me, every thing appears "unwatered *still* and dry". Ordinances and externals of Religion abound, but to my perception 'tis the shell without the kernel. Nevertheless I would believe that there are a *few* on whom the Spirit of GOD has breathed; who are beginning to see things as they really are—"men as trees walking." But the Word of GOD, and my own experience have taught me, that a "*few*" only do believe to the saving [2] of their Souls, even when Gospel Truth is plainly and fearlessly declared. In making these remarks, I would to prevent misconstruction, also add, that I have not the vanity to suppose that my *ipse dixit* will be received in contradiction to the now published opinion of the Bishop. I cannot, however, refrain from giving you the honest convictions of my heart.—

4. There is also in the Box, a copy of my late Travelling Journal, with a few Sketches stitched up with it. This I would thank you to deliver to my old and much-esteemed friend Mr. Broughton, who having read the same will have the goodness to send it to my cousin the Rev. J.W. Colenso,

Harrow, who will forward it to Mrs. Garnon, the person for whom it was written. Of course you are quite welcome to make whatever use you please of the contents.

5. You will also find a few copies of a little Tract, which I have lately published (as before at my own expense,) against the Roman Catholics. It is a Letter to the Natives informing them of the conversion of three Roman Catholic priests to the Protestant Faith, and of their reception into the Church of England; together with the "Form of Prayer" used on the occasion. I have enclosed therewith a liberal translation of the few sentences which I appended as an Introduction to the "Form of Prayer." I am sorry, very sorry, that our Missionary Comee., have neither done, nor countenanced the doing of any thing in the shape of Tracts against those artful emissaries of Evil. And, I think I may say, that I have reason to suppose, that less *should* be done in that way by any one belonging to your Society in this land, who wishes to live in peace with those who are either above or co-workers with him. It is useless, however, for any person or persons to suppose that he or they will ever be able to induce me to cease positively opposing as opportunity [3] may offer these Servants of Rome. Yea, any one, whoever he may be, who shall attempt to preach another Gospel to the poor New Zealanders, than Glad tidings for perishing Sinners through the peace-seeking blood and merits of our glorified Redeemer, or attempt to lay any other foundation than that which is *laid*, even Jesus Christ, will necessarily be opposed by me. I trust that GOD will give me wisdom to discern, and faithfulness to expose, the stealthy approaches towards error, so warily made in first beginnings; as well as all the requisite caution which I may need, to keep me within the bounds of moderation.

5. There is also a Copy of the Psalter prepared for Press; concerning which the Comee. of Missionaries have been pleased to adopt a proposition of mine requesting you to get 10,000 Copies printed; as our edition of 5,000 have all been issued. I suppose that it quite escaped their notice to desire the "Order for Administering the LORD's Supper", to be printed with it. I, however, venture to think it highly requisite, inasmuch as the number of Communicants are numerous and still increasing. I have, therefore, added a Copy of the Communion Service, which you will get printed and bound with it, or not, at your discretion. In either case *I should be happy to have 500 Copies, (in addition) on my own private account.*

6. I have also sent you Part 1st. of a "Grammar of the New Zealand Language," by Mr. Maunsell; which, while it contains much that is excellent, is far from being entirely correct.

7. Our new Printing Press has safely arrived, and is put up in the Printing Office. We want, however, some one to work it, and some one also, to get matter ready for it. At present, and for some time past we have been busily employed with Reprints of the Small Prayer Book, Primus, Catechisms, &c.; parts of Exodus and Deuteronomy; and sundry Documents for the Bishop.[4]

8. I have also enclosed in the Box, a small Indent, including Articles for the Printing Office and on private account of self and friends; which you will oblige us in getting forwarded by earliest opportunity. I think it needful to say, in order to prevent any degree of astonishment arising in your minds at my writing for a few stores so soon after the arrival of such a large shipment as that pr. "William Wise," that, although those stores were all immediately divided among the different Individuals of the Mission, I did not

¹⁰⁸ Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

obtain a single article: hence the cause of my now writing for a small supply.

10. I have been given to understand that I am to have a Dictionary of the New Zealand language by the Rev. W. Williams to print. Although, at first reading of the Resolution in Comee., the Comee. of Missionaries rejected the same, at a subsequent Comee. it was again urged and adopted. I have represented—the time it will take to execute it here; the hindrance it will be to other (and much more useful) works intended for the benefit of the Natives; the expense it will put the Society to, with little prospect of a return of the same; the certainty that if printed in England it would be ready for delivery in less time and at a much less expense than if printed here; the probability that, if, when printed here, it should be considered an article worth speculating in; persons would be found to get it cheaply reprinted in England or America, and so undersell our edition; and the almost certainty, that if handed over to the New Zealand Land Company (now that the way is opened) they would not only gladly print it, but also remunerate Mr. Williams (or the Society) for the copy-right;—but to no purpose. A Dictionary of the New Zealand language is merely a Book of reference for the *few*; for, instead of the Settlers caring to learn “Maori,” they have already shewn that the Natives in order to carry on any dealings with them, will have to pick up some smattering of English, and such knowledge the present (and, I fear, the next in succession) race of New Zealanders [5] will never gain from Books. I am sorry, my dear Sirs, indeed I am, to have to remain with the press to do such (permit me to say) very un-missionary work. I felt the restraint great, when I was closely engaged in working in the Printing Office for the spiritual benefit of the Natives; how much more then may it not be supposed I feel my present and prospective situation, when obliged to execute such work?

10. With the utmost deference, my dear Sirs, I pray you to allow me to hope, that par.4, of my Letter to you of Jany. 24/40, will receive from the Parent Comee. every kind consideration. I trust, that from my present anomalous situation I shall not be brought into juxta-position with his Lordship the Bishop. I *can*—through GOD’s grace which is covenanted—endure poverty, and, like the Apostles, not only consent but rejoice to be counted the offscouring of all things, so that I preach the Gospel; but I never, never can consent to cease declaring to others that blessed Gospel which the Spirit of GOD (notwithstanding my dullness) has made me in some measure to comprehend.

11. You will, doubtless, hear from others (to whose province it more particularly belongs,) of the present state of things in New Zealand. The Thames and Bay of Plenty Natives are again in a very unsettled condition, owing to a number of the former having made an irruption on the Tauranga Natives and killed seven, while peaceably engaged in planting. The latter have since retaliated, and killed some of the other party; and it is probable that other Tribes, at least those residing in the immediate neighbourhood, will become involved.

12. I mentioned in my last of a disastrous fire having taken place at Auckland, by which several of the Governmt. Offices were consumed. Shortly after that event, the Governor’s late residence at Russell in the Bay, (one of the first class houses [6] in New Zealand,) was totally destroyed by fire. Lieut. Beckham, J.P., who occupied it, barely escaping in his shirt. And, about a fortnight ago, the residence of the late Additional British Resident, Lieut. McDonnell, at

Hokianga, was also burnt to the ground; the property destroyed, in the last-mentioned fire, is stated as valued at £5,000. I mention these events in order to notice an opinion which is abroad, that there is something more in the consecutive happening of these fires than mere casualty. The Government, unfortunately, is much disliked. I believe Capt. Hobson to be a well-meaning man, but, unhappily, he has those about him who appear to be very bad advisers; and, in connection with them, such a number of dependent place-hunters to be provided for, as actually to eat up all—and more than all—the energies of the Colony can produce. For, in addition to the immense sums realised from the sale of petty sections of Land at Auckland, a debt is already announced, exceeding £50,000! I, however, merely mention this, that you may hear, though briefly, the common report of the Colony, for I have neither time *nor inclination*, to meddle with politics.—

May the Lord of His infinite mercy graciously be pleased to overrule all events for the good of His Church—to direct those who are in Authority in this Colony for His glory and the welfare of the people—to guide us into truth, and, having stablished, finally to receive us into His Heavenly Kingdom!

Believe me,
my dear Sirs,
Ever most truly yours
William Colenso.

P.S. I have written Berdoe a Letter, in which I have ordered the Clothing mentioned in the Indent, (in the Box,) and, *I believe that I am not indebted a penny at this time on the Secretary’s Books.*

July 28/42 W.C.

1842 August 10: to Davis

Paihia August 10th., 1842

My dear Sir,

I have, in the course of conversation, heard that at your last Meeting held in this Station, a resolution to print a Dictionary of the New Zealand language by the Revd. W. Williams, was adopted by the Committee.

In consequence of that information, I have to request that you will be so kind as to lay this letter of mine before the Committee at your next meeting for their consideration.

Without wishing to make my letter unnecessarily prolix—by entering into a statement of my great surprise at such a Resolution as the one alluded to having received the Committee’s sanction, when at a former meeting held only a few weeks previous (with the same Members present) that very same proposition was rejected: or, by adopting a train of reasoning in order to shew that such work is, in the present prospective state of New Zealand, probably but little required,—I would beg leave to mention that a Dictionary of a barbarous language is only likely to be used by students of that Language, and such, alas! Can neither reasonably be expected among the generality of Emigrants to a new Colony, nor the rising generation of New Zealanders.—And here, I would, to prevent misconception, beg to remark, that it is not supposed but that communication will continually pass between the Settlers

and the Aborigines: but (as a judicious and influential Settler [James Busby Esqr.] very lately remarked) perform up for many reasons will not leaven the Native Language, and the present and next generation of the latter, will never gain a knowledge of the English language from books: a code of barbarous jargon, (such as is now in use) will, doubtless, in spite of all attempts on our part to the contrary, be the common medium of communication.

The points, however, to which I would call the Comee. attention, are the following:—

1. The length of time, and consequent expense, which it would necessarily take to get the said work printed at the Society's Press: as all has to be done by one person, who has besides many other things to attend to.
2. The very great hindrance which the printing of this Book will necessarily cause to other work – work, too, which is wanted for the Mission (Here, I may state, that I have just received information that the Revd. Messrs. Hadfield, Maunsell, and Mason, have been obliged to have sundry small Books, which they required for their Natives, printed at the Portnicholson and Auckland printing-offices.)
3. The expense (as formerly shewn by me) to which C.M. Society will be put in the publishing of this work; with very little prospect in the of the outlay ever being met. For,
4. If printed here, and (contrary to all reasonable expectation) a demand be made for the same; the probability is, that some one of the many engaged in speculation, is this lottery-like age, will send a copy to England or America, get it printed and hastily got up, and sell it perhaps at less than half of the price at which we could afford to do so.
5. The certainty that if printed in England the work might not only be published and here long before the time would elapse until it could be printed at our press, but got up in a manner more in keeping with the taste of the day, and at a very much less expense, and the Copyright, moreover preserved to the Author.
6. If however, it still be urged, that it is the opinion of the Comee. that such a work would be useful, and that in order to induce accuracy it should be printed in New Zealand; would it not (may I, with all due deference, be allowed to suggest,) be advisable for the Committee to recommend the Author to get it printed at some one of the Printing-Offices in the land;— even as Mr. Maunsell's Grammar has been printed – without saddling the Society (in the present state of her funds) with any unnecessary expense?

In thus addressing the Comee. on this subject, I trust that no motive whatever will by any person imputed to me, save that of an earnest desire to do my duty as a Missionary to God and the Church Missy. Society.

I have to request that this Letter of mine, be inserted on the Minutes of Comee.

I am &c &c
(Signed) W. Colenso

1842 October 20: to Davis¹⁰⁹

Paihia Octr. 20th., 1842

My dear Sir,

Understanding that your Committee are to meet at Waimate on Monday next, I embrace the opportunity thus afforded me of acquainting them with my sentiments, in answer to a certain portion of your Official Letter to me of the 19th instant, in which you speak of my being “soon at liberty to proceed to a Southern Station.”

That prior to my being removed by the Committee of Missionaries from my present occupation (of Sub-Editor and superintendent of the Press, as expressed in the last Letter from the Parent Committee) to any part or Station of New Zealand, I should wish such removal to have the full sanction of the Parent Committee.

Believe me &c &c truly yours

(Signed) William Colenso

1842 December 30: to Davis¹¹⁰

(Copy.)

Mr. Rd. Davis,
Secretary,
N.D.

Paihia, Decr. 30th. 1842

My dear Sir,

Understanding that your Committee are to meet at Waimate on Monday next, I embrace the opportunity thus afforded me of acquainting them with my Sentiments, in answer to a certain portion of your official Letter to me of the 19th. instant, in which you speak of my being “soon at liberty to proceed to a Southern Station.”

That prior to my being removed by the Committee of Missionaries from my present occupation (of Sub-Editor and Superintendent of the Press, as expressed in the last Letter from the Parent Committee,) to any part or Station of New Zealand, I should wish such removal to have the full sanction of the Parent Committee.—

Believe me,
my dear Sir,
with every respect,
Ever most truly yours
Willm. Colenso.

1843 March 7: to Gell¹¹¹

J.P. Gell, Esq.
&c &c &c
V.D.L.

My dear Sir,

Since my Note to you of November last, I have been honored in the receipt of yours of Augt. 6th, together with a copy of No. 9 of the “*Tasmanian Journal*”.

¹⁰⁹ ATL Micro-Ms-Coll-04-34

¹¹⁰ Hocken Ms-0498/012/358.

¹¹¹ ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0715.

I now send you a paper containing an account of several new Ferns, which I have lately discovered and classified. I have had this ready some time ago, but have been waiting, expecting to see something of those papers already sent, and which, I suppose, will ere long, come to hand. In *this paper* I have included those six ferns formerly described. Should that paper have been inserted in any no., you will, I suppose, merely notice them again in their place in this paper, something in this way—

—*L. linearis*, n.sp., vide, no. , p. .—

The descriptions, however, here given of *those* Ferns, will, I think, be found to be amended a little, in perspicuity, and correctness of detail of minute particulars.

I have sent a copy of my Ms., with dried specimens, to Sir W.J. Hooker, and should be gratified in having this paper inserted at an early opportunity, as I much wish to be able to send him a printed copy.

I have another paper nearly ready—“Memoranda of an Excursion in N. Zealand, with remarks on its Natural History, &c.”, which, I venture to suppose, will give more general satisfaction than the enclosed.

I hope you received my *corrected* paper on the Bones of the Moa, in time to supersede the first one sent.

I think I mentioned in my last, that I had not received Nos. 2 and 3: I would thank you, my dear Sir, to get me copies of those numbers forwarded. My friend Rev. R. Taylor, informed me, that he, also, has not received any Copies of those two numbers, and would be obliged to you in your causing such to be sent to him. Mr. T. has, moreover, suggested, that our Society may have some such regulation, as to allow Members copies of those numbers only in which they may happen to have a paper. If this supposition is correct, we would gladly become subscribers, in order to get copies of each number *as printed*.

I hope to be able to send you the paper I have to hand before the expiration of this month.—

Believe me to remain
My dear Sir
very truly yours
Willm. Colenso.

March 7, 1843.
Paihia, Bay of Islands

1843 March 20: to Gell¹¹²

Paihia, Bay of Islands
March 20 1843

My dear Sir

I last wrote you on the 8th. instant sending you a Paper, giving an account of some new Ferns, which I hope you will safely receive.—It is however, not improbable that you may receive this communication *first*, as I have subsequently heard of the vessel which took the Mail containing mine of the 8th. instant, sailed with the intention of first visiting the Western Coast of New Zealand.

I hasten to send this communication earlier than I expected, as I have heard of a vessel being in passage for Hobart Town, and an opportunity has now presented itself of sending my packet to Hobart Town. I shall send this, under care of the Captain, as the rate of postage, here, is high; and I have experienced, that although addressed to His Excellency Letters are not therefore free.

I have only hitherto received No's. 1, and 4, of the Magazine.—

I should much wish, (*if it could be so arranged*, and the extra trouble to the printer would be slight,) that this Communication, the one one of the 8th. instant, (and if not too late) that on the *Moa*, made up into one continuous work, and a 100 copies strongly bound *at my expense*.—And, if not destroyed, a 100 copies of the Lithogs. of the Fossil Bones, and of *Lomaria nigra*, *L. linearis*, *L. rotundifolia*, and *H. Frankliniarum*. My old friend, Mr. W.R. Wade, would, I am very sure (if needed,) kindly superintend the Editorial department. An order on me, to the amount incurred, payable to any one here, or, on the account reaching me, my transmitting the amount of the same to Sydney, would be promptly attended to. I have several scientific friends at home, to whom I should much wish to send a copy. I intend writing Mr. Wade, by next opportunity, on the subject.

I should much wish to send a few Drawings of shells, &c., to illustrate this paper, but have not at present time to do so. If, however, an opportunity presents itself of sending shortly, I shall not fail of embracing it.—

We have had a most brilliant Comet visible here for a fortnight past; its tail, immensely long, apparently occupying an arc of approximately $\frac{1}{7}$ th of the heavens. I hope it is visible at Hobart, and that I shall have the pleasure of seeing it noted in our Journal.¹¹³ Believe me

My dear Sir
Very sincerely yours
W. Colenso.

1843 March 22: to Selwyn¹¹⁴

1843 April 15: to Mair¹¹⁵

Gilbert Mair, Esq., J.P.,
Deveron,
Wangarei.

Ki a te Mea
Kei Taua Tawiti,
Kei hea ranei, e noho ana.

Paihia, Easter Eve,
April 15 1843.

112 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0715.

113 The tail of the great comet of March 1843 was only exceeded in 1996.

114 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491. Enclosure No. 6 in Colenso's letter to the CMS Secretaries of 13 December 1852 (below).

115 ATL MS-Papers-0092.

My dear Sir,

Your plaguy vessel gave me the slip—and Capt. Lewington, too, served me much as you did when last here, sailed, in another vessel without calling as he promised to do. So I cannot send your daughters watch; at which I am quite vexed.

I write this, and leave it with Walter, to send to you by some Native going that way; just to let you know how things are with me.

I got home on the Saturday night, very well; my cold, however, though little, still remains. I leave on Monday (the 17th.) by Styles' vessel for Auckland—and suppose I shall be three weeks or so absent.

Mr. Busby left yesterday (Good Friday) for Sydney; obliged to be content with a berth in the *hold* of the Shamrock! I am quite sorry for him.

Mr. Williams is not yet returned from Oruru, nor has *any* fight yet taken place—save that little skirmish in the onset, in which 4 lives were lost. I suppose the old gentleman intends to tire them out.

The Bishop is not gone to Auckland, having received the sad news of the death of his Mother; which has affected him very much.

Mr. Dudley is well and preaching.

Mr. Taylor and family have sailed for Wanganui.

The Columbine is sold to Stratton for £600;—I suppose he will have a £100 for this first voyage.—I do not know of any other news.—

With kind regards to your good *kind* wife—and daughter—and all your bairns—whom I pray God to keep and bless.

I am, my dear Sir,
Very truly yours,
W. Colenso.

I should like to hear how you got on in Kahunui's case: I had a long talk with Iwitahi's party on the subject.

—W.C.

Kier is doing of nothing; *if you think he would suit you*, you had better send him a line: *wages is not an object with him*.

1843 May 8: to Mair¹¹⁶

Victoria,
Monday
May 8th.

My dear friend,

We arrived here yesterday—48 hours from the Thames. Through Mrs. B's kind and pressing invitation, we remain here for the present. My good wife is pretty well and joins me in sending our kind regards to Mr. and Mrs. Mair and family.

I saw the Bishop at Auckland, on Thursday night last; and had some conversation with His Lordship. He was 13 days coming from Waimate, by way of Kaipara. He intends

returning to the Bay by way of Wangarei and, Ngunguru, and I ventured to assure him that you would do all you could to assist him, and put him in your boat to Ngunguru,—I mean to Kaiwa Bay, whence he could get in 3 or 4 hours to Capt. L's.—I hope the Natives will huihui, and behave well to His Lordship, and remember Noho their old matua.

As soon as he returns We are to go to the Waimate, when I hope to write you again.

Mr. Chris. Davies is at Paihia for the benefit of his health. The Tortoise is here taking in stores, and going home—now is the time to write your father. Capt. Todd is here in the Union—and the Westminster, another merchant ship, is here also; and 6 or 8 whalers—ka pai ha!

I send your daughters watch, and wishing you every blessing—and desiring to whisper, (in love and friendship,) *make sure work for eternity*—

I am,
My dear friend,
with the kindest regards to *all*
Yours very truly,
W. Colenso.

1843 May 15: to Mair¹¹⁷

St. John's College
Waimate May 15

My dear Sir,

I hope this will find you returned safely from Auckland to the bosom of your family, and with a lighter heart than when you went away. I have scarce a moment to spare, but I would not allow the opportunity to pass without writing a line. You are often in my thoughts, and I pray God to direct and bless you in all your matters: Cheer up, never despair! great afflictions have often befell many of the Lord's chosen ones even when living close to Him—Yet He has ever proved His promises—who knows but that it may be yet with you as with Job, whose end, even in a worldly sense, after losing all, was better than the beginning.—

Keep by Your Heavenly Father: go not to the right nor left of the *one narrow* path: a *good name* is better than riches. Listen not, my dear friend, to any devices of prudence, or expediency, (*falsely so called*) which do not accord with the golden rule—the Word of God.—This only will give peace at the last.

I would write more, but time is precious. With kind regards to Mrs. Mair and family.

Believe me
Yours very sincerely,
W. Colenso.

1843 May 19: to the CMS Secretaries¹¹⁸

Paihia
Bay of Islands
May 19/43.

My dear Sirs,

1. Some considerable time has elapsed since I last wrote you:— My last Letter being dated, July 26/42. I should, however, have certainly written to you long ere this, had not the many and peculiar changes continually taking place whispered—*wait*. With my last I sent a small box, containing sundry Books and Mss., the whole of which, I trust, you have safely received.

2. The work of the Pg. Office is now executed by Mr. Telford, who, safely and unexpectedly landed here in the end of the past year, and into whose charge I committed the whole of the Printing and Binding *Materiel* on the 1st. of January last. Mr. T. arrived just as I was about *finishing* the composition of the last copy of Translation, and has subsequently been employed on a Dictionary (referred to in my last) of the Native language.—A work which I was sorry to see begun, as it will, I fear, eventually prove a heavy outlay of Money, with little prospect of utility, and less of reimbursement. I wrote a letter to our District Committee (a copy of which I enclose,) on the subject of printing of the Dictionary, which did not, however, cause any reconsideration of their Resolution. Mr. Maunsell has, already, lost £55. in publishing his Grammar, although only three nos. have yet appeared.

3. On Mr. Telford's arrival, the N.D. Comee. wished to remove me to the Southd., which, following out what I perceived to be the path of duty laid down by the Parent Comee. for me, (as expressed in par. 3. of your Letter of May 17/42.) I would not consent to do without their approval, and wrote our District Comee. a letter to that effect,—a copy of which I enclose. I regret to have to notice, that Mr. Telford, perceiving the state of things, did not act altogether as I think you quite intended he should do; wishing, doubtless, to have the entire Superintending of the Printing Department; and, possibly, thinking by so acting, to obtain it the sooner. Although [2] I assiduously endeavoured to keep from anything approaching collision—by doing little acts of kindness, yielding of many matters which by right belonged to me, and even offering to abstain altogether from the entering the Printing Office, for “quietness sake”. Mr. T. *writes*, and considers, himself “Superintendent of the Press”; so that, should it be deemed advisable on the part fo the Parent Comee. to continue me in that situation, it will be quite necessary, I think, for them clearly to define our respective duties. In mentioning these matters, I would do so in the kindest possible manner, with regard to Mr. T., consistent with duty, because, considering all things, I can but think it quite *natural* for Mr. T. to act as he has done. For, at the period of his arrival, I had just finished plastering the house in which I had always resided, and fencing in the ground and stocking the gardens belonging to the same, (having lived for nearly 8 years in an unfinished dwelling,) and completed by degress year after year the various little wants of the Printing Office, so that every thing around looked quite inviting. *All* which Mr. T. was led to expect he should possess on my being removed to the Southward.—And, because I would believe, (if it be

the wish of the Society to keep up a Printing Establishment in New Zealand,) that Mr. T. may, through the Divine Blessing, be useful to the Society and the Mission in the situation which the Parent Comee. have assigned him in the Printing-Office.—

4. Just about the period of Mr. Telford's arrival, I had it in consideration to write you my ideas respecting the Press.—I thought that it would be most advantageous to the Society (taking into consideration all circumstances,) to cease keeping up a Printing Establishment in New Zealand; and, I still venture to think that such would be best. There are several Presses now in the Land, at the different large Settlements, where any small printing required might be executed by contract, with the advantage of each district being supplied in its own dialect. [3] Future editions of the Testament and Prayer Book, will, I dare suppose, be always executed in England; where they can be done better, cheaper, and more expeditiously. And, I think, that the fact, of their not being any thing whatever of a direct Missionary character printed at the Society's press during the last six months, (save a proof “pulled” of the first half-sheet 12mo. of Joshua,) although the Establishment has been attended with a very great increase in expenditure, will tend very much to confirm the truth of my supposition. I venture to think, my dear Sirs, that it will be soon the case with the Press, as with the Columbine, the Farm, and the Public Store; the end being, in a measure, answered for which it was set up, it will be found desirable under existing circumstances to discontinue it. Perhaps twelve months longer trial will more fully develop the truth of my observation. At all events, I would strongly urge on the Comee., (in case they decide on my moving to the Southward,) the necessity of having a Superintendent for their Press, (if possible from among the Clergy,) whose duties should be clearly defined in a Letter of Instruction from the Parent Comee.

5. My own situation, during the last six months, has been a very unpleasant one; (not a little reminding me of what Mr. Wade's was 4 or 5 years ago,) the Bishop, too, being evidently prepossessed against me! Better days, however, are, I hope, at hand. I have often found the path of duty a narrow and apparently difficult one, but have invariably proved it to be infallibly *safe*. I have had to pass through many sore trials of late, but, blessed be the LORD! I do believe they have been, and will be, for my spiritual good. He has enabled me to *live down* my enemies, and now the Bishop (from whom I have lately had two kind Letters,) is, without any effort of mine, become my friend. At his Lordship's suggestion and arrangement I go, in a few days, to the Waimate, there to reside for four or six months, to study preparatory to Orders. I know not where my future lot may be, nor am I at all anxious about the matter, save that, [4] (if it please the Parent Comee. to disconnect me from the Press,) I should wish to labour in a populous District, as far as possible from the encroaching white man; and, if possible, among some of those Tribes who have heard and received the Gospel at my hands. His Lordship has already licensed me to Catechetical Duties, for which, I hope, I am thankful. I venture, however, to suppose, that few, if *any*, among us will ever be admitted to Priest's Orders,—unless the Standard of Qualification (an Examination in Latin, Greek and Hebrew) be greatly lowered. I trust, however, *with God's Grace, cheerfully to serve Him* among the poor Natives in whatever vocation I may be placed,—whether as Catechist, Reader, or Deacon. “For I had rather be a

118 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

doorkeeper in the house of my GOD, than dwell in the tents of wicked ones".—

6. Among other things, I have to inform you, my dear Sirs, of my marriage; which took place on the 27th. of last month, at Otahuhu near Auckland: Mr. Fairburn's eldest daughter (of whom honourable mention has been made by the Bishop of Australia and others, as a useful and active member in the LORD'S Vineyard,) is now my wife. It had long been a matter of earnest prayer with me for guidance in this important matter, and I can but believe that the LORD hath graciously pleased to direct me to a partner every way suitable for a *Missionary's* wife. It was my intention to have gone single to Waimate, but, at the wish of the Bishop (who, in his Letter to me of March 17th., says "If you would prefer coming as a married man, I have no doubt that we can make arrangements for Mrs. C's reception: and she will be of great assistance in the revision of the New Testament. In fact, I should very much prefer this arrangement, as my short visit at Maraetai would prepare me to be glad of any opportunity of extending my acquaintance with her;") I have concluded to go thither married. [5]

7. I have read the charge brought forward by the Chairman of "the Aborigines Protection Society," relative to the Sale of Books and more than supposed pocketing of the price by the Missionaries, but am not greatly surprised at it; as such has been the common taunt of our Roman Catholic adversaries for many-a-day. We have often—invariably, when we *could* do so—sold Books to the Natives, of which I supposed you had been always well aware, from the entering (at least) of those I had sold in the "Return, No.1," sent by me to each half-yearly Comee., and from the often mentioning of such transactions in Journals, &c., as well as from the more recent remittances of monies received on account of such sale of Books. Until lately, the payments generally received by me have been in work rendered on account of the Society—digging, fencing, &c., &c.,—or in exchange for different fruits of the earth,—melons, pumpkins, maize, sweet potatoes, peaches, &c., &c.,—which were used by ourselves and numerous native visitors on the premises. We ever found that Books (and, in fact, every thing else,) were taken much greater care of by the Natives, when earned or paid for with ever so small a price, than when issued gratuitously. I enclose a List of Books, sold by me at different times to Natives and others, (see enclosure D,) the amount of sale of which was always carried by me to my Cash account in the P. Office Ledger. In August, 1840, I received an official order from the Secy. of the N.D. Comee., (in consequence of the *number* of Books I was selling from the general Stock,—the policy of which Order, however, is still unknown to me,) to the effect "that no Copies of the New Testament, or other Books, be issued in future, but under the sanction of the Comee., which effectively precluded my selling any more Books from the General Stock. I have, however, subsequently sold a considerable number of those which fell to my share, (in making a division of Books among the Stations,) several of which have been sold for marketable produce—potatoes, pumpkins, &c., &c.,—and which I have constantly debited myself with at the common [6] market price of such articles; often, I believe, so at too *high* a rate. Two days ago, an old Native Chief came to see me, and told me he wished a Comm. Prayer, and that he would pay for it (if I was willing) in pumpkins; enquiring, how many would be required. I told him, he should have one for a dozen; to which he instantly and gladly assented. Yesterday, he

brought the pumpkins, and received his Book; I charging myself 3/- for the vegetables; which are, to me, of little use. Instances of this kind, only having *smaller* payments given in return, (such as, a bunch of onions, a fish, a bundle of firewood, a few cabbages, a wild pigeon, and, sometimes, an English Bible or Com. Prayer obtained from the shipping, and, more recently, some one of the Roman Catholic publications in the New-Zealand language, or a crucifix, or medal,) are of common occurrence. We have, however, (at least *I* have) always freely *given* Books in travelling, although the doing so has, sometimes, unfortunately caused dissension and jealousy among the Natives of the place, as only a privileged *few* could possibly attain such prizes. Within the last two years, I have, on 5 different occasions, sold one pound's worth of Testaments to a single native at once; *three* of whom *sent* their money from Port Nicholson. I have, also, had applications from white men, traders on the coast with the Natives, for Books; and, on one occasion, spared one respectable trader 6 Testaments, for which he paid me 6 bushels of Maize, which I set down in my book as £1..4..0, the very *maximum* price in the market. I, also, enclose, a List of Books, &c., sold (as mentioned before from *my share*), by me, during the 2 years ending June *next*; and which will *all* have been paid by me in a/c with our Secretary (with, perhaps, some future addition,) at the next Comee. meeting, at the close of the six months ending in June ensuing. I may here mention, that, in addition to monies (or vegetables, &c.) received for *new Books* sold, I have, also, received a few trifling sums, or equivalents, from Natives for my repairing [7] of their *old Books*; which amount, I scarce need say, I have, also, carried to a/c.

8. I have very recently received the Books and Watch; so kindly sent me. *Bagster's version of the Vulgate*, however, is of *no manner of use* as a book of reference when disputing with the Romish priests. I much wish for one of their *own* editions of this work, together with a few other Books of which a List is enclosed.—And which, I trust, you will cause to be sent me as soon as possible by first vessel to the Bay of Islands, Auckland, or Sydney. *Do not send any thing for me to Port Nicholson, or to any other port in New Zealand, for the present*, than those *two* already mentioned. "*Scott's Continuation*," 3 vols., among the books sent, is made up, I find, of three *different* editions! The 1st. vol. of the 4th., the 2nd. vol. of the 3rd., and the 3rd. vol. of the 2nd. edition!!

9. I enclose a Copy of the List of Printing and Binding Materials and Stores, and Books, &c., delivered by me into the charge of Mr. Telford on the 2nd. of January last; the original of which is in the possession of Rev. R. Burrows, who is now our Secretary.

10. I hope that the Indent of Medicines, Stores, and Books, forwarded in my last, has been attended to and shipped for New Zealand, ere this.

11. Should Mr. Tegg, Bookseller, (or any other person) send you a parcel of Books for me, I would thank you to pay him the amount of his Bill, which will be but small.—

12. I have lately had occasion to write to Mr. Johnstone, Hunter Sq., Edinburgh, and to enclose the 1st. and 2nd. of a Set of Bills of Ex., for £30, drawn upon you by our Chairman and Secretary in Commee. at Waimate on Jany./43, and numbered 1; should such Bills be presented by *him*, or his *order*, please duly honour the same.

13. The Romanists (who have lately had an accession to the number of their priests,) are active. They have published a Book of 55 pps., 8vo., containing sundry Prayers, a Litany to the Virgin Mary,[8] directions how to cross, and how to use the Rosary, and a long rambling address to the Natives; in which address the Romanists state, that *we* and “all protestants, (who owe their origin to Henry VIII, Luther and Calvin,) will, without any reserve whatever, when we die infallibly go to hell, unless we conform to our Holy Mother the Church of Rome”! Last week, they had a grand day at Kororareka, consecrating and laying the foundation of their new Church. Were they opposed as they ought to have been, (or were they now manfully met,) I feel quite sure they would soon give up New Zealand as a soil in which Popish slips will never thrive.—I hope, however, (though *alone* in this warfare) soon to have another little book out against them. I have good reason to know that they hate me with unceasing hatred. I much wish some Christian friend at home, would send me the *useful* and *authentic* works of the Protestant Association.

And now, my dear Sirs, I must hasten to bring my long Letter to a conclusion. I sincerely hope, however I may have erred in any of my views herein expressed, that I have been led to lay them before you from no other source than that of a good intention. May the Giver of every good and perfect gift, continually enable us for all things! and, having stablished and strengthened us for all He may be pleased to require, finally bring us all to His heavenly kingdom of peace and rest, through the alone merits of Jesus Christ our LORD.

Believe me,
my dear Sirs,
Ever most sincerely yours,
William Colenso.

Paihia, Monday morning
May 22. 1843.

About to send my Letter to the Post office; I add, by way of Post Script, that His Lordship the Bishop returned from the Thames on the 20th instant, landing at Wangarei, he travelled hither—having rain every day—by way of Ngunguru, Owae, Papapaumu, Wangaruru & Waikare, so that the whole of that Coast has, also, been seen by His Lordship.

Since I closed my Letter, I have read our Anniversary Sermon (which has just come to hand) preached by the Rev. Hugh Stowell, and am delighted beyond expression. Blessed be GOD! for strengthening and enabling His Servant thus fearlessly to speak! I hope its arrival *here* will be productive of much good among some in New Zealand who have to minister in Holy things. And, as (I hope, in some degree at least) a tried servant of a few years’ standing and experience in the Missionary Field, I implore you, my dear Sirs, and you, Fathers in Christ, of the Parent Committee—in the Name of our Lord and for the sake of the souls of the poor dear New Zealanders—who, though professing Christianity and able to read the Word of GOD, are, therefore perhaps, the more easily imposed upon by any religious observance of “voluntary humility and will-worship,” having a specious outside—never to send any one to this field of labour, however exalted his attainments, however flaring his zeal, who is in any way tainted with those “anti-christian” principles. Let such come—and *we*

are divided; let such come—and the Natives—our own Natives—are Romanists. May you ever give the fullest attention to what God’s Servant *then* spoke, especially to the words contained in pp. 18–21, and may the Holy Spirit ever more enable you for your arduous task. Amen, and Amen—— W. Colenso.

1843 July 15: to Mair¹¹⁹

G. Mair, Esq.,
Wangarei.

Ki a te Mea,
Kei Wangarei e noho ana.

Waimate, July 15./1843.

My dear friend,

I have scarcely time to write a line, and I know not if when written it may reach you, but I will notwithstanding make the experiment; a Native going to Owae affords me a kind of opportunity.

Yesterday the Bishop appointed me to visit Wangarei and the Coast in the middle and latter end of August, so I hope to see you on Saturday night the 26 of August; I shall go by way of the Coast and Ngunguru, thence to Tamatarau, and finish at Tauatawiti, returning by Wairua. I have but a few days allowed me, and must therefore make but a flying visit.

I wrote you a hurried line or two the other day: I dare say you have again visited the Bay since we left it as Milne has been in. The Columbine is not yet arrived, nor Mr. Busby; that is when I last heard.

I have no news to send you, here, in the midst of the Ngahere’s, I hear and see nought save trees and kaka’s:— Kei te moana anake nga pipi.

I hope you got well home, and that now yourself and family are quite well: remember us *most kindly* to all.

We are living in Mr. Preece’s old house; and though it has but 2 rooms, yet we have enough, and are pretty comfortable.

I sometimes think on you and other old friends: we are getting more and more separated from each other, but I hope, through God’s abounding mercy, we shall all meet together at last “to go no more out for ever”: that, my dear friend, will be a happy meeting,—we shall ever have done with sorrow, care, and the 1000 troubles and ills of life, and shall “be for ever with the Lord”.

Remember me kindly to Mr. Kier, who, I hope, is comfortable, and believe me

Very truly yours
W. Colenso.

1843 September 27: to Mair¹²⁰Paihia, Sept. 27
1843

My dear Sir,

Being about to sail, in the Columbine, for *Turanga* and the *Mahia*, and down below on that coast, I just drop you a line for old acquaintance sake. I heard you were at the Bay and could but regret that I was so far off as not to be able to render you the rites of hospitality. I hope you got back in safety to your dear family.

Of course you have heard of Mrs. Fairburn's death: a happy release for her from a severe state of suffering of long continuance. I have not the least doubt on my own mind of her having entered into rest. May the Lord prepare and enable us to follow! Mrs. Colenso felt it much, at first, but, I am happy to say, she is now pretty well.

I am to be absent for 5 months—and to come back from beyond Hawke's Bay all the way by land! I dare hope that the Lord will strengthen me for this work also. We sail in the Columbine, and we shall call at Auckland, Tauranga, Hick's Bay, Tolaga Bay and Turanga: *ka pai!* I see Capt. Fitzroy is to be Governor: I hope he will not forget his *old friends*. I had a letter from Dr. Hooker of H.M.S. "Erebus", the other day, in which he says, "You must remember me kindly to Mr. and Mrs. Mair, their kindness to a total stranger I can never forget; tell them also that Abernethy is quite well and desires his kind remembrances." They were 137 days out of sight of land, and were brought up in 78°10' S., just where they were before. They lost one man in doubling Cape Horn, and wintered at the Falkland Islands.

Perhaps when I return—about the 18th. or 19th. of February, I may pass by your kainga. May the Lord ever bless you all, my dear *friends*—and believe me

Very truly yours
W. Colenso.

(written in great haste)

I heard from Mr. Puckey the other day he was quite well.

1843 October 2: to the CMS Secretaries¹²¹St. John's College, Te Waimate,
October 2nd. 1843.

1. My last Letter to you was dated May 19, 1843; since which we have not received any Communication from the Society.

2. I intimated, in my last, that I expected "to go in a few days to the Waimate," to study under the direction of the Bishop. We accordingly came hither on the 5th. of June, and (as you will have perceived) still remain. My time has been fully occupied in study; excepting about 3 weeks in August, when the Bishop kindly sent me to visit the Natives at Wangarei Bay and adjacent villages. On the 24th. ult., an ordination was held here—when Messrs. Spencer, H Butt, and W. Bolland, were ordained Deacons. The Bishop has been pleased to defer my being admitted to Deacon's

Orders until September next; which, as it keeps me from *active* usefulness, proves a severe trial to me. It grieves me much to have to eat the bread of idleness; and more to be obliged to sit still in these *peculiar* times.—I endeavor, however, to comfort myself, with the Psalmist's words, XXVII. 14, &c. The Bishop leaves this week to visit his large Diocese, from which he will not return until March next. In consequence of which absence he has just given me a Letter of Instructions to proceed immediately (*this day*) to Turanga, and thence, under the Archdeacon's directions, to Hawke's Bay; whence I am to return over-land, by a kind of zig-zag route among the villages of the interior, to the Waimate by the end of the Summer. The Bishop has, moreover, informed me, that, in all probability, Ahuriri in Hawke's Bay will be the place to which I shall be ordained. I am, I trust, thankful for this journey being granted me, and for such a large and populous and distant District being prospectively allotted me as the Scene of my future labours. I can, but *feel* for my Natives at Wangarei and on the Coast between that place and Cape Brett, among whom also I have hitherto laboured alone, who have not only implored me not to leave them, but have been here to the Bishop, as well as sent him letters, beseeching him not to take me from them. The Bishop, knowing pretty much of the merits of the case, will, doubtless, be guided aright in the matter; for, were it left to me to choose, I could not, I confess, do so. Had these Natives been more in number, (being only about 5, or 600,) or more destitute of Scriptural knowledge, I should then be the better able to decide.

3. Nothing has been printed at your press since I last wrote, save a few chaps. in continuation of Deuteronomy and Joshua and the N.Z. Dictionary mentioned by me in my last. A short time ago, the Bishop informed me, that he had written to you respecting the Press; and, following out the idea faintly sketched in par.4. of my last communication, I think the disposal of the whole Printing establishment to him, would be well-worthy of the attentive consideration of the Parent Commee.: mainly so, from the fact, that it will henceforward be done there which shall not have received his Lordship's *imprimatur*; and that in the so disposing of the Printing Establishment, our Society will be relieved of a heavy and continual expense; and, also, that in my being *entirely* separated from the Press, there is no one (I speak in confidence) among them save the Archdeacon W. Williams, and the Rev. R. Maunsell, who is fully qualified—by a good knowledge of the Native Language, freedom from worldly cares, and an entire adaptation to the office of Superintendent—to undertake the arduous task of conducting same.—

4. The Bishop has a little Press of his own, in which (among other things,) he, every week, prints the heads of his Native Sermon on the ensuing Sunday; these he distributes with suitable instruction among his numerous Native Teachers, for them to deliver to their hearers, and hence, ensures a similarity of teaching, and, as far as man may, erects a safeguard against heretical or novel doctrines. An admirable plan fraught with incalculable good to the Natives! I have the pleasure, and honor, and benefit of translating and preparing these skeletons for Press. It would be well if each Clergyman in the Land was to procure a little Press and a few types, and thus follow the Bishop's good example.—I have of late been endeavouring to use it on some, but, I fear, without success. I venture, however, to enclose a little order for a small Press and a few Types, to enable me to do so;—and which, I dare to hope, the Committee will be pleased to grant me. Should, however, the state of the

120 ATL MS-Papers-0092.

121 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

Society's funds be such as not to permit of their doing so, (although the whole expense would not, I should think, be above £50. or £60.) I hope the Commee. will be pleased to make the outlay on my behalf, and to send me the whole order *without delay*, kindly allowing me to pay it by instalments of £20. pr. annum, until the whole be liquidated.—

5. Mr. and Mrs. Spencer sail this day with me for Tauranga, on their way to Rotorua and Taupo, at which latter place he has been stationed.

6. It pleased the LORD to take to himself the spirit of Mrs. Fairburn on the 2nd. ult. For a long period previous to her death she had been a great sufferer, but was continually enabled to draw water with joy from the well of Salvation. GOD graciously fulfilled all His promises unto her, and strengthened her to meet her last foe, whom she overcame through the blood of Jesus—(her only *hope*)—leaving a steadfast testimony behind her. Mrs. F. was a woman of no common mind, and had always been a *working* female Missionary; and when, at last, her heart so far failed her as to preclude her moving out of doors, her chiefest delight was to assemble as many Children as she could and to instruct them in reading and in Catechisms.—Being herself a Convert from the errors of Romanism, she eagerly embraced every opportunity of exposing that master-piece of iniquity, for which work her own *personal* knowledge availed her not a little. Latterly, evangelical truth was the only theme on which she delighted to dwell: her many and serious charges to me, on the faithful preaching of the same, I trust I shall never forget. In her the Natives have lost a *Mother*;—and in her departure the Missionaries—the *elder* ones especially who for a long period had been co-adjutors with her in the Missionary field, have had another admonition from on high, that this is not our rest. May we with the warning receive such a measure of Grace as shall enable us severally to heed it!

7. We are daily expecting to receive Communications from you, and from friends at home; not having heard for a long period from “our father's land.”

Praying that every needful blessing may be graciously imparted unto you in these critical times, and craving our interest in your prayers, I am,

My dear Sirs,

Ever most sincerely and affectionately
Yours,

William Colenso.

Order sent to CMS (Octr.2, 1843)¹²²

===

1 post Broadside Iron Albion Printing Press, complete;
(new or 2nd. hand)—
28lbs. Ptg. Ink
20 Ream Post ptg. paper
6 Tympan skins 4 Blankets
250 Quoins
A small assort. of Furniture
2 shootg. sticks: 3 Bodkins in hafts
1 small composing stick
28lbs. Potash in Stone Jar, & Jar enclosed in a hamper; or in
an iron-hooped cask.
2 Leg Brushes
2 pair Post Broadside Iron chase with Bars

¹²² ATL 80-038 George Petersen papers; this appears to be a rough record of his order kept by Colenso.

1 Post folio d— —
1 Post 4to. d— —
3 wooden galleys
1 Brass d— —
1 Iron Roller-Frame, 2 wooden roller stocks: 1 small Iron
Roller mould to size
1 Imposing stone—to size
1 doz. lengths thin Brass rule
25lbs. glue
Building materials—
1 Cutting press plough & pin
6 plough knives
1 ream Mill Board (thin 12mo.)
1 large Binder's shears
2 Binders Small Hammers
1 doz. red glazed sheep skins
1 doz white ditto

Type:—

		<u>upper</u>	<u>Small caps</u>
1 Fount Small Pica, 3-nicked ³ , Roman ² , (comprising)			
lower			
a 6000	a 400	100	
e 2500	300	80	
l 2700	300	80	
o 3400	200	50	
u 2000	100	50	
h 1200	200	60	
k 4000	500	100	
m 700	100	40	
n 1800	250	40	
p 500	100	40	
r 1800	200	50	
t 2500	250	60	
w 700	100	40	
g 800	100	50	

*Figures; stops; 1-m-rules, quads., & spaces according to
Eng. Tariff for Type of similar weight*

30lbs Italic, assorted according to above Tariff; 14 letters
only upper & lower, *no s. caps.*

30lbs. Roman contg. such Eng. sorts,—(in Upper, Lower,
S. Caps, & Dble Letters *only*) as one *omitted* in above
Tariff—

12lbs. Italic d— — — — —

1000 Leads 4 to pica, 20 pica em's long—

1844 March 1: to Mair¹²³

Gilbert Mair, Esq.,
Deveron,
Wangarei.

St. John's College,
The Waimate.
March 1st., 1844.

My dear Sir,

I wrote you a scrap of a Note when near Waiomio on my way home—which you may not have received. I returned to the Waimate on the 15th. of February, having been absent 137 days. I had a very long round, and quite an adventurous one—had, also, the pleasure of seeing Mr. Kissling, Mr. Stack, Mr. Brown, Mr. Baker, Mr. W. Williams, Mr. Ashwell, and Mr. Buller—and they are all well. I must defer anything like an account of my trip until I see you,

¹²³ ATL MS-Papers-0092.

which I hope to do, sometime this winter. I suppose you will have heard of the *stranger*, who arrived before me—on the 1st. Feby. Mrs. C. was safely delivered of a daughter, and I am happy in being able to say they are both doing well. I found, also, your kind note of November 4th., for which I thank you much; I shall always be most happy to get any information respecting the Natives of Wangarei, (who are dearer to me than they have any idea of), and such information will always be doubly valuable when it happens to come from an *old* friend like yourself. I do not see any prospect of my being allowed to spend my days among those Natives,—should I not, I hope they will have a Pastor, who, *knowing* the green pastures and cooling waters belonging to the Chief Shepherd, will delight in leading his flock thither. Poor souls! I often think of them.

I am very sorry to find that a Collection was made for poor Gordon Brown during my absence; I did all I could to prevent it before I went away, and thought I had succeeded in putting a stop to it. I have had letters lately from Octavius and Charles, and shall write them in a day or two. Poor Gordon's sun has set under a Cloud! I dare however, hope that our Heavenly Father—whose tender mercy is over all his works, and who never willingly grieves nor afflicts the children of men—has had mercy on his soul. We have good reason *so* to believe, for we know that HE hears and answers prayer—and many, very many, have been the earnest petitions on his behalf at a throne of Grace. Octavius says, (in his letter to me of the (some day) February 1843), "Remember me most kindly to Mr. Mair and family, from whom I have received many kindnesses." I will show you his letter when I see you; it is a very nice one.

I have, also, had a letter from Dr. Jos. Hooker, (who was here in H.M.S.S. "Erebus", in 1841), written from the Falkland Islands, in which he particularly requests to be remembered to his "kind friends, Mr. and Mrs. Mair".

Really, when I look back upon past days, and think upon the many events which have from time to time come under my observation,—the many happy hours I have had,—and the many dear friends with whom I have had the pleasure of conversing—I ask myself the question—are such times for ever fled? Oh, Yes!—there is indeed a wonderful alteration come upon *people*, as well as upon *times*, and I fear not for the better either — — — but this is, to me, a painful subject, so I will quit it. May *we*, my dear friend, *seeing* the vanity of earthly happiness, seek and gain that heavenly inheritance, which is incorruptible, undefiled, and fadeth not away!

Blessed be God! *that is* "reserved" in Heaven for all His people!!

Mr. Davis has this day heard from Serena, they are safely arrived at their station (Nelson), and like it pretty well: the country about appears to be barren. Mr. D. has, also, this day heard from Mr. Jos. Matthews—his good wife has just had a daughter!—One generation passeth away and another cometh.

Remember me very kindly to Mrs. Mair, Miss Mair, and *all* your family, as if named, taki tahi. I must write a line to Mr. Kier, and Stephen, and Manihera. Tautore has turned out, what I always suspected he would. Mr. Busby is very well—but *low spirited*. His cattle sale, the other day, was a very dead one. His largest fat bullocks only realized £10—cows, £5.10.—bulls and steers, £4 to £6, ewe lambs 4/- each and so on—about £100 pound's worth only was sold. I

hear that John Busby is quite sick of the Natives at Kaitaia—I told him how it would be, before he went,

Once more, my dear friend,
Believe me, very truly yours
W. Colenso.

1844 March 9¹²⁴

March 9/44. ordered *conditionally* through Mr. N. Broughton—the following—

of Holtzapffel & Co

64 Cha. Cross & 127 Long acre London

1 Folio fcp. Pg. Press. with Iron Bed, chases,) reg. points, &c, complete) 6.16.6
1 12-in roller stock & frame (no made roller))
& mould for castg. roller in—)
Assort. of Furniture & Quoins ————— 5

of Watts—

Small Pica	lower	upper	S. Caps	Ital
a	750	50	20)
e	300	40	12)
i	320	40	12) 1 doz. lengths
o	400	30	12) thin Brass Rule
u	250	15	12)
h	150	30	12) 6lbs pg.
k	500	60	12) Ink
m	100	15	10)
n	220	30	10) 4 ream
p	70	15	10) fcp. ptg.
r	220	30	12) paper
t	320	30	12) good
w	100	15	10)
g	120	15	12)

Figures, stops—1-m rules, quads. & spaces, as accord. to

Eng. Tariff for Type of simr. weight

10 lts. S.P. Italic upper & lower same sorts only as above & accord. to above run of Letters

200 10m leads—200, 20m leads—4to pica

1844 April? to Mair¹²⁵

Gilbert Mair, Esq.,
Deveron Wangarei.

Ki a te Mea

Kei Tauranga haku,
e noho ana.

(Beginning of letter missing)

... of tomorrow; make what provision Christian prudence dictates, for the future, and *leave events with God*. His are the gold and the silver and the fulness of the world, and he *can* give, through a 1000 ways, whensoever he pleases. As the psalmist says— "'Tis when they are diminished and brought low through oppression affliction and sorrow, that he setteth the poor on high after affliction, and maketh his families like a flock";—as we see in the case of Job, who had more in the end, than he had in the beginning. God, too, has the hearts of all men in his hand, and he turneth them as

124 ATL 80-038 George Petersen papers; this appears to be a rough record of his order kept by Colenso.

125 ATL MS-Papers-0092.

He pleases—Look to Him, then, my dear friend—tell him *all* your griefs:—your debts, your losses, your incumbrances, your fears—make Him your friend, (like Hezekiah in his trouble, Isaiah XXXVII, particularly the 14 verse,)—tell Him *all* (and *more*) than you would tell *me*, and sure I am that our Heavenly Father, who *waits*, will graciously direct you; and by thus dealing with him, you make him the friend of your children—who will want a friend when you are gone.

I could say much more, but I will stop—only hoping that you will not be offended at my freedom and faithfulness which, I trust, arises from my regard for your welfare,

Monday Morning, April 15th. (1844)

As Stephen and his party are about returning I must hasten to finish my Letter. I have little however of news to communicate. I have heard of Capt. L's being up from Ngunguru, but I have not seen him. The Columbine has not yet arrived although we hear by the Thomas Lord that she is outside. Parata is coming over-land (so we hear)—and his new house is not burnt down as reported. Mr. Davis is gone to Kaitaia, and Mr. Puckey and Mr. Matthews are expected here daily. Stephen cannot make the Bishop alter his plan respecting me, although they have had a long korero. The Bishop told me last week, that he should send me down to visit Wangarei and neighbourhood in about 2 months—and that he himself should go there in about 4 months. When I know the time I will endeavour to let you know,—it will be somewhat grievous to me to have to go, as it will be the *last!* (this word sounds awfully dismal in my ears.) But we look forward to a meeting under *happier circumstances*, and where parting will be *unknown*. Blessed be God for this hope! May we use all diligence to make our calling and election *sure!* From a letter just received, I learn that Capt. Ross is preparing for another expedition to the North Pole by way of Spitzbergen. There is an English whaler now in the Bay, refitting for voyage home.—Such an event nowadays, reminds us of old times.

I am happy to say our little girl is pretty well—and growing fast—she is not yet baptized, as we wait for Mr. W. Williams and Mrs. Chapman as Godfather and Godmother—we intend calling her Frances Mary. My “*missus*” desires her kind love to Mrs. Mair—and I am sure I will not be behind.

And now my dear friend, good bye, and may God bless you!

Prays yours very sincerely
William Colenso.

1844 May 30: to Coates¹²⁶

Dandeson Coates, Esq.,
C.M. House,
Salisbury Square,
London.

St. John's College, Waimate,
May 30, 1844.

My dear Sir,

This Letter will, I trust, be delivered to you by Mr. James Busby, late British Resident at this place, who is now about

to leave for England via America. As Mr. Busby only arranged to sail by this vessel two days ago, and she is to sail from this place the day after tomorrow, I have only time to write a few words. From Mr. Busby, however, you will be enabled to obtain a much more correct account of the present state of N. Zealand; the Mission, and the Natives, than from any person who has merely visited these shores, or resided for a short time in the Country.

My last Letter to the Secretaries, was dated October 2/43, at which time I was about to leave the Waimate on a visit to the Natives in the Southward. From that visit I returned on the 15th. February to this place, and still remain. I *hope* to leave the Waimate at the end of the term—September next; but I do not *know* whether I shall of not. At this time several of the Mission are here:—1st, Archdeacon W. Williams, Rev. R. Maunsell, and Mr. Puckey, on the revision of the Testament, &c.,—(although the Archdeacon has not yet arrived to the Waimate but is near by.)—2nd. Messrs. Chapman, Hamlin, Jos. Matthews, and self, and Mr. C.P. Davies, (Mr. H. Williams' son-in-law,) as students.—You may truly suppose, the Natives in the different districts are nothing bettered by their Missionaries being absent.

I hope, my dear Sir, that GOD will still graciously overrule all events for the good of His Church in N. Zealand and still bless the C.M.S. in their Missions. I dare think you particularly need His guidance just now. Mr Davies is at Kaitaia, and Mr. Dudley is removed to the Thames and the Waimate District may be said to be without a Missionary:—other Districts, too, are loud in their complaining. Popery is active: one of the P. Priests was introduced the other day by the Bishop's Chaplain into the Native Infant School in this place under Mrs. Colenso. I hoped to have sent you a copy of my Journal ere this, but the Bishop has it still in his possession; I dare say, however, I shall soon have it returned. The Press is now engaged in printing 500 Copies of the Sunday 1st. Lessons in 8vo., with which, however, I have nothing to do. Rev. H. Williams is about leaving to supply his Brother's place at Turanga.—But, as I have already said, Mr Busby can give you much news respecting the Mission.

I hope, C.M.S., have been pleased to grant me the little Press, &c, which I wrote for. If I go to Ahuriri, I shall have an immense parish, (from some miles N. of Ahuriri to Palliser Bay!) containing a scattered people, to look after; and shall be almost cut off from the other Missionaries—being six day's journey from Turanga, the nearest Station; or, if Wairoa be occupied by Mr. Hamlin, 4 long day's-journey from that place. But, if I go, I hope to go in faith, and in the strength of the LORD, and to make mention of His righteousness, and of His *only*. I feel, at times, much cast down, at the many obstacles which still appear to lie in my way to active Missionary duty;—and, I often fear, that ere I go forth (if I ever do?) I shall in some respects be unfit for much exertion:—but I endeavour to “look up,” and at times am enabled to cast my care upon the LORD who careth for us. My longing ardent desire is still to serve the LORD Jesus Christ among the poor Natives of New Zealand, who now, more than ever, need loving, discerning, and zealous guides. Oh! pray for us—for *me*.

A party of Natives from Wangarei, with their Teacher at their head, was here the other day to “fetch *me*”; they endeavoured in two days' striving to prevail upon the Bishop to consent to their request, but he told them he could not do so. We could not help weeping at parting. I am (I

believe) to go to see them in about a month's time; which, however, being mid-winter, is a bad season for travelling in.

As your Public Store is no longer in being, I shall soon be necessitated to send a large order to England for necessary stores for forming a new Station, if I am to go to Ahuriri.

In the last Lot of Goods which were kindly sent out from C.M.S. to me, the Contents of the Case No. 24, containing Maps, Umbrellas, and Binder's skins, were entirely destroyed by salt-water, which eat even the tin-plate Case, in which they had been packed, full of holes; the value of the Contents, as per your Invoice, was £4.17.6. Should you be pleased to procure and send me any more Maps, &c., before my next order, please get me some additional Blank Maps, *from the Society for the promotion of knowledge*, which I can fill up for the Natives.—

I am happy in being able to add, that Mrs. Colenso's health is good, and that she is usefully employed in the Native Infant School: my own health is rather fluctuating, owing, no doubt, to my situation: our little girl is exceeding well.—

And now, my dear Sir, I must conclude my short Letter. Wishing you every blessing, and, above all, the continual guidance and comfort of GOD's Holy Spirit, and craving an interest in your prayers—I am,

Very affectionately and obediently
yours

William Colenso.

1844 July 15: to Johnstone¹²⁷

Paihia, B. Islands
July 15/44

Mr. J. Johnstone

Sir,

I have recd. your Letter informing me of your having received mine contg. a remittance on the C.M.S. for £25., and further acquainting me of your awaiting the receipt of another Letter from me, ere you complete the Order for the Encyclop.

Allow me, Sir, to say—had you sent on the Books the small Balance would have been duly paid you; & if you felt not disposed to do so, I think, (and my friends here think with me) you should have sent the first vols. to the amount of the remittance wh. you received. It is true, that we are entire strangers to each other—but you could have enquired somewhat concerning me of the C.M.S.,—or you might have had credited me with £10. for a few months—seeing that I hesitated not to trust you with double that sum.

Howr., as we only draw Bills of Ex. on our Society at our ½ yearly Comee. meetings, in order that they may be signed by the Chn. & Secy., and as both the Chairman & Secy. of this Dist. are absent in the southern parts of the Island, & will not return before October, & not having any Bills of small amount drawn by me, I cannot now send you what would make up the sum required.—And as a vessel is now about to sail for England, I lose no time in writing to request, that you will be pleased, to send me the Encyclop. as ordered, applying to the Secretary of the Edinburgh CMS Association, or to D. Coates, Esq., the Secretary of the CM

House, to pay you the Balance; or, to send me the Books and await my sending you the Bal. wh. I will do as soon as possible after receiving them,—& would now if it were not for the reason above mentioned; or to send me the 1st. vols. of the Work to the amount of the remittance already sent, keeping bk. the last vol. of the lot as a pattern for the remg. ones wh. are to come after;—or, if none of the foregoing plans, (which are all that occur to my mind just now) is suitable to you—that you will be pleased to remit the said Bills of Ex. for £25. to D. Coates Esq. to be placed to my Credit.—

And, while I confess I feel much disappointed on not having received the Books—do not, Sir, think, because I have written you the genuine & undisguised utterance of my heart, that I am angry at your not having sent them; such I beg to assure you is not the Case. We may still do business together. And believe me Sir

Very sincerely yrs
W.C.

1844 July 16: to Mair¹²⁸

G. Mair, Esq.,
Deverons,
Wangarei.

Waimate, July 16, 1844.

My dear friend,

Although I do not know of any direct opportunity by which I could send you a few lines, I write, and send to the Bay, in hopes of its reaching you: that you may know that I do bear you in mind, and often, too. For some time past I have hoped to get a Letter from you, just to know how you are enabled to bear up under the sad and dark cloud which at present hangs over you. "Dinna despair", as your countrymen would say,—God's hand is not shortened; His alone are the silver and the gold and the cattle upon a 1000 hills. He gives, and He takes away, and He gives again. Job's *end*, was better, in every respect, than the beginning. Endeavour, daily to look to Him, who feeds the Ravens when they cry, and the young Lions when they lack and suffer hunger, and be assured that God's promise shall never fail—they that trust in the Lord shall never want anything that is good. Oh! My dear friend, not only daily make known unto God your situation, but, *live upon your faith—dare to exercise it—believe that God will help, though you know not how*. This is the glorious triumph of faith, who lives and flourishes and rejoices, where every thing of sense dies. *Take God at his word, and leave events to Him*. If you do so, I feel assured that all will be well. He knows your state, and waits to be gracious. Think not that this is confined to spiritual matters—it is not so, but for "all things". Again, by thus living on your faith in God, you will be daily blessed with cheerfulness in the midst of thickening trials, and nightly strengthened with refreshing sleep, which, otherwise will not be your portion. I write the more, just now, because I know somewhat of Satan's devices, having been sadly mauled by him myself. He strives now, to keep you from fully believing in God's promises, that you may not rest in God—but, do as David did, who in his troubles said, "*Thou hast been a shelter for*

127 ATL 80-038 George Petersen papers. Colenso's copy.

128 ATL MS-Papers-0092.

me,” and so comforted himself by reviewing God’s past mercies. You can do the same—*do so*.

I had hoped to have seen you ere this, but I know not when the Bishop will send me to Wangarei. I suppose we shall not leave before November; I hope to be permitted to see you *first*. Mr. Brown is here from Tauranga, and Mrs. Brown is coming; their son Marsh is still very ill: 11 weeks he has been confined to his bed. You have, I dare say heard of Mr. Busby’s things being taken, the Bank allowed Mrs. B. her clothes and £50 worth of furniture; the rest has been sold and the Stores and Cattle are about to be sold. There was a row at Kororareka last week about Gray’s widow—Heke, went down with a large mob, took her away, cut down the flagstaff to light the hangis with—stole all the pork in the Butcher’s shops, etc., and returned. Soldiers are sent for to Sydney; what the end will be, I don’t know. It is a comfort to know, that while the heathen may rage—the Lord God omnipotent reigneth! Rewa and Warerahi have put up another Flagstaff; and Tamati Puketutu gave old Marupo a good thrashing, at Paihia, for joining the party. We are to have a meeting here tomorrow, may it result in good.

Mrs. Colenso is pretty well, and so is our little girl. We hope that Mrs. Mair is well, and all your family, to whom we wish to be most kindly remembered. Cheer up, my dear friend, cheer up, put your trust in God; Comfort your wife and little ones—and *Look above*.

And believe me
Yours very sincerely,
W. Colenso.

If you have no means of sending the note to Mr. Kier, please send it on to Tipene.

P.S. I think the Gum speculation will yet prove a good one. I hear (privately) that it is fetching 4½d. per lb. in Sydney.

1844 November 19: to Coates¹²⁹

Dandeson Coates, Esq.,
Secy. C.M.S.

Paihia, Bay of Islands, Novr. 19, 1844.

My dear Sir,

1. My last Letter to you was dated May 30/44, per Mr. James Busby, since which I have received yours to me of Decr. 4/43, authorizing me to draw upon you for the sum of £50, on a/c of the late Mr. G.D. Browne—this I have subsequently done, having drawn two Setts of Bills of Exchange, (one, No. 12, for £30, to order of T. Addeman, and one, No. 13, for £20, to my order,) at 35 days Sight and dated August 9/44 upon you for the said Sum of £50. I should have written to you immediately on drawing those Bills, but as I had reason to believe they would not be presented at Salisbury Square for some time, and as there would soon be an opportunity *direct* for England (by which vessel I now send this letter), I delayed the doing so.

2. The Bishop was pleased to admit me—together with Mess. Hamlin, Chapman, Jos. Matthews, & C.P. Davies,—to Deacon’s Orders, in the Church at the Waimate, on the

22nd. of September last. It was a solemn time—one to be ever remembered by us all. The Service was in the Native Language, and the Church was crowded to excess. I trust that GOD will ever supply all our need through Christ Jesus for the work to which we have been called; and that your prayer and wish for me, as expressed, my dear Sir, in your last Letter,—“determine to know nothing among the New Zealanders save Jesus Christ and Him Crucified,”) will be graciously answered. During the term previous to our Ordination, we each had a series of essays to write, (on “the Creation and Fall of Man, Redemption, Justification, Regeneration and Adoption, Renewal and Sanctification, The Sacraments, The Church, and the Duties of the Christian Ministry,”) and which I thought might prove a great obstacle, if not an insurmountable one—to my being admitted to Orders. However, fearing and preparing for the worst, looking up for strength and direction, and leaving the event to GOD, I wrote on each subject—and that without concealing or altering the doctrines I had already embraced and preached,—and was much and most unexpectedly gratified to find that all of my essays received the imprimatur of the Bishop; with scarcely any correction or remark,—none whatever in doctrine,—[2] to GOD alone be all praise, who in this, as in many other instances, was greater than my fears! Having by GOD’s help surmounted this difficulty, another presented itself—in the shape of a circular Letter from the Bishop, sent to each of us for our consideration and consent (vide, enclosure, No.1.). This Letter (unfortunately for my peace of mind at such a period) was sent to us in the fortnight preceding the day of Ordination, and, after having considered it, we were each to have a *private* conference with the Bishop upon the subject of the same, to which honor we were selected according to our standing in the service of the Society! consequently I stood in my lot as the 4th. person though I knew that those who preceded me had consented to the Letter *in toto*; and knew, also, from conversation with the Archdeacons that they approved of it, I could not bring my mind to do it, and so I told the Bishop, with whom I was closeted, on this occasion for more than 5 hours, Archd. Williams being present.—I particularly objected to par. 1, alleging I could not subscribe to it without the Consent of the Society, adducing what the Society certainly states, in “Appendix II to the 39th. report,” p.xi, (in an extract from a Letter of the Bishop of Calcutta,) and, also, in “No.V. Appendix to the 43rd. report,” p. 138,—“the Committee unquestionably and avowedly possess—the appointment of spheres of labour, the temporal power, including pecuniary support.” And, in answer to plain questions put by the Bishop, further told him, that I could but consider myself always bound to obey the Society. On this the Bishop plainly told me, unless I would subscribe to the Letter he would not ordain me; when, seeing I had *no one* to hold with, and, that I had been already a long time shut up from active service, that if I ventured to refer the question to the Society my very doing so (not to mention other matters of which I had no reason to be careful) would perhaps have always powerfully operated against me, and that Archd. W. Williams expressed opinion before the Bishop, that he saw no just reason whatever for my refusing to subscribe to that Letter—I assented to sign it. I confess, not with the full consent of my Conscience. There is one thing, it is true, which cheered me—a ray of light in the midst of gloom—the declaration of the Bishop, that in signing I only bound myself for the seven years mentioned in the Letter, after which time I was free from what I then bound myself to. [3] And, I also considered, that you had not made any remark in your two last Public

129 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

Letters, concerning me, although I had more than intimated—both in my Letter of May 19/43 as well as that of October 2/43—the great probability of my being sent to the Southward, and which Letters you had acknowledged the receipt of. If, however, I have done wrong, I am sorry for it: I hope I have not: *I am sure I have not willingly*: and I am equally sure that I will do all that man can do towards reparation: but let me hear from you, my dear Sir, on this head. My head and mind is somewhat confused, for I have been sadly knocked about of late,—but GOD is good, and “all things,” I *know*, (blessed be His Name!) shall ultimately be for my good.—

3. The day after my Ordination, Mrs Colenso and myself proceeded to pack up our few things and to leave the Waimate, which, in company with Messrs. Hamlin and Chapman and Mrs. Chapman, we did on the 26th., and arrived at the Bay of Islands, by way of Kerikeri and Tepuna, on the 28th. On the 5th. October they all left the Bay for Auckland; and on the 10th. of the same month, I commenced my leave-taking journey to the Natives residing on the Coast and the shores of Wangarei Bay, and returned on the 28th. to Paihia. During my journey I baptized 9 infants and 1 adult—a sick and dying Chief at Wangarei. Since my return to the Bay I have been employed in packing up and making arrangements for leaving for Ahuriri in Hawke’s Bay, to which place I have been stationed by the Bishop. I am now awaiting the arrival of a vessel from Auckland, which will at the same time take Mr. Hamlin and family to the Wairoa in Hawke’s Bay, where he has, also, been stationed by the Bishop.

4. In a small Box, which goes by this vessel, the “Bolina,” Capt. Daldy, you will find—a Copy of the Journal of my journey to the Southern parts of this Island during the summer of 1843–4, together with a map of a portion of my route:—a copy of an Address, written and presented by the Clergy *whose names are annexed* to the Bishop at the Waimate:—a Copy of the Bishop’s Circular Letter to us, referred to in par. 2 of this Letter:—3 Auckland Newspapers which contain 3 Letters published by one of the Wesleyan Missionaries in N. Zealand, and which made no small sensation among the Colonists generally.—A parcel for Sir W.J. Hooker, containing a few dried Specimens of Plants.—A small parcel for Mr. Octavius [4] Browne, containing accounts and papers relating to his deceased brother Mr. G.D. Browne.—And a small parcel from Mrs. Williams for Mrs. Heathcote.

5. Since the date of my last, the Natives have been in a very disturbed state, especially in this district. You will, doubtless, have heard of John Heke (one of the principal Chiefs of Kaikohe near the Waimate,) having gone with a large party of Natives of that village and neighbourhood to Kororareka in this Bay, in June last, and cut down the British Flag, chopping up and using the staff for firewood, and breaking windows, plundering the houses and shops, and ill-treating some of the Whites. On the Governor’s hearing of this outrage, a ship was immediately chartered to Sydney for troops, whose arrival the Natives expected with the utmost *nonchalance*—often declaring what they would do by them and all White residents the moment hostilities should be begun. The Troops arrived at the Bay, together with the Governor and Mr. Clarke, and every endeavor was made use of to get Heke to see the Governor, but he would not leave his village Kaikohe. A Meeting was finally held at the Waimate, when a few muskets were demanded by the Governor, as an acknowledgement of having done wrong,

which were immediately brought forward and laid at his feet by some well-disposed Chiefs, when the Governor immediately returned them. All things passed off very well;—but it required little knowledge of the Native Character to discern much of dissatisfaction in the speeches of the Native Chiefs made at this and other meetings. They compared the present and prospective state of things with the past,—praised several of their old Missionaries and Mr. Busby,—and spoke ill of the new Missionaries, the Bishop, and the Government, whom they always class together. They, also, spoke much against the continual moving of their Missionaries from them to other parts of the Island,—of the alteration of the Liturgy, praying for the Queen, Queen Dowager, Prince Albert, Albert Prince of Wales, & others instead of the Native Chiefs, and of many other things, both Ecclesiastical and Civil; which shew, at least, their great powers of discernment. The Governor returned without seeing of Heke; who, a few days after, rode through the Waimate, with about 150 followers, to attend a Native feast held at a *pa* close by. On his return the day after, he stopped at the Waimate and wrote two Letters to the Governor, which were of such a nature that the Bishop would [5] not receive them, nor allow any one of the Mission to write one for him. At our request Heke remained until Archd. W. Williams arrived from Paihia, when he was induced to write Letters of a better description. Shortly after the Governor’s return, and towards the end of September last, a young woman, the sister of a Chief at the Kawakawa named George King, got wounded in an affray by a policeman, on which a suitable payment was demanded by the Chiefs from Lieut. Beckham the Police Magistrate, however, not being fully aware of the merits of the Case, and misled by the representations of his Interpreter, (Henry Kemp, son of Mr. Kemp,) refused to give any payment for the offence done, on which George King, with another Chief named Broughton and their united band of followers, immediately made an inroad on Capt. Wright, an old & respectable Settler residing in the Bay, and took from him by violence 8 horses! Archd. H. Williams used all his influence to get the horses back, but only got grossly insulted and laughed at. During the month of October various means were used; Mr. Clarke came up again from Auckland, and, at length, six horses were restored to Capt. Wright, on the Natives being paid by Lieut. Beckham, 1 Horse, 1 Cask Tobacco, and 1 part of a Cask of ditto. Mr. Clarke had scarcely, however, returned again to Auckland, when George King with all his party visited Kororareka, plundered the shops, and the Jail of Soldier’s stores; whilst another party visited Mr. Hingston, a respectable Settler in another part of the Bay, & took away 3 horses. Mr. Busby’s horses have, also, been attempted, and Archd. H. Williams’ large farming establishment at Pakaraka has been more than once threatened with a visit. Several of the Natives now declare, they are tired of the English, and wish to have either the Americans or French, or both, to be their friends; while from many of their speeches it is too plain, that both Republican Americans and French Papists, have had their share in the late commotions.—A consequence of this very unsettled state of things—the independent spirit of the Natives—and the Governor’s present, powerless situation, (together with, perhaps, a wish to abstain, if possible, from all collision with the Native Tribes,) the Governor has stated this part of the Island to be, *pro tem*, without protection, and the Government Officers (it is said) are to be removed forthwith. Hence several Settlers have left, and more are now leaving: to which, perhaps, I should add, the Bishop’s removal with the Students, Scholars, & Mechanics

from the Waimate [6] has not a little contributed. Those Natives, George King, Broughton and their followers, have quite thrown aside their profession of Christianity,—(it has been said, have destroyed their Books.)—and are now talking of making war on the Christian Natives in the neighbourhood of Wangarei, to seek payment for some of their relatives slain by them in battle many years ago. While, on the other hand, the more quiet and well-disposed Natives of this neighbourhood are so disturbed as to be bent upon emigrating (!) to Sunday, or to Curtis's Island, in S. lat. 30°, or to some other uninhabited Islet of these seas; from which we with difficulty dissuade them.

6. Of the many alterations and appointments you will, perhaps, have heard before this can reach you. Rev. A. Burrows has been removed from Korareka to Waimate, and Rev. W.C. Dudley is at Kororareka, *pro tem*, until the Bishop ordains a Deacon for that place, which, I believe, he intends doing on Trinity Sunday next,—some young man, a Settler residing near Auckland, is the person,—when Mr. Dudley will proceed to Orere in the Thames. Rev. J. Hamlin I have already spoken of as going to Hawke's Bay. Mr. Kemp was removed to the Waimate, (to which arrangement, I believe, he at first acceded, but afterwards declined it,) to Superintend the Schools at that place; this is now to be done by Mr. Edward Williams, Archd. H. Williams' son. Rev. R. Davis will soon be at Kaikohe; and Rev. J. Matthews is spoken of as being about to be sent to Matamata or Opotiki, perhaps to the latter place. The Natives in connexion with us, are, from various causes, very generally dissatisfied, and what will become of my old Congregations in the villages on the Coast and about Wangarei I do not know; my heart feels for them, while I endeavor to remember them before the LORD. Look on whichever side you may just now, there is little indeed, that is cheering, I dare not commit all my thoughts to paper, but (although I may not now be believed) I may yet be allowed to say, it will be well, if ere long many of the Natives do not turn to their old customs of Heathenism, or become Papists or Infidels. Ten years experience in the Mission field has taught me, that nothing short of the plain and practical preaching of the truth *as it is in Jesus*, in all its *simplicity* and *pureness*, will be blessed by GOD, either in bringing sinners to a saving knowledge of Jesus, or in keeping them humbly in the way.[7] —The rage for proselytising, and the undue exaltation of the Sacramental elements, will, I fear, be eventually found to be the openings through which no small amount of evil will have been inflicted upon the New Zealanders. Perhaps a few years may fully display to the C.M. Society the truth of several remarks, which, from time to time, I have ventured to make in my Letters to you. I know, my dear Sir, that such a prospect as I have here scarcely outlined, is, by several among us, denied. Flattering hopes are cherished; high-coloured pictures are drawn; and Peace, peace, is cried, when there is (to me) no prospect of "Peace". All I can now say, is,—Happy, thrice happy shall I be, to be found a false prophet: but to me the signs of the times are clear enough; coming events too often, alas! cast their shadows before.

7. Before I conclude this Letter, I would, my dear Sir, venture to speak on a subject which has been long thought upon by me; and to which I am the more emboldened from a belief that you will at least give me credit for having the welfare of the New Zealanders at heart. With all due deference then, and yet in my plain way would I say,—Let it be the Society's particular aim to fill up and strengthen her Mission *here* with *evangelical* preachers *from England*.

I will not, I dare not, make any comparisons, which are at all times invidious, but we know, alas! too well, what is meant in England by being "*educated* for the Ministry";—where the Holy office is selected and entered upon in much the same spirit as the professions of Law, Medicine, or Arms. Further, I would venture to say, my dear Sir, Hesitate about receiving sons, or sons-in-law, or relatives, or friends of Missionaries to the Heathen. If such *must* be put into the Priest's Office in New Zealand, there are other Societies than the C.M.S., and other situations than those of Missionaries. A clever moral man, or a good classic, *may* (?) fill the situation of a Chaplain, who is utterly unfit for that of a Missionary to the Heathen;—such *must* be *converted* men; such *must know* something more powerful than Baptismal Regeneration. It was remarked to me a short while ago, by a Gentleman who had resided for some time in N. Zealand, and who is a keen observer of men and manners,—“Should the C.M.S. ever relinquish the purse-strings they would cut off one of their wings;”—[8] to which just remark I would add,—should the C.M.S. be ever induced to concede the selection of their *men*, they would as certainly cut off the other. For it is possible that you may be necessitated, for Peace-sake, to concede the selection of Stations, but never give up the selection of *men* to fill them. And, still keeping from comparison, I would further venture to say,—that *converted* men of the lower or middle classes will, in *general*, make more useful and more acceptable Missionaries than men from the higher ranks. They are better fitted to go among men of low estate, and are better able to put up with many things, which, too often, astonish and shock the finer feelings of persons educated in a higher rank of life. For there are many plain blunt and naked things, of all kinds—in words and works—which yet *are not sins*, among a people emerging from the gross immoralities of Heathenism—which must not only be patiently borne with, but had sometimes better not be seen.

8. A fortnight ago I received the 4th. edition of the Vulgate, which you so kindly sent me—and for which, my dear Sir, I am greatly obliged: I hope (D.V.) to make a good use of it hereafter. It is just the copy which I wished, containing, as it does, all Jerome's prefaces. As Archd. W. Williams has returned to Turanga, (which he did while I was absent at Wangarei,) I cannot *now* send you an authorized Indent for a large Bell and Communion Service for Ahuriri, and small Bells for the many villages, and Slates, &c., for the several Schools—but I hope to do so ere long; meanwhile we must be content to use our clanging hoe, or “bent musket-barrel”!

9. I shall be obliged in your paying (£4.) Four Pounds to the Secretary of the B. & F. Bible Society for me, for Bibles and Testaments sold on account of the Society: I have written a Letter to him explanatory, which I enclose.

10. I have been obliged (in winding up Mr. G.D. Browne's affairs) to draw a Bill upon you for (£25.) Twentyfive Pounds: Mr. Octavius Browne had authorized me to draw upon him for £50. additional, if I required it; finding, however, that (in consequence of the conduct of Major Browne's agent in Sydney, who refused to honour our Bills,) a Bill drawn on Mr. O. Browne would not now be cashed, and being about to leave this neighbourhood, I was necessitated to do as I have done, and have not the least doubt but that Mr. B. will retire the Bill immediately. Should, however, anything arise to hinder his doing so, please to retire the same and charge it to my [9] account. This Sett of Bills is, also, drawn in Duplicate, “No. 14, 35 days sight, to my order, and dated, Paihia, Novr. 25/44.”—

11. In one of your last Letters you speak of the Society's wish to form a Corresponding Committee here—at Auckland. Such an Association, would, I think, be very desirable, and be of great benefit to all, if it be composed of pious *Laymen*. Such a Commee. would, in my opinion, be a very great blessing.

December 2, 1844.

12. I am still here awaiting the vessel's being ready,—(or rather waiting for Mr. Hamlin to be ready, who had until the 15th. to do so.)—and went yesterday (Sunday, Decr. 1.) as usual to the Kawakawa to hold Service. When near the village, I found the unhappy George King in the enclosure in front of his house; I went in and talked with him, and got him to go to Chapel with me; after Service I conversed with him for a long while, and I was, on the whole, pleased with his conversation. He said, his heart was very sad for his deeds; and that he feared GOD would not receive him again. I gave him, I trust, suitable advice, and recommended him to follow the examples of Peter and Zaccheus. I have now some hope that this poor wanderer will be restrained from going further in the broad way of open and notorious wickedness.

13. I have, from time to time, *heard* of several Books (some published by the Protestant Assocn., and some others, such as, "Ancient Xy.", "The Bp. of Ossory's charge", &c., &c.,) having arrived here, being sent, perhaps, by the C.M.S. for the use of their Missionaries in N.Z. I have, however, never been able to obtain *one*, and have only been able to borrow, for a short time, one of the Bp. of Ossory's charges. I mention this now, that you may know the true state of the case, and that, should you send any more of such works to N.Z., and wish *me* to obtain any of them, (as I think I have been in the vanguard against the Papists, and am, moreover, a subscriber to the Prot. Assn.,) you will please to cause the same to be directed to me at Ahuriri.

And now, my dear Sir, I must conclude my long and prosy epistle. I trust I shall not have offended you with anything herein written. And, praying that the LORD may be pleased evermore to guide us all—always, I am

My dear Sir,
with every respect,
ever most faithfully yours
W. Colenso.

1845 January 13: to Hamahona¹³⁰

Hanuere, 13, 1845.

Eta, e Hamahona,

Tena ra ko koe, erahi ano taku aroha atu ki a koe, ahakoa kahore ano ahau i kite noa i a koe, no te mea hoki kua rongo ahau no te Hahi koe, no, ki te mea ka pono tena kupa kua rangona e ahaa, no to Hahi koe, ka rongo mai ano koe ki taku nei tuhi, ta te mea hoki, E rongo ana nga hipi a te Karaiti kia ia, kiana minita, ae, ko tetahi tenei o nga tohu e mohiotia ai ratou; Na, kahore ahau i pai kia karangarangatia korua ko taua kotiro Iriiri kore, [page torn]; engari, ki te mea e aroha ana koe kia ia, [page torn], kia haere mai ano hoki ia ki ahau, a ka mohio ia kia Itiria ano, ko reira ano ka tika ai kia marena korua. Tirohia, e koe, to Korinitu tuarua,

130 ATL MS-0585. From typed copy, annotated "Copy of a Letter to Hamahona, Warerangi". Original not found.

u. 6, r. 14, 15; ta Matiu hoki, u. 6, r. 33; u. 10, r. 37; ta Ruka hoki, u. 14, r. 26; me tera korero nui i te timatunga mai o te karakia wakamarena. A ma te Atua ano e hoatu kia koe he wakaaro tika.

Me haere mai pea koe ki ahau, kia kororerero taua.

Naku

Na te Koreneho.

January 13, 1845

My friend, Hamahona¹³¹,

Greetings to you. I have much love for you, although I have not yet seen you, and because I have heard you are of the Church, and if these reports I have heard are true, that you are of the church, you will hear again of my writing, also because Christ's sheep hear his call, to his ministers, yes, this is one of the signs known to them; now, I do not like to call you two and your girl unbaptised, [page torn]; but if you love this person [page torn], he/she should also come to me, and shall also learn about Itiria again [possibly: shall be baptised again], and by this means it will be permissible for you two to marry. You should examine II Corinthians, ch. 6, v. 14, 15; and Matthew also, ch. 6, v. 33; ch. 10, v. 37; and Luke also, ch. 14, v. 26; and that important passage at the beginning of the ceremony of marriage. Therefore may the Lord grant you wisdom.

Perhaps you should come to me, and we will discuss this.

Yours,

From Colenso.

1845 March 7: to Tiakitai¹³²

From Parimahu, March 7/ 45.

O sir, O Tiakitai, this indeed is my word to thee; this also being the second of my words to thee, be thou listening hitherward. I am dead, verily dead to the utmost. Thou also hast caused it. For the first time indeed, I am said to be the receiver of the price of women's blood! but why mention it? when Tiakitai has done it. I did not know, when I was residing at the station, the Cause, why thy daughter died; but on my coming hither to this Sea-coast, I too truly & plainly saw a cause why she ceased to be. Yes, thou didst kill her. Incline thine attention hitherward, hear, thou wert the cause of the death of Kore. Forasmuch as on that very day, in that very self-same hour indeed, in which she ceased to be among us, here thou wert, here, at the whaling-station, stealing women, selling man's blood, & causing fornication to grow, that thou mightest have money! But what of that? Why speak? Thou hast contended against, yea, thou hast despised GOD, and now thou seest the fruit of thy work. Yes; seest to the very extreme the truth of that word, "The wages of sin is death." O sir, "Jehovah is known by the judgment which he executeth; the wicked is snared in the work of his own hands."—He, himself says this. And this, also, is equally true, "I, Jehovah, thy GOD, am a jealous

131 Samson. Translation by Frith Driver-Burgess.

132 ATL 80-038-09: Colenso's ms. draft in English. This version taken from Colenso's Journal. Tiakitai's daughter Kore had been drowned in the river while he was taking young women to the whaling station for prostitution. The missionary teaching had been blamed.

GOD, visiting the sins of the fathers upon the children.” Didst thou indeed forget those words of the Catechism? together with these, “The eyes of Jehovah are in all places beholding the evil and the good; and from him there is nothing hid”? But enough! I have been defiled through thee, but was indeed defiled ignorantly; I was without suspicion; I never once conceived thou wert at hateful works; I believed not thou wouldst presume to bring thy evil upon me: for, what indeed hast thou been done to by me that thou shouldest so act—speak? Oh Sir, thus indeed hast thy evil work been towards me, verily bemiring, my very knees! O Sir, thou hast erred; far, very far off is thy work. If thou wert desirous of causing fornication and adultery to grow, why didst thou not give one of the six¹³³ whom thou hast, that thou mightest have money? But that compared with this! verily, nothing.—For, besides sin of fornication, here is also the theft, the selling of the daughters of that man as money for thee! this, indeed, is the bad thing; yes, the veriest bad thing. And, then, besides all this, there is yet the very tip top of thy evil—verily this, for this thy word,—“Colenso is agreeable to such payments; that was their course, they two, he and Williams, when living among Ngapuhi”. Lo! it is said, thine indeed are these words, for me, for us two! Enough; be thou listening hither, hear me say, that is false; yes, false to the extreme. For, if it had been so, we should doubtless have been destroyed by GOD; yes, both of us, dead long ago. Now indeed the great sinning man is come; even thou; fearless, shameless, whatless—Alas! for thee, O Tiakitai!

Go thou, O sir! go thou, to the entrance of the chapel which is nigh thy dwelling; look forth towards the graves; say forth, O Kore, alas! through me thou hast been killed! O my daughter, alas! I was too well-disposed towards the wages of sin! I stole, I sold other girls: I spoke falsely of the ministers of GOD; and thou indeed, alas! O Kore! thou indeed art the price!

Lo! here indeed is thy hateful silver, and thy two pigs; for I will not touch thy things. Enough; it is finished: it will be well if thou considerest the writing,—“Jehovah is known by thy judgment which he executeth; the wicked is snared in the work of his own hands.

Now hear me: Return the price of blood to the whites;—bring thence both Emi and Martha; then, pray to GOD to forgive thy evil deeds.—And, dwell mindfully, ceasing thus to sin, lest a worse judgment fall upon thee. Then, when I hear thou hast so done, my heart perhaps may recover from this abiding darkness and grief which remains within and travels with me.

Once more, go thou not to my house to my place, lest my wife should be afraid because of thee. Let my place be as a forbidden one to thee for these times. This is all my word to thee in this season. It is done.”

From the Minister of these places of Heretaunga,
From Colenso.

1845 March 27: to Gell¹³⁴

Rev. J.P. Gell
&c &c &c

Wellington,
Mar. 27, 1845.

My dear Sir,

Being on a journey among the Natives in this vicinity, and having just called here at this rising town, and finding the Brig “Victoria” on her way to Hobart, I just drop a line (in the greatest possible haste) to ask the favour of any subsequent nos. of the Tasmanian Journal which may have been published—to be sent on by this opportunity. Rev. R. Cole of this place will kindly take charge of any Letters or parcels for me. I have been stationed by our Bishop on the E. Coast (of which I think I informed you in my last) and am therefore far away from the scene of blood & devastation, of which you will hear by this vessel. Capt. Richards will kindly take charge of any parcel for me.

With every respect

I am

My dear Sir
Ever most truly
Yours
W. Colenso.

1845 date? to Te Wereta¹³⁵

Friend, Wereta, Greeting to thee.

This indeed is my word to thee. I am come to this place, notwithstanding I said to thee at Huariki, that I should go by the coast to Te Kopi. Lo! This is the reason why I have changed my route to the inland one—that some of the people of this place may go on with me to Te Kopi to partake of the Holy Supper there, which Mr. Cole & myself will administer. Now, I write this to thee that thou mayst know the true reason why I changed my route, lest thou shouldest think I don’t know what. Now, after two Sundays have elapsed I shall perhaps arrive at Pahawa, the Wednesday or the Thursday will be the day for me to arrive at Pahawa. I shall sleep there, and in the morning & shall proceed on, northwards. If you call & welcome me to your place I will enter in; if not I shall go right on by the Coast: this is my plan for my journey. O Friend, I am mourning concerning thee; I am praying for thee; but perhaps, thou wilt not mourn for thyself. Friend, look thou at my words; consider them;—Do thou search for the road to the City,—Still perhaps is open the gracious door of heaven. Let not thy considerations be turned aside by any Native who may imagine any false or vain thing.

ps, My letter to Wereta,
From me, Colenso.

133 WC: He has six wives.

134 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0715.

135 ATL qMS-0487; appendix to 1845 Journal. Copy of a note written to Wellington Kawekairangi (Te Wereta).

1845 November 18: to "Eraihiā"¹³⁶

Copy

Mr. ----- ¹³⁷

(Called by the Natives of
Te Kopi, "Eraihiā" .)
residing at Te Watakahawai.

At Te Kopi, Novr. 18, 1845.

Sir,

I have been informed by several Natives of this village and neighbourhood (which information has since been confirmed by many respectable persons at Wellington), that the Europeans residing in the Wairarapa Valley, yourself, and (*in particular*) the men employed by you among the number, have been speaking of me in a most unwarrantable manner; imputing many things to my charge of which I am utterly ignorant. At the wish, therefore, of some of my friends at Wellington I write you this (you being the European resident nearest to this place,) to request you, your men, and the other Europeans residing at Wairarapa, to substantiate those charges which from time to time you have been pleased to make against me. I intend (by Divine permission) to pass through the Valley of Wairarapa towards the end of February next, when I shall make it a matter of duty to call upon every European resident in the valley, for the purpose of enquiring into this matter. This I should *now* do (as I fully intended on my leaving this place for Wellington,) but I have to proceed without loss of time to my Station at Hawke's Bay, to prepare for the arrival of the Bishop, who will be there in a short time.

The Bishop intends being here on or about the 14th.
December next, when, if you, or any other European
residing at Wairarapa have any charge to prefer against me,
you will have ample opportunity of so doing.

I am, Sir,
Your obedient Servant
William Colenso.

1845 November 19: to Selwyn¹³⁸

Copy.

The Right Rev.
Bishop of New Zealand.

Te Kopi, Nov. 19, 1845.

My Lord,

On reaching this village a fortnight ago, I received from the Christian Natives a long account of certain charges preferred against me, and of bad language spoken of me, by several whites residing in the valley of Wairarapa: of this, however, I should not have taken any notice—being pretty well used to such treatment—had not the Revd. Messrs. Hadfield and Cole also informed me that certain evil reports had reached them; and, when dining at Mr. St. Hill's with Major Richmond, His Honor the Superintendent told me, he had been applied to upon the subject, and had written to me a Letter— "as a friend"—to inform me of it. The charges,

as far as I can make them out, appear to be, to the effect, that I had recommended the Natives to rise against the Whites, and to drive them from Wairarapa; that I had said, "They were all evil persons—*taurakareka's* (slaves)—&c., &c.—*ad infin.*—

On my return, yesterday, with Archdeacon Williams to this place—our intention was to have gone to see some of those Europeans, but—our being already behind time—they at some distance from us in a *contrary* direction, and we tired with a long journey before us—and your Lordship's speedy coming into our respective Districts for the purpose of holding Confirmations—make us desirous of proceeding onwards to our Stations without loss of time.

I have, however, my Lord, written a Letter to the nearest resident Europeans, a Copy of which I enclose.

It is scarcely needful for me to add, that I am utterly ignorant of those things so laid to my charge, and that *all* the Natives of the valley with whom I have conversed appear to be equally ignorant as to the person or persons with whom such accounts could possibly have originated.—

I am,
my Lord,
Your most obedient Servt.,
William Colenso.

1845 December 31: to the CMS¹³⁹

Waitangi Heretaunga
Decr. 31, 1845.

During the last six months I have been engaged as follows. On the Lord's day in holding divine Service twice occasionally thrice—i.e. 2 N.Z. and 1 E. Service whenever any Europeans are at hand and a Catechism in schools &c. And on weeks days in attending to the morning adult male school instructing and nominating of Native Candidates for Baptism, Communion and Confirmation, holding Bible classes, visiting sick, Dispensing medicine, settling Disputes, &c &c &c and on Thursday evenings lecturing and also attending to many secular duties of the Station. On the 24th. July I was necessitated to leave the Station in order to carry Mrs. Colenso and child to Turanga; we reached Turanga in safety on the 6th. August and I returned to my Station on the 21st of the same month. On the 12th. Sept. I left the Station on a visit to the villages in the neighbourhood of the Rotoatara and Waituma Districts and returned on 25th. of same month.

On the 18th. October I left the Station to visit the Natives throughout the District by line of Coast and on to Wellington, and returned in company with the Archdeacon of the District on the 4th. Decr.

Mrs. Colenso prior to her leaving for Turanga attended to the daily Female and Infant School. This last half year has been a time of unusual trial both mental and physical.

The natives of the neighbourhood have behaved themselves in a very rough manner but I venture to hope that they are becoming more tractable.

Signed — William Colenso.

136 ATL qMS-0492. Archives 48/547-682.

137 There is an almost exact copy addressed to "Mr. Russell, residing at Te Watakahawai." Archives 48/547-682.

138 ATL qMS-0492. Archives 48/547-682.

139 ATL qMS-0492.

1846 January 12: to Richmond¹⁴⁰

Hawkes Bay, Jany. 12/46

His Honor
Major Richmond
&c &c &c
Wellington.

My dear Major Richmond,

I hasten to avail myself of an opportunity afforded me by a Native going to Wairarapa, to inform Your Honor of an unpleasant affair which took place here a few days ago, between some of the Heathen Natives of this neighbourhood and some whites.—

On the morning of the 31st. ult., a Cutter, which proved to be the Royal William, was seen making apparently for the Station, she stood in for the shore, and tacked 2 or 3 times, when I sent a canoe off to her. Before however the Canoe could reach her, a Letter was brought me by a Native (who, with some others, had been early on board in another Canoe, while we were at morning prayer & School, which proved to be a memorandum of few packages of goods shipped for me at Poverty Bay. Shortly after this, the Canoe which I had sent returned, bringing the Goods and informing me, that the vessel was come to trade, and was therefore about to be piloted into the harbour (Ahuriri), about 7 miles distant, NNW. The next day—the 1st instant, about 9, p.m., a Christian Native (whom I had sent to the vessel, to take a letter from the Bishop to Mr. Cole, & to pay for the freight of the goods which had been landed) returned, saying, that the Master of the vessel had been very angry with the Natives, and had refused to trade, &c, &c.—and that he did not know the cause of his so acting. The next day, early, I heard, that the Cutter had gone to sea; and that on a Canoe following her to offer pigs & potatoes for sale, the Master seized and presented a double-barrelled gun, loaded & cocked, and swore that he would shoot them if they came near. One of them, however, boarded her, grappled with & threw down the Captain—wrenched the gun from him—tied his hands, & made the Crew to come to anchor. The Captain now begged hard to be released, promising to reward them handsomely; on which they untied him & he gave them several articles. The Bishop, who happened to be here at the time, together with myself endeavoured to elicit the whole truth, and to get back the property thus obtained, and which I hope we have succeeded in doing. From what further information we obtained, it appears, that the young chief (of first rank) who piloted the vessel into Ahuriri, having found a large piece of pounamu (Jade, or Axe-stone,) on board for sale, wished to have it, and to pay the price, 12 pigs and, there being but one piece, he did not like to quit sight of it, fearing lest some other Chief should in a little while come on board & get it; he, therefore, desired it to be left on deck, which the Captain refused to permit. An altercation ensued; the Master ordered his men to take it below, the Chief told them not to do so, and, though he was alone on board, they (4 in no.) being intimidated did not obey the Captain, on which he said, they had better all go on shore together, since they would not obey him, which they prepared to do. This was in the evening in the harbour. The next morning, the vessel went out, and was soon followed by a Canoe, in which were 6 natives. As they neared her the Captain

ordered them off, and dared his men to throw them a rope (which some one of them was about to do); on which the Natives in the Canoe caught hold of a rope hanging over the stern, and held on by it; this being perceived by the Captain, he came aft, swearing and presenting his gun, as before related; the Natives, at first, cowed down into the bottom of their Canoe, when suddenly one more bold than the rest, leaped up, knocked the gun upwards out of the Captains hand, seizing him by the hair of his head, and holding on and the Canoe parting at the same time he got up into the vessel; there he first bound the Captain's hands, and then discharging the gun into the air, ordered, in broken English, the Crew to let go the anchor, which they did.—After which the property was given out by the Captain on his being released, as before described. The vessel left that same day, and where she went to I do not know; perhaps to Wellington, or back to Poverty Bay.

The property we have received is as follows:—one double-barrelled Gun, 2 pieces Calico, about 3 pieces of printed Cotton, 3 Cotton rugs, 2 Blue Serge Shirts, 3 Check Shirts, 1 Straw Bonnet, 1 Gambroon Coat, 3 Cotton Handkerchiefs, & 6 Red worsted Caps, and 1 Sovereign (in gold) which I had sent to the Captain, as his demand for freight.—

The Note, which I have the honor to enclose, the Bishop wrote before he left—which he did on the 5th. inst.,—and I think I may safely add, that, from what I can learn, no attack of any kind was ever once thought of by the Natives—the bare fact of their going unarmed and only 6 in no. sufficiently proves this. They think themselves grossly ill-used in the matter: firstly, in being cursed; and secondly, in being threatened with death in the manner they were: both being offences, which, I scarcely need say, are of the very highest kind among themselves.

I believe the above list contains the whole of the property given out on the occasion. I will thank Your Honor to let me know, by some early opportunity, what I shall do with the Goods in my possession. Perhaps, I may be allowed to remark, that those Natives had nothing whatever to do with the robbing of the U.S. Brig "Falco." They even refused to take any part of the property stolen from that vessel, when it was subsequently offered them by their friends and relations living on the spot. And, further, I have this day heard, from a white man residing in the neighbourhood, that it has long been a practice with the person in command of the "Royal William," not only to take up arms against Natives, but against whites also.—

In consequence of a Letter which I wrote and left for the Bishop at Wairarapa, his Lordship called on the different Settlers in that valley, to ascertain the amount of their charges against me. I trust now their fears (at least), will have subsided. I intend to call upon them in March next, on my return from Wellington. The Letter which you mentioned to me, as having written to me, I have not received.—

I am, with Every respect
Your Honor's most ob. Servt.
W. Colenso.

1846 January 20: to Owen¹⁴¹

Waitangi, Hawke's Bay, E. Coast N. Zealand,
January 20, 1846.

Prof. Owen
&c &c &c

Dear Sir

Your kind Letter of enquiry of Octr. 23, 1843 only reached me 4 days ago! It came in a case of Books per "Nelson," which vessel arrived at Wellington on the 27th. Decr. last, so that it may have slumbered somewhere on your side of the water.—I lose no time however in acknowledging the receipt of it; and in thanking you for the copy of the "Proceedings of the Zoological Society," for Jan'y./43, which you have honoured me with.

Long ere this you will, doubtless, have seen a few remarks on the Moa (*Dinornis*) in a monograph of mine which I drew up for the "Tasm. Philos. Journal," and which was subsequently published in No. vii of that work. Since which I have sent you (on 2 or more occasions, through Sir W.J. Hooker, such Bones as I had by me—even *all* I had as I hoped to get more in this locality. I regret to have to state, that I have not at present any further information to offer you relative to the *Dinornis*, nor have I succeeded in obtaining any more Bones, though I have little doubt but that I shall in time be able to obtain a good supply, which, if I do, I shall not fail to remember you at first opportunity. I have (as I suppose you have already noticed) treated, as most chimerical, the idea of the *Dinornis* being now alive, and further than that too I have gone; and I have not met with any thing subsequent to cause me to alter from my recorded opinion.—

It is rather unfortunate that your Letter should have come so late to hand, as, when I resided at the N. parts of the Island, it was no very difficult matter to obtain an *Apterix*. I have had several:—their bodies, I regret to add, I uniformly cast away. On one occasion a Native brought me 7 at one time! I just mention this, that you may be solaced in this belief, that the *Apterix* is not so near becoming extinct as you (from casual visitors, and half-enquirers in N. Zealand.) have been led to believe. The immense and increasing number, however, of wild Cats, Rats, & Dogs, with which the wooded region of N.Z. abounds, are daily carrying on the war of extermination with this Bird and its Congeners. This *Apterix* was to be universally found throughout N. Zealand, and is still (though reduced in number) to be obtained pretty generally throughout the Island. Not so, however, the Huia (*Neomorpha*), which,—being at best a strictly local Bird, confined to a few spots only, easily snared, and a tempting article of barter among the Natives—promises again to follow the *Dodo*, as one of the things which were.—

The memoir on the *Dinornis* (which you speak of as being engaged in preparing, and of which you kindly promised to send me a copy,) I have not received. Perhaps any future communication you may honor me with, you could make through the Ch. Missionary House; or, by any vessel direct to Wellington, to the care of the Rev. R. Cole, M.A., of that place.

This is merely a line written in haste in answer to your Letter: I hope, ere long, to send you some Bones.—By the bye I have a portion of the Jaws of an Amphibious animal

(? *Phoca leptorix*, Blair,) for you, which was killed here a short time ago by the Natives—I shall have to send a case of plants to our esteemed friend, Sir W.J. Hooker in a little while, when I will send these Bones.—

And am,
Sir,
Yours very faithfully
William Colenso.

1846 January 20: to Gell¹⁴²

(Duplicate)
Waitangi, Hawke's Bay,
January 20, 1846.

Rev. J.P. Gell,
&c &c
C.M. Hobart.

My dear Sir

Believing that, ere this, you will have seen some late numbers of Sir W.J. Hooker's "Icones Plantarum," and of Dr. Joseph Hooker's "Antarctic Botany" in which my name is mentioned as having published a description of cuta in *filices novæ* in the Tasmanian Journal, and which publication is in those works referred to as a kind of authority for such plants—I venture to write you, hoping that you will not deem it an annoyance in my requesting you to procure me copies of the numbers of that work containing the Descriptions *above referred to*, as well as my rambling Journey into the Interior, supposing the same to have been published: or, if that work has been discontinued (which I almost conclude to have been the case) to send me back those Mss., with a note from yourself as editor at the period when those papers were written and sent to Hobart, stating the *time* when they were received and the reason why they were not published. I am the more constrained to exert myself in this matter, because, some other Botanists have subsequently described those Ferns, &c., whose synonyms Sir W.J. Hooker has kindly set aside, referring to my *prior* publication: it is, therefore, incumbent upon me to make some enquiry in the matter, and not knowing the gentleman on whom the Editorial department may have devolved after you, I am necessitated, as it were, to make this application.—

I think I wrote you a short note in March last from Wellington, which perhaps never reached you.—

Having been so much in correspondence with Hobart in connexion with our Journal, several of the Members residing here—Major Richmond, Dr. Sinclair, Revds. Taylor and Maunsell, & others—look to me for some information concerning the same, which I am not able to give. I mention this, my dear Sir, as a further apology (if needed) for my intruding upon you *again* in this matter.—

Here, in a new Station in this all but unknown part of N. Zealand—I have too much to do to attend to Botanical researches: yet I have in my lonely wanderings among the Natives—or rather in searching after them—detected several new and curious (if not lovely) additions to the

Botany of N.Z., which I hope in time will find their way to England.

I know I know little of what is going on at Auckland, or the N. parts of the Islands: my last information was dated September. We are sometimes 6 months without hearing from those quarters, and without seeing a white face!—happily the horrors of war have not yet caused any Commotion in this neighbourhood.

As I much wish for this note to reach you without loss of time, and as I have to send many days overland by Natives ere it can be posted at any of the towns, I have, in order to guard against any casualty, written to you in duplicate: the original I sent via Auckland, this I shall send via Wellington.¹⁴³

Please when you write, direct to the care of Rev. R. Cole, M.A. Parsonage, Wellington.

Believe me

My dear Sir

Very faithfully yours

W. Colenso.

1846 June 18: to Coates¹⁴⁴

Mission Station, Waitangi near Cape
Kidnapper, Hawke's Bay, June 18/46.

My dear Sir,

1. Time has, indeed, rapidly flown since I last wrote you! Very often have I purposed to write, but, want of time and quietness, and of opportunity of sending from this desolate region, have combined to prevent me. I enclose a *portion* of my Journal, which will serve, in some degree, to shew how it has been with me since I came here. I hope to send the remainder of my Journal (up to the present) as soon as I can find time to copy it. I cannot write to you quite so confidentially as I should wish; because, I must either send my Letters by Wellington (where I almost believe a Letter from me to you would be, at least, opened), or through the Missionaries residing on the Coast, who generally send their Letters (*en masse*) to the Bishop's College, or to Archd. H. Williams.—Your kind note of May 31/45, I, at last (after several months of interval), received, and then, I may say, by *chance*!

2. I have heard, that your Comee. had negative to receiving of young men *here* upon the foundation of the Society. This step, if you can persevere in it, and, at the same time, fill up the ranks, as they become vacant, *from England*, with men of your own selecting, will be, I believe, one of the very best the Comee. could have adopted for the Religious welfare of the Natives. In a little while, however, you will have to guard (upon the same grounds) against Native candidates for the Ministry; because, what you at home would, in the very *first* place require, would not, I fear, be so needed here.

3. I have, also, heard of your Comee's. determination [2] to adhere to their original Resolution respecting Salaries;—a Rule, which, (while it shews in the strongest light the kind paternal feeling of the Comee. towards their Servants, and

encourages us anew to trust the Comee. in the fullest manner,) may yet, I think, be advantageously modified, so as not only to meet the majority of Cases, but to please (as far as may be) most parties. Now there are two classes of persons who may (I think) be fairly exempted from that Rule: the *one*, those who have acquired a good amount of *present*-available property in New Zealand, whether in Money, Cattle, Crops, or Land; the *other*, those who have been, or may be, ordained or received in N.Z. since the arrival of the Bishop. By adopting the *first*, you would do much to stop the mouths of an angry public now every where opposed to us (and not, it may be, altogether without a reason) and, what is more, do justice to those few among your Servants who, while they have ever conscientiously kept themselves from “buying and selling and getting gain,” see, that some who have done so (and who, perhaps, do the least work) get almost double-wages. While, by adopting the *second*, you will please the Bishop (who, in this matter, is, I think, right) & save a few hundreds a year—and do no injustice to those persons who may fall under it—from their not being sent out by you, nor received upon any such understanding. Besides, (I speak with especial reference to those who have been received *here*,) why should such persons have a larger Salary than those of the Propagation Society, who are in similar situations? and, it may be, ordained at the same time? Such tends (among other things) to cause and perpetuate a feeling of jealousy between them. In fact, my dear Sir, those who have been received here, ought, in strict justice, to have a much less salary than any other, from the fact [3] that it was *the* settlement (at all times desirable, and doubly so in a strange land) that *naturally* followed the marrying of a Missionary's daughter which was the main thing sought after, (as some have, witness enough, confessed). The Bishop mentioned to me, in a particular manner (and I have no doubt he has done so to your Comee.) the case of Mr. C.P. Davies,—a person who, humanly speaking, will never do much Missionary duty—who would never have been passed by Dr Whiting—and who was, spite of all the influence raised in his favor—kept back for 12 months by the Bishop, solely on account of his physical inability. Now Mr. D. has (at present) the same salary as myself, with less expenditure, less exposure, and very many more privileges, and (according to present arrangements) should his family increase his salary would also! Among the persons who may be considered to fall pre-eminently under the *first* class, are, Archd. H. Williams and Mr. C. Baker. Of the Archd. I need say nothing to shew, (for common fame has already said too much,) that for many years he must have been a steady gainer to a large amount; and even in the late troubles, I think this equally clear, that whoever has been a loser *he* has *not*.—Of Mr. Baker, I would just note, that he has very valuable Land in Kororareka, which did not originally cost him £10., and of which (while he lived in the Bay) he sold, to my knowledge, for the amount of upwards of £1100; and now, that Kororareka is about to be rebuilt and repeopled, the value of his land there, (not to mention his valuable farms at Waikare and Kaipara) will be almost incalculable. Yet, while I am barely advocating the *equity* of the principle which I have here laid down, two things should not altogether be lost sight of—the *first*, [4] the saving to the funds of the Society; the *second*, the saving of many of their servants from that insatiable lust of wealth, which, in a most peculiar and dreadful yet stealthy manner, grows with its growth,—enervates the whole man,—and eats out the very vitals of Religion.

143 Apparently both arrived: they are among the Gunn papers; they differ only in detail.

144 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

4. In a little while (as soon as I can find time to condense and make out the accounts) I shall have to appeal to your Comee. against the decisions of *this* local Comee., respecting their allowance for this Station and District (of which I have not only already given them notice, but, also, of my intention to do so *through* their hands). You, perhaps, will scarcely credit me, when I say, that the *only* sum which this Comee. has been pleased to allow for my forming a new Station in this wild place (and that without any collateral aids from the C.M.S. Store as formerly, and which they enjoyed,) is £70!! Since which, they have refused to allow for Medicines; for Pencils &c. for Schools and Teachers; for Travelling Expenses; and the heavy Discount which I (alone) have to pay at Wellington, upon their Bills drawn upon you. A reason which they assigned for not paying for Medicines and Travelling Expenses is, “there being no available fund”; when, on enquiry, I found, they had (following out your Resolution to the letter) paid themselves up all their arrears of past Salary, and thus settling *Private* before *Public* matters! But, anon. Had I that support I *need*, I could now do much among these Natives in the way of Schools, &c: all my own little overplus means (I may tell you) I freely use.

5. I have mentioned Schools: I have introduced a simple plan among my Natives, (which I, also, worked upon at Paihia in 1836, 7, 8,) namely, to make out a School Book for every [5] village, in which is inserted the names of all the professing Xn. Natives, these are marked daily by the Teacher according to the attendance or non-attendance of the people, and, hitherto, they have succeeded admirably,—no one being desirous of having a bad mark put against his name. Two days ago, I closed for the time my Teacher’s School (another new thing of mine). I collected together nearly all the Native Teachers and Monitors of the District, 20 in number, (some having travelled about 200 miles to come hither,) and held School with them 8 hours daily during a fortnight. By this means I have advanced a step towards unity of Teaching and Doctrine. It would astonish you, my dear Sir, (it astonishes some of the old Missionaries when I have mentioned it to them, but the worst is, they won’t believe it,) were I to relate the many and different erroneous opinions which the Natives hold. There is scarcely a heresy of ancient days which is not both held and taught by some one or other of the Baptized Natives. Yet, I am thankful to know, unconscious of its being wrong, and willing to cast it away on being taught the Truth. But, what is unconsciously received and inculcated by them now, will, by-and-bye, be pertinaciously defended, and *then* the evil which is now by some scarcely admitted to exist, will show itself rampant. Every year I trust (D.V.) to have a similar School;—but, here, too, I need support. It is a heavy expense for me to feed 30 or 40 Natives for some time, and then to give them each somewhat on departing—which I think they fairly deserve. The Comee. *here* will, I know, oppose it: because, some of them may not see the utility of it; others may (say, they) have no time to do the same; others again may not have the requisite ability, from ignorance of the past times of the Church, or ignorance of the Native language; while others may object to it from want of inclination—no great need to teach *Natives* such high things—or, (such perversion I have [6] heard)—“God knoweth them that are his, and will take care of his own”! *I am satis!*—

6. And now that I have touched upon the subject of Schools, allow me, my dear Sir, to request you to procure me the following donation:—2 or 3 ream of writing paper;

1 ream of ruled paper, 5 lines to the inch, for teacher’s books; ½ ream imperial Brown; 5 quires of blotting; 3 or 4 gross of *hard* lead pencils; 1000 quills; a little Indn. Rubber in small pieces; ½ gross of strong pen-knives; a Sett of Maps on a large Scale, comprising, The World (Mercator’s Projn.), Europe, Asia, Africa, America & Polynesia, & Palestine; a Sett of ditto ditto, *outlined without names* to be filled up here; 1000 Slates; Slate Pencils; writing Ink, &c, &c. If you can possibly procure me these articles you will indeed confer a favour upon us all. Now if I am not allowed & encouraged to *feed* the Native mind, and to *lead* it on a little in its thirst after novelty, (although I believe in no case will it ever make any great advance,) I shall do not a little towards keeping the Turbulent Native Tribes about me in peace. But this must not be fettered down by rigid rules, & Inspection, & overseeing, for the Native mind will not at present bear it. The way to lead *this rising generation* on, is, to take them somewhat in their own erratic way; *regular* Schools must be left for those who come after, who will have *finer* materials to work upon. For, notwithstanding all the beautiful theories which are afloat, I, feel bold to say,—we must be content to use the Coarse Seive; that is, if we really wish to benefit the mass of the people. Hence, in my opinion, the Bishop’s Schools for Natives, wherever established, will ultimately fail; because they are not suited to the wants and habits of the people; they attend for a time it is true—indeed, considering all things, they hold out wonderfully [7]—but, *I see*, plainly enough, that it is to him an infliction.—Hence the reaction. They return to their Native liberty with much the same feelings as a bird has which escapes from a cage, or a white mouse from the revolving-box of an Italian toy. I have often asked the question, could our Schools of the present day have succeeded in the times of Boadicea, or Egbert? I have (from my arriving in N. Zealand) always encouraged Letter-writing among the Natives—often sitting up late to answer their numerous Letters—some of my brethren, I know, have *smiled* at the thing, but, I have reason to believe, that a Letter is likely to do more good—to *cause more thought*—than a ½ doz. Sermons;—such being read *to* all, and *by* all who can read, over and over again. I have now by me more than a 1000 Letters from N.Zr’s., some of which (from my older Correspondents) exhibit the working of the Native mind.—Shortly after I came here I received a Letter from the Teacher of Wairarapa, containing a long list of different texts which he wished to know the meaning of; pressed, as I then was for time, I answered his Letter, which, though I condensed as much as I could, took about 12 pages; to my great astonishment I found, on visiting those parts, that several Copies of my answer had been made by the Natives.

7. And if, my dear Sir, you could also send me (I can not afford to purchase just now), a good Copy of the Septuagint; ditto of Josephus (*Eng.*); and a Greek Concordance to the N. Test., *Glasgow* Ed.,—you would still add to the obligation.—

8. The Press, &c., has just come safely to hand; but, judge of my disappointment when I found that Watts (as once before) had sent me b’s and v’s for h’s and n’s!—so that, for utility, the Press might just as well be at Cape Horn, as here at Cape Kidnapper! I am now obliged to write out many prayers, &c., for the Natives—which is [8] very onerous. It has been said,—“Why write out prayers at all? why bind to a dead form? why cramp the spirit? (!) They know how to pray.” This latter, I, however, in general *deny*. Oh! I have heard of horrid things said unwittingly by them in prayer, aye, by their Teachers too. Many, I doubt not, of

the Natives of this District have received Baptism with just as much thought about it, as Cattle have which are driven up to be branded! Start not, my dear Sir,—time will shew:—“Tell it, however, *not* in Gath, lest the uncircumcised triumph.” Here, I may remark,—The Natives, for many years, have been in the habit of holding Prayer-Meetings on 2 evenings in the week—*viz.* Wednesdays & Saturdays. For some time past (2 or 3 years) there has been a negative attempt (so to speak) on the part of several to put them down: *why*, you must guess. Some time ago, I was not a little amused (*rather grieved*), to hear one of our Archdms. say,—“One reason I have for being against them, is, everyone prays, and the prayers which are offered are such poor things,”—and this, after 10 years (at least) experience!!—(how soon an excuse is found). I, however, venture to uphold them, but, in this way:—I select from among the Baptized Natives 4 or 6 persons only for that office, who stand for 6 months, when I select again; and, moreover, compose Prayers for them to offer.

9. During the period of my residence here, I have, in visiting the Natives, been thrice to Wellington—by way of the sinuous & rocky coast, a most desolate and heart-dispiriting route of 240 miles!—and have mourned again and again over the sad spirit exhibited by many of the Settlers (especially the N.Z. Company’s folk) towards the Natives. A truly Nero-like spirit, which, if fostered, must inevitably end in either the destruction of the Native, or the disappearing of the N.Z. Race. My Journal, by-and-bye, will shew a *little* of what I have been called to endure from my own Countrymen. When last [9] on, in March in the very midst of their troubles—I found not only the whole locality placed under “Martial Law,” but, nearly one-half of this District! Extending, by Proclamation, to “Castle Point”—over a Country where I had been peaceably employed during the preceding fortnight in Teaching, Baptizing and Marrying, without ever dreaming of such a thing!—and where the Natives (even on to Parangarahu, a village only 2 miles from the S.E. head of P. Nicholson,) were quietly attending to the ingathering of their Wheat and other Crops;—80 bush. of wheat I found threshed out of Parangahau alone, and, even *there*, all hands quietly at work. On arriving at Wellington I found, that 2 Natives had been apprehended on the serious charges of burglary, &c., and placed in close custody on board of the War Steamer. I heard of their intention to destroy themselves, through fear, and I sent them word not to do so. In a few days they were examined, (or, rather, the whites who came forward against them,) when *six* white men swore in the most positive manner to the identity of their persons—of course, they were Committed for trial; and, the Supreme Court only closing the week before, these 2 Natives would necessarily have to wait nearly six months, immured in a gaol during the whole winter, before they could be tried. Two days after, on returning to Pitoone, (a village at the mouth of the Heretaunga R., and about 6 miles from the Town,) I found the whole Ngatiawa Tribe loud in their expressions against (what they called) the injustice of the *Pakeha*. I enquired of the Xn. Teachers—there are 2 good ones here, & some very nice Natives—I found, that the barest *alibi* that can possibly be conceived could be most easily proved upon the united and clear statement of no less than 15, or more, unexceptionable Native Witnesses. The reasons why they did not come forward to clear their friends, were,—1st. Fear, Martial Law; no body of Natives being allowed to enter the Town—2nd. Not being called upon by the (so-called) Protector—3rd. “The alibi” (as the old Chief said)

“being so very *clear*, as [10] not to need 2 words before Natives, much less before Whites, who boast of their superior discernment of Justice.” My time, however, was expired I considered; I wrote and sent the whole case to Rev. O. Hadfield and Mr. St. Hill (the P. Magistrate who had committed them,)—venturing to recommend their speedy trial, inasmuch as they were apprehended during the time of Martial Law,—and now Mr. Hadfield shall relate the sequel—in a Letter I received from him only 6 days ago:—“On receiving your Letter from Pitoone, I spoke to the Governor about the 2 Natives, and he, after making some enquiries, issued a special Commission for their trial, and appointed a Counsel to defend them. William was acquitted, but Kumete” (unbaptized) “was found guilty, and sentenced to 10 years transportation. I was fully convinced that he was innocent; and consequently having acquired some new facts, I wrote to the Govern. upon the subject: he came to me and said, that if anything could be brought before him in an official way, which was not adduced at the trial, he would take cognizance of it. Mr. St. Hill worked hard in pulling together some very strong evidence, and then both he and I each wrote a strong official Letter to the Governor. The facts, &c., were laid before the Judge, and, upon his recommendation, Kumete was discharged.”—

10. There are several Settlers located here and there in the extensive valley of Wairarapa (Palliser Bay), these have mostly taken leases of land from the Natives, at a trifling yearly rent, varying from £8. to 12£. Now this plan, when fairly managed, is one of the very best that can be devised. For, it is equitable—by it the Native has something to look forward to—and, as a necessary consequence, protects his Tenant. But here, as in every place where it can be done, the simple Native has been over reached, for these Settlers have taken pieces of good level land varying from 4 to (I believe) 10 miles, or more, in extent, and that, upon leases extending from 30 to 60 years! at the paltry annual [11] sum of £10—which leases (of course!) include “*all below*” the surface—and which Ten Pounds has (perhaps) to be divided among from 10 to 40 persons. One Settler told me, that during some weeks of the *first* year of his residence in the valley, he had made 150lbs. of butter a week, for all which (& more too) there was always a ready Sale at a good price at Wellington.—Beef, Mutton, and Cheese, moreover, find a ready sale at a good price at W.,—8d, 10d, per lb. for the 2 former, and 1/- to 1/2d for the latter. *Now* the Natives, in some places, are beginning to *see* that they have been again duped; hence they become discontented, and eventually refuse to stand to their agreements. Upon which they are not only abused, but their Religion, and (above all) the Missionary, who is sure to come in for *his* share. Again, the respectable Settlers at Wairarapa not only told me, that they were living in peace with the Natives, and never wished the plan of leasing Land from them to be interfered with, but, also, that they dreaded its getting into the hands of the N.Z. L. Company, who (by their Agents) had already tried again & again, to purchase the whole valley from the Natives, over their respective leases. How easy it would be, for the Governmt. to allow and encourage such Leases; and, by laying a tax upon them, curtail their size, raise a revenue, and protect the Native! I was very sorry, indeed, to see, while at Wellington, a proclamation issued, waiving the Crown’s right of pre-emption over all Lands which might be purchased by the N.Z. Land Company, and in “their favour alone, without any regard to any other class or party of persons whatever”! The Newspaper which is published at Wellington, (by a Mr. Stokes, who was, I believe, a

Surveyor under the Compy.,) should never be depended upon for any thing more especially any thing in connexion with the Natives & Governr.—I merely mention this, that you may not, at any time, be led astray through any misrepresentations.—[12]

11. A sterling strong-minded Missionary, not over-sensitive, is much wanted for Wairarapa and Wellington. Those Natives who reside there are very much exposed, and I, at this end, with 2° of *lat.* between us, can do but little for them. The sooner you could place one there the better—even in a political point of view—for now they have no *Matua* (Father, Director, one to whom they can look for advice,) and, in too many cases, every man does what is right in his own eyes. I think your Comee. ought not to allow of a Missionary being placed at any old Station where there is another Missionary, *merely because that person is an Archdn.* To me, such appears to be utterly at variance with the very foundation of a *Mission to the Heathen*. If the Bp. chooses to place one of his young men under an Archdn., so much the better, in such a case the young man will, doubtless, be a gainer;—but, I think, your Missionaries should be dispensed abroad according to the present *wants of the Natives*. I just touch upon this, because I have heard, that in Case of your sending out any Missionary (which, it is expected, you will shortly do,) one is to be placed at Turanga with Archdn. W.W. Wairarapa and Wellington I would more especially recommend to your particular consideration.

12. The Natives, in several places, are in a very unsettled state; which is no more than might be expected. More particularly (just now) the Ngatirangaratahi, Ngatiraukawa, and Ngatimaniapoto Tribes, from Porirua, Otaki, and other places up the Western Coast, and near to Wellington. They have murdered 2 whites in the Heretaunga valley, and surprised the Military & killed 8, without a single Native being wounded! This has made them presumptuous; and now, the whites, rising in arms against them, and fearing their strength, have got these Ngatiawa (a nice Christian [13] Tribe) to join them; which will, I fear, ultimately prove to have been a bad step, and one which may involve the whole S. in war.—For Rauparaha would, I believe, remain quiet, had the Ngatiawa (his old enemies) not risen and become co-operators with the *Pakeha*. The Troops are again sent for; and what the event will be, no one knows. But, in order that you may have a better understanding of the matter, I should tell you, that when in March last, the Natives were ordered off the grounds on which they were dwelling in the valley of Heretaunga by the Governor, they would not leave until the Military were ordered to advance; the Settlers *then* rashly interfered—(I enter not into the *prior* matter, of the Settlers having been long kept out of their purchased allotments *by*, and of the great annoyances they had been continually receiving *from*, the Natives, which may be, in the main, correct,)—and, seeing that the Natives (about 60 in number) had left their villages, tore up some of their crops, (then ripe,) speared and seized their pigs, and burnt up their houses, canoes, & Chapel. This is the great sore.—Had the Military done it, the Case would have been different. Yet, not a word of this is to be found in the Newspapers of the day!—I had my information not merely from several Xn. Natives who lived close by, but from a highly respectable Settler residing in the valley, who also told me how sorry he was that they had so precipitately acted. Hence arose the plundering of the out-settlers on the Sunday following—hence the murders which have since taken place—and, hence, this more than prospect of

intensive War. Further; on the Governor's message being conveyed to the Natives residing in the valley, to leave quietly, a small party under Taringakuri readily obeyed and came directly to Wellington; yet, Tarangakuri's Canoes and Houses shared the same fate.—On which the Chief said, "*I thought the word of a Governor was sacred, but now I see that he too is nothing in the eyes of his own people*"! And, when the Governr. went round in the War Steamer to Porirua, (taking the Military with [14] him,) in order to see the Chiefs, (Rauparaha and Rangihaeata), and to establish a peace, some of the whites of Wellington (I should hope of *only the canaille*,) told the Natives, with many significant gestures and signs, "Ah! soon will Rauparaha & Rangihaeata be hung up by the neck for the massacre (!) at Wairau!"—what was the consequence? why, long before the steamer got to an anchor, Native expresses on horseback had arrived at Porirua from Wellington, bringing the news (the atrocious falsities) which they had heard.—Of course the Governor's visit was worse than useless; all his endeavours to see the Chiefs were only mocked at. The foregoing statement—as far as concerns the information given to the Natives—I had from Dr. Fitzgerald (a warm-hearted friend to the Natives though a Romanist) *while* the Governor was absent at Porirua, who had been told it again & again by the Natives; and the result proved its correctness.—

13. I understand that the present Protectorate staff are about to be abolished, *one* only Protector to be retained. Mr Clarke has resigned the office, deeming the Salary too small. The Sub-protectors are, I believe, of little worth. Nor will any person *paid by the Government* ever do for that office. A Protector should be appointed by some Philanthropic Society in England; he should be a man of strong mind and body, *devoted to the Native's Cause, utterly careless of making a fortune for himself*, and, if possible, a *sincere* Xn. I place *this last*, believing the other requirements in *his* situation to be most needed.

14. I can but think, that this yearly meeting of the Syndicate at Auckland—there to remain during the whole winter—ought not to take place in these unsettled times. True, a revision of the Scriptures and Prayer Book is needed, but the [15] Natives are not now in that state to be left long without their guides. I believe that Archd. Williams will take *the whole of his family* with him when he goes—which will be I suppose in a few days.

15. The Bishop was here in January, and remained 8 days, examining Natives for Confirmation. At this Station his Lordship confirmed 130, and, in the District, 244. He only confirmed 44 at Te Kopi, where there are nearly 150 Baptized *Adults*! the most of whom were Baptized by Mr. Cole without (it is said) any examination on his part!!—Several of them have apostasized. Last month, the Archdeacon came here from his Station, and administered the Lord's Supper to 130 Commts. But those Baptized Natives who are scattered here and there in the various villages throughout this immense Parish, can only partake of the Communion once a year *at most*, (i.e. when the Archdeacon, according to the Bishop's wish, goes his annual round,) and then (in consequence of his time being so valuable as not to allow of his making any stay) without preparation; and, in some places, on week-days, which the Natives very much dislike.—Now all this tends, *among this people*, to lower in their eyes the resident Missionary, which is just the very opposite of what should be done. Again, with regard to the Baptism of Adults,—a Canon has been set forth, committing this to the especial charge of the

Archdeacon, which Canon is, moreover, not to be interpreted according to (what I call) its literal meaning, but according to a something which is only known to those who are in possession of it. When the Bp. was here, we freely conversed together; I seized the opportunity and cleared my own conscience; pointing out many things which I had seen at Waimate and elsewhere, and had heard talked of among the Natives. He took [16] all I said, very well, thanking me for it. On Whitsunday last, I Baptized 26 adults here, with whom I had taken much extra labour; which alone has given the old Baptized Natives of this neighbourhood better views of their ordinance than they ever had before. Since I came into this District I have Baptized 106 adults and 95 children; with every one of the former I had much searching examination, and felt satisfied that they had, at least, a good head knowledge of the way of Salvation; I have also married 35 Couple. On my coming here I found there were 5 half finished chapels throughout the District; there are now eleven finished, & 7 in course of erecting. In almost every village I have a daily adult-school, which is well attended. And, I have, at present, about 200 candidates for Baptism. I have plenty of Enemies, (*vide*, Journal,) and have been ill, but I am again pretty strong, and hope to work a little longer for the glory of GOD in pointing poor sinners to Christ. The Natives of the Manawatu District wish very much to belong to this parish; they are at present said to be under Mr. Govett—though they say, and seem to belong to “Noman’sland.”—I have been obliged, at last, to lay the matter before the Bishop. They have much to say in favor of such being permitted, and, I think, rightly too; they have seen the Archdn. upon the subject, and I think the Bp. will consent to it. This will add a little more to my work. There are a few (about 10 or so) Papists in Wairarapa, to whom, shortly after my arrival, I addressed a Letter. They shewed it to their Priest (who happened to be there just after my Letter had reached them), who said I was mad and took possession of it. Subsequently, when the Bp. was at Wellington, the Priest sent it to him, with his own observations upon it. The Bp., when here, told me, he found no fault with my Letter, but that he did not approve of the printed Scriptures (which he [17] had enclosed) being headed “mot e pikopo,”—(i.e. for the Papist,) I enclose a copy. It passed off, however, very well, and I have since (spite of the Priest’s efforts) gained one of his proselytes,—and hope, yet, to gain them all.

16. I doubt not but you will find several little blunders in my Journal—for I have not had time to read it over since copying. Should such be the case, be lenient towards them. If, my dear Sir, you can find time to write me, do so *by post*, to the care of Rev. R. Cole, Wellington, (who is a warm friend, and always on the *qui vive*),—but do not use any seal by which you may be known: as, I believe, I am on every side a marked person.

17. I have heard a report of Mr. Busby’s safe and prosperous return to the Bay of Islands; which, I hope, is correct.—We rarely get any News here until it is very old. This place is quite out of the way; low, damp, cold, and unhealthy, surrounded with morasses, and having Snow upon the mountains and hills during several months of the year. The Bishop said, he thought it was the most disagreeably situated Miss. Station of all in N. Zealand! In fact, there is nothing whatever to recommend it. No water—no wood—no good harbor—no shelter from stormy winds, not having a hill or tree or bush *near* us—no female domestics to be had from among the Natives—and, worse than all, no good well-disposed Natives. All my stores, cases from England, &c., have always come to hand more or less wet and rotten; and my loss (on Flour, Clothes, and Books,) has been great. Mrs. Colenso has given birth to

another Child, whom I have named, Ridley Latimer, for, living as I do in these truckling times, in which, some *soon* change their opinion, or lay it aside on the shelf,—and others, [18] who hold the truth, are afraid to speak out,—I have concluded, not only to shew my Colours (as I have always done), but to let it be seen that they are *nailed* to the mast.—

We are all pretty well—but not *very* well. There is too much to be done, and too many “stirs” continually about us, for any one but a stone to enjoy good health. Our hope, however, is in the LORD, who daily enables us for all things; thus we prove the blessed Continuance of the promise—“As thy day thy strength.” If I were now to choose an armorial bearing, I think it should be, a burning yet unconsumed bush.—

Remember us, my dear Sir, in your prayers;—charitably construe whatever I may have *unintentionally* written amiss in this long & rambling Letter;—and believe me, with sincere affection,

your most obedient Servant,
William Colenso.

June 22, 46.

By a Letter just received—I have heard of the death of Te Heuheu (the great Chief of Taupo) with 50 men with him, on Whitsunday—while we, here were engd. in Service, & in Baptizing,—occasioned by the sudden sinking of the hills of Taupo—? earthquake, or occasioned thereby. I write in haste. W.C.

P.S. There is yet a little matter I had all but forgotten:—I have seen the Record Newspaper, in the C.M.S. Record, and Ann. Report—a long but *colored* statement (written by Mr C.P. Davies) concerning an affray which took place at the Waimate. I was residing at the Waimate at the time, and well recollect how Mr. D. got “roasted” at table by the Missionaries & students present for his manner of relating the story, on the very day in which the affair happened. Since the Papers and Publications have come to this Land, which continue the same, there has been no small amount of ridicule made upon it. I do not, I dare not, say, Mr. D. wrote any thing that was false;—but all newcomers are very apt—first, to misconceive, then to misunderstand, and then, with the aid of a warm imagination, to embellish most enormously! (*Parturient montes!*) I have known this to be done more than once, and I have also known the Socy. to suffer by it.

P.S. 2nd.—June 22nd.—Since writing the foregoing I have received a Letter from the Native Teacher at Pitoone, in which he says,—“Very great perhaps will be the evil of the people of this neighbourhood: this fighting is evil, but the people follow after it. With the Govr. is the direction for us. O friend! Listen,—In fine weather the Tamakihi (*Cicada*) sings, in dull weather the Tarakihi is silent.”—As much as to say, this evil day of war will upset all our prayers, Schools, &c.

A Dieu, my dear Sir,
W.C.

An extract:—“James naturally concluded, that men (among the clergy) who expected preferment from his favour would be willing to merit it by promoting his designs.”

—Roberts. Histry. Scot., book i.

1846 December 31: to the CMS Secretaries¹⁴⁵

Waitangi, Hawke's Bay, New Zealand,
Decr. 31st. 1846.

My dear Sirs,

1. It is not without some amount of diffidence that I venture to trouble you with the accompanying memorandum of an account between myself and the C.M. Society; the more so, too, because I have (I believe) hitherto invariably chose (for peace sake) rather to put up with several pecuniary losses than to refer them to the Parent Commee. I feel, however, honestly emboldened to lay this memorandum before you—from a conscientious belief that the whole will bear close investigation—from having applied again and again to the E.D. Comee. to settle the same, but in vain—from having patiently waited nearly 2 years in hopes of having it settled—and, also, from my peculiarly expensive situation in this isolated Station.—

2. Having openly sent you through the E.D. Comee. the Duplicate of the original enclosed, I will not (I think) make any further remark thereupon, unless such should be hereafter called for: only, that when I found the E.D. Comee. would not sanction the outlay which I had made, I desired them to point out and set aside whatever they might consider objectionable; this, however, they also declined to do.—

3. I may, notwithstanding, add, that *my* leaving my old Station to form a new one, was a very different thing from that of Mr. Baker's, or Rev. J. Hamlin's, or Archd. Williams' doing so; or (in fact) any other person's, because, first, they had at their old stations a large quantity of Tools, &c, &c, and useful Stores of all kinds (which from year to year had been granted from the Society's Kerikeri Stores), and which they brought with them, whereas, I, living at Paihia, and in a very different situation, had none of such necessary articles by me, nor yet (when my time came to leave) [2] the advantage of a Public Store to draw from. And, had I not (in some measure) foreseen what would be required and so get them in time from England, as well as been kindly favored by Rev. W.C. Dudley and other friends, the actual outlay would have been much greater than it is.—And, in reference to the reiterated remark, of “£70. being all that was thought proper to be allowed by a Comee. which was held at the Waimate in 1844,”—I would merely observe, That that Comee., formed of persons who knew nothing whatever of the place nor people, and assembled together in the Bishop's house (I do not say resolving & concluding under his direction), ought not so positively to have limited the amount of outlay; especially, too, when the total cost of the formation of each (of the *lowest* of their own Stations is duly considered: which Stations of theirs were also (for the most part) formed, when both materials and labour were cheaper and more easily obtained.—

4. I have mentioned, my dear Sirs,—“my peculiarly expensive situation in this isolated Station”: this I will briefly explain.—

1. There is no Firewood upon the spot, nor near at hand. While then many of my more fortunate brethren have an abundance of this necessary article *cost free* (in the woods of the C.M.S. upon their grounds), I, in perhaps the coldest

Mission Station in N.Z., (where, in winter, the milk freezes in the pantry and the water in the bed room) have to buy it and that at a very dear rate. During this past winter, notwithstanding the utmost economy (often sitting cold) I have paid several pounds for Firewood alone—and the year preceding much more; independent of what drift wood has been collected by my own lads.[3]

2. There is no Water at hand fit for drinking or washing, of Clothes,—this we have to fetch in Casks from a considerable distance, at the rate of 1/- pr. Cask.

3. From vessels not calling here but *very* seldom, we are obliged to have a larger quantity (from 6 to 12 months stock) of articles of daily consumption—such as, Flour, Sugar, Rice, oatmeal, &c.,—hence the loss occasioned by long-keeping, as well as by Rats, &c., is great. In Flour alone I have lost 1400 lbs. during the 2 past years—this, however, may not happen again to such an extent.

4. Another head of *loss* arises from Goods being wetted by Salt water in landing, and this is much greater than at first sight may appear. Our harbour is 8, 9 miles distant, small and *seldom* entered, vessels choosing to land, or rather drop, their goods into boats or canoes off Cape Kidnapper. By this means our better articles of clothing, especially black, has (in common with groceries, &c) suffered severely; and some valuable Books (particularly a new *Encyclopedia Britann.*) from England, all but ruined.

5. Again a further *Loss* is sustained, from my goods often having to be left any where upon the Coast (in consequence of foul winds); a short time since a case of Goods which I had purchased at Wellington, were opened at a Whaling Station where they had been landed and seven Blankets, &c, abstracted therefrom. Owing to the length of time which necessarily intervenes before a Letter can be sent to, and an answer received from Wellington, it was some time before I could ascertain what Goods had been actually forwarded. It is but justice to mention, that the Master of the Whaling Station knew nothing whatever of what had been done by one of his men.

6. Another Item of Loss is occasioned by my being obliged to take up my Salary in Bills on yourselves, instead of Cash; for I have to pay, firstly, a heavy [4] Discount at Wellington to get the Bank Paper (!) for those Bills; and, secondly, a premium to get the Bank Paper converted into Cash—Paper being of no use *here* among the Natives. Add to which, the certain expense and no little risk attending upon the transmission.

7. Other memoranda of Losses may be easily gathered—from my not keeping Tobacco to pay the Natives for provisions and labour supplied (as is almost every where done to their injury);—from my heavy and constant Travelling; from having no fund nor allowance to meet the expenses attendant upon the supplying the very many sick of this large District with Flour, Sugar, tea, &c,—from the Native Chiefs immediately about me being all Heathen, so that whenever any of the Teachers or Christian Natives from a distance come to see me (as is constantly the case) to get advice, or medicine, or for instruction, I am obliged to supply them with food, &c; (The other day, to the Chiefs, Teachers, & friends (Xn. Natives) who came from a great distance bringing Timber with much labour down the shallow rivers for the Churchyard Fence, &c,—I gave 2 Barrels Flour and a Lot of Sugar, for they were totally without Food,—Potatoes not being yet ripe.)—from having to pay agent's Commission upon every thing purchased at Wellington;—from my being the only European here and living moreover in the way of whites travelling to and from

Wellington,—and thus subject to many unlooked-for demands upon one's hospitality, &c. &c.—

Had I chose to have done so, I could, I think, have advantageously referred the matter to the Bishop; but I was, and am against doing so, from principle.

I have been obliged to write a great deal more than I either intended or wished, or than I have time to afford for such a subject; yet I have aimed to be as concise as possible, even to the keeping back of several things which might have been alleged in my favor.

I am,
my dear Sirs,
Very sincerely and obediently yours
William Colenso.

Report of the Rev. W. Colenso for the year ending Dec. 1847.

During the past year I have been engaged as follows. On the Lord's Day in holding Divine service twice, and in Catechizing & teaching school. On Weekdays in attending to the Adult male schools, instructing and examining Natives, candidates for Baptism and the Lord's Supper, holding Bible classes & teacher's do., visiting sick and dispensing medicine, settling disputes &c. &c., and on Thursday evenings (and every evening when traveling lecturing and also attending to very many secular matters of the Station.—

On the 6th. January I left the Station on a visit to the villages inland & returned by way of Cape Kidnapper on the 16th.—

9th. of February I left the Station on a visit to Tarawera, thence to Patea by way of Taupo Lake, & thence over the Ruahine mountain chain to the station, reaching home on the 3rd. of March.—

24th. of March I left the Station on a visit throughout the whole district, and on to Wellington. I returned on the 28th. May.—

On the 12th. of June, I left the Station on a visit to Tangoio and Arapauanui villages. I returned on the 23rd.

27th. of August I again left the Station on a visit to these villages and returned on the 2nd. September.

9th. September I visited the inland villages, Patangata, Waipukurau, &c. returning to the Station on the 16th.

1st. of October, I left the Station on a visit throughout the whole district, and on to Wellington, and returned on the 30th. November. I had also arranged for again visiting Tangoio and the other adjacent villages in Decr. but some rheumatism (from which I am still suffering) utterly prevented me.

Number of Baptisms performed in the District during the year,
Adults, Men 46, Women 38, total 84. children 73. Grand total 177.

Number of Marriages performed . . 70.—

Number of Communicants (about) 150.

Number of candidates for baptism continually augmenting.

Number of Deaths unusually great being upwards of 50, in which number however it should be observed 23 persons of

this place are included who were all drowned together in this Bay in the month of September last.

Number of persons who have fallen into Gross Sin—alas! some in every village.

Number of persons who did run well—but who now have almost, if not altogether, left us, is very considerable, particularly in and about Wellington. The *wonder*, however is that there are not more, considering the fearful examples and Horrid precepts, which are hourly and voluntarily given them.

Six chapels have been erected during the past year, throughout the District, 4 of which are in places where chapels were not before. Others also have been commenced.

The state of the natives throughout the District is on the whole shewing some-few on whom I would fain hope the Divine Blessed Spirit hath breathed, now begin to stand out in bold relief from the heterogenous mass. and this little phalanx (the comfort of my heart) stands firm & is increasing; they are still however but children & need careful fostering. The public roads and works about Wellington in which several Hundreds of Natives have been employed during the past and present year, have been great means of abominable evils.

Thus many have made shipwreck of their faith, more especially the poor natives of Port Nicholson, Waikanae, Otaki and the Mouth of the Manawatu River. Few however of the christian natives of the district have hitherto sought employment upon these works and of these few, some have relinquished it with disgust.

The bulk of the natives immediately about us are, I am sorry to say, much as they were, “dead in trespasses and sins”. They are here tolerably quiet just now. They have lately been taught a fearful lesson in the loss of one of their five principal chiefs (Tiakitai) who with his party (23 in all) were drowned when upon a Heathen excursion. They had all been repeatedly and wonderfully warned not to go. I am happy to be able to write; I have at length succeeded in getting back the greater part of that portion of the property plundered from the U.S. Brig “Fako” which had found its way over to this side of the bay. My native teachers were of great service to me in this matter, some even bringing articles themselves (without fee or reward) from the Otaki Range, Manawatu, Taupo, &c. & the Christian natives too were generally very willing to deliver them up.

The natives who have been fighting in and about Whanganui have made application to the Heathen Chiefs about me for aid in rum and ammunition, hitherto however they have listened to my advice and have refused to assist.—

I found it no small matter to make the parties of whalers & others residing on this side of Hawke's Bay to keep the peace among themselves: and also to prevent their getting the different tribes of natives among whom they live to join them respectively to fight and pillage each other. No doubt had I not strongly interfered they would have shed each other's blood and caused a little disturbance in this neighbourhood. On the 2nd. August my annual teacher's school commenced and continued daily until the **th inclusive. Twenty one were present from all parts of the district and all I believe wish to come again.— Most of the few Papists who were scattered throughout the district have

cast away their Mariolatry and have joined us.— Perhaps I should briefly mention there have been among the deaths a few (two in particular) the one an unbaptized little girl, a candidate for baptism, who had learned to read her New Testament during her last illness. And the other a middle aged man, a Communicant, which were attended with circumstances of a highly pleasing character. Lights there, which appeared the stronger from the gross darkness every where surrounding. We want a few such testimonials from the dark valley, they should speak volumes, they speak home, and even when the speaker is forever silent, they “yet speak”. A little sinful fragment of the happy death of a Sunday scholar in London, which I last year translated, seems to have been made of service to the natives.

Mrs. Colenso has attended to the Daily female and Infant schools but the attendance of the scholars generally (including also the males) has been very irregular. Still a progress is making, several throughout the district (especially young children) having learned to read during the year. A great portion also of Mrs. Colenso’s time has been occupied in dispensing medicine and in visiting and attending to the sick.

During the past winter, and on more than one occasion, we were in not a little peril through the rivers (by which we are surrounded) overflowing their banks and laying the whole Station under water. The waters rose to 8 inches over our highest floors which are nearly 2 feet from the ground and drove us to take refuge upon tables &c. The mud which remained on the subsiding of the waters was frightful, being from 4 to 30 inches in depth, completely destroying all vegetation. This fearful visitation happening as it did in the beginning of winter, put almost a complete stop to all public services & schools in this neighbourhood for several weeks.

My own health has suffered considerably during the year—chiefly through repeated attacks of severe rheumatism, combined with low fever. I have, however, struggled hard to do my expected duty. The district is I think too large, too heavy a task for any *one* to perform.

Mrs. Colenso has, on the whole, enjoyed pretty good health and so have our two children, a blessing and fancy for which we would be thankful.

Leonard, my principal native teacher, with others also of my N. Teachers have been active in visiting several out villages in the more distant parts of the district during the year. Particularly Tarawera—Tangoio—Te Hawera—Manawatu & the scattered villages of Wairarapa.

I may also add, as a cheering sign that 44 natives (i.e. eleven Teachers and Monitors, 16 other men & 17 women—have during the last six months given up the beastly practice of continually smoking: all of whom were inveterate smokers. This is one of the fruits of my annual Teachers’ school. If a determined yet quiet opposition against Tobacco has not yet been tried by my Missionary brethren throughout the Archdeaconry, I would humbly venture to recommend it to their particular notice. The more so too from one well knowing that a great portion of the sin committed by the natives arises (in one way or another) from their immoderate and promiscuous use of Tobacco.

(Signed) William Colenso.

1846 December 31: to Gunn¹⁴⁶

C.M. Station, Hawke’s Bay,
N. Zealand, Decr. 31, 1846.

Ronald Gunn, Esq.,
&c &c &c.

My Dear Sir

Although an entire stranger to your person yet not to your name, nor to that Science in which you have done so much for your adopted land—I venture to write you a few lines respecting the Nos. of the “Tasmanian Journal,” and of some little printing which (I believe) Mr Wade got done for me in Tasmania.—To which I am the more emboldened from the kind manner in which you make mention of my name in your note to Rev. J.P. Gell, of June 4/46.—

The last No. of the “T. Journal” which I have received, is no. vii vol. 2,—any subsequent nos. I shall therefore most gladly receive. I wished to have duplicates & triplicates of those nos. which might contain any papers of mine. I cannot account for Mr. Wade’s not informing me.—

If the Tasmanian Society still continues to publish their Journal, I may yet be able to add a Contribution, having one or two things upon the *stocks*.

If there are any specimens among the N.Z. Flora (of *this* district) which you would like to have, I would endeavour to secure them for you. We might, in fact, exchange “to mutual advantage” as they say. The *Ferns* of your Country would be to me a *desiderata*, and, as I suppose you have a *good* garden and I have a place fenced in *intended* for one, I will even venture to ask another favor,—in the shape of Bulbs of any plants—or roots, anemones, ranunculuses, &c—or seeds—in short, anything that may be safely packed up with the books.

Forgive me, my dear Mr. Gunn, if I have unwittingly exceeded.—Command me in any way in my power, and believe me, with much respect, yours very sincerely
William Colenso.

1847 January 20: to Venn¹⁴⁷

Waitangi, Hawke’s Bay,
New Zealand, Jany. 20. 1847.

Rev. J. Venn,
&c &c &c
London.

My dear Sir

I have only *very recently* received the afflicting tidings of the death of our very dear and faithful friend Mr. Coates. It came upon me most unexpectedly—and occasioned great searchings of heart—I thought much and prayed earnestly that GOD would raise up a suitable person and direct the Parent Comee. to such an one to fill that important post—rendered doubly so in these critical times. And now I have been refreshed and gladdened indeed, in hearing that you have accepted that situation. Oh! my dear Sir, may GOD Almighty bless you continually for your having so acted,

146 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0715

147 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491. John Venn was dead by 1847; Coates’s successor at the CMS was John Venn’s son Henry Venn.

and make you a blessing in every way to your numerous missions. I can not tell you the thoughts—I dare not give vent to the feelings—of my heart. It seems to me to be not a little analogous to the death of Moses when Israel was about to enter into the Promised Land—at *the* time when apparently such a Leader was most needed; yet, through God's foresight and providence, more than made up in Joshua—may it be so now. Amen.[2]

I wrote a long letter to Mr. Coates in June last, which perhaps may have safely reached the C.M. House. My Letter was a *Confidential* one, and I was led to write as I did to our lamented friend, in Consequence of a Note from him, bearing date "May 31/45" (but which was a very long while in coming hither) in which he says—"Pray continue to write fully and unreservedly write to me private Letters if you wish it."—Believing then, as I do, my dear Mr. Venn, that in many (may I not say *all*?) matters concerning the welfare of the C.M. Society—the spread of Evangelical Religion through her instrumentality—and the benefiting and improving of her Missions (i.e. Missionaries and Converts)—your heart is, like that of your predecessor in Office, already given and firmly fixed, I have no scruple whatever (confiding in my belief) to keep me from desiring that that Letter, written by me and addressed to Mr. Coates, may be received by you as if in every respect it was written to you [3] yourself. You will therefore please accept it and use it as you may deem proper.

I hope, my dear Sir, it will be in your power to obtain the few articles for me (for my Natives), which I have requested in that Letter: and, if so, to cause then to be forwarded via Wellington without loss of time, for my day is slipping fast by, and night is at hand.

I hope, also, (D.V.) soon to write you again, and to send you the remainder of my Journal. Please acknowledge these 2 Letters at your earliest convenience, and craving an interest in your prayers

Believe me ever,
Rev. and Dear Sir,
Very sincerely & obediently yours
William Colenso.

1847 March 13: to Gunn¹⁴⁸

C. Mission Station, Hawke's
Bay, March 13, 1847.

Dear Sir

On the last day of the old year I did myself the pleasure of writing you, via Wellington, enclosing the original of a Sett of Bills upon the C.M. Society for £10. I hope that Letter will have safely reached you ere this—but, to make sure work (an opportunity offering) I now transmit you via Auckland, the Duplicate of that Sett of Bills—which will I believe cover the expenses incurred in printing.—

I am but just returned from an interesting journey in the mountainous interior, and have fortunately added a few more *curious* plants to its flora. I suppose our good friend Dr. Hooker will soon be at work on the Botany of

Tasmania.—I find several genera, if not species, to be common to both of our adopted Countries.

I may add (although I mentioned it in my former Letter) that the last no. of the Tasmanian Journal which I have received is no vii, vol.2—and should be obliged for copies of any subsequent numbers.—

We are pretty peaceable in this (the Southern) part of the Island: I know not how it is at the North. Road making appears to be the order of the day—but such *heavy* work requires no small amount of money. I hope our Governor has a *Fortunatus's* purse at Command or, I fear, a truce with the forests and swamps will soon be proposed.

Pray make my respects to kind Mr. Gell; and—hoping soon to hear from you—believe me

My dear Mr Gunn
Yours very respectfully
William Colenso.

1847 March 16: to Dixon & Co.¹⁴⁹

Ahuriri, H.Bay, N. Zealand, March 16 1847
and Dup. June 3/47)
via Auckland)

Mess. R. Dixon, & Co.,

Gentlemen,

I sit down to write—having 8 letters (!) and 2 Invoices of yours laying on my Table before me. I wrote a very short note to you in Decr., informg. you of the goods pr. Madras havg. safely arrived last week (the 12th.), the goods pr. "Gypsey" made their appearance in no very good condition,—and now I lose no time in writing, and shall freely remark *seriatim* upon several items.—

No.1. earthenware, vulgar & common—*blue—not accordg.* to order

2. spades, of 2 kinds—the better kind will do;

4. Liq. Plants, &c,—I think I merely wrote for fresh & good root, for medicinal purposes; and for seeds; However I have (out of the whole) 3 plants living in my garden.

6. "Fancy" (!) wafers—complete Trash
Handkerchiefs—the *red* ones (tho' small) are near the mark—the common ?Scotch ("Monteith—Glasgow", marked up on them) are very inferior
2 Tweed coats—almost the *best* & most suitable articles sent
Scarlet Large shirts—rather short
4 angola coats—unsuitable—too high priced for Natives

7. Wedding rings—*much too small for* N.Zealrs.
Scarlet cravats—very much too dear; just as good (equally as suitable) an article is to be had *here* at 10/. pr. doz. The com. retail price at Wellg. is 1/.

8. *Drab* umbrella *sent*—*white* one ordered; such as the Quakers use: I *believe* they are made of W. Brown Holland.—

Moleskin Trows. sent, good & suitable—but all came much spotted; yet goods w. them were perfectly dry.

9–11. 3 Bs. spades, said to be “w. straps”—only 2 Bs. howr. of that kind. The 3rd. very infr. article, not only *without* straps, but T-handled.

14. axe heads! a sad mistake this—but partly perhaps my own fault, —what I wanted were *small* bright axe heads weighing about 4oz. each, which may be had *here* for abt. 10/. pr. doz. This is a dead loss the art. being next to useless, having also previously more than a doz. by me.

The Mills, I hesitate to speak of, from not having it in my power to *prove* them. They do not look so well-finished as those already among the Natives in the neighd., wh. have some little addl. apparatus, brass gudgeons, &c. They got a little rusty in coming water having got into the Cask; thro’ wh. many of the Combs were spoiled; and the B. Cotton, & Blankets damaged.—

The articles I have not noticed you may consider as generally giving satisfaction.—

I may just mention, as a general rule for yr. guidance, that I always wish to have a serviceable yet cheap article for Native use; and, in addn. to what is *good* & useful, *neat* for my own. I utterly dislike, any thing that is very inferior in quality for them, or vulgar or “*flashy*” in appearance for my own use.—

I enclose the *origl.* of a sett of Bills on the Rev H Venn for £50 (Fifty pounds)—the Dup. of which I will also forward in a few days. I regret now I had not got them drawn for a higher sum—you will perceive they are drawn in adv., wh. is only done to come agt. *that* quarterly salary. I hope with them you will pay yrselves the Bal. of yr. a/c £25.18.5—and, will with the remg. sum of £24.1.7, execute the small enclosed order mkd. A.

In my note of Decr. last, I ordered,—

— a copy of P. Times for 1846

— 2 doz men’s cott. Braces

— 2 eye glasses nos. 2, 2½ in Tortoiseshell—

which, *if not already sent*, you will please to *add.* to the order marked A.

(I have requested the “*Pictorial Times*”—but I am in ignorance whether to prefer that paper to the “*Illustrated News*”—should the above mentioned articles not have been sent, will you have the goodness to make the selection?—I order the Paper wholly on account of its cuts.)+++

—for order see Order Book—

2 Wheat mills complete	£7. 0. 0
1 small stove (say)	2.10. 0
6 Japanned Bed Chamber Lamps—(see Curator) 1/6	9.
Lucifer matches <i>not</i> Cosgroves	8.
Pictorial Flora, by Miss Jackson, Longman’s 15.0	15/-)
Cory’s Anct. Fragments, Pickering, Londn., last ed. (say 10/-))
Relig. of Anct. Britain, Longman	8/-)
Bickersteth’s famy. prayers Longman	7/-)
Pollock’s Course of Time—latest ed.—Longman	7/6)
Cowper’s Poetical Works by Cary ditto	14/-)
Milton’s works by J. Montgomery, 2 vols 8vo 120 engs.	1.4.0) 5. 8. 0
Bp. Wilson’s new work on the Colossians (say)	12/-)
1 st . vol. of Came’s Lives of Missionaries, cloth Fisher	(6/-)
1 doz. Colenso’s Cott. Prayers 3d. Rivingtons	3/-)
1 Last Day, 3/6 Nisbet	3/6)
1 Cat. of Articles of Ch. of E.)

by Owen. Houlston & Stoneman say 3/-)
2 or 3 boxes of *really good* medall. wafers, C. silvered
mags. Blkwoods, Frazer, Quarterly Rev.—when old—at *low p*

(1 drum Turkey Figs	say 10/-)
all (1 Box Fr. Plums	5/-)
new (4 Bottles Pickled walnuts	4/-) say 1.10. 0
(1 Bushel Walnuts	4/-)
(1 d—— soft shell almonds	1/-)
macaroons	17.13.0

	17.13. 0
½ doz. Tweed Coats similar to those sent,) 8/6	2.11. 0
but, at least 6, of sizes larger)	
1 doz. Moleskin Trows 5/- 60/-	3. 0. 0
½ doz. Printed ditto, dark, not lined, abt. 10/- 60/-	3.10. 0
6 doz. Rack Combs — 2/2	10.10
1 doz. Com. Silk Pockt. Hdkfs yellow, orange, Blue, or Red	
—I think they are called “Bandana’s” abt 25/-	1. 5. 0
4 doz. best <i>red</i> Cotton Hdkfs. @ 8/-	2. 8. 0
4 doz red & yellow ditto 5/3	1.11. 6
1 doz. Men’s Cott. Braces	12.
1 doz. Tinder Boxes	10.
2 doz. Scizzars	10.
1 Small Pocket Compass (I bot. one for 2/6 when in England	2. 6
1 Small Thermr. with Japanned bk. to fix agt. wall	4.
Sardines in oil, 1 doz. tins	12.
2 do. Carb Soda	5.
2 Blk. & Green Men’s Straw hats, 1¼ size,—large brim	5.
2 doz. Shaving Boxes w. Glasses	
Pelisse	
Carpet, yds. good, Kidderminster	
dark, small pattern	
Maps, & Josephus—ask of Rev. H. Venn	
1 small stout Black Tin Teakettle oval, small spout, 3 pints	2. 6
1 Com. Cloaks for Natives)	
stout Blue Cloth, fur Collars) not above 40/- ea.	2. 0. 0
	£46. 4. 0

Or in next order

wove Cotton Drawers—

Blk. Waistcoats—

Blk. Cler. Cap—light 7¼

Blk Trowsers

White P. Hdkfs

1 p. Shirts Calico

Rockg. Horse wh. will carry a boy price

1 doz. Twil. waistcoats @ 40/-

Pelisse Newd. Cad.

Carpet.

Copy Letter to Dixon March 7/47. Dupl. June 3/47

Ordered also Coat for Cole¹⁵⁰ 2 prs. Blk Trowsers, self of Berdoe June 3/47

150 A note signed “R.C.” is attached and reads, “Please order me a Codrington Coat with this alteration on the size of yours. Easier under the Arms. 1½ Inch longer in the Waist. 1½ Inch longer in the Cuffs.” Robert Cole was Colonial Chaplain at Wellington, 1841-1853: Colenso visited him there.

Date? to Dixon & Co.¹⁵¹

The order marked **A** will I hope be met with the balance of £50. Bill enclosed,

The order marked **B** is *conditional*; you will please to execute this *if* a friend of mine, Mr. O. Browne, (of St. Peter's Chambers, Cornhill,) should call upon you & pay you £23. 9. 9. on my a/c. I have written to him by this oppor. requesting him to do so. *But do not apply to him for the same.*—It is possible he may pay the amt. into the C.M.S., *if so*, you can receive the same from Rev H V upon my a/c.—

I wish to know the prices of a good stout rocking horse, wh. woud. carry a child of 4–8 yrs. of age.—of good strong plain Kidderm. or Brussels Carpet pr. yd—of the Cocoa-nut fib. matting., togr. with width, &c,—as I think this latter matg. peculiarly suited for N.Z.—and of a useful Magic Lantern with a variety of slidg. glasses of good *natural* (not *foolish comic*) figures. A few *good (design)* Scriptural Prints or Lithographs colored—6d, 8d or 1/- ea.—I am desirous of for Natives—say 20/- worth. I do not like those published by Roake & Varty—unless they have been *greatly improved*. In Teggs cat. of prints & drawgs for 1843, p.5. there are 13 mentd. @ 8/- pr doz. cold. & at p.2. 13 sorts heads of dogs coloured 4/- pr doz: are these good? If so, send them. I have more than once purchased Books of Tegg at the wholesale price.

Could you not procure me copies of the mags.—Blackwoods, Frazers, & others—and of the Qy. Review—3 or six months after pub. at a very low price? I have seen upwards of a 100 copies of Blkwood exposed for sale at Well. at 4d. ea. I shod. not object to 2nd. hand ones.—

Whenever a Paper of the day should contain any very *particular* news, always post me a no. via Wellington & chge. to my a/c.

Never send me any goods or Letters by any other route than Wellington.—Do not put up any parcel for me (when not sendg. direct) in any other person's goods than those of Archd. W.W. Mr. Hamlin or Mr Baker.

We were chgd. & made to pay for loss of anchor cable &c of "Madras"—wh. I think is unfair having already pd. Insurance to N.Z. The whole expenses paid *here* upon *that* lot of goods (includ. Customs, landing at W., reshippg. share for loss of anchor &c, freight to Ahuriri, &c) amontd. to upwards of £14.—and the few articles pr Gypsey will be about the same! do not in future divide an order—it is far better to wait a while.—

The goods pr. Gypsey were stored at Auckland thence shipped to Turanga—there stored at a whaler's—thence reshipped for this place & conveyed to Wellington thence back to Turanga & again stored &, at last, again shipped for Ahuriri! There is four times the risk bet. this & Wel. & six times bet. this & Auckland, that there is bet. either of those ports & England.

Whenr. you are abt. to send off goods—please let
CMS.
Sir JW Hooker
Mr. O Browne
Mr. S.M. Colenso, West Street, Penz.

151 ATL 80-038 George Petersen papers: Colenso's rough copy. This is an undated fragment, but would appear to have been written in late 1847.

Mr. N. Broughton, Tootg. Com.
know of yr. being abt. to do so.

When you send yr. goods—Just send the Inv. pr. post & enclose the Dup. Invoice either in the first or last no. of passage. This will be quan. suff. For Postages & inland Conveyances are always uncertain and *very heavy*—a Letter may cost me 4/- or more, & after all be useless. Some of yr. *old Letters* only came to hand last week.

I do not think the oiled Calico of much use.

We do not find any Catalogue, or List of any kind in our packages: I think such should be forwarded from the diff. Tradesmen with whom you deal. As there are sevl. useful things of wh. we are in total ignorance.

Some of my remarks are fully acquiesced in by Archdn. W.W. & others. Dean's Catalogue of Mills & Ironwork woud. be party. useful9.

I wrote to Mr. Coates (and subsg. to Rev. H. Venn) to procure & send me some Maps, a Copy of Josephus, &c.,—please ascertain if those have been sent or not. If not, & Mr. Venn will kindly adv. you the money, please to procure them as stated in my Letter to Mr. C. I have also written to Mr. Northover to procure & send me a few Books, &c,—please, enquire whether he recd. my Line & sent them on or not.

I have yet to thank you for the *Lot* of little Books so very kindly sent—and for the Newspapers—and, also, for your reg. & nicely packg. all the various parcels with wh. you have been troubled. Unfortunately I have no whites near me to whom your generous Don. of Loan Liby Books can be of service, and my own children are much too young to be at present benefitted thereby. I shall, howr. carefully store them—for future use.

[Ends here]

1847 July 9: to Te Hapuku¹⁵²

O sir, O Te Hapuku, greeting to thee.

Thy letter to me has indeed arrived, and thy words are good, that is, for thee to use. Notwithstanding, hear me; I utterly dislike such words from my very soul, because they are the very essence of falsehood. Thy letter narrowly escaped being torn to fragments, and thrown into the fire. Thou sayest, tomorrow thou art coming hither. Good; be it so; come; and may that be the last of our seeing each other until thou art altered.

From Colenso.

152 ATL qMS-0487; appendix to Journals. "This evening I received a terrible threatening letter from the principal Chief Te Hapuku—which I answered in a careless pithy manner. How every thing lowers about me!"

1847 August 12: to Alexander¹⁵³

Waitangi, August 12, 1847.

Dear Sir,

I can but suppose you to be, at least partly, prepared, for the tenor of this letter; any prefatory remarks will therefore be unnecessary, and, from my situation, I presume, an apology for this obtruding myself upon your notice, should be equally so.—

A short time ago the Natives of your neighbourhood informed me, that you were unlawfully cohabiting with Charlotte Tawi, a Native Communicant of our Church. I heard the information with astonishment, and rejected it as unworthy of notice.

Very recently, however, that report has been again brought me by several Christian Natives, and that, too, in such a manner as to oblige me to pay some attention to it. Being very busy myself, I sent Leonard, my principal N. Teacher, (and a near relation of Charlotte Tawi's,) to Ahuriri, to make enquiry upon the spot concerning the same. He visited your place, conversed with you, returned to the Station, and gave me an outline of what passed—and it is the conversation which you had together, your admissions to him, and the sad consequences attendant thereupon, if persisted in—not to mention, Mr Alexander, the respect which I have hitherto had (and would still have) for you, or the present agitated state of my mind upon your account—which induce me now to write to you upon this very painful subject.—

When I came first to these parts, C. Tawi was a Heathen girl. The Tribe, however, with whom she lived receiving Christian Instruction, Charlotte came under the same; in process of time she learned to read—became a Candidate for Baptism—passed through the different stages of Instruction—and, having been made fully acquainted with the rudiments of the Christian Religion, was Baptized, and at the last administration of the LORD'S Supper was admitted thereto. She was a young Native female over whom both myself and Mrs Colenso had ventured to rejoice in hope; she is now what you, Mr Alexander, have made her.

Of course Charlotte Tawi while she follows a course of open profligacy cannot be admitted to the Holy Table of the LORD.—And, as a consequence, all her abettors among her Tribe (being communicants) must also be debarred from the same high Christian privilege. Hence, I doubt not, some feeling the rod of discipline, will be led to cast off their Xn. profession, and thence the course downhill will be easy enough. You have already seen, how Paul Kaiwata, the former Teacher of that Tribe has fallen off; you also, the other day, saw, how sadly Paul Torotoro, the present Teacher, got ill used by the Heathen Natives of the place, in his attempting to reclaim Charlotte from the path of error; you must have plainly enough seen the fearful spirit which the Heathen Chiefs shewed to Leonard and his little Xn. band when they visited your place on their errand of mercy; and, further, you must have observed (if not already felt) the difference in the present behaviour of Charlotte's people, when contrasted with what it was when you first came among them. Let, then, the Natives know, that you, too, are becoming an enemy to Righteousness, and you will, I fear, certainly find that hitherto you knew them not; and, that the influence which their Missionary held over them,

and often used in your behalf (though unknown to you), was much greater than you had ever imagined. And then, Mr Alexander, if not before, the time of retribution may arrive, and you yourself may perhaps feel the storm which you have been the cause of.—

That I have been deceived in you, Sir, is alas! too true. But, I would fain indulge a hope,—when I reflect upon the general high tone of morality of your countrymen—upon your, doubtless, respectable family connexions (some of whom, too, I dare say, are worthy members of the Scottish Church)—and upon an idea which I must still cherish, namely, that you can not yet have been habituated to such ways. I would, I repeat, indulge a hope, that when you consider your error and its consequences, you will be led to do all in your power to escape therefrom.—For, while we are all sinners and daily sinning, to an ingenuous mind it is by far the greater evil to persist in continued delinquency than merely to fall into it.

I say nothing now, Mr. Alexander, respecting your own state of moral fault before GOD.—I would rather leave that for His Holy Spirit to work within you; for which salutary change I devoutly pray. Still, I should, perhaps, make a passing remark in reference to what you told Leonard, (if he understood you alright,) namely,—that though you and Charlotte Tawi had committed wrong, yet it was not in GOD'S sight so heinous as the sin of theft or lying, in fact of but little matter at all!! I would, however, charitably hope, that Leonard misunderstood you; although, as he says, this sophistry vexed him not a little, and opened his eyes immediately to see, that you knew nothing whatever of the spirit of Christianity. If, however, you did use such language, and so attempt to pervert a simple child in Christ from his right way, you must surely have forgotten that these are such solemn words of warnings, as,—“Be not deceived fornicators shall not inherit the kingdom of GOD;” and, “Whoremongers and adulterers GOD will judge?” There is now a poor young man dying at the Cape (Kidnapper, hard by, a young European at the Whaling Station there,) who once walked in that path, and who could tell you a harrowing tale of woe were you by his bed-side.

Conscience, that faithful monitor, must certainly have told you—that you have drawn aside one of Christ's little ones, one who did run well, from His flock—have caused the enemy and heathen to triumph—and given her Pastor and his few faithful Natives no little sorrow—and all this, too, in a still dark and guilty land, where the cause of Christ needs every human aid. In so doing you have placed yourself in decided and open opposition to your LORD, who, sooner or later, will avenge his injured cause, unless stayed by unified & hearty repentance. Oh! How much, how very much, would the report of this your error grieve your Christian relatives & friends at home, were they but to hear of the same.

I am now, and shall be for some days longer, closely engaged with my Teachers of the District, assembled for their annual course of Instruction, otherwise I should have visited Ahuriri ere this. I intend to go there as soon as I am at liberty, perhaps on some day in the coming week, when I hope to hear that both yourself and Charlotte Tawi, are, through the grace of GOD, in a better mind.—

Praying for which
I am, very sincerely yours
W. Colenso.

153 ATL qMS-0487; appendix to Journals.

1848 January 18: to Gunn¹⁵⁴

Ch. Miss. Station, nr. Cape Kidnappers,
Hawke's Bay, N. Zealand, January 18, 1848.

R.C. Gunn. Esq.,
&c, &c,
Launceston.

My dear Sir

An opportunity offering of sending Letters from this out-of-the-way place to the Capital (which is, indeed, a *rara avis*!) I eagerly embrace it, to tell you how very much I am indebted to you: and to thank you for all your kindnesses. Your two kind Letters—the one, dated 6 Jany./45 (!), the other, July 1/47—with the box of pamphlets, &c, arrived here *together* last month!!—The box, I believe, napped by the way both at Sydney and Wellington.—And even now I do not know whether you received a Letter from me containing a Bill of Ex. for £10.—which (to ensure as far as possible its reaching you) I sent in Duplicate,—the origl. in January, & the Duplicate in March of last year,—as you do not mention in your last of such having reached your hands.—

I am greatly obliged to you for the many *Serial* works with which you crammed the box; but, I fear, you have been depriving yourself to your own disadvantage. I have—even here—a tolerable share (comparatively speaking) of Botanical works, in D'Candolle's Prodr.—Kunth's Enumerat. Plant.—Brown's Prodr. Flora Nov. Holl.—Forster's Gen. Plant.—Don's Gen. Syst. of Bot.—most of Lindley's & Hooker's works,—Newman's Brit. Ferns, and the different Bot. periodicals of the day, together with what may be the last ed. of the Encyclop. Britannic. How I am to make a step towards the shadow of a return, I scarcely know at present. I shall, with pleasure, send you specimens of N.Z. plants, and some other things, but I shall first have, I fear, to test your patience largely. For, not to mention the *difficulty* of our speedily corresponding, &c., my time is so taken up that I am often at my wits' end, and always in arrears. And then, living as I do (for the present) in a Raupo (*typha*) house, which swarms with insects—such a devouring multitude!—I am necessitated to pack up every thing directly (after culling them for Hooker) as securely as possible, intending so to leave them until his work on the Flora of N.Z. shall be finished, when I hope once more “to break bulk”, put my Herbarium to rights, and remember my friends. By which time, too, it is possible, I shall be in a more permanent dwelling, where my treasures will be for a time rescued from the devastating multitude which now surrounds me.—

I mentioned (I think) in my former Letter, the immense size of my parish—larger, in fact, than many English Counties—and the consequently scattered state of my charge, so that my time is in great measure, consumed in painful & dangerous travelling. Last year, for instance, I was absent from home, journeying about, 205 days! One good, however—at least, for science—results therefrom; I am enabled to gather together much more of the flora of the Country for our friend, than he could ever possibly have received any other way—and thus I shall be able to do my share towards the making known the curious Botany of this hitherto little-known part of Colony. During the past year, in particular, I have made several pleasing discoveries.

Among my novelties are some ferns,—*Lomaria*, *Gleichenia*, *Lindsaea*, *Adiantum*, *Dicksonia*, *Cyathea*, *Cheilanthes*, ?*Caterach*, *Grammatis*, &c: some Taxaceous and Labiate plants: several Orchideous and other Monocotyledons: and not a few *Compositæ*, *Umbelliferae*, *Myrtaceæ*, and *Aralaceæ*: while the genera, *Coprosma*, *Veronica*, *Myosotis*, *Plantago*, *Epilobium*, *Pimelia*, *Loranthus*, *Dracophyllum*, *Cardamine*, *Clematis*, *Carmichaelia*, *Fuchsia*, *Oxalis*, *Acæna*, *Rubus*, *Viola*, *Suttonia*, *Gaultheria*, *Olea*, *Elæocarpus*, *Ranunculus*, and the very-Protean *Jungermannia* will receive great additions; as well as the Orders *Gramineæ*, *Cyperaceæ*, *Musci*, *Lichenes*, & *Algæ*. Among the many late novelties which highly delighted me—I may more particularly mention—a fine *Ranunculus*, having leaves 5–7 in. broad! a glorious plant from the top of the mountn. range, bearing a profuse golden panicle of 20 or more large flowers; a species widely distinct & far surpassing *R. nivicola*—an enormous *Aciphylla*, with flower-stalk 5 feet high, and leaves standing out all round like a coach-wheel of bayonets—a new & elegant *Forstera*—a minute *Astelia* very diverse from *AA. pumila*, *alpina*, and *linearis*—several species of *Veronica*, some highly curious—a 2nd sp. of *Chrysobactron* (young Hooker's new genus)—3 species, or more, of *Arthropodium*—a *Dacrydium*, an elegant looking *tree* in miniature, only 10–15 inches high and loaded with Cones—a second species of trailing moss-like growth—a *Phylloclades*—several species of *Carmichaelia*, highly interesting; one, (elegant & lissome!) a lovely drooping sp. full of leaf & fragrant flower; another, growing like a *Juncus*; another, a little stubborn thing, only an inch or so above the soil; another, with very long drooping filiform branches, &c.,—a curious ?*Euphrasia*, ditto *Ourisia*—most elegant *Loranthi*, 2 species, *now* the glory of the mountain forests—2 or 3 sp. of *Drosera*—ditto *Pterostylis*, 3 or 4 sp.—*Caladenia*—*Microtis*—*Cyrtostylis*—*Earina*—a handsome *Myrtus*—a little *Eryngo*—a *Melicytus*—some peculiar water-plants, one of which may prove a *Vallisneria*—a climbing *Fuchsia*—2 sp. of *Elæocarpi*—an *Androstoma*, &c, &c., and a lot of curious, and (to me) unique plants from the mountain summits, the affinities of which I can scarcely guess at. No doubt Hooker will do them all justice. I would they were all safe in his hands. I have—with incredible difficulty—got one box packed (since I wrote you last), and, when my Summer wanderings are over I hope to put up another which will certainly not yield the palm to any of those gone before.—

I have not seen any very late serials: no. 18 of Flora Antarct.—no. 54 of Lond. Journ. Bot., part 14 of Icones Plant.—& Part 3 of Sp. Filicum being my latest.—

Of course I cannot enter the lists against Sir William, respecting the N.Z. Ferns, some of which he has (I dare to think,) lumped together *sans ceremonie*. Black, Brown, and Blue, are, in common languages, widely different Colors, but it is easy enough to make them appear as one. *Hymenophyllum Frankliniarum* may be identical with *H. æruginosum*; and *H. atrovirens* may also be *H. crispatum*; but neither *H. ærug.* nor *H. crisp.* were in my list of N.Z. Filices. Again, if my other *Hymenophyllæ* are identical with those known N.Z. ones under which Sir William has ranked them, all I can say is, that they possess characters differing from those of the species with which they are now classed. *H. villosum*, I feel assured, will be altered upon reconsideration; if not, *HH. imbricatum* and *revolutum*; but, as you justly observe, the coming work of Hooker *fil.*, will clear up all.—

You mention having lately discovered (among other things) a new *Fagus*, at which I rejoice. I think there are several addl. species of that genus, yet to be brought to light from among the N.Z. ones. A monstrous ill-shapen Fungus, sometimes a yard broad! is found adhering under the upper branches of *F. fusca* at the more N. parts of the Island. I sent one to Hooker some years ago; the Natives use it for tinder, for which purpose it is excellent.

Had I the time & opportunity I once had, when residing in the Bay of Islands (though then my hands were full), I could, I think, scribble you a few interesting things for your "Journal". I had begun some papers, but, I suppose it is better to await Hooker's forthcoming work, ere venture to say much more upon the Botany of N. Zealand. I hope, however, to send you a *short* paper or two, soon.

I have been a dabbler in Conchology from the beginning of my residence in this Country; but I, last year, wrote to some eminent conchologists in England, through Hooker, offering my many *species novæ* for publication, &c, and now I await his reply. I have, I doubt not, many novelties—although we have scarcely any beautiful or elegant species—which I should like to make known. Some, which I gave away a few years ago, have been, I find (from Dieffenbach's work) surreptitiously published and that by those persons to whom I gave them! My shells, too, are like all my other Natural Treasures, obliged to be carefully packed up & nailed down to keep them from their enemies; most of them I have not seen for years, yet I go on collecting & adding to the stock.

We are now, *all hands*, laid up with *Influenza*—some severely. This epidemic visits us annually about the close of the year, and is by no means a welcome Christmas guest. And now, my dear Sir, I must close,

Believe me ever sincerely yours
William Colenso.

☞ I perceive, Hooker has already rescued *Hymenoph. minim.* from among *H. Tunbridgense*! vol.i. Flora Antarctica.

1848 January 19: to the Earl of Derby¹⁵⁵

Mission Station, near Cape Kidnapper,
Hawke's Bay. New Zealand, January 19, 1848.

My Lord,

At no period in my whole life have I ever felt so utterly inadequate to answering a letter, as at the present, when (an opportunity offering of sending letters to our Capital—a thing of rare occurrence) I endeavor to reply to your Lordship's very kind and condescending Letter of Feby. 11/47, which only reached me a short time ago.

It is not, however, from your Lordship's being an entire stranger to me—nor, from a person in a humble sphere of life like myself, having to address the head of the noble and ancient house of Stanley—that I now feel unequal to the task; but, because, while my own ardent inclination would willingly lead me to lay hold of every

opportunity with my utmost ability in carrying out your Lordship's requests, my peculiar situation, heavy charge, and increasing infirmities, I regret (*truly* regret) to say, too surely preclude my doing so.

And, in order, my Lord, that you may know somewhat of the truth of the foregoing sentence, it is necessary I should briefly explain myself for your Lordship's satisfaction.—

When, fourteen years ago, I came to N. Zealand, I landed fully determined to do all that I could towards elucidating the Natural Treasures of this (then) little-known Country—and particularly its Ornithology, Conchology, and *Flora*. I procured cages & pens, and, in course of time, obtained several living specimens of the genera *Falco*,¹ *Athene*,² *Nestor*,³ *Platycercus*,⁴ *Apteryx*,⁵ *Botaurus*,⁶ *Porphyrio*,⁷ *Aptenodytes*,⁸ *Larus*,⁹ *Anas*,¹⁰ *Columba*,¹¹ *Halcyon* or ? *Dacelo*,¹² *Philedon*,¹³ *Anthornis*,¹⁴ *Rhipidura*,¹⁵ *Miro*,¹⁶ *Alaudæ*,¹⁷ &c.,—but could never succeed—spite of all my attention—in keeping them alive. Or if I did, (as in the case with the genera *Nestor*, *Anas*, *Aptenodytes*, & *Larus*,) they invariably escaped. Disappointed, I, for a time, persevered; but the growing difficulty of getting specimens, and the increase of duties, caused me to abandon the attempt of procuring and keeping living specimens, and to direct my attention to the preserving the skins of any rare species I might happen to obtain. This, too, in process of time, I was obliged to give up, through the progressive accumulation of labour. And, finally, to confine myself to the collecting of plants and shells, which I still could do, even while travelling, without any ways interfering with my duties.—

But, my Lord, on my being stationed here, in this new and extensive field, larger than some English Counties, extending (by chart) over more than 2°. of lat., and that, too, without roads, far off from civilized man, and, consequently, from help, among a rude and scattered people, remnants of tribes of renown, who, but for my influence and vigilance (under GOD) would soon be at deadly feud among themselves, among whom I am not only in the capacity of Minister, but of Doctor, Schoolmaster, Magistrate, Peace-maker, &c., &c.,—added to which, the many onerous secular matters (the thousand-and-one things of daily occurrence, which must be done, and done by one's own self,) of which a person at home in our "Father's-land" can have little just conception—I soon found, that even that delightful pursuit—or rather, recreation—of Botany, which had grown with the years, must now be laid aside. The more so, too, from my increasing infirmities of severe Rheumatic affection, &c., which sometimes even kept me from my duty. Yet, on finding that my dear friend, Dr. Joseph Hooker, was engaged—and that under the auspices of H.M. Government—in publishing the *Flora* of these and the neighbouring Islands, I was once more stimulated beyond my strength, and have thus endeavored to send him *scraps* of all I could find in my lonely and often wanderings.— And to this, my Lord, if needed, Sir William Hooker could bear a kind of collateral testimony—namely, the *smallness* of the specimens which I have from time to time sent him, gathered in haste and pain, and (often) hunger, and made up when I ought to have been seeking rest in necessary sleep. During the Year just past, I have been absent from home travelling among the Natives of this District 205 days, leaving my wife and family with only the wild and uncivilized Natives around them, and that too in these stirring times.—

¹⁵⁵ Liverpool Records Office [910 DER (13) 1/37/1]

Pardon me, my Lord, if, what I have written should seem to savour of Egotism. For I have only attempted to explain the seeming paradox, why I should not readily do that which my heart so ardently desires.—

Should your Lordship, or any Scientific Nobleman, or Gentleman, send a person to N. Zealand as a Collector of Birds, &c.,—and should that person come into my District, or any where within reach of my local influence among the Natives, I scarcely need add, that the same should be fully exercised in his favor.—

Perhaps, my Lord, it will not be considered amiss, if I add a few remarks upon the Birds of this Country. As there are not, perhaps, many persons who have travelled more in this Island than myself, and, at the same time, paid some little observation to its Natural productions. I believe the Ornithology of N. Zealand (of the Northern Island at least) to be very poor—comparatively, and to contain but few genera and species in addition to those already known. (The whole number of species, as drawn up by Gray, in Dieffenbach's compilation, only amounting to 84.) The death-like silence of many of the N. Zealand forests and plains, strikes the most casual observer, and that too where Birds formerly existed in countless numbers. The *Rasorial*¹⁸ order was once well-represented, if not in species in number. The *Apterix*, once every-where common, furnished both food and clothing to the N.Z. chief; cloaks, made of its skins, were commonly worn. The *Coturnix* (*Novæ Zealandiæ*)¹⁹ covered the plains, and were often taken in numbers by the Natives with nets. The *Columba* (*argentea*)²⁰ abounded in every wood. And the all but extinct "*Kakapo*" (which I believe will be found to belong to this order, dwelt together in large flocks on the higher grounds amid the umbrageous seclusions of the *Fagus* forests. This latter bird, in particular, was preferred by the Natives, for its size, its fleshiness, its gregarious habits, and the ease with which it was captured. From 10 to 14, or more, they say, were generally found together in one "*umu*" (pit) the female bird could not fly, and the male could only flutter a little with his wings, and so manage to ascend the *Fagus* trees, the branches of which are low and spreading. I have never seen a *Kakapo*, yet it still exists, but is becoming very very scarce. My Natives once (when we were travelling across the Ruahine mountain chain) heard one, a cock bird, calling to its mate; and, subsequently, another has been heard in the woods near Taupo Lake. I have offered a great price for one (£4.), and if one could have been obtained, I think I should have had it: I still, however, live in hopes. The *Coturnix*, too, is nearly as scarce. Twice, and only twice, in all my wanderings during 14 years, have I seen this bird—and that in the same locality, the open grounds between Auckland and Kaipara. The *Apterix* is rather more plentiful, but, also, scarce. I saw *one*, a fortnight ago, in the secluded forests of the Ruahine range, and another answered its call. It ran like a hen when pursuing a flying insect. Unless there should prove to be a great disproportion between the sizes and colours of the male and female birds, there will, I think, be found 2 species of the *Apterix*; one, a smaller bird, and of a dirty dingy colour—of this species (or variety) I have only seen *one* specimen, which I (rather unwillingly) spared to the Colonial Treasurer in 1840.

Of *Incessores* we have to fear the speedy extinction of the elegant *Neomorpha* (*acutirostris et crassirostris*), the highly-prized "*Huia*" of the Natives. And that not only in consequence of the exterminating war carried on against it

by the Natives, who generally assemble every spring in order to take them for the sake of their skins and tail feathers which are greatly valued as hair ornaments, but because it has only been known to inhabit a very limited district. It is now but rarely seen; yet, on one occasion, when travelling along the shores of Palliser Bay, I saw 4, which a Native had just taken upon some *Karaka* (*Corynocarpus laevigata*) trees nearby. I had agreed with a Native to snare & take alive some for me, which he did (and which, in fact, has been often by them done), but they soon died in confinement. The Natives invariably speak of this bird, as *being very difficult to keep alive*. It flies but a short distance at a time, and is easily captured. Another large bird of this order, *Glaucopsis cinerea*, the "*kokako*" of the Natives, (by some called a "crow"! and by others placed in the *Corvidæ* Family—with which, surely, it has but little *Natural* affinity,) although at one time pretty generally distributed throughout the Island, bids fair to follow the fate of the others, and soon to become extinct. This bird is now very rarely to be met with.—One of its principal places of resort at present, is, in the dense sequestered woods of the Hikurangi, between Wangarei and the Bay of Islands. The two *Cuckoos*, (*Eudynamys* ———, ²¹ & *Cuculus nitens*,²²) being migratory, will, doubtless, share a better fate. I was not a little and agreeably surprised, when on the silent and snowy heights of the Ruahine a few days ago, to hear both these birds. The *Eudynamys*, is almost invariably heard uttering its peculiar cries at intervals throughout the night. The Parrot Family, (represented by the different species of the genera *Nestor*, *Platycercus*, and *Trichoglossus*.) are still abundant in certain woods, particularly the genus *Nestor*, of which there may be two species. Yet these, according to the observation of the older Natives, are as nothing compared with their former numbers. Both *Platycercus Novæ Zealandiæ*²³ and *Trichoglossus aurifrons*²⁴ are rather scarce in these parts, being much more plentiful at the North, in the woods in the neighbourhood of the Bay of Islands.—

The *Gallatorial* order has here several representatives; a few of which are, I think, still unknown to Science. Some of the species of the genus *Charadrius*²⁵ keep in dense flocks, and haunt the sands of the sea-shore. Others, (genera *Hæmatopus*,²⁶ and *Himantopus*,²⁷) lead a more solitary life, being rarely ever seen except in pairs; those of the former genus on the sea-coast; these of the latter on the open and stony banks of secluded rivers. In winter, however, the *Himantopus* leaves its seclusion, and boldly visits the habitation of man, seeking for works, &c., in every pool, even at one's very doors.—Wilson's description of the flying, cries, tumbling, &c., of the North American species, (*H. nigricollis*, Viell.)—*vide*, Am. Ornithology, vol. iii p.76,—agrees exactly with the habits and manners of the New Zealand bird. While others, such as *Botaurus australis*,²⁸ *Herodias Matook*,²⁹ &c., lead a peculiarly solitary life, never being seen even in pairs, and a single one but rarely. The *Herodias Matook* (*Matuku* of the New Zealanders), is to be found wading in retired estuaries and bays in the still waters of the sea. I have never heard its cry, and its flight and movements are so perfectly noiseless, that it might well serve for a personification of living Silence. The *Botaurus* (*Matukuhurepo* of the Natives), is, on the contrary, a noisy bird; and, like its British relative, generally to be found in secluded marshes, where it makes a loud booming noise throughout the night. A few years back I sent, through Sir W.J. Hooker, a specimen to the Linn. Soc., which I then considered to be another sp. of *Ardea* or *Botaurus*. It was very much smaller than the *B. australis*, to

which it is closely allied.³⁰ The *Porphyrio melanotus*,³¹ is much more common than any of the three last-mentioned genera. This bird, too, inhabits deep *typha* swamps, where, at intervals during both day and night, it makes a loud noise, hid from observation by the close bulrushes; but in the winter season, when the waters are high, it is driven from its shelter to the neighbouring shores, where from 6 to 10 are sometimes to be seen running about like poultry, their lovely purple necks glistening in the sun. As they are great thieves, being very eager after the Natives' Maize and Potatoes, they are often snared and eaten; their flesh is said to be dark and coarse. The *Ocydromus australis* (*Weka* of the Natives), another solitary bird of this order, is often heard uttering its loud and plaintive cries during the evening and night, in the sequestered mountain forests, and among the sedgy watercourses of the desolate and stony hills. The crop of one, which my dog caught on the Ruahine range, was filled with the fruit of Araliaceous plants—probably of *Panax simplex* and *P. arboretum*. Its flesh was coarse and stringy, and skin remarkably thick. An elegant, and, hitherto, unnoticed, species of *Fulica*, (*F. Novæ-Zelandiæ*),³² vide, Lond. Journ. Botany, vol. iii p.54,) is casually met with in the deep swamps, and, also, in the reedy sides of rivers. It is, however, a very shy creature. But of all the birds of this order inhabiting New Zealand, which have yet been detected, a species of *Ciconia*?³³ (or, perhaps, *Grus*?³⁴) is, by far, the most interesting. During my residence in these parts, I have, fortunately, seen 5 specimens—3 of which were in a state of enlarged captivity. I could not, however, get so near to them as I wished, as they (though tamed) kept in the marshes, or among the reeds in the muddy sides of rivers. The Native Chiefs prize them highly on account of their feathers, which they use to ornament their hair. For this purpose they pluck them twice a year. The bird is, when standing erect, upwards of 3 feet high; bill of a greenish-yellow colour, and much longer than its head, its whole plumage snowy-white; tail feathers rather long soft and drooping; legs of a greenish-grey hue. It is a shy retired bird, and feeds only on small fresh-water fishes. I offered £3. for one, to a poor Native who was in rags, but was refused! I have named it *Ciconia Novæ Zelandiæ*?³⁵ and yet hope to be able to secure a specimen. It is not, however, to be found wild in this locality. It is only now and then that one is to be seen flying. The Natives say it comes from the mountains in the Middle Island, which may, perhaps, be correct.

The *Natatorial* order,³⁶ has, doubtless, several genera in N. Zealand; particularly the family *Anatidæ*.³⁷ The *Casarca variegata*³⁸ is a splendid bird, and breeds upon the banks of retired rivers, but is very difficult to rear, invariably escaping, sooner or later, to its loved wilds.—The old birds are always to be found in pairs; often in lonely spots on the seashore. They are not found to the North of this Bay, and are not plentiful in the Middle Island. I have seen from 7 to 9 ducklings with the parent birds at one time. When surprised with their young, the old birds will immediately tumble about in a hundred different ways, to draw your attention from their brood; while the young are seeking to escape in all directions. But, if water is near, they invariably dive into it, and swim a long way beneath the surface, when, rising for a moment, they dive again, and so escape. There are, I think, a few curious members of this Family yet unknown to Science; among which are, the *Wio*?³⁹ (perhaps a species of *Rhyncaspis*) the *Papango*,⁴⁰ (*Querquedula*? sp.) and the *Pakaukuku*,⁴¹ small solitary birds, here and there to be met with upon the

streams of the mountain recesses far from the haunts of man. I have, also, seen, a graceful species of *Podiceps*?⁴² (not, however, *rufo-pectus*,⁴³) a large greyish bird with a fine crest.—A very fine species of *Aptenodytes* (widely different from *A. minor*,⁴⁴) as large as a goose, with crested eyebrows.⁴⁵ And some other small but curious species of *genera novæ*, or of genera unknown to me. All of which, however, are rare, and only very seldom to be met with. I doubt not but a few years will suffice to complete the Ornithological List of this Island, when the Families, *Laridæ*,⁴⁶ *Pelecanidæ*,⁴⁷ and *Procellariidæ*,⁴⁸ will be increased;—the only families, indeed, (with the exception of *Anatidæ*,³⁷ and, perhaps, *Muscicapidæ*,⁴⁹) which can, in my opinion, possible receive any great addition;—especially as we get to know more and more of the Southernmost shores of the Groupe.

I have not mentioned the *Raptorial* order, as in that we are particularly barren, both of genera and species; possessing only those 3 Birds already published, *Falco harpe*,⁵⁰ *F. brunnea*,⁵¹ and *Athene Novæ Zealandiæ*?⁵²—unless, as I suspect, there should prove to be another species of *Falco*, or, possibly, of *Nisus*,⁵³ or *Milvus*.⁵⁴

I have already, my Lord, spoken of the fast disappearing of nearly all of the genera of the *Rasorial* order from N. Zealand. Such, however, is not confined to that, but is equally applicable—in a greater or lesser degree—to every, order—excepting only a portion of the *Natatores*,—i.e. the Sea-birds. Those Families and genera which have a greater capacity for escaping from their many foes suffer least, and *vice versa*. Their foes are, Man, Dogs, Pigs, Cats, Rats, Hawks, and Owls; and last, though not least, the frequent and extensive fires of the Natives every spring season; through which leagues of forest, plain, and marsh, vegetation is annually consumed. The wild Pigs, Cats, Dogs, & Rats, (all introduced) devour the eggs and young brood in countless numbers every year. The natural prey of the Hawks & Owls, of this country, is small birds. And Man (the Native, man, woman, and child,) kills always and never spares all that comes within his reach, whether for food, for ornament, or for sheer sport. Hence it is that the *Rasorial* birds, in particular, are all but extinct. Wherever I have gone—whether on the uninhabited Islets off the shore, the unfrequented mountain's brow, the depths of the primæval forest, or the secluded morass—I have every where found numberless traces of those foreign pests, Rats & Cats. Nor is the mischief confined to the Class *Aves*: of the 3 terrestrial mammals which N. Zealand possessed, two have, I fear, been entirely lost—the Dog, and the Rat (?*Arvicola*, sp.). The Dog has been so blended and crossed with all kinds and varieties as no longer to be discriminated.—In fact, it is to be doubted, whether the Native Dog was ever truly indigenous, as I believe it was never, at any time, to be met with wild. The Rat, however, was truly indigenous, and existed in countless thousands, in every grassy plain and sedgy hill, dwelling peaceably with the *Coturnix* and *Apterix*. Now, however, not one is to be obtained, although I have often offered large reward for one. The third mammal, the Bat (perhaps 2, or more, species,) still exists, owing to its fortunately having wings, but is, also, become very scarce. The orders *Reptilia*, and *Mollusca*, have also suffered greatly: animals of the former order, of the *Saurian*?⁵⁵ Family, literally swarmed throughout the Island; but now many of the larger genera are all but extinct, through the continual inroads of their adversaries—Pigs & Cats. And of the *Mollusca*—particularly the Families *Pulmonæa*,⁵⁶ *Cardiaceæ*,⁵⁷ and

*Inclusa*⁵⁸—several genera are becoming exceedingly scarce. For, not only have the Land and Fresh-water species been diligently and constantly consumed, but daily and nightly upon the ebbing of every tide, droves of pigs frequent the sandy shores in search of their wonted supply. I have often been astonished by the sagacity displayed by this mammal, as well as at the strength of its jaws in crushing with ease the thickest shells, apparently quite free from pain or inconvenience in its tongue and mouth, although continually filled with sharp fragments and laminæ of broken shell.—So, again, in the Vegetable Kingdom; several *Orchideous* and other plants having edible roots, and which formerly grew so very plentifully as to afford food for man, are now all but entirely lost—their roots having been eagerly sought after by the innumerable herds of wild pigs which infest the whole extent of the Country; while other smaller plants, which grew upon the surface of the soil, have also, if not quite disappeared, become exceedingly scarce, through the continual uprooting of their foes, and the equally fatal fires of the Natives.—

Before, however, I conclude, I should, perhaps, mention some of the very great difficulties now attendant upon the procuring of a living specimen of any of the larger and more valued Birds.—For, my Lord, in addition to their extreme scarcity, and to the few which remain having retreated before their foes to the more inaccessible parts of the mountain forests, (where food for the Collector is not to be found,) is the very great disinclination of the older Natives—who alone know their haunts, their food, their calls which they imitate, and the manner of snaring them—to go forth upon such an errand—even when tempted with gold! It is not the apparent fruitlessness of the search, nor is it the smallness of the reward in their estimation, which keeps them inactive; but it is that peculiar apathetic state of mind—unknown to Englishmen, though common, I believe, to all savage Nations—which knowing no *present* want, cannot, by any means short of despotic, be roused to exertion. An *old* N. Zealander's wants are very few, and soon supplied, and then he sleeps in the sun. A *young* N. Zealander's wants are more—much more—but his disinclination to labour, and actual disability to those works in which his fathers excelled, is far greater than that of the older ones. So that, an *old* Native will not go because he has no present want to send him forth; and a *young* Native will not go, because he does not know *how* to go about it. Nor should the present (and, I greatly fear, prospective) unsettled state of the country, be altogether lost sight of; as I much doubt the safety of any one who should just now happen to be wandering about among the Tribes as a Collector.—

I have intimated, my Lord, the great difficulty which I have experienced in attempting to keep some of the N. Zealand birds—especially the genera *Philedon*, *Anthornis*, *Rhipidura*, *Miro*, *Platycercus*, *Columba*, *Botaurus*, &c.,—which, doubtless, in great measure was owing to my ignorance of their natural food, or inability to supply it when known. The genera, *Philedon*, *Anthornis*, and *Platycercus*, are, however, very subject to fits when in a state of confinement, which soon carry them off. And I have, also, been informed by the Natives, (who anciently delighted in taming all they could, taking no small pains therein,) that they could only succeed with a very few,—such as *Nestor*, *Larus*, *?Ciconia*, *Philedon*, and (rarely) *Apterix*. And, if I recollect aright, H.M.S. “Buffalo”, when here loading with spars, in 1834, took away a very great number of living Birds, especially of the genera *Philedon*,

and *Platycercus*, not one of which, (if my information is correct,) reached England alive—save *one* (*Philedon cincinnatus*,⁵⁹ Cuv.,) which happened to belong to one of the fore-castle-men!

And now, my Lord, in conclusion, allow me to say:—If I should be at any time so fortunate as to procure a *living* specimen of “*Kakapo*”, *Apterix*, *Coturnix*, or *?Ciconia*, or of any rare or curious birds, I will do my best to preserve and send it alive to your Lordship. And, should you wish to have the skins (roughly dried) of any species, I will strain every nerve to procure and send them to you. And, should I have a little more leisure by-and-bye, or should I be removed to a Station nearer woods and nearer to a Harbour—and health by graciously vouchsafed—I will then most cheerfully do my utmost to send to your Lordship a Case of living plants. The Country round about me here, for very many miles, being particularly barren in Trees, Shrubs, and Curious Plants.—

I trust your Lordship will graciously pardon this long and tedious, and (perhaps) uninteresting Letter—which I have written by snatches—and permit me to subscribe myself,

Your Lordship's
most obedient and Hble. Servt.,
William Colenso.

To

The Rt. Hon The
Earl of Derby,
Knowsley.

1848 March 15: to Grimstone¹⁵⁶

To,
J.E. Grimstone, Esqr.,
Acting Colonial Secretary,
Wellington.

Church Mission Station,
Ahuriri, Hawke's Bay,
March 15, 1848.

Sir,

1. I have to acknowledge the receipt of your Letter, dated “Wellington 13 Decr./47”; together with two enclosures, the one being a copy of a Letter from a Mr Nairne to Mr Fitzgerald, dated “Paiotumokai, Novr. 25/47”;—and the other a copy of a letter from Mr Fitzgerald to yourself dated “River Hutt, Decr. 4/47.”—Which, although duly forwarded by the Rev. R. Cole to Wairarapa, only reached me on Thursday night last (the 9th inst.) by Archdn. William Williams, who brought them thence. Our having been closely engaged with the Natives assembled here according to annual Custom to meet the Archdeacon and partake of the ordinances of the Church, will fully explain why I have not sooner replied thereto.

¹⁵⁶ ATL qMS-0492. This is Colenso's copy: the original is in the Archives, colonial Secretary's Inward Correspondence, 1848/675.

2. With many thanks to His Excellency for his kindness towards me, as expressed in “his belief, that the serious reflections cast upon my character in those Letters, must have arisen from some gross mistake”;—and as further shewn, in his being “most anxious to afford me the earliest opportunity of putting it in his power to deny that there is any Truth in the allegations against me”:

—I shall now proceed to notice them: premising it to be rather hard to have to answer Charges which appear to me to be of a very undefined and indistinct nature.

3. From Mr Nairne’s Letter to Mr. Fitzgerald, I gather, that he (Mr Nairne), or, rather they, Messrs Nairne and Deighton, upon “the word of one man,” (Ngatuere, a heathen chief,) charge me with:—

- i. Having forbidden the Natives returning to the work on the Public Road on pain of Excommunication.—
- ii. With having said,— “You Maories are fools for making a road for your own destruction.”—[2]
- iii. With having said— “Kei hoki koutou ki tena mahi he mahi whakaheke toto;”—which expression is said to have “particularly attracted and astonished” Messrs Nairne and Deighton; who, commenting thereupon go on to state, “Whatever Mr Colenso intended to impress upon their minds, *we are perfectly at a loss to find out*, but the impression it has left is, that it is a work which will cause their blood to be shed.”—
- iv. With having “addressed the Natives of the Kerekere village in a body to the same effect.”—
- v. With having “turned out of the Church several who had returned from the road”;— and,
- vi. With having “forbidden a man of the name of Tamati to attend Prayers, for an act of kindness on his part in going on a Sunday in search of two Europeans who were supposed to be in distress.”—

Here follow—first, the names of four Natives who were “questioned minutely by Messrs Nairne and Deighton to ascertain the actual facts of the case;”—and second, a certificate from Mr Deighton, who declares “the above statements are perfectly correct.”—

From Mr Fitzgerald’s Letter to yourself, enclosing Mr Nairne’s, I gather,—

- vii. (1st.) “That it is not the first time he” (Mr. F.) “had heard of my endeavours to prevent the Natives from working on the Road”:—and,
- viii. (2nd.) “To the carrying out of which by Native labour I am using every means in my power to obstruct.”—

4. In replying to, and completely refuting the whole of the eight foregoing extracted “allegations,” I see no difficulty whatever. And, inasmuch as I wish [3] to do so in a manner at once satisfactory to His Excellency, I will not occupy much time in stopping to notice,—

- 1st. The incongruity or the charges, if charges indeed they be any ways affecting me before a civil tribunal; for I have yet to learn, if, even supposing, I had been guilty of “excommunicating” the Natives of my parish, of “turning them out of the Church,” and of “forbidding a man to attend prayers for an act of kindness on his part,” as contained in charges i, and v, and vi, (setting aside the utter impossibility, not to say the ridiculousness, of such things being done by a Christian Missionary, he, too, being only in Deacon’s orders,) that I am therefore amenable to the civil Laws of my Country.— Nor,

- 2^{ndly}. The curious admission made by Messrs Nairne and Deighton, in charge iii, in which they give a Native sentence which “particularly attracted and astonished them,” and concerning which they “*questioned minutely the Natives*,” and yet (though doubtless vexed at their not succeeding in their errand) could come to no other conclusion than “whatever Mr Colenso intended to impress upon the Natives’ minds *we are perfectly at a loss to find out*”!!—

- Nor, 3^{dly}. The literal translation of those *ten* Native words, though evidently intended to be the ground of the Case, (and which, as they now stand, form *at best* an *imperfect* sentence, and said to be a portion of an *address* made to the Natives at Kerekere village, *is not* as they have given it,— “that it is a work which will cause their blood to be shed.”— Nor,

- 4^{thly}. The impression left upon the impartial reader’s mind from finding the only short and plain sentence of ten Native words mis-translated, certainly prepares him to admit the rather more than probable mis-translation [4] of the sentence (whatever it was) which has been rendered in charge ii, as meaning,— “You Maories are fools for making a road for your own destruction.” And this supposition receives no small confirmation from the fact, that “the late *Interpreter* to H.M.S. *Calliope*”, who accompanied Mr Nairne, (doubtless as Interpreter, seeing he has appended his “Certificate” to Mr Nairne’s Letter,) hesitates not in his zeal to attest to “the *whole* of the *statements* as being *perfectly correct*.”!! as well as from the circumstance of Messrs. Nairne and Deighton being “particularly *attracted* and astonished” by a plain sentence of ten words, (spoken, doubtless, quickly and energetically by the vivacious Chief Ngatuere,) which, after all their “minute questioning,” their united ability could not faithfully translate!— Nor,

- 5^{thly}. The certainty of my *never having once entered* the Kerekere village; not even knowing exactly where it is.— Nor,

- 6^{thly}. The assertion of Mr. Fitzgerald, that, “this is *not the first time he had heard* of my endeavours to *prevent* the Natives from working on the Road,”—when considered in connexion with the fact of Mr Fitzgerald having called upon me at Wellington Parsonage on the 2nd. of November last, (in what I supposed to be a friendly, candid, and gentlemanly way) when we had a *long* conversation *entirely concerning* the Road, yet not a syllable escaped him of that nature.— Nor,

- 7^{thly}. The assertion of Mr. Fitzgerald,— “That I am using every means in my power to obstruct the carrying out the road by Native labor,”—when taken in connexion with the fact, that he sought me at the Rev. R. Cole’s for no other purpose than to gain all the information he could respecting the state of the Country over which the Road was intended to be carried, and of the Native mind concerning the same, and the Native Tribes and Chiefs &c., &c.,—which information I certainly gave him to the best of my ability, not merely in words, but actually in [5] making little rough outline sketches of the different chains of hills, which I further endeavoured to illustrate by arranging Books upon Mr. Cole’s table.— Nor,

- 8^{thly}. The “principal Natives,” who are said to have “made the statements,” and whose names are given,

being not altogether unexceptionable characters. Two of them, Ngatuere and Te Rahui, being Heathen; and the chief, Ngatuere, particularly incensed against me just now, and, without doubt, his man, Te Rahui, sides with him.¹⁵⁷ Of the other two, one, Te Ropiha, had been very severely rebuked by me for his cruelty to a poor white man, whom he refused to put across the River Ruamahanga in his canoe, at a dangerous crossing place, and at a time of heavy flood in the winter—as well as for his attempt to ill-use Mr Tiffen: the other, Rawiri Te Raroa, I recollect little of, but I perceive his name is *not* in the list of Baptized Natives who received Instruction from me when last at Wairarapa, neither is it among those of upwards of 120 Communicants who there partook of the LORD’S Supper last month at the hands of the Archdeacon, and from which no Christian Native is ever excluded except for very gross misconduct.—

—But now, that matters are assuming a rather serious appearance, it will be needful for me to go back a little in time, and commence at the beginning; although, in so doing, I shall, I fear, be necessarily prolix.—

5. I was first stationed in this wild district, in 1844. In March, 1845, I visited Wairarapa. On arriving at Te Kopi, I found no small commotion among the Christian Natives, arising from the grossly profligate conduct of a white man called Te Kati (Scott), who, a very short time before, had called there some time about mid-day, and finding the Native Teachers and male Christian Natives absent, and observing a young woman named Caroline Makarau (the daughter of the principal Chief, Simon Peter Te Inaki), insisted upon having her. It was in vain that he was told, she was a Baptized girl, betrothed to William Thompson [6] Hiko, a Native Teacher, and about to be married to him, and it was equally in vain that she herself protested against such an act, he finally succeeded with the heathen relations of the poor girl, and for three shillings got her conveyed into and shut up with him in a hut for a short time, when, having accomplished his vile purpose, he left the village. Soon after, I arrived at Te Kopi, and married Caroline to W. Thompson, joining several others at the same time. After the ceremony was over, I addressed the newly married couples, praising those who had patiently waited my coming, and, touching upon Caroline’s conduct, told her, I could not praise her: she mourned so much over her state, which she now saw to be a degraded one, that, in a little while after, I heard she was “dead in consequence of the evil done to her by Te Kati.” This man is, (I believe, if I am correctly informed,) an overseer upon the Road, (or, at all events, somehow connected with the Natives) in the Government employ.—And, if he should prove to be *the David Scott* whom I once knew in the Bay of Islands, and who formerly resided in the Thames and at Tauranga in the Bay of Plenty, a more immoral person could scarcely, I believe, be found in the three Islands of New Zealand.—

6. In November, in the same year, I again visited Wairarapa; when I heard from the Native Chiefs and Teachers, that the white Residents about them had often greatly abused me, assuring them, that if I went to Wellington I should be cast into gaol! I asked, what for?—but they could not inform me. I went on to Wellington, where I heard, that certain heavy general complaints had been made against me, by the “Squatters” at Wairarapa, and

which some of my friends wished me to notice; but, as I could not particularize any thing, and had ever been accustomed to such ill treatment during the many years of my itinerating in New Zealand, I declined doing so. In dining, however, at Mr. St. Hill’s, the Archdeacon of [7] Waiapu, and Major Richmond being also present—His Honor asked me, whether I had lately received a Letter from him; I replied in the negative. On which he added, “I have been applied to by a person from Wairarapa, who appeared to have some charge against you to this effect—namely that you had been inciting the Natives there to rise and to drive all the Settlers into the Sea”!! I told his Honor, that he might rely upon my solemn word that the allegation was false. He replied, that he did not believe it, yet he had written to me; and that now he wished me to aid in keeping the peace between the Natives and the Squatters; which I promised to do. (How faithfully I have kept my word, let some of the Wairarapa and Coast Settlers answer.) I requested the name of the person who had applied to him; this, the Major said, he had forgotten; but would send me. (Which, however, with his Honor’s letter, I never received.) The next day I related to the Archdeacon our conversation, observing, “now that his Honor has been applied to, this must not rest here; I, therefore, propose, as we are returning together by the Coast to our Stations, to call upon those whites residing in the lower part of the valley of Wairarapa, and hear what they have to say”.—To this the Archdeacon agreed. Before, however, we could leave Wellington, the Victoria brig arrived, having the Bishop on board, from whom we learned his intention of almost directly proceeding up the Eastern Coast to hold Confirmations at all the Mission Stations. Hence we had to make as much haste as possible to get back to our respective Stations, so as to be in readiness for the Bishop’s arrival; and, consequently, were obliged to relinquish our intention of calling upon the Settlers in Wairarapa valley; notwithstanding, we hoped to visit Mr. Russell’s Station, being near the sea, but were so very late and so very tired in toiling across the heavy sands of Palliser Bay as to be obliged to give up that also, intending, however, to make a visit on the morrow from Te Kopi; which again, the heavy Southerly gale of wind and rain which that night set in, ultimately caused us to abandon. [8] While here at Te Kopi, confined in our tents, several Christian Natives of good character & standing came voluntarily forward to tell me what vile language had been used by some of the whites of the valley (the names of seven were particularly mentioned,) concerning the Holy Sacrament of the LORD’S Supper, and myself, *since* I had lately passed on towards Wellington (one of the objects I had in view in going to Wellington being, to fetch either the Rev. R. Cole, or the Archdeacon, to administer the Holy Communion at this place). Some of those expressions I took down,¹⁵⁸ before the Archdeacon, and left, with a Letter, for the Bishop,¹⁵⁹ who was soon to be there. To the Natives of Te Kopi, the Holy Communion had been blasphemously and degradingly called a *stercus*, &c., &c.,—and that (among others) by James Grindell, now an overseer upon the Public Road. Being obliged to hasten our departure, I wrote a letter to Mr. Russell.¹⁶⁰ And, soon after, the Bishop arriving at Te Kopi, and receiving my Letter, and Enclosures, determined to proceed up the valley, (instead of by the Coast as he had

158 WC: See, Enclos. No.1.

159 WC: See, Enclos. No.2.

160 WC: See, Enclos. No.3.

157 WC: See p.14, par. 11, seq.—

intended,) and to call upon every Settler. He did so; and, on his arrival here, had nothing to charge me with.

7. In March, 1846, I again visited Wairarapa, and, in fulfilling my promise made in my letter to Mr. Russell, called upon the different Settlers residing there, and among the rest, upon James Grindell. He told me plainly, he believed in no religion, and disliked all; allowing that he very often spoke ill of the Christian Religion and of the Missionaries to the Natives; and often made use of Native maledictions to them, in order to vex them, because they often vexed him. And, on my pressing him for a reason, why he was so very bitter against Missionaries, and among others myself; who was an entire stranger to him and never did him wrong,—he replied, “one reason why I am so against the Missionaries is, because before these wretches” (the Natives) “took to Psalm-singing I could get a woman and a pig in every village; but now I can get neither.” On leaving him, I considered it my duty to tell the Christian Natives, to have as little to do with him as possible. It was during this visit, and while at Pitoone, [9] that I heard of the *positive* swearing of (I believe) *six whites* to the identity of 2 prisoners, then confined on board of H.M. Steamer, who were said to have been engaged in plundering up the Hutt. These poor fellows finding themselves to be falsely accused and closely incarcerated, sworn to by so many whites, and not a soul appearing on their behalf, with, at least, a long winter’s durance within the brick walls of the gaol before their trial could come on, had determined to make away with themselves. I sent them word not to do so, and, being forcibly struck with the clearness of the *alibi* which the Pitoone Natives could prove; and also the *state of feeling* among that Tribe, at what they considered their unjust imprisonment, I wrote to the sherriff, Mr. St. Hill, through the Rev. O. Hadfield;—and the prisoners were forthwith tried and *acquitted*. And, doubtless, Dr. Fitzgerald recollects the vile reports which were industriously circulated at this time *by whites* among the Natives at Kaiwarawara to the effect, that the Governor’s visit to Porirua was to seize and hang up Te Rauparaha and Te Rangihaeata, which news was immediately carried thither, and reached those Chiefs before the Governor could get there in the Steamer; hence it was that His Excellency’s visit proved altogether fruitless.

8. It was in September, 1846, that I next visited Wairarapa. Some Christian Natives who had come on with the Rev. R. Cole, from Port Nicholson, applied to be permitted to partake with us of the LORD’S Supper at Te Kopi; among whom was Zachariah, the Native Teacher at Te Aro; who, with the others, in the preparatory examination, related with evident disgust the manner in which they had been treated by the Military when they were acting in concert with them against Te Rangihaeata and his party,—stating, that every effort was made to cause them to sin, through tempting them with ardent spirits, &c., and that their prayers, &c., had been continually mocked, insomuch, that “no Native who cares for himself will ever join the soldiers again.” This sentiment I have subsequently often heard expressed by thinking Natives, [10] who had been in the Government employ. It was also during this visit, and while sojourning at Wairarapa, that a young Chief—formerly a Communicant and one of my first-class men, but now (thanks to the wretched Europeans with whom he has associated!) a confirmed Rum-drinker—came to my tent, and producing a paper, begged me to look at it. I did so, and when I found it was a deed of land, I soon returned it. He strove with me a long while to look over it, and give my

opinion thereupon; saying, it had been given him by the *pakeha* who drew it up to sign, and he had done so, and was now about to return it. Consenting at last to look over it, I found several long erasures here and there in the agreement, and 4 or 5 large Blanks left in the body of the Instrument! and yet the Chief had attached his name thereunto, and was now on his way to return it!!—

9. My next visit to Wairarapa was in April 1847;—at the examination of the Communicants at Te Kopi. I found some who had hitherto run well missing. On enquiry, I found, that the Races at Wellington had drawn them aside; once *there* they soon became intoxicated, and that boundary passed all was easy. They had even become pimps and panders in the lowest sense of the word, to gain a few shillings at the time of the “Annual Festivities”! It was shortly after my return to my Station from this visit that a false, malicious, and (to the Natives) startling report was widely and industriously circulated. The substance of which was, that I had gone up the Hutt, and into the house of some white man engaged upon the Road, that there I Baptized his two Children, and then had criminal intercourse with his wife! Foolish as this report may *now* appear to be, it made no small stir at the time; some of the weaker-minded Natives believing it, were led thereby to renounce their profession of Christianity; while the principal Chiefs in this neighbourhood assembling together, called for a “Committee” to enquire into the matter. Fortunately for them my baggage bearers testified that I had never been up the Hutt, and [11] a party of Native Teachers arriving from Wairarapa and the Coast in July to my annual Teachers’ School, brought Letters and Witnesses to prove, that the notorious James Grindell had been the author of the fabrication. And that he himself had first mentioned it in the lower Wairarapa, to Richard Taki and William Thompson Hiko, Native Teachers there, because none of their young men would consent to go with him to the Road. In writing subsequently to Campbell Hawea, the Native Teacher at Te Kaikokirikiri, (a village at the head of the Wairarapa valley,) I said,—“Try to keep your people quiet; tell them to take no notice of any such reports concerning me until they can be proved. The author is now known to you, and unless he is careful he may yet mourn his conduct.”—On the receipt of my letter Campbell wrote to James Grindell, who, of course, treated his letter with the greatest contumely; but, by-and-bye, (during my last visit to Wairarapa in October last,) while at Pahawa, a village about 2 days’ journey N. from Cape Palliser, I received a letter from James Grindell, through the aforesaid Native Teacher.¹⁶¹ I may here, also, mention, that a fortnight previous, when at Waimarama, (a village a few miles S. of Cape Kidnapper,) a respectable looking white man came to my tent, and said,—that he had lately come from the Government Road, where he had been employed (I think as overseer), that he wished me, not to take any notice of a report which had been widely circulated against my character, and which had originated there among James Grindell and others, “for every body knows Grindell”—That it was raised to tease the Natives, and that he was sorry to say, it was too common a practice on that Road to tease them in that manner. I did not learn the name of my Informant at the time, for I was not well, reclining on the fern in my tent, but I have since had reason to believe his name is *Strutt*. On reaching Wellington I mentioned the manner in which I had been traduced to my friends, and

161 WC: See, Enclos. No.4.

showed them Grindell's letter, and the Rev. O. Hadfield took Mr. St. Hill's advice upon the matter; but being myself most unwilling to prosecute it went no further. I should [12] have stated, that Grindell's letter was brought me by Zachariah Te Pukenui, a tried and faithful Christian Chief and Native Teacher from Te Kaikokirikiri; who also told me of the stir which was then among them; in consequence of Barnabas Tamaitakahia (who had been at work upon the Public Road) having given way to the incessant worrying demand of James Grindell, the white overseer over them, to bring him the little daughter of Nicodemus and Mary Tia, he (Barnabas) being the Child's uncle; for which purpose James Grindell had given to Barnabas a piece of gown-print as a payment to Mary to coax her into compliance, and to send the child, who had cried a great deal and was unwilling to go. Zachariah, also, told me much more of a similar nature which had been done upon the Public Road.—And how that he, and other Chiefs did all they could to keep their young men from going there and thus destroying themselves.

10. On leaving Wellington for Pitoone, on Saturday the 30th. October last, there to spend the Sunday, (notice having been given to the different parties of Natives at work on the Road up the Hutt,) I met large numbers of young Natives coming in to the Town from the Road, several of whom had young women with them. A few of them accosted me in a civil manner; others, most rudely and indecently (and not at all after the manner of even the Heathen New Zealander,) bawled out, as they approached,—“*Kahore he Hapa?*” (meaning, Is there not to be an administration of the LORD's Supper?); while others, on seeing me, struck-up a portion of some Native Song; and not a few shewed sufficiently, by their lascivious looks and gestures, what they were bent upon. Arriving at Pitoone, Henry Te Ware, the Native Teacher, told me, with evident chagrin, that he had been striving with several of the Natives of Ngatitoo and Ngatiraukawa (who had just passed through his village on their way from the Road to Town with their female relations,—“their wives, their sisters and daughters,”—there to prostitute them to the Soldiers and Shipping as usual upon the Saturday and Sunday, and thence to return again to their work on the Road [13] on the following day,) to leave off their abominable traffic, or, if not abandon it fully, at least to give up the going through his village upon such errands, but that they would not listen to him. He, also, told me, (among other mournful news,) that he had received a letter from “Te Teira, Kai Wakawa,” (a native who had been made an “Assessor,”) in which he wished Henry to do as he had done, and to cast aside Receiving the Sacrament, as now that he was become a Kai Wakawa he should not do so any more. I found that a good number had collected together at Pitoone, many, I fear, from novelty, for, on Sunday morning before Service, such was the great confusion (worse than I had ever seen in any Heathen village upon that day,) singing songs, tossing up 5 stones, riding horses, shouting and quarrelling, &c.,—that I was obliged to leave my tent and go about among them, and ask, whether they had not forgotten the day? You may better Sir, guess, than I describe my feelings. I trust I preached faithfully before them, when I warned them to the best of my power, of the fatal end of those who pursued such paths. Of course my Sermon was not relished, and several rose and left the Chapel, muttering as they went; and not half of those who were present in the morning remained for Afternoon Service. On the following Thursday (Novr. 4) I left Pitoone, and proceeded up the Hutt. In passing the

parties at work, some few hailed me in their usual cheerful manner; others preserved a dogged silence; others struck up some Native songs of more than doubtful meaning; other unceremoniously said, “Go back to your place and remain there”; while others, who had their faces marked with soot (which is a sign too well understood by all who know the New Zealander to be mistaken,) commenced the lewd words which accompany their Heathen obscene dances. To some, who seemed rather more quiet than the others, I said, “Be strong, my boys, to your work, and make a good road for us, [14] but remember the ivth. Commandment;” when they replied,—“Pooh! that is cast off long ago.” To some other few, I said, “Don't forget the Laws of GOD.” On which they replied, “We knew them once, we know them not now.” Oh! how I grieved for those poor Natives, as I travelled over the Road which they had made; yet, blessing GOD withal, that I had yet a better and a brighter prospect among the uncivilized and rude Tribes of Hawke's Bay! I may mention here, that I had heard, both in Wellington and at Pitoone, that the greater number of those Natives who had left the upper Hutt, would not return again to the Road.

11. In the course of the following week I arrived at Huaangaru, where were a number of Natives, gathered together awaiting my arrival. Here I learned, that “Ngatuere” had set up an Iron pot for me at Otaraia, one of his villages a little lower down; and had gone, boiling with rage, to Te Kaikokirikiri, the village at the head of the valley, to set up another for the same purpose! These horrid imprecations (being amongst the most direful that can be uttered to a Native ear, and always unpardonable,) were vowed, because I had dared to marry a young Couple at Te Kopi, he having long striven, but in vain, to get the woman to become his wife; his first wife being still alive and with him.—Leaving Huaangaru I called at Te Ahiaaruhe, Messrs. Northwood and Tiffen's Station. During my short stay, Mr. Tiffen asked me, if I had received a Letter from James Grindell, relating to that shameful report he had circulated. I said, I had: on which Mr. Tiffen rejoined,—“When I heard of it (the report,) I sought for and saw Grindell, and told him, if you do not make an ample apology to Mr. Colenso, I will report your conduct to the Governor, for it is really too bad.” I suppose, therefore, the Letter which he sent me, is to be attributed to Mr. Tiffen's kind and seasonable remark.

12. Leaving Te Ahiaaruhe I passed on to Hurunuiorangi, a small village about 3 miles further up [15] the valley. Evening Service over, I heard that Barnabas Tamaitakahia was here, so sending for him, and finding he had still the print in his possession, I gave him a severe lecturing before all the Natives; in which, without doubt, I spared not to lash the enormities committed upon the Road. I exhorted him, to take back immediately to those base whites who had employed him upon such an errand, the wages of iniquity, the price of blood, and to save the soul and body of his little niece from ruin. He sat very quietly, and said not a word during the whole night. The next day, on my arriving at Te Kaikokirikiri, I found a large party assembled, among whom were “Ngatuere” and his adherents. With “Ngatuere” I declined shaking hands until he shall have made a suitable apology for his conduct. In the evening, after Service, Campbell, the Native Teacher, came as usual with his Book of School attendance, and List of Transgressors, expressing his great grief at having such a Black catalogue, “all,” he said, “to be put down to the working on the Road.” Among those who had been upon the Road, some were marked as Sabbath-breakers, their employment upon that day being

Pigeon-shooting, Pig-hunting; Clothes-washing, Fetching and Carrying Loads, &c.; others, were marked as Rum-drinkers, Gamblers, Singers of obscene songs, and Dancers and Performers of filthy and lewd heathen games and dances, others, as having either been induced to prostitute their wives, or their wives having prostituted themselves, and others as having promised to procure girls from among their relations for the white men working upon the Road.—But all were convicted of the crimes laid against them upon the clearest possible evidence—their own admission.—As a first step, the next day, I refused at this time to receive into my Class of Candidates for Baptism those Catechumens who had not observed the Rules stuck up on a pillar in their Chapel, one of which is, “To be diligent in [16] attending Public Worship and school during their time of their probation.” Which Ngatuere’s Heathen party hearing, they soon concluded to withdraw and to return to their homes, several Baptized Natives of that Tribe going with them; they left, too, on the Saturday, choosing rather to spend the Sunday any where on the way than with me at the village. Those Baptized Natives who left, had only been Baptized by me at my last visit, after 2 years and upwards steady probation, during which time they had clung close to me, and had paid no little attention to my Instruction, which they then seemed to value. Whence, then, was this wonderful change? Now, too, that they were within the pale of the Church? Why, almost directly after they had been Baptized they went upon the Road,—led, undoubtedly, by a very different Spirit from Him who led their great exemplar from the Waters of Baptism.—But to return:—I also gave out that I was ashamed and grieved at the conduct of several of the Baptized party, and that I should not shake hands with them unless they gave some evident signs of amendment. After Divine Service on Sunday Morning, I heard, that Thomas Vyvyan Te Kokore, (“*Tamati*,” I presume,) Henry Mahukihuki, and William Thompson Kauhanga, who had been at work on the Road, and whose names had been particularly noticed in the Native Teacher’s Memorandum of Transgressions, were sorry for their errors and wished to speak with me; (they had attended every Service since I arrived, six in number,) so, assembling them in the Chapel together with the Native Teacher, I conversed with them. “They appeared to be now sorry for their evil deeds,¹⁶² and readily promised not to do so again. I carefully shewed them (as I had always done) that it was not the mere work of road-making, of itself a good employment, but the [17] abominations which were there committed against which I waged war. But these persons needed not to be told this; their consciences plainly told them they had been doing wrong, and their recital was sickening indeed. W.T. Kauhanga, and H. Mahukihuki, had taken their wives there with them, both of whom had been often prostituted. And now W.T. Kauhanga’s wife (late a Candidate for Baptism,) says,—“She will not promise not to return thither *alone* without her husband! Returning to my tent, I sent for Nicodemus and Mary Tia, (whose only little daughter, a child of about ten years of age, had been sold by her uncle Barnabas to the celebrated J. Grindell, at work upon the Public Road, for a few yards of Print-Cotton!) and remonstrated with them upon the atrocity of such conduct. Nicodemus, who seemed to feel my words, laid the blame upon his wife, who, it appeared, had freely consented, and was still willing!—notwithstanding the entreaties and tears of the child, who stood weeping by,—“not to be sold like a pig, for such a vile purpose.” They

162 WC: Extracted *verbatim* from Journal written at the time.

asked me, what they should do with the Cotton-print? I replied, Had such a thing been sent to a poor yet virtuous white man for such a purpose, he would indignantly burn it as the price of blood; but you had better, perhaps, return it to the fellow who sent it. But have nothing to do with him, nor with his rewards; such are payments for the blood of your Children, &c. I spent some time in talking to them, though in great pain from Rheumatism, and hope my labor will not have been in vain. I have no reason to believe that a single Baptized Native, being in the village, absented himself from Divine Service, *certainly not at my request. Never having at any time dared to take upon me such an assumption of power.* Much grieved in spirit to see the sad havoc made among this once promising portion of my field of labor, [18] through their being induced to go to work upon the Public Road,—where many of them have indeed made shipwreck both of faith and of a good conscience”!

13. In addition to the foregoing, I avail myself of the permission kindly granted me by the Archdeacon of the District, to copy from a Letter of his to the Rev. O. Hadfield,¹⁶³ the result of his enquiries at Wairarapa; which, most opportunely for me, he last month made in his journey hither, in consequence of the reports he had heard at Wellington against me.—

14. And now, Sir, in concluding this plain, and, it may be somewhat tedious, recital of *facts*—which, nevertheless, I can but hope will prove both elucidatory and satisfactory, as far as my proceedings are concerned, to the Lieutenant Governor—I beg, with every respect for His Excellency, most distinctly, fearlessly, and unflinchingly, to deny the truth of all and every of those allegations which have been brought forward against me by Messrs. Fitzgerald, Nairne, & Deighton. *To me, the aim* of these two latter persons is plain enough: the all but systematic opposition which I, in the execution of my duty, have endured now nearly four years, (and of which not a tithe has been told,) from licentious Europeans, Infidels and Papists,¹⁶⁴ (and which the few facts written on these sheets evidently enough shew,)—*firstly*, against the Faith, the Holy Sacraments, and my private character—*secondly*, against both my moral, and public character, before the Natives—and, now, *thirdly*, against my public character before the Government—all having but *one aim*, the separating me from my charge, if not physically (which has been loudly and often vaunted), at least morally—and against which opposition no man could have stood unsupported by God and a good Conscience; such inveterate hostility [19] too clearly shews the Author, and the *animus* of his agents. In charity, however, I would hope, that Mr. Fitzgerald’s zeal for the Service in which he is engaged, (coupled with, perhaps, an easy unsuspecting disposition,) has led him to give too implicit confidence to the reports of designing and evil-disposed persons, both among Whites and Natives, whom he may unwittingly have about him.—

15. I yet feel inclined, Sir, to make a few observations upon the Charge ii.—“You Maories are fools for making a road for your own destruction.” And this, I am led to do, in hopes of throwing a little additional light upon the matter,

163 WC: See, Enclosure, No.5.

164 WC: Note. I have used the word “Papist” here purposely, to shew another source (or, rather, channel) of opposition, occasioned by some P. Priest residing at Wellington; who, not content with telling the Natives of Wairarapa that *I was mad!* actually wrote a letter to the Bishop of New Zealand against me!!

as well as the more fully to inform His Excellency of my mode of acting.—Although it may be quite unnecessary for me to remark, that the Natives need not anyone to tell them the *uses* of the Road; it being notorious, that, (always shrewd and apprehensive even to a proverb,) they had, long before any of the Government Roads were even so much as commenced, not only freely discussed the matter over in their own assemblies after their own fashion, but had spoken very strongly indeed upon the subject. Who has not heard of the speech made by one of the principal Chiefs of Waikato, now some years ago—in which he compared the then contemplated Great Road running throughout the Island to the back-bone of an animal, from which, he said, smaller ones will, if we allow this proceeding, be made, at the Governor's pleasure, like ribs to all our villages, by which means he can easily and at any time cut us all off?—I venture to think, Sir, that it should not be altogether lost sight of, that the Natives still look up to their Missionaries as their "*Matuas*" (advisers, strengtheners, peacemakers, &c. among themselves,) hence they have necessarily very many secular things of an unpleasant nature to attend to "for peace-sake" when travelling among them. It is at such times that they have many differences to settle, which but for their doing, would often end in bloodshed. At such times, too, when [20] the Chiefs are assembled together, many Speeches are made and important questions asked, respecting the Land, the Roads, the Military, the Governor, the Queen, the probable destiny of the Natives, &c. &c.;—all, more or less, of a high nature, and to which definite answers are required. As a rule, *I always endeavour to elude such questions*, and have sometimes succeeded; but have ever found that *the safer way is to tell the plain truth*, without circumlocution, or twisting, or hiding, which, when obliged to speak, I invariably aim to do *basing the same upon first principles*. For instance:—I have, without doubt, often been asked, such a question as,—"What of this Road?" If I should reply—"What is that Road to me that I should talk about it?"—or, "I have no time to talk about the Road;" or, "Let us turn to something more immediately concerning ourselves";—they would immediately say, "There is evil towards us intended by this Road, and you know it and therefore it is that you hide it";—and so saying they would both *think* and talk among themselves the more, and certainly not in favour of either the Road or the Missionary. And not only so, but once lose their confidence in small secular matters, and your usefulness is in a manner gone in the higher and more momentous matters of the soul. So that when questioned by the Native Chiefs upon the Road, I should perhaps reply,—"For your benefit, undoubtedly,—your pigs, &c., will get easily to market." They would immediately rejoin,—"Yes, but we don't need such a road for such a purpose, *nor is it made for us*;—will not the Soldiers come over it with their big guns?" and what should I answer?—I should, perhaps, follow "*the safer way*," and say, "If you are very disobedient and break the Laws, such a use will undoubtedly be made of the Road; but, listen, turn to your Book, read,—"*Rulers are not a terror to good works but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? Do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same. But if thou do that which is evil be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain.*" Such an answer may possibly be wrested, by designing [21] and interested men, ignorant of the Native language, to mean, "You Maories are fools for making a road for your own destruction;"—at all events, such persons would, without doubt, be "perfectly at a loss to find out" its true meaning. But, could a Christian

Minister (whose lips should pre-eminently keep the truth, and to whom in a most especial manner, his flock looks up as their "*Matua*,") answer in any other way? And, perhaps, in addition I might also say, to quiet their fears,—"*The Queen's word is sacred; the Faith of the English Nation is also sacred, and that has been pledged to you all in the Treaty signed and sealed at Waitangi.*"—And this, Sir, is what I have called "*basing my answers upon first principles*,"—the Word of GOD, and the word of the British Nation.

16. And here I may, also, remark, that if the Natives needed any Information relative to the purpose and use of the Government Roads, the Public Newspapers, every where circulated and often (as I know) freely translated by many Whites residing among the Natives, would have been more than sufficient for that end. For, curiously enough, a *Wellington Paper*, which came to hand with your Letter, (dated, January 15/48,) has the following words:—"It is reported that the works on the Porirua and Hutt Roads, which have been for some time almost suspended, are by the direction of the Governor-in-Chief to be immediately resumed with fresh vigour. — — — — It is absolutely necessary on grounds of public policy and economy that these works should be proceeded with as fast as possible. *They are Military Roads undertaken for the protection of the Settlement* and approved of by the Colonial Minister; their execution is consequently not a question of expense but of time, not how much they will cost but how soon, by means of these Roads, the force stationed in this Settlement can be rendered most efficient for its defence, and the danger of fresh disturbances in this Settlement [22] lessened by the increased facilities of conveying Stores and provisions to the force engaged in suppressing them." &c. &c. Now, only let those words be translated into the Native Language (and I do not quote them as being the *strongest* of the kind I have met with,) and given to the Natives to meditate upon, (with their well-knowing already the meaning of the adjective "*Military*" prefixed to "*Roads*," from the pungent taste they have had of the *summary* retribution of "*Military*" Law,) and I venture to think, that their construction would be even a worse sentence than, "You Maories are fools for making a road for your own destruction"!

17. I would also offer another remark or two upon the Charge made against me, of hindering Natives from going to work upon the Public Roads. Now this is very like those charges formerly made against me by Masters of Whaling-Stations in this Bay when I *first* came among them; who felt themselves aggrieved, because (as they said) I taught the Natives *not* to work for them! But the truth was, I taught the Natives,—"*Not to work on the Sabbath-day:—Not to drink Spirits:—Not to swear:—Not to omit their Daily Prayers:—Not to sell nor fetch women for prostitution—for you cannot do these things as Christians.*"—And when, by-and-bye, they found that they could not remain at the Whaling Stations without doing such things they left. Just so it is on the Public Road, and not only there but in very nearly all the places in which the Natives work for Whites.—I have it, Sir, from their own confessions, and could illustrate my position from very many cases which could be fully attested. I have taught them (and shall continue to do, GOD being my helper,)—"to abstain from Sin—to have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness—to go not in the way of the Scornful—to remember, that evil communications corrupt good manners—to withdraw themselves from every brother that walketh disorderly—to

keep GOD's holy Commands—to prize their Christian privileges—Cautiously to avoid [23] temptation—and, to walk as Children of the Light.” Now when they think on these words and their meaning, they consider within themselves, and say, We cannot do these things and work on the Public Road, or with the Whites (as the case may be.)—Hence it is that some of them leave their Employ. In thus writing, I do not mean to say, that the *only* reason why the Natives can not work on the Public Roads, &c., and maintain their Christian profession, is, owing to their having bad, licentious, and atheistical men as overseers; but, chiefly owing to their being so greatly exposed to temptations *there*, from many of which they would be comparatively free at home in their own villages. I have, I think, therefore, good reason to believe, that the Case would not be very materially altered in the main, even were the overseers moral men themselves. And, lest my views should unfortunately be deemed singular, allow me to bring forward a witness, who—though no friend of the New Zealand Missionaries, and but a poor Christian—has, in this matter at least, plainly and humanely and honorably given us the result of his personal observations. Dr. Dieffenbach, says,¹⁶⁵—“Of all measures which could be proposed for the benefit of the Aboriginal population, the most important is to leave them undisturbed. — — — — Placed amongst a European colonial community, a Native is little regarded. — — — — He is soon made sensible of the differences of rank, and perceives that he is not treated as one who is made of the same flesh and blood as his Master. Of all the better enjoyments of civilized life he is deprived, as in Colonial Society every one gives up his mind solely to the acquisition of money. In the lower orders, with whom he comes in contact, he can perceive nothing desirable; nothing to prevent his regretting that independence which he enjoyed in his own home, and from the fruits of his own land: he is expected to forget his language; in fact all the sacrifices are on his [24] side. In his own village, on the contrary, he lives in the midst of his kindred and is respected. — — — — I have always observed, that the Natives who hover about the Settlements of Europeans are far inferior to those in the country: they are not only more unhealthy but also become an ill-conditioned compound of the dandy, beggar, and labourer. — — — — Being unaccustomed and unwilling to drag on a life of labour and exercise, the Native has no means of procuring in a town that which is necessary to enable him to equal even the lowest of our labourers in comfort and appearance. — — — — Distilled spirits have not failed to corrupt, mentally and bodily, the Natives as well as the European Settler.”—Of course, it will be borne in mind, that those remarks of the Doctor have scarcely any reference beyond that of the *physical* condition of the Natives. How very much stronger language then, may we not suppose he would have used, could he have seen and felt that their spiritual interests were in danger? The Truth is, the Native neophytes cannot withstand temptation, and, consequently, ought not to be placed where such abounds; more especially, seeing their real wants are very few, and soon supplied, and as Christians are taught to pray—“lead us not into temptation,” and, “having food and raiment to be therewith content.”—

18. And further, lest it should be only inferred, from what I have written, that the evil inflicted is confined to those natives who go upon the Roads to work, I feel in duty

bound, to add, that such is, alas! not the case—would that it were only so! But, on the contrary, the many quiet and well-disposed chiefs who now Confess to the Faith, see, that coextensive with the progress of the Roads is the Demoralization worse and worse of their people; that those very persons whose characters are *well-known* to the Natives, and upon whose morality the very Heathen have long-looked down with [25] unutterable scorn, are not only set over them, but are the legitimate though vitiated medium between themselves and the Government (and that, too, not only in reference to their work upon the Roads, but in all matters whatever, whether it be communications from themselves to the Government, or from the Government to them,)—as well as the means of destroying the peace of their villages—of enticing away their daughters—of making (for the *first* time) divisions between themselves and their lawfully appointed Minister—and of raising doubts against the Truth of GOD which had never before entered their minds; and all this, too, under the semblance of authority from the circumstance of their being in the employ of the Government!!—Sad stumbling-blocks these to the advancement of the Natives in Christianity, and a no less one to their arriving at a proper opinion and due respect for the Government; as well as to the carrying on of those Public Works which may, or might be, conducive of much good.

19. If the Information which I have casually received is correct (for I have hitherto made it no business of mine *to enquire* into such matters,) W. Swainson, and I.G. Nairne, are also (in addition to those persons already named) in the habit of cohabiting with Native Females, on the Road on which they are employed as overseers.

21. It must not, however, be forgotten, that a love of novelty, and a disinclination to any thing like steady work have ever been great *traits* in the character of the New Zealander, in common with most of the Polynesian Islanders. Another peculiarity of theirs is, when one of them wishes to leave his employer, he rarely mentions it, but chooses rather to do some little act, or leave undone some little duty, through which he may get a few words from his Master which will serve him as an excuse for leaving; or, he will ask leave to go to see some friend, or to plant potatoes, &c., faithfully promising to return, [26] but at the same time never intending to return again to his employ. This manner of acting is quite common all over the Island, so much so, that all parties who have had much to do with Natives must have frequently proved it.

21. Before, however, Sir, I finally close this Letter, I must beg permission of the Lieutenant Governor to remark, that I thought (and *still* think) my many past services of various kinds voluntarily and constantly rendered as opportunity offered to H.M. Government and to the European Residents and Settlers, and which His Excellency though newly-arrived among us must surely know somewhat of, would have effectively shielded me before him from any attacks upon “my character, as a loyal subject of the Queen, and as a Man.”—and the manner in which I have endeavored to fulfil my heavy duty since my arrival in this District, together with the evident blessing of GOD upon my labors among these Tribes, should certainly have been duly considered ere any “serious reflection” could fairly have been entertained upon “my character as a Minister of Religion.” Be this as it may—the many testimonials I possess,—from Lieut. Governor Hobson, Mr. Willoughby Shortland, Mr. Busby when British Resident, the late

165 WC: Vide, Dieffenbach's N. Zealand, vol. ii part 1, ch.9.

Colonial Treasurer, the Land Commissioner, the Superintendent of the Southern Division, and others, for “valuable services” rendered to Her Majesty’s Government, (some of which, if I mistake not, have been honourably mentioned in “the Blue Book,”) not to notice particularly my having last year succeeded in hindering Te Rangihaeata and his party from being aided by the powerful Tribes of his neighbourhood—will ever, I doubt not, serve, if needs be, to shew, that the imputation of disloyalty is utterly unfounded.—

22. And so with reference to the reflection upon my character “as a *Man*”—meaning thereby (if I understand it aright) my utter recklessness as to the welfare of my fellow-country-men, [27] residing in New Zealand—let my successful exertions in all the cases which have come under my notice during my residence in this District, and very often made at the imminent peril of my own life and property,—let them be heard in my defence. Let Mr Barton, of the Hutt, relate, how I acted in the cases of the plundering his Sheep Station at Kurawawanui, and the subsequent annoyance he received from the Natives about him there:—let the Letter of His Honor the Superintendent of the Southern Division be read, to shew how I acted in the case of the “Royal William,” cutter, Lovett, master; in which matter, although Lovett was the aggressor, I got back from the Native Chiefs every article of property, and sent them on to Wellington:—Let the share which the Native Tribes about me had in the affair of the U.S. brig “Falco” be investigated, (or rat the share which the Native Tribes about me had in it,) and it will appear, that after much and long continued exertion I succeeded in recovering from among them all the property which remained, even to the arms and powder and ball, and that, too, at a time when such munitions of war would have been most acceptable to Te Rangihaeata and other Chiefs then fighting against H.M. Government:—let Capt. Mulholland of the Schooner “Flying-fish” (or, his letters, which I happen to possess,) testify, what assistance I afforded him in the hour of need, when even his own Crew went against him, and when—but for my interference and the lessons I had previously taught the Natives about me—his vessel would in all probability have shared the fate of the “Falco”:—let Capt. Salmon, of the Schooner “Kate”; Mr. C.B. Perry, of Table-Cape; Mr W. Morris, of Cape Kidnapper; (whose Letters of thanks I possess for services rendered,)—let them, with many others (including also the more respectable and peaceable Settlers of Wairarapa,) be asked, and surely they will unanimously respond—I have ever to the utmost of my ability shewn myself a *Man*, and proved their friend. [28]

23. And so, also, with reference to the “Serious reflections upon my character as a Minister of Religion”:—let the well-known strict examination and requirements of the Church Missionary Society, made at home on the spot—a subsequent Ten Years of unblemished and active Service in their Employ, in times of no small trial to principle—a residence during two long Terms at St. John’s College, under the eye of the Bishop of the Diocese—my consequent admission by His Lordship to Holy Orders—and my now more than three years of active duty (already, indeed, alluded to) in my spiritual vocation in the midst of no small opposition, unrebuked by my Ecclesiastical Superiors—let these plain truths, well known to all, be allowed their proper weight, and, I venture to think, that even in this peculiar age and place, it will require somewhat more than has yet been advanced (*even if true*) to fasten any “*Serious reflections upon my character as a Minister of Religion.*”

24. I regret much that your Letter did not reach me earlier, or at a season when, having more leisure, I should better be able to arrange my answer to it.—As I have to leave this Station in a few days, (on the 22nd.) according to appointment, on my usual autumnal journey of 3 months throughout the District; intending (D.V.) to be in and about Wellington during the first fortnight in May. Consequently I have very much to attend to just now before I leave.—

And now, in conclusion, Sir, allow me to express the hope, that I have, in what I have herein written, placed within His Excellency’s reach a sufficiency of plain statements fully and satisfactorily to afford him “the power to deny that there is any truth in the allegations against me.”—Awaiting which,

and with every respect,
I have the honor to be,
Sir,
Your most obedient Servant,
William Colenso,
Missionary, C.M.S.

1848 March 23: to Morris¹⁶⁶

Mission Station, March
23, 1848.

Mr. W. Morris.

My dear Sir

Yours of the 21st I received on the same day, and thank you much for your kind and warm feelings so freely expressed. I can, however, but believe, that you magnify greatly the *very few* little offices which it has been in my power to do for you since we have known each other. I scarcely need say to *you*, that I shall always consider it a pleasure to be able to aid you in any way in my power. We all, at one time or another, need each other’s assistance, during our passage through life.

I am now about to leave on my long journey. I expect to be back about the middle of June. We may not see each other again. You leave us with regret on my part, and I hope your successor (if one comes) may be so friendly a neighbour.

And now that you are, as it were, retiring from the turmoil and bustle and anxiety of active life, allow me, as a well-wisher to your interests, to suggest, that you seek to turn your thought towards those things which are solid and sure, and which only can bring a man true peace at the last.—I wish you, from my heart, the *best blessing*, when I say, May GOD, in mercy, cause His Holy Spirit so to shine within, as to lead you to a loving acquaintance with our Saviour Jesus Christ.—Amen.

I enclose a little Prayer Book for your acceptance in token of remembrance and of kindnesses received from you: also, two little books of Tracts, and a copy of a little publication of my own. Mr. Kier will supply you with whatever you may require, and

Believe me ever
Very sincerely yours
William Colenso.

1848 May 4: to Grimstone¹⁶⁷

Copy

To
J.E. Grimstone, Esqr.,
&c &c
Secretary's Office,
Wellington.

Wellington, May 4th, 1848.

Sir,

1. On my arrival at the head of the Wairarapa valley, on the 13th. ultimo, I lost no time in forwarding by a special messenger my answer to yours of the 13th. December last; and which Letter, I believe, you received on the 24th. ultimo.—

2. While at Te Kaikokirikiri village, I happened, most accidentally, (I may truly enough say, *providentially*.) to obtain possession of a note written by the Chief Ngatuere to the Native Teacher of Te Kaikokirikiri in September last; a copy of which, numbered 1, I enclose.¹⁶⁸ During my stay at this village, I enquired of the Native Teachers Campbell Hawea and Samuel Pakiahi, whether they had seen and conversed with those white men (Messrs. Nairne and Deighton) on their visit to Wairarapa in the spring; and on their replying in the affirmative, I requested them to write briefly the substance of their respective conversations, and to send the same on to Te Kopi in Palliser Bay, where I intended being on on about the 30th ultimo. They accordingly did so; and I also enclose copies thereof. That of Campbell Hawea's, the Native Teacher at Te Kaikokirikiri, being numbered two;¹⁶⁹ and that of Samuel Pakiahi's, the Native Teacher at Hurunuiorangi, being numbered 3.¹⁷⁰ I may, in passing, remark, that I had very little conversation with them upon the subject of the charges contained in your Letter; and though I saw, and spent several days in company with, the Chief Te Ropiha, I never once mentioned the matter to him, but treated him in the same friendly manner as heretofore.—

3. Leaving Te Kaikokirikiri and proceeding down the valley, I met the Native Teacher of Huaangaru, Lot Paioko, who (I was told) had both seen and conversed with Messrs. Nairne & Deighton. I, therefore, requested him also to write briefly the substance of their conversation, which (as I perceive he has addressed the same, though I believe unintentionally, to His Excellency,) I also enclose, numbered 4;¹⁷¹—taking, however, a copy of the same.

4. While at Te Kopi I received a Letter from Te Ropiha; a copy of which numbered 5,¹⁷² I also enclose.

5. I did not pass through the lower part of the Wairarapa valley—my route, on this visit, being to the Kopi by the Coast—I have therefore not seen Ngatuere, and the other Wairarapa Natives.—

6. I was sorry to find, that, in spite of my repeated remonstrances, backed too by those of the Native Teacher, the little daughter of Nicodemus had been taken by her parents to the "*Ara-ruri*"—(Government Road). — — —

7. I can but hope that these enclosures will prove as satisfactory to His Excellency as they have to myself.

8. I have only to add, by way of elucidation,—that Campbell said the "*turituri*" (disagreeable noise) which annoyed the whites, (mentioned in Ngatuere's Letter to him,) was their, the Natives, rehearsing their Catechisms, &c., when they had School together in the evenings. "*Taare*," or "*Tare*," is Nairne; and "*Ritara*," or "*Tiki*" (Dick?), or "*Taitene*," is Richard Deighton. Those three Native Teachers are all quiet respectable men, who have been for several years regular Communicants,—

With every respect,
Believe me, Sir,
Your most obedt. Servt.,
William Colenso,
Missionary CMS.

1848 September 14: to the CMS Secretaries¹⁷³

Waitangi, Hawke's Bay, N. Zealand,
Sepr. 14th. 1848.

My dear Sirs,

The usual little trading vessel having just arrived from Wellington, affords me the opportunity (long desired) of transmitting you the accompanying papers.—Being Copies of a Correspondence between H.M. Colonial Government and myself; together with sundry other Papers ("enclosures"), elucidatory of certain facts therein contained or adverted to. Although the matter is now at rest (as far as I am concerned), I have, nevertheless, deemed it my duty to send you Copies of every paper; (although to do so I have had to fag hard indeed,) lest you might hear of a *part* only of the business, and so not be able to form a correct judgment thereupon.—His Excellency the Lieut-Governor behaved very kindly to me when at Wellington, paying me every attention. I dined and spent two nights with him during my short stay there. On leaving, he presented me with a Copy of his travels in Australia. He also sent me Mr. Fitzgerald's letter to his private secretary for my perusal, &c., on which I took a copy of it. I may truly enough say, that I am right glad the affair is now over;—more on account of my not having any time for such matters, as well as an utter disinclination thereto, than because I *care* for them. The Whites generally in the Wairarapa District (not to mention those who are nearer to and within [2] Wellington,) are still greatly incensed against me; and will be so, until one or other changes. Yet there are one or two honorable exceptions, who love and receive me for my work's sake. Would to God, my dear Sirs, you could send some *strong sound* Minister for that valley, who would look after that end of this immense parish! In a little while it will be, perhaps, too late. God has given me great influence over the whole of these Tribes; still I fear much for that part of my parish, it is very exposed.

In a *second* packet which accompanies this, I send you nine months of my Journal, which leaves me still *one year* in arrear! when I shall *close* quite up, I cannot say: I work, almost night & day: I hope, howeve, to take another portion

167 ATL qMS-0492. Archives 48/547-682.

168 WC: Enclosure No.1.

169 WC: Enclosure No.2.

170 WC: Enclosure No.3.

171 WC: Enclosure No.4.

172 WC: Enclosure No.5.

173 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

on with me to Wellington, when I travel that way next month.

There is great change talking place (I may almost dare to say, an alteration for the better) among the Tribes immediately about us. Two, out of the four, principal Chiefs of this district (Tareha and Kurupou) have lately embraced the Faith with all their followers, many of whom are now Candidates for Baptism. And of the other two Chiefs (Te Hapuku and Puhara), the eldest son of Te Hapuku has also become a Candidate for Baptism, and the young brother of Puhara, and several of his relations, and also [3] professing to the Faith. This last year has been a harvesting one to the visible Church in N. Zealand. Many Chiefs of note throughout the District have been Baptized. Many have learned to read. The no. of Communicants is every where increasing; and the Papists, too, are casting their follies away for the Truth as it is in Jesus. But we have, on the other hand much to deplore; the stumbling of some, and the wilful obstinacy of others, and *our own coldness*. I am now in my fifteenth year of Service to the C.M.S.,—and never at any period did I feel so dead, so sinfully dead, as at present, yet I am daily endeavoring to fulfil my many duties, and to stay myself upon the unchangeable mercy of God in Christ Jesus. We all need, greatly need, the Life-invigorating spirit, to quicken the dwarfish graces of our souls. May GOD, in mercy, remember us for good! My annual Teachers' School has just closed; 21 Teachers and Monitors from all parts of the District were here, as usual, for a fortnight's close exercise. The benefit arising from this school is very great; it causes a propulsion of sound blood to the remotest extremities of the body. We were visited, during the summer & autumn with the Hooping Cough, which took away several children, and tried the Faith of many parents, but, I bless GOD, not one has cast away his hope, as formerly upon such occasions. From several who have been thus sorely[4] tried, I have had affecting and cheering letters—evidencing the reality of their Faith;—precious indeed, and always in the sight of GOD, though often unseen by us.—But there is much to do; and much of Divine Wisdom & Teaching is now needed, to train aright these feeble plants, as well as to water & shelter them. Another matter, (little enough in itself, but of great tendency to the promotion of good,) I may also mention:—158 men & women of this District, have during the past year, voluntarily relinquished smoking *Tobacco*.

I know not whether the Letters I have sent to you from this place, have ever reached your hands; I have not heard of such having been acknowledged by you in any of your Public Letters to us. I do not go to Committee at Turanga, as my doing so would occupy (at *least*) 5 weeks; and I have so very much travelling, and not a scrap of time to spare. There is one thing which I have often considered to be almost without precedent or fellow, namely, *my not having a single clerical* (I may almost add, Christian) *Correspondent in the whole world!* Excepting a *few* of my brethren in N. Zealand. I sometimes feel alone on these lonely shores. I think this ought not to be.

For Paper, Pencils, Pens, Ink & Rubber, lately received, you have my best thanks on behalf of the Natives. I am greedy enough to wish I had [5] four times the quantity. I am sadly off for Prayer- and Elementary- Books. To a party of forty, who lately came over to the Faith, I was obliged to arrange for them to use the LORD'S prayer night & morning (which they had got by heart), not having a single book to give them. I have given out upwards of 200 Testaments during

the last 2 months: the greater number of the applicants, now received the Word of GOD for the first time.—My little press, too, is working, spite of all difficulties and impediments; my old Native lad, Samuel, being Compositor & pressman;—the correcting, &c, of course I have to attend to.—We have printed some (25) experimental & Doctrinal Hymns, (composed in Native *Idiom*,) which will (under GOD) be of Service against error;—also, a little Tract, the happy death of a little Sunday Scholar, which has already done good;—and a prayer, &c., for Catechumens;—and we are now printing a Catechetical work (based on those of Dr. Watts') in which we are advanced to the 24 p.—but we get on but very slowly from want of type, &c., being only able to print 2 pages at a time.

Our Congregations, too, at the Station, have greatly increased, instead of from 50 to 70, as formerly, there are now from 80 to 160 and 200; and, although more than three fourths of those who attend have to come several miles, they are seldom absent on the LORD'S Day, generally coming on the Saturday afternoon, bringing their food, &c., with them, and remaining [6] until after Monday morning's School.—

I have not time now to add any more. Save to desire and crave interest in your prayers: & to express a hope, that amidst the confusion and disorder which at present is so very conspicuous throughout Europe, our Native land may be in mercy preserved.

I am, my Dear Sirs,
Your mo. ob. servant
William Colenso.

1848 October 23: to Dixon & Co.¹⁷⁴

Waitangi, Octr. 23/48.

My dear Sir

I have to acknowledge no less than 5 Letters & Invoices from you, dated respy.—July 5 & Octr 14/47, and Jan'y 21, Jan 31 & Feby 19/48—as well as the goods sent pr. Victoria & Elora which almost came to hand together—and all safely.—I cannot tell you how very much I am indebted to you; for being so kindly mindful of me & my wishes; not forgettg *party*. to mention the several little parcels from highly valued friends wh. from time to time I have been gratified with the receipt of thro yr. kind agency. I should have written to you before but I lacked both time & oppory: this Letter & enclosures I now take myself to Wellington, in my usual spring jy. down the Coast. The goods pr. Elora arrived here about 3 weeks ago; & the Case pr. Victoria (wh. had slumbered at Wellington) a short time before them.—

First howr. let me reply to yr. Letters, *seriatim*.—The 2 Cases wh. you shipped for me from CMS.—contg. Stationery & slates—came duly to hand. The orig. Bill of charges for loss of anchor &c of Madras, I cannot (I regret to say) send you, but perhaps Archd. W. can—I paid him my share, wh. he had paid (with his own) at Well. for me; and I also pd. my agents there (Messrs B. & H.) anor. demand upon some other article wh. came thro them by the same ship, so that in neither case did I obtain the orig.

174 ATL 80-038 George Petersen papers: Colenso's rough copy.

Bill.—I believe I have recd. the Cask pr. L. Campbell wh. was supposed to have been lost! & in a sad condition: that is, a cask of sundries (without letter) evidently from my old friend Mr. B. has reached me, & wh. has been for a long while knocking about upon the N.Z. shores; but whether it is *that* cask or not I cannot say—the contents, old clothes, old books, & remnants of calico &c, value 40/-. It came to me from Mr. Hamlin, to him from the Archdn. but I cannot satisfactorily trace it further. From Mr. Oct. Brown I have very lately recd. a kind Xn. Line., in wh. he advises me of his having sent an order to his London agents to pay you the money due—and which I suppose you have recd. ere this—and the goods are now on their way hither.—In yr. long & kind line. of 29 Jany. you mention “having put 2 or 3 Scripture Prints into one of the cases” no such things however have been found. The little order generally pleased us—but there was no “*Ball of Twist*,” com. fine skain silk instead—the pair of stays is of *Dark*, instead of white Jean as ordered.—The Calico is very much too fine, & the Towellg. not at all liked as it shrinks & gets hard—the Lamp chimnies being larger than the size ordered are useless, wh. I regret almost more than any thing. The 2 parcels of Books for Archd. WW & Mr Baker are still here, & are likely I fear to remain some time—as we have *very rarely* any natives going that way, and no one wd. go purposely for less than £1. I perceive you have not charged yr. commiss. upon the 2 last orders; pray do not defraud yourselves of your doubly honest due.

I now send you a rather long & heterogenous order wh. I will thank you to get executed with as little delay as possible. To accomplish which I enclose the first of 2 Sets of Bills on the Socy., one for £50 & one for £40, being all the Bill money I have at present by me;—adding thereto an order of my own in a note to the Secs. for £50., wh. I have little doubt they will considg. my sit. immy. pay: I send this open that you may see it; of course you will seal it for me ere you deliver it. But, shod. any demur be made on their part, you may either omit those goods marked xx in the margin of the order, or send them all & credit me for a few months. I also enclose a Letter (unsealed) addressed to the Secy. of RTS. wh. I wish you to read & deliver. For, although I have no influence in that quarter that I am aware of, they *may* do something for me in the shape of Type, or Paper, wh. may lessen yr. outlay upon that head. If my good friend Mr Coates were now alive, I think I shod. not fail in my applicn. The Type (on the *separate* order) must be Scotch, & wh. you will obtain from Edinburgh (or Glasgow); as the Eng. I am sorry to say, (particularly Watts’) is not to be compared to it. Be sure that it is accordg. to order; wh., in no one case during many years, has ever yet occurred. Among other things, you will find, that I have ordered 4 *Black Frock Coats* for myself; as there are now a variety of woollen stuffs manufactured of which I do not even know the name, it would I think be a good plan to have each Coat made of a diff. material—bearing in mind, that durability & not fineness is the main thing required: send with each the name of the fabric, & some pieces (or a half yard or so) of each stuff—always useful in the “bush” where rents are so common, and do the same with the *Tweed Trowsers*, &c.—Another article to wh. I wod. call yr partr. attention is the Fur cloak for myself—and which, after all, I think had better be made of some light strong fabric *lined* with fur throughout. I cannot bear *weight* upon my shoulders & yet I require warmth. To tell you the truth I have a very great mind to have a kind of loose Pelisse instead of a Cloak.—*But I leave this with you.*

Let the wine be *wine & good*. The B. wines had better be specified as such, as the duties here (on wines espy.) are *very heavy*. Don’t forget the *Nuts*.—As we have no fruit *here*, we have long been on the tip-toe of expect. concg. them. Let the parcels be made up & directed as requested—there are sevl. things in this order for different individuals, & there wod. have been more had Dean’s Catalogue had Prices annexed to his articles instead of Blank £ s d. wh. always looks suspicious. The *Pict. Times* I must give up: as I have no time to look at it & cannot afford to pay so much yearly for old newspaper cuts: so, don’t send any more volumes after this current year.

It wod. be worth tryg. by way of expert.—the packg. the goods in good strong outfit chests with lock &c., the lids to be screwed down with 2 good screws & well corded. Care being taken by the operator not to put the screw into his mouth, so as to cause it to rust within the wood. If the chests were made of coarse Cedar or mahogy. or any coarse dark wood they might be better still: at present all cases are a *complete waste*, & the expenses here increasingly *great*. When you write pray inform me as to *Drawbacks*, whether any cost upon them—for *what amount* allowed—and whether for *sundry* articles *together* such as soap glass wine & paper. I have recently made up a Case of Dried plants &c for Sir WJ Hooker, in which I have put a small parcel for my father under cover to you—wh. please receive & forward.—And, should you receive the £50 from CMS. on my a/c, please advise the payment of £10. to my father, thro one of the Penz. Banks, at an early date; & when about to send off give them timely notice, always pressing to have their enclosures at least a *week* before you dispatch yr. goods. The *Magic Lantern*, &c, I must defer for the present. I will thank you to enquire the price per 100, or per 1000, of *printing* those beautiful *colored* cuts, &c, which are done by Baxter the patentee—say of 12mo. size; and whether he provides the subject, if so at what extra charge;—I want, to begin with, a vivid little picture, *the burning of Ridley & Latimer*, & another to illustrate the *martyrdom of Polycarp*, the figures shod. be few, (not too small nor too crowded, to suit the comprehension of the N.Zr. There is a book published by the U.S. Exploring Expedition under the auspices of the US Government by Blanchard & Lee, Philadelphia,—on ethnography & philology; if you could pick it up any where for me (2nd hand wod. do) I shod. be obliged—it is a ponderous 4to. &, I suppose, published at a high price. Let the silver pencil case be a *good* one; & the engravg. *well executed*.

You may add to a consid. extent and at any time upon such articles as Navy Blue Print, unbleached Calico, Red Cott. Hdkfs., do Cravats, striped shirts & moleskin Trowsers; always bearing in mind that the articles are good. And *every autumn* upon the arr. of the new fruit, send me, 50lbs *best* currants, 2 14-pound boxes of Bloom R., 56 pounds of Valencia Raisins, 1 bush. walnuts, & 1 bush. almonds & Barcelona nuts, wh. might all I think go into *one* Cask or Case. If you cod. ascertain whether Newfound. Cod would keep well in comg. hither, I shod. much like to get a hundred-weight. And if any more Blue Books are published respectg New Zealand, be sure to procure me a copy. I should like to get a Copy of every one wh. has been pubd., if I cod. get them cheap.

Palliser Bay, Novr. 11/48

There have been several shocks of earthquake here during the month all the Brick buildgs & chimnies in Wellg. have

suffered severely, but only 3 lives have been lost. Many however of the settlers have left; I must now conclude—

Believe me
Ever truly yours
WC.

Copy of a Letter to Mess R Dixon & Co 10/48.
Sent *in Dup.*

£10—to Father
Saml. £3
R. EF. E. M. 4.
to buy for) 2— (12/ 8/
RL.F. R. L.) (12/ 8/
anyone 1
 £10

1848 November 9: to the CMS Secretaries¹⁷⁵

In my tent, at Te Kopi,
Palliser Bay, N. Zealand,
Novr. 9, 1848.

My dear Sirs

Having come thus far towards Wellington (in my usual spring journey among the Natives), and being about to send thither my Letters for England, among which is one to Messrs. Dixon & Co., containing an order which I am desirous should be executed with as little delay as possible, and not having Bills on CMS. to an amount sufficient to meet the same, I am, in a measure, constrained to write you this note, to request you to pay to Messrs. R. Dixon & Co., the sum of £50. (*Fifty pounds*), on my account. I am aware that my so doing is somewhat irregular but I trust that my peculiar situation will be more than sufficient to account for my request. For, firstly, (as you know) our Bills are only drawn when our local Comee. meets, which is once an year (in January), and seldom or never in advance; consequently, at this time nearly a year's salary has become due:—and, secondly, the necessary outlay made in forming this Station, and made by myself too out of my own stipend (and which I duly acquainted you with,) has not yet been repaid. I am, therefore, obliged either to wait 3 months, or to draw in this manner upon you.—

The Natives are all very quiet in this District, and, considering all things, in as good a state as could be expected. I fear, however, before another 12 months have elapsed there will be a great alteration for the worse. For the white man is now seeking to settle every where—even in the wilds about Ahuriri—and thus arousing the cupidity of the Natives. The Government too wishes “to purchase the whole of the Country from Wairarapa to Ahuriri”! which, if done, will certainly seal the Natives' ruin; for, unless their “*reserve*” is in *one* block, and at a *distance* from the white, I can not see any chance of their escaping the hitherto common fate of all aborigines with whom the white has come in contact.

In great haste
(and surrounded by Natives)
I am, my dear Sirs,

very sincerely yours
William Colenso.

P.S. Novr. 10th., midnight.

Late this evening, Rev. Mr. Cole arrived from Wellington, bringing me 2 Letters—one from the Col. Secretary & one from the Govr.—wishing me to cooperate in getting the *whole* of this District from the Natives!! May the LORD guide me in this matter! Amen.

1848 December 23: to Lieut. Govr. Eyre¹⁷⁶

(Copy) Church Mission Station,
Waitangi, Hawke's Bay, Decr. 23/48.

Sir,

I have to acknowledge and thank you for your very kind and condescending letter of Novr. 7th., with which you favored me by the Rev. Mr. Cole, on his visit to Wairarapa last month. I duly received it, late at night, on the 10th. ult., and should have answered it long ago (as I feel convicted I ought to have done), but, believe me, Sir, I could not.—

—For, on the following day, the 11th., I was closely engaged from sunrise till late, in examining and instructing Candidates for the Holy Communion; and, on the Sunday, on the various duties of that day; and, on the Monday morning Mr. Cole left on his return to Wellington. I had hoped to have gained a spare hour, or to have stolen one from sleep, in my journey up the valley, but, in this, too, I was disappointed—from my *daily* travelling—the thronging of the Natives—and the extreme shortness of the nights.—

I said very little indeed—in fact, I may say, I cautiously abstained from speaking my own thoughts—to the Native Chiefs at Wairarapa, in passing through the valley, on the Land Question (although I did, in very strong terms, denounce the conduct of those who, in defiance of your Excellency's late proclamation, were still seeking to let Lands to the Whites, they being urged thereto by the Whites themselves. [2] At the same time, however, I endeavoured quietly to gather their own opinions upon the matter, which I found (as I told Messrs. Dillon Bell & Kemp) to be quite opposed to the parting with the whole of their possessions.—

Your Excellency having been pleased to inform me of a Deputation having visited you from Wairarapa, offering on the part of the rest to sell a portion of that place, &c.,—You will not, I venture to think, deem it obtrusive on my part if I acquaint you with what I heard, when at Wairarapa, as the Cause, &c., of that movement.—

—Te Manihera te Kahu, a young Chief of inferior rank and of similar character, had *privately* consented to let a piece of land at Tauwarenikau to a Settler named Gillies, residing at Otarua: this, he (alone) had no right to do. On the transaction being known, the anger of the Natives was greatly excited, and some of his own relations not only proposed but sought him to put him to death!—For they were quite tired with talking to him, and he had long been one of the principal peace-breakers of the valley. Upon his

175 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

176 ATL qMs-0492.

hearing this he fled precipitately across the Ruamahanga towards the Tararua range; upon which some of the more moderate of the Tribe proposed that as Manihera could not be reformed, the better way would be to go and offer that Tract of Country (including Tauwārenikau) to the Government. This some few of the junior ones did, *forging the assent of some of the principal Chiefs of Wairarapa*, who are largely concerned, among whom I [3] may mention—Ngatuere, Ngairo, and Wiremu Kingi te Hiakai, who never so much as heard of the intention of the junior party much less assent to it. Great indeed was the stir among them, when, at the return of “the Deputation,” it became known. So that from what I *saw* and *heard*, I could not but conclude, that it would prove a difficult matter to get even the land offered to your Excellency by “the Deputation” from the *rightful* owners.

I returned to this place on the night of the 18th. instant,—a week behind my appointed time. Having been taken seriously ill when in the Patea District (beyond the Ruahine mountain chain), during which I was 3 days and 3 nights stretched on the ground in my tent, in extremity of suffering, with scarcely a hope of recovery. How I got home across the mountains I scarcely know. I am now very weak indeed; with an afflicted household, and, plenty of March Fever (always common here at this season) about me.

The day after my return, the 19th., not wishing to lose any time, I sent notes to Te Hapuku and to the other principal Chiefs, to meet me at his village on the 22nd.

Yesterday I went there, and spent some time with the Chiefs there assembled, in informing them concerning the projected “Canterbury Settlement” and its “benefits”; and of the wish of the Government to purchase the whole of the Country between Ahuriri and Port Nicholson, &c., &c., as detailed in your Letter to me (one thing, only, as [4] far as I recollect, I did not mention, the proposed life annuity of £25. to four of the leading Chiefs). Having faithfully informed them of what I knew from your Excellency’s Letters; I, also, told them, that henceforward I should not interfere nor have anything to say in the matter of their doing as they pleased with their Lands; and, that I could not conscientiously deviate from the advice I had *formerly* given them,—1^{stly}. Never to sell the *whole* of their Land; and 2^{ndly}., If they should conclude to sell it, to be sure to have their “Reserve” in *one* block, with a good *natural* boundary between.

In conclusion—as I have told the Natives, that I do not intend to say any thing more to them upon the subject; and as I cannot conscientiously advise them either to alienate the *whole* of their Lands, or to accept of “Reserves” (when so alienated) in scattered or detached parcels among the Whites—both of which plans are, in my estimation, equally fraught with their speedy destruction; and, as I wish to live in peace with all men, and to be as far as possible from bringing myself into Collision with H.M. Government,—Little now remains for me but to be *perfectly neutral in the matter*: this, therefore, I hope strictly to be. Your Excellency will, therefore, not be surprised, if, (in the event of the Commissioners or any other Government Officers visiting this place upon this errand,) I should, deeming it my duty, be led to refuse to have any [5] thing whatever to do in the matter.

I could say, Sir, a great deal more on this subject (closely connected as it is with one so very dear to my heart—the

welfare of the Natives) but I have not strength just now. I may, perhaps, incur your Excellency’s displeasure for not seeing and acting with the Government, for which I shall be sorry;—but I dare not go against the established convictions of my mind, grounded too, as they are, upon my knowledge of the Native Character, and the painfully striking contrast between the rude yet prospering and healthy Native of the Country, and the daily decreasing and demoralizing ones of the Towns.

May the Almighty Disposer of all things so enlighten your Excellency, that you may not only do all things for the honor of the Queen’s Majesty, but, also, for the good of His Church, and the welfare of this Territory and People.—

I am,
Sir,
with every respect,
Your Excellency’s
most obedient Servant,
William Colenso,
Ch. Missionary.

1848 December 23:
to the Colonial Secretary¹⁷⁷

Church Mission Station,
Waitangi, Hawke’s Bay,
December 23, 1848.

Sir,

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your Letter of the 7th. ulto., in which you are pleased to give me a sketch of the plans of the proposed “Canterbury Settlement,” and in which you further wish me to aid (as far as I may be able) H.M. Government in obtaining the *whole* if this District from the Aboriginal Proprietors, &c.

I should have answered your Letter long ere this, but having been absent, travelling among the Natives of the District during the last 2 months, and having only returned to this my Station on the 18th. instant, I have not been able to do so.

In reply to your Letter, Sir, I have to state, that I have attentively read it, and (I trust) duly considered the principal subject thereof in all its various bearings upon the Natives; and I regret, deeply regret, to have to say, that I cannot conscientiously aid or assist in any ways use any influence which I may possess over the Native Chiefs to prevail upon them to alienate the *whole* of their Lands to the Crown, or to accept of “Reserves” for themselves (when the Land has become so alienated) in scattered or detached parcels or blocks [2] among the whites. Both of which plans being, in my humble opinion, equally fraught with no less than the utter and speedy extinction of the whole of the Native race.—

I have, however, Sir, in compliance with your request, made known to the Native Chiefs of this neighbourhood, the wish of his Excellency to purchase the District, and the “benefits” arising from the location of the “Canterbury Settlement,” &c., &c., as contained in your Letters.—

As I cannot conscientiously advise the Natives to part with the whole of their Lands, nor recommend them (in the event of their doing so) to accept of Scattered or detached reserves—and as I equally wish to live in peace with all, and by no means to bring myself into collision with, or to obstruct the carrying out of the plans of H.M. Government—my aim will henceforward be to preserve a strict neutrality in this and other similar matters; and peacefully endeavour to follow out my Calling.

Having lately been very ill, and being still but very weak, with an afflicted household, and numerous cases of the usual Summer March Fever of this locality about me—I cannot now remark on many things which I much wish to bring before His Excellency's [3] notice concerning the matter in question. But, with His Excellency's permission, I would beg briefly to call his attention to two important points, both of which I humbly conceive to be to the future general interest of the Colony: the *one*, the *speedy carrying into effect* that portion of the Queen's Instructions (chap. xiv.) respecting the Aborigines of New Zealand, and the *formally setting apart of those Aboriginal Districts therein mentioned*, as the only human means of preserving the Aboriginal Race:—the *other*, that in the event of any Tract or Tracts of Land being purchased by H.M. Government in this District, great care shall be made *to obtain it only from the rightful and bona fide proprietors*; otherwise you may depend upon similar scenes being acted (only on a larger scale) to those of which the neighbourhood of Port Nicholson so lately became the theatre.

Believe me, Sir, (though I may be unfortunate in my views) to be actuated by a conscientious regard for the welfare temporal and eternal of this poor people; and allow me to subscribe myself,

Your most obedient servant
William Colenso
Ch. Missionary.

1849 January 4: to the CMS Secretaries¹⁷⁸

Church Mission Station,
Waitangi, Hawke's Bay,
January 4, 1849.

My dear Sirs,

I lose no time in transmitting you copies of a correspondence which has very recently taken place between H.M. Government and myself.¹⁷⁹

It is more than probable that my declining to cooperate with the Government in the matter, may be by them advantageously used against me on some future occasion.—But my trust is in the LORD.

Allow me to remark, that I am now entered on the fifth year of my ordination to the Ministry (I may say, in the very van of the battle), during the whole of which, and notwithstanding the many onsets which have been made upon me, I have never received a single line of direction or encouragement from either the Bishop on the one side or

the Comee. of the C.M.S. on the other. It was anciently said, "*Va soli!*" and such *should* I have long ago proved it to be, had not Christ graciously fulfilled his blessed promise—"Lo! I am with you all days."—

I write now in great haste.—I only returned from my usual long spring journey on the 18th. December (I wrote you a [2] short note from Palliser Bay during my Journey), and have just finished making out my yearly Returns which I this day pass on to the Local Committee.

I may just copy therefrom, for your information (as you will in all probability receive this first)—

1848.	average attend. of Congregations	2175
"	ditto Scholars	1570
"	Communicants, Males, 357)	
"	" Females, 185)	542
"	Baptisms Males, 111)	
"	" Females, 110)	298
"	Children, 77)	
"	Marriages	52

So that we have much to be thankful for.

I have been very ill, but am now rallying again. Plenty of March Fever about. The Natives are peaceable, and are now beginning to cut their wheat. I do not think the Commissioners will get the District by *fair* means: but I have heard enough to convince me that *they are determined to get it* somehow.—

I have *no* trust in man; I am sick; *every one* is striving for his own ends; every thing now-a-days is masked.

May GOD preserve the Church Missionary Society, and make their laborers faithful! Pray for us.

Believe me
my dear Sirs
Yours very sincerely
William Colenso.

Report for *12 months ending* December 31, 1848

During the past year I have been engaged as follows:—

On the Lord's-day in holding Divine Service twice, and in Catechizing and Teaching in Schools. On weekdays in attending to the adult Male Schools; in instructing and examining Candidates for Baptism and the Lord's Supper, in holding Bible, and Teachers' Classes, visiting sick, Dispensing Medicine; settling Disputes, &c, &c: and, on Thursday Evenings (and *every* week-day evening when travelling) Lecturing; and, also, attending to the many secular matters of the Station.

On the 27th. December/47 I left the Station on a visit to the villages in the mountain district of Patea; and returned on the 14th. January/48.

On the 9th. February I left the Station on a visit to Tangoio, the villages at the head of the Mohaka River, and Tarawera; and returned on the 23rd. of the same month.

On the 23rd. March I left the Station on a visit throughout the whole District (including, also, some villages in Cook's Straits, beyond Wellington, under the care of the Revd. R. Cole) and returned on the 16th. June.

¹⁷⁸ Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

¹⁷⁹ In a marginal note, "Copy of a Letter from His Excellency Lieut. Gov. Eyre, Nov. 7, 1848. My answer thereto, Decr. 23/48. Copy of a Letter from the Colonial Secretary, Novr. 7/48. My answer thereto, Decr. 23/48."

On the 9th. August I left the Station on a visit to the Natives of Tangoio, Te Waiohingaanga, Waurangi, &c, and returned on the 7th. of the same month.

On the 25th. October I left the Station on a visit throughout the District, including Patea; and returned on the 18th. December.

Occasional visits to villages within one day's journey of the Station are not herein enumerated.

The number of Baptisms performed in the District during the year is adults, men, 100, wom. 97, children 68; ditto in villages about Port Nicholson

11	13	9
111	100	77

total.

No. of marriages performed 52.

Increase of Communicants, upwards of 100—

The accompanying Returns will also shew a great addition to the Schools and Congregations—The number of Candidates for Baptism is constantly increasing—

Two Chapels have been built where no Chapels were before; eight others are now being erected; and others have been finished during the year.

Mrs. Colenso has attended to the daily Female and infant schools, but the attendance of the School generally (including, also, those of the Adult Male School) has been very irregular, more owing to their scattered mode of living than to any thing else. On Sundays and Mondays, however, the attendance during the last six months has been invariably good. A perceptible progress in knowledge is making; and very many have learned to read and write during the year. A great portion also of Mrs. Colenso's time (especially when I am absent) is taken up in dispensing Medicine, and in visiting and attending to the many sick.

The state of the Natives throughout the District— notwithstanding the great increase to the Church during the year, is not, on the whole, of a pleasing nature. The continual squabbling among themselves, more especially among the Tribes of the Wairarapa valley and neighbourhood, concerning the letting of their lands, and the dividing their rents, has materially altered the character of many who were once quiet and steady, and promised well. To such a height did the ferment arise in August and September, that the two largest Tribes of the Wairarapa valet very nearly fought. They are now somewhat more quiet, but the leaven is secretly working and spreading. In consequence of their conduct, upwards of 20 of those who had been ringleaders in the matter were suspended from the Holy Communion, at the last administration at Palliser Bay in November last, and which they were fully expecting. Of the four principal Chiefs, with their Tribes, residing more immediately about the Station (who had hitherto slighted every overture of the Gospel message), Two, with their wives, relations, and people, came over to the Faith during the past winter, and have ever since been most exemplary in the attendances upon the ordinances of Religion: many of them have already voluntarily come forward as Candidates for Baptism. Of the remaining two chiefs, the sons and relations, and several of the people, of the one, and the near relations and some of the people of the other, have also joined us.

The Heathen ranks are daily thinning: may God make those who leave them to be Christians in deed & in truth!

The number of Communicants might be greatly increased, if any means could be devised by which the Christian Natives living in the many isolated villages distant from those few places where the Lord's Supper is annually celebrated, particularly, the aged, infirm, and poor, could partake thereof. Many of whom, I fear, will never have that privilege.

On the 20th August my annual Teachers' School commenced, and continued daily till the 9th. September inclusive. Twenty one Teachers and Monitors were present from all parts of the District.

Several of the Native Teachers have been occupied at times throughout the year in visiting distant and isolated villages; and I have reason to believe that no small amount of good has resulted from their visits.

During the year, upwards of 200 persons (Males & Females) in addition to the 44 mentioned in my report for 1847, have voluntarily given up the practice of smoking Tobacco.

A Popish Priest visited the neighbourhood of the Mission Station during my late long absence, and proselyted about eight of the poor Heathen—certainly making them worse (in their behaviour, at least to their resident benefactor) than they were before.

My own health has been much as usual; plenty of Rheumatism, and, at times, no small amount of low Fever; still, I have struggled hard to do my expected duty. I was again taken seriously ill during my last journey, and am still very weak. I regret to say, that, I feel, I shall be obliged to relinquish one of my two yearly journeys throughout the District—that in the Spring quarter—unless a greater measure of strength be mine, than I have for some time had or at present possess.

Perhaps I should mention, that early in the year, I received a Letter from the Government, informing me, that serious charges of a Treasonable nature had been preferred against me by some whites. However, a simple straightforward statement of facts, which I was enabled to make in reply, not only set that matter at rest, but, also, turned the tables upon my adversaries.

I have, also, very recently received fresh Communications from the Government, earnestly requesting me to use my influence with the Native Chiefs of the District to sell the whole of their Lands in one block from Ahuriri to Port Nicholson, to the Government, when the Government would return them their villages, &c. I have answered these Communications, by simply but (I hope) respectfully declining to have any thing to do in any way whatever with the matter.—

Sigd. William Colenso

Waitangi

January 1/ 1849.

1849 February 28: to the CMS
Secretaries¹⁸⁰

Waitangi, Hawkes Bay
N. Zealand, February 28, 1849.

To

The Secretaries
C.M. House
Salisbury Sq.
London.

My dear Sirs,

1. On the 26th. instant I received a packet from the Rev. J. Hamlin (who had recently returned to his Station from attending the Annual local Comee. at Turanga, containing:—

1. A copy of your Letter to the Ven. Archd. W. Williams, dated Feby. 24/48, respecting the a/c of expenses incurred by me in establishing this Station, &c., and enclosing a Copy of the Resolution of the Comee. of Corr., dated Feby. 1/48:—and,
2. A copy of “Extract of Minutes of E.D. Comee., held at Uawa, May 6/47”:—and
3. A Letter from the Archdn. of the District, dated Jany. 30/49, in which (referring to the foregoing,) he says,—“You will see, by a Letter of the Society, a Copy of which is enclosed, that they wished further information about your first a/c. The observations of this Comee. they have long ere this received. I send you a copy of them extracted from the Minutes”.—

2. I thought, when I sent you the Copy of the a/cs of expenses incurred in establishing this Station, I had so plainly stated a few facts in simple language, that I should not have to write again upon the subject. With the Resoln. of the Comee. of Corresp. I feel particularly pleased; and so, perhaps, I may generally say of your accompanying Letter. Although you state, that many of the Charges therein appear to the Commee. to be high, especially with regards to his entertaining an European [2] Carpenter in almost constant pay. All I have to say in reply to those remarks, in addition to what I wrote and sent with the a/cs is—

1. That as you have not particularly pointed out those Charges which “appear to you to be high,” and as I do not know them, I cannot offer any explanatory remark upon them;—*the prices paid to the Natives for the erection of the houses*, have always been considered as being *remarkably low*. I could not, I solemnly assure you, *now* get the same work done here for the same amount of money notwithstanding all my influence.
2. That in reference to your remark,—“Especially with regard to his entertaining an European Carpenter in almost contract pay”.—Let us examine this:—

I believe the Sums charged to the C.M.S., for this man’s labor, during 2 years, is £35., for which sum (or, rather, no more has been debited against the C.M.S.,) he has done, not only all the Carpenter’s

work of the 4 houses of the Station, (as well as made Gates, glazed windows, painted ditto & doors, repaired Canoes, made windows for distant Chapels, (without including those for Station Chapel,) made wheelbarrow, Lesson boards, &c., but, also, built 3 Chimnies, laid mud floors, cut a drain beneath the house & filled it with blocks of pumice, stored and unpacked goods, stores, &c., (at first an arduous task,) burnt and mixed Lime, Superintended Native Workmen, assisted in making up pills and other Medicines, &c.,—and, in short, generally helped about Public Work, which, had he not done, or not have been here to do, I could not possibly have travelled as I did during the first year of our residence, in which I was absent [3] (see Report and Journal) 163 days. But I am very well content for the Archdeacon’s Carpenter, or for any other Carpenter, to value the Carpenter’s work *alone* of the station; which I believe, will exceed the sum of £35. Of course, you are well aware that there is a vast difference between the amount of work done by a Carpenter working at home in a workshop where he has every thing at his hand, and a man just thrown on a wild shore, having not only every thing to do for himself, but, also, to make and fix handles to the new tools, to file and grind & sharpen them, to fix his grindstone, make his bench, and many other things of that kind, as well as to hew down timber (sometimes trees) of irregular thicknesses (supplied by Natives) ere it can be used for his work, (which in other places is done by Sawyers, &c.,) and all this, and much more, while being continually thronged on all sides by a rude Heathen people.[Allow, me to add;—This man, a Communicant and a good Christian, is still with me, having entered on his 5th year in my employ, during which his *work* (I may safely say,) has altogether been of a Public nature. He has not remained with me for the sake of wages, for I have only paid him about £30. pr. ann.,—(the whole of which might very justly have been allowed him by the C.M.S.,)—but, because he wished for a quiet situation. His name is Keir; he is of a highly respectable Scotch family, and formerly held one of the principal Breweries in Edinburgh: the better Class of Natives respect him much.]

3. The extract of minutes of the E.D. Commee. held at Uawa, May 6/47—although entirely relating to myself—I have only now heard of. And when I consider that I sent [4] the original of my a/c with my remarks thereupon to you *through* that Comee., that they might fully know what I had forwarded, I cannot but conclude that they ought to have made me acquainted with their Minutes upon the same.—

Those Minutes, six in number, I will now remark on—*seriatim*.

The Ist., upon “the sum of £70 being allowed me, &c.”—and the same “being considered sufficient outlay for a mere temporary dwelling;”—I only have to remark:—

—That the houses on my Station are *not* “mere temporary dwellings”, as those know who have seen them.

The IInd., (which I quote *verbatim*),—“A similar sum was assigned to Mr. Hamlin, who found it enough to pay the erection of a building which accommodates his family,

though very much more numerous than that of Mr. Colenso.”—

Upon this minute I would remark:—

1. That Mr. Hamlin did not *pay for the erection* of a building for himself, which he himself had ordered, but rather purchased an old building, which had been erected some time before my visit in 1843, when the Archdeacon & myself pitched our tents in it; and which then appeared to be in a weak state, through poor materials & workmanship:—

2. There is no comparison whatever (and let the Archdeacon who has often seen both judge) between Mr. Hamlin’s Dwelling-house and mine—in respect of size, materials, labor, and workmanship. Mine being much *larger*; the wood, *totara*, in massy slabs brought from a great distance (there being none at hand); while that of Mr. Hamlin’s is *kahikatea* (white pine, the most [5] inferior in durable quality of all the N. Zealand timbers; (from woods growing close by; and the workmanship of my dwelling is much superior to that of Mr. Hamlin’s. Besides, my Dwelling-house has a floored Verandah, 48 x 8;—the whole of these premises had, from their low and marshy situation, to be drained, by cutting a drain around them;—they possess three (now 6) strongly built Chimnies, the stone of which had to be brought from Ahuriri, 7 miles distant, by Natives; while Mr. Hamlin’s has only two;—and I have, also, a detached Study and printing room, the materials and workmanship of which are far superior even to that of the Dwelling-house.

3. That there is no parallel whatever between Mr. Hamlin & myself:—for Mr. Hamlin removed to Te Wairoa from an old Station, where he had always lived alone, and, consequently must have had very many such things as Tools of all kinds, and sundry Public Stores, (as nails, screws, glass, Paint, oils, Iron, Grindstone, &c.,)—and, also, Doors, Windows, &c., all of which I had to purchase before I left the Bay, otherwise I must have lived here as a Native, or have subsequently waited until I got such a supply.—

4. That such was the condition of Mr. Hamlin’s house, that it was deemed necessary for the Builder, who had just finished the Archdeacon’s, to commence erecting a wooden one for Mr. Hamlin without loss of time, and which is, I believe, now nearly finished,—while my house is still *good*, and (as I said before) will serve me for many years to come. (casualties excepted), with perhaps the addition of a new coat of thatch on the roof every 2nd. or 3rd. year.—[6] Perhaps I should here observe that in ordering a house to be erected, when here with the Archdeacon in 1843, I did not order it to be of the size which the Natives built it, but as they had put up a very *large* & substantial Chapel, so they thought proper to put up an extra large and extra good house for the Minister of the same.

The IIIrd.—The “proposal made by the Commee. through Archd. W. Williams” (verbal, I presume,) to allow me for the amount of what nails, glass, &c., should be left on hand, after my house had been finished; the said “amount to be considered part of the sum to be hereafter expended on a more substantial house.”—

I have to remark on this:—

1. That I neither did, nor do, want a “more substantial dwelling”.—

2. That if I had acceded to this proposal, I should not have had a nail which I could have given out for the erecting of a single Chapel, nor for a Coffin, without an application to the Commee.—

3. That all those Stores were already far too much injured, (see next par. seq.) and would be too much exposed (having, in fact, been all since submersed, and likely to be so again,) to think of keeping them laid by for so long a period as they were then likely to be; and, perhaps, when about to be used, found not to be suitable.—

4. That it was in a great measure my misfortune rather than choice that I became possessed of so many “Stores” of a certain kind; such as hinges, nails, and some [7] (to me) almost useless. For, on my return to the Waimate, from visiting these parts (having been sent hither by the Bishop,) in the early part of 1844, I found—that a great number of things had lately arrived from England for Te Wairoa Station, but charged against, and paid for by, the Rev. W.C. Dudley—that Mr. Dudley, wishing to get rid of them as quickly as possible, had disposed of much of the more useful of these articles, and the remainder were left upon his hands—that Mr. Dudley seemed to feel it, and often spoke about it—that I agreed to take all he had left at Invoice price, (which I, afterwards, found to amount to £48.1.5.) without seeing many of them—and, that some of them were subsequently found to have been much wetted with Salt water. And, further,—that on the arrival of Archd. W. Williams at the Waimate, I was informed that some of the *Stores* for Mr. Dudley had been landed at Poverty Bay—that I also agreed to take them (not knowing exactly what they were)—that on my arrival in Poverty Bay (in Dec /44,) on my way to my Station, those Stores were sent on board—that I afterwards paid the bill of the same (furnished by the Archdeacon) amounting to £40.13.0.—that among other items were the following,—“Locks” (rusty) “20/3: files 5/6: Butt hinges 10/10: Gimlets, 3 doz. 7/7: Guages 6/2: Flasks & Nails £9.16.3.” (the nails were dreadfully rusted, being so caked together, that we were obliged to burn them in a strong fire before we could separate them one from another) all of which were of little use to me, I having those things by me already—and that my own private [8] loss in a great many of those Stores (*not* charged by me in my a/c with C.M.S.) has been very considerable.—

And here it may truly enough be asked, “What could have induced you to buy stores to such an extent, and that too without seeing them?” To which I must briefly reply,—that I needed a sufficiency of Stores to begin a new Station with—that I did not know they would come to so much—that they were scattered, some at the Kerikeri, some at Kororareka, and others at Poverty Bay—that I had not a moment’s time to lose, being then very busy preparing for ordination—and that the whole having been ordered for a new Station (Te Wairoa) by the Archdeacon, I fully believed they would all prove useful for Ahuriri.

The remark of the E.D. Comee. which follows this (their IIIrd.) minute, of theirs, I cannot but consider most uncalled for,—and that without for a moment denying the truth of it.—Because,

1. At every station throughout the Island, those kind of houses have been erected for the missionaries.—

2. Although I have seen many, I have not seen any more roomy, or more substantially put together, or more carefully

fenced round and supplied with Gates, &c., so as to provide (as far as may be) against casualty, than those of this Station.—

3. In my last journey throughout N. Zealand, I found, at several of the Mission Stations which had been some years established, those kind of houses still in use at Rotorua, Tauranga, Otawao, & Waikato, [9] as well as at Uawa, and Turanga; some of which dwellings had stood for many years.

4. During my residence in this country, from 1834, I have not known a single Mission Dwelling house of *this kind* to have been destroyed by fire. But, on the contrary,

The wooden house of Mr. Parker of Paihia;

The wooden house of the Archdeacon at Turanga;

The wooden house of the Rev. R. Maunsell, at Waikato; &

The wooden house of Rev. G. Kissling, at Auckland;

were all destroyed by fire! The Archdeacon's when on the eve of finishing!! Mr. Maunsell's after he had only been in it a fortnight!!! While their old & "*most dangerous raupo*" dwellings are standing to this day!

The IVth. Minute shall be very briefly despatched;—because 1. the Commee. only then (six months after the date of my accounts, and nearly 2 years after I had put Doors, Windows, Desk, Com. table, &c., in the Church,) "propose to allow for Reading Desks, &c."; and that only "*when the Natives are willing to erect such buildings as will fairly warrant such expenditure*"; which of course, (fairly reasoning from analogy) means,—when they shall erect *wooden* buildings, which will not I believe, be done in my day. And,

2nd. Concerning the "offer to contribute—made through the Archdeacon," (verbally I presume,) for I have no precise recollection of it—I confess I should certainly not have accepted a *Contribution* from my brethren for such a purpose, for in such cases, I could only look on it as a loan to be repaid, whenever they should proceed [10] to set in order their own Chapels.

The Vth.—"Medicines had been provided for the Ahuriri Station, as well as that at Te Wairoa by the Commee.; but the Medicines of which Mr. Colenso speaks were sent for without any reference to the Commee. Several Members of the Mission, both in the Northern and Middle Districts, have sent for Medicine Chests which they have paid for on private account."—

Let me examine this:—

1. "Medicines had been provided for the Ahuriri Station, as well as for that at Te Wairoa":—

Granted:—but, (as I said before,)—

a. Mr Hamlin came from an *old* Station where he had been *alone*, consequently the Doctor of that place and neighbourhood, and, doubtless possessing many medicines, including Scales and weights, glasses, mortars, pallet knives, &c.—

β. Annexed is a list of all the Medicines which I received on board our vessel from the Archdeacon while at Turanga;

copied, *verbatim*, from the Archdeacon's letter.¹⁸¹ Surely I need not point out what are required in addition to them.

γ. It may, however, be here remarked, "That I was known to have a tolerably good assortment, if not stock, of Medicines, when residing at Paihia":—Granted:—but, 1. before the arrival of Mr. Ford, as Surgeon, I had the whole Surgery in my house and under my Care; but on his arrival he took away every thing,—and, [11]

2. Afterwards I obtained some more from the Kerikeri Store, in common with Archd. Williams and Mr. Baker, (before Mr. Baker's removal to the substation at the Waikare,) but on Mr. Ford's resigning his Situation as Surgeon, the Natives came as before to me for relief, and there being no longer any Public Store to draw from, my little stock soon become exhausted. [Vide reports of those years, 1841, 1842, 1843.]

2. "The medicines of which Mr. Colenso speaks were sent for without any reference to the Commee:—

True:—

a. For how could I possibly have referred to the E.D. Commee. (or to any other Commee.) at the time of my sending for those Medicines? They being sent for, through the C.M.S., (in common with many Stores of a Public nature,) in July 1842. (Hudson's invoice is dated, Feb. 1843.) All of which things were ordered, prospectively—believing that I should soon be sent somewhere to the South, and knowing that *I* had no Public Store to draw from. (Which *benefit*, be it remembered *all* my brethren had who preceded me.)

β. Yet, they were not wholly selected nor sent for upon my own unprofessional responsibility; Mr. Ford, then our Surgeon, well-knowing what I required both for myself and for the Natives, kindly guided me in this matter; for which I still feel grateful.—

3. "Several members of the Mission, both in the Northern & Middle Districts, have sent for Medicine Chests, which they have paid for on private accounts." [12]

Very true, indeed; and very proper too.—

(and I know some of the persons alluded to;) but, there is a wonderful difference between the two Cases. They sent for Medicine Chests—elegantly fitted-up articles—principally, because they were portable, & retained the Medicines in nicely-stopped vessels, &c.; not because they needed the

181 "List of Medicines for Rev. W. Colenso"

Cream of Tartar.
Chloride of Lime.
Jalap.
Rhubarb.
Carb. of Soda.
Sugar of Lead.
Colocynth.
White precipitate.
Red ditto.
Aut. Powder)
Tartar Emetic)
Quinine.) a *small* quantity of each.
Isinglass.)
Ext. Conii.
Ext. Hyoscyami.
Calaminaris
Tile for making pills.
Magnesia.
Blister plaster
Salts—to be taken from Mr. Hamlin's Cask.
(Signed) W. Williams."

Medicines which those Chests contained. And that (I recollect) was one of the principal reasons urged in a Commee. against the C.M.S. paying for one of those so-ordered “Medicine *Chests*”; because the party had those very Medicines already by him.—

I believe I may be allowed to say:—

—That, from the very circumstance of my being farther off—not only from Medical aid, but, also, from civilized man, than any of my brethren in N. Zealand—some extra-latitude should have been allowed me.

—That from the circumstances of my being placed, in, perhaps, a more unhealthy situation than some of my brethren; and, unlike them, without any other European resident to whom any of the sick Natives might occasionally apply—with a more extensive charge—some consideration should have been shown me.—

—That from the circumstance of my never having (during the years in which I have been in the employ of the C.M.S.) cost the Society any actual outlay for myself, wife, or children, for [13] Medicine, or Medical aid,—together with the known fact, that in the several serious illnesses with which it has pleased GOD to visit me since my residence here, those, *very medicines* have been (humanly speaking) *the* means of rescuing me from the brink of the grave—I can not but think the E.D. Comee. should have paused, ere they, in May, 1847, after my recovery from several attacks of serious illness,) deliberately entered such a Minute concerning a few Medicines.

The VIth.—on this Minute I have no observation to make.

The sum of £10.5.0 charged under “Travelling Expenses”,—(which had been paid by me on the a/c of the C.M.S., and which had been refused payment by the E.D. Comee.) was subsequently carried to my Credit. This, therefore, will have to be deducted from the amount of £171.14.7., claimed by me as being still due from the C.M.S.

4. I have now, my dear Sirs, written a very great deal more, on a most unwelcome and unprofitable subject, than I ever intended to do; and I hope I have now quite done with it.

5. I have yet, however, somewhat more to say upon certain matters not altogether foreign to the contents of this Letter:—viz., Shipping Expenses, Travelling ditto, Medicines, and Native Teachers.—

1. “Shipping Expenses”:—The E.D. Comee. have last [14] year informed me, that the Central Comee. had resolved not to allow any more Shipping Expenses, save for articles of a Public Nature; hence, out of my bill of Shipping Expenses paid by me during that year, amounting to £10.7.4., I was only allowed £2.7.0. Now this, I think, is very hard; because, in our case, those Shipping Expenses arise from our out-of-the-way Station; so that we have not only the benefit of residing at “*ultima Thule*”, but of paying, as it were, a tax for so doing, in the *additional* and heavy *extra* shipping expenses arising therefrom!—amounting, perhaps, at present, to from £10. to £20. per ann. It is perfectly fair that I should pay all shipping expenses on goods from England and elsewhere to their Port of Consignment in New Zealand, but certainly not their double warehousing, and double or treble Shipping coastwise to the Station.

2. “Travelling Expenses”.—Last year the E.D. Comee. refused to pay for my Tent and Tarpaulins, &c., saying that in future those expenses must be borne by the individual. Now, in my case, having so much more of heavy travelling than my brethren, I must necessarily need more of those articles. A Tent and Tarpaulins, with the utmost care, will scarcely serve me 2 years upon this exposed & stormy line of Coast, while in a more favored situation, with less of *actual Tent Service*, a tent &c., may serve 5 or 6 years.

3. “Medicines”.—When I sent in my Returns, &c., to the E.D. Comee. in Decr. last, I, also, sent a List of a [15] few Medicines *wanted* for the Station (a copy of which I enclose). I have just got a letter from the Archdeacon, in which he says—“By the “Clara” recently from England, the Society has repeated the shipment which came by the “Louisa Campbell,” supposing the former supplies were lost. There is therefore for you a repetition of the Medicines, and under these circumstances we are not able to make out an Indent for Medicines, having more now than we can pay for.”—Now, all this is very good, but what am I to do for those Medicines which I so much need? The Rhubarb and the Jalap, the Carbonate of Soda and Cream of Tartar, the Spanish Juice and the Calaminaris, will not stand in stead of the Calomel & Blue Pill, the Antimonial powder and Opium, the Sulphate & Hyd of Zinc, the Quinine & Emetic Tartar. These Medicines, my dear Sirs, (allow me respectfully to say,) I must have, if I am to be kept at this place; and that too with as little delay as possible. Here, where, twice a year, we are subject to epidemical visitations of Influenza, to be without a grain of Tartar Emetic? Where Marsh Fevers—of almost a Typhoid character—never fail both in spring and autumn, to be without Calomel, Quinine, Antimonial powder and opium? Where Ophthalmia is common, without a grain of Sulphate of Zinc for a wash? Where the Hooping Cough has raged, and not to have a fraction of oxyd. of Zinc? oh! I would that I was well rid of this dispensing work, but as [16] long as I have it to attend to I must do my best. Of course, in saying (ante) “*I must have those Medicines*”, I shall be understood to mean, that if the C.M.S. cannot allow them, I must even be content to pay for them myself. I will, therefore, thank you to let me have the enclosed order executed and sent out as quickly as possible, viâ Wellington.

4. “Native Teachers.” Under this head I need a very considerably larger allowance for this large district than I now have. I cannot myself travel so much as I have done, and I see that great good may be effected and kept alive and growing through the agency of a few chosen N. Teachers, *as visitors* to the out-villages; but they cannot be expected to wear out their few clothes in going through brake and brier without compensation. I pray you to consider this subject.—

6. I proposed to the Archdeacon, and now I propose it again, that if there is not enough allowed for this District our *Stipends* be mulcted, and *not* the absolutely *necessary* expenses. For, in not allowing such, the work itself receives its death-blow; the active and zealous worker is paralysed; and heavy travelling will soon be brought to a close. For, although I am the person receiving the lowest stipend of any in this district (and have nothing of my own to fall back upon), I would rather have to pay back £30. every year from my salary (if needed), than see £10. refused for necessary Travelling [17] expenses, or for the payment of Native Teachers, or for Medicines to benefit the Natives.

7. If the Travelling and Shipping Expenses, N. Teacher's payments, Medicines, &c., &c., continue as they have been to be increasingly disallowed; it will yet be a consideration with me, to petition the C.M.S to be allowed to remove to some other part of the N. Zealand Mission Field, where those heavy drawbacks are less, or where the District duties are easier.

8. I hope, my dear Sirs, in your many laudable plans for Reform & Retrenchment, you have not been led to retrench too much in necessary things, so as to injure the spirit of your Mission. When we alter we are all too prone to incline too much to the other side.

I close this more abruptly than I could: the vessel sailing hence this evening. May the Lord our GOD direct and preserve us all always, is the prayer of

My dear Sirs,
Your very humble Servant.
William Colenso

To
The Secretaries,
Church Miss. House,
Salisbury Square,
London.

1849 March 2: to the CMS¹⁸²

List of Medicines wanted for
Ahuriri Station

Calomel, 8 oz.
Quassia (raspings) 3 lbs.
Tartarized Antimony, 2 oz.
Extract Conii, 1 pound.
Blue Pill, 1 pound.
Sulphur Vivum, 10 pounds.
Turpentine, 2 gallons.
Opium (crude) 8 oz.
Ipecacuanha Root, (Brown), 1 pound
Antimonial Powder, 4 oz.
Dover's Powder, 1 pound.
Quinine, 4 oz.
Newberry's James' powder, 1 bottle.
Sulph. Potass. (pulv.) 1 pound.
Zinc Sulph., 4 oz.
Zinc Oxyd. 2 oz.
2 Lancets
1 Mortar (Wedgwood)

William Colenso
March 2/49.

☞ In sending in the above to E.D. Comee. I did not mention any quantity.

1849 April 8: to Gunn¹⁸³

Wellington
Easter Sunday, 1849.

My dear Sir

Your very welcome letter of 24 July reached me duly in the summer, but from illness, household affliction, the ever press of business (and I may truly enough say lack of opportunity from my out-of-the-way Station), I have again procrastinated until the present, and now, being here only for a few hours, I write in a great hurry.

Your letter contained much of *News*—for, had I not received it I should have been somewhat uneasy at not hearing from, nor of, our Botanical friend. Up to the present I have neither heard from Sir William nor Dr. Jos. Hooker—If I except a note of Introduction which came from Sir William enclosed in a Letter from Dr. Harvey of *Fl. Capensis*. I have however received the *last* no. of the *Flora. Antarca.*, so that now my sett is complete. Had Dr. Hooker commenced with N.Z. Plants—more, perhaps, than half of his *Flora Antarca.*, would have been there included.

In spite of all my labours & distractions, I managed to send them another case of specimens *since* I last wrote to you; making the *third* from these parts. I confess, had I known the *Flora N.Z.* would not have been commenced ere this, I should not have exerted myself as I did by night & day—to get them off.

I have had several applications both from Noble & Scientific men for specimens—which I have been obliged to refuse to attend to, sorely against my will.

I cannot attend to Reeve's requests in any other way than my proposal which I made to him through Dr. J. Hooker—viz.—that I would send him specimens of *all* my shells (perhaps amountg. to 200 species) for a sett of His Conchological works¹⁸⁴—a fair exchange, and a finish.—

Swainson lives in this neighbourhood, and is, I suppose, busy—as he keeps little or no company, & lives retired: he has ample opportunity for doing a great deal.

I suppose you have heard ere this from Dr. Hooker—any Information you can give respecting him will be always acceptable.—

I have had during the past year, a great deal of writing to the Government—at *first* of a very unpleasant nature. This consumed no small portion of time which might have been more profitably—or, at least, more pleasantly employed. Into that vortex I was drawn through some of my miserable countrymen, who were pleased to charge me with something akin to Treason! I scarcely need add, that I came off, as they say, “with Flying Colours”—much to their chagrin & bitter disappointment.¹⁸⁵

I still hope to do somewhat for your “Journal”—but I must not again *promise*.

I am still in my uncomfortable quarters, with little prospect of a remove.

Some of the Books (and perhaps Letters) sent from the Hookers have for certain been lost—as Dr. H. mentions

183 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0715

184 A proposal made in his letter to Kew of 6 August 1846.

185 Colenso refers to the charge that he had dissuaded Wairarapa Māori from working on the roads.

particularly *Raoul's Flora N.Z.*, & some other Frenchmen's productions, which I have never seen. Any thing on N.Z. Botany, or the allied Flora's (V.D.L. & the Southern Islets,) interest me much.

In my last case despatched, were some new Ferns, & new Cryptogamic plants; little else of novelty, save some Algæ.

This town has been all but completely shook to pieces with the numerous shocks of earthquakes which have lately occurred. The House in which I now am is completely ruined, and is deserted! but all this you must have read in the papers. It is a curious fact, that at Hawkes Bay (my station) where earthquakes were so common, we have not had a single shock, since the first which floored the Wellingtonians. The shocks still continue here at intervals.—a barbarous murder has very recently been committed in this neighbourhood—a quiet Settler & his 3 little ones all murdered in the night: a Native is now in custody upon circumstantial evidence, and a special Commission has been called to try him. I am now going to visit him.

I leave (D.V.) on my return Journey tomorrow, & hope to reach my station by the middle of May.

I am almost ashamed to send you such a uninteresting scratch—but, the thing is, this or none at this time.

Believe me

My dear Mr Gunn
Always sincerely yours
William Colenso.

1849 June 27: to Morris¹⁸⁶

Waitangi
June 27, 1849.

Mr. W. Morris.

My dear Sir

Returning to my Station a few days ago, after my usual long autumnal rambling (upwards of 90 days)—I found among other welcome Letters one from you—and now that I am about to send a Native on to Turanga, I must find time to write a line to thank you for the same.—

Since you left our neighbourhood, I have very often indeed had you in my thoughts;—and had heard you were coming back again to Rangaika, which pleased me not a little; for I have proved you to be a good neighbour, and am still indebted to you for many little acts of kindness.—

The goods you so kindly brought me, I duly and safely received; the Cooper brought them in his boat to the door—following out, as it were, your kind example.—Of course you will receive freightage for them from Mr. Williams—who has generally paid freightages from Poverty, I repaying him again.

It is now very wet & stormy; the Gipsy is undergoing repair at Ahuriri, and was very nearly lost, in the late severe weather, off the Cape.

Mr. Kier has left me at last,—he went away about 2 months ago, during my absence; he has bought some Land in the

Rangitikei River, where, I suppose, he will eventually settle down. I feel as if I had lost an arm, now that he is gone—for I scarcely know any thing about the stores or their places.—

I hope you are doing well and that your Children with yourself enjoy good health. We have very much of sickness about us. I am thinking of removing to Waimarama, which place has several advantages—I want a warmer & dryer spot than this.

May GOD bless you my good old neighbour Morris, and give you to see & know that true treasure Jesus Christ,—may you find *when in your need*—whenever that may be—that you live in Jesus, through God's mercy, *all* you need—a friend who sticketh closer than a Brother. A line from you will always give me pleasure.

Believe me, ever sincerely yours
William Colenso.

1850 January 7: to Renata Kawepo¹⁸⁷

Translation of Native Letters

Copy of my letter to Leonard Kawepo

To the Pokonao,
To Leonard Kawepo.

Waitangi, Monday night
January 7th. 1850

O Sir,

O Leonard, greeting to thee, my love to thee is great. Yes, indeed, O Sir, true is my saying, here am I sorrowing for thee; here am I concerned for thee. If I had no love for thee, thou wouldst not at this time see my writing, neither should I be sorry or concerned for thee. Notwithstanding, Sir, I did not exactly know this morning what I should say to thee; I have indeed considered deeply, and now at length my mind is fixed. On my praying just now for thee that thou mightest be spared & be brought back into the right path; yes, it was then, O friend, on my remembering the word of our Lord which I read at morning prayer this day: (viz.) Matthew v. 42.

O Sir, O Leonard Kawepo, greeting to thee, that is to say to that Leonard who came with me from the Bay of Islands, to that Leonard I now write. O Sir, alas! greeting to thee. May God direct and teach me; as that my writing to thee may be correct.—

Behold, O Sir: Alas! we must be separated. Now immediately I will cease thy word of being Teacher now thine heart be dark without cause at this word. Say not, "This thing is done suddenly"; or "done in a hurry"; or "no one knows what this is for". O Sir, not so. For a long period have my thoughts wrought within me that thou shouldst sit still, ever since the other year, even 1848 while Mr. Kier was still here; at that time it was that my thoughts & thy actions began to (degenerate?). But, O Sir, it was but a little then at the first commencement of thy starting aside; yet it has long ago been perceived by us, that is, by all of us, and we have all felt much concerned on thy account. Yes, I bore

186 ATL MS-Papers-7497.

187 ATL 91-169-1/2. This is a handwritten copy of Colenso's own translation.

long (with thee) I said in my heart, that thou wouldst surely see thy own degeneracy, & that thou wouldst then return.

But, not so. Then I thought, when Hirini Tarahawaiki comes (here, to remain as teacher,) then perhaps; or at the time perhaps when I should remove inland to the Waitaurakai; yes, even thus O Sir, was it within me. Nevertheless, that thou mayest not say that this word of mine is untrue, let me now remind thee of the numerous admonitions I gave thee in the year which is just passed. Did I not O friend, remind thee privately, of the numerous things which were said by the people concerning thee? yes, & of thy growing apathy towards School and prayers,—of thy never once visiting any of the numerous sick, although close to thee at thy own village,—of thy approaching more & more towards heathenish ideas, with regard to land, to women, to chiefs, to trading, and to many other things—(also with regard) to thy continually keeping thyself aloof and out of the sight of me thy Minister, thou didst never come near me unless expressly sent for. And, with regard to these likewise, (which I now for the first time mention to thee,) viz., the altered and unprofitable nature of thy sermons on the Sabbath-days; and the altered and unprofitable nature of thy prayers on Prayer-meeting evenings, (this was the principal thing in which I detected (the declension of) my friend, and I felt grieved for thee,) and, certain of my native teachers likewise spoke to me concerning thee, grieving on thy account, and saying, Alas! how much altered for the worse, is the manner, and the talk, and the style of writing of Leonard; and, thy word to me likewise at our last conversation, thou didst say, that, “Thou didst not understand the meaning of the Chapters so as to explain them in class.”—

Now, O friend, it is not that thou mayest be completely cut up, that I write these things to thee, not so indeed; but rather, this is a true thing to destroy the natural heart which is continually striving and searching for something whereby to excuse itself. Therefore it is that I give thee these little promptings of admonition. Inasmuch as I consider,—that the conscience of my friend, who accompanied me from the North, is not yet perhaps utterly destroyed.

O Sir, O Leonard, thou wast a different man formerly. Yes, thy conversation was pleasant to me; thy prayers were good; thy ways were correct; at the period when thou wast spoken against by the many, but, wast praised and kindly treated by his Minister. But as for this, the fine gold is become tarnished, and that which was light within thee is become darkness! And for this reason, formerly thou didst not approve of those who receive the truth in unrighteousness; thou didst not care to have any fellowship with them; thou didst not approve of heathenish talk and wrong actions. But, at that time, thy reading was pleasant to thyself, thy secret prayers to God were sweet; thou wast joyful, and thoughtful, and internally illuminated when thou hadst a word to say for thy Lord, or when thou didst expound at a loss for words, thou didst not tire, nor be at a loss for words. And thy words to us were good, and to some of thy friends and mine; good words, peaceable words; words of Christ were thy words and thy writing too.

Now, O Son, O Leonard, I am thoughtful much for thee,—for thee and for thy wife (Maud) and her child. Suffer my single word O friend, that is, dwell quietly. Do not thou have anything to say against the faith, or against the ruler of the church; lest thy lips should err. Yes, dwell peaceably, and repent thou when the stirring up time shall come from

the presence of God. Do not thou attend to Heathen men, to their sayings; perhaps it would be much better if thou wert to listen to that of thy Minister who truly loves thee, & who watcheth for thy soul—having regard to his own Judge—And, although perhaps thou wilt not assent to what I write at this present time, nor will thou perhaps receive what I say when it reaches thee; yet leave it awhile; to my mind it is true; and I yet look forward in expectation of receiving thy full assent thereto, hereafter;—when the scales shall have fallen from thine eyes.

Behold, I am left alone, O Sir, O Leonard, I am left alone by myself; but, not so. Here, with me, is my Protector. Greatly hath he comforted me this day; He will not forsake me. Yes, this day, at this time, this time of weakness, and trouble, has he made His strength to appear in his weak servant, that the churches may see that from Him alone is strength derived.

Now, know, O Sir, I pray for thee, that thine eyes may be opened; that thou mayest be lifted up out of the miry pit, and that thou mayest be made to stand anew upon the Rock. Yes, &, for thy wife likewise for Maud, that her heart may be consoled by the Comforter. That is all, it is finished.

From me is this writing
From thy loving Minister,
From Colenso.

No. 3.

Extracts from Leonard's answer to the foregoing

“O Sir, O Colenso, greeting to thee, the man who is crying to God, greeting to thee, yes, O Sir, greeting to thee. This is my word to thee. Good is thy word of condemnation of me, it is good. Yes, I will assent to thee on account of my sins. Yes, I am a sinful man, I will not deny that which thou hast here said, it is good. I told thee on this Sabbath-day, & before also, that it was want of food, and the continual wandering of the people, and the thought for my body, this is the root of my errors, of my sins, this is the very thing. xxxxxxxxxxxx O Sir, behold, that thou shouldst put me down is good, thou didst say that I should be a Teacher, and thou hast taken it from me it is good. xxxxxxxxxxxx. For two weeks hast thou been preaching about me, therefore I went inland, to my estate, to Heretaunga, and on Sunday when you saw me you were again angry with me, and so on to the Monday, I said this is Heathenish anger against me, for two weeks hast thou been at me, then I said, It is just as though I had made myself the head of the teacher that thou keepest grumbling so at me, for two weeks hast thou been mocking me, I will go out x x x x x. Now, if it is for my sins that thou hast put me down, why didst thou not put me down at the time? rather it is because I answered thee that thou hast thus put me down. x x x x x Thou seekest to see upon me the fruits of repentance; let that wish be there aside; if thou shouldst see that it is true, if wrong let it be so. x x x x x

Behold, here is my one word, that is concerning our bodies; behold, I have been a shield (for thee) the breakwater of the bows, but now that it is broken down, the waves will rush into midships; this is sufficient. I, perhaps, had better step aside, I, this defence of this storehouse, I, the door which has been broken; I, this fence which has been battered down; being dirty, being defiled with wickedness, with sin, with darkness, with error; henceforward nothing but wind

shall blow on the earth; take back then thy gift of kindness to me x x x x x

That is all, from thy son formerly, now from error, from sin, from wickedness this to thee,

(Signed) From Leonard formerly, at present from error this letter to thee."

A day or two afterwards (during my absence at Tangoio) he sent me another letter, extracts from which I here subjoin.—

"O my father, greeting to thee. Good is thy word of lamentation over me; it is good. x x x x Behold, my words against thee are gone forth, of which thou hast already heard through Heihei. It was thy fault, in that thou didst grumble so continually at me, therefore I said to thee, that I am a body shield, a break-wind and these thou hast broken down. Behold the wind blows upon the earth how violently! Notwithstanding my words concerning thee are nothing but bad, because thou didst find fault with me. That is it—it is evil, a thrusting thee forth, that thou mayest begone; and I, I have been seen by the shepherd's of Christ's flock, and they have known me. I do belong to the fold, an erring sheep whom Satan & Colenso have slain, & Christ will leave the flock and return to search for the sheep which erred.

Behold, hear thou, great will be the wind blowing upon the earth. Behold my anger against thee is great, but within my heart there is nothing but love towards thee. Behold, be thou very patient when the wind shall have reached thee,. That is all, here I am still feeling love towards thee, From thy bad son, From Leonard.

If thou shouldst be thrust out by the people & bid begone, do not thou be cast down at that saying. Presently I will be angry with this people, I shall fight against them this day. When thou arrivest here, a Committee will be held about thee, by this people, and if their talk concerning thee be bad, then will I turn upon them and chide them. I will not permit thee to be killed by them, no, thy being angry with me, and my being angry with thee is all very good, because it is a parent's anger and a child's anger, afterwards the parent is a parent and the child is a child, sympathizing back and sympathizing forth, loving back and loving forth. And there is love yet within the heart, although great may be the evil towards thee, be thou very patient, for if they should leap forward to attack thee it will be bad."

(I suppose, that Leonard having succeeded in rousing the evil passions of the Native Chiefs (and seeing the extent to which he had carried them,) his heart began to fear the ultimate consequences, and therefore he wrote me the foregoing. Mrs Colenso tells me, it was brought by Muora, L's. wife, on the evening of the 16th. Jany., the day of my return to the Station)

(copy)

No.4.

"From the Rongootuhawaiki."
(the name of the large house of K.
Takau in the pa at Te A.)

To Waitangi, to Colenso

O Sir, greeting to thee, this is our word to thee, listen thou, on Friday come hither, that we may talk together, and put in

order the talk which is straight and the talk which is wrong, which has been shewn to us this year, and the ways of former days which are good or bad. Those which are bad to be cast aside, those which are good to be retained as valuable and as work for the people. If thou assent to these words, that is all the talk will be finished upon thy assenting, that is all.

(Signed) From me, From te Moananui
From Karaitiana
From te Ahu (Tareha)
From thy loving friends.

No. 5.

(1.) O ye people, O Ngatikahungunu, greeting to you. This is my question to you, What is this Committee of yours? Is it a committee upon native things? or is it a committee upon sacred subjects? If it be a committee upon native things, it is very good, to yourselves belong those things; but what have I to do with them? If it be a committee upon sacred things, things appertaining to worship, — — — listen all of you, for me alone, for the root is it to think & direct about such things; as for this committee of yours, it is mere children's work, a canoe without a figure-head or rudder, a committee idly called without authority. From me

From Colenso.

(2) Come hither, my writing and go to the sheep of Christ, sitting astray here at the Awapuni. O my flock alas! greeting to thee; behold, this is from thy Lord to thee O flock, that is, "His sheep hear his voice": behold, here with me, with his servant is his voice. Therefore it is that I say unto thee, O flock; Arise, depart, hasten to your own pastures, and feed there upon sweet grass, for at the Awapuni is no sweet grass or cool water.

From me—From the Shepherd of Heretaunga.

Catechism. "To submit myself to all my governors, teachers, spiritual pastors, and masters."

3.) "From Waitangi to the Rongootuhawaiki."

To te Moananui, to Karaitiana, to te Ahu, to my loving friends, that is, who are said to be. Listen! your writing has come to me; behold, ye say, that ye are my loving friends; now then, if that be true, cease back-biting me.— "The thrust of a stick may be parried aside, the thrust of a word will not go aside." (a well-known nat. prov.) I will not go (to you),

From me, From Colenso

No.6.

From the Awapuni.

"To Colenso, Waitangi. O Sir, here is this word to thee, we shall not go to service on this Sabbath, for it is of no use to attend service, and turning away at the same time, better to make peace with man, & then make peace with God. If thou hadst listened to those our words which were written to thee, by this it wd. have been over. As it is, thou hast drawn it out to a great length; behold, sufficient is this, there is no more good that we should attend service together. Notice this, remain thou away on that side (of the river) to prayers. Here is this word of ours likewise to thee, listen thou, on Monday we shall come over to thee that we may talk

together; do not thou set this aside; this is a good thing. For if thou set this aside, the flock will no longer look upon thee as a shepherd. Then, depart thou hence from the whole of Heretaunga; think not thou, from hence, from the Awapuni alone, but from the whole of New Zealand. It is finished.”

(Signed) From Te Moananui
From Te Ahu
From Karaitiana

No. 7

On the Sunday evening.

O Sirs. I have only just now looked at your writing; on my return from bathing. Here I have torn up your letter, and returned it to you; it being a writing of bad words. I have already written to you,—saying, ye have nothing whatever to do either with me or my work; ye take too much upon you to dictate thus to me. Now I will not see you tomorrow, even though ye should take upon yourselves to come across. For this reason that your error is increasing. When ye shall have repented heartily of your misdeeds, then shall we see (one another). But from me will be the appointment.

From me, From Colenso
To Karaitiana & Co.

No. 8

From Waitangi, on the 21st. January.

O Sirs,—O te Hapuku and Pukara greeting to you. Here am I much ill-used by Ngatikahungunu. Behold this is mine which I enquire of both of you, Are ye assenting to these doings, or not? Write hither, that I may know. Seeing that it was you two who fixed me here upon this spot from wh. I am now thrust forth. Neither I nor Mr. Williams saw these men who are now thrusting me out, that is, when we arrived here (in 1843); but rather you two. That is all. From me,

From Colenso.

No. 9

(Copy)

“To the Awapuni, to Colenso. O Sir, greeting to thee and to thy children, sitting there surrounded by evil. O Sir, this only is ours weeping continually for thee. We will not mix ourselves up with that evil. The suffering is not for thee alone, for us also. Soon perhaps shall we be murdered (by them). Nevertheless be thou very patient. Do not thou upon any account leave, nor we either, until the arrival of Mr. Williams & the Bishop, then thou wilt be able to speak when there shall be Europeans to listen. Behold, here is the word which we have heard, That a payment is being collected for their having bound thee. Do not thou on any account turn to them, (i.e. receive it) for the causelessness of thy suffering is fully seen. It is thy son Leonard who has murdered thee. This also, we have heard, that Tareha, Te Moananui, and Karaitiana, are writing for another Minister to come for this place. Let there be no other Minister but thee for Heretaunga. Write thou a letter for thyself to the Bishop, and to Mr Williams.”

(Signed) From Te Hapuku
From Puhara.

No. 10.

From Sydney Hoekau, Chief of Kohinurakau,
January, 1850.

“Go then, my love to my Father to Colenso. O Sir, greeting to thee who art being devoured by evil. Thy very own friend hath betrayed thee. Like Judas giving up Christ to death. O Sir, be great-hearted towards those evils. That very own son of thine hath murdered thee. The lifting up that of Leonard’s heel against thee.”

“That is all, From Sydney to Colenso.”

From Elisha Huakuru, N. Teacher, Kohinurakau.
Hanuere 23rd, 1850.

Go then my letter to my loving Father, at Waitangi perhaps. O Sir, O Colenso, greeting to thee, here is love gnawing painfully in my heart towards thee. When the news concerning thee arrived here, that thou wert being ill-used for the holy word of God, I said, It is well; because, is it only so now, in these latter times? no, from of old, even so says the preacher of his word. Stephen, what was done to him? He was stoned. What was done to Paul? He was put to death for the word of God. What was done to Shadrack & his party? They were cast into the fiery furnace of Nebuchadnezzar. Therefore do I say concerning thy ill-usage, it is well. This is my word of simile; even thy own word, when thou and I were at Port Nicholson “What effect will that have upon flint, upon iron, upon lime, the fire will not affect them. O Sir, do thou & I cleave to Christ, even as the ~~paua~~ *haliotis* cleaves to its rock in the sea, the waves affect it not. x x x x x This is my idea, (concerning those who are to be Baptd.), if there is much noisy talk out there, let them come here & be baptized, this will be well.

(Signed) From me, From Eraihia Elisha

From Te Awi, a heathen Chief at Tangoio.
“Written on the 25th.

Go to Waitangi to Colenso. O Sir, give me the hand that we may “How d’ye do” and the more that we may rub noses. O Sir, greeting to thee, great indeed is my love for thee, because thy love hath come to us, therefore I feel love towards thee now that thou art ill-used. What of it? Thou sufferest for the work of the Lord. Good indeed is thy ill usage, O servant of God. x x x x x Behold, here is another word of mine to thee, if that fall (of theirs) had been ours we would not have turned upon thee & ill-used thee. It is better (for them) to call to God, that he would give wisdom unto the evil hearts of the people. O Sir, here is a song from of old, from our ancestors,

That is all, From Te Awi.

No. 11. Letter to the Governor

(Copy)

No. 12.

Go then my writing to the other side of the river, to Colenso, O Sir, greeting to thee, listen thou to this word, the men from inland who come here, that is those teachers of thine whom thou hast directed to come & hold service here. O Sir, they must remain each at his own place to prayers.

Do not thou appoint people to come here to ridicule and to taunt at error because they are native men precisely the same as the men of this place. O Sir, we do not like those men. Although said to come to prayers.—

(Signed) From Karaitiana Badman.”

No. 13

O Sir, O Karaitiana, greeting to thee,—all that the man of the church has to do is to attend to that which his Minister approves of. There is the answer to thy letter hanging up at the church porch!

From me, From Colenso

(That is, the arranged & printed place of visiting, wh. had been there for some time.)

“Though men of spite against me join
They are the sword, the hand is thine”

1850 February 25: to Williams¹⁸⁸

Waitangi Feb. 25 1850

My dear Sir

I cannot but deem it a part of my duty to make you acquainted with some of the more prominent features of the late extraordinary commotion here. And, chiefly so, *first*, from the fact (as I have been credibly informed) of some of the ringleaders therein having had the hardihood to write Letters to the Bp. about me!—and *second*, from my having written to the Lt. Govr. to inform him of my ill usage and to claim his protection.

From multitude of causes however I can only give a meagre outline, and necessarily pass over many minor matters.

On the 13th. Decr./49 I returned to the Station from my inland journey to Patea, &c. having been absent a month.—I found the place all but deserted by Natives, no prayer meetings, nor schools, nor daily prayers.

On Sunday the 16. I held the usual Services and Schools (though not well myself, as I scarcely ever am when at the Station at this season, owing to the prevalence of March malaria,) and, endeavored, as usual with me at the close of the year, to stir up the Congns. and Schools of the Station to consider their ways, speaking more Particularly to the Teachers and Monitors:—Renata K., Apiu. P., Noa, Katene. Noticed the congregation generally being very careless and indifferent and many of them asleep in Ch. during D. Service.

On the 19th. I conducted our usual prayer meeting; lecturing upon Ps. 101. 1 Noah & Katene not present.

On the 20th. I held a full Evg. Service discoursing from 2 Pet. iii. 17; 3 out of 4 Teachers absent.

On the 21st. and 22nd. I was engaged with Porangahau natives, going with them to Ahuriri to return some stolen propy. and to give 4 hogs as a payment for what was said to

be still missing. In the evg. I held pr. meeting, lectg. fm. Jno. xx. 25. Abraham not present.

23rd. Lord's Day. I held the usual Services, and School. At the Mg. Service the Natives were as last Sy. unusually sleepy, insomuch that I paused consy. during my reading the Litany, in order that they might start up as some were snoring loudly, and others wrapped up in their hot blankets lay stretched out at length. (I had again and again cautioned them about their hot dirty blankets as not only being a cause of sleep, but also a cause of fever at this hot season.) The Litany ended I rose up, and it was some minutes before the congr. had aroused themselves or rather each other; much grieved I proceeded to give out a hymn, but on seeing some still lying stretched out near the doorway, I called to them and desired them either to sit up as they ought to do in the Ho. of God, or if not to go out. Some one called out loudly, “*Ko koe ranei kia haere atu ki waho*”. The Porangahau and other strange Natives, assd. here for the Xmas, being present, I deemed it most unwise to pass this by; so walking out of the Desk, I went towards the place where the one to whom I had party. spoken was (and whom I supposed to have ansd. me,) and asked him, “*E ta, nau ranei te kupu ki aau kia haere atu I toku nei ware karakia?*” He quietly ansd. “*Ehara I aau, na tera tou*”. I asked, “*Na wai?*” & the person was then pointed out;—Te Waka Te Kawatini, a chief of the Ngatihori tribe (an old offender, who had been again excluded from the last Com. for stealing a Blkt. from Mr. Alexander; and) who was sitting against one of the pillars of the chapel. Going to him, I twice asked him those words, “*E ta, nau &c.*” To wh. he made no answer. His large Test. wh. I had formerly given him, lying before him, I took it up and returning to the Desk and pulpit continued the Service.—After Service, I was informed that the person who slept so long on the ground near the door was Oneone, Tareha's father. At Evg Service, at Tareha's request, I Baptized his dying child;—a pretty little girl named Tahitio, who had been gradually sinking for several months, and for whom we had done all that was in our power, in food & medicine & washing, &c.—by night & by day.—Her mother being the sister of K. Takamoana, & a niece of Te Waka Te Kawatini.

25. Xmas day. I struggled hard, and held Mg. Service and School as usual; but was very unwell. Mrs. Colenso distrib. 180 cakes, to as many wom. and child. With diffy. I read the evening prayers but cod. not preach. I should have asked my N.T. Renata to address the Congn. it being very large, but I had done so, on 3 several & similar occasions in the spring, to all of which he refused; and, I had often heard of the pitiable alteration in his discourses in my late absence.

26–29. Very closely engaged in making out yearly papers for Comee. Teachers, Helpers, & Monitors, all away scattered.

30. Sunday. Held usual Services & Schools. Mg. preaching from Rom. XIII. 11. Evg. Ps. XC. 12. Gave notice of a extray. special Prayer meetg. tomorrow (being the last) evg. in the year, to be held as usual in the School-room.

31. Morning read prayers & held Schools.—Evg. Prayer Meetg. but was so unwell as to be obliged to leave in the midst; I strove hard & returned but could not address the few present. I was quite ill.

1850.

Jany. 1. Though very unwell, I sent for R., not having had

any close conversn. with him very lately. On his coming I pd. him £1.10.0 (a ½ yrs. stipend, or better perhaps an expected donation.)¹⁸⁹ and we talked together in my study for some time:—I told him of several things wh. I had lately heard against him, all of wh. he denied; I remarked, that the evil report wh. one or 2 persons might raise about a canoe or a bridge or a road, wou. not be greatly noticed; but that it was a common saying what everyone says must be true; and that he should get up and testify to the falseness of those many “little things” now so commonly sd. concg. him. I said, I had scarcely a peson about me now on whom I cod. depend; that I had (on my return from T.) called on all, and party. on the Teachers & Helpers, to consider their ways at the now closing year—but that out of 4, 3 had immy. gone off (N. and K. to Ahuriri and A. to W.—) and had only sleepily showed themselves on Sundays. He replied, It was very wrong in them to have done so. I said, another thing I am told is this, That whenever you conduct School you merely read the chap. and them conclude, without asking a single question; is it so? He replied, “Etika ana, ekore ahau kite i nga tikanga o nga upoko e wakamaori atu ai ahau i runga i te karaihe”! This statement and the manner in which it was spoken, opened my eyes a little; I talked to him seriously and affy., for I loved him, showing him, that he shod. have been the *last* person to have entertained such an idea, &c.—& once more begged him to consider his ways, this too being the 1st. day of the year.

2nd. Two Wairoa Natives arrd. from Rev. J.H., bringing Letters for me. Busy all day in writing Letters to N. Teachers at Wairarapa. Having rung the Bell for our usual Prayer Meetg. I went to the School room, and, after waiting a long while & only 2 Natives coming (besides the 2 from the Wairoa,) I held a short service & came away much grieved. On enquiry I found, that Renata had early this morning left with his people for the swamps a few miles off, there to scrape flax for Mr. Alexander; he and Katene had in September last taken the putting-up of a fence on the Station, for which they had asked £2.14.0, and I had promised to give them £3.0.0.—but this they soon threw aside—and that he had told Abm. & others, on my return from Taupo, that for them to do as I wished was the way to kill and starve themselves outright—“What! School Monday morning,—prayer meetg. Wednesday evening, School Thursday morning, a full Service Thursday evening, & prayer meetg. again on Saturday evening—where is the time for work?” Hence it was, that Abm. left for Waimarama.

3rd.—5th. Busy, copying Journal for CMS. arranging for, & printing plan of approach. autumnal journey, & also plan of visiting for teachers,—writing to them, &c.—

5th. At sunset, the Natives, congregating here as usual for the Sunday, I caused the bell to be rung, &, finding R. was not forthcoming, went to the Chapel and read prayers, 62 present. Had some diffy. in getting across the river from the large Canoe being aground. R. was not there.

6th. Sunday. (Here I should remark that my plan is to ring *twice* on the Sunday morning, the first bell at ½ past 8 as a preparatory one, & the 2nd. at 9, when I leave the House.) This morning, after the ringing of the 2nd. bell, on going to the river with Mrs. Colenso & family we found the *large* Canoe (wh. serves as a common floating bridge for *all*) aground, & my 2 household lads vainly attempting to drag her into deep water. While we were standing on the banks,

Te Moananui and his people (upds. of 20) came up from R.'s village, & I said to them “Did you not hear the first bell? Why did not some of you make more haste here, & get to rights our bridge—it is the bridge of all & cannot be done by two persons.” And aflds., on entg. the Canoe I said nearly the same words to the Chf. himself (who was next to me), adding “Why did you not send some of your young men on before you to help my 2 lads to float the Canoe for us?”—No remark whatever was made by anyone to what I had said—there not being room for any. Just as we were shoving off, Renata and Katene and their party came hastening down to enter the Canoe. On seeing them, I said, “Ihea koutou i te pere tuatahi, te haere mai ki te parepare i te waka? ekore hoki e taea e te tangata kotahi; no tatou tahi hoki tenei arawata.” L. replied, “E taea ano e Matiaha” (one of my 2 lads) te parepare atu kaua e waka iwinuitia ekoe hei matenga mo ngatangata.” I sd. “I spoke just now to Te M. and his party & they said nothing; but when I speak to you, you turn upon me directly. “You, L. should have been here to your duty instead of being away the whole week.” Upon which he sd. a good deal. And on my desiring him to cease, he replied, “Kati ranei koe te korere,” &c. — — Ko koe anake, — — ko koe anake — kati koe te korero.”—Katene also said, much in an undertone. ~~~~~

A great deal more was said by R. who remd. on the banks of the R. talking loudly, while we were crossing, which from the noise of the paddles I did not catch but I heard,—“Titiro! e haere riri ana ki te karakia; akaunei ia te iri ai ki nga tangata o te ware:—kota anake e wakakino ana I te ratapu. — — — Emara! Ehara ahau i te mea wakarite na te komiti,” &c.—On Landing, I said, “R., if that is the state of your heart I think you had much better return to your house, and not come on to Ch.”—When he replied, “Ki te hoki ahau! ka hoki katoa, kahore he tangata mo tau karakia.” Mrs. Colenso, stepping on shore, said to me, “he seems determined to contend”; so, leaving him talking we went on to the Chapel. Mg. Serve over, I remained alone as my custom is in the Chapel until the bell rung for School; during wh. time I thought deeply whether I should place some one else over the 2nd. Readg. Class instead of R.; at last I concluded that he should come to school, and rise to take his class, to say nothing (at present) but to allow him quietly to do so. The bell rung, & the Sch. having been opened with sg. and prayer, R. rose and took his class; and no allusion was made by any one to the occurrences of the morning. At Evening Service there were only 3 women present besides our own girls, and 35 men; the Cong. of the mg. being m. 60, w. 30, ch. 16—the majority who were absent sitting idle in the pa.—a sad beginning this for the n. year!

7. See Journal:—

To the few who remained, I said, “You have heard me accused by my Teacher of error, sin, &c.—Now, I will confess my error, this is it.—My admitting many of those Natives, T. Pekapeka and others to the Holy Comm. the other day. You know that I said I would now take upon myself the responsy. (under existing circumstances i.e. an oppory. of the L.S. once in 1 or 2 years), of keeping any one away therefrom, unless for very gross & unrepented crimes;¹⁹⁰—now this is my great error, that I should have allowed such persons, whose conduct is more that of pigs and dogs than Xns., to drink of the Cup of the Lord.—However, one thing will result from this—there can not

189 WC: See Journal to CMS.

190 WC: Tiopira's appendix no.1.

now be any adult Baptism here next month.” The few natives who had remd. perceiving that I had ceased talking also withdrew. I, being now alone, went to the Comm. Table, and there thanked God with an overflowing heart for his great deliverance, and prayed for forgiveness and guidance, and felt greatly comforted.

After we had all left the Chapel Abm. Powā (the only Teacher who had stood by me, and who, every time that T. Pekapeka rushed upon me with his threats, walked close up to my side) said to Katene (who was sitting in the village, nr. the path), Thou art the cause of all this contention; for it is mainly through thy continual talking to us about the excellencies of other Ministers, and finding fault with our own, that we have been induced to act in this way.”

This evening Tareha’s child died, and great wailing was made for her.

8. Wrote & sent a letter to R.¹⁹¹ (Note.) Read Evening Prayers; R. attendg.

9. Read Mg. prayers, 52 present. As soon as prayers were ended they all went out. I afterwards heard that they had leagued together, 1st. to attend no more Schools; and 2nd. not to allow me to appoint anyone to be Teacher, save one of themselves. This mg. I recd. a line from R. in ans. to mine of yesterday.¹⁹²—Heard during the day that the Heathen Chiefs generally greatly disapproved of the treatment which I had received from the Baptized Natives. This evening I buried Tareha’s daughter, Ani Tuhitio; & read prayers in the Chapel; 88 present.¹⁹³

10. Read mg. prayers at the close of wh. all again marched out. Engd. in ppg. pp. 23, 24 H.D. and in preparing to leave tomorrow on a visit to Tangoio, etc., as previously arranged. Had extreme diffy. in getting any one to go with me as baggage bearers, R. having succeeded in keeping back those who had promised to go. After evening prayers wh. I read, I had a long Conversn. with Tareha (who mourns the loss of his child very much,) in the verandah of my house. Endeavoured to Comfort him—gave him totara timber & nails for a fence round her grave; & lent him my boat & oars (the first time of their being used) during my absence, to go afishing. He tried much to persuade me from going to Tangoio; but I told him, I cod. not remain, not merely on account of the Natives having assembled there, but that this was a journey to make peace with and restore the Tribes of that valley from their late fall; which he also knew.

11. Left the Station this mg.—leaving a note for Abm. P. to take the Sunday and Monday mg. Services at xi. After we had crossed Ahuriri harbour, Paraone Te H.—a Thames N., whom I was glad to get to go with me, told me what R. had told him that mg.—he had endd. to persuade him not to go with me to T., & finding he wod. “not disobey his Minister,” he, R., said, if Paraone had been from these parts

he would make him remain. And that this mg. as soon as I should be gone, he, R., wd. go to the pa & use all his influence to get the Native Chiefs to rise against my cows, which were eating their grass and not paying for it;—and, further, that he wod. not be satisfied with any thing less than their driving me from the whole *Island*!! And that he would soon get anor. M., for M’s were plentiful enough. And, as to Abm. Powā, if he or anyone dared to take the Services on the Sy. he R. wd. get up in the Chapel and strike him, & put him down.¹⁹⁴

12th.–14th. At Tangoio.—

15. Returned to Petane. Heard this evg. of the sad doings of R. at the Station since I had left, & of the great & increasg. commotion there, and of the resolutions which they the Chfs. and R. had come to;—namely, to drag me before their “komiti” (assembly), and then, to propose 3 things—

1st. That I shd. never use such words as pigs or dogs or log of wood, in ref. to them, for any behaviour of theirs; nor find fault with them for sleeping in the Chapel, &c. and

2. That my Public Services must be shortened, & to have no School; or (if I wd. not immy. & fully consent—)

3. That I should be driven from the Station; and, if I sought refuge in the Thames or Bay of Islands, that they would follow me, & never rest until I had been expelled the Country.to here

The people of Petane, upwards of 100 in no. were very indignant, and pressed me much to consent to come and reside among them, or, at all events, to be allowed to escort me in a body to the Station; both of wh. I strenuously refused.

16. At Warerangi, where yesterdays sad news was confirmed by the chiefs & others of the village who had just returned from the station whither they went to mourn for Tareha’s daughr. They described R. (tho a relation of theirs) as being mad, & exulting in the thought of how he would serve me;—firstly, by degrading by dragging me before them (him)— & 2^{ndly} by expulsion.—Some had proposed now that 2 vessels (a very unusual thing) were in the harbour to go in a body & forcibly take all my goods on board! while others pointg. to the no. of graves in the chapel yd., of those who had died during my residence, were not for allowing me to get off so easily. All were greatly angry with the Warerangi Chiefs, for daring to say, that I was going to Baptize some of their Children, and endeavd. to dissuade them from permitting it.¹⁹⁵ At sunset, when about to leave this place the ancient Chief Rawiri, (whose childn. and grand children compose the majy. of this Tribe) said to me, “White man! you are now going into deep and troublous waters; only one word will I say, Be patient; endure hardness.” I replied, that is what I have already determd. upon.—I reached the Station (to the great comfort of my W. & family, who had been a few miles over the stony banks lookg. for me; and who had returnd. disappointed) by xi p.m. Long, however, before I reached Te Awapuni pa, the loud orations of the enraged Chiefs, as they passed up and down among their people, before their fires which glared in the distance, broke upon my ear. I entered suddenly and passed boldly along the pathway through their village, without receiving any molestation.—

191 WC: Marginal note. As translations of this, & of all Letters wh. passed bet. us have been already sent to the CMS., they are barely mentioned in the Journal. Lettr. to R. Appendix No.2.

192 WC: L. from R. appendix no.3. A day or two after (during my abs. at Tangoio) he sent me anor. note; extracts from wh. I here subjoin. (in appx. this letter).

193 A slip is glued to the draft here, though it appears to be out of context: “I suppose that L. having succeeded in rousing the evil passions of the Native Chiefs, (and, seeing the extent to which he had carried them,) his heart began to fear the ult. conseq., & therefore he wrote me the foregoing. Mrs. C. tells me, it was brought by M., L’s. wife on the evening of the 16th. Jany, the day of my return to the Station.”

194 WC: See Journal.

195 WC: See Journal.

17. Early this mg. I crossed the river to the Chapel & read prayers; only a few of those in the village attended, & none remained to School. During the day a great no. of Natives arrd. from Petane & other villages, some to cry over Tareha's loss, and some to hear the result of this (to-be) famous Commee. respecting myself, all the chf. men of the neighbd. being also here assembled. Towards evening the Natives, getting tired & impatient at my non-appearance, sent me a Letter, written by 3 of the prin. Chiefs, in, apparently, a kindly tone,¹⁹⁶ but unfortunately for them I well-knew the stratagem, which they had laid to get me among them. Read Evening Prayers, upds. of 100 present. Retg. in the dusk to the Station, I found Te H. by the River side, awaitg. my coming that he might shake hands with me, at this crisis, a truly significant & friendly action; he did not however speak. During the evening I wrote & sent my answer to their Letter;¹⁹⁷ and, also, a request. to the Xn. Natives of other villages to disperse quietly in the mornng.

The receipt and readg. of my absolute refusal to appear among them caused great commotion among the discontented, who, loading me with abuse, vainly sought to discover who had informed me of their secret (?) determinations; Renata and Katene were indefatig. in stirring them up; the former proposing that they should take me by force, even if shut up in my Dg. Ho.—the latter inciting then to revenge for the degradation (?) they had recently suffd. in my compelling the Porangahau Natives to make restitution to Mr. Alexr. &c &c.

18. Went to the Chapel & read Mg. Prayers, soon after which all the better disposed Natives returned to their homes; laughing loudly as they passed at "the sagacity of the whiteman!" Some of the discontented also left, vowing they wou. never again come to D. Service; while those who remained, proceeded to hatch further mischief. Renata bitterly upbraided them for their cowardice, & finally counselled them not to sell us any food, saying that if he caught any one bringing food to sell he wd. fight him & any one who took any part sd. be expelled also. He was also exceedingly angry with his bro. Noah Huke and with Apm. Powa (the assistant Teacher) for their going to fetch some valuable goods wh. had arrd. for me from Dixon and Co.—wh. goods I certainly expected they wou. pounce upon and dist. among themselves. Engd. in printing pp. 25, 26. H. Deaths. Evening, read prayers few present.

19. Read mg. and evg. Prayers; very few present. Heard, that the reason why T. so earnestly sought to keep me from going to Tangoio on the 10th. inst. was that the people there might the more readily be induced to join them here. Busy in opening some cases, wh. were wetted in Landg.—Evg. prepg. for tomorrow.

20. Sunday. This mg. just as we were going to famy. prayer, a nat. came from the village with a Letter. After prayers, it was given to me, but as I knew it to be from the disaffected party, I said I would not read it till the evening. Going at the usual hour to Church, we were hissed at as we walked along the path, L. being among them. The bellringer, who lives in the village, was not allowed to ring the bell, which we did however; and some were laid hold of, and their clothes torn off them while others were shut up in houses, to keep them from going to D. worship. Present 20, 19, 13 (including my own household of 12) several of whom, w. and ch., stole away from their husbands and fathers. L. held Service with

the disaffected! none of whom came to ch. At noon I rang the Bell for School, only 13 males attended. Evg. I held Service, & aftds., being very feverish, bathed in the river. Retg. to our house I read the Letter recd. this mg,¹⁹⁸ and was astonished at its contents; I felt thankful I did not read it this mg, and that God had again delivered me. I consid. awhile, and wrote them an ansr,¹⁹⁹ tearing up their letter and enclosing it to them.

21. See Journal.—

22. ditto. My feet and arms and sides very painful.

23–26. During the week engd. in instructg. my 5 Candidates for Baptism; and in compositing and printing the Society Jubilee Letter. Received several letters of condolence from various quarters; see Elisha's
Hirini's
Te Awe's—heathen chief at
Tangoio.

Heard of Karaitiana having been severely talked to by Puhara and Hapuku for his conduct. He sd. they had not done yet—that he was tired of hearing the bell so often and that P. and H. must not be alarmed at what they might hear hereafter. P. enraged ordered him to make haste and leave these parts, &c, &c.

27. Sunday. With diffy. I held the usual Services & Schools this day, being very unwell; cong. 57; and at male school 29. At the mornng. Service I Baptized the 5 persons whom I had been preparing & a few of the disaffected party were present at morning Service, among whom were Karaitiana and Katene; the latter sitting with his back towards me. Gave out at School a direction that those of the disaffected who returned were to be put down a step—those of the 1st. to the 2nd., and those of the 2nd. to the 3rd. class, &c.—

Febv. 1. The disaffected Natives, particularly Karaitiana, still talking largely of what they would do to me. I deemed it proper to write a letter to the Lieut. Govr.²⁰⁰—

2–7. Visited Patangata & other villages inland, as had been previously arranged. Was exceedingly gratified at the kind feelg. reception I everywhere received. Every native m. w. and child, Xn. or Heathen, assembled to give me a most cheering welcome.—The nights were passed in a display of their indignant oratory against the disaffected.—I here learned the *truth* of the report (wh. my lads & others had heard but had concealed from me), namely, that the disaffected chiefs had agreed that if I attempted to Baptize, &c, I should be seized and bound up (pitote) like a pig; why they did not fulfil their vow, has yet to be explained.—

On retg. to the station, I found that the disaffected party was still bent on further mischief. Among other things which they last Sunday projected was, for R. and Kat. to go immy. to Auckland to fetch anor. Minister!! this they strove hard to carry, but Kat. steadfastly refused to go, upon wh. he got abused by Karaitiana.—What vexes them now is, the probability of my going to reside among some other neighbouring tribe, & thus they (as they say themselves) if they get no other Minister shall come to nothing.

10. Sunday. Held the usual Services & School, preaching in the mg. from 2 Tim. iv. 2–5; & in the evg. from 2 Cor. vi. 7, 8. Renata, Karaitiana, Paul Muri and Katene present, the

196 WC: Letters from K. No.4.

197 WC: my 3 answers No.5.

198 WC: Letter from K.ma. No.6

199 WC: My answer No.7. Note to H. & P. 8 their answer 9.

200 WC: Letter to Governor. No. 11.

latter sitting with his back towards me; R. often made remarks in an undertone which I did not catch.

See Journal, 11th.—

17. Lords day. Held the usual Services and School. Preached in the morning from Gen. xix. 9; in the evening from Gen. xxii. 1. Congn. 80. Te Moananui also, attended Service this day.

22nd. Received a note this day from Karaitiana,²⁰¹ against any N. Teachers from other places coming here to hold Service; wh. I briefly ansd.²⁰² In the evening I recd. Jno. Mason Takihi, his brother, he having twice written to me very proper Letters declaring his sorrow, &c., and as he was not an *active* opposer I, after having talked to him, made up matters with him.—

24. LORDS Day. Held the usual Services & School. Preached in the mg. from Gen. 27. 34; in evg. Eph. i. 13, 14. Cong. 122. Te Moananui and Paul Muri attended School this day, much to the vexation of all the other disaffd. ones. After mg. Service, L. said to Te Moanannui, “Na mou to kawau nei; *ko koe ano ko Ihau*.” Te M. replied, “Ko koe ranei; ko te tangata nana te putake o te pohehe.”

25. L. with his party left early this mg. for Manawatu;—their course being through the woods some miles to the right of the way,—none of the Xn. natives caring to speak a word to him. He told Te M. he should hahu & bring away thence the bones of Te Wanikau; Te M. made no reply; but on being urged to speak, at last, he said, “Mau ra tena mahi; kua mutu hoki ta matou.” Te Moananui also, with Brown Te Heihei left this mg. for the Thames. Abm. & Noah already seem quite happy, now that their little village is again become quiet.

Thus my dear Sir I have endeavored to give you a faithful outline of the major facts down to the present date. Surely we may with St. Paul exclaim—2. Cor. i. 3, 10. I ought, perhaps, to have taken counsel of you ere I wrote to the Lt. Govr. Without doubt, I should have done so had you been nearer to me.—

I have not time at present to add anything more—being also quite weary with so much writing.

And am
my dear Archdn.
with every respect
Yrs. mo. obly.
W. Colenso.

201 WC: Karaitiana No. 12.
202 WC: My answ. No. 13.

1850 February 27: to CMS Secretaries²⁰³

Waitangi, Hawke's Bay
Feby. 27 1850.

To
The Secretaries
C.M. House
Salisbury Sq.
London.

My Dear Sirs,

By this opportunity I send you another (and only a small) portion of my Journal, from Octr. 27/48 to Feby. 16/49, inclusive. I very much regret my not being able to send you more at this time: but I have done what I could.

I enclose a copy of a Letter which I have just concluded to the Archdeacon of the District. From it you will learn somewhat of our situation & trials during the present year.

By next opportunity (D.V.) I will send you a Copy of the Appendix *translated*, together with Copies of my Letters to the Bishop & Lieut. Governor.

I am now about to leave the Station on my usual Autumnal Journey.

I have this day from an authentic source, heard, that another Scheme of the disaffected Natives is, to launch my boat & to carry me forcibly into it and send me adrift!—But our Trust is in *GOD*!

I have, I am happy to say, translated & printed your Jubilee Letter in the Native language. I only received a Copy of it in November last.

I have requested the Archdeacon when he goes to the Central Committee to pay £10.0.0, as our donation towards the Jubilee Fund.

With every respect, and craving an interest in your prayers.
I am,
My dear Sirs
Your most ob. servt.
William Colenso.

1850 June 24: to the CMS Secretaries²⁰⁴

Waitangi, Hawke's Bay,
June 24, 1850.

Secretaries,
C.M. House,
London.

My dear Sirs,

1. My last short letter to you was in February of this year. With it I forwarded a portion of my Journal down to Feb. 16/49, and a copy of a letter which I had just sent to the Archdeacon.

2. I now send you another small portion of my Journal down to June 8/49; and a copy (translated) of the Appendix

203 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.
204 Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

to my letter to the Archdeacon, and also a copy of my letter to the Bishop.

3. I returned on the 16th. of April from my usual autumnal tour throughout the District. At Wairarapa myself & nearly 200 native communicants (many of whom had assembled thither from a distance to partake of the LORD's Supper) were greatly disappointed in the non-arrival of the Rev. Mr. Cole, who was absent with the Lt. Govr. at Taranaki; but of which we knew nothing till after our arrival at Wairarapa.

4. Nothing very particular among the natives has lately occurred in the neighbourhood. The disaffected party are *now* both (outwardly) quiet and inwardly vexed; so that I see but little of them.

5. On the 31st. ulto, at 6 p.m. a very severe shock of earthquake was felt, which made us all leave the reeling houses as quickly as possible; it was the most severe of any we have hitherto experienced, & lasted about 1½ minutes; we, [2] however, received no damage. On the 14th. inst. our Station was again inundated through the late heavy & almost continual rain, & we feared the worst as the mouth of the river was dammed up, but we were again providentially delivered from our fears. A large portion, however, of a new totara fence was torn up, and some timber & 6 goats carried away, and the whole place, including garden, transformed into a most miserable quag through *mud* & water. About 3 weeks since I had a public interview with the principal chief, Te Hapuku, and other chiefs, at his village, relative to my proposed removing to Waimarama; to this, however, he would not consent unless I purchased the site for which he modestly demanded £200! I am, therefore, still hedged in. His wish is, I know, to keep me by his side on account of medical & other collateral aids.

6. I have been, and still am, suffering much from Rheumatism which is increasing in the violence and duration of its attacks. Such is the loss of strength and mental depression attendant upon it, that I have been unfitted for almost everything. I believe that it is in a great measure to be attributed to the unhealthy low & wet spot on which we reside; to which, doubtless, our continual headaches also owe their origin.

7. I have not yet heard from the Lieut. Governor or the Bishop. But from the Archdeacon we have lately had a kind sympathising Letter, in which [3] he says (Vid. letter of April 6, 1850.) "I have just been reading your long account, and must express my entire satisfaction with the statement you have made, and my conviction of the hard measure dealt out towards you. 'If when ye do well & suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable unto GOD.' I doubt not you will see hereafter that good will arise out of this evil. It seems clear that there was deep rooted evil in the heart of Leonard—this had begun to shew itself in the careless apathy of his conduct during your absence from home, and hence the necessity of his removal when amendment appeared to be hopeless." We have also had similar letters from others of our brethren, particularly from Mr. Baker, (who, during his residence at Turanga in the Archdeacon's absence, had ample opportunities of seeing and conversing with several Chiefs who went there from this neighbourhood), he says:—"Your public letter to the Archdeacon of Feb. 25 I have read very attentively.—I have grieved much over the events mentioned in that letter; they are of a very painful character. You have indeed been in the

hot fire of persecution. The treatment you have received from your people exceeds all I have ever heard of in this country. A viler proceeding has not yet been known in N. Zealand. The source from whence this persecution has arisen is clearly traced to Leonard, your chief Teacher, & upon whom you appear to have bestowed greater attention than to any of the others; what base ingratitude! What a complete Judas he has proved himself to be! I can [4] very closely enter into your circumstances, knowing your ardent zeal for their good, and only receiving in turn the abuse of those who ought to manifest the greatest sense of obligation". Leonard, the ex-teacher, is now at Manawatu, endeavouring to stir up some of his own tribe against me, and still threatens vehemently what he will yet do—but our LORD lives & reigns.

8. There has been no little talk among the Settlers at Wairarapa, and the inhabitants of Wellington concerning the late ill-usage which I "The Natives' Friend" have received from them.—May I be allowed to request, for my family's satisfaction, that you will kindly grant the loan of the copy of my letter to the Archdeacon with its Appendix to my cousin,—the Rev. J.W. Colenso of Tharston Hall, Long Stratton, Norfolk?—And, should he draw upon you for £20 (Twenty pounds), please honor his draft and charge the same to my account.

9. I have not yet received any answer from you to my Letter of Decr./46.—I trust, I have still the confidence of the Comee. of the C.M. Society.

10. I hope to send you some more of my Journal by an early opportunity. And—desiring to be constantly remembered by you in your prayers—am, my dear sirs,

with every respect,

Your mo. ob. servant,
William Colenso.

Extract of a letter from the Bishop of New Zealand.²⁰⁵

St. John's College,
15 July 1850.

William Colenso
Ch. Miss. Station,
H. Bay.

My dear Mr. Colenso,

Your Letter of 23 February was more than 3 months on the road: and when I received it, it was too late to take any steps to assist you in the very unpleasant affair which your letter relates. I can only hope that it has pleased GOD to appease the tumult, and to bring back your people into their right mind. You will have received, I do not doubt, the advice & assistance of your Archdeacon, who is better able than I am to understand the cause of Native feeling which led to the outbreak. The occurrence is so unusual, I may say, so unexampled in the whole history of the Mission, that I am quite at a loss to account for it, especially as I have not heard any thing of it from Archdeacon Williams. You may perhaps find an opportunity of telling Renata & Katene, that this is not what I expected from them, and that if I thought

²⁰⁵ Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491. p.295.

I have just received 3 Record Papers & 1 Examiner dated Sept/49 from my friend Rev. R Cole—wh., I perceive fm. yr. hd. writing had been sent him by you, & for which I thank you much.

Since my last to you, we, in taking out the Brown paper wh. lay at the bottom of a box, found the 4 muslin Collars which had been missing.—

Some of the goods you last sent me—such as Type, &c—I have not yet opened, for lack of time.—

I would be obliged in your ascertaining if a complete Copy of Cook's Voyages, of the *large original Govt. edition*, (of course 2nd. hand), could be obtained; and the price. And, if under, or not above £3., to purchase it for me.—

Please also to let us know the *price* & sizes of the *gutta percha tubing*.—

We, this morning, received a small case of useful medicines, sent from C.M.S. perhaps shipped by you?—& for the timely arrival of wh. we are very thankful.

I requested you in my last to send me some of my goods in outfit chests—if you have not already done so—you may send the greater part of them in good large *Casks* as heretofore—as I can now dispose of some of the Casks to the Europeans engaged in salting pork for exportation.—

Is the suspensn. stove a useful art., & what will it burn?

In consigning the goods to Wellington there is no need to particularize the contents of every package—especially such

[page(s) missing].

1850 September 17: to Gunn²¹⁰

Waitangi, Hawke's Bay, N. Zealand
September 17th 1850.

My dear Sir

I once knew an old lady in Cornwall, who used continually to be saying, "My dear Child, it cant be helped, you are born under a malignant planet!" Now it is not to profess to you *my* belief in astrology that I preface my letter with the foregoing sentence, but merely to give you my own opinion of our unlucky correspondence, or rather, of that share of it which falls to myself. I have now before me *two* of your kind letters, dated, respectively, 5 Sepr./48, and 26 Augt./49, which, with Copies of the Tasmanian Journal, and a Letter from Mr. Gell (dated April 13/47!), reached me together on the 20th. Jany. last. *That* was a time of unusual bustle—I should rather say, *trial*—(a sad state of things which lasted some time, during which my life & property were in continual danger, being hourly threatened by a large body of the Natives living about me, who, finally, siezed my person and carrying me off, bruised me much,—the sole cause, my putting down a Native Teacher who was unfit for his office!) during this time of trial, I was obliged to write to the Lt.-Govr., to inform him of my situation. And though I despatched a special messenger with my Letter, early in February an answer thereto only reached us here 4 days back—on the 31st. ult.! Mrs Colenso's *sister* was married at

Auckland in March last, and, although the news was quickly despatched, we have only *now* received it! From my good Correspondent the Parson of Wellington, I have only heard once during this year—i.e. on the 31st. ult.—And all this I write that you may the better comprehend my isolated & out-of-the-world situation. For, alas! now-a-days, in these unique times, when every one not only grasps Time by the forelock, but actually leaves him a long way astern—thanks to the march of intellect—the Steam—the railways—the Montgolfiers²¹¹—and the electric-lightning-winged posts—I fear you will be half tempted to think, that I am trespassing upon your credulity, did I not thus bring forward a few such plain facts, and thrust them into your witness-box. And then again (for I have not yet done,) I have not been to Wellington since I last wrote you there; and, of our 4 little trading-vessels—one foundered with all hands, and a second went to pieces at Cape Turnagain, in the winter of /49, while the third, too surely following in the wake of her sisters, also foundered, with all her crew, in the beginning of this present winter; by which, too, I lost (as I now find) all my Letters and Papers, &c., which had been quietly accumulating for me at Wellington! And, though I might give you some more, of the chapter of accidents and disagreeables, I will even now stop—or, I shall fill my sheet with anything but pleasant information. Now, is it at all unreasonable for me to think upon the exclamation of the old Cornish Lady? Seeing, too, that little wee things often lead one's mind to a most heterogenous association of bulky ideas. I just now carefully looked out at my window, and, on beholding the snow still lying on the mountains, I thought on Humboldt on Chimborazo; while the keen "Southerly" which has been blowing all day, with its usual accompaniments of blackness and darkness & cold, immediately took me to Ross' huge Antarctic Barrier of Ice, and the fearful collision of his two ships—a mental scene, at which my mind instinctively shudders.—

But I must rein in my wandering imagination, and endeavour to begin to write something that may, (through your kindness) pass for a Letter. But first I must thank you (which I see I have not yet done), for your two kind Letters and their Companions. And now, what shall I tell you in our way? Why, *first*, that I have been doing what I can during this past winter, in putting up plants—Marine & Terrine—for our friends, the 3 H's.—i.e. the Hookers and Harvey. Of *Phænogamous plants* I have but a few—about 200 lots; of *Crypts*. (mostly Lichens), about 600, and of *Algæ*, about 500 Lots—making, in all, about 1300 separate lots—of which, if *half* prove to be of Service, I shall be amply repaid. To Dr. Harvey, I have only sent specimens of *Algæ*, which, however, will cause the gross total to amount to nearly 2000 separate lots—all marked, & commented upon! A job which I have only just brought to a conclusion, which has consumed all my spare time, and which I hope not to have to do again. I think, I must have told you, that I had received from the Doctor a copy of his splendid "*Neries*" (the 1st. part), in /47, and, in Jany./48, I promised him to do what I could for him. I hope his patience has not been quite exhausted in waiting so very long for the fulfilment of my promise, and even now (or, rather, when he gets the specimens, which are about to be shipped), he will find so many bad, half rotten & imperfect, that his opinion of me will not be improved, thereby. But I have done what I could; and, shall, I believe, henceforward be almost necessitated to give up the *work*—for such I now find it to

210 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-1.

211 The Montgolfier brothers first flew a hot air balloon in 1783.

be.—Quite enough, *alone*, fully to employ any one person. And, when I speak of giving it up—it is upon the principle of Dr. Johnson (as reported by Boswell), who would not taste wine, because, forsooth, if he commenced he would be sure to go right through;—and, so, I think, I must be content to relinquish my favorite pursuit, because, I have *not* time to do it *well*, and I cannot, for the life of me, be satisfied to do it badly. I have not, I confess, greatly cared to send off my boxes till now, as Dr. Joseph has been away visiting all nations:—one day we have him in Egypt—that land which has well been denominated “*the Mother of Sciences and the race of Gods*”—seriously contemplating the Pyramids, and there musing intently over the mighty dead;—and the next, rattling across the Arabian deserts like a true man-o’-war’s man! Again, we have him steaming down the Red Sea—the cliffs of which, with Sinai towering above them, must necessarily have recalled him to grave soliloquy—and, anon, on Elephant-riding in the Himalayan Jungles!! I sincerely hope he will reach his paternal roof in safety, and, being doubly moored (this time), get laid up in ordinary and in full pay for some few years at least. It is now about 12 years since I first had the honor of sending Sir William specimens of the N.Z. flora, and ever since I have been adding thereto; and I really do wish to know somewhat more of the Botany of this Country than the less than the tithe of a tithe of the same which has since then been published, and most of which I knew before. In so speaking, however, I do not include what the French have done; for, unfortunately (again! see how my “malignant planet” works!!) their publications I have never seen, although Dr. Jos. says he forwarded them to me. *Raoul’s* I should much liked to have got, but as I have long ago clean forgot all the little French I once knew, I care not *to order* any work in that tongue.

I hope that “*Sp. Filicum*” has not died a natural death. I have long ago received the iv. part which completes the 1st. vol. The “*Icones*” has, doubtless, ceased to be; and the “*London Journal of Botany*” is, I suppose, merged into the “*Kew Garden Miscellany*”. My English friends have been very kind—and I have had lots of Books sent me—among which, “*Strickland on the Dodo*”—“*Ralfs on the Desmideæ*”—“*Hooker’s Rhododendrons*”, and splendid “*Century of Orchidaceous Plants*”, have greatly interested me. From Reeves I have heard nothing, ditto returned. I have also had a letter from another new correspondent of Botl. fame—*Ralfs*; accompanied, too, with a whole lot of specimens of the English Flora in very excellent state. Would that I could immediately reply thereto as I ought, but this I cannot *now* do. For, although I know that there are several Collectors—Scotch, French, and German—here, all busily engaged, I will still hope, that Hooker will, ere long, resuscitate all those long-buried New Zealanders—and *then* I shall gladly remember you, & Ralfs, and one or two others, to the utmost stretch of my means. I have recently written to my agents, to send me, *Acharius Lichenographia Universalis*, & *Hooker’s B. Flora*, & some other similar works. I have been much pleased with an *Enumeration of N. American Lichens*, by Tuckerman, which has reached me. Have you ever seen any of the Scientific Publications of the American Exploring Expedition, which, under Com. Wilkes, was in these seas about 12 years ago? I have seen the *Ethnographical* part—a ponderous 4to. vol., and have, in fact, ordered it, and I should greatly like to get hold of their *Botany* if it has been published. In my present lot to Sir William there is not very much of novelty among the *phenogamous* plants; the principal ones comprise—another

handsome *Pittosporum*, 2 fine *Gaultheriæ*, another *Dracophyllum*, a little *Liliaceous* plant—a perfect gem!—a few more *Orchideæ*, a couple of *Veronica*, perhaps another *Podocarpus*, ditto *Fagus*, ditto *Suttonia*, ditto *Coriaria*, ditto *Elæocarpus*, and a curious climbing umbelliferous plant, possibly an *Angelica*:—and, also, of the larger *Crypts*.—a Fern or two, but of nothing will I now speak positively. In *Lichens*, and the smaller *Algæ*, I trust much will be found both new & interesting.

I have, also, procured a couple of the ancient and all but quite extinct N. Zealand *rat*; which, until just now (and notwithstanding all my endeavours, backed, too, by large rewards,) I never saw. It is, without doubt, a true *mus*—smaller than our English black rat (*mus rattus*), and not unlike it. This little animal once inhabited the plains & *Fagus* forests of N. Zealand, in countless thousands, and was both the common food & great delicacy of the Natives—and already it is all but quite classed among the things which were. I have, also, a *Bat*—which I believe to belong to the genus *Vespertilio*, at all events widely (*generically*) distinct from the species mentioned by Gray, in Dieffenbach’s N.Z., vol. ii. p.296. This little creature I kept “alive” a whole month, and was not a little amused with its habits. And, among other novelties, I have discovered another & very distinct species of *Vegetable Caterpillar*, of which, however, I have only hitherto detected 2 specimens. It differs widely in general appearance from *Sphaeria Robertsii*, and is somewhat thus.

Some fine specimens of *Aseroe*, and of that other nearly allied genus, *Ileodictya*, of which I have a new & very large species, which I call, *I. laticostæ*, and which, when fully evolved, forms a living mat of nearly 18 inches in girth!—



You enquire after an *Apteryx*.—How delighted should I be to succeed in getting you one. Three years ago, Owen expressed a similar wish, & I have repeatedly tried but failed. Yet here they still are in the mountain forest, though, doubtless, fast hastening towards extinction.

I saw a live one in its wild state two years ago in the dense woods of the interior; I saw it clearly, and watched its movements for some time without being at all perceived by the creature. It moved quickly along,—much like a hen when running after a fly. On seeing me it quickly dived into the untrodden recesses of the forest. Two live ones were lately taken by the “*Acheron*” steamer to Sydney, where they died; these were obtained at the Bay of Islands—where, also, I once got three at one time; the largest & finest of which I dare say you have seen as I gave it to Lady Franklin; the second I gave to Mr. Taylor; and the third (a small one, and which I believe to be a distinct sp.) to one of the Government Officers, on the arrival of the Govr. Since then I have not been able to obtain another, although I have offered a great price for one. The fact is—the younger Natives do not know *how* to take them, and the elder ones having but few wants and these fully supplied, do not care to do so. Further, they can only be captured by night, and the dog must be well trained to be of service; consequently, my hopes of getting any specimens are but faint.

With regard to the Moa (*Dinornis*), after which you also enquire, I candidly confess I have not cared to do much, because so very much has recently been done by others,

who are not only far better qualified for such research, and have more time for it, but who also reside, or visit, the very “diggings” of the Moa.—Witness, Mantell’s account, to which you refer. I should much like to see his paper; and, also, my paper *as republished* by Owen in the “*Annals of Nat. History*”, in August/44, (mentioned by Owen himself, in his splendid 4to. memoir on the *Dinornis & Palapteryx*). I saw an extract from Mantell’s paper, (or rather, I think, this was by the *junior* Mantell,) published in one of our Wellington Papers, in which I was gratified in finding him express strongly his belief concerning the truth of my deductions as to the age in which the *Dinornis* lived. That such a bird *now* exists! or had existed during the occupancy of these Islands by the present race of Aborigines, is, to me, most fallacious. I have, during my residence here, obtained a few bones of these birds—some, too, of very large size, larger, I almost think, than any which have been described by Owen,—but I have never yet found time to examine & compare them. But really, now that the Natives have such a preposterous idea concerning the transcendent value of every-thing after which a European enquires—which is sure to be connected in their minds with gold—that it is a very difficult matter to get them to procure any specimen, however trivial or common.—

You have, indeed, some lovely *Algæ* on your shores, and I dare still to hope, that ere long we shall be reciprocating delight over our exchange of specimens. Yet ours are not perhaps very beautiful—they may be curious—and cannot fail of proving interesting.—

I think I saw in some Paper, brief mention made of a *new* Scientific Society having sprung up among you. What is it? Is it a *Phoenix*; arising from the ashes of its sire, of which it will not be ashamed, and which it is gloriously to surpass? or, is it a kind of *anti*-association? Seeing that our Colonies may almost be termed, the very prolific hot-bed of opposition.—

From an English Paper I gather that Mr. Gell is *there*, and exerting himself in his Vocation. I suppose he will, in due time, return to you again. What he must think of my not answering his long and friendly Letter of /47 (only now however received), I cannot divine:—I hope he is endowed richly with that never-failing blessing—*Charity*. If you correspond, and should you write again to him, just mention, the 3 whole years which his Letter took to crawl from Tasmania to Cape Kidnapper; how it wholly escaped kidnapping by the way is a mystery.—

You speak of being “£100. out of pocket in publishing the Tasmanian Journal.”—How is this? Why not call upon the Members to bear their respective shares therein? Poor though I am, yet cheerfully shall pay my proportion be it what it may. Let me know, when you next write this way, and I will transmit it.—

Well, now, I must indeed conclude. I trust the *length* of this Letter will bear ample testimony to my *good will* towards you—my time being my greatest valuable. And hoping to hear from you, at your convenience, and fully intending, one day, to make you ample amends for all.—

Believe me always,

Most sincerely yours

William Colenso.

1850 October 21: to McLean²¹²

Church Mission Station.
Waitangi,
Octr. 21. 1850.

Sir

Having just returned from visiting my northernmost villages, and understanding from some Natives that Te Hapuku and the Chiefs are gone to the Waipukurau with the intention of meeting you there: and hearing also that you have already been some time in the Manawatu District, and thinking that you may probably require a few little necessities—such as Tea, Sugar, Bread, &c.—I write this, to beg you *not* to allow yourself to want any thing of that kind, and to request you without delay to send freely to us, assuring you, that we will gladly do all that we can to make your present bush life comfortable.—

We do not know whether it is your intention to come on quite so far North as the Mission Station; but, should you come into our immediate neighbourhood, we must regret that, under existing circumstances we have it not in our power to offer you a residence during your stay in these parts. Let not this, however, we beg, deter you from making every application to us for whatever you may need, and which we may be able to supply—and to which—should you reach our vicinity, we shall be truly happy to add from the produce of our little dairy.

I am, Sir,

Yours very sincerely
William Colenso

1850 October 30: to the CMS Secretaries²¹³

Waitangi, Hawke’s Bay,
New Zealand, October, 30, 1850.

Secretaries,
C.M. House,
London.

My dear Sirs,

1. My last letter was written on the 24th. of June; with which I sent a portion of my Journal down to June 8/49, and a (translated) copy of the appendix of my letter to the Archdeacon of the District.—

2. I now gladly avail myself of an opportunity of transmitting you (via Wellington) another portion of my Journal down to Jany. 16/50: together with a copy of a letter from Lieut. Govr. Eyre to the disaffected natives of this place.

3. I am both thankful and happy to be able to say that I am once more at peace with my late turbulent neighbours. Having had good reason for believing them to be pretty well humbled for their conduct, I called a public meeting at the Station on the 2nd. of August, and fully made up matters with all those residing near us. Two, however of the ringleaders, (Leonard Kawepo & Christian Takamoana) were absent at Manawatu, from which place they have not yet returned; and another of them,—Katene te Kori—

²¹² ATL Object #1020915 from MS-Papers-0032-0221.

²¹³ Hocken Library Ms Vol 63; ATL qMS 0491.

(whose behaviour was so extremely unkind, and of whom I had heard no subsequent good report) I particularly excepted for some time longer. Those chiefs have now had a humbling which will do them good: the chief Tareha especially (who made himself so very conspicuous) having been severely visited. At the commencement of the outbreak he lost his eldest daughter, and during the winter his 2 remaining children followed her; about the same time his beloved wife was also brought down very low; and he himself is only just recovering from a dangerous illness—with which he was suddenly attacked shortly after our peace had been made. Seldom, indeed, in these latter days has the powerful arid retributive arm of the LORD been more clearly and speedily manifested for the deliverance and re-establishing of his servants,²¹⁴ and for the rebuking of the proud thoughts of the Heathen, than on the present occasion! they themselves being judges And I could not but think, when the great chief Tareha was brought to me in a helpless state by his tribe to beg my instant aid, (and I, constantly attending upon him in Christian Talamoana's house in the pa, which I now entered for the *first* time since my being seized and carried thither as a slave, and held so tightly by him who was now stretched at my feet, was made the means under God of restoring him from the brink of the grave,²¹⁵) that a glorious opportunity was now afforded me to shew those blessed fruits of our Christian Faith, which even the veriest slave of the tribe could not but in some measure appreciate! & that a great moral victory had been indeed gained! "Thanks be unto God who always causeth us triumph in Christ."—

4. I have subsequently received a very penitential note from Katene te Kori, and have also seen & had some conversation with him, and cannot but believe him to be really sorry for his share in the matter. I have not yet, however, restored him deeming it advisable to allow him to remain until the Archdeacon shall pay us his annual visit in the summer and for him to admonish and raise him. This I have also told him, and he has expressed his willing assent thereto.—

5. One reason I had for not making earlier peace with them was my not having heard from either the Bishop or the Lieut. Governor. On the 31st. of August, (just a month after we had finally adjusted matters) I received a letter from the Lieut. Governor²¹⁶ addressed to them, which I delivered, and at their request, publicly read to them on the morning of the 2nd. September, immediately after school. A note from the Bishop in answer to my letter of the 23rd. February only recently reached me on the 30th. ulto. From which I extract that portion of his Lordship's communication relating to the matter in question,²¹⁷ which I also enclose for your Information:—"St. John's College, 15 July, 1850, My dear Mr. Colenso, Your letter of the 23rd. February was more than 3 months on the road, and when I received it, it was too late to take any steps to assist you in the very unpleasant affair which your letter relates. I can only hope that it has pleased God to appease the tumult, and to bring back your people into their right mind. You will have received, I do not doubt, the advice & assistance of your Archdeacon, who is better able than I am to understand the course of native feeling which led to the outbreak. The occurrence is

so unusual, I may say, so unexampled, in the whole history of the Mission that I am quite at a loss to account for it, especially as I have not heard anything of it from Archdeacon Williams. You may, perhaps, find an opportunity of telling Renata and Katene that this is not what I expected from them, and, that if I thought that my Scholars would often act in this manner, I should break up the school tomorrow".

6. And now, upon a calm review of the whole affair, I am constrained to acknowledge that I have been taught 2 great lessons, which I hope may be of use; namely,—that the Christian's duty in the most perilous times is *to be still and see the salvation of the Lord*; and, that I erred in seeking to an "arm of flesh". In so doing I certainly departed widely from my usual course, and sincerely hope I shall never do the like again. It was indeed a fortunate, or, rather, a providential circumstance, that I never mentioned to the natives of my having written to the Governor, seeing my application met with such an uncommon delay, and brought from him such a mild notice. I am also right glad that I did not wait the arrival of either the Governor's or the Bishop's letter, as, in so doing, I should have been greatly disappointed.

7. Since the date of my last I have again endeavoured to secure a suitable site for a Mission Station, and had very nearly, in fact, *quite* succeeded; and had even commenced making out the necessary writings. (Having arranged to give 2 horses—or, rather, £40 wherewith to purchase them—and 6 cows, value £60 for a piece of land on the banks of the river Tukituki, situate between the villages of Ngawakatatara and Patangata, about 20 miles S.W. from the present Station, and containing, perhaps, from 2 to 300 acres; not all, however, being good land, or even useful as a Mission Station save from its natural situation.) But, just as all things were necessary, the Heathen (or worse, the semi-papist) chief, Puhara, made a demand (for the fiftieth time) to be *paid* for our having resided on this present muddy spot! considerably and respectfully stating that 2 horses and 2 cows (£60!) would be the very minimum he could take for his 10 acres of swampy flat!! Knowing the utter impossibility of our coming to terms (as I had often declared I would never, from principle, pay a needle for what had been freely given by them to the C.M.S., and for which they had received far more than a tenfold value in medicine & food)—I throw up the whole affair. I was induced to offer to *purchase* a suitable site for a Station,—from having already suffered so much through coming to reside on ground which is unpaid for (and which *I will never do again*); & from knowing that I could not get one without paying for it;—and from the increasingly rapid occupation of all the country round about us by settlers (for sheep and cattle stations) for which they pay high rents,—£40—£60 per ann.!! And I was inclined to take that quantity (or even more if I thought I could peaceably and lawfully²¹⁸ retain possession of it), on account of several Xn. natives (the jewels of this flock) of the middle and lower ranks, who, in consequence of their lands being either let or sold by their principal chiefs, and they themselves greatly persecuted, and, moreover, wishing to dwell quietly, away from the bustle & turmoil of their noisy and money-loving neighbours,—much want a home. I am again, however, hedged in, and see no prospect whatever of an opening. But

214 WC: 2 Thess. i. 6

215 WC: Matt.v. 44, 45: Rom. xii. 19—21.

216 WC: Vide, copy of Lieut.-Govr's Letter, & translation, enclosed.

217 WC: Vide, extract from Bishop of New Zealand's note, enclosed.

218 WC: I use this term "*lawfully*" here in the sense in which it is used by the Colonial Government; and *not* in what I consider to be its true & legitimate sense.

this, too, will doubtless be overruled for good. Perhaps before this can possibly reach you, the whole of the surrounding country will have changed lords, as the Government Land Agent is now at Manawatu buying up that district, and his arrival in this neighbourhood is by the chiefs daily expected. Should this take place, it will have a most important bearing upon the destiny of these tribes. Without doubt their temporal welfare will be (apparently) bettered, but their spiritual welfare will be greatly endangered; and, in all probability, the Faith of the majority will be scattered to the winds.

8. Notwithstanding the many serious and altogether new obstacles with which our work has had to contend during the year, especially in this neighbourhood, a decided progress has been made. Thirty-three adults, principally natives of this vicinity, have been baptized; and a very nice little chapel (with glass windows, door, pulpit and reading-desk) has been erected and *finished* at Te Rotoatara. Among the adults lately baptized is the dear old man, To Motu; formerly (and until very lately) the heathen Priest of Te Hapuku, and the principal “sacred” man of the district. Of the native sacerdotal rank very few indeed now remain among us,—and about half those are also candidates for baptism; while the others, though they still keep back, cease to perform their heathen rites, even when asked to do so; thus virtually consigning them “to the moles & bats”. Te Motu was baptized with several others at the opening of Te Rotoatara Chapel in July last, when he received the name of Melchisedec.

9. My annual Teachers’ School was held, as usual, last month; when 16 teachers & monitors attended from all parts of the district. I had, for some time, almost feared that I should not be able to hold any school, in consequence of the state of the principal natives about me; but in this too, God, “always wont to give more than either we desire or deserve” graciously opened a way for us, and my teachers, though summoned very late, attended to their day. One of them, Richard Taki (an indefatigable & trusty native of many years standing in the church and of service in the mission—a stranger in these parts) had just gone on foot (for the *fifth* time!) from his Station in Palliser Bay to Wellington (a distance there and back of a 100 heavy miles) upon matters connected with the boarded chapel building at his village. Upon his return to his home & family he immediately left them again for the Mission Station, in order to attend the Teachers’ School;—reaching this place in time but with sadly swelled and painful feet, which affliction he had to endure nearly the whole of his stay, but which never kept him from attending daily morning and evening prayers and school. By the time he got back to Palliser Bay (after the fortnights’ school), he would have travelled nearly 500 miles in 7 weeks, over such a country as this District! entirely for the purposes of the Mission. The only remuneration he got, (if such it may be called), being a few garments for himself his wife and 5 children; costing the C.M.S. the sum of £1.13.2—which, also, included his *share* of payment for a twelvemonth’s steady and heavy service! Surely the pitiful pittances, of *late* years doled out to your valuable native teachers in *these parts*, deserve on your part a serious & generous re-consideration.

10. We have just received the *bare* information from the Rev. R.Cole of the separation by you of Archdeacon Henry Williams from the C.M.S. Not knowing the reason which may have induced you to take such a serious step, we await

rather anxiously the arrival of further information on the matter.

11. I hope, ere long, to be enabled to send you another portion of my Journal.

And, begging you to remember us without ceasing always in all your prayers,

I am,

My dear sirs,

Your very obedient servant,
William Colenso.

[1] Waitangi Station,
Heretaunga District.

Report for 11 Months ending Novr. 30, 1850.

During the past 11 months I have been engaged as follows:—on the LORD’S day, in holding Divine Service twice, and in Catechizing and Teaching in the Schools.—

On the week days, in attending to the Adult Male School—in Instructing and Examining the Candidates for Baptism and the LORD’S Supper—in holding Bible and Teacher’s Classes—in visiting the Sick, and dispensing Medicine—in Translating & printing Tracts—in Binding Native’s Old Testaments and Prayer-books—in settling dispute, &c., &c.,—and in attending to the many Secular duties of the Station.—

On the 11th. of January I left the Station on a visit to the Natives of Tangoio, Petani, and Wārerangi; and returned on the 16th. of that month.—

On the 2nd. of February I left the Station on a visit to the Natives of Kohinurakau, Ngāwakatara, & Patangata; and returned on the 7th. following.—

On the 2nd. of March I left the Station on a general visit throughout the district; and returned on the 16th. April.—

On the 9th. of May I left the Station on a visit to the Natives of Tangoio, Petani; and returned on the 20th. following.—

On the 17th. of June I again left the Station on a visit to those villages, Tangoio & Petani, and returned on the 22nd. of that month.—

On the 5th. July I left the Station on a visit to Waimarama, Kohinurakau, Ngāwakatara, Patangata, & Te Rotoatara, and returned on the 17th. of that month.—

On the 2nd. of October I left the Station on a visit to Petani, Tarawera, and Tangoio; & returned on the 14th. of that month.

On the 15th. of November I left the Station on a visit to all the villages lying between the Station and Cape Turnagain, [2] and returned on the 30th. of the same month.—

Total number of days absent from the Station visiting Natives, 118. (Occasional visits to Natives within one day’s journey from the Station are not herein enumerated.)

The number of Baptisms performed in the District during those 11 months, is,—Men 21, Women 20, children 62;—Total, 103.

The number of marriages performed, 37.

The increase of Communicants, 45.

The number of candidates for Baptism is still on the increase; a few more of the heathen having come over

during the year.—At present I have the Names of upwards of 200 Candidates enclosed on my Books.—

Three chapels have been erected during the year;—namely at Ngaawapurua, Tarawera, and Te Rotoatara. At these two last-mentioned villages there had not hitherto been any separate building for Divine Worship. The one erected at Te Rotoatara is a nearly executed and *finished* building, having glazed windows, a porch, door, pulpit, & reading-desk.

The boarded Chapel at Wairarapa is now, I hope, very nearly finished; it would have been quite so long ago, but it was unfortunately blown down during the early part of last winter, when the outside work was nearly completed. The Natives have already paid (in Cash) £68.13.0. to the Europeans whom they engaged to put it up; and they have £66.0.0 more to pay on its completion.—

Mrs. Colenso has attended, as hitherto, to the Daily female and Infant School; but the general attendance (both in this and the Adult Male School), save on Sundays and Mondays is of a very irregular kind. Several persons have, notwithstanding, learned to read and write during the year; and not a few young Men have acquired a pretty decent [3] knowledge of the Simple rules of Arithmetic as far as Division.

The Station Congregations and Schools fell off considerably during the first six months of the year, owing to the outrageous proceedings of my principal ex-teacher Leonard (aided by some ill-disposed Chiefs,) whom I had been obliged to remove from his office. And not only so, but my person and property was daily subjected to insult and threats of violence from them, insomuch that I deemed it proper to acquaint the Lieut-Governor of the state of things about us. The LORD, however, mercifully kept us during this season of trial, & delivered us from our enemies and false friends in His own good time. Early in August I, believing them to be sufficiently humbled, made peace with all those residing near us; since which they have all behaved very quietly & orderly towards us, and regularly attend Divine Services & School as before; while our Congregations on the LORD'S day have been increased.—

On the 2nd. of September my annual Teacher's School commenced, and continued daily until the 14th. inclusive. Sixteen Teachers & Monitors being present from all parts of the District. This year we were engaged, in the mornings, upon the following Chapters of the N. Testament, John I, Rom. III, IV, XIV, 1 Cor. I, II, III, Heb. XII, and Matt. VII, and, in the afternoons, in Arithmetic.—

Throughout the year several of the *first* class Native Teachers have visited the more distant villages.—

During my late absence (in which I went as far S. as Cape Turnagain,) a Popish Priest (who has been expelled from Te Wairoa by the Native Chiefs of that place, and who subsequently resided at Turanga,) suddenly and unexpectedly arrived here, and was instantly received by [4] the Heathen Chief Puhara, (some of whose relatives profess to be Papists,) from whom the P. Priest immediately purchased a site for a residence, paying him £30. for the same. The place which he has bought is about 2 miles from the Mission Station, and near to Puhara's and Te Hapuku's villages. From this now encamped enemy I may expect much attempted annoyance.—

The state of the Natives throughout the District is much the same as when I last reported thereupon. They are certainly more careless towards spiritual things than they were; the

raising of food, and the scraping of flax for sale, and the acquiring of Horses and Money occupying pretty nearly all their time and thoughts. From certain indications which present themselves on every side, I can not but believe, that a state of reaction is at hand, and that things must yet be worse before they can be better. The LORD'S foundation is, however, sure; He knoweth them that are His; and he will assuredly deliver them to his praise & honor & glory!

Several persons of all ages have died during the year. A few of whom (and 2 in particular, Priscilla, the wife of Isaac Pakitara, a Monitor of Te Rotoatara, and Caleb Te Hiaro, the venerable old Chief of the sequestered village of Te Hawera,) have borne a good testimony in their last hours, and thus encouraged their otherwise desponding relatives to persevere.—

I have again attempted to remove from our present unhealthy to a more eligible situation, and had very nearly succeeded in doing so; (although I should have had to pay a large sum, almost £100, in order to enter peaceably thereupon,) when our all but completed arrangements were suddenly broken up, through the rapaciousness [5] of the Native Chiefs. Though disappointed, and again, for a season, hedged in; I have little or no *anxiety* concerning our removal.—And this principally from the fact of the Natives being so exceedingly scattered, and of their awaiting the arrival of the Government Land-Agent to sell him some large blocks of their Land; so that it is difficult (if not unadvisable) to determine at present, what spot may eventually prove to be a suitable one for a Mission Station.—As I can scarcely conceive a more monstrous and useless anomaly, than that of a Missionary residing by Choice in or near Colonial Settlements. I have long ago committed the matter of our removal to the LORD, and dare believe that He will guide us in this matter also.—

My own and Mrs. Colenso's health, as well as that of our 2 children, had been & is much the same as mentioned in last year's report. We have, in common with our Mission Brethren throughout the world, our daily work & trials & infirmities, with very much both without and within to depress us and to try our faith; but we daily prove the ready help of our covenant GOD, who enables us to persevere, and who is ever abundantly better towards us than all our fearful hopes could ever anticipate or desire.—

William Colenso

Waitangi,
Decr. 2, 1850.

1850 December 30: to McLean²¹⁹

Mission Station
Waitangi
Decr. 30 1850

My dear Sir

We send you a few loose cherries, a little wine, milk & Butter, and a Cake, & would that they were both larger & better.—

We should have sent to you on Thursday or Friday last, but we have been, all hands, laid up with Influenza—several of my household (now 20 in no.!) are still unwell.—

We hope you are well—& beg you will *not fail to send to us* for whatever you may want which we can supply. And with compliments to Mr. Reed, I am

(for self & Mrs Colenso)

Yours very truly

W. Colenso

P.S. I write in a very great hurry—but add, by way of postscript,—our hearty wish of a happy New Year to you both. W.C.

Date? to McLean²²⁰

Mission Station
Waitangi
Thursday 2 p.m.

Donl. McLean Esq.
&c &c

My dear Sir

Your kind note & accompaniments have just reached me.— I thank you much for all—but can scarcely reply to your note just now. I was yesterday aftn. siezed with a violent headache, which, spite of medicine, still continues, so that I scarcely know what I am doing.—

We send you some milk & apples—the 4 or 5 *red* ones are fattered, & may be nearly ripe, being summer fruit.

We regret, however, that you should have deprived yourself of the ale—as it is of great service to you, whether at Ahuriri (without good water), or travelling: if I thought you would not be offended at my doing so—I would return it to you by your Natives.

I hope to write you again in a day or two—when I will return your paper & Mr. Morgan's letter.—

And I also hope to send 3 or 4 packages to Ahuriri on Tuesday next for Wellington per Rose.

Excuse this my dear Sir
& Believe me

Yours sincerely

W. Colenso

Date? to McLean²²¹

Tuesday noon

D. McLean Esq
&c &c

My dear Sir,

I am indeed much obliged to you for your kind forwarding my letters &c by your lad.—

But I have not any particular news—save that Gov. Grey & Lady were at Port Nicholson, and Archd. Williams had sailed from England. Archd. Hadfield too had a severe fall from his horse but was better.

I now send you a native almanac—I have but 100 for the whole Dist!

We send you a little Milk and would send you an Apple Pie, but, alas! we have no Lard nor Butter wherewith to make the Crust. This Mrs Colenso regrets. Would you like any *green* apples for cooking? i.e. the *thinings* of the Trees.—

The day you left a *taua* of ducks—11 in number—gobbled up *all* the remaining gooseberries!

You will further oblige me in letting me know the day on which the Rose sails. I have hopes of being in time for the ship for England; although Cole says I must *not* be behind Feby. 1st.—

Pray excuse this, and

Believe me

Ever yours truly

W. Colenso

P.S. *The* “Black Cow” has been driven out nearly 10 times from the natives' kumara & potatoes for which she seems to have taken quite a fancy. I have *heard* shooting her proposed. W.C.

Date? to McLean²²²

Thursday mornng.

D. McLean Esq
&c &c

My dear Sir

I am doomed to be ever in a hurry! Your kind note of yesterday arrived by water just as your *after* messenger did by land!! I, therefore, could not answer it.

I now send you a couple (or rather 3) notes, for Wairoa & Turanga, which I venture to burden you with. I hope you will have a pleasant journey. I suppose you will still find me at home (home?), on your return. The Baptism is to take place on Feby. 9.

We ask each other (*vainly*) what can we do for you for your journey? I am quite tired writing. You can tell Mr. Hamlin much of Ahuriri and Waitangi news.—

Believe me ever

Very faithfully yours

W. Colenso.

Date? to McLean²²³Waitangi
Saturday 1 p.m.

Dear Mr. McLean

I have just received your note with the printed form to be filled up.—

The “form” appears to me to be an uncommonly curious one (to say the least of it),—in your accompanying note you speak of the “*European* population”—the form has a column headed “Race”—& another headed “sex”!! *after* the European *name* of the person!!

As I do not know how many head of cattle there are, ditto goats—I am obliged to leave the filling it up until Monday—the live stock being absent & my lads at Ahuriri, getting the goods which came by “Rose.”—

Of course it is *utterly impossible* that I could fill up a sheet for Mr. Hamlin—I do not even know the no. of his family.

Had we known that you were still at Ahuriri, we should have sent you a basket of Lettuces.

Believe me
very truly yours
W. Colenso.

Date? to McLean²²⁴

Monday morning

D. McLean Esq.

Dear Mr McLean

I send you with as little delay as possible the “Form,” filled in to the best of my ability.— — —

I regret your not having received any Papers, especially as I myself am in the same predicament. I have received a lot of goods (from England & Wellington), but the *odd one* (a “*Parcel*”—as per Bill of Lading,) has not come to hand—and this, doubtless, contains both Letters & papers: should it yet be found, & there are Papers within I will send them to you immediately.—

We send you a basket of Lettuces (in their leaves to keep them fresh & cool) & would we had something better.—

I write in haste
Yours sincerely
W. Colenso

1851 January 21: to McLean²²⁵Tuesday Morning
21st [January] 1851.

My dear Sir

In a world of hurry I hasten to send off my packages, so as to ensure *their* going. I hope they will reach Ahuriri, &

Wellington too, safely & *dry*.—I cannot now send a single Letter, but I hope to do so this morning or tomorrow morning.—I am happy to get rid of these, & hope to be in time with my Letters. By the bye did you intend your Messengers to reach Wellington in time for the “Ld. W. Bentinck”? He certainly will *not* do so, in starting hence “tomorrow or Thursday.”—that is if she is to sail by the 1st. of Feby.—

Pray excuse this
Ever sincerely yours
W. Colenso

Please tell Mr. Aukatele, that I will write to him tomorrow.

1851 January 22: to Owen²²⁶Waitangi, Hawkes Bay
N. Zealand,
Jany. 22, 1851.

Prof. Owen
&c &c &c
Royal Coll. Surgeons,
London.

My dear Sir

I have this day sent off some packages of Botanical specimens for Sir W.J. Hooker, and have enclosed therein a small bottle containing specimens of (alas!) *all* the known terrestrial mammals of this country!—viz. 2 specimens of the N.Z. rat and 1 ditto of the *N. Zealand Bat*;—which I do myself the honor and pleasure of sending to you, and hope they may be not altogether undesirable.—

For upwards of 15 years have I (in all my wanderings), diligently sought for a true N. Zealand Rat, but have never until now been so fortunate as to procure one, although I had offered large rewards for any that should be brought me. A short time back, however, I was unexpectedly delighted with some, which were dug out of their burrows in the grassy plains of this neighbourhood. Two of them were alive, and them I kept several weeks, in a common wire rat cage; during which period I had ample opportunities of observing their habits, &c.—They appeared to be very inoffensive creatures, remaining all day in the centre of their grass bed, only eating by night, when they preferred maize to any other food, and seldom uttering a sound, which, when they did, was only a small squeak.

I think you will find this animal to possess all the characters of a true *Mus*; and in fact, approximating (outwardly) very near to one of our common British species. I have, therefore named it *Mus Novæ Zelandiæ*; which name I should wish it to retain, if, on further examination, it should be found (as I suspect) to belong to that genus.—

The other (dead) specimens, turned bad in the solution, (yours, “No.II.”) and I was obliged to throw them away.—

The *Bat*, I got, also, alive, and kept it so upwards of 6 weeks. It amused us much with its tortuous flights when taken out to be fed at evenings in our parlour; as well as with its peculiar mode of eating—which is well described by Daniell, in a note appended to (Bennett’s) “White’s History of Selbourne,” Lett. xi. p50; and which is equally

223 ATL Object #1024763 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.
224 ATL Object #1024145 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.
225 ATL Object #1005773 from MS-Papers-0032-0021.

226 ATL Micro-Ms-Coll-20-2274.

true concerning this species. It preferred the liver of a fowl, and, above all, the large “blue bottle” fly (*Musca* —); it would, also, drink a little milk; but on the whole, took a very small quantity of food.—It invariably shunned the light, both natural & artificial; and hung suspended, all day and night, by its hind paws, generally clinging by one only.—

I have not a description of *Forster’s Bat*, (*Vespertilio tuberculatus*, G. Forster;—Gray’s List of Mammalia, Dieffenbach’s N. Zealand, vol. ii, p.181,) but that species is there stated by Gray to be “Yellowish brown, &c,” which does not accord with *this* species. Nor can I reconcile it with a species of *Vespertilionidæ*, which Gray summarily describes at p. 296 of that volume; and which he states to be a “*new* genus, (*Myrtreina*),” and, yet to be identical with Forster’s *V. tuberculosus*: in this Gray evidently confounds the 2 species.

I believe that there are several species of Bats in this country; and that *this*, which (from its ear, &c.) I think will prove to be a true *Vespertilio*, will make, with Gray’s and Forster’s, a third distinct species.—

Forster’s Bat (*V. tuberculatus*), was discovered by him at Dusky Bay, where, I have lately learned, a species of Bat is now found, inhabiting the deserted subterranean holes of the “*Mutton-birds*”;—possibly a species of *Procellaria* or *some other nearly allied congener*.—

This species now sent is, when alive, of a fine glossy black-brown color, fur rather long. From hollow trees, in the low lands, near the Mission Station.—

I, also, send you 4 Bat-skins, from the hilly country in the interior. These I lately obtained from a Native who had preserved them for me; and, though in a bad state, yet (as they have the jaws & ears & forepaws attached, I send them also. I think these may also prove to be distinct, at least from the one in the solution.

I have recently received a small lot of *Moa* (*Dinornis*?) bones of large size and in excellent preservation. But, being the *first* I have been able to procure for a very long period, (in fact, *all* that I have gained since I sent you my last,) and believing, (from report,) that you and others must by this time have been pretty well stocked, through the exertion of Mantell (*fil.*) and other Collectors,—I do not now send them. Nor can I do more than passingly advert to them, through want of time just now—they are, however, among the largest I have yet seen.—

I sent you, some time ago, portions of the jaws of a Seal? (*Phoca leptorix*?) I hope you received them; although they were scarcely worth your notice. Should you particularly wish a perfect skull of that animal, I think I might, some day or other, be able to get you one.

Believe me. My dear Sir,
very faithfully yours,
William Colenso.

1851 January 28: to the CMS Secretaries

To the CMS secretaries

Waitangi Jan. 28/51.

My dear Sirs

A vessel on her way to Wellington has just hove to off the Station, and as I know there is a ship there about to sail for England, I send this my Journal & Report—to go by her, but cannot write now.

(Signed) W. Colenso.

1851 February 27: to the European traders at Ahuriri²²⁷

Ch. Miss. Station,
Waitangi, Feby. 27/51.

Sir

The bearer of this note is a young Chief of rank, who has for some time been a regular attendant upon Christian Instruction as a Candidate for Baptism.

He was to have been Baptized with his mother and sisters, at the large Adult Baptism which took place here on the 9th. inst. They, however, were admitted while he was excluded.—

This I did, in consequence of my heaving heard of his having sold you some flax shortly before, which flax he wilfully wetted on his way to your place, in order to increase its weight.

He has since been to me several times, seemingly penitent for his error, and begging to be again received as a Candidate for Baptism. This, however, I have positively refused to do, unless he first makes you full recompense for the injury done; which he has willingly agreed to.

I, therefore, write you this note; which he will take, and which will explain his errand. And, I should be obliged to you in your informing me, as to your being satisfied in the matter.

and am,
Sir,
very truly yours,
William Colenso

1851 March 13: to Eyre²²⁸

Church Mission Station,
Waitangi, Hawke's Bay, March 13/51.

To His Excellency
Lt. Govr. Eyre,
Wellington

Sir,

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of a packet from Your Excellency, containing, a copy of a Letter written to some chiefs of this neighbourhood, dated, June 22/50,—a copy of a Government Gazette, No. 18, dated, Sept. 21/50,—and an exceedingly kind note of sympathy with Mrs. Colenso and myself from Your Excellency; which packet I received some time in November last.

I should have long ago thanked you, Sir, for your Letter to the disaffected Chiefs, and for your kind notice of us in the midst of your numerous and important duties, had I not hoped to have been able (in conformity with Your Excellency's intimation) to suggest a plan, by which we might be for the future free from similar annoyances to those to which we already been so often subjected during our residence here.—And such I may yet have in my power to lay before Your Excellency.—

From the winter of the year 1846,—in which the floors of our house, which are raised nearly 3 feet from the ground, (the house itself being erected on the most elevated spot,) were 9 inches under water from the overflowing of the neighbouring rivers,—from that period I have on several occasions attempted to remove to a more eligible site, and have been as often thwarted through the jealousy of the principal Chiefs, who sometimes assented and subsequently refused to allow me to remove, and at other times demanded upwards of £100. for a small spot of ground whereon to build a house; to which exorbitant demand however, I had very nearly, through necessity, last winter settled; but, hearing of the expected visit of Mr. McLean to purchase if possible a tract of Land from them, I considered it far better, and ultimately safer, to break off my engagement & to wait awhile, (although in so doing we should again in all probability be exposed to much inconvenience & loss,)—that I might know how the Chiefs would act;—what Land they would sell & what retain, & where permanently settle. As well as to obtain if possible, the site we needed from the Government, and so be delivered from very much annoyance. And herein the Government will indeed have it in their power to help us much; provided, that, in those tracts of Land which now are or may be offered to Mr. McLean, there shall be found a spot every way suitable for a Mission Station; that is, according to my views. A place, possessing wood and water, and land fit for agricultural purposes, where Natives can quietly dwell without either annoying or being annoyed by the expected incoming Settlers. And, perhaps, should such a place every way suitable not be found in those blocks which are or may be offered to Mr. McLean, the Government would be pleased to allow and approve of my selecting a spot fit for such a Station; which could also be purchased by their agent (if approved of by him) from the Chiefs, & then transferred to me for the foregoing purposes.

I am happy, Sir, to be able to state, that those Native Chiefs who were last year so turbulent, are, at present, dwelling

very quietly. With the major part of them I had made peace, sometimes before the arrival of Your Excellency's Letter to them; which, however, has been of no small service.—

I have the honor to be,
Sir,—
Your Excellency's most obedient
Servant,
William Colenso.

1851 March 14: to Eyre²²⁹

Church Mission Station,
Waitangi, March 14, 1851.

To Lieut. Govr. Eyre,
&c &c &c
Government House,
Wellington.

My dear Sir,

The kindness which I have ever experienced from you induces me to venture to intrude upon your valuable time with a few novel thoughts of my own.—More particularly so, that you are, in a measure, an innocent cause thereof; and you have already recorded congenerous opinions of your own.—

You will remember, that, in 1848, you kindly presented me with a copy of your Journey in Central Australia; from having very little spare time, (in fact, I may truly say, none,) I never till very lately read your work, although I had casually looked into it. I was, however, led to peruse it closely, in consequence of having had lent me a copy of Major Mitchell's three Expeditions into Eastern Australia, which contained the affecting narrative of the sad loss of Richard Cunningham, the brother of my deceased friend Allan—both N. Zealand Botanists. I mention this, because it was this circumstance which led me to dip into Mitchell's work; but before I had finished it the situation of the Natives of Australia (and particularly of those dwelling on the Rivers Murray & Darling and their larger tributaries,) completely engrossed my attention. I now took up your work, and that completed what the other had begun—kindled a burning desire within me, to go to those poor castaways dwelling in those wild & unfrequented districts. Strange as it may at first sight appear, I, who but a short time ago, had thought and hoped that I had well-nigh done with wandering about and heavy pioneering toil, feel now, my dear Sir, much as I did when I landed in New Zealand—quite willing to resign all to go and preach Christ to those despised and ill-used aborigines.

Of course, I can not have yet formed any definite plan; in fact, I am not quite sure whether in going thither I should be in the path of duty; but I pray for guidance, and write to you (first) and to others for advice.—Assistance, should I eventually go, I want none. Some such ideas as the following have presented themselves within my mind, and are, at present, very favourite ones with me.—To go thither, (i.e. to the Tribes inhabiting the Country from about Lake Victoria to the junction of the River Gwydir,) and to take four faithful & useful Christian New-Zealanders with me,

229 ATL qMS-0489; appendix to Journals. Annotated "Copy of a private Letter to Lieut. Governor Eyre: which is now made here in consequence of his having shewn the same to the Bishop."

228 ATL qMS-0489; appendix to Journals.

(supposing I should succeed in getting them). I should leave for 2 years certain, during which I should live as much as possible like those Natives; I should take no property whatever with me—nothing, save a Bible, a knife, and a tomahawk, and, perhaps, a few seeds; so that there could never be any inducement to rob or kill. I should, from the very beginning, go quietly and strictly incog., and I would try (for their souls' sake) to eat only their food, and roam about continually with them. At the end of 6 months, 2 of my 4 New-Zealanders should be at liberty to return if they please, and the other 2 at the end of another 6 months. And if, at the end of 2 years, I saw no hopes of succeeding, then, as a last resource, I would return to N. Zealand, bringing with me as many boys as I could prevail upon the parents and Chiefs to let me have; whom I would hope to instruct here in New Zealand, and further hope, in due time, to return as Evangelists to their native land and people. I should not, however, omit stating, that my belief for many years has been, that some such plan as this, which I have here very imperfectly and briefly sketched, is absolutely needful in order to bring such a peculiarly wandering race to an acquaintance with the saving truths of the Gospel. Nor can I believe, that those Missionaries at Encounter Bay, Adelaide, Swan River, and elsewhere, will ever meet with much better success than did our unfortunate Mission at Wellington Valley, unless they adopt some such plan as this:—in short, to such persons is, I think, the promise of our Lord (Luke xviii. 29, 30,) peculiarly made;—such were the means used by the Apostles (1 Cor. ix. 19, 21, 22,) and those other holy Missionaries of the primitive ages, and their success was answerable to their faith. In a word, my dear Sir, if it be of GOD, HE will assuredly bring it to pass; HE will enable me for that peculiar work to which HE may call me; HE will give me the language of that people also, and favour in their sight—and open their understandings—and give them to know themselves—and own my labors,—and make known also to them the unsearchable and wholly suitable riches of His Son. I see no obstacle save one—my own unfitness—but this HE can also remove, or remedy:—(Jer. i. 6–9.) When the Bishop sent me to this District, he exacted from me the pledge—not to leave his Diocese for 7 years. I have nearly fulfilled that period, and have kept my word. And, without doubt, a 100 persons might be found willing enough to take charge of such a post as this now is, ere one could be met with willing to go forth in that manner and to that people.—I, myself, would have shrunk from it only a year ago. But I must refrain from saying any thing more at present, lest you should be weary with so much upon one subject. My heart, however, is full; and hence it is that I speak.—Pray give me, my dear Sir, your counsel & advice in this matter, for you have lived among those Tribes, and have been respected by and loved them; and, if you have any work upon the Grammar, Language, Religion, Habits, &c., of that people, may I be allowed to request the loan of such? Mr. Cole, who has appointed the 27th. of April for our meeting at Wairarapa, will, I am sure, bring it me.—

I trust, no one will entertain any such opinion as, that I seek to wander in those little-known regions through desire of exploration, or love of Botany. Far, very far indeed, are any such thoughts from my mind. To attempt such objects in such a way could only arise from the deepest infatuation. In conversing upon that matter with Mrs. Colenso, she immediately & willingly consented to remain here, with our 2 children, to keep up the Station & Schools during my proposed 2 years of absence.—

During the last month I have been very busy; having Baptized 106 adults, all from this immediate neighbourhood. Many of them are very aged persons, consequently not a great number (35) could read. All had, however, been Candidates for several years; nearly half of them from /45, & /46. Among them are the elder sons and wives of the principal Chiefs.—

It is now certainly very late to congratulate you upon your Marriage, but as this is my first since that important event—and as our ancient though homely saw has it, “Better late than never”—I may perhaps be allowed to do so.—May your happiness in each others society be reciprocal & continually increasing, and may you have grace from on high daily vouchsafed to enable you both to bear and forebear.—

If you please, my dear Sir, make my very best respects to your Lady—and, Believe me,

Ever faithfully yours,
William Colenso.

(True copy.)

1851 March 26: to McLean²³⁰

Manawarakau
Wednesday, noon,
March 26/51

My dear Mr McLean

Your very friendly note of Thursday last duly reached me—and I came to this place fully expecting to find you *here*, or that you had preceded me—in both, however, I am disappointed.—

At present I can only thank you for your kind wishes, &c.—I fear, however, that the prospect of my *continuing* in this country is daily getting fainter—a short time will, however, decide. I firmly believe that things are rapidly altering for the worse in the district (as well as in others),—and I cannot remain to see the utter spoliation of my flock without having it in my power to do them the *least* service. Much however will depend on *yourself*, while you retain your present situation.—

Since we last met I have heard much—a tithe of which I cannot write.—But 2 things I may mention, as these *appear* to be beyond question,—first, that you have in some measure departed from the original expressed intention, of taking only those lands which were waste, & then from the *rightful* owners only; and, of standing by the *poor* Xn. man, to preserve him from being beaten and brow-beaten by the Heathen Chiefs—and, second, that you told Hupata (when defending his right to his own, & declaring that he would not part with his land, he having several children)—that he, as being only *one* had no right to stand against the wishes of the majority!—

These things I have plainly and faithfully written—they have already wonderfully operated against you (they may, I allow, be false),—and, although I have done what I could to allay the angry feeling—I can not but express to you that I have some ugly doubts which I could wish to be fully & for ever rid of.

Were I not friendly, & Xtianly attached to you I should not write as I now do. And I hope you will forgive my blunt and rude way of expressing myself. — — — — —
— — — — —

This, is one of those places I once thought of as a somewhat desirable place for a residence—it is isolated & in many respects suitable.—

Mrs Colenso will gladly do what she can for you. Do call.—

A Dieu my dear Mr McLean—my heart is full.—
Believe me
Ever truly yours
W Colenso.

1851 April: to McLean²³¹

Rev. W. Colenso
Waitangi
Monday mornng.

D. McLean Esq.,
&c &c &c

My dear Sir

Mrs Colenso gladly avails herself of an opportunity to send you a little Butter—to which I add a few nuts—having nothing better of fruit kind to offer.—

There are however a few bottles of gooseberry & elder wine remaining which are wholly at *your* service.

I saw a *Brig* off on Saturday which (at first) I took for the Govt. Brig—but afterwards supposed to be a whaling one.

I suppose you heard of my “Maumauhaere-noa” to Molangiangi: whence I returned on Friday 4 a.m.

I should like to know when you may be coming this way—that I may be at home when you call.

I should have told you, that the 2 vols. of “Mitchell’s Travels in Australia,” which you so kindly lent me, are still here.

There is a young scamp of a Chief belonging to Ngatihineuru Tribe, but who chiefly resides at Tangoio, called Mohi Tarapuhi, of whom you should know something.—As, (in addition to his having taken a *second* wife,) he has very recently taken away from her husband the *mother* of his 2nd. wife! with whom he is boldly cohabiting: relying upon our forbearance & his nuinga.—

Believe me
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

1851 April 14: to St Hill²³²

Pahawa, April 14, 1851.

To H. St. Hill, Esqr.,
Chief Police Magistrate,
Wellington.

Sir,

I write to inform you, that, on Saturday last, the 12th. inst., Between the hours of 11 and 12 in the forenoon, when on my way hither from the village of Waraurangi, and near Ngapihao, a point of land about 5 miles from this place, I, travelling quietly along the public path. (and being about a quarter of a mile ahead of my Native baggage bearers,) perceived a white man hastening through the fern about 200 yards before me; but, as I thought, going in a sloping direction towards the sea, I, at first, took little notice of him. On seeing him, however, suddenly incline towards my back, or side, I looked again, and saw he had a double-barrelled gun in his hand, which he held either cocked or half-cocked as if about to bring to his shoulder. Upon this, turning towards him, I stood still; in a moment he was close to me. He appeared to be very much excited, and abruptly demanded, “Is that your dog?”—I replied, “Yes; my dog is here with me.” He quickly rejoined, “Tie it up, or I must shoot it;” at the same time lifting his gun. I, standing before my dog, immediately replied, “Indeed, I shall not tie it up; because we are going quietly along in the public road.” “Then,” he exclaimed, “I must shoot it;” again lifting his gun. I said, “If you do, be assured, I will seize you and take you to Wellington.” He answered, “I can’t help it, I must shoot it; for such are my orders, Sir.—We have lost more than 200 sheep.” I replied, “If you saw my dog actually on your sheep, even then it would be quite time enough to speak thus.” He again remarked, “I must obey my orders, Sir.” I asked him, “Who is your master?” He replied, “Mr. Wilson.” “Where is he?” I asked. “He is gone up the hill”; was his reply. We had now walked on a little way together in the road, when I said to him, “Give my compliments to your master, Mr. Wilson, and tell him, that I shall report this matter to the Governor.” He replied, “Yes, Sir.”—“Be sure,” I said, “that you tell him.” “Yes, Sir; I wont forget;” was his reply. Walking slowly onwards a short distance, my Natives overtook me, and we went on together. We had scarcely, however, got a half-a-mile further, before another white man, in very wretched attire, suddenly emerged from some bushes into the pathway & making towards us, and holding his musket, cocked, or, half-cocked, to the “ready,” called out to me (being the foremost of the party, “Tie up your dog, or I must shoot it!” “No;” I replied, “I shall not tie him up; we are going quietly along in the way.” “Then I must shoot it;” he exclaimed, lifting his musket. I said, “Surely it is quite time enough for you to threaten, when you see any injury done to your sheep.” “Yes, Sir; yes, Sir;” he quickly rejoined, “he is going along quiet enough now to be sure.”—On hearing, however, that the sheep run had poisoned baits, I got my dog tied, and led, and so escaped any further molestation.—

On remarking, afterwards, to Te Wereta (the chief of Waraurangi) who had accompanied me, but who had gone on before on horseback; he said, “I te tohe ano ahau ki e pakeha, kia kaua e haere ake ki a koe me te tupara, mea ana, Nau ano to kuri, he kuri pai, he kuri haere noa; a, hore rawa ia kia rongo.”—

The Name by which the Natives call the first man is “Taare”: the second is known by the name of “Tamati.”—

My dog is a little sheep-dog, one of Mr. Guthrie’s breed, exceedingly docile & harmless and attached to me. I think, that I have scarcely any need to add, that, in all my many journeyings during several years up and down through Wairarapa and by the coast, no injury whatever has at any time been done by my dog to anyone’s sheep; and, that it is morally impossible that I could ever allow my dog, doing such a thing.

During this very journey and only a fortnight ago, in passing over Messrs. Northwood and Tiffen’s Station at Tuingara, this same dog got poisoned, and I fortunately discovered it just in time to save his life by the aid of a powerful emetic which I happened to have with me. And, on a former occasion, my dog very narrowly escaped the same fate, and in passing over their Station at Wairarapa, being then barely saved through an emetic furnished by Mr. Tiffen.

The whole of what I have herein written, I can conscientiously swear to. I could not, however, swear, that I stood in bodily fear of the man; but I can safely swear, that I fully believed he would shoot my dog, and, if he had done so, no one can say what the ultimate consequences might not have been;—perhaps loss of human life.

I now make this complaint to you, Sir, in the form of an Information against Mr. Wilson and his two men acting under his orders.—For, I confess that I can scarcely see any difference between my being accosted in England by a highwayman with loaded pistols demanding my money—and my being here, on a lonely shore threatened by an armed man with the destruction of my property.—And, will therefore thank you to inform me, how I should further act in this matter.

I intend finally leaving the valley of Wairarapa on Monday the 5th. of May next; and, though I should greatly regret to have to go now to Wellington (seeing, that all my days for the various villages throughout this district have long been fixed—as you will find by the enclosed [printed] paper, and I have moreover only my bush dress with me;—) Yet, rather than defeat the putting a stop to such proceedings,—which I cannot but think (from my own case, as well as from the numerous similar complaints which have been made to me from time to time by the Natives,) is highly needful for the future peace of the colony—I would consent to do so, believing that by bringing this matter before you, Sir, I shall eventually be found to have been acting for the Public good.—

I am, Sir
Your very obedient Servant,
William Colenso.

1851 August 1: to McLean²³³

Ch. Miss. Station,
Waitangi,
August 1, 1851.

My dear Sir,

In a prodigious hurry I scribble you a few sentences:—

—To *thank you* for your excessively kind note, and all its accompaniments, which I found at Ngaawapurua, on the Saturday after you had left.

—To express my great regret that you should have deprived yourself of what you certainly needed far beyond myself—and

—To tell you, that I have little or nothing to say—being *still* on the tip-toe of expectation of getting some Letters, &c, per “*Rose*”, now due.

I reached the Station (by forced marches) by the end of May. I made haste to meet Mr. Grace, who arrived here the next day, and who remained a week, or more.—

My “mate” detained me 12 days at one place—and, through travelling long before I ought I made it worse, insomuch that I thought it would end badly, and cost me a journey (or, voyage) to your town.—It has only *just* healed—for which I am thankful.—

About 10 days ago, Karaitiana, and a Mrs. Valentine Smith, suddenly appeared here. They came just in time: the weather, which, had been for 6 weeks remarkably fine, suddenly changing to wet which still continues.—

During the last 9 days we have been *twice* flooded—the first time severely so—garden, kitchen and back-rooms, deeply under water. Natives dogs, cats, &c. &c. in wakamahau and sitting room. Fortunately the river opened itself a new mouth, & we received a benefit—water leaving, mud remaining. And *since*, owing to the very heavy rain, we have been again, and are still, half submerged.—

The Natives are rather clamorous about our immediate removal.—

I feel myself in a strait.—

All pretty quiet around: Hapuku at Te Waipukurau, erecting a house for *you*.

Several deaths at Tangoio—among others the pakeha “Reino”—rather suddenly.

Mr. Val. Smith has taken a part of Karaitiana’s house in the neighbouring *pa*.

You, who know our situation, &c., can tell *all* who may be strolling Ahuriri-wards—that any supply in the way of *kai*, which the Station may afford, they shall ever be *fully* and *gladly* welcome to: but *Lodgings* and *Time* I have *not* for any one.

It is well not to be disappointed.—

Two days back I returned from Tangoio; and tomorrow I leave for a fortnight. When I rest another fortnight (i.e. cease travelling; rest is *not* here)—September is wholly occupied, accordg. to arrangement:—ditto, October.—

Yesterday we had 2 *severe* shocks of Earthq.—the first one, at ½ past 2 p.m., which made us all run out into the rain; I think this was the longest in duration that we have yet experienced. The second, happened at 20 m. past 9 p.m., and, both coming in one day, made us fear the worst.—

2 vessels *in* together from P.N.—“Phœbe” and “Twins” — several horses have arrived since you left.

I think I shall be quite ready to buy a *few* acres of land from the Govt.—immediately after you have settled with the Chiefs.—

Mrs. Colenso is not, I am sorry to say, very well; owing to a severe cold. The Children are much as usual. The Kai-tuhituhi of this rheumatic, and going-out to get more so.—

And so the wheel revolves.—

Believe me, My dear Mr. McLean,
Very sincerely yours,
William Colenso.

P.S. I have lately heard (from Whites) of the Small Pox having arrived in N.Z., & now committing fearful ravages at E. Cape. Pray get me some *vaccine virus*, that I may do all I can for the infants and others here who are not vaccinated. I have at different times vaccinated a large number, but there are still hundreds who have not been done. If you can, pray get it from two sources; & send immediate. It is a national good, & one which I am willing to perform *gratis*. W.C.

Date? to McLean²³⁴

Tuesday Mornng.
Porangahau

My dear Mr. McLean

It occurred to me last night, that, while a probability existed of the Chiefs being unwilling to consent to my going to Manawarakau, they would not be so greatly unfavorable to my going to *Waimarama*. Seeing too, that this had been agreed to *publicly* by them before the Archdn. & myself, & had only been set aside on the score of £100. being demanded by Hapuku.—Now I think—on reconsidering the matter—that, in many respects, W.marama is preferable to M.rakau—I should be much more *central* to those at N. & W. of me.—And this spot you can boldly speak on without any fear of arousing unnecessary suspicions—as they *now* know I cannot legally purchase their land. If you could *see* that little glen (which Mrs Colenso has seen) & purchase it for me—10 acres of it, as a Missy. Station—& the remr.—no large qy.—I would *purchase* immediately of the Government. I feel almost sure this could be done directly—it has *natural* boundaries & “*no mistake*.”

Please confer with Mrs Colenso on the matter, & if you can settle it, *do so*.

Ever yrs truly
W. Colenso.

P.S. Hapuku’s demanding £100 was merely a pretext to break *his word*, hoping to keep me by him: the glen can be of no use to any European settler.

1851 September 8: to McLean²³⁵

Mission Station,
Waitangi,
Sept. 8 1851.

My dear Mr McLean

Although I have more than both hands full—I cannot allow the “Rose” to return to your Town without a line of congratulation from me upon the late auspicious event of your marriage—of which your note of the 27th, & Mr Cole’s letter of the 28th ulto., informed us two days ago.—

We wish you every blessing which the Bounteous Giver of all good may have in store for you—and that you may have grace supplied to enable you to bear & forebear.—

By next vessel, I suppose I shall have to write to my old friend Mr Cole in a similar strain. You mention the *intended* Mrs Cole as having “*lately* arrived in the Colony”—I hope (may I be allowed to say,) that he is not in too great a hurry.—

And then you mention Dr. Sinclair, as having “*often* enquired for me, & requested to be remembered, &c.”—By this, I infer, that you are a friend of his, & therefore, I may (also) be allowed to ask you to enquire of the Doctor, whether he received the letters which I did myself the honor of writing him—namely, in July/45, & again in January/48,—as well as a packet, containing copies of my little publications,—as I have *never* received any acknowledgement of the same.—

I thank you much for your very kind & early offer of a home when I may visit Wellington—but, (lest you may possibly become offended hereafter,) allow me to say, that I must continue to do as I have hitherto done—travel *snail* fashion—carry my house with me.

I must venture to suppose, that some of my few friends, to whom I had mooted the subject of my migrating to the interior of the Australian provinces, will think that I had a kind of foreknowledge of the *gold* of those regions! Be that as it may, I can not but believe, that had I *gone* thither, many would have said that *such* was my purpose. I have, however, fully set aside that mission, perhaps for ever.

In thinking over our *last* conversation, at Porangahau, relative to Waimarama & thence to the Cape as a desirable N. Reserve, I have, I think, concluded upon *not* moving in that direction—mainly upon the belief, that I should be *alone*, or nearly so.—For, even as you said, the Natives will assuredly be near to the Whites. *For them*, therefore, I have decided to endeavour to get upon the Tukituki R., (or, the nearer R. Ngaruroro,)—and, if possible, at or near Patangata—perhaps the piece of ground which I had nearly obtained in the autumn of last year (1850). This spot has been again spoken of to me by Te Hapuku & others—and, as it adjoins your boundary, it could be very well added thereunto for this *specific purpose*. Karaitiana, & the other Chiefs of these nearer sub-tribes, *wish* me to locate myself upon a piece of ground about 2 miles or more from this, & nearly opposite to the village of Tanenuiorangi, upon the R. Ngaruroro—which is, I confess, desirable enough for a station, only, as they were going to have their own “Taone” there, they could not well allow more than 4 or 5 acres for a Mission Station.—

I intend, however, to get the matter *settled* upon your arrival hither—unless the Govt. should be pleased to put any

obstacle in the way—i.e. should not see proper to consent thereto. For I intend *never* again to dwell upon land which is not *bona fide* my own purchase, so as not to be disturbed any more, having had so much trouble that way.—

I hope you will have full powers to do what may be required in the matter: seeing, too, that I wrote His Excellency the Lieut. Governor upon the subject last summer.—But I will tell you more when I see you.—

I send you a note & a parcel, which we have received for you since my last.—

All local news, I dare say you will get from Mr. Parks.—

My annual teachers' School is now in hand—so that I am closely worked: this will be over in a fortnight—when I shall be able to breathe again.—And make my Northern visits as arranged.—

Should you see your friend Mr. Taylor, gently tell him, that he is a letter in my debt:—ditto, Archd. Hadfield, & Rev. S. Williams.

Our garden is beginning to shew signs of returning life—cheering token of the paternal love of God, and of His truth, & of the sureness of our Resurrection.—

Mrs Colenso is pretty well—ditto Fanny—Latty very so—myself tolerable. I am sure that Mrs. Colenso would wish to unite with me in kind respects to your good lady & yourself—I am

My dear Mr. McLean

Yours sincerely, W. Colenso.

1851 December 13: to McLean²³⁶

Waitangi,
Decr 13/51

My dear Mr. McLean

Enclosed is a paper which I will thank you to lay before the Governor at yr. earliest convenience—

It is written in a hurry.

I hope you will *not do any thing* towards causing the Priests to remain where they are, until my paper has been laid before the Governor.—

I enclose some Letters which reached me yesterday *against* the proposed transfer of some more land: I recommend them to your consideration.—

I also enclose your little a/c—as requested; I believe it to be correct. Mrs Colenso has some vague remembrance of some silver being paid to you on your former visit, and of some arrangement about it; (either in the cheque for £14. or otherwise) but does not know exactly.

Don't forget your Code of Laws—and a note from inland. If you could so arrange that some one of the Natives who may accompany you should return with your note to me, & *conduct me* upon your track—it would be so much the better.—

You know I have a long walk today before me—which will excuse this.

Believe me

Ever yours

W. Colenso

Waitangi

13 December 1851.

Certain reasons against the granting of the request of the French Roman Catholic Priests to be located here at Heretaunga in the immediate vicinity of the Church of England Mission Station.

Respectfully submitted for the consideration of His Excellency the Governor in Chief.

That the Church of England Mission Station at Waitangi was commenced by myself in the year 1844.

(I had, also, the year before laboured among these tribes; and during the year previous—1842 Archdn. W. Williams and the Revd. W. C. Dunkley had also visited them; and the Bishop had also passed through and, at the pressing desire of the Chiefs had promised to send them a Minister).

That the only piece of ground which could then be obtained with their unanimous consent has subsequently proved to be utterly unfit for the purpose.

That notwithstanding upwards of £250 has been (necessarily) expended upon the same.

That in the winter of the Year 1846, the floors of our house although raised nearly 3 feet from the ground (and the house itself on the highest elevation) were 9 inches under water.

That every winter we have been more or less inundated. That from that period (1846) I have diligently sought a suitable place to remove to having been greatly urged thereto by the Committee of Missionaries as well as by the Archdeacon of the district.

That all places which from time to time I had chosen, I have not been allowed to occupy partly owing to the jealousy of the Chiefs, partly to the exorbitant sum (£100 and upwards) demanded for a site for a house and partly to my consideration for the proclamation of His Excellency and the (then) expected coming of Mr. McLean and also to my not knowing where the natives would concentrate themselves when they should have transferred a portion of their Lands to the Government.

That some time before Mr. McLean's first arrival here (in Decr./50) the Native chiefs had (partly at my suggestion) quite arranged among themselves the boundaries of the blocks of land which they intended to offer to him for the Government and had also selected a spot (about 2 miles from Waitangi) upon which to commence a township for themselves.

That an offer had been repeatedly made to me by the Chief proprietors for a piece of ground for a Mission Station close to their proposed township.

That in the end of November of last year (1850) while I was absent visiting the Natives on the coast a French Priest suddenly arrived here (he having been recently expelled from Te Wairoa) and proceeded immediately to purchase a piece of land situated very near to the proposed township from the Heathen Chief Puhara.

That Puhara is the only Chief on this side of the Ahuriri and his little party the only natives (with the addition of 2 old persons at Waimarama and 1 at Manawarakau) amounting

scarcely to 30 in all including infants who profess to uphold the Roman Catholic mode of worship.

That there is no prospect of the French Priests increasing the number of their proselytes in these parts unless some of the natives in connection with the Church of England mission should go over to them which however has never yet happened in this District.

That according to the Returns laid before the last Committee of Missionaries of this district our Congregations averaged 2205 the number of Baptisms performed during my residence amounted to 1314 of whom 751 are communicants we have also 27 chapels some of which are fine Native buildings.

That according to a return of the Native Population of this district which I sent to the Native Secretary at Auckland in June 1849 the number was 2700 of which however more than an eighth have since died.

That Puhara is not a Principal Proprietor of this ground the titles thereto of the Chiefs running thus.

- 1st. Karaitiana
- 2nd Tariha
- 3rd Te Hira te Oha
- 4th Te Waka te Kawatini
- 5th Puhara

That the majority of the Chiefs proprietors are wholly against the selling of any portion of their land to the French Priests and refuses to cooperate with Puhara in the matter.

That the Chief Te Hapuku has no claim to the land in question neither in fact has he even asserted that he has.

That if the French priests should become located on the spot in question it would be a highly injudicious step for me (on the part of the Church Missionary Society) to accept of the offered site near the proposed Native township as in the event of my going to the Western side of the same the French Priests premises would immediately adjoin mine.

That while I am very willing to remove further inland if I could but prevail upon these natives or the majority of them to accompany me, there is not another place equally suitable for a Mission Station and Native township upon the whole of this low ground.

That in the event of my not removing to the offered site adjoining the proposed Native township it is highly probable that the said township will not flourish.

I might also mention the state in which we found these tribes as contrasted with their present altered condition—the ill-usage which both Mrs. Colenso and myself have repeatedly received from them during the long period in which they were slowly advancing to what they are now—the many censurable attempts of the French Priests to disturb the peace and confidence of our people and ourselves not only here but also at Te Wairoa and at Turanga (plain demonstrations of the antagonistic principle) their constantly urging the Natives to come and take up the price for the piece of ground in defiance of both, the Colonial laws and of Mr. McLean's intimation to them and the long looking on of the Native Chiefs to see whether the word of the Governor (as repeated by Mr. McLean & hitherto looked up to by themselves and inculcated by myself) shall stand or whether it must fall before the word of those French Priests.

This *last* remark was only *yesterday* uttered afresh to me in a powerful speech, by the principal proprietor Karaitiana. I might reasonably enough urge all these and many other such matters against their request being granted but I am conscious of having already I fear trespassed upon His Excellency's valuable time.

William Colenso
Church of England Missionary

1852 January 15: to Dixon & Co.²³⁷

Waitangi, H Bay January
15/52

Messrs. Dixon & Co.

Gentlemen

An oppory. at last offering for Wellington I am enabled to send you the Duplicate of my order of the 26 Novr. last, together with a second of each of 3 Setts of Bills therein mentioned amtg. to £150.19 (-----)

To which amount of money to my credit I now add, the first of a Sett of Bills on CMS. for £38.6.6 (-----), and the follg. order—which I will thank you to get executed as speedily as possible.—

Order.—

Please let all the goods be of *good* qualy., & as near to order as possible—as the white settlers are beginning to flow into this District, any such little Books as you formerly sent will now be of service. I have distributed nearly all those you so kindly furnished.

Since my last to you I have recd. yours of June 24/51, notifying your receipt of mine enclosing the Bill for £34.11.10.—From your remarks in that Letter of yours, I hope soon to receive the goods therein alluded to. The newspapers mentioned have not come to hand. In future address to care of B. & H.

There is still a Letter of mine to you unnoticed, dated Novr. 7/50—

I am greatly afraid that I shall never be able to do any thing with "*Deane's Mill*" & *Dressg. Machine*. We have spent no little time over it, but up to the present can make nothing of it.—I must, howr., try again.—

Be sure to remember me with some reviews Lity. Gazettes, only "8d. ea" &c &c.

We are very busy preparing to receive the Bp., who is to be here next week—so that I have scarcely time to write.

Let me have a line fm. you on receipt of this. I close in haste.

Believe me, ever sincerely yrs
W.C.

1852 February 2: to Hadfield²³⁸

Church Mission Station
Waitangi, Feby. 2, 1852.

My dear Mr. Archdeacon,

I only returned to my Stn. on the evening of the 31st. ulto., from accompanying the Bishop of New Zealand on his journey to Te Wairoa.

In the course of our conversation his Lordship informed me, that you had felt much, some remarks of mine (as published by the C.M.S. in their Report for 1848–49,) which seemed to bear upon the Natives of your District.—

I cannot tell you how grieved I am, that I should have been the unhappy means of causing you pain.

I now hasten to do all that I can towards removing from your mind all such ideas as, that I then intended to reflect, or, that I then at all reflected on the Natives resident in your Missionary District; or, that, in writing as I then did, I stepped at all beyond my proper sphere of assigned duties.

For which purpose I enclose two papers; one, (no. i) being the copy of an official Note with which the Archdeacon of this District honoured me; and one, (no. ii) an extract from my Journal; which has long since been sent to the CMS., and which (with other similar entries made during that journey,) gave rise to the remarks in question.

Of course, my dear Mr. Archdeacon, you will understand me to assume, that (in case the strong language used by me in my Report, is fully borne out by equally powerful facts narrated in my Journal,) the only cause of uneasiness lies in my having (seemingly) reported upon Natives not belonging to my charge.

This assumption of mine is, I suppose, placed beyond all doubt, from the bare fact of even stronger language than mine having been used by the Rev. R. Taylor, when speaking of some Natives of those very Tribes, and of the same localities as those mentioned by me. And which statement of Mr. Taylor appears the more suitable for me here to notice, not only from its having also been published by the CMS. in their Report for that year, but on the very opposite page to that on which my (censorable?) remarks are given!

If I conjecture aright, the Rev. S. Williams had not, at the period mentioned in the extract from my Journal, then arrived to reside at Otaki; and you yourself were both confined to your bed and very weak, so as to preclude your even knowing the real state of some of (I believe) the most careless of those Native Tribes.—

It may be that I have generally taken too gloomy a view of the Moral and Religious state of the Natives. I know, that, in so doing I differ widely from many of my brethren. Be this however as it may, two things, I hope, will be fully allowed me;—first, That I have always in my Journals endeavoured to give a faithful uncoloured statement of facts; and, second, That I am not altogether ignorant of the Native Character.—

I have the honor to be,
my dear Mr. Archdeacon,
Your very obedient Servant,
William Colenso. (True copy.)

238 ATL qMS-0489; appendix to Journals.

Enclosure, No. i. (copy.)

Archdeaconry of Waiapu with provisional charge of
Archdeaconry of Kapiti.

Mr. Colenso's Circuit, twice in the year, in the spring and autumn quarters.

Including Wairarapa and the valley of the Hutt.—

(signed) G.A. N Zealand.

True copy, W. Williams.

Enclosure, No. ii.

Extracted from Journal,—Octr. 30th., and 31st. to “corrupt good manners.” And, also, Novr. 4th. to “we know them not now.”

Adding, (in the margin,)— “Vide, if required, my Letter to the Lt. Govr., dated March 15/48, pars. 10, 12, for more full information on this distressing subject. I mention this, here, because the truth of these facts was then strictly enquired into. W.C.

1852 March 3: to the CMS Secretaries²³⁹

Church Mission Station,
Waitangi, Hawke's Bay, N. Zealand.
March 3, 1852.

Secretaries,
C.M. House,
London.

My dear Sirs,

1. My last letter to you was (I think) dated October 30/50; since which, however, I have sent you two portions of my Journal—one, in January, 1851, containing my Journal down to May 11/50, with a copy of my report for that year (1850),—and one in September. 1851, containing my Journal down to March 12/51,—all which, I hope have long ago safely reached your hands.

2. I had hoped to have sent you some more of my Journal, as well as to have written to you fully before this; but want of time has hindered my doing the former, and my not having heard from you respecting my two letters of Decr./46, and Feby./49. prevents my fulfilling the latter.

3. I only returned from my exceedingly heavy mountain journey (Patea), on Sunday morning last, the 29th. ulto. (To which place I have been *twice* within 5 months, owing to the sad state of things, which existed there.) And have to commence, according to appointment, my usual long autumnal journey to Wairarapa, &c., next week.—

4. I write, at this time, principally to inform you of the Bishop having very recently visited us; and to enclose a copy of my Report for the last Year; as well as a copy of a memorandum concerning the two Roman Catholic priests who reside near us, which (after a conversation held with

239 ATL qMS-0492. Hocken MS vol 63.

Mr. McLean, the Government Land Agent, and with his concurrence,) I wrote for the Governor's consideration.

5. On the 3rd or January last, I most unexpectedly received a packet from the Bishop, containing printed notices informing us that he intended to be here to hold a Confirmation on Sunday the 25th of that month. The packet, however, had been despatched in November, and,—though our time for preparation was exceedingly short, and at a bad season or the Year (owing to the potatoe crops not being ripe, and the natives engaged in cutting their wheat),—we exerted ourselves so as to be ready against his coming. The Bishop arrived here, via Manawatu, on Saturday afternoon the 24th of January, (on Sunday morning administered the Lord's Supper to 40 selected and previously confirmed Natives,) and on Monday evening confirmed 229 persons. On Tuesday morning he publicly restored our ex-teacher Leonard Te Kawepo, and left for Te Wairoa. On Wednesday morning he confirmed 19 more (aged) persons at Tangoio; and on Thursday at noon we parted at Waikari,—whither I had accompanied him. He evidently suffered much from his heavy walk against time from Manawatu; fortunately I had been enabled to obtain him horses & a canoe to assist him, both in coming to and going from the Station; so that, when he left me at Waikari, he appeared to be very much better than when he arrived at the Station.

6. During his short stay one of the two R. Catholic Priests who live near us wrote him a long letter of accusation against myself & Rev. J. Hamlin, and our people,—which letter the bishop answered from Te Wairoa, in a manner which has pleased me not a little.

7. The Bishop expressed himself gratified with the alteration which has taken place among these Natives since he last saw them.—But, upon this head he will, I dare say, write you fully. Among other important matters which he mentioned, he wished me to prepare for Priest's Orders; to this, however, I am not inclined, owing, in great measure, to my growing opinion, that *I have not the confidence of the C.M. Society.*—

8. For, during my seven years residence here, devoted as I have been to your service,—and exposed as I have been to numerous (and almost unprecedented) assaults—from the Natives, the Settlers, and the Government,—and, also, referring, from time to time to you, respecting matters between myself and the Local Committee—(of all which you have had, long ago, full & reiterated accounts,) you have never communicated with me *once*!

9. Such, I cannot but think, would not have been the case had I been filling but a very low position under the smallest of the Colonial Governments.

10. Your recent painful decision in the case of the oldest Missionary in New Zealand—and the one to whom (notwithstanding his failings) you, *and all*, (and none more than the Government,) are the most indebted—strengthens me in my opinion.—

11. The last year—or, rather, 16 months, (from the time we first heard of our old Pastor being openly "Gazetted" in the Colonial Papers to the exultation of our numerous enemies,) has been a most particularly painful period to me (and to many more). I cannot tell you a tithe of what I have felt, and still feel. I cannot venture to write you upon the subject. For, "out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh," and the hand writeth; and I know that "in

multiloquio non deerit peccatum";²⁴⁰ still, I dare not be altogether silent. Under these circumstances I cannot perhaps do better than give you an extract from a friendly yet confidential letter, which I wrote to our Archdeacon on his leaving N. Zealand, and which, I think, he has subsequently received in England; "I assure you, (and it is with highly painful feelings that I write it,) that I have not that confidence in the Society which I had, and it may, ere long, grow to a separation. You know somewhat of my situation: I am all but friendless, and that *for* the C.M.S.—namely, in carrying-out to the letter—rather, to my utmost ability—those principles which were their delight, and which they valiantly upheld, careless alike of the frowns or the smiles of the titled and honoured of the world. On the one side, I have the Government and Settlers more or less against me; on the other side, I have many of the worldly and evil-disposed Natives, the whalers, and the Papists; while behind, those on whom I relied are fast altering—the C.M.S. If, as you truly say, the C.M.S. will not defend their Servants from the men of the world; then, I had better cease to occupy a situation, which, sooner, or later, must bring my disgraceful dismissal. I firmly believe that a Missionary cannot any longer serve his Society than so long as he has their full and entire confidence. I am but a poor man, but the C.M.S. *should* believe my words *before* those of a Governor, or a Minister of State—even when backed by the influential and imposing authority of the Queen herself. If not, then the sooner we part the better. I am getting old,—*prematurely* old—in the Society's service; and, if the end is to be, my being thrown aside for any and every thing which man may consider to be erroneous, the sooner I look out for a shelter from the storm the better.—For I am in an enemy's land, and I have *nothing* to fall back upon."—

12. Yes, my dear Sirs,—with my present belief and under present existing circumstances,—of the two—to take Priest's Orders, or, to retire upon a small allowance, I would prefer the latter; if, in so doing, I should both meet with your approval, (for I still consider myself the property of the Church,) and see a *fit* person in Priest's Orders sent here to take charge of this people. As, in retiring from Public life I should spend the remainder of my days quietly, (at least, comparatively so,) and be able to educate in a plain way our 2 children (one 8, and the other 6 years of age,) *who cannot yet speak English.*

13. Do not, however, for a moment suppose, that, in proposing—or, rather, barely mentioning—such a thing as retiring from Active Service, I have any such thing in view as Farming, or any money-getting occupation: for all such matters I feel myself altogether disinclined and utterly incompetent.—

14. Your allowance (strange as it may seem,) will *not* enable us to give our children a plain education; for, £40 per ann. is demanded for *boarders*, which, with the many incidentals peculiar to a new country, would amount to £100 per ann. for our two children; to meet which you allow us £20 for each child:—More than enough in some cases—where Missionaries reside in or near towns,—yet, in our case, the very reverse. Further, in a letter which I have just received from the local, committee at Turanga, they inform me, that I have "overcharged in my account £20."—in putting down, as hitherto, £40. for the two children; thus reducing the sum to £20., which is what I have been allowed (erroneously, I still hope,) for this Year.—

240 Proverbs 10: 19: "There is always a lie in too much talk".

15. You may, my dear Sirs, answer this by saying,—“Send them to England & we will educate them.”—And (while I have my doubts whether such a step is quite in accordance with the Divine will,) I readily acknowledge that such would be in many cases,—(e.g., a numerous offspring,—an unhealthy climate,—one not subject to British rule,—no Schools in the country,—children not likely to return,—etc.,) a boon, for which, as one of your old Missionary Servants, I would gratefully thank you;—still, it does not, in my opinion, meet our case.—

16. Further: *there must be an immediate reconsideration of the allowance for Travelling expenses* (not to say of that for *Native Teachers*,) in this (Waitangi) District. It cannot be supposed, as the Bishop himself remarked, that Natives will work for you for less than they get from every one else. The Government—the Surveyors—and the Settlers would more than employ every spare hand, and their pay now is 2/- per diem. Hitherto my baggage-bearers, etc., have scarcely received more than 6d. a day; so that nothing is more clear than that my Travelling Expenses will not be less than £60.—£70. per ann., unless my Journeys are made fewer, or shorter—and even then the Sum will amount to nearly £50. per ann.—The same reasoning also applies to the *Native Teachers*; these cannot be any longer expected to give up their time & wear out their few clothes and bodies for little or nothing,—while their people are (comparatively) abounding. To insist upon their doing so, is, to place them in a most dangerous temptation, which will finally be most injurious to our cause.—

17. I wish you would write me—as I have endeavoured to write you—plainly and with candour. I may, perhaps, have erred in speaking too warmly; which may possibly be construed into a sad want of courtesy; such, however, is very far from being intentional on my part. I have, I believe, served you faithfully & devotedly for 18 years, and the Searcher of hearts knows, that if I had ever any preeminent wish, it was, to serve you in the Mission field until the hour of my release.—

18. I also enclose a Copy of “Return No.1”, (as I know not whether you have copies sent you,) by which you will know the amount you are still indebted to me upon this Station. This sum, be it observed, is independent of the Sum for Medicines, Tools, Nails, Iron, Glass, etc., (as per account rendered in 1846,) with which your Native converts have been benefitted and your numerous Chapels built & rebuilt.—

19. In conclusion—and, especially as I suppose that this will find our Archdn. still with you—I once more venture to express a hope, that you will not only notice but reply fully to this Letter; and so do much towards enlightening & easing my mind upon more than one subject mentioned herein.—

I am,
my dear Sirs,
Yours very truly,
William Colenso.

[1] Waitangi Station; Ahuriri District.

E. Coast of New Zealand

Report for 12 months, ending December 1st. 1851.

During the past year I have been engaged as follows:—on the Lord’s day, in holding Divine Service twice, and in Catechizing and Teaching in the Schools.—On the week-days, in attending to the Adult Male Schools; in Instructing & Examining the Candidates for Baptism and the LORD’S Supper; in holding Bible and Teachers’ Classes, in visiting the Sick, and dispensing Medicine; in Translating & Printing Tracts; in Settling Disputes, &c., &c.,—and in attending to the many Secular duties of the Station.—

On the 20th. December, 1850, I left the Station on a visit to the Natives of Petani & Tangoio; and returned (late at night) on the 24th. of that month.—

On the 1st. of March I again left the Station, on a visit to the Natives of those (& neighbouring) villages, and returned on the 10th of that month.—

On the 21st. of March, I left the Station, on a general visit to the villages throughout this District, and returned on the 28th. of May.—

On the 2nd. of June I left the Station, on a visit to the of Natives of Petani & Tangoio, to exhort and instruct them preparatory to their receiving the LORD’S Supper, and returned on the 5th. of that month.—

On the 26th. of July I again visited those villages and Natives, returning to the Station on the 30th. of that month.—

On the 6th. of August I left the Station, on a visit to the of Natives of Waimarama, Kohinurakau, Ngawakatatara, and Patangata; and returned on the 12th. of that month.—

On the 27th. of September, I visited the Natives of Tangoio and Petani, and returned to the Station on the 2nd. of October.—

On the 13th. of October I left the Station, on a visit to the natives of the interior (Patea District) and returned on the 1st. of November.— [2]

On the 9th. of November I again visited Tangoio, &c., & returned to the Station on the 13th.—

Total number of days absent from Station visiting Natives, 131. (occasional visits to Natives, within one day’s journey from the Station, are not herein enumerated.)

The number of Baptisms performed in this District, during the present year is, Men, 79, Women, 88, Children, 81, total 248.—

The number of marriages performed, 12.—

The number of persons admitted for the first time to the Holy Communion, 40.

Although 45 persons of both sexes have been received as Communicants during the year, which with 706, (as per last year’s Return) makes a total of 751, only 297 have actually partaken of the LORD’S Supper. Of the remainder, 48 have been suspended for misconduct, (36 at Wairarapa, and 12 at the Station) while the majority have not had the opportunity afforded them of partaking. There has, also, been an increase of Communicants at Manawatu, during the year; (as by arrangement made between Archdeacon Hadfield &

myself, the converts there, do now,—after four years patient, though fruitless waiting for an opportunity—partake with his flock at Moutoa, near the mouth of that river,) but I do not know the number of those who have recently been for the first time, admitted—perhaps 20, additional.—

The number of Candidates for Baptism is still on the increase; a few more of the Heathen having come over during the year. Of late however, there has been no meeting of Candidates living in the neighbourhood of the Station and Ahuriri harbour, owing to their very unsettled state and excessive worldliness.—

The Mission Station Congregation and Schools, at this time last year and in the beginning of this year, averaged 160—*now* they are considerably under half that number; and such is also, I regret to say, the case generally in the Native Villages.—

Three Chapels have been erected during the year; namely at [3] Mataikona, Waipupu, and Turanganui. At these two last mentioned villages, there had not hitherto been any place set apart for Divine worship. The new one at Mataikona, is the second which the Natives of that place have erected, the former one (built in 1843) having fallen. The Chapel at Turanganui (Wairarapa) is wholly of timber, and erected by European workmen at the Native expense; toward which, upwards of £100, in cash, has been already paid. Both the patience and faith of the Subscribers have been sorely tried during the erection of this building, it having been blown down *twice*—each time when nearly finished! a circumstance in great measure owing to the carelessness of the builders.—

Mrs. Colenso has attended, as hitherto, to the daily female and Infant School; but, the general attendance, (both in this and the adult male School,) save on Sundays & Mondays, is very irregular. Several have, notwithstanding, learned to read, write, & cypher (in the more simple rules) during the year.—

My Annual Teachers' School, commenced on the 1st. of September, and continued, daily, until the 13th. (inclusive) of that month. Sixteen Teachers & Monitors were present from all parts of this District, of whom seven were from Wairarapa & Manawatu. This year we were engaged upon S. Pauls Epistle to the Hebrews; devoting, also, an hour and a half every afternoon to figures.

During the year several of the first class Teachers have been actively employed in visiting the more distant villages.—

Several Natives of both sexes and of all ages, have died during the year, particularly in the Wairarapa valley. A few of them have, I firmly trust, departed in the Faith; leaving a testimony behind them to the power of the Truth, which will not easily be forgotten, and which cannot be gainsaid.

The Popish Priest who, last year, came to reside in the neighbourhood of the Mission Station, has, lately been joined by another! Hitherto, however, they have not only not succeeded in making proselytes, but have lost some of the few who did belong to them, who have voluntarily come over to the Truth.— [4]

In December 1850, the Government Agent for purchasing Native Lands (Mr. McLean,) visited these parts, and remained in the neighbourhood (with a Surveying party,) until the end of April, 1851. When having purchased 2 large blocks of Land for the Government, he returned to

Wellington. He arrived here, again, in October last; and paid, in gold, to the Natives, the first instalment for the Land, viz.:—£1800 at Te Waipukurau, on the 4th., and £1000, at Ahuriri, on the 18th. ulto. He is now at Mohaka, (in Revd. J. Hamlin's District,) there to pay another first instalment of £200, for a third block which he has purchased in that locality. These several purchases—amounting, in all, to £7100 are to be paid for in 4 instalments, viz.,—one in each year, until the whole is paid. The present great decrease in our Congregations & Schools, and the general unsettled and careless state of the Natives towards Spiritual things, is, therefore, easily accounted for; and, I confess, that I fear, *the worst is yet to come*.

Never, until the present year, have these tribes been in possession of so much current worldly riches!—especially of wheat and Money. Would that they knew how to use them, or, that they would be advised in doing so! The contrary, however, is the case. Last Autumn, they every where had a fine crop of wheat, which they most impatiently disposed for horses, to which purpose, also, by far the greater number of those who have received a share of money for their alienated Lands have wilfully squandered it—giving so much as £40, £45, and even £60. for a horse! Upwards of 50 horses have been bought into this neighbourhood during the last six months; some of which have already died; one native has, also, been killed, and several others more or less injured by falling from their horses. I almost fear to state the hundreds of bushels of wheat, which they raised and sold last autumn lest it should be thought improbable:—especially when the short time which has elapsed since I first procured them seed wheat from Auckland and the great distance many of them have to bring it to the market, is considerable. Yet, should their present crops succeed as well, (and they are now looking very promising,) they will surpass those of last year by 10-fold!—And all, I fear, [5] or nearly so, will, also, be hastily got rid of for horses. At present the Natives are in many places, almost starving—and that with their idolised horses before their eyes, and gold in their pockets! We have assisted several who were very greatly in want, (including our best Native Teachers, and Chiefs of the highest rank,) with Potatoes and Wheat for food. So that, what, to the Colonists, and to others at a distance, may appear to be a sure indication of prosperity, and a rapid advancement in civilization, is, to *me*, quite the contrary, and fills me with concern for this poor deluded people.—

The *only* European-built dwelling at present at Ahuriri, has lately been “licensed” as a bush Public house! And this has already drawn aside several Natives. In consequence of the altered state of things, and the gloomy prospect which surrounds me, I have deemed it necessary to give public notice and warning to the Baptized Natives and Communicants, as to how I shall act in admitting persons to the Communion; which I have also printed and circulated throughout the District.

I ought not, perhaps, wholly to omit mentioning, that—in consequence of a Sermon which I preached here, on Tim. v. 8, a short time before the payment of the first instalment—a few days ago, I received a Love-sign, each, from 5 individuals, communicants, towards a fund for purchasing some simple stores for the sick. The conduct of *one* of these persons, (the Native Teacher of the Station, Noah Huke,) deserves to be more particularly remembered; as, from his not being immediately concerned in the Sale of those Lands lately transferred to the Government, he had only received

that one Sovereign, which he so willingly gave for such a good purpose.—And I have good reason to know, that he had not received any other money for the year, (save a pound, which I paid him in May last, for repairing the Verandah of our house,) and that he is, also, now almost in want of food himself, as well of several household articles.

I have not yet been enabled to obtain a site, eligible, in every respect, for a Mission Station. The Governor has (verbally) offered me the [6] choice of selection from the blocks of Land which have lately been purchased for the Government; but one very great drawback is, the distance of the suitable spots thereon from the Native villages; not again to mention certain reasons mentioned in my last Report. I may, however, very soon have it in my power to make a choice; and in due time, a removal.—

My own and Mrs. Colenso's general health, as well as that of our two children, has been, and is, much the same as mentioned in the two last years' Reports—not particularly good, nor yet seriously ill.—Notwithstanding, there have been many days throughout the past year, when, from headache, or rheumatism, or influenza, or some general, but undefinable, indisposition, we have scarcely been fit for anything.—But this, I have long felt assured, is owing to the unhealthiness of our Station. Our gracious GOD has, however, again mercifully brought us to the close of another year's residence here, and we would dare to believe, that notwithstanding our manifold infirmities, daily short-comings, and utter unworthiness, HE will ever be with us, even unto the end.—

William Colenso

Waitangi,
Decr. 3/51.

1852 March 4: to William Williams²⁴¹

Waitangi, March 4/52.

To Ven. Archd. W. Williams,
&c. &c.
London.

Containing a few remarks upon the new version
of the New Zealand Prayer Book.

1st. The novel ending of nearly all our Prayers & Collects:—where, for “*through Jesus Christ our LORD*,” we have, “*ko Ihu Karaiti te matou Ariki*.” Literally, and

²⁴¹ Williams may never have received this, which Colenso copied to the CMS, adding, “The foregoing I sent as addressed, but under open cover to yourselves at the C.M. House, not knowing whether it would find Archd. Williams still in England. On the outside I wrote a memorandum, that, if the Archdeacon should have left England, the Secretaries would read the enclosure. As I have not since heard from Archdn. Williams, and as I consider the subject of great importance, I now make you a copy of it; to which I have added the marginal notes.—I have subsequently observed other errors of a similar nature. In my accompanying Letter to Mr. Archdn. Williams, I said, “Be, at all events, very sure not to omit the Articles in the forthcoming version. They are left out in the Bishop's (or, C K.S's.) version (after being in print, & Circulation upwards of 10 years), and the office for the Ordaining of Deacons substituted. W.C. Waitangi, October, 1853.”

meaning no more, not even by implication, (as you know) than, “*Jesus Christ is our Lord*.”! Without having so much as its being Native usage to recommend it. So wretchedly unmeaning and forged, that *lower* we cannot go.—

2nd. The expressions in the Apostle's Creed:—“*Conceived by the Holy Ghost*”—rendered, “*I wakatangatia te Wairua Tapu*.”—i.e. *Made man* by the Holy Ghost. The same words are used in the Nicene Creed for a different matter,—for, if there be a difference (and there surely is,) between “*Incarnate by the Holy Ghost*”—and, “*was made man*,” there is still a *greater* difference between the latter and “*Conceived by the Holy Ghost*.” Yet, as the two Creeds are now (in the *new* version) the *same word* is used.—

I wish to guard against any approach to an ancient Socinian error,—i.e. of *one* part of Christ being framed by the Spirit, &c, by which He became the Son of GOD.—We must not forget the great truth—“The Son is of the Father alone, *not made, nor created*, but begotten:—Man, *of the substance of his mother*:—conceived by the Holy Ghost.” Again, though Christ was conceived by the Holy Ghost, yet the Holy Ghost *did not conceive* Him, but said unto the Virgin, “*Thou shalt conceive, &c.*” The word, “*conceived*,” is *not* so translated in any of the = places, in the O. and N.T.—It is not the great & holy Truth of “the Word” being “made flesh,” and becoming “Man,” that I oppose, but the paraphrastic translation, and unnecessary addition to the Apostolic Symbol. Does it not, also, disagree with the = place in the Athanasian Creed?

3rd. Expressions in the Baptismal service:—

α. In the first prayer & = places:—“I te Iriiringa o Ihu Karaiti. . . ki te awa o Horano, I wakatapua e koe te wai hei horoinga wakawairua mo te kino”:—and in the prayer before the naming the Child, and = places:—“Wakatapua tenei wai hei hormone wakawairua i te harai”:—

The term “*mystical*” (by which I understand, Sacramental,) is here translated as if it were quite synonymous with “*spiritual*.” Just, if I mistake not, one of the very errors of a certain party, so ably exposed by Dr. Bayford, &c. I observe, that the word “*mystical*” is omitted altogether before “*union*,” in the first exhortation in the Marriage Service; while “*mystery*,” in the next to last Prayer, is, as it was, “*hei mea ngaro*”; which is, without doubt, its proper meaning. Again, in the same Prayer, the words, “*spiritual marriage*,” are rightly translated, “*Marematanga wakawairua*.”

β. In the second Prayer, and = places, the word “*spiritual*” (sp. regeneration,) is entirely left out! and without it, it seems, as if the “washing with water” only is what was intended.—

γ. The unnecessary addition to the express words of Baptism:—“E—, *tenei* ahau te iriiri nei i a koe, *i runga &c.*” “*Tenei*”—here, or now, is wholly additional, & *quite unnecessary*. “*Irunga*”—is not, (I believe,) anything like what is meant by ἐς (into). Had it been ἐπὶ (upon)—as “ἐπὶ κεφαλῇ,” or, ἐπὶ τὸ ἀκζοι” or ἐπὶ στόματος οὗο,” (Matt. xviii. 16,) this rendering, barbarous as it sounds, might be retained. *But*, if the *rule* concerning ἐς—(i.e. “when ever it is used, a motion into is implied,”—Grk. Gram. p.191.)—is correct; and, if it means here, an objective admission into the Covenant of Redemption—a putting on of Christ, (*vid.* Baptismal Service, Adults, concluding address. Gal. iii. 27, where “i runga” could *not* be used: 1 Cor. x. 2, &c.) then “*i runga*” *must* be rejected. It has been said, that this word

contains the Sacramental declaration; and that it is parallel with “τούτο ἐστίν” in the other Sacrament.—

4th. The interpolated word “*nei*,” in the giving the Sacramental Bread. It accords *not* with, “*which was given for thee*”—i.e. on the Cross; but, rather means, *just now*. (“*Nei*, here, in sight;”—*vide*, your own Dicty.) Be cautious here, my dear friend, especially, too, as the verb “*tuku*” may be interpreted, to offer, to present, to exhibit, and even to offers in sacrifice to immolate; by which a host of error may creep in.—

5th. the expression in the Catechism respecting the Sacraments:— “He mea nui enei *e pa ai nga tangata ki te ora*”:—i.e. “great things these, by (or through) which men obtain life.” This is *very much* stronger than the original— “generally necessary to salvation.”—

6th. In the absolution in the Visitation Service:— “No te mea kua tukua mai *e ia tona mana ki a hau*”; far beyond a literal translation & highly unscriptural & dangerous. It is one thing to say, “By his authority committed to me I absolve, &c.”; and, “*Because his ‘mana’ has been given by him* to me I absolve.”—This word, “*mana*,” is the noun used in Matt. xxviii. 18.²⁴² There is also, I think, much difference between the two words,—(ἐξουσία) power, and (δυναμις) authority; they are used together in Luke ix. 1, & Rev. xiii. 2, consequently they are *not* synonymous. At all events, I would *not* use the *same* noun; *certainly not* with the poss. pron., “*tona*”—his; as, according to the analogy of the Native language,—

tona mana, his influence,²⁴³

tona ora, his life,

tona tapu, his sanctity,

being “*tuku*”—yielded up,²⁴⁴ gone, he has none left.²⁴⁵

7th. The first words in the Ordering of Deacons:— “E te Matua o te Hahi”:—*The Father of the Church!!* a most unnecessary addition, directly opposed to Matt. xxiii. 9. This title belongs to *no man*; it is *GOD*’s, and His only.

Now I have *not* closely examined a *single* entire portion of the new version of the Pr. Book. These portions I accidentally noticed; *all* of them, save the 1st. & 2nd., since I commenced my Letter. Doubtless there are others.

William Colenso.

N.B. Throughout the whole of these incorrect renderings, two under currents (so to speak) are to be noticed; the one (as in 1 & 2,) depreciating Christ, the other (as in 3–7,) exalting ceremonies and persons.—W.C.

1852 March 4: to Dixon & Co.²⁴⁶

Waitangi, Hawkes Bay
N.Z., March 4/52

Messrs. Dixon & Co.

My dear Sirs

I last wrote to you on the 15th. Jany.—a copy of wh. Letter & order I now enclose, together with the *second* of a Sett of Bills of Ex. for £38.6.6—the *first* having been forwarded in that Letter.—

Last week the goods (8 packages) shipped by you per “*Maori*” arrived here, together with 2 Letters or rather Invoice & Duplicate (1st. & 11th. Sepr./51), & 2 Papers. The goods were in good condition (save the doz. moleskin Trowsers), but, *as usual*, incomplete, & some *not* according to order.—

First—things ordered, but *not sent*:—

1lb. spirits Hartshorn
1 packet Broad’s perfume &c
2 lbs chalk
2 prs cork *soles*, straights, self.
5 Fur Tippetts
1 pr Gutta percha Boots
1 London Pharmacopæa, *last* ed.
1 2nd. vol. of H. Brit. Flora—*last* ed.
1 Fries Lichenog. Univ. *or* —
1 McBrides Lectures on D.—*last* ed.
1 rm *yellow* Letter paper
1 gr. wicks, for my little study Lamp, fine cotton, ¹⁵/₁₆ in. diam.
&c &c

Second—things *sent*, but *not* ordered

2 pair Boots lined with cork
1 ——— g. percha
5 little Boas!
1 ream *blue* Letter paper
1 gross *solar* Lamp wicks—large & coarse

It is true, you briefly state (in reference to the Books) “the works omitted are either reprinting or not to be had”—but this statement, allow me to say (& I would do so in the most courteous manner,) is far too general. 1st. Bec. the very papers of the day advertise some of those very works—& 2nd. from the very fact of their being standard ones, they must be either always on sale, *or* very speedily re-published.

I am, in all my little orders, to write both perspicaciously & in a plain hand. I am not aware of my having generally written for articles wh. can give an agent extra trouble; or, if so, that I should refuse or hesitate to pay for so doing. But, it does seem as if every order I send is sure *not* to be fulfilled, and my enquiries not worthy your notice.

In my Letter of Apl./50, I made several enquiries—respecting Musical Boxes, Iron pots—Felt Carpetting—Book-bags (n.—100), &c.,—& a particular commission respecting Mr. Berdoe, &c &c—all of wh. have been passed unnoticed by.—

In my Letter of Sept/50—I also requested to know the qualities & uses of the “suspension stove,” and the price of gutta percha tubing; *also*, to have all the Books ordered

242 WC: And in chs. ix. 8, & x. 1, (New Vers.,) for ἐξουσία.

243 WC: Vide, Mr. Williams’ own Dictionary, in loc.

244 WC: See, Matt. xxvii. 50. Luke xxiii. 46. John xix. 20, &c.

245 WC: “kua tukua a mai e ia na mana ki a hau”—would be the very sentence which a young chief would use, on his arriving at maturity, to indicate, that his father now had none; accordg. to N.Z. usage.

246 ATL 80-038 George Petersen papers: Colenso’s rough copy.

sent—but, my enquiries have not been noticed, & request not attended to.—

The Book wh. came (you say) from a Bookseller at the w. end, & wh. you supp'd. to be from Sir W.J.H., & perhaps one of those ordered—proved to be a vol. of Alford's Grk. Test. from my Cousin.—

In all *such* suppository cases you had better open the parcel & ascertain.

All that have not been sent—throughout the last 3 or 4 orders—you can still send; but what shall I say with reference to these 5 “*Boas*”!! These are utterly useless to us; they have also cost upwards of £5.0.0. I think *you* should request them to be returned, or to be sent to Wellgn. & there disposed of on your account. Had a Cornish tradesman made such a blunder, what a chuckling triumph it woud. have been for you Londoners! You must allow this remark, when you consider that this error is *not* the first of its kind, & that *we are the sufferers in every sense*. I cannot tell you how very greatly the Ladies for whom they were ordered are disappointed.

There is also a little error in your Seedsman's Bill—he charges for “*12 extra S. Ranunculus 2/6*” but there is not one—nor the shadow of one in the lot. I have thrice gone over every packet of seeds.

I can easily understand why there should be in every order an error in judgment—on both sides—but I cannot comprehend why a thing ordered in a plain way is not sent—or, why a simple business question asked is not simply ansd.—I must not howr. omit to thank you for the Copy of Cook's Voyages, it is in excellent condition, & appears to be perfect; this is quite an acquisition. Would that the other Books had come with it.—

In my last orders,—2 of which are still to come,—*I numbered every lot*—This I did, for your sake, & I have to beg that in your future invoices do the same, & so, *either send every lot as ordered or give me your remark thereon under its no.*

We have sometimes conjectured that it is, perhaps, owing to my not having sent you enough money with my order—that certain articles ordered from time to time have not been sent; I therefore now enclose the first of a Sett of Bills on CMS. for F. P— (£50) which, with (£150.19.0, & £38.6.6 =) £189.5.6, already sent in my 2 last Letters, will I hope fully enable you to do so.—

I do not now care to send you any additional order, (although there are several things which we should like to have,)—save

1. a plain Blue Cloth cloak with fur collar for myself—price, under £3.3.0; the fur to be of *dark* color.—
2. an extra fur Collar for ditto (as the fur soon becomes shabby).
3. a large fine Blanket shawl—chequered; for my own use in the Bush. The Bishop has one, wh. he finds to be of more service than a cloak.
4. a Black cap for myself (size 7¼)—a useful, light, ventilating, & not unbecoming article;—or, you may send 2—each of diff. pattern &c
5. a Black Hat for myself—size 7¼—not above 20/- —light, soft, &c

6. a palisse of scarlet pelisse cloth trimmed with fur, for a little boy of 2 (say 3) years of age, to be made loose.
7. 4 doz. youths' striped stoutest cotton shirts—
8. 12 pounds Best Tapioca—
9. 2 Tinplate candle moulds, size 6's.—8, or so in a mould.
10. a map, or sett of maps, of stars of the *Southern* Hemisphere, and Mrs Colenso wishes to know the price of a *small still*: complete, for Herbs.

I will, however, venture to request you again to send me in addition those things herein enumerated as being omitted,—excluding the Fur Tippetts & Boots; which I had marked x. Also, send me *all* Books not hitherto sent.

There is another little matter to which I wish to draw yr. attention—namely, that made up wearing apparel (as well as prints, &c, &c.) sold at Wellington & other places are made purposely for the N.Z. market. All their shirts—of various kinds—are wider & longer than yours (though not so good, or so well made),—Trowsers large & comfortable in the seat, & small in the legs—whereas yours are just the contrary; & then as to color, &c. Pray my dear Sirs, bear this in mind, as you have a large order altogether now to execute, & I have several things lying-by of little use *here*. Be very sure that you never again send me any of those Trowsers which open *down the front*—we actually abominate them; & oppose their being used by our Natives as much as possible.—Write me immy. on receipt of this

Believe me yours sincerely
W Colenso

The wh. shirts just arrived (“no 500” I think) are most particularly small.

1852 April 3: to McLean²⁴⁷

Wairarapa, April 3/52.

Dear Mr. McLean,

Your kind note of Feb. 5 duly reached the Mission Station, but being myself absent at Patea, &c., (a second time! this season.) I did not get it until my return; when, there being no opportunity for Wellington, and I only at home for a few days, I brought it with me, intending to answer it during my journey hither, as I expected to meet Mr. Hadfield in the valley.—

As I have not any desire to become a Land holder, save for my own residence or use, and as I have not the most distant intention of ever moving farther South, and as (as you state) Scrip will not be received in exchange for Land about us at Ahuriri, I must consequently give up all thoughts about obtaining any—and am really sorry that I have given you so much trouble on my account—at the same time, thanking you heartily for having so kindly interested yourself on my behalf in this matter.—

Your pencilled note, written (I believe) from Te Waipukurau, I also received—and, some time in January I

visited Hawea. I did not go very far in, as I did not like the aspect of the country thereabouts.—

I have also called on Mr. Park, who very kindly shewed me his Map, &c., but as I neither know how, or when, the suburban land of the Ahuriri *City*! will be offered, (nor size of allotments, nor price) and as the want of firewood in all that locality is a great drawback to a person selecting thereabouts, (unless he had some specific object in view), I am still at a loss how to act.

I think it is likely, I may go upon some of the Native ground (unbought) in order to be near them, and out of the way of others. It is high time that I should do something in the matter.—

I have also to thank you for the Newspapers—sent and promised—and shall always welcome a note from *you*, whenever you may have time and inclination to write.

Mrs. Colenso was well when I left—ditto, the children who often speak of you, & of your travelling together so far as Te Pokonao, & of your horse, &c.—And I am very sure that Mrs. Colenso would wish me to remember her kindly to Mrs. McLean & to yourself did she know of my now writing—and

Believe me,
Dear Mr. McLean,
Yours sincerely,
William Colenso.

1852 September 7: to Selwyn²⁴⁸

1852 October 12: to the CMS Secretaries²⁴⁹

Church Mission Station,
Waitangi, Hawkes Bay,
New Zealand, October 12, 1852.

My dear Sirs,

My last to you was dated, March 3, 1852; which, with enclosures, I trust you have safely received.—

For some time past (down to the present hour) I have exerted myself in copying out a portion of my Journal; upwards of a 100 pages of which I now send you via Wellington, by a little vessel going thither; and hope to send you more shortly.—

I also enclose a copy of a correspondence which I have recently had with one of the Popish Priests of this place. This man has very recently left this neighbourhood, (it is said) for Wanganui—to trouble Mr. Taylor & his flock. It is the same person who, two years ago, gave both Archdn. W. Williams and Mr. Hamlin so much annoyance. He returned no answer to my Letter.

I have not time at present to write any more; And, if I had, I could not use it so as to send by this opportunity—as the vessel sails directly.—

The Rev. J.S. Grace was here in August, and I assisted him to administer the LORD's Supper at 6 villages (including the Station); the total number of Communicants being above 350, of whom nearly 100 were new. There would have been a much greater number, had I chosen to admit *all* those Communicants who are still unconfirmed; this, however, I did not think proper to do; at least, not at *this* time.—

In July last I obtained a grant of Land for a Mission Station from the Chiefs, Proprietors. This piece of Land, which may measure 100 acres, is nearly a day's journey inland (S.W.) from this, and near to the lake and village of the Rotoatara. It contains both wood (timber) & water; and is, I think, eligibly situated, both as regards the resident Missionary and the Natives. The deed of gift has been made out and signed in the clearest and most open manner, without a single dissentient voice; & from the number & rank of the persons (proprietors) engaged in making the transfer, I cannot but believe, that a demand for payment (such as we have often been tried with here) will never be made.—

The Native tribes about me are all tolerably quiet *at present*, preparing for the return of the Government Land Agent to pay them their 2nd. instalment. Two Magistrates have just been appointed for this neighbourhood: one, being Mr. Alexander, whose name has been more than once noticed in my Journal; the other is a stranger.—

My own health is pretty good, save a pain in my chest, (which has been almost constant and, I think, increasing, during the last 3 or 4 months, and which every sermon I preach makes me feel anew,) and my right shoulder, which I strained through a fall received in travelling in the summer, and which still pains me considerably at times.

I am,

My dear Sirs
William Colenso.

[1] Copy of a letter written to Rev^d. J. Lamplie; P. Priest in answer to his dated 17 May 1852.—²⁵⁰

“Waitangi, Sunday night, May 23rd. 1852.

To
Rev. J. Lampilie,
&c., &c., &c.,
Pa Kowhai.

“Sir,

“Your note of the 17th. instant I duly received and should have replied to it instantly had I not been very much engaged, and had it not, also been written in French.—For, it is now more than 20 years since I used that language; and I recollect telling Monsr. Reignier, your coadjutor, that, through long disuse, I had quite forgotten the little I once knew.—

Notwithstanding, I have endeavoured to comprehend your meaning;—should I, however have been so unfortunate to

248 ATL qMS-0492. Hocken MS vol 63. Enclosure No. 1 in Colenso's letter to the CMS Secretaries of 13 December 1852 (below). Selwyn's reply is Enclosure No. 2.
249 ATL qMS-0492. Hocken MS vol 63.

250 p.347. His name was “Lampila”. Thanks to Felicity St George for translations from the French (footnotes).

misunderstand you, I pray you to impute it to any thing save design on my part.—

First, Sir, allow me to express my very great surprise at receiving any note at all from you; when I consider, that you have ever spoken of me as a “*heretic*”, and that it is but a very short time since you wrote a long letter of accusations against me to my Bishop! That surprise, however, has now been completely surpassed when I read;—“J’ignore, monsieur, le dessin que vous avez en de m’envoyer certain livre pour vous venger d’une indirect et innocente, alterque qui n’a pas même été provoqué per noci”!!²⁵¹—Admirable, monsieur!—Surely you have altogether forgotten the fact of your having sent me, by the young Chief Cranmer Te Nahu, a Roman Catholic Newspaper, containing an account of some of the Clergy of the English Church, one of whom was an “Archbishop,” (!!!) who had lately gone over to your party? Against the name of the “Archbishop” you had written the word “pikopa” on the margin of the newspaper: telling also, the young Chief,—that if I dared to contradict the statement you would immediately call for a public “Committee” to put me down as a liar. Hence it was, that I, in return, sent you one of the Reports of our Missionary Society, (which I happened to have at hand), that you might also [2] know, that whilst some had left us to join you, others had also left you to join us.—

You inform me, Sir, of “une centaine de l’école d’Oxford, et une soixantaine de l’école de Cambridge,”²⁵² as having joined the Romish Church:—and then you add, “ou l’on voit clairement que c’est l’œuvre du ciel.”²⁵³ (!!!) This, however, is *not* to me quite conclusive: the leap is far too prodigious. (And here, I might, I think, very appropriately use one of your own sentences,—“Car——il y a un peu de distance, à moins que vous ayez la faculté de marier ensemble de chose opposée.”²⁵⁴—But,) Allow me to ask, Have you forgotten how Elias in ancient times complained,—“*Ego relictus sum solus*”?—that out of the little band of 12 chosen Apostles, one became an Apostate?—that, of those who for a season followed our Saviour Christ, “*multi discipulorum ejus abierunt retro: et jam non cum illo ambulabant*”?—that, holy S. Paul prophesied to the Church at Ephesus, “*ex vobis ipsi exurgent viri loquentes perversa, ut abducant discipulos post se*”?—and complained, (at the close of his long and laborious life,) “*aversi sunt a me omnes qui in Asia sunt*,” and, “*omnes me dereliquerunt*”?—And, that, in later times, it was (almost proverbially,) said; that the whole world (i.e. the church) was against Athanasius, and he alone against the world? Of all such persons whatsoever, or how many soever they may be, it may be very truly said, (in the words of the holy Apostle S. John,)—“*Ex nobis prodierunt, sed non erant ex nobis*”

—But allow me, Sir, to enquire, whether you really hold; that such goings over to any party are to be taken as *the proof* of that party holding the truth? If so, it is, to say the least of it, a novel one: such an one as was never once dreamed of in the primitive ages, no, not even by the Church’s [3] greatest enemies.—When, in your own

country, several bishops and priests of your church,—among whom I may just mention; Talleyrand, Bishop of Aulun; De Savines of Viviers; De Jarante of Orleans; Gobel, Bishop of Lydda and afterwards of Paris, Miroudet of Babylon, Gay Vernon, Lindet, Lalande, Lequin, Chabol, Massieu, Marolles, Torné, Pellalier, Thibault, Minée, Henruidin, Huguet, Lefessier, Panisset, &c. &c.,—when these men sent in to the Convention their letters of Orders, mitres, and Episcopal ornaments, and declared, that there ought to be no worship but that of reason, liberty and equality,—was this an indication of the truth—“*l’œuvre du ciel*”? Truth, Sir, eternal immutable Truth, is always the same, whether crowded around by innumerable hosts, or, whether standing solitary and unregarded.—

Further:—you state,—“ou je trouverais mille conversions de protestant au catholicisme, contre un de nôtre fait protestant.”²⁵⁵—Such may have been the case; Yet, allow me, Sir, to doubt it. Be this as it may, *one thing is certain*: for we (you and I) have it *here* in this country before our eyes;—that it is a very easy matter for you to make a Romanist of either a Heathen or a nominal Protestant.—A few words and a few drops of water from you, and, lo! the matter is accomplished, the Heathen is made a Roman-Catholic!!—

—But, Sir, when you speak, as you often do of your enormous numbers, has it, never occurred to you, that our Saviour spoke of His Church as a “*pusillus grex*”?—And of a “*angusta porta, et arcta via est, que ducit ad vitam; et pauci sunt, qui inveniunt eam*”?—And, that, the “*lata porta; et spateosa via est, quæ ducit ad perditionem, et multi sunt qui intrant eam*”?—

Again: you say in your Note,—“Vous avez pensé sans doute que j’étais étranger à l’enseignement des protestants.”²⁵⁶—I would, from my heart, that you really knew the doctrines of “Protestants”; you would then cease speaking [4] of them as “*Heretics*.”—For, what is Heresy? (In the words of an ancient Bishop:—“*Est enim hæresis destitutio salutis, abjectio gratiæ Dei discessio a corpore et spirita Christi*.”—And, in the words of a modern Divine, Heresy is the *pertinacious* denial of some truth *certainly* revealed. Do not forget, that the Apostle Paul was also charged with “*heresy*”; by those, too, who considered themselves as being alone the church of GOD. Let us never forget his reply—“*Confiteor autem hoc tibi, quod secundam sectam quam dicunt hæresim, sic deservio Patri Deo meo, credens omnibus quæ in lege et prophetio Scripta sunt: spem habens in Deum, &c.*” I earnestly desire that you, Sir, would consider (however briefly,) the teaching of the English Church:—She gives the word of the living GOD, of Christ, and of His holy Apostles, *unadulterated* to her children: from the Book *alone*, as from a perennial fount, she draws all truths necessary to be received: she holds (as precious jewels) the 3 great and ancient symbols of the Christian Church; which, as a faithful keeper and witness, she preserves pure, and transmits to succeeding generations.—*How then, Sir, can she be heretical?* or, *How can anyone of her Ministers, so acting be a Heretic?* On the contrary, *we, her sons, hate Heresy; we hold the ancient rules of the Catholic Fathers, as good against all Heretics,—“id esse verum, quodcunque primum: id esse adulterum, quodcunque posterius”*: and “*quod ubique, quod semper,*

251 “Sir, I do not know what design you have in sending me a certain book to avenge yourself in an indirect and innocent way, and otherwise which has not even been provoked by us.”

252 “about 100 from Oxford, and about 60 from Cambridge.”

253 “where one sees clearly that it is *the work of heaven*.”

254 “For——there is a little distance, even if you have the ability of marrying together opposite things.”

255 “where I will find 1000 conversions from protestant to Catholicism, against one of ours turned protestant.”

256 “Doubtless you thought I was a stranger to protestant teaching.”

quod ab omnibus” By GOD’s grace, Sir, with Augustine, I ever hope to say, “*errare possum, hæreticus nesse nolo.*”

There are, also, some sentences in your note which I do not clearly understand; such as,—“je vous priorai, quand vous vendrez me donner quelque chose qui combatte la Religion Catholique, de ne pas vous appuyer sur les armes de Calviniste, &c.”²⁵⁷—and again, “Si vous voulez vous battre contradictoirement à coup de livre de [5] controverse, je vous en donnerai dix contre un, où vous trouverez refuter, &c.”²⁵⁸—If, by these words, you desire to convey a challenge to me, to dispute with you upon the novel dogmas of the Romish Creed, I am quite ready to do so. Only, Sir, remember your own words;—let it be, “*d’une manière aussi solide que légitime.*”²⁵⁹

I pass by, as unworthy of my present notice, your constant assumption of the name of “*Catholic*”. The very meaning of the word being quite sufficient to expose the fallacy—for, how can a part be equal to the whole?—

Our blessed Saviour, Christ, warns his disciples, saying, “*Videte, ne quis vos seducat; multum enim venient in nomine meo, dicentes, Ego sum Christus; et multos seducunt.*—*Surgunt enim pseudochristi et pseudoprophetae et dabunt signa magna et prodigia; ita ut in errorem inducantur (si fieri potest) etiam electi.*”—S. Paul in like manner, cautions the Collossian Church with, “*Videte ne quis vos decipiat per philosophiam; et inanem fallaciam, secundum traditionem hominum, secundum elementa mundi, et non secundum Christum.*”—and again, “*Nemo vos seducat volens in humililate, et religione angelorum quæ non vidit ambulans, frustra inflatus sensu carnis suæ.*”—S. John tells the churches, “*Nilote omni spiritu credere, sed probate spirititus si ex Des sint: quoniam multi pseudoprophetae exierunt in mundum.*”—And, Jude exhorts them, saying, “*deprecans supercertari semel traditæ sanctis fidei.*” But, how is this to be done? Truly, even as our Saviour and Exemplar Christ fought the father of all heresies, with the “*gladium spiritus, quod est verbum Dei.*” It was from this armoury alone (of the Scriptures), that the holy Catholic Fathers contended against the heretics of old. Augustine (in his controversy with Polilian, the Donatist,) thus writes.—“*Ne, inquit, audiantur internos hæc verba, Ego dico, aut Tu dicis: sic potius dicamus, Hæc dicit [6] Dominus. Ibi quarramus culesiam: ibi disculiamus caudam nostrum.*” This also speaks Jerome “*Omnia, inquit, caquæ abagæ testimonio Scriptorum quasi tradite ab Apostolis asseruntur percutiuntur gladio Dei.*” Thus, also, writes Ambrose to the Emperor Gratian,—“*Interrogentur, inquit Scripturæ, interrogentur Apostoli, interrogentur Prophetæ, interrogentur Christus.*” And, as I have this day read the words of the Holy Apostle S. Peter (whose words are highly suitable here) in the Epistle for the day, (which Epistle is, I believe, also read this day in your own Church,)—“*Liquis loquitur, quasi sermones Dei: si quis ministrat, tanquam ex virtute, quam administrat Deus: ut in omnibus honorificetur Deus per Jesum Christum: cui est gloria it imperium in sæcula sæculorum: Amen.*”—

257 “I beseech you, when you come to give me something which combats the Catholic Religion, not to lean on Calvinist arms, &c.”

258 “If you want to beat yourself contradictorily with a book of controversy, I will give you ten to one, where you will find to refute, &c.”

259 “In a manner as solid as it is legitimate.”

If then; we meet to dispute, *let it be to elicit Truth*. Let this be our *method*,—“*Si quis loquitur, quasi sermones Dei*” Let this be our *aim*, “*ut in omnibus honorificetur Deus per Jesum Christum.*”—

We have the words of our Saviour Christ; we have the writings of the holy Apostles and Prophets;—“*ex quibus,*” (to use the words of an ancient Confessor,) “*et omnis veritas, et doctrinæ Catholicæ probari possit, et omnis hæresis refutari.*”—(2 Tim. III. 15–17)

I have now, Sir, answered your note, and that more largely than I originally intended. In so doing I have given you the whole of my Sunday evening and night—my only truly leisure time. Should you choose to write to me again, I will thank you to do so in the New Zealand tongue, (which will be, without doubt, a reciprocal benefit,) in which I will also respond.—

Believe me,

Sir.

Your sincere well wisher,

William Colenso,

Missionary, of the Church of England.

1852 October 14: to Morris²⁶⁰

Waitangi,
October 14th. 1852.

Mr. William Morris
Waikokopu.

My dear Sir,

For some time past I have been thinking of writing you a few lines; and, I believe, that I told one of your Natives (whom I happened to see at Tangoio) as much in the winter.—Mr. Grace, when he was here, also mentioned your name; and, after him, my brother-in-law, Mr. John Fairburn; and now, this day, your old assistant Angus McQuarrie having called, and said, that he was going your way next week, I eagerly lay hold of this opportunity to send you a few lines.—

I had heard of your doing well where you now are, having had some luck in the sperm whale way, and I was very glad to hear of it. Not that I think you will ever become *rich*, that is, as the term is generally used; yet a contented mind is riches; and to *this*, I do not think you are a stranger. I had also heard of your being about to come this way again, to return to your old quarters at Rangaika; and, while I felt glad in one respect, I felt sorry in another; for I feared, that you would not do much here in the whaling way.—

I had also heard of your having opened a Public house; but as this may be false I will not say anything more about it, only, that I would rather you should follow *anything* else than grog-selling. I am sure *you* won’t be angry with *me* for my blunt way of speaking.—

Well, and what shall I tell you? why what you have already heard—that a great portion of this country has changed owners since you left, although its appearance is nearly the

260 ATL MS-Papers-7497.

same. And, before long, I suppose much more of the Land will be sold; for I believe the Natives here will act, much as children with a box of gingerbread,—a bit today, and a word *heoi ano*:²⁶¹ and then a bit more tomorrow with the usual *heoi ano*: and so on until all is gone; and then — what then?—

Why, *when all is gone*, (if there should be any Natives left,) the Natives will know the *value* of *time*, and of *money*,—and be much more steadily industrious and less independent than they are now.—

Your old friends—Moananui, and the other chiefs are all living, and much the same as ever: They have now plenty of *taonga*, but I question whether they or their people are greatly the better for a large portion of it. With all their property,—their horses—and their *gold* (for this Land),—they still beg tobacco, and (through their own improvidence) often want a meal!

I had, in the winter, thought, that everything was settled, and that I had nothing to do but to put up a house as quickly as possible on the spot of Land which I had got in near to Te Rotoatara. I had engaged Mr. Edwards to saw timber, and so on; but now, all is stopped again.—It is not unlikely, but that I may leave this neighbourhood for good, ere long.—

My garden is now in pretty good order; if I can supply you with any thing—seeds, roots, shrubs, flowers, or trees—in the proper season, I shall be glad to do so.

Both myself and Mrs Colenso feel greatly obliged to you for your kind and prompt attention to her brother on his way hither. I dare say you may have seen our two dear children in their way to Auckland. *We feel their loss very much; our house seems quite lonely without them.*—

Mr Kier is, I believe, doing well; he is living on the Rangitikei River, and not very far from its mouth, upon his own land. I believe that he bought 200 acres there.

I suppose, that we shall have Mr. Williams back again soon; I think, that we shall *all* be glad to see him. It is now nearly 8 years since I landed here! how fast the time has rushed by! what a large piece this is out of a man's life! How much nearer we both are to *our last day*—and to *the* great day of account. I often think, what a sad, what a poor account *I* have to give;—what a blessing it is, to know, that we have a merciful Judge, who is both Saviour and Friend. May you and I be enabled to *value Him more*;—&, seeing that we have an *open door* before us, even Jesus Christ, may we both be enabled to *enter there*.

I hope to look out a little book or two for your Son, (supposing that he may be able to read English,)—which however may do for you both.—

We are beginning to want a little oil; what I am now burning I brought from the Bay of Islands! If you have any good, and the Cooper can bring me a little I should be glad to get some. I can pay you either in cash, or order payable at Turanga or Wellington or Auckland.

Once more then I bid you Farewell!—May God ever protect & bless you. Believe me,
very sincerely yours,
W. Colenso.

²⁶¹ heoi ano = there is no more.

P.S. Should you ever get a little *ambergrease*, I would thank you to remember me with a *small* bit.—W.C.

1852 December 4: to the CMS Secretaries²⁶²

Church Mission Station,
Waitangi, N.Z.,
December 4, 1852.

My dear Sirs,

A little cutter-boat being now about to sail from Ahuriri for Wellington, allows me an opportunity of writing you a few lines, just to inform you of the present sad situation of myself & my flock.

On Monday morning last, the 29th. ulto. the Rev. J. Hamlin most unexpectedly arrived here from his Station, bringing me a packet from the Bishop of New Zealand, containing his definitive judgment against me,—inhibiting me from performing any ministerial duty,—revoking his Licence,—and closing with no hopes of a reversal of his Sentence!—

This unwise step,—this most harsh most hurried judgement of the Bishop's—not only as far as regards myself (that is the *least* of the matter), but as it regards my flock, whose very remaining together is now imperilled,—has been pronounced by my “spiritual father and Ordinary” in consequence of a voluntary confession which I had made to him of an error I had committed nearly 2 years ago.—

My letter to the Bishop was marked “Private,” and written (as I firmly believed,) in accordance with the Exhortation in our Communion Service and the concluding sentence of the cxiii Canon of our Church,—and, above all, the copious & repeated directions contained in the New Testament concerning all such sad matters.—My “spiritual father & friend” has, however, not only pronounced his hasty & severe judgement against me, but has also broken Confidence in giving my Letter into the hands of 5 Clergymen; all of whom, had I been present, or cognizant, I should have challenged, as being prejudiced against me. His own 3 peculiar clergymen on account of their Tractarian views; & Messrs. Kissling and Burrows—the former, from my often having denounced his incessant German habit of smoking tobacco and his dwelling in a Colonial town, while the latter, (who was formerly my intimate friend,) has, for some reason best known to himself, ceased from even noticing my Letters ever since I left the Bay of Islands. The Bishop too, as my “Judge”, has not allowed me to speak in my own defence; for, in my letter I had said, that there were many things which I could tell him, which might be urged in my favor;—these, however, he cared not to hear. His Lordship also wrote to Mr. Hamlin, to “advise me, as a friend, to leave Ahuriri immediately!” Had I received such unhappy advice I need scarcely tell you, that your flock here would have been for ever gone from, at least, the outward communion of the Church of England.—

But, to return:—On recovering a little from my surprise, (I had just returned from our Chapel with a wedding party, having, the day previous, had a larger congregation than usual,)—I informed Mr. Hamlin, that I would fulfil that part of my Ordination vow & *obey the Bishop*, but that the

²⁶² ATL qMS-0492. Hocken MS vol 63.

consequences would rest with him. Mr. Hamlin also told me, that the Bishop had written to Archdn. Hadfield to send Mr. S. Williams here to take charge of the Station. This information was the only gleam of light afforded us. Mr. Hamlin having fulfilled his unwelcome mission, wished to return quietly in a day or two; but I insisted upon *his declaring* the Bishop's judgement to as many of my Native Teachers & Christian Chiefs as I could collect to see him. To this he, at length, assented: so I exerted myself: and, though my messengers and they (the Teachers & Chiefs) travelling all night, they arrived here from the nearer villages by Wednesday noon, when in the afternoon, the sad & most unwelcome tidings was by Mr. Hamlin publicly made known.—

I will not attempt to pourtray their state on hearing it. We fell on the ground & wept together. I endeavored to pacify—1st. by example; declaring I should assent (though never never *consent*) to the Bishop's order; and, 2nd. by leading them to consider the near approach of a useful minister in Mr. S. Williams.

Their feeling oratory flowed till dark. To the proposal of Mr. Hamlin, to remove me hence;—they repeatedly expressed their great indignation.—“What” said they, “if Neho (myself) had died naturally wouldst thou and thy Bishop come here to remove his body? and now that he is dead (Ministerially), cut down by thee and thy Bishop, will you attempt to remove him?—No: no.—Leave his body here that we may daily look at him,—still our father, still our friend,—whom, thou sayest, we can no longer hear.”—

Fortunately Mr. Hamlin left at a *very early* hour on the ensuing morning, unnoticed; or, I fear, from what I have since seen & heard, he might not have got away so safely. It being the ancient & superstitious custom of the New Zealanders to kill or greatly abuse the messengers of bad tidings.—

Ever since the Natives have been in a state of the greatest excitement. Fresh parties are continually arriving to condole, etc., after their fashion: and it requires much tact & firmness on my part, and all my belief in, & submission to, Episcopacy, to keep the flock within anything like proper bounds. They have tried to induce me, at least to continue to attend to the duties of the Ministry until Mr. Williams shall arrive, but without any success on their part. I have promised to instruct *privately* the Teachers and others; and have declared, that I shall always go to Church to hear & pray with them. They, however, say, (and I partly believe it,) that if Mr. Williams does not come *soon*, they shall all be scattered.

I cannot, however, write you any more at this time. In fact, I fear I am too late for this boat, and I have to send this 7 miles to the harbour. I write you now, my dear Sirs, chiefly *to beg you, to defer answering the Bishop's communications to you* respecting me until you shall have received my explanatory letter, which (D.V.) will follow this at an early date; I hope, within a fortnight, if an opportunity should offer.

I have indeed erred, erred greatly; but I dare believe, that my most gracious Lord and Master, the Bishop of Souls, hath long ago forgiven me the iniquity of my sin.

Praying you to remember both me & *my flock* in your prayers,
I am,
my dear Sirs,

Yours truly though unworthily,
in much affliction,
William Colenso.

Secretaries,
C.M.House, London.

P. S. I had almost forgotten to say, that Major Straith's *valued* letter of January 31st. (for which I thank him much,) only came to hand a short time ago; having slumbered 3–4 months in Mr. Cole's study at Wellington! I sent you a large packet of my Journal about 6 weeks ago. W.C.

1852 December 13: to the CMS Secretaries²⁶³

The Secretaries,
Church Mission House,
Salisbury Square,
London

Church Mission Station,
Waitangi, Hawke's Bay,
Dec 13. 1852.

My dear Sirs,

1. I wrote to you a hurried letter on the 4th instant, which if it reaches you before this, will in a measure prepare you for my present melancholy communication.
2. This Letter will be almost wholly written with especial reference to a Letter of mine to the Bishop of New Zealand, dated September 7, 1852,²⁶⁴ and the Bishop's Sentence, dated Novr. 9,²⁶⁵ 1852, and his accompanying Letter to me, dated Novr. 11, 1852.²⁶⁶
3. Before however this can possibly reach you, I shall have entered on the 20th. year of my Service and Correspondence with the C.M. Society (and never until now have I experienced difficulty in communicating with you. Much of the recent past appears to me to be more of an ugly dream than a reality; and even now, there are times when I can scarcely bring myself to believe in its truth. I have necessarily a great deal to say; which, had the Bishop thought proper to take another (and, as I still believe, a more suitable and Scriptural and truly Christian) course, had better never been made known, at least to the world. I did believe, at the time of writing to the Bishop, that he would (at all events) *hear* [2] what I still had to say, (as alluded to in par. 19 of my letter to him,) when I should willingly have told him, in the privacy of Confession, all that I must now write, and more besides. Notwithstanding, my dear Sirs, I firmly hope, that you will give every Christian consideration to what I am now about to record; and, that you will also find, that the contents of my present Letter is not intended as an extenuation of evil; but on the contrary, to shew, how that evil came to be committed:—it may also serve as a warning to others, who, like myself, may be zealously-active & full of the best of intentions, and yet to whom Satan may also come in the guise of an Angel of Light.—*I have indeed sinned: I have trespassed greatly:*

263 ATL qMS-0492. Hocken MS vol 63.

264 WC: vide, enclosure No.1.

265 WC: vide, enclosure No.2.

266 WC: vide, enclosure No.3.

I want—I wanted—no one to tell me this. GOD, the Holy Ghost, in mercy, *soon* shewed my great error; and often indeed, have I bitterly confessed it before my gracious and loving Father, through whose unchangeable love & mercy I am still alive, still upheld, and still hoping, that, through His “exceeding abundant grace”, great good shall yet come out of this, to me, sore evil.

4. I had thought when in the year 1832–3, I was first brought to the saving knowledge of GOD in Christ, that I had then sounded the gloomy and comfortless depths of repentance; but I have since found that there were still depths unfathomed. [3] But, that GOD who was with his erring servants, David and Jonah, when in the very “belly of hell”, and even then loved them, has also been with me under similar circumstances:—and, although the Candle of the LORD shines not upon me *now* as it once did, still His promise is equally sure, and I am stayed upon His faithful word which *cannot fail*. I looked (foolishly, perhaps) to my “loving” ecclesiastical “father and friend,” for counsel and Christian rebuke seasoned with love, but on my going to him with “Father, I have sinned, &c.” I met with worse than a stern repulse from his door—Was it from my father himself, the spontaneous and genuine feelings of his own heart towards his lost but *returned* son? or was it through the statements of his elder children, that he so severely acted towards me?—I now turn to you, to whom I should have turned before; only I considered, that my Journal (though rudely written) and Reports, and much collateral evidence, all testifying to my being still actively and profitably engaged as far as the Natives were concerned, were ever my best testimonies with you, especially if (when you should hear of the failings and sins of your servant,) such could also have been stopped by a word in my favor from my “loving father & friend”, who had so lately been here among us. [4] In this however I have been sadly disappointed.—“Brethren,” says the Apostle, “if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.”

5. I recollect well the year 1833, when I was in London, in the office of the Society’s Printer, Mr Watts. He had been previously speaking to me about going to N. Zealand, when one day he suddenly and publicly exclaimed (after his manner,)—“But, Colenso, the men and women go about naked in New Zealand; however will you, a youth, manage when you get among them?” “GOD can keep me, Sir,” was my reply. “Very true, very true,” he immediately rejoined, “I will tell Mr. Pratt and Mr. Coates that.”—Yes and GOD *did* keep me throughout ten years of active service as a bachelor in your employ.—

6. In the following year (1834) I landed in N. Zealand; both young and a stranger. I was stationed at Paihia, where the two resident Missionaries had very large families (upwards of 20 Children between them!) and (as you well know) the majority of the Missionaries, at the other stations had large families also. I soon saw, that a family in a heathen land was unavoidably a heavy charge both to the parents and to the Society, and a most serious obstacle to *active* Missionary work.²⁶⁷ I concluded, therefore, both to live alone and to remain unmarried, although [5] in so doing I should greatly increase both my labor and the difficulties of my situation. In those days, when the Gospel had scarcely made any advance in this Country, I once happened to

advocate a young Missionary’s marrying the converted daughter of a powerful & influential Chief (an opinion which I have subsequently heard as having been espoused by Mr. Coates and by some writers on New Zealand,) for which unorthodox innovation I had to endure the laugh (not to say the hostility) of several of the Mission. I thus lived a single life for several years, without a stain upon my moral character—although in the full vigour of youth & health, and surrounded by temptation, and where powerful solicitations to evil from without were not wanting. In the year 1840, I wrote a Letter²⁶⁸ to the Society requesting to be allowed permission to visit England in about 2 years from that time (before which period I should also have finished printing the whole Prayer Book, the New Testament having been printed some time before); a principal object I had then in view was that of looking for a suitable partner. To that application, I received (in the following year,) the following answer,²⁶⁹—“That as his return to this Country would in the present circumstances of the Mission, and especially with reference to his sphere of labour, be attended with serious inconvenience and disadvantage, they (the Comtee. of Corresp.) recommended a reconsideration of his application to return [6] home.” This of course (acting from that *one* principle with which I left England and from which I have never departed—of living only for the *Cause*.) decided me. I should, however, also tell you, that about the time of my receiving the above-mentioned answer from the Society, *three* of the Missionaries daughters were considered marriageable; to one of whom (or, rather, to her father,) I applied on the subject of marriage, and was by *him* refused. Still continuing to make my situation a matter of prayer, and believing from the strong wishes of the C.M.S., that I should finally be settled with the Press as its Superintendent, and consequently remain in the Bay of Islands, and, also, be admitted to (perhaps) Deacon’s Orders,²⁷⁰ I greatly wished to remove the loneliness of my home, and have done with daily domestic cares, which, up to that period (nearly 8 years) had not been even once attended to by any female hand. Consequently I, in April 1842, wrote a letter to the Rev. Maunsell,²⁷¹ respecting a *second* of the three marriageable females above referred to— (a young woman whom I had not seen for several years,) and his answer again determined me. I soon after addressed both Mr. Fairburn and (through him) his daughter, in a similar manner and almost immediately received the consent of both.—At the close of the year I visited Mr. Fairburn’s house, and as I then expected to be soon called by the Bishop to [7] enter upon a course of study at the Waimate preparatory to Orders, my marriage with his daughter was spoken as likely to take place *after* my Ordination. In a letter however which I received from the Bishop in March 1843,²⁷² he wished me to go to Waimate *married*, to which I assented; stating however, it was my wish to have gone thither *unmarried*.²⁷³ Accordingly, I again visited Mr. Fairburn’s, in the following month, when we were married (unfortunately, shall I say?) at his house, on the 27th of April.—

7. Up to this time I had never been by any one of our Mission told the cause why Mr. Fairburn had been

268 WC: Vide, my letter of Jan’y 24/40 par. 15.

269 WC: Vide, Resol. 3., of Commee. of Correspondence., Decr 8/40; as contained in P. Letter of December 19/40.

270 WC: Vide, my Letter to Rev. T. Veres, of Sept. 17/41, par. 3.

271 WC: Vide, Enclosure No. 4.

272 WC: Vide, enclosure No. 5.

273 WC: Vide, enclosure No. 6.

267 WC: Vide, my Letter of Jan’y. 24/ 40, par. 4.

disconnected from our Society. I had always been opposed to the large purchasing of Land by the Missionaries, and had often spoken against it; hence it was that I ever stood in any thing but a favourable light with them, and consequently, gained but little information concerning passing events in the Mission, which were common enough in themselves. I had hitherto believed that the cause of Mr. Fairburn's disconnection was his large purchases of Land: but it was only *after* I had procured the Marriage License and upon the very eve of our marriage, that I knew for certain what I have often wished I had either known earlier, or never, never known.—I could not help remarking it as a curious circumstance, that the Minister only used an abbreviated [8] portion of the Marriage Service;—in particular, merely asked, “Wilt thou have this woman to be thy wife?” (stopping *there*). I do not mention this as either impugning the legality of our marriage, or of our mutual Contract, far from it;—such however was the case.²⁷⁴—

8. On the 1st day of February 1844 (while I was absent in these parts) our first child was born. In September, in that year I was admitted to Deacon's Orders. In December, I (having completed all arrangements and at last got a vessel to take us to Hawke's Bay) left the Bay of Islands in her, and on the 16th joined Mrs. Colenso at her father's house, whither she had gone before with our child. In May & June 1845, I was brought very low indeed with a violent fever, and no medical (nor, in fact, any human) aid at hand; and long before I was strong enough to walk I was *obliged* to escort Mrs. Colenso (both of us on foot) to Poverty Bay, Archdn. W. Williams', that she might have some needful assistance at the time of her Confinement, which took place on the 23rd of September, when our second child was born. Leaving Mrs. Colenso at Turanga I returned after only a day or two of resting there, to the Station at Waitangi, and there on throughout the whole District (then travelled over by me *twice* a year); from which I had only returned to the Station on the 4th of December, having hastened back to prepare for the Bishop's expected visit.—On my arrival I found two letters awaiting me: one, from Mrs. W. Williams upbraiding me severely for *not* remaining with Mrs. Colenso, [9] at either her former or present confinement, (when, on both occasions, I was unavoidably absent on prescribed duty,)—and one from Mrs. Colenso informing me, that Mrs. Williams had made her promise not to return until she was fetched by myself in person; and, that she, Mrs. Colenso, hoped that there would never such another occasion happen, as, if so, she, for her part, had made up her mind that the fault should not be hers. (This was with reference to having more children, a subject upon which we had conversed, and both of us plainly saw, that situated as we were, here in this wild district, a young and increasing family would be a very serious drawback to our usefulness.) At this time the Bishop was on his way hither from Wellington, so I wrote to Mrs Colenso, stating that fetch her in person I could not, at least, not till after my Summer travelling was over, and that as to the other particular, I fully agreed with her, and only hoped we could both keep to our declared convictions.—In January, 1846, I accompanied the Bishop on his way to Te Wairoa, and met

Mrs. Colenso at Waikare, who had been brought thus far by Mr. Hamlin. On our return to our Station we occupied separate rooms, and continued to do so to the present. At first, things went on pretty well, (but never very well,²⁷⁵ for our domestic troubles had commenced early when we were at Te Waimate) but before a year had elapsed there was a great increase of dissension, jarring and discontent at Te Waitangi Station. [10] I will not, my dear Sirs, attempt to give you even an outline of our domestic miseries; let it suffice to say, that I, who had long been a constant sufferer from Chronic Rheumatism,—a disorder, which, as every medical man knows, as well as the poor patient, tries a person's temper greatly,—and who, notwithstanding, had very much and heavy travelling,—and the continual and harassing conduct of these (then) wild natives to endure, receiving plenty of disagreeable language and behaviour from Mrs. Colenso, and of prompt kindness unembittered by a single word from our Native Girl Rebecca, (whom we had brought away with us from the Waimate,) got insensibly not only to esteem but to love the latter, which affection was mutual, until in an evil moment, and without any prearrangement, we had (as I stated in my Letter to the Bishop,) carnal knowledge of each other.—We had all left the Waimate together in 1844, and not until long after the birth of the child in 1851, had I ever received a single unkind word or look from our girl Rebecca. Although but very young when she first came with us, it mattered not, whatever I might require, by day or by night, in rain or in shine, Rebecca was always ready to do her best for me; and from the circumstances of our being for several years with only much smaller girls in our house, she was necessarily often called upon. Is it then to be wondered at, that, under all circumstances, I became attached to her? or, that in an unguarded moment [11] I fell? Others more highly favored than I have been have sinned even as I—even when they had the great advantage of loving wives, and friends, and company, to act as bars against such evils. The Scripture saith, “Woe to him that is alone when he falleth, for he hath not another to help him up”:—this I have proved by experience. However, *I have sinned*; I have transgressed. Yet, as with Augustine, I will say,²⁷⁶—“He who, called by Thee, hath avoided the evils which he hears me confessing, should not deride me a poor patient healed by the physician, since he himself is indebted to the same Benefactor for his health, or, to speak more properly, for his being afflicted with a less degree of sickness.”²⁷⁷—Who is there, LORD, that is perfectly temperate? Whoever he be let him magnify Thy Name. But I am not he, I am a sinful man. However, I magnify Thy Name, and He who overcame the world, and numbers me among the weak members of His body, intercedes for my sins.”—

9. And here I should in all fairness state, that, while I have thus plainly written concerning Mrs. Colenso, she has several good qualifications, which rightly used would be of great value in a Country like this.—But, unfortunately for us, we married without knowing much of each other; without that species of love which is as essential as piety to

274 WC: [In pencil in the margin] In draft of Letter but *not* sent—“Oh! what a night was that to me, the night previous to our marriage! I once packed up my little carpet bag, intending to leave unobserved in the darkness—but, as I could only get to Auckland (where I knew there was no vessel for the Bay of Islands) I abandoned that thought, & hoping agt. hope—and turning a deaf ear to my secret convictions—I remained, & the next day we were married! W.C.

275 WC: *Note*. A reference to my Journal of this date will abundantly shew the many new and anomalous trials which we were then daily subjected; & which the still mysterious death of Jane Wanau, (a young woman of these parts, whom I had brought from the Bay, and who died suddenly in our house on the night of the 29th March,) contributed not a little to the increase. For, owing to that, we could get no Domestic help whatever.

276 WC: Milner's History of the Church of Christ, vol. ii, p.122.

277 WC: Idem, p.166.

true happiness between man and wife; and I, in requesting to have my lot among the wildest and least known Tribes, little thought but that such would [12] be quite agreeable to Mrs. Colenso,—even more so than if she had been born in England.—Let my sad fall and unhappy state and prospects be a loud and useful warning to all the young men in your Institution at Islington, and to all others who may offer themselves for the Holy Office of a Missionary—to be very sure that they have real partners altogether helpmeets in those whom they may seek to make their wives; let them have mutual love for each other, and love for the Mission work too, as well as piety.—Let them, when seeking a wife, read and study Cecil’s admirable chapter “on the Marriage of Christian Ministers.”²⁷⁸—But, after all, they are not likely to sin as I have; for it makes a wonderful difference—the choosing of a wife in England and leaving home and coming out together, and the taking one (out of *two*) here in the Colony, whose family and friends and whole circle of acquaintance are in this Land but *not* among the Natives.—

10. Very shortly after the birth of the child (which happened in May, 1851,) Mrs. Colenso’s suspicions were aroused; and, on her repeated enquiry, she soon got the whole of the unwelcome truth from the mother. This she quickly communicated to the whole household, consisting, at that time, of six girls besides Rebecca. It was not however publicly known until February last, as mentioned by me in my letter to the Bishop. One of the greatest of mercies has been the continual deliverance of both the helpless infant and the mother (who, for a very [13] long time, subsequent to the birth of her child, was subject to epileptic fits,) from all physical evil. Which should, I think, be attributed either to the ministry of Angels, or to GOD’s graciously hearing Intercessory Prayer, or both.

11. And here I should perhaps inform you, that during the whole of this long period I never omitted my *private* devotional duties; I regularly read the Holy Scriptures on my knees night and morning, and prayed (privately) thrice a day as before. Many indeed have been the bitter seasons and sleepless nights which I have had! Many a strong temptation to give up both reading the word of GOD and prayer! The 51st and other penitential Psalms have been frequently used by me as prayers with an intenseness of feeling which few can know.—While the vii of Romans (a chapter which I had often studied) I have been made experimentally to understand. From books I have found little solace (always excepting the blessed Word of GOD),—save from Luther on the Galatians, Adam’s private thoughts, Bunyan’s Grace abounding, Augustine’s Confessions, Bp. Hall’s Contemplations, Goode on the better Covenant, Hodge on the Romans, with some portions from Mr Henry’s Commentary, and Mr Jowett’s little works. My Public duties you will know something of from my Journal, and I have, and do bless GOD, that HE ever kept me hard and steady at work. In the worst of my sinning and repenting I was regular in them, attending [14] to the preparation of my Sermons for the LORD’S day, &c., &c., as before,—and I am sure (paradoxical though it may seem,) that my unworthy instrumentality in His work was being blessed by Him, down to the very (evil) day of my suspension.—

12. It was during the last winter that I came to the conclusion to inform the Bishop of my situation. I should

have made it known at an earlier period, had Archdn. Williams been here among us. Could I, however, have foreseen that the Bishop would have acted in such a precipitate manner, I should have hesitated in acquainting him of the matter. I did suppose, that it was quite possible that the Bishop might *ultimately* suspend me; but even then I believed, that he would *first* hear all I had to say, and be quite provided with a substitute to fill my place. In confiding in him as I did, I acted (as I believed) in accordance with the concluding paragraph in the first exhortation or Warning before the Holy Communion, as well as with the latter part of the cxiii Canon, which states,—“Provided always, that if any man confess his secret and hidden sins to the Minister, for the unburdening of his conscience, and to receive spiritual consolation and ease of mind from him, we do not any way bind the said Minister by this our Constitution, but do straitly charge and admonish him, that he do not at any time reveal and make known to any person whatsoever [15] any crime or offence so committed to his trust or secrecy (except they be such crimes as by the laws of this realm his own life may be called into question for concealing the same) under pain of irregularity.—It never once occurred to me, that the Bishop would (or, could) make my private and confidential Letter, (I was about to write, Confession,) immediately upon the receipt of the same, the ground of public proceedings against me. I thought, (foolishly perhaps,) that something was due to my former long tried character in perilous times—to my having ever decidedly opposed all immoralities and sins of that very nature as that one through which I had fallen—to my long and active Service—and to, the voice of the Church *here*, my flock.—I was prepared for his coming hither, and, perhaps, investigating the matter on the spot, hearing what the Christian Natives of the district might have to say, and I was also prepared to do all that I could towards reparation. I would willingly have confessed my error publicly before the Church, and submitted to a public rebuke from my Superior, which, I believe, would equally have answered the ends of justice, and have been far more suitable to the welfare of this flock, and the exigencies of the Mission, than the present course (however strictly legal) which the Bishop has adopted.—Bp. Hall truly remarks,—“As GOD makes a difference betwixt chastisements of His own & punishments of strange children, so must wise governors learn to [16] distinguish of sins and judgements according to circumstances.”²⁷⁹

13. But, (and I must be allowed in my exigency to state this,) I never have been at any time a favorite of the Bishop. In 1844, on leaving Te Waimate, (directly after our Ordination,) I told the Bishop, “that my conscience told me, I had no favour to thank him for.” This I again reminded him of, when here, in 1846; and again, on this last visit, a year ago. My conflicts with him, when at Te Waimate, concerning a Sentence of mine (an *unfortunate* one, it should seem,) which occurs in a Letter I wrote, in May 1841, to the Bishop of Sydney, (and which, although he never even acknowledged the receipt of it, he had shewn to the Bishop of New Zealand when on his way hither,) which sentence was as follows:—To your Lordship, under GOD, do I now look for that which may enable me to serve the LORD lawfully & faithfully, in that situation to which I believe HE has called me,—in which HE has permitted me, unworthy as I am, to labour nearly 7 years, and in which HE

278 WC: Vide, his “Remains” edited by Pratt.

279 WC: Vide, “Contemplations,” vol.1, “The Birth & Breeding of Moses.”

has blessed me and made me, I trust, in some measure a blessing to others. I seek not, my Lord, a new employ. No: but only a lawful continuance of that which has ever been not only my occupation but my delight.”—And, also upon Baptismal Regeneration, and my utter and decided opposition to both Popery and Tractarianism and the new Scheme of dissevering the Church *here* from the mother Church of England,—have, long ago, made me a marked man. The Bishop, on his last [17] visit, (when he came here late on the Saturday evening and left early on the Tuesday morning, not dining on any day of his stay, and having only an hour or two—i.e. from xi. p.m. on the Monday to iii. a.m. on the Tuesday in which we could privately converse together, & he accused me, *first* of having written to the C.M.S. against him! And, *second*, of unduly aspiring after the Priesthood! I felt very indignant upon both charges; and we had a long and furious conversation concerning them. The former I indignantly denied; and, on my pressing him for the proof, he assigned a letter which he had received from Mr. Veres, (some 5 or 6 years back,) in which reference was made to something I had communicated to Mr. Veres relative to the Ordination in 1844, and at that time!! I acknowledged to my having written to Mr. Veres a concise statement of facts relative to myself, but again denied my having done so against him.—To the latter charge I replied, by falling on my knees before him, and telling him, with tears, that this was now the *second* time he had charged me with unduly seeking the Priesthood, (the former occasion was at Wellington some years ago,) but so far from it, that I had all but quite made a vow never to take Priests’ Orders: which unexpected declaration of mine seemed to move him.—We, subsequently, travelled from this place to Waikari together; on the way, and at that place, he told me; *first* that he was much gratified with the state of my Natives; and *second*, that if I wished to leave the Diocese he would [18] give me suitable letters dimissory (I forget the proper Latin term he gave them,) to the Bishop of any other Diocese I should wish to go to. I afterwards thought much upon this latter statement, as to what was meant by it, but I did not, and do not, even now, understand it.—But why should I now mention these things? I have sinned; I have *justly* given the Bishop cause to act against me according to the strictness of Ecclesiastical Law; he has so acted and I must bear it.

14. In writing to you, my dear Sirs, this long and melancholy letter, I have but little hope that, even supposing you to be so inclined, you would succeed in getting the Bishop to reverse his sentence. Still I have a hope, however slender, resting mainly upon your long and much more perfect knowledge of me, and, also, upon a sentence which occurs in the accompanying Letter of the Bishop, where he speaks of a possibility of the Church’s reversal of its sentence and restoration, as “depending in great measure upon the Society in England, who in a former case of a far more venial kind, have hardly been persuaded to allow their first sentence of absolute separation to be reversed.” I do not know the case here referred to by the Bishop, unless it be that of Mr. Spencer, but, while I willingly allow that *his* case was a “far more venial” one (if there really is any such distinction in sin before GOD); still, it occurred immediately upon his entering on his work, and, without his having [19] a long and laborious service in the mission field, and a known & recorded decided abhorrence to those very sins, to plead somewhat in his favour.

15. Should you, however, be inclined to deem it both prudent and necessary wholly to agree with the Sentence of

the Bishop, *I pray you, my dear Sirs, do not cut me off entirely from among the number of your Servants.* If I cannot be allowed any longer to serve you in that situation in which I have hitherto delighted to serve you, and in which I believe many a poor soul has been blessed, allow me to do so in some lower, in some more quiet more private one, where I may yet have opportunities of serving the Cause to which I long ago devoted myself.—For I would rather be a doorkeeper in the house of my GOD, then dwell in the tents of wickedness. I have (allow me to say,) served you zealously to the utmost of my capacity throughout a long period—and this, I think, you will again readily grant.—Do not, then, turn me quite away, for I have few or no earthly friends, especially in N. Zealand. Neither have I any means of subsistence, even supposing I had the inclination to go into the world, with the unjust steward I may truly say—“dig, I cannot; to beg, I am ashamed.” If you cannot conscientiously allow me to remain in *full* connexion with you, as heretofore, allow me at least to remain in this “temporary house,” (seeing that I have obtained for you a new and better site, and that I have expended upon this as you have long [20] ago known, so much money and labor,²⁸⁰) with a *small* allowance from you just to keep me from want. Let the place of my sin be the place of my exile. Of course I could not make this request, if it were ever intended to continue this spot as a Mission Station.—And even in case of my removing, it would be some time before I could get up a house into which I could go with all my goods—including Printing and Binding materiel, Carpenter’s, and Turner’s tools, &c., &c. And there is not a single hut large enough any where in this neighbourhood. Our two dear Children are (happily) gone to Auckland, (whither their mother is about to follow them in a few weeks,) and I dare believe that you would not refuse to pay for their Education, (which you would, I believe, allow if I were naturally dead,) and, also, to continue the small sum of £10. pr. ann. to my dear and aged and sorrowing parents; which with a small allowance (say £20 pr. ann.) to, myself, I would endeavor to be content with, and serve you and the Cause in which (notwithstanding my grievous sin) my heart alone is, until my hour of release. I can still serve you in many ways, inferior only to the one grand work of *preaching* the Gospel. My little Press, rightly used, may yet be a great engine for good amongst this people.—In the Bible Classes & Native Teachers’ Schools, where I have always been at home, I may still be of Service. My little practical knowledge of medicine, and of the suitable treatment required by Native race when ailing, and my great influence with the [21] Native Chiefs, who are still without the pale of the Church, may all be advantageously used in your behalf, and I know, that by *my remaining among them*, even in a lower capacity, I shall effectively keep them from joining the Papists:—For many of my poor flock love me greatly, and loudly lament the severity of the Bishop. It must, however, be plainly understood, that while willing to help (*if required*) the resident Missionary, I should not like to be under his control or supervision.—

16. In the beginning of this letter I have ventured to express my hope, that GOD, who is wonderful in working, will yet bring good out of this evil. And this, I think, I may truly say HE has already done—at least as far as I am concerned—blessed be His holy Name for it! The LORD, who seeth not as man seeth, often works by contraries. It is His alone

280 WC: *Vide* Letters, &c., CMS, Decr. 31/46; Feby. 28/49; and “Return, No.5,” in Enclosure, No.7.

prerogative to bring good out of evil—to make even the wrath of man to praise Him—to circumvent even Satan himself the great master of all artifice—and to divide his spoils.—And all this in order to hide pride from man, to teach man to know himself to be, even when at his very best estate but vanity:—a poor proud Sinner! Saved indeed, in and by the LORD, but still impotent to good. Needing every moment the strong, and not left losing hold of his Creator’s Redeeming to preserve him from falling in to hell.—Upon this subject I feel as if I could write a volume of my own experience. If I have been taught in some defile [22] to know and abhor myself—to know and value my Saviour—to cease from man and to glory alone in the LORD—shall I not be thankful for such teaching; however dear to flesh and blood the purchase may have been? Naturally of a warm sanguine temperament—too close a follower of St Peter in his forward and erring zeal—too readily lifted up with the gracious successes which the LORD had given me in everything I put my hands to—what needed I more than to be made humble and kept so; that I might know myself. And what way was there better calculated to that end than the way the LORD has chosen? Not that I make Him the author of Sin; no: I abhor the thought. The evil is my own; the good is alone of GOD. St Paul tells us, that it was by GOD considered needful that he should have “a thorn in his flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet him.”—Doubtless some severe humiliating trial, or failing, tending to humble spiritual pride even in an Apostle—and such an Apostle too, whose home was heaven, whose all was Christ, who longed to depart & be with Him! How much more than was such a grievous visitation needful for myself, who am still but a poor half-awakened earthly-minded sinner!! Oh yes! there was much to which Satan could lead me, there to dwell and contemplate, (as Nebuchadnezzar viewed his Babylon,) until Christ and my need of Him, and my own nothingness and sinfulness, should be obscured in the vainglorious shew. Satan well knew my weak side. He knew how to order [23] his devices. Was it a small matter for me, alone, to have printed the N. Testament and the P. Book (perhaps, the first and only complete edition of the New Covenant and the Prayer Book of the Church of England yet printed in the Southern Hemisphere,)—and so to have supplied every corner of this Land with the Word of GOD and the form of sound words?—for me to have been the first (perhaps the only one) to travel throughout the whole length of this Island (from Cape Palliser to Cape Maria Van Diemen,) and to preach Christ in every village?—to have been continually opposed by whole armies of aliens—Papist, Infidel, Heathen, Herodians, Legalists,—not a few, too, of whom, have been backed with power, native & foreign—and yet to overcome them all?—to see all my little works undertaken for my Saviour’s Cause both owned and prospering?—my tracts against the Papists, and all Will-worship, my little Catechisms and Hymns, &c., &c., all of Service and blessed?—to have even the great and fierce *Heathen* Chiefs of the Southern parts of this Island afraid of my influence & power?—and quietly obeying me, in so much that this District is said, by the Government Officers, to be in the best order of any? and, further still, to have letter on letter, and *long* ones too, from some of the first Scientific men in England and on the Continent, including some of the Peers of Great Britain, full of praise on matters of natural Science, & asking for my help? But, I’ll say no more as all these [24] things have a wonderful tendency to exalt the fleshly mind, and to give low and even contemptible views of Christ and of His work, especially

among ignorant Heathens. But, blessed be GOD! in the midst of *all*, I have never become weary in well-doing—I have not relaxed my onerous labours—I have not taken that ease which the flesh too often agreed with Satan in saying, I was entitled to. It is true that I have sinned; I have drunk that bitter cup, but GOD, who is wondrous in working, has made my own sin to be my corrector—my poison to be my medicament. The viper has been made a plaster: it has been the great means of weaning me entirely from the love of praise and worldly honors;—of keeping me at my work; of making me lowly in my own eyes, and especially before my GOD; and of causing me the better to bear and sympathize with the infirmities of my own people (2 Cor. i. 3,4,6.). And, further: who can tell the great use which may yet be made of my fall amongst this people; who, though hitherto simple in their faith, (notwithstanding their former superstitious heathen notions which still cling to them respecting the sanctity of their priests,) are, especially just now, in danger of being led away from the truth of the Gospel, through the bold assertions of the Popish Priests on the one hand, and the sly schemes of the Tractarians on the other, concerning the peculiar Sanctity and distinctness of the Clergy; who, in so doing, usurp the powers of our *one* and *only Priest and Mediator*, Jesus Christ.— [25]

17. If there is any one thing more than another which gives me uneasiness just now it is, the anxiety I have lest my unfortunate error should be a means of injuring you in any way—whether at home, in your funds—or, abroad in your infant Churches.—*Here, in this district*, I humbly hope the injury will be neither great nor lasting. Up to the present hour the Popish Priest have not been able to gain over a single Native; in which, I know, he is wonderfully disappointed. Another cause of sorrow to me is Major Straith’s kind Christian Letter of January 31. For, abounding as it does in love & Consolation and encouragement and esteem from you all, I feel that I little deserve it; and, I fear, that when this sad information shall reach you, the unwelcome blow will be so much more severe as it was unexpected. I am sure that I shall feel both anxious and unhappy until I hear how you are able to bear up under this most sad sad affair.

18. It would be a very easy matter for me to get all the Native Teachers of the District and the Christian Natives generally to petition you in my behalf, but such a proceeding I dislike and utterly disown. Although cut clean off from all Ministerial duty, I shall still afford them all the help that lies in my power as a private Christian—until, at least, I hear from you, which I hope will be at no very distant period. [26] In the meanwhile I intend (D.V.) to be occupied in writing up my Journal, and with my little Printing-press and Book-binding, and so finish my little Books long ago begun,—one of which (the Happy deaths of Converts of various nations,) has reached the 96 page.

19. I did not intend (neither would it perhaps be proper for me just now,) to remark upon either the Bishop’s Sentence or his accompanying Letter. Still I ought not to close this without stating that there are certain things therein which I cannot agree in, and others that are widely at variance with my own belief & teaching.—For instance:—in the preamble to his sentence, and again in the body of that document, he has stated that I “have confessed myself to be guilty of the sin of *adultery*”:—which, however, I assuredly have not. Such *may* be a proper term for it according to Canonists, notwithstanding I myself cannot conscientiously consent to allow as much. But, after all, it matters little, whether it is

called a criminal connexion, or concubinage, or adultery. Sin is ever sin under whatever guise it may be concealed. All are alike crimes; although the moral consequences attendant upon the confession of each vary greatly in different lands and at different times.—Again the whole tenor of his accompanying Letter (as it seems to me) is more in accordance with the doctrine of Novatian and that of the modern Puseyites, than with that of our Church. Repentance and Forgiveness are a long way off in the misty region of [27] Doubt, scarcely perceptible to mortal ken; while the Church—whose duty it is to preach the Gospel to all poor Sinners—in which we have Forgiveness of Sins secured to us upon our repentance,—is spoken of as not daring to pardon! S. John, however speaks differently—“If we confess our sins, He is faithful & just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness”. Yes: the act of forgiveness is completed before we approach the throne of grace. Our blessed Saviour would not have taught us whenever we pray to ask for forgiveness if such was not as readily obtained. Neither would our Church have taught us concerning GOD, as being “always more ready to hear than we to pray, and wont to give more than either we desired or deserved,” if such a case could have been supposed as that of a poor sinner asking in vain for mercy. For, as Bp. Pearson (writing on this article of our Creed,) says—“So long as guilt remaineth on the soul of man, so long is he in the condition of the devils.—We are always subject to offend, and so long as we can offend, so long we may apply ourselves unto GOD by repentance and be renewed by his Grace & pardoned by His mercy.—There is no voice like that—‘Thy sins are forgiven thee’. This is GOD’s goodness, this is man’s happiness.” GOD’s gracious Covenant with us is *mercy to unrighteousness*.—And that not only once, but continually:—not only before we are brought to acknowledge by ourselves and of GOD in Christ, but *after*, when we daily need His mercy as [28] much as ever. Yea, then it is, that HE *much more* remembers the word of His grace; much more bears with the sinful infirmities of his Children, now that Sin is the grief and plague of the renewed mind.—“There is no condemnation to them that are in Christ Jesus”.—“Their sins & iniquities will I remember no more.”—“Now where remission of these is there is no more offering for Sin”. *There needs no more for GOD is already satisfied*. The justification of the believer is *not* an imperfect work—justified to day and condemned again by GOD tomorrow. An immediate pardon awaits every Believer who has fallen into sin, even the grossest kind, upon his penitential acknowledgment thereof. Suffer he may, as much as it shall please his Heavenly Father, but condemned he is not, die eternally he shall not, for Christ hath died for him. Oh! how differently another Bishop (Leighton, writing upon the xxxii Ps.) speaks.—“The gracious readiness of the Father of Mercies to grant pardon is so much the more evident, as on the first word of confession that he uttered, or rather the first purpose that he formed in his mind, immediately the pardon, the full and free pardon, came down signed as in the Court of Heavens. I said, I will confess, & thou forgavest. O admirable clemency! It requires nothing but that the offender should plead guilty, and this not that it may more freely punish, but more liberally forgive.—He freely offers peace and favours to those who have deserted him, when they return to his obedience; he runs forth to meet them, and to receive them with a most [29] affectionate embrace; and having to importunately entreated our return, will not despise those who are treading back

with prayers and leave the fatal path which their folly had chosen.”—

20. Before I close I should, perhaps, tell you, to prevent misconception, that the young woman Rebecca, (who, I informed the Bishop, in my letter to him, had returned again to us to dwell,) has again, of her own free will, gone back, with the young man to whom she has been some time married, to the Native villages inland, there to reside.—

21. I enclose a copy of my Annual Report, and other yearly Papers,²⁸¹ which I have (as usual) just made out and transmitted to the local district Commee.—These papers I have always, *every year*, made out after this manner, and have forwarded to the E.D. Commee.

And now, my dear Sirs, I must conclude. Do not, I pray, judge severely my present Letter, written, as it has been, under much affliction. Remember me—your Servant in bonds—in your prayers; and, may the Great Head of the Church and Bishop of souls guide you in considering my unfortunate case.

And believe me,
my dear sirs,
faithfully, though unworthily
Yours
William Colenso.

[1] *Enclosure No.1*

Copy of a Letter to the Bishop of New Zealand.

Waitangi, Hawke’s Bay
September 7, 1852

The Right Reverend
The Lord Bishop of New Zealand

Private

My Lord,

1. I am most unwilling to cause your Lordship any pain, especially at such a time as that of your return from a long and dangerous and trying voyage, (knowing, too, as I do, of the many peculiar cares & trials, which you have to bear,) but my situation is, alas! such, that I have no alternative left me.—And I would rather, for many reasons, that your Lordship should hear the unlooked for and dire tidings directly from me, than from others of the Mission, or from uncertain report.

2. A few words, my Lord, will suffice to inform you of my having sadly deviated from the path of morality:—I have had connexion with a young Native woman, by whom a child has been born.

3. The young woman, Rebecca, we brought with us from Te Waimate: the child was born in May/51, and is, consequently, now 16 months old.

4. The whole matter was fully disclosed by her to Mrs. Colenso, and assented to by me, almost immediately after the birth of the Child. It was not, however, publicly mentioned by the mother, until some time after your Lordship left us. I believe it was kept (by her) so long secret, out of affection for me.

281 WC: *Vide*, enclosures, No.7.

5. I have never at any time, nor to any one, from first to last, enjoined silence, nor have I given any intimation that way.

6. Owing to the repeated and serious illness [2] of the mother, the child was weaned at the early age of 6 months; from which hour Mrs. Colenso has brought it up, shewing it great kindness.—

7. In the month of February last, the mother was determined to leave us, and to go to reside at Patangata; when, because I would not give up the child, to be taken thither, she, out of revenge, disclosed the whole matter.

8. At the Native villages she remained till May, when she again returned to our house; where she at present dwells.

9. Hitherto a few only of the Natives have fully believed her statements, and, although I have preserved a guarded manner in reference to the subject, I have never in any way denied the truth of the same.

10. The ill report, with no small addition, has been common talk during the last six months. The 2 R. Catholic Priests, and the foreigners generally have done all they can to spread it, and to make it (if possible) worse than it really is.

11. I had never intended to conceal the matter, in fact, *I could not have done so*. I did, I confess, think that it would be better made known at some future period, than during the past year.—Perhaps, in this I, also, erred.

12. I believe, that if your Lordship in your last visit here could have prolonged your stay I should have made you then acquainted with the matter: or, if my Archdeacon had been at his Station or had come here last month instead of the Rev. Mr. Grace (perfect stranger), I should have informed him of it.

13. The sudden and wholly unexpected arrival [3] here of Mr. John Fairburn, on the night of the 4th inst., (who leaves us in a few days on his return,) affords me an opportunity of putting in practice what I had already determined upon—namely, to acquaint your Lordship of the whole affair.

14. I have but one prevailing desire concerning this matter, which is, to make the fullest possible reparation in my power to the Church for my error.

15. My sin has long ago been *felt* by my own conscience and by me repeatedly made known to GOD, to whom I have offend bitterly confessed it. I dare, however, to hope, that it will be found among my many other grievous yet pardoned errors.

16. I am of opinion, that it would be well shortly to assemble several of the Native Teachers and Chiefs, and before them to own to the general truth of the report,—namely, as far as to my having had connection with Rebecca, and the birth of the child,—and to inform them, that I have written to you, my Bishop, who sent me hither, concerning the matter, and that I shall quietly await your judgment. I am not, however, quite certain that I shall so act; for as I am at a great distance from your Lordship, and as I only wish the Church's welfare, I must, in this, be guided by circumstances.—I did think of ceasing forthwith from every active duty; but, upon reflection, I considered that such a proceeding would be improper.

17. I intend, however to send immediately a notification of a similar nature to Archdeacon Hadfield and to the Rev. Messrs. Cole & Hamlin. [4]

18. I do not think, that the step I am now considering, namely, the assembling of the Native Teachers and Chiefs, and my acknowledging to the general truth of the report,—will be productive of any serious evil to the Church *here*; and that because it has already been so long talked of; as well as from their general attachment to me, which, I believe, will, in great measure, still remain.

19. It is not, my Lord, fitting, that I should now say any thing in my own favor, for I have erred, & that grievously. Notwithstanding, however, I venture to think that I could tell your Lordship a few things, which would inform you as to how I, who never before was guilty of the same crime, came to commit such a deed, and which might, perhaps be urged in extenuation.—

20. Whatever decision your Lordship may be pleased to come to concerning me, I trust to be enabled not only to bear but to agree in. Should you deem it necessary to deprive me entirely, I hope you will be able to send a Minister in Priest's orders hither, to look after this portion of your flock.

21. It has, more than once occurred to me (during the past year), to dis sever myself from the C.M.S., as well as to resign my Deacon's Office; but upon mature consideration, I have been (and am) loath to do so, and that from principle:—even as I stated (when writing upon another subject,) in a letter to the C.M.S. in February last, that,—“I still considered myself to be the property of the Church.” For, unworthy though I am, [5] I quite believe with Hooker, that “they who have once received this power, may not think to put it off and on like a cloak.—Suspensions may stop, and degradations utterly cut off the use or exercise of power before given: but *voluntarily* it is not in the power of man to separate and pull asunder what GOD by His authority coupleth.” (Book V. xxvii.3.)

22. As a matter of course I cannot at present form any plan as to my own future movement, neither would it be proper for me to think of doing so, as such must, in a great measure, depend upon your Lordship's decision respecting me. Thus much, however, I may perhaps, at present say, that I have not the least desire to remove from this neighbourhood.

23. In consequence of my having a very short time in which to prepare and write this (to me) important letter, and having my time and thoughts fully occupied withal, I fear it will not be written so clearly as it ought to be.

24. I must beg to be allowed to leave your Lordship the communicating of the unwelcome contents of this letter to both the Parent and Central Committees.

25. Should anything happen to me, before I can possibly hear from your Lordship, I pray you, my Lord, to look kindly upon all my children; for I have (notwithstanding my error) served both the C.M.S. and the Church zealously and faithfully. [6]

26. And now, my Lord, in conclusion, allow me to hope for your attentive consideration of the whole case.—My prayer is, and shall be, that you may be entirely guided in your judgment by Him—“unto whom all hearts be open, all desires known, and from whom no secrets are hid,” to do *that alone* which shall be for the advancement of His glory, the good of His church, and the welfare of this people: for I have this confidence in you that, if I must deem myself little

worthy of great things, you will not deem me worthy of utter ruin.—

And am,
My Lord,
Your unworthy servant & Deacon,
William Colenso.

[1] Enclosure No.2
Registered,
Novr. 11, 1852.”
(signed)
“C.J. Abraham,
Depy. Registrar.”

George Augustus by Divine Permission Bishop of New Zealand.

To the Reverend William Colenso, Missionary Deacon of the District of Ahuriri.

Whereas in a letter dated September 7th, 1852, you have confessed yourself to be guilty of the sin of adultery and have submitted yourself to my Episcopal judgment,

And whereas your letter was formally examined by a Commission of five Clergymen:—

viz:— The Rev. G.A. Kissling
Rev. J. F. Lloyd,
Rev. C.J. Abraham,
Rev. R. Burrows,
Rev. F. Thatcher,

held at Auckland on the 8th November 1852.

And whereas M^r. John Fairburn being called upon to give evidence before the said Commission confirmed the statement contained in your letter.

And whereas the said Commission in a Report of their proceedings given under their hands and seals have certified that there is *prima facie* grounds for instituting further proceedings in the matter aforesaid.

We therefore in remembrance of the charge which we received at our Consecration, to be so merciful as not to be remiss; so [2] to minister discipline as not to forget mercy, have carefully weighed and considered both your letter and the Report of the Commissioners, and thereupon do pronounce this our definitive sentence.—

“That the Reverend William Colenso Missionary Deacon of Ahuriri in our Diocese of New Zealand, having been found guilty of the sin of adultery upon his own confession confirmed by evidence taken by a Commission appointed under our hand & seal, and having willingly submitted himself to our Episcopal judgment, we do hereby inhibit the said William Colenso from ministering henceforth in the Holy Office of a Deacon, and do hereby straitly enjoin him on no account to continue to conduct Public Worship or to administer the Sacrament of Baptism, but to walk humbly with GOD, and in the sight of all men.

“And we do hereby revoke the licence granted to Rev. William Colenso as Missionary Deacon of the District of Ahuriri.

“Witness our hand & seal this ninth day of November in the year of our LORD, one thousand eight hundred and fifty two.

(Signed)
G.A. N.Zealand

Enclosure No.3

Auckland
11 November, 1852

“The Bishop of New Zealand sorrowing as a spiritual father over his lost son, sends the enclosed sentence; and would gladly have accompanied it with words expressive of hope, that when the LORD has brought forth the fruits of repentance in the Sinner’s heart, the Church will reverse its sentence and restore the penitent; but this will depend in great measure upon the Society in England, who, in a former case of a far more venial kind, have hardly been persuaded to allow their first sentence of absolute separation to be reversed.

“May the Saviour of Sinners, in the exercise of His own absolute prerogative of mercy, be more lenient in His Sentence, than His Church dares to be.

“To William Colenso,
with the sorrowful prayers of his Father
in the ministry of Christ Jesus,
(signed)
G.A. N. Zealand.

(True Copy W.C.)

[1] *Enclosure No.4*
“*Vide ut nulli dicas*”²⁸²

Paihia, April 4, 1842

My dear friend,

In an old letter of yours, you kindly say,— “I think a meet partner would be of great benefit to you in many ways— where shall we find one? I believe a man might travel to England and back again and not find one near so worthy of that name as the intelligent and laborious copier of my Exodus.”

—For some time past I have *been obliged* to think pretty much as you express yourself in the *former* part of my quotation.—And the object of this *private* dispatch is, to enquire of you some *particular* relative to the person of whom you speak. I called (as you doubtless know) at her *father’s house*, & remained 2 nights; unfortunately, however, the young lady herself was at Auckland, and as there could not possibly be any excuse for my prolonging my stay at *that* place, I was obliged to leave without seeing her, and consequently, without in any way judging for myself.

I would believe, that I need not say much to you, as to the qualifications which I, *as a Missionary*, should wish to have in a partner.—Nor should a reason exist for my beseeching you not to allow your better judgment to be led astray either through esteem for the person in question, or, a desire to see

282 “see, that no one might say.”

settled the writer of this. My future happiness [2] here, aye, and usefulness too, depends, in a measure on your faithful answer. I cannot go down again, just now, to that neighbourhood, there being no excuse to offer for my so doing.—

I have, I trust, long ago devoted myself to Christ's Cause, for better for worse; if He will be pleased to accept and employ me, till death. So, that, (however platonic it may seem, when considered together with a love affair.) Christ must be with me *primary*—at *all* times. Hence the actual need for a *helpmeet* for me being also devoted, or willing to devote herself, to the same blessed service.—

Have you reason to believe the person of whom we speak to be a practical believer in the LORD Jesus Christ?

Do you know her to profess a *desire* and an aptitude for Missionary work—in teaching children & females,—in Schools, and as Enquirers?

What do you suppose to be her disposition? How do you suppose her to be inclined towards gay or worldly company?—(I ask this, as, when I was at Manukau she was at Auckland.)

Are you aware of her having any bodily infirmity?

Have you heard of her affections being pre-engaged?

These, my brother, are some of the questions I would solemnly propound to you for your [3] consideration. I do it with prayer. I write you as a Minister of Christ, and as a married Missionary on this to me serious subject. Allow me then to ask you, to consider this well, and to write me, in answer, as soon as you have done so. And may GOD, our own GOD, direct you in that matter.—As a matter of course this communication must be strictly private.—”

Believe me ever,
My dear friend,
Yours most sincerely,
William Colenso

The Rev. R Maunsell,
Waikato Heads.

(True Copy, W.C.)

Enclosure No.5

The Waimate, March 17, 1843.

Dear Sir,

I am very much obliged to you for the interleaved Testament which will be of great use to me in collecting remarks for a Revision of the present version.—

With regards to your future plans, I should recommend you come to the Waimate as soon after Easter as you can, and to make arrangements for spending at least half a year in the College. If you would prefer coming as a married man, I have no doubt that we can make arrangements for Mrs Colenso's reception. And she will be of great assistance in the revision of the New Testament. In fact I should very much prefer this arrangement, as I have already told you that my short visit at Maraetai would prepare me to be glad of any opportunity of extending my acquaintance with her.

Our College arrangements contemplate the reception of Ladies as well as Gentlemen; which, I believe, will assist in giving a tone to our Society which could not otherwise be attained.— —

Believe me,
Your very faithful Friend,
(signed) G.A. N. Zealand

Mr. Colenso
Paihia

(True copy, W.C.)

Enclosure No.6

Paihia, March 22nd, 1843

The Right Revd.
The Bishop of New Zealand.

My Lord,

—— “It was not, my Lord, my intention, in the event of your Lordship's permitting me to reside at the Waimate College for a season, to marry before I went thither; believing I might be the better able to devote my time to what your Lordship might be pleased to require me to do, in going single. Since, however, your Lordship has been pleased to intimate your wish,—particularly, too, if Miss Fairburn's knowledge of the Native tongue may be at all serviceable in so holy a cause—I will lose no time in getting married and removing to the Waimate, although I fear that with all possible expedition, I shall not be able to be at the Waimate until a month after Easter.”

I am
My Lord,
Your Lordships ob. Servant
W. Colenso

(True Copy W.C.)

1853 January 18: to McLean²⁸³

Church Mission Station
Waitangi, Hawke's Bay
January 18, 1853.

Sir,

The very extraordinary and hitherto (I believe) unprecedented proceedings of last week, in which a *Missionary to the Heathen*, of nearly 20 years' standing, had to appear before a Magistrate of this Province, in open Court, to defend himself against a charge of Assault, preferred against him, and sworn to *by one of his own "children"* (converts)!—the unfortunate conclusion of that matter—and the consequences which will assuredly flow

²⁸³ ATL Object #1005971 from MS-Papers-0032-0221; a copy is among Colenso's letters to the Church Mission Society in the Hocken Library.

from that unfortunate conclusion—are matters of such great importance, that neither apology or preface on my part, will be necessary in my writing you concerning the same.

And this I should have done immediately on my return from Court, (being *legally* inclined thereto,—if I may so speak,—from referring to the “Fines for Assaults Ordinance A.11”, which I had not till my return, seen,) had not my disorder (Influenza), which I was suffering from when there, increased so rapidly, as utterly to preclude me from doing any thing till now; and even now I feel that I am not well enough to be able to the task.

Still, believing as I do, that it is now an imperative matter of duty upon me to write you upon this unpleasant subject,—a duty which I owe (not to mention myself) to all Missionaries and Missionary Societies,—to the New Zealand settlers,—and to the high cause of Order, Justice, and Truth;—and, that I should also do so before you leave these parts, that you may have it in your power to test the truth of my statements;—I, believing that God will be my helper, will at once essay to do it.

The remarks, Sir, which I intend to make, I shall for brevity’s sake, class under two general heads:—1st. *The Impropriety of such proceedings*; and, 2nd. *The illegality of them*.—I shall also, throughout, write, as if the whole of the charge made, and the evidence offered before you, was quite and wholly true.—

And here I should state, that I had intended to confine myself only to the making known the former, being quite sufficient for my purpose; but since I believe that I have it in my power also to shew the latter, it is, consequently, my duty to do so.—

Firstly, then, the impropriety of such proceedings:—i.e. of a “child” (or convert from the heathen) being allowed to prefer and swear to trifling charges of assault against his own Missionary Pastor—I shew, first, from the universal office of a Missionary; and second, from my own peculiar situation here among this people and tribe.—

The general Office of a located Missionary, (as you well know, and as all the natives allow) includes that of Schoolmaster, Guardian and Parent; now to each of these persons is allowed (even in our own highly civilized country) a certain latitude over their pupils, wards and children; which is not, and can not be conceded to any other. And although some Schoolmasters, Guardians and Parents are much more severe than others, the Law never interferes, except in cases of great excess of punishment. Were any disrespectful, malicious, & vindictive case to be there brought by a pupil, ward, or child, (as the case might be) the refractoriness of the individual being shewn, the Magistrate would immediately side with the said Master, Guardian or Parent; and not only justify his acting, but severely blame the promoter or principal actor in the Case; which, indeed, from the very principles of his Office, he could not refrain from doing. Now such being undoubtedly the case at *home*, at the very abode of Order, how much more then is it needful than here in the Colonies—in *these* Colonies!—the authority of the Schoolmaster, Guardian and Parent, should be by the Magistrate rigidly upheld & respected? And if it be the more needful here in the Colonies to uphold such Authority among the offspring and descendants of Europeans, how much more needful is it to do so among the but recently converted, and half-civilized savage Aboriginies of these Islands?—And here, in order

that no link may be wanting in the chain, I will now shew, the *general* and well-known refractoriness of the “child” who preferred the charge against me;—leaving the particular and special instance which brought on the assault complained of, till I come to the second part of my Letter—1st. (and since his Baptism) that, when he lived at Table Cape, he was engaged in the shameful plunder of the U.S. brig “*Falco*”, on board of which vessel was a quantity of his own Pastor’s property (Arch. W. Williams) which was also plundered by that party; but finding that I would not receive him here into the Communion of the Church, until he had restored the same, he subsequently gave up what he had remaining, to the Agent who had been appointed by the U.S. Consul there.—2nd. That, last year he gave up attending Divine Service and Schools, and wholly separated himself from his brother Micah, the N. Teacher of his village, and a good and useful man, (as you, yourself, know).—3rd. that he had taken a near female relation (a widow and the mother of 4 small children), and against the expressed wishes of all his Christian relations, sanctioned her cohabiting with a miserable white man, called “Taare hauaitu”, (i.e. Meagre Charley), whom you “know to be a thief and a bad man”; and in order that they may not be disturbed through the indignant feelings of the Native Teacher and the Christian inhabitants of his village, he has taken them both into *his own hut*!—4th. that on his bringing the young woman Arabella Te Ngira, whom he himself had brought up, to Pakowhai, there to be married by the Popish Priest, to the son of Puhara, to whom she had been betrothed from her infancy, he joined the Priest and the Heathen Chief, Te Hapuku, in counselling her to forsake the Christian religion, and profess the Papist!—5th. that he told the Heathen Chief, Te Hapuku, (who is exceedingly superstitious) that I had said, “that I had caused the death of the Chief Tiakitai through the potency of my prayers, and that I was now praying to Te Atua that he, Te Hapuku, also might be speedily cut off!!” which (as Te Hapuku allowed before you and others in open court) was the main reason of his being so greatly determined against me.—6th. that on the close approach of the day in which (according to appointment), I was to visit his village, Patangata, he told his people, (on the Sunday evening after they had returned from Divine Service) that he had made up his mind how to act; and they must not think of moving him from his purpose; that, inasmuch as no one had heard of the name of Maketu until he had laid hands upon the white man, neither had anyone heard of the fame of Maroro until he had done the same; but that now their fame was great, and their names would live; even so, he had determined it should be with him, &c., &c. Maketu, you will recollect, most cruelly murdered poor Mrs. Robertson, her servant, and 3 infant children, in the Bay of Islands, in the year 1841, for which he was executed at Auckland; and Maroro committed a similar foul deed, in the unprovoked murder of poor Branks and his infant family near Wellington, for which he was also executed.

———Now, from these few *facts* I leave you, Sir, to draw your own conclusion as to the mind or moral character of this “child” of mine.

—Further, if it be so, (as I have shewn) that the Magistrate’s duty is both concurrent with, and coadjutant to that of the Master Guardian or Parent (as the case may be), all of whom are supposed to reap some advantage from their respective situations; how very much more then is such assuredly the case, when *all* those important duties are merged in *one* solitary and unaided individual, who not

only reaps no advantage whatever from his situation, (which not one in 10,000 ever wishes to fill), but, actually, casts away those advantages which he, in common with his fellow-countrymen, might have enjoyed—forsakes his home, his country, and his friends, embraces poverty and hardship, endures contumely, and is often, alas! ill-used by some of his own “children”! Should not the Magistrate more particularly side with such a man as this? And lest you, Sir, might be induced to think that I am over-colouring my picture, I may tell you that my Salary, throughout several years of heavy service, was only £30. and that I have often been beaten and ill-treated, and my blood shed by a portion of my large family of unnatural “children”.—*My work, for them, I leave for others to shew.*—

I purposely set aside viewing the case in another strong light, that, *of its being made*, (in addition to the foregoing), *against his Minister*; against the person appointed to watch over his soul as well as his body—lest I should (by some) be accused of unduly magnifying the Office of the Ministry.—

Again:—*in reference to my own peculiar situation here among this people and Tribe*. And here, I think, I have only to remind you, Sir, of a few well-known truths; for, fortunately for this part of my letter, you have been long enough in this country, and in these Southern parts, to bear me out in much of what I shall here say—namely, that this tribe (the Ngatikahununu), was, till very lately, considered the most ferocious and untractable of all the New Zealand tribes; which their intercourse with whaling ships and with the few unfortunate strangers who had hitherto ventured to exist among them, had rather increased than diminished; and, that their Chiefs were hated by all white men. In fact, I know of but one Chief of importance throughout New Zealand whose name was, perhaps, equally with those of the Chiefs of this large tribe, an object of abhorrence to the generality of whites—namely, that of Te Rauparaha. At that time it was also believed, that the Missionary, whoever he might be, who should be sent here to look after this Tribe, would necessarily have a deal of trouble to endure; trouble, not only as far as concerned himself and family, but also, almost necessarily arising through the resorting hither of Europeans for the purposes of trade and commerce, who would soon follow his steps.—And such, as is well known, has been the case. And how was it met? Why by the present vilified individual throwing himself into the gap, and (often at the risk of his own life) standing up for Order and Justice, (whether between Native and Native, or whiteman and whiteman,)—sometimes, as a Master Guardian and Father, and sometimes (from the sheer necessity of the case) as a *Native Chief*, or even as a Magistrate, though *without legal authority*. Yet, with the *sanction and approval of all authorities*. Hence it is that there has been as little crime here in these parts, and as good order as in more highly civilized and highly-privileged communities. Time would fail me, were I to attempt to notify particularly to you, all those many and striking cases in which, during a close residence of upwards of eight years, I have been successfully concerned; and for some of which I have had the repeated thanks of the local Government, and of not a few of the settlers.

Hence you will, Sir, perceive, that I have been called into no small nor easy Office, as Conservator of the Peace among this people, and among many other equally lawless residents. Nor is what I have been able to accomplish a small matter; nor could I have accomplished such merely

by fair words, or by the authority only (however proper) of British Law alone. You may try it now, the ground has been prepared for you; but in those days to which I have alluded, such would have been (as I once told a whaler), equally as vain an attempt as to lance a whale with a pen-knife; or to bind Samson with green withs.²⁸⁴—You have, I believe, Sir, already more than once, spoken approvingly of the order which you found in this large District; this, I believe, you will still readily allow. If, then, this once ferocious and untractable Tribe, and their lawless visitors and residents, have been brought into anything like Order, through the exertions of one poor unassisted individual—allow, that *the manner* through which such order has been attained (through now, perhaps, both severe & unadvisable), to have been just that which was suitable and needful for those times, and commensurate to the end. If you allow this, (and I cannot myself see how you can reasonably refuse to do so), the necessary inference therefrom is, that it was highly improper for one of my “children” to prefer a charge against me for endeavouring to preserve that Order after the manner I had always hitherto followed, and which had ever proved eminently successful; seeing, too, that no other way or manner of maintaining Order was then at hand. This, I further think, will yet be made more plain, when you shall have read what follows.—

I come now, Sir, to the second part of my Letter, in which I proposed to consider what I have termed “*the illegality of such proceedings*”, or in other words, their *not* being in strict conformity with the letter of the Colonial Ordinance.

In the “*Fines for Assaults Ordinance*”, it is enacted:—“When any person shall be convicted before any police Magistrate, or any two Justices of the Peace, of an assault, and it shall appear, upon the evidence of a credible witness (other than the party assaulted), that such assault was wanton and unprovoked, and attended with bodily injury to the person assaulted, and where in any such case a fine shall have been imposed upon the offender, it shall be lawful for such Police Magistrate or Justices as aforesaid, when it shall appear to him or them proper that compensation be made for the injury inflicted, to award to the party injured, such portion of the fine so levied, as to them shall seem meet. Provided always that the sum so to be awarded shall not in any case exceed one half of the fine levied.”—That you, Sir, acted upon this Ordinance there can be no doubt, because you stated that “half of the fine” (the very maximum) would be paid to the plaintiff.”

Now it appears to me, that there are, at least, three things to be found, before that any decision can be legally made:—

- 1st. The assault must be proved to have been “*wanton and unprovoked*.”
- 2nd. “And attended with *bodily injury*.”
- 3rd. And proved “upon the evidence of a credible witness (other than the party assaulted).”—

I will now proceed to show that *none* of these three absolutely necessary things were found on the day of hearing:—and this I purpose doing (as before) as if the whole charge of assault were true.—

1. The assault, the complainant stated, took place about the last day of August, (or 1st of September) last. The cause, the gross provocation which led to the assault, I stated plainly to the Court, and I am not aware that the

284 Judges 16:7 And Samson saith unto her, “If they bind me with seven green withs....”

complainant attempted to contradict a single particular thereof. I stated that, in November 1851, the complainant purchased some cattle; and, not knowing how to manage them, had enticed my two household Natives, who well knew how to do so, to leave me, and to live with him. That those two natives I had brought with me from the Bay of Islands in the year 1844, and that one of them had been living with me from the year 1835, I having, in fact, brought him up from his childhood.—That this Native had often promised never to leave me (he being also a slave redeemed from death by the Mission), and that I had consequently taught him, and got him taught, many useful arts—such as Printing, Bookbinding, Carpentry, Glazing, Painting, Tent-making, Cooking, &c.,—which made him of very great use to me, both at home and when travelling; and through which, and his own letters to my parents and family, they had, for several years, shewn him great kindness.—That in consequence of their abruptly leaving me and my family, we were often badly off for domestic help.—That, on my arrival at Te Aute, in February, 1852 (on my return from visiting Patea,) I found a note from Mrs. Colenso (with whom I had left instructions to forward some food to meet me there, as I knew I should be in want after my long mountain journey), in which she informed me of her having done so, but only at a very great exertion and inconvenience, from her having no domestic help, which she had felt the more from both herself and the children having been seriously unwell.—That, I then informed the complainant's three Brothers (with other of his relations) of this; and that they then expressed their sorrow at their eldest brother's conduct, and promised to remonstrate with him upon his keeping my two servants, (which, as you well know, is, in the Native estimation, a much more serious offence than it is with us, one that has often led to war and loss of human life here in these parts.)—That, they did so almost directly, but that he refused to listen to them.—That, in the month of March, I, being at Te Waipukurau, (and about departing upon my usual long Autumnal journey of 9–12 weeks throughout the district), wrote a note to the Complainant, desiring him not to continue to hold my domestics.—That, he also took no notice of this note.—That, I subsequently wrote him a long, and, as I believe, a proper Christian Letter, from Manawatu, upon the impropriety of his conduct, again desiring him to return my domestics.—That, to this Letter, also, he paid no attention.—That, in his thus treating me, he had caused a large majority of the Christian Natives to be greatly grieved at his conduct.—That, several of them had, from time to time, remonstrated with him thereupon; and that he, consequently, had left their company, and endeavoured to form a schism among them.—That, I had never been so treated by a Native before.—That, in June last, shortly after my return from my long journey, (at which time my two domestics returned, but not at, or through the request or wish of the Complainant—far from it,) I had heard from several Christian Natives, upon whose word I could rely, that the Complainant was in the habit of going from place to place, saying, in public, (both to white men and Natives) many things against me, for which he had often been reproved by some of the N. Teachers and others, but to no purpose.—That, I found he was in the habit of continually writing to my own two returned domestics, not to heed me, but to look to him, with many other such words.—That, in July he called at my place during my absence, and spent a Sunday there; and that, on my return, I found my two domestics considerably changed for the worse.—That, I knew of his having enticed them again to leave me, and of

their having partly promised to do so.—That, I consequently, sent him and his little party word, through his own brother, the N. Teacher of this village, not to come on my premises again, without my permission.—That, in July, when at the Te Tamumu village, I was informed by several native Teachers, that the Complainant had stated that I was afraid to meet him; that he, the complainant, had often gone to the different villages where I was, but that I was afraid to see him.—That, this false statement irritated me, especially as I saw some of the Christian natives ready to believe it, which they were in a measure led to do, through my patient forbearance towards him.—That, I found, that he, the Complainant, had engaged the Heathen Chief, Te Hapuku (a near relation) to espouse his cause, and to aid him in again getting away my two domestics.—That, on (or about) the first day of September, I being just going to finish pruning the trees in my garden, in which I was assisted by one of those two domestics, and having taken my pruning-knife in hand, went to the front garden gate to call him.—That, there I met Ahipene Tururu, (whom I had not before that day seen), who informed me that the person whom I had been calling from the gate, was, with his companion, down at the side of the river engaged with the complainant, who, with his party, had recently landed thither.—That, on hearing this, I went there.—That, I accosted them, the strangers, 5 or 6 in number, with “Whence are you?”—That, they turned their backs towards me, and returned no answer.—That, I asked again, “Are you from Patangata?”—That, they did not speak.—That, I again enquired, “Did not Micah, your teacher, tell you that I had prohibited your coming hither?”—That, they answered not.—That, I then accosted the complainant, (who was sitting on the ground behind a thick bush of rushes, with his head between his knees, and his large blue flushing jacket over his ears,) saying, “Art thou Wi Tipuna?”—That, he returned no answer.—That, I again put the same question, and that he still remained silent.—That, I then upbraided him with his ungrateful conduct (for both myself and Mrs. Colenso had done much for him in medicine and diet, and actual attendance,) reminding him particularly with his oft repeated statements of my being afraid to see him, and of my having sent him word not to come upon my premises, and that in his now coming in this open way, it was, in their (the Native) estimation, identically the same as a challenge to a fight.—That, I did not wish to fight with him; and that therefore, I sent him away—ordering him, at the same time, to go.—That, this order to go, I repeated six several times.—At the conclusion of which, the assault (the “one kick”)—sworn to by him, was said to have been committed.—

Now, Sir, I ask, in the name of common sense, whether such an assault committed under such circumstances can be by anyone construed to have been both “*wanton and unprovoked*.”?

2. The Ordinance further enacts that such assault must not only be both wanton and unprovoked, but “*attended with bodily injury to the person assaulted*.”—And here, under this head, a very few words will, I think, suffice to shew, that no bodily injury whatever was inflicted, or *could have been caused by such an assault*. For, from the complainant's own statement, *the whole assault amounted to one kick*. Now the probable maximum of “*bodily injury*” *one kick*, given by myself (a man of very inferior physical power, with my foot clothed with such soft shoes as I am well-known always to wear at home,) could inflict upon the person of a hardy tattooed New Zealander, clothed in a

heavy blue flushing jacket, and other under garments, I confess I am not skilled enough in dynamics to determine, I willingly leave it for those who are.—But he, the Complainant, also swore that the one kick was given him “on his head”!! and that, too, in a base, cowardly way, namely “on the hinder part” of the same. My reply to *this*, I will defer to the conclusion of my letter, and will only here ask, whether you, Sir, really believed that portion of his statement although made upon oath?—

3. The Ordinance further requires that all such assault—“wanton and unprovoked” and “causing bodily harm”—must also “*appear upon the evidence of a credible witness other than the party assaulted*.” And here I shall unavoidably have to trespass a little longer upon your time and attention. And first, with reference to the words of the Ordinance—“credible witness”; this can only refer to either the probability of the evidence given, or to the character of the witness himself:—it being an ancient axiom that “things are made credible either by the known condition and quality of the utterer, or by the manifest likelihood of truth in themselves.” Now, the “manifest likelihood” of any unassisted sane and sober white man, living solitarily and far away from help and friends, first arousing all the evil passions of a fierce New Zealand Chief, and that, too, before several of his own people, and then kicking him on the head, appears so very improbable that we cannot willingly yield assent thereto. How very much more averse, then, must our minds be from assenting to “the manifest likelihood” of such a thing being done by a Missionary to the heathen, of nearly 20 years standing!! So that the *credibility* sought for must be found in the character, or “*known condition and quality of the utterer*” which is, I apprehend, what the Ordinance means in these words—“*credible witness*.”

Now the one witness who (as it appeared to me) rather unwillingly came forwards, upon his being repeatedly called, (although present, and standing next to the complainant from the opening of the Court,) was Ahipene Tururu, concerning whom I have something, Sir, to state, which, if I am not mistaken, is not altogether unknown to you. And the few facts which I have to record concerning him, I will make, as before in reference to the complainant:—1st. as to his general character fitness for a witness against his Missionary; and 2nd. as to his statements in Court before you.—A few years ago this young man, with his Mother and Sisters, became candidates for Baptism; after some considerable time spent in preparatory Instruction, the day fixed for their Baptism was Sunday, February 9th, 1851. Great part of the preceding week was occupied in instructing them, during which period, the son, Tururu, went with some others to Ahuriri, to sell some Flax, which they had prepared, wherewith to purchase English articles of dress to wear on the approaching occasion. When near to Ahuriri, he, Tururu, stopped the canoe, and deliberately poured salt water through the middle of every bundle of his Flax, in order to increase its weight, against the remonstrance of some who were with him. He sold the wetted Flax to Mr. Villiers, who paid him for it, not detecting the imposition. On their return to Te Awapuni, his companions, struck with his conduct at such a solemn time, informed me of it; and I, when I found it to be true, immediately sent him word that I should *not* Baptise him. He returned such an answer as I had (in part) expected—that, “*if he fell, all should fall with him*”! which evil plan, however, he failed in effecting.—For some time after I would not see him; at last I consented again to receive him

as a Candidate, provided he would take a letter to Mr. Villiers from me, acknowledging his fraud, paying him (Mr. Villiers) whatever proper compensation he might require, and bringing back a certificate from him to me, to assure me of his having done so. To these conditions, Tururu, seeing there was no alternative, consented. I have now Mr. Villiers’ note—thanking me, and informing me of his having been satisfied. Tururu was again admitted a Candidate, and subsequently Baptised. About this time, his wife (who had lived a most miserable life with him) died; and soon after he wished me to marry him to a young woman of Petani. For a long time I refused, knowing how he had ill-treated his late wife, and in so doing got into no little difficulty. At length I gave way, and about a year ago I married him to his present wife. About 6 weeks back he committed adultery and incest with a child named Ramari, a sister of his former wife, for which he has justly been put down by the N. Teachers. He is (I believe) the only Baptised male Native of our Church dwelling at Pakowhai—the village where his Heathen relations and the French Popish Priest reside; and during the last 8–9 months I have rarely ever seen him at Church or School. As a universal liar, I regret to say, he is well-known among the Natives generally.—

In his Deposition and manner in Court, I noticed several things, some of which would not have failed to attract your attention.—On your administering the Oath, (and observing, that he was the same person to whom you had both administered and explained the solemn nature of an oath at your Court held at Te Waipukurau a week before, where, too he was an evidence against some European) you desired him to commence and proceed;—this, I think, you repeated 3 or 4 times. At last he said—It is even as the complainant has stated. You again desired him to relate the assault with its circumstances; he did so; much as the complainant had done, (whom he had heard) but with this material difference—that I had kicked him on the right cheek, pointing with his hand to the spot between his eye and his ear! Puhara, the heathen Chief, who also dwells at Pakowhai, who was present, immediately exclaimed, (in order to correct him, his near relation) “*No, no; it was on the back of the head*.”—If I recollect aright, I asked him two or three questions:—Whether there was not a bush of rushes between me and the Complainant? Whether (in his opinion) the Complainant could see me kick him? And, whether he, the witness, had seen me do so? To all of which he answered affirmatively. (I should have asked him a great many questions, as I had previously stated my intention of doing), through which I felt persuaded that I should either elicit the truth, or completely shake the value of his testimony as a witness; but when I found that I could only do so in an indirect way, through yourself, I declined to ask any more.) About this time, another native, named Pahoro, (a heathen) and one of that same party who was with the complainant on the day in question, said, out loudly, that he, the witness—“Ahipene could not see from where he was the kick I gave to the complainant.” This blunt exclamation (made, I have no doubt, in anger, at the witness’ saying that I had “kicked the Complainant on the right cheek” and so departing from their deeply devised and well concocted story), is not far from the truth. For both Ahipene and Cranmer, not being of the party, were a good distance to the left of the Complainant and his party; and that they should have been then separate, is, as you must know, quite in accordance with New Zealand etiquette. Ahipene also stated, on oath, (following the Complainant),

that I had lifted my foot and leg *very high from the ground* in kicking him. Now Cranmer, the eldest son of Te Hapuku, (who had often been called upon to come forward and give his testimony, but was not a very long while forthcoming) stated, before you, (though *not* on oath) that the *complainant could not see me kick him*; and that *I did not lift my foot high from the ground*, describing, at the same time, how I had moved it, so as to scarcely allow the toe of the shoe to be seen by a sitter; (and yet between the Complainant and myself was a thick bush of rushes!!)—and that, when he and Ahipene heard me (subsequently) and during our altercation, mention *their* names as my witnesses—(i.e. to tell the Christian natives the truth of the affair) they immediately walked away.—

In my early days I often attended Courts of Justice; I have seen credible and ignorant, extenuating and prevaricating witnesses, and I know how such have been (and are, at home) dealt with. If this “*one sworn witness*”, Ahipene Tururu, is entitled to the name of a “*credible*” one, in such a case, too, then I have yet to learn what a credible witness is.—I trust, however, that I have stated sufficient to shew, to any impartial person, that “*the known condition and quality of the utterer*,” both before and at the time of hearing, proves, that he, Ahipene Tururu, was *not* a “*credible witness*” in this case; which was what I took upon myself to do.—

I have still a circumstance or two to notice connected with the foregoing:—when the Complainant, after our altercation, went on to Ahuriri, he told several persons there both whites and Natives, a very different story from what he declared before you upon oath; *then* he made many *great* additions, which almost went to shew, that he had been maliciously waylaid by me, and set upon with intent to murder, &c.! This he also related on his return inland; and much of this was indignantly contradicted by some of those very persons who were present. Again, on his return from Ahuriri, he went to Te Hapuku’s house to see him, and told him his version of the affair; Cranmer (no friend of mine) was present, and *denied the truth of the worst of the Complainant’s statements to his face!* Now, Cranmer himself told me that only a few days afterwards. Again, he, the Complainant, *publicly* told me (when at his Village a few weeks afterwards) what he had previously and constantly told to all present—that it was only through the medicines outwardly applied and inwardly taken, which the whites at Ahuriri had promptly and kindly supplied and applied, that he had recovered from the horrible ill-usage which I had given him!—Not a word, however, of this kind appeared in his deposition before you. Again, when I had more than once in open Court, requested, that my two runaway domestics (who had gone to Ahuriri with the Complainant and his party), should come forward as witnesses, the Complainant arose from his seat, and very significantly said—“*Kua korero maua ko Hamuera, a, e mea ana tera, ka ware ia ki taua korero.*” (In English—Myself and Samuel have conversed together, and he says that he has forgotten all about the matter.) *I* understood this *well*. Samuel, the native whom I had brought up from childhood, who had lived with me nearly 18 years, and who knew *well* the nature of an oath—Samuel, who lives with the Complainant, and on whom the Complainant had principally relied—now, that the hour of hearing was come, shrank from taking a false oath before my face; and, unwilling to injure his new and quondam friend, by telling the truth, had managed to forget all about it!!—So, also, when (after Cranmer’s name had been repeatedly called

upon as a witness, and before that Ahipene had been sworn) I said, that there were several others who were also present; and someone remarked that Ahipene (who had all along been standing in Court by the Complainant’s side, waiting, no doubt) was one of them. The Complainant again significantly remarked, “*Ae, kua korero maua ko Ahipene.*” (Literally, in English—“Yes, we have conversed together.”) I knew very well what was contained in this (to you) simple and straight-forward sentence.—

It is a well-known fact, that the Complainant and the whole party who were present on the day of our altercation have for some time past dwelt together, and their constant talk has been, their going before you on your arrival, what they would say, and what they hoped to get; while I, on the contrary, *have never once conversed with any one* of all who were present, concerning the matter of that day. I assure you, Sir, that I look upon the confusedness of the witness, and the striking variation of his statement as to “the kick”, and the inability of the others to come forward, as a remarkable manifestation of the Providence of God in my behalf.—

Now, Sir, if such be the merits of the case, if all that I have written herein is wholly true, without any over-colouring or extenuation, and you have it in your power to make all enquiry into those portions which may be new to you, is it any wonder that I should *refuse* to pay the fine of Three Pounds, which you were pleased to inflict; But, when I again state, *in addition to the foregoing*, (what I stated before you at Ahuriri) *that the Complainant and his witness have both wilfully and maliciously perjured themselves, in swearing that I kicked him upon the head*, I feel assured, that every Englishman believing my word, how much soever he may be disposed to honour and obey Law of his Country, will feel with me—that I acted rightly in refusing to pay the fine.

You will, however, Sir, bear in mind, that I told you, that while I conscientiously refused to pay the fine, (the more so, seeing that he, the Complainant, was to have half of it) I would not in any way obstruct the Law—the alternative, whatever it might be—being put in force. If to apprehend me, and then send me a prisoner to Wellington, I would submit, and call upon my Native friends to remain quiet, (for otherwise, *you had not the power to do it*;) or, if to distract the few things left from the late calamitous fire, (which destroyed our dwelling-house and out-houses and nearly all their contents only three days before) no one should hinder their being taken.—

I believe, and there are others who believe with me, that had this complaint been made at an earlier period, or had not certain humiliating and recent events concerning myself, taken place (including the fire), the statements of both the Complainant and his witness would not have been made in the words and manners in which they were—if *made at all*. In fact, I am assured by several Christian natives, (whom I know that you respect and would believe,) that the Complainant would not have appeared before you, had it not been for the constant urging of Te Hapuku, and one or two Europeans!—

No misfortune, however, which has yet befallen me, has moved me so much as this—the *false and malicious swearing of these two persons*; and *above all your receiving their testimony before my own*. Perhaps, as a Magistrate, you may consider, that you could not help doing so, seeing theirs was sworn. Be it so; still, Sir, I feel, I keenly feel, that

I—who have been for so many years in the very van of the battle, fighting for the Cause of Order—am now trampled down and degraded through that very Order which I have long striven to uphold. I believe, (and I feel thankful in such a belief) that there is not a *Pakeha* dwelling in the whole of this large district (although perhaps, more of them may be ranked as enemies than as friends,) who would not rather take my word than that of ten *sworn* Natives. If, Sir,—allow me to say,—if you really believe, that Natives will not, or can not, prevaricate because they have been sworn, I beseech you to throw aside all such belief; or, if you retain it, you will eventually find the truth of what I say—that the majority of the Natives *cannot* speak the truth whether sworn or not, more especially in any matter affecting themselves and their tribe, and much more so when there is any prospect of *money*-getting; and therefore the *only* way of eliciting *truth* from them, is by examining him *apart*, and by a *copious cross-questioning*.—

I have already written vastly more than I originally intended, and yet I have more which I could say but I must stop. One word, however, I will yet add—namely, the sooner you abolish (or get abolished) the practice of handing over to these natives *the fine*, or half of it, whatever it may be, (unless in such *extreme* cases as the Ordinance, A.11, already quoted specifies,) *the better for them and for the settlers*. For to them, time is nothing; and to worry in a thousand ways, any poor white man whom they have ill-will against, or from whom they hope to extort money (always keeping clear themselves of any overt act such as would lay them open to the Law,) no one knows better than they how to perform, being accustomed to delight in the art of tormenting from their infancy. All writers upon this people, who have dared to think for themselves, (I may almost add, and all thinking residents, too,) have observed, that, in addition to their being a nation of liars, the darling idol of the Native heart is *revenge*. The Gospel, Sir, has indeed lessened the outward shew of that revenge; and in some few instances, broken its power; but, be assured, that the fiery spirit is still there, latent, it may be, but ready at any time to be roused and break forth with fearful energy. This is their ancient distinctive *Maori* vice; engrafted upon which is their present besetting sin—their love of Money; for which, even though they may not need it, they will, condescend to say or do any thing, however false or mean. Now let them only be assured, as they already more than surmise, that both their darling vices—revenge, and lust of gold—can be gratified in an apparently fair and open way, if they will be but cunning and careful, and you will soon find them hard at work themselves, giving the Settlers plenty of uneasiness and abundance of work.—

May I be allowed to request you to shew this letter to your two brother Magistrates residing here—Messrs. Alexander and Patterson.—And, hoping, that the warmth of my injured feelings, together with my not being well, and yet hurriedly desirous that you should get these few remarks of mine as early as possible, in consequence of your soon leaving this neighbourhood, may not have unintentionally betrayed me into any expression approaching to disrespect—which I distinctly and wholly disavow.

I am Sir,

Yours very faithfully
William Colenso.

1853 January 31: to the CMS secretaries²⁸⁵

Church Mission Station
Waitangi, Hawkes Bay

January 31st 1853

Secretaries,
C. M. House
Salisbury Sq.,
London.

My Dear Sirs,

1. I little thought when I wrote you my last Letter (dated the 13th ulto.), that I should have so soon to write to you again, and that, too, concerning more trouble and disaster.—

2. But so it is:—a few days only after the date of my last I was attacked with severe Rheumatism in my left face, ear, & teeth, which continued, spite of all my applications local and internal, upwards of 3 weeks, causing me to spend a doubly melancholy Christmas and New Year's day.—

3. Nor was this all, for on Saturday the 8th. instant, about 3 pm, having less pain than heretofore, I was in my little detached Study in the end of my garden writing. As I wrote I thought I smelt something burning, but, as the Natives are almost always setting fire to the bush on all sides, I took little notice of it. The smell however becoming stronger, I dropped my pen & went into the garden; here I saw smoke coming from the direction of the dwelling house, toward which I immediately went. On my way thither I heard Mrs. Colenso (who was running toward the Study by another path,) screaming out that the house was on fire! And, almost immediately, on clearing the trees I saw, that the fire had already got possession of the roof, [2] and, *that there was no hope!!* I sickened at the sight; but rushing in, we, aided by two native girls, did, what we could. In a few moments some Natives from the neighbouring Village, (all who were there,) who had seen the fire perhaps before ourselves, had also joined us. But, owing to the extreme dryness of the materials, and the very high W. wind which unfortunately blew, (the fire, also, originating at the extreme W. end of the building,) we had scarcely 5 clear minutes for saving any portion of the property within.—And what we saved is scarcely worthy of mention in comparison with what has been destroyed. We only saved:—*from the dwelling house*,—Mrs. Colenso's workbox & desk, a barrel organ, a *part* of a Table, 1 little worktable, a few chairs, an old Sofa, the *loose* bedding which was in use upon two bedsteads, our cloaks, the drawers of 2 chests of drawers, with most of the Clothes which happened to be in them, 2 footstools, a hearth rug, Fender & fire irons:—*from the Surgery*;—(of Medicines in use & on the shelves—out of nearly 200 bottles and Jars, only,) scales and weights, 1 Bott. of Laudanum; 1 ditto Carb. Ammonia, 1 pot of opium, and a bottle of Sulphur—and a box of sundry medicines not in use:—*from the Carpenters Shop*;—a very few tools which happened to be in the Tool Chest, (& *not*, unfortunately, of the most useful ones) a Vice, 2 saddles, and a box containing a few Medicines.—The fire burnt so rapidly, being heightened considerably by the violent wind which blew, which so filled the rooms & neighbouring air with the densest smoke and burning heat; that [3] we were obliged & quickly to abandon all hopes of saving any thing more. In less than 30

minutes all the buildings were down, although the fire burnt strongly until the next day, and, in some spots, till Monday Morning.

4. Having saved what little we could from the Dwelling house, we hastened to the Study, for the safety of which we now had considerable fears. I have already stated, that this little building was at the end of the garden, between which & the dwelling house were a number of Apple and other fruit trees, interspersed with living screens of bamboos, willow, elder & acacia trees, some of which were upwards 20 feet high; (without these living screens we should not have had any fruit during the whole of our residence here, owing to the nearness of the place to the sea, and the violent winds which often prevail.) With a heavy heart and faltering step I tottered into the study—for it contained *much* besides books & papers, (there being all my dry and Natural Specimens. Printing Press, Type &c., &c.) and I feared the worst. In my extremity I momentarily knelt and implored the Almighty to spare *this Zoar*—this little one—already, as it were, beyond all human aid. By this time the *few* Natives, mostly women, who thronged the door, were very clamorous, shouting the utter impossibility of saving the study, and entering, demanded what they should carry out. The danger was indeed most imminent: the flames and heat borne by the wind being so great that we could hardly stand at the study door, and the immense flakes [4] of fiery material which flew about falling every where and setting fire to the dry grass, &c., on all sides, fearfully increased the danger. While Mrs. Colenso was getting every blanket & woollen rag, even to the saved Hearth Rug, dipped in the neighboring Creek, wherewith to cover the thatched roof, the Natives were busy in lopping off branches from some of the trees for the same purpose, while I (being obliged to make a *hurried* selection,) brought out my desk, boxes of Mss., Register Books & Communion Plate,—a few extra Medicines, & a copy of Encyclopædia Britannica,—while some kindly officious native upsetting my Type, left it to save the *Cases*! At this moment the cry was raised of the Study roof being on fire! I rushed out, and, Oh! My GOD! It was indeed the case!! On fire in *two* places; up above our reach burning rapidly away. That moment I shall *never* forget. With my heart sunk below Zero, and eyes full of tears, I silently cried to GOD, and with the energy of despair, threw up a wet blanket towards the flaming roof. The wind returned it upon me. I threw it up again; it was again blown back. The natives, said, 'twas useless; the fire increased so fast.—I again threw it up; and oh! as if spread out by angels' hands, the wet blanket opened fully and covered the large patch of flame, which it kept under until a boy had mounted by the chimney, (our ladder and all our timbers & poles being then, burning.) [5] The second patch which was still blazing away, I now succeeded in putting out with a garden rake. We now covered the roof with the wet woollen articles, and leafy boughs, and, although we experienced much anxiety, even until after midnight, this building was preserved. Blessed be the name of the LORD! The fences were now burning rapidly communicating the fire by cross lines to every dry thing which would burn, of which, alas! at this (our driest) season there was no lack. Seeing no other way of stopping the fire we broke down some of the fences, in which work, including that of extinguishing, I was, although worn out and in pain, employed till near midnight—the natives having left us before Sunset.

5. The few articles which we had saved we conveyed into the end of the weather-board store, (a building roughly boarded, not lined nor even planed,) in which we also took

up our abode. Here we spent a melancholy Sunday; not having saved so much as a single cup or plate, knife or spoon, a bit of salt, or any article of food.

6. Early on Monday morning I dispatched a Native to the Europeans living at Ahuriri (6 miles off), from whom we got a little salt, and a *part* of a steel wheat mill (they not having any flour); and having in the meanwhile, got out some Earthenware and Ironmongery, and some little stoves, (which being [6] supernumerary were fortunately apart in the weather-boarded store,) in the course of a day or two we got into a kind of homely “bush” housekeeping, feeling our inconveniences, but thankful that they were no worse—that GOD had in mercy remembered us in our low Estate.—

7. By this unfortunate fire I (as well as the Society) am a *great* loser. All the many Household and domestic articles of Furniture of nearly 20 years gathering are gone! besides many stores,—such as,—Tea, Coffee, Sugar, Salt, Arrowroot, Sago, Flour, Oatmeal, Rice, Biscuit, Wine, Hams, Bacon, Pork, dried fish, preserved meats, &c., in tins, Oil, Turpentine, Candles, pieces of Calico, Sheetting, Print, &c., &c., as well as all kinds of Wearing Apparel; about 100 vols. of Books, Silver Watch, ditto spoons, Clock, 2 steel wheat mills, new Harness, all my *wet* Natural Collections in Spirits & Acid, &c., *many* Medicines, Carpenter's, Sawyer's, & Mason's tools, a quantity of sawn & seasoned timber—many fruit trees, including upwards of 200 fine 2-year old grafts and plants:—altogether (and *exclusive* of the value of my Natural Collections, fruit trees, & plants,) my loss is, to say the least of it, above £300. Your loss, in addition to that of the premises, is that of the Medicines, the Pulpit & Desk Cloths, a few stores, such as, a bell or two, Slates & slate pencils, the oars and Sail of the Station boat, some extra window sashes [7] unglazed),—but several of the foregoing you have not yet fully paid for.

8. In addition to the dwelling house and portion of the Garden destroyed—there has been also burnt, the little barn behind with its contents, and all the small outhouses and offices, and a great deal of the house field and garden fences. The fire burnt with great fury, insomuch that all glass, and every brass article has been remelted, including even heavy bells of 12–14 lbs weight. I believe that there is nothing whatever, which can be of any Service hereafter, save the bricks in the 2 chimnies, which are still standing.—

9. Another article of loss (though not ours) is a lot of new American Muskets, (18 or 20,) which some years ago I recovered from these Natives (including Wiremu Tipuna) which they had plundered from the U.S. brig “Falco.” The powder (3 or 4 casks) which I had also got back from them was in the bee-house in the garden, whence Noah Huke, in the early part of the fire, courageously carried it in his arms to a more distant spot, burying it in the earth.—

10. But “deep calleth unto deep” as the Psalmist saith, and this I had yet more fully to prove. Before however I relate this, I would necessarily digress a little:—About 4 days before the [8] calamitous fire, Mr. McLean, (the Government Land Agent & Paymaster, & principal Magistrate for this district,) had arrived at Ahuriri, whither nearly all the Natives at the time of the fire were; that day being the day in which the remainder of the purchase money of Ahuriri was paid. On the day preceding the fire, I had received a vague kind of intimation, from Micah Iwikatea, the N. Teacher at Patangata, to the effect, that his eldest brother, Wiremu Tipuna, had, at the instigation of Te Hapuka, the Popish Priest, and others, been induced to go to

Mr. McLean and to prefer a charge against me for assault!! This, however, knowing how Natives magnify things, I took little notice of. On the Sunday (the 9th) I heard, that W. Tipuna had gone again to the Magistrate; and, on the next day (Monday), I was informed, that he had "*sworn*" to his statements, &c.;—and, at night, Micah (who had also been to Ahuriri) returned to fetch me to attend the Magistrate Court! I told Micah, that I was quite willing to do so, but, that I required to be summoned thither, either by a proper Officer, or in writing. Early on Tuesday morning Micah again returned to me, bringing a note from Mr. McLean requesting my attendance thither on that day. I was unwell in bed, (or, rather, in a blanket,) when he came, suffering much from Influenza, which was now very prevalent & unusually severe. I, however, made an effort, got up, & went with [9] him to Ahuriri, Noah Huke, the N. Teacher at the Station accompanying us. There I received much *private* kindness from Mr. McLean, who told me, that the Europeans were so much grieved at the case against me having been so pressed upon his notice, (*at such a time too*), contrary to their repeated requests to the plaintiff, and his friends the Heathen Chiefs, that they had all left the place, being not willing to remain to hear anything of it. (I had myself met several strolling away in different directions.) And, that even his brother Magistrate (Mr. Alexander) had gone away, declaring, that he could not sit to hear it. And, that Tareha, and all the Christian & friendly Chiefs had strictly forbidden any of their people from attending. The Court being opened, Wiremu Tipuna (concerning whom his brother Micah had, on my way hither, told me, that he, (Micah) had trembled yesterday from head to foot, and became sick at hearing him take his oath & relate his statements,) soon appeared, with Te Hapuku, Puhara, Morena, Te Hei, and other minor Heathen Chiefs, and again related his charge; the truth of which I denied, stating fully the *whole* matter to the Magistrate, (often interrupted by Te Hapuka, Morena, & others.) His statement, however being corroborated (in a way!) by *his* witness, I was to my utter surprise fined *Three Pounds!!!* Which I refused to pay, let the consequences be what they [10] may. Recovering from my surprise, I talked seriously (for I was most indignant,) before the Court and in Native to the Magistrate, telling him, among many other things, that it was through my exertions that he then quietly sat there that day on Government Land as a Magistrate. At Evening I returned, with my faithful Christian friend Noah Huke, to the remnant of what was once my home, weary & in pain in body & mind; with feelings not unlike those of Elijah when he sat in the wilderness under the juniper tree.—

11. During the remainder of this week my disorder raged so high—being more than once delirious—that I scarcely expected to recover. By Sunday (the 16th) through GOD's goodness, the worst of the malady was passed, and now Mrs. Colenso & the little child, who had hitherto escaped, were both badly afflicted with it. I scarcely knew what to do; but GOD has, in mercy, brought us through this trying time, this fiery trial.—

12. On my way back from Ahuriri, and during my illness, I greatly wished to write a Letter to the Magistrate; respecting the untoward matters which had called me to Ahuriri; and more particularly to place on record the *truth* respecting the same, that the reason why I refused to pay the fine levied, might be fully known, but I was not [11] able. However, on my getting better I did so; although not

in so satisfactory a manner as I could wish:—a Copy of which I enclose for your information.²⁸⁶

13. I am, my dear Sirs, *much* poorer than I was when I last wrote,—with prospects much darker. I have been and *am* sorely chastened—“in mind & body” and “estate”—all coming together; but my hope is, with Job's, *stayed upon Him*.—Though HE slay yet will I trust.—“Righteous art thou, O LORD, and true are thy judgements.” I already see an alteration in the Natives towards me; it being one of their old superstitious notions, that a burnt house, or Canoe upset, is caused by the immediate operation of the anger of Te Atua, which, with Mr. McLeans decision, and my grievous Rheumatic pains (not to mention my suspension), all coming together, is quite enough not only to cause them, but also, older Christians to think so.—

14. I suppose, that you will not sanction the rebuilding of another Mission house *here*, and I have a much less desire to remain. Still I *must* do so, as I have no other home, until, at least, I hear from you in answer to my last Letter of Decr. 13th. I intend (D.V.) making the little Study my residence, being apprehensive of expending any more money upon the matter of House building here.

15. And, that I may not omit taking [12] every little ingredient of the cup, some of my friends (?) or, rather, of my co-workers in the Mission field, have been stirred up to write most bitterly of, and to, me. From Mr. Baker, in particular, I have had a most cutting Letter; in which he calls me, “*hypocrite*”—“*apostate*,”—and I can scarcely tell what. I venture to enclose a copy of my letter to him,²⁸⁷ from which you will gain something more of my situation, and of my thoughts respecting it. Of course, when I wrote my letter to him, it was not intended for *your* reading; but, as several matters have happened *since*, and as I wish you to know fully my situation, I now send you a Copy. A *key* I think I have to Mr. Baker's superlative anger, namely in my letter to him when residing at Auckland—unfortunately with him for leaving *Uawa*—pointing out what good Mr. Hadfield did for his Natives, during the many years he was an invalid, by remaining near them—and telling him, that I could not reconcile his two statements, of his being near to death, and yet so exceeding anxious to be Ordained; neither could I see why he should prefer going to the Bay of Islands, to returning to Uawa; unless it were for the residing upon and farming his own land at Waikare:—this plain and faithful speaking of mine, has, I believe, caused him to be *so* angry. I cannot but think how very much my situation may be compared with that of Job's. I told you, in my last, that I had “but *few* friends in N. Zealand;”—in fact, as far as I at present know, Mr. Cole, the Colonial Chaplain at Wellington, a kind and good man, is the most deserving of that appellation.— [13]

16. Two whole months have now elapsed since Mr. Hamlin publicly made known the Bishop's sentence respecting me, during which we have heard nothing concerning Mr. S. Williams; consequently, the Natives have become quite unsettled, caring less and less about Divine Service; notwithstanding, no one has yet joined the Papists. I have done all in my power by letter and word of mouth to strengthen the N. Teachers & their people. The N. Teachers have been twice to me respecting the marriages of several young persons, it is not, however, in my power to answer them satisfactorily. I have lately begged them to

286 WC: Enclosure, No. 1.

287 WC: Enclosure, No. 2.

wait for one more full month; when, if no one comes something must be done. One old dying woman, who had long expressed a desire to be Baptized, but who (from her ignorance, and from her living here close to us,) has been put off, is now at the point of death, & much grieved (with her friends & powerful relations,) at her dying unbaptized. The dead, too, are buried by the N. Teachers. We seem to be living in old times again, when our forefathers were laid under an interdict. Had I followed the *pernicious* “advice” given, and left *Ahuriri*, I am sure the Natives would have been ten times worse. Even my usual little Annual order to the College Press for *Calendars &c.*, for 1853, for the N. Teachers, has been withheld, instead of (as I should have thought) hastening to forward them.—I hope sincerely that if Mr. S. Williams is indeed coming here, he will soon make his appearance. [14]

17. It is now, I believe, 7 weeks since the E.D. Commee. met (as usual) at Turanga. I have not, however, yet heard from the Secretary, nor received what is due to me of my last year’s stipend. I cannot account for this, being so very contrary to all past usage. I feel it the more now in my present situation.—I hope they have not taken upon themselves to withhold it.

18. I have heard that many of the Settlers are expressing much concern upon my account;—some of them (now) thinking that I am hardly dealt with. Others, I hear, have spoken of making a Collection for me; others have proposed, to purchase and present me with a piece of Land on which I could settle, in order to keep me in the District; while I have had it intimated to me by those who are in authority, that, if I memorialize the Governor, they are pretty sure that I shall have a sufficiency of ground granted to me in consideration of what I have done for the Natives. To all, however, I would wish to be deaf, until I hear from you. I hope, my dear Sirs, when you write, whether to the Bishop, to your Secretary Mr. Vidal, or to the Central Commee., that you will write plainly & particularly upon every point, so that there shall be nothing ambiguous, or so as to enable anyone here to act differently to your wishes.—

19. Among the books destroyed in the fire I mourn particularly, Leighton’s works, Bp. Hall’s ditto, Ch. Missy. Records & Registers from the year 1843 [15] inclusive (with the exception of those mentioned in the margin);²⁸⁸ and *all* the Intelligences and several reports; Graham’s Domestic Medicine, ditto, on diseases of females; Life of Bickersteth (only *lately* arrived); D’Aubigne’s Histy of the Reformation; Johnson’s Rambler, ditto Idler; Wilson’s Evidences of Christianity; Jowett’s minor works—such as, Script. Characters, on the LORD’s Prayer, &c., &c.—Fortunately my *most valuable* books were all in the Study. I must not omit to mention, a large box of useful Religious Tracts, in the English, French, Dutch, Spanish, German and Irish languages, the liberal Gifts of the R.T.S. Perhaps you may be able again to supply me with your *own* publications; the few saved happened to be in the Study.—

20. A Case of N. Testaments sent from the B. & F.B. Society through you to me, has very lately arrived at Ahuriri; but hitherto, I have not found means to get it here. The Natives generally suffering much from Influenza, which still prevails; with their wheat, which is more than ripe, still uncut, and no one to cut it.

²⁸⁸ WC: *Record*, pts. 1 & 2, for 1851; *Register* pts. 1 & 2, for 1851, ditto, pts. 1 & 2 for 1849, ditto pt 1 for 1846, ditto pt 2 for 1848, ditto pt 2 for 1850.

February 7 1853.

21. I must now close & send off this packet, as the vessel has arrived and is about to sail. I *little thought*, during my long & arduous struggle uphill in this Country, that I should ever be in such a situation as the present.—I do not mean with reference to the *suspension*, or the decision & fine levied by the Magistrate for I always knew [16] that those powers were, in some degree at least, adverse to me,) so much as to other matters. Mr. McLean has since returned in a very great hurry to the W. Coast, (being sent for by the Governor,) where, I hear, at Rangitikei, some serious disturbance have broken out among the natives, who, after plundering a white man’s house, fired *ball* upon the Magistrates who came to assist! He has not yet pounced upon any of my few things, nor answered my Letter. I almost fear, that he came hither with special instructions how to act; and this I surmise from a few things I have heard & noticed. Among others (Mr. McLean himself informed me,) that Te Hapuku had written repeatedly about it to Wellington both to him & to the Governor, (some of the letters were, *I know*, taken thither, if not written by, the P. Priest,) and I know, that the Government greatly wishes to reduce the Missionary influence as much as possible—the Natives being publicly taught (in the Newspaper published in their language by the Government,) *not* to go to the Missionary concerning anything of a civil or Criminal nature. He also, informed me, (as I have already stated in par. 10.) that his brother Magistrate would not remain in Court to hear the Case:—why? unless he knew from Mr. McLean *how* it had already been predetermined. *I* told Mr. McLean, that had I known it would so have terminated, I would not have come thither. Again: when at Wairarapa last year I was informed by our N. Teacher, that a Gentleman there, a Magistrate, had been telling [17] some of their people, whom they had justly put out of School (for Crime), to appeal to the Government against both the Teachers and myself—that they were British subjects, and *we* could not treat them as slaves,—that we had no power to exclude from Church or Communion, &c.—Now, Mr. McLean only comes here once a Year; he knows nothing (individually) of these Natives, and, it is his sole aim to keep in with and please Te Hapuku & his relations—the *only* principal Chief who is determined to sell *all* the Land. My influence is now, however, *gone*! Should any unfortunate outbreak ever take place, or a vessel founder off, or be wrecked on these shores, I would not now exert myself, as it would be useless, unless it should please the Governor *publicly* to reverse the unhappy decision of Mr. McLean. The Magistrates settled here are powerless; they are just in the situation Mr. Busby was in the Bay of Islands—“a man-o’-war without guns.” The Natives have told me, that they will not listen to them; and they (the Magistrates) knowing their weakness, have told the Chiefs that *they* must settle their own matters among themselves! In a recent case of theft, when some iron was stolen from one of the Magistrates, he sent after it, but could not get it back; *upon* which I sent, got it back, and made the thief take it in person to him, with some baskets of potatoes as a compensation; upon which Mr. Alexander wrote me a note—which I may as well copy for your information.²⁸⁹

22. I quite believe that these [18] Natives, especially the Heathen, will become worse than they have ever yet been. They cannot bear that immense lifting-up which the Government gives them. The advance is unnatural: Nature,

²⁸⁹ WC: Enclosure, No.3.

and *true* Civilization advances by degrees. The evils arising therefrom are not, perhaps, so perceptible, nor so great *in & near towns*, where, in the bulk of the Settlers, they have both an example & a counterpoise.—When I was at Ahuriri, (on the 11th ulto.) a poor Shepherd was fined £4., besides expenses, for *playing* with the loose heathen wife of the heathen Chief Morena; although it was very clear, that the woman was much more in fault than the man. Mr. McLean declared, that he would have the Native females paid as great decorum as the White ones. This is very good in theory and sounds well; but *it cannot be carried out*, as the sequel will shew. I asked the Magistrate permission to speak, which being granted, I addressed both him and the Chiefs present, stating as my opinion, that in *all* cases where Native women *stroll away to the Settlers huts*, inviting, &c., and mischief ensues, the fault should be laid at *her* door, and no compensation given to her, or her people. This of course, was mocked at by the Heathen Chiefs, especially by Morena & Hapuku. Now *I knew* Morena's plan which he had laid; having written to him, in August last, against it. And sure enough, as soon as Mr. McLean had left, he put it in practice, taking another woman to wife, *retaining the former*. Now this [19] second wife, although *unmarried according to British Law*, cannot take another husband, neither would Morena allow her to do so; he has, therefore, committed *bigamy*; which, however, though a grave offence with us, Mr. McLean cannot interfere with! This exclusive system cannot work well long. Especially now that these Natives have seen *me* fined (whom they foolishly thought to be above Law,) they will be more zealous than ever in promoting schemes by which to get money.—Two days ago, I heard of gold having been found *here* in Hawkes Bay near Table Cape! by a person who saw it. This will be a new source of much evil.—On the night of the 4th inst., one of Hapuku's wives (he has eight), destroyed herself, in a fit of shame and jealousy, by strangling. All these things, however varied, only point *one* way.—

23. I, yesterday, heard our N. Teacher, Noah Huke, give two very good and seasonable addresses; that, in the morning, from 1 Cor. xiii. 13; and that, in the evening, from Ps. xxxiv.ii. Unfortunately the Congregation, (although larger than it has been on any Sunday during the new year), scarcely amounted to 30 including Children. I have seen of late, more than ever, the great value of my Teacher's School.

24. I trust, my dear Sirs, that you will not (from what I have herein written & enclosed) suppose, that it is my wish that you should in any way oppose either the Governor or the Bishop,—or [20] your servant Mr. Baker.—Such is very far indeed from being my desire. I have merely stated some facts, (with a few remarks of my own,) that you may know the true state of the whole matter.—

25. In conclusion I have a request to make, which I hope you will grant—especially as you will see how very much I have had of writing lately. Namely, *to get a copy taken for my Father of my Letter to the Magistrate, and sent to him at an early opportunity*. In my Letter to him I have stated that I should make this request to you.—

Hoping to hear fully from you soon—and craving an interest in your prayers, both for myself and *the Natives* of this district—now more than ever needed.—I am,

My Dear Sirs,
Your obliged & attached
Though *unworthy* Servant,
William Colenso.

1853 April 4: to the CMS secretaries²⁹⁰

Church Mission Station,
Waitangi, New Zealand
April 4th 1853

My Dear Sirs,

1. My last Letter to you was dated Jany. 31 and Feby. 7, 1853, which, enclosures, I hope you will safely receive.

2. On the 23rd of March last the Rev. S. Williams arrived here. He took up his residence at Te Pokara, (a small native village about a musket shot from this Station,) where, in consequence of information received by the Natives, preparation had been made for him. On his way hither he spent a week with the Natives inland, chiefly at Te Rotoatara with Wi Tipuna's tribe, to which party (including my 2 runaway domestics,) he administered the Sacrament of the LORD'S Supper.—On his arrival here, at Te Pakonoa, he called to see us, (Mrs Colenso & myself), and remained a few minutes; but neither then nor at any subsequent call, did he speak a word to me about the Natives or our work. In *all* matters he acted as if I were either dead or had never had any thing *whatever* to do with the people! He refused to stay on the Station (although I offered him the use of the Study); neither would he eat with us; we sent him, however, a share of what food we had as he required it. [2]

3. Shortly before his arrival (and during his stay inland, where he remained several days awaiting the Bishop,) we heard—that the Bishop & the Governor were on the way hither from Wellington “coming purposely to drive me off”! At first I paid no attention to the report, although I soon saw that it gradually made a wonderful difference in the manner of the natives towards me; which alienation was greatly increased through the incessant talking of the natives of Te Pakonoa village, who are mostly of the Ngati te Upokoiro Tribe, migrated hither from the Manawatu river, where they were Baptized by the Revd. Messrs. Govett & S. Williams. These Natives had never greatly liked me, principally because of my having put down my old N. Teacher Leonard Te Kawepo, (who is a Chief of that Tribe,) and, because I would not—until last August—admit them to the LORD'S Supper. They were soon joined by all the old “grumblers”—in particular by the Chiefs Christian Takamoana, Thompson Pekapeka, Te Waka Te Kawatini, and Tereha—whose names have often, alas! been mentioned in my past journals with any other mark than that of approbation. They were also informed, or had concluded among themselves, that unless they were now unanimous for driving me off they should not get the incoming Minister to reside *here* among them; and, as with the Civil & Ecclesiastical heads were coming for that [3] purpose, they of course, could not act contrarily. However, on my learning, on the 28th ulto., from a few friendly Natives, that Mr. S. Williams himself had been inciting the Natives to drive me away, I desired them to go immediately to him, and plainly to ask, whether he had ever said such a thing? Which they did, publicly; when he denied having done so; yet allowed to them, (and subsequently to me,) that he had said it would be much better if I would withdraw quietly!!—which, in the Native language especially, means a great deal.—

4. In the afternoon of the 30th ulto. the Governor, Sir George Grey, the Bishop, & several respectable Europeans

290 ATL qMS-0492. Hocken MS vol 63. p.373.

(Hon'ble. Mr. Tallemache, Mr. Valentine-Smith & others,) arrived here at *Te Pakonoa* from Wellington. We had previously heard of their having spent Sunday the 27th. at *Te Waipukurau*;—of their visit to *Te Aute*, where, on the border of the Government Land, a block had been selected for a “College” by the Bishop, and given by the Governor; to which, however, the Native Chiefs were to add an equal sized piece from their side of the boundary;—of the promise of 500 sheep by the Governor;—ditto of *tithes* from Mr. Tallemache, who is to have the adjoining Land;—and ditto of a new Resident Minister from the Bishop, &c., &c. Consequently scarcely any Natives—save a few poor old folk—now [4] cared to see me. Still I must not omit to mention the unexpected kindness from the Popish-protecting Chief Puhara, and also that of the Heathen Chief *Te Hapuku* (although they have for a long while been open enemies of mine), who, this morning, made strong orations to the Bishop when at their village with the Governor, deprecating my removal: this, Puhara, came himself this afternoon to tell me!—Also, a letter from the principal Chief of *Tangoio*, *Tamaiaiwitire*, telling me, that if I was driven away from this place and would go to him, he would give me a piece of Land to live on!—And, that some Natives who had returned from *Ahuriri* brought the Natives here word, that the Magistrates there had publicly expressed their indignation at their most ungrateful conduct towards me.—At Sunset the bell rang for Evening Prayer, when the Bishop, (in passing our hut in his way to the Chapel) called, and abruptly told Mrs Colenso, (I being in the Garden) that my little child should be taken away from me the next morning!!—and that he would call in again after Prayers. On Mrs Colenso's informing me of what the Bishop had said—I sickened to my very soul, and forboded much evil. I, however, fled again to prayers, & prayed for the grace of meekness and quietness, and for deliverance. After prayers, he again called, accompanied by Rev. S. Williams, and examined me [5] until,—I think, past one o'clock the next morning.—It was a sad sad time: I never wish to see the Bishop again, unless it may please GOD to convert him. At first he used a great deal of kind language—that he was “come out of parental love & kindness,” &c., &c., “if I would but be counselled by him,”—which kindness soon displayed itself to mean,—*no hope*—as, *I never should be restored!* He pressed me, over & over again, to consent to his 4 proposals—1. To leave the premises immediately:—2. To go out of the District:—3. To give up my child immediately to the mother:—4. To consent to abide by the Letter of the Central Commee., whatever it might be. To none of them, however, would I consent.

Not to the 1st., because I have no other home, and because I had written to you stating that I should remain here until I heard from you, and, also from the fact of this site not being again wanted for a Mission Station, not to mention the great expense and labor I had incurred upon it.

Nor to the 2nd., that if it should come to that that you would quite disconnect me from your service (which I did not yet quite believe), there is no other place in all N. Zealand so suitable for me to endeavour to gain a livelihood in, as this District, for which, too, I had done so much:—

Nor to the 3rd., because I could not conscientiously put my poor child (although illegitimate) [6] among the Natives to be by them brought up—or, rather, *to die*; seeing they scarcely ever now rear any children, the mother, too, having ever shewn her self quite careless about it; and Mrs Colenso having constantly attended to it—as *its own mother*—from

the early age of 6 months; who had, also, given her opinion, that if *now* given up to the careless natives—the winter too coming on—it must suffer much and inevitably perish:—

Nor to the 4th., because, that no sane person could properly so consent to abide by an *unknown* document; and, because that I had been sent to N. Zealand by *you*, who *alone* had the right to dispose of me;—and, because that I had already written to you fully. Of course the Bishop was, as usual, very angry; especially at my having appealed to you: and, at my saying the premises (ground) was yours: he, stating that the Chiefs had given it *to him!!* whereas the very contrary is clearly expressed in the deed, which Archd. W. Williams and myself drew up in December 1843,²⁹¹ (when I marked out the ground,) and which I have still in my possession. Among other things which he urged upon me was, To go to England to *see Socy.*!—To go to some Colonial town and seek employ as a Printer, &c.—and, among sundry unpleasant questions, he asked me,—“What if I should immediately acquire [7] these premises for Mr. Williams?” To which, in answer, I begged him, for his own sake, to drop that question; as I did not wish him to get greater obliquy among the Settlers. Upon his again & again declaring, that the child should be taken from me in the morning, (for which purpose some of *Wi Tipuna*'s people had come with him,)—although I begged repeatedly with *many* tears, that he would not think of such an unnatural & cruel thing, but to no purpose,—I, in order to prevent such an act, & also, to hinder mischief, consented that the dear infant should go with Mrs. Colenso, to her family near Auckland, (she, herself, being more than willing to continue to look after it,)—to which the Bishop at length assented. (He was now hourly expecting the Auckland vessel hence.) The Bishop also said, that he had seen a Letter I wrote to the N. Teachers at *Wairarapa*, in which I had tried to liken myself to Moses on the hills held up by Aaron & therein requesting them so to hold me up by praying for me, daily, & that he had spoken against it; and that he had told them not to come to visit me—and I told him, plainly, that he had dealt with me in an unchristian manner; that my hope was still in the Bishop of souls, before whom he would have to give an account of his dealings towards me; that I had labored long & heavily in [8] New Zealand before he came to it—reminding him of his *first* question to me at the time of Ordination & my answer—and, that GOD would never forsake me, &c., &c. It was very evident that both the Bishop and Mr. S. Williams (especially the latter) had not only received a good deal of false statements from *Wi Tipuna*'s party, but that they also had believed them!—And which, to my great grief, notwithstanding my repeated declarations, they continued to do.—

5. The next morning (the 31st.) at x., all the Europeans left *Te Pakonoa* for *Ahuriri*, & thence to *Petani*, on their way to *Taupo*. No one called in, in passing by the door, nor in any way noticed us. At night, Matthew Meke, the N. Teacher at *Te Waipukurau*, and others, his relations, (who had accompanied the Europeans as far as *Ahuriri*,) called to see us. Matthew told us, that they had also spoken to the Bishop on his way hither, begging him not to think of *removing* me, as the love of the Christian Natives was great for me,—but, that the Bishop did not like their words.—

6. But my cup was not yet drained (is it even *now?*). On Saturday night, the 2nd. instant, after dark, Mr. S. Williams again called—to request me not to take unkindly what he

291 WC: *Vide*, Journal, Decemr. 11/43.

had to say, namely—that I would [9] not go to the Communion on the morrow!!—that the Bishop had forgotten to mention this, and that it was now done because of the Natives who would otherwise be greatly dissatisfied. I confess, I did *not* expect this. I paused a while ere I answered; when I replied,—That I had never absented myself from the LORD’s Supper since I was first admitted, 24 years ago—that, 3 years back was, (with reference to my offence) the *proper* time for me to have done so:—that, if the Bishop himself was present I should not now do so; but, that I would give way to his request, and, to please, stay away—I could say no more: so taking my poor child in my arms I once more went weeping, in the dark, to my study—to my refuge—prayer. Oh! my dear Sirs, what have I not suffered through my foolish transgression! GOD be merciful to me; a poor broken reed—and guide and deliver me:—Isaiah 50. 10.—

7. Therefore, yesterday, (Sunday) I did *not* go to Church, for I could not make up my mind to do so, and to turn my back upon the LORD’s table:—in that building, too, of my own, & before my own converts & people. I trust, however, that I did not spend an unprofitable day at home. Today, several friendly Natives called, to condole, &c. Te Hapuku, also, called in passing [10] on Friday last; he, and his eldest Son, Cranmer, and some others, wish me to remove to the piece of Land adjoining to Te Aute at Te Rotoakiwa—which he gave me last year for you, but which has been refused by both the Bishop & Mr. S. Williams; But I have no wish (even if I should remain in the District,) to be so near to any one to whom my presence is so hateful. At present I seek nothing better than quietly to remain where I am—where I shall be far enough off from both whites & Natives; as the Natives of Te Pakonoa, my only neighbours, are about to remove inland 2 miles off—Although this Station and all the surrounding low country has been frightfully inundated—for more than a week—since I last wrote; through which heavy floods great damage has been done, especially to the Natives’ crops, much of their wheat & potatoes having been destroyed.—

8. In my Letter of Decr. 10/52, para. 15, I ventured to express a hope that I might yet serve you though it were in some lower situation,—such as, “in Bible & N. Teachers’ Classes & Schools, &c.”—but that hope is now vanished as far as regards this Country.—Unless it should please GOD to change the heart of the Bishop, or to bring my restoration about through one of His many & wonderful ways of acting. There are, or may be, *other* doors of usefulness open to me, (as a Xn. friend said to me in a Letter lately received,) but I am, and trust I shall ever be, an attached, though [11] erring member of the Church of England. I wish—more than ever—to be *wholly* guided by the LORD. I daily pray for a child-like trust and dependence upon Him, and I believe that HE will graciously vouchsafe to answer this prayer of His own teaching—. My way, however, is now completely hedged-up; (and I must be content to abide quietly here for a season.) Should you, my dear Sirs, *not* be able to direct me into any situation in which to serve you, and only allow me the small sum of £20. pr ann., (as stated in my Letter & paragraph aforementioned,) then I know of no other suitable place of residence than *this*, where, for many reasons, I can live at a far less expense than any where else.—To say nothing of my flock whom GOD gave me, & whom I still love. Could I have foreseen that such would have been the end of my long & heavy labor (second to none) in this Country—I should long ago have provided an earthly refuge against the coming storm—for no one has

had better opportunities of doing so than myself; to whom, a short time ago, all the *fine* lands of this District were open & available. But, I look to you: I have hope in you—and continually pray to the Searcher of hearts and Guide of His People, that HE will be graciously blessed to guide you in considering and deciding upon my unhappy case: for to your decision I must wholly submit.—

9. I find, that Mr. Hutton of Wellington, [12] has been appointed by the Bishop to visit Wairarapa every 2 months, and I have heard, that Mr. S. Williams will also only visit here occasionally; and that the Bishop has written to a Minister at Port Cooper, (an elderly man and ignorant of the language,) to come here to reside.

10. Before I conclude I must not omit to tell you one thing which has served to cheer me a little, namely, that not *one* of your Converts here in this District has joined the Papists; which, considering all things, is a very remarkable instance, worthy of being recorded,—and one which the Priests themselves little expected, and cannot understand.—To GOD be all praise!

Believe me,
my dear Sirs,
(Notwithstanding my sad error,)
to be, your unalterably attached
although unworthy Servant,
William Colenso.

Secretaries,
Church Mission House
Salisbury Square,
London.

1853 January 2: to Baker²⁹²

Waitangi, Hawke’s Bay,
Sunday,
January 2, 1853

Mr. Charles Baker

My dear friend.

Your letter of the 25th. of November just reached me early this morning.—And although it is quite against my practice, either to open or answer—Letters on the LORD’s day, yet in this case, I have done so; and that because the vessel which brought it to Ahuriri returns to Wellington tomorrow. I have said, that I received your Letter *early this morning*; I deferred, however, the opening it until I returned from Church; and I am right glad that I did so, otherwise I fear my going thither would have been to little profit.—

—In fact, were it not that I find you have commenced your Letter in your usual way,—with “My dear friend,”—and closing it with your telling me of your being my “faithful brother,” I should scarcely care to answer it at all—from the strange language you have been pleased to use therein. I can, however, allow *you* to say a great deal, after what others have both said & done, when I consider that you know but little, very little, of the rights of the case. I am sorry, however, my dear friend, to see in *you*,

notwithstanding your many gracious teachings from on high, which should have imbued you more deeply with the Spirit and manner of our Saviour Christ,) much of that self-complacent and pharisaical spirit which I have long heard of and even noticed) as peculiarly belonging to our (i.e. the evangelical) party, but which I, for one, have always utterly disclaimed! Oh! how much, how very much *you* still need of the Holy Teaching of the Spirit of Him who prayed for his murderers—who willeth not the death [2] of a Sinner:—who graciously dignified the poor adulteress with a *kind* word, while her self-righteous & indignant accusers were driven away with shame—who leaveth the ninety & nine whole to seek the *one lost sheep*—who says to you and to me, “who art thou that (so harshly) judgest another man’s servant? to his own master he either stands or falls.—who has set us a lesson (Vide Gal. vi. 1: Matt. xviii. 21, &c: Luke vii. 36, &c.; and xv. &c.) which it seems, *You have yet to learn*. Had you, my friend, attended to this Divine Teaching, you would not now (as I find from your Letter) be with Simon the Pharisee, or the elder son who was angry with his father for receiving his once lost but returned brother. I may almost say (with the martyr, Bradford,) “These men begrudge me the pardoning grace of GOD.” However, I am, as I was, a poor Sinner: *now*, as before, dependent entirely upon the merits of my loving LORD who came to save his people from their sins—who loves them when unlovely, when enemies—how much more than when they are wandering (truant children), and falling and maimed, and smarting. And who will love them even to the end, and who will save them with His strong arm & everlasting Salvation. Yes, I have sinned greatly: I know it: I feel it: *I am a Sinner*.—But I am a sinner *saved in the LORD*. He has been with me all my days and will to the end. You—or, rather, those of the day who only recollect somewhat of my poor imperfect attempts at preaching the Truth—must know, that I never taught any other than the utter *impotency of man to good*, and, the *unchangeable love & mercy of GOD*. These truths I have ever taught: hence the great secret of my success among this people. And when I say, I have taught them (as you, and others have besides me,) I have *felt* them; I have *practised* them. I have scarcely ever entered a chapel but the feeling of my being the greatest sinner therein has been almost overpowering. My sins have been a means (under God) of my *sympathizing* with the poor Natives in their affliction, and they [3] need such sympathy. *I am a sinner; not, I was*. Yes: one for whom Christ came, and taught and died; one redeemed by Him, therefore I shall be saved, in spite of my own sins and sinfulness, and my brethren’s unjust and severe treatment of me, and the devil and death, and all united, *I shall be saved*—for Jehovah hath said Amen.—

But I return to notice a few points in your painful Letter: and, as I cannot write much, you must, (for the time, at least,) be content with my plain & concise statements.—

1st. then, I am not, I never was, and I trust I never shall be, “*a Hypocrite*”:—no, never.—

2nd. I have not “*apostasized*”: I trust in GOD that He will also keep me from both of those great Crimes.—

By-the-bye, do you know what “*a Hypocrite*” is?—and what “*an Apostate*” is? Can you consistently call David either a Hypocrite, or an Apostate? who to his crime of adultery (even when he had several wives), added that of murder. (My old friend, Baker, your warm feelings have completely smothered your judgment.)

3rd. I have never “abused the Confidence of any of my Xn. friends”: *never*: in all my letters I have plainly spoken my feelings, perhaps too plainly for some folks, or for my benefit.—

4th. Injury may happen to the cause of Christ through my unhappy error, (as the prophet said to David—I have given cause to the enemies of the LORD to blaspheme.)—although I believe that the cause of Christ is far above receiving any real injury from man; but the injury done to my flock here is (unintentionally I know,) *by the Bishop*: this last I am now, with GOD’s gracious help, doing all I can obediently and Christianly to counteract.—

5th. I have not, I can not, I durst not, “separate myself from the Society.”—I do not understand this strange sentence.

6: Your advice (!!) about my *leaving* New Zealand is sad, [4] very sad, most sad. I did not come to N. Zealand (as I have often told you & others) for any other purpose but to serve the LORD. That I shall do, in some way or other, till death. I am *still His Servant* as much as ever. He, who saw all from the beginning, & who called me by his grace into his Vineyard, took me for better for worse. He will not *cast me away*. Yet I know not what work he may have for me to do, or where: an obedient Israelite will follow the guiding of the hand, although, it may be, limping and in pain from the bites of the fiery serpent.—

7th. Your remarks upon certain observations of mine made (as I suppose, in the freeness & simplicity of Christian friendship,) 18 years ago, are so infelicitous that I will not write of them.—Did not GOD bless me during those “9 years of single blessedness” (at which you unhappily seem to sneer)? and, were not you and all the Mission indebted to my constant & self-denying labours, and GOD’s blessing thereupon?—But this I will boldly say—that, of the two, whether to be a settler, (as some of the Missionaries were, dwelling always at home & attending to the domestic wants of a large family, as you speak—“*a stagnant Missionary*”, as Fox terms it,) and so jog on quietly receiving those hundreds of years of the C.M.S., while the Heathen were still such at no great distance from the door; or, whether to do as I have,—laying oneself out in every way, working every day and every where, always in the very van of the battle,—and, at the close of nearly 20 years of active & heavy work, to stumble badly & be bruised, *I would choose, my friend, the latter*. Not, mind, that I would deliberately sin that good might come; no, not so; but I would rather be so overtaken with a fault and trust the LORD’s mercy, than consent to exist after that other fashion. Don’t misunderstand me; *sin is ever sin*; even although God, in his gracious prerogative, brings good out of it.— [5]

8. None of “my” true “friends,—that is, no real Christian friends, will be ashamed to see me.” No, my brother, (for such I still call you,) real Christians will magnify with me the LORD for His wondrous grace & unchangeable love, and be strengthened in their own gracious faith thereby (1 Tim. i. 16: Ps. xxxii. 6: Matt. v. 19.) This has been done already here by a few among my poor flock, upon whom the Divine Spirit has, I believe, breathed. I have received several letters from different *white* friends upon this sad affair, but only *one* had written me in a truly Xn. way, and that, too, from a quarter the least expected—the Chaplain at Wellington.

You seem to forget one thing (among many others) of which I will just remind you: that I wrote to the C.M.S. to be allowed to return to England (at the completion of the

Prayer Book) to seek a wife, and that through your influence on some of the N.D. Comee. my request was negated, and that in such a way, (*kind*, I mean,) that I could not repeat it without injuring the work of the Mission.

I wrote the Bishop a *private* confidential letter, which he, most strangely, (see exhortation in our Communion service, & the Commission of the cxiii. canon,) immediately made public. I told him, moreover, therein, that there were many things which might extenuate my error, then an *old* one, but these my judge cares not to hear.—

I have no intention *whatever* of leaving this place and neighbourhood. It will be for the Society to say, whether they will disconnect me, an old faithful servant of theirs, for *one* error. You do not know the whole truth, perhaps you never may. I am willing to bear the scorn and scoff of a world for which (as *you know*) I have ever cared but little; although, I confess, that the harsh & censorious letters & judgment of those whom I have long considered as friends & brethren, wound me deeply and would be almost unbearable, had it not been for the help afforded by the Friend, who sticketh closer than a brother. [6]

You advise me, “to go out like Peter & weep bitterly.” But you little know the sad nights & days of weeping which I have already had—long, long ago; long before you left Uawa. Did you but know but a small portion of what I have suffered on account of Sin, you would not thus speak. If I need any thing I need Consolation; and, blessed be GOD! HE has it in store, for poor, broken-hearted, weary and heavy-laden Sinners like myself, who, through grace, believe in His Son Jesus Christ.—

If there is one thing which grieves me just now, upon the reading of your letter, it is, (what I have often heard mentioned at home, in my boyish days, as having been generally noticed by old persons,) that people who deal in severe and harsh judgments have often such befall home upon their own families.—Our Saviour, too, has said as much, Matt. vii. My friend, you have a large family: May GOD bless them, & keep the lads from evil! Amen.

You forget, I fear, our old English proverbs:— “That a friend in need, is a friend indeed:”—and, “That prosperity makes friends, but adversity tries them.”—

If you can conscientiously write to me *as hitherto* (saving this *last* letter) *do so*. But I would beg to be excused from receiving any more such epistles as this last:—I hope you have kept a copy of it.—

You make what use you please of this Letter.—And,
Believe me,
Ever yours sincerely,
(although in bonds,)
William Colenso.

1853 April 12: to McLean²⁹³

Waitangi,
April 12, 1853.

My dear Sir,

As I find that the Phoebe is not gone from Ahuriri, I have just time to fulfil a desire—which has rapidly grown up during these last few days—of writing to you; sprung, I believe, from a pleasing remembrance of your kind expressions of interest in my welfare when we last met and parted. Now doubly valuable in the present extreme scarcity of both friends and Counsellors.

I think that I then told you, that I had written fully to the C.M.S. concerning myself—and that I had made up my mind to winter here in my little study—or, rather to remain until I should hear from them: so far, then, has been determined. I have however subsequently seen the Bishop here, and am obliged to think, that I should yet do something more than merely to wait until I hear from England:—that is, if I have the opportunity of doing so. I have often of late revolved in my mind your advice— “to take a run”;²⁹⁴ and, if I am in time and can obtain one suitable, I think I should be quite ready to do so. Allow me then, my dear sir, to request you to let me know at an early convenient opportunity:—1st. whether there are any spare runs still to let out of these your 2 purchased Blocks (excluding Mohaka)?—2nd. whether you have a speedy prospect of purchasing more land in this neighbourhood?—3rd. whether you are of opinion that I might obtain the gift of a small grant of land from the Governor? (I could only afford—at present—to *pay* for a very small quantity; yet, I think, I could shew certain good reasons why a *little* might be *given*; especially if I had yourself or Sinclair or Cole or any good friend to back me).—5th. whether Scrip would be received in payment for Land hereabouts?

I should greatly prefer being on or near the Sea Coast. An *inferior* run or neighbourhood would suit me very well; as I have but a *few* head of cattle, and I do not wish to seek *great* things;—merely a quiet home with bread to eat. I wish also, to be quite out of the way of both Natives and Settlers—unless I may yet be privileged with finding a few of the latter with a similar disposition to yourself. I have had some thoughts of one of those little places—called, Ouepoto, and Pohatupapa—both S. of Morena’s village (Tuingara), and, I believe, unoccupied.—Also, of seeking some sheltered nook somewhere upon your S. boundary line (Parimahu), & not far from the sea. And I am thinking of visiting that neighbourhood in about a month or so; although I should prefer *first* hearing from you.—It might, however, suit me better (at first, at least) to put out my Cattle, at so much pr. cent of profit than to keep a person to look after them; but I need advice on this and, indeed, on all my matters. I have again spoken of *Scrip*, to which I have been led through hearing that Mr. Tollemache is said to have come hither to purchase land with Scrip. Hapuku (I understand from Cranmer, for we have not yet met,) and Puhara and Hineipaketia still wish me to go inland to Te Rotoakiwa; but I do not, upon any account, wish to be so near Wi Tipuna and his party;—nor the Bishop’s “College Land”—the ground on the Government boundary close to Te Aute having been by him and the Governor selected for this purpose. From the Chief at Tangoio I have also received a handsome offer of a piece of ground if I will

293 ATL Object #1012399 from MS-Papers-0032-0221.

294 “Take a run” here means “obtain a sheep farm”—not, as some have interpreted this passage, as “escape”: Colenso would never have used such a slang expression!

move that way. But, whilst I *feel* their kindness—particularly just now when *all* are against me—I am determined *not* to accept it. I have already trusted natives too much: served *them* too faithfully (don't doubt it)—without even once caring for myself; and it is now (if not too late) high time for me to believe that charity should begin at home.—I could *tell* you much if you were here, which I cannot write. I dare to think, that I have been and am greatly ill-used; still it is not for me, who have so foolishly laid myself open, to complain. I did *not* see the Governor when they were here, although greatly wished to do so; he travelling with (and, I believe, living in the tent of) the Bishop. This was a very untoward circumstance for me; and one which I greatly regretted.—

You, my dear Sir, well know how very changeable the Natives are. You will not then be surprized in hearing that, when *the great men* were here, the Natives (having repeatedly heard that the Bishop and the Governor were coming to “*pana*” me,) were *all* against me!—all loud for “*panaing*”. But when I say all—I must not forget to tell you, that Te Hapuku and Puhara and Hineipaketia were not only against such an atrocity, but made good orations (I am told) to the Bp. and the Govr. when at Wakatu in my favour.—And these 2 men are Heathen, and, in certain sense, my enemies!!—Neither of them accompanied the Bishop and Governor to Ahuriri—at which, I confess, I felt surprized. I also heard, that Mr. Alexander very kindly and considerably expressed his just indignation at some of my Native “friends” proceedings—among whom your travelling companion Takamoana, (whom I had but very lately been again instrumental in recovering from a severe illness) was most conspicuous—as before, for evil. But *many secret* springs have been worked:—and, as you know, a very small spark is sufficient for a whole magazine of powder.—

But I must close or I shall weary you. Mrs. Colenso has not yet left! but we now daily expect the vessel (the Dolphin) by which she *is* to go; and she will also take *the* child with her. I shall, consequently, soon be *very lonely*; and that, too, in a place where every object necessarily recalls a 1000 unpleasing ideas. Need I say, that a letter, or paper, or anything from a friend will sure to be both acceptable and of service. Mr. and Mrs. Marshall with 2 children (one being Alexander's) left us this morning on their way to Guthrie's, where they intend to reside. We have lately suffered severely from a flood, occasioned by a fortnight's heavy rain, which caused us to take refuge in the study—all the premises & garden being *greatly* under water. The natives too have lost much of their crops. You will have heard, I suppose, of one of Hapuku's wives (Tarewa) having strangled herself very shortly after you left.

I should like, if possible, to have the matter of a future dwelling and run so far settled, as that on your next coming this way we could go thither together and take possession. Though my present house is *small*, yet it will be more than large enough for *us two*, if you can on your next visit make it convenient both to call and *stay*—which I hope you will do.

Ever my dear Sir, Very truly yours,
Willm. Colenso.

P.S. Allow me to add, as I know you are intimate with some of the Mission, that I do not wish them, *just now*, to know of my intentions.

1853 May 24: to the CMS secretaries²⁹⁵

Church Mission Station,
Waitangi, Hawke's Bay,
May 24, 1853

Secretaries,
Church Missiony. House
Salisbury Square,
London

My dear sirs,

1. My last letter to you was dated, April 4/53, which will I hope in due time reach your hands.—

2. Having just heard of an opportunity for Wellington I hasten to write a few lines—to accompany a portion of my Journal (124pp.,) all that I have copied out, & which you ought to have received from me long ago. The more so, as, I think, it contains somewhat elucidatory of the Bishops dealings with me.—

3. But, a Wellington Paper—(“the N. Zealand Spectator,”) of the 23rd. February, (a Copy of which I suppose—and *hope*—you have had sent you thence,) which contains a full account of a “Church of England Meeting” there, in which the Governor, the Bishop, and Archdn. Hadfield took prominent parts, will, I believe, do more still towards revealing the Bishop's mind (not to say, the Governor's,) towards myself & the Natives of this District. The speeches of the Governor, of the Bishop, & of Archdeacon Hadfield, in this paper, which I have only lately read, [2] serve me as a key to much that the Bishop has said, as well as to his strange & harsh proceedings concerning *me*. While, on the other hand, they will ever serve to shew, what has been effected through GOD's blessing on my unworthy instrumentality.—

4. Two (hitherto) steady Teachers (who have been here with me a few days, and who only left this morning,) informed me, that many of those things which I had successfully opposed and put down—such as Cardplaying, Draughts, Racing, Games, Riding about on Sundays, singing Heathen Songs and dancing Heathen dances, the working of the *Teachers* for the Settlers, Drinking of wine & strong drink, &c., &c.,—are now being commonly & extensively practised, “through” (they say) “the licence given by the new Minister; who” (they also say) “has said, that seeing that the Settlers do so, the Natives may do the same, but not to excess.” Hence, most of the Natives (including, I regret to say, some of those who, *under curb*, had proved useful as Teachers,) and all the Settlers rejoice greatly. Some of the Settlers remarked to those two Teachers, (whose 2 villages are, I am told, almost alone in standing out against those innovations,) that now they [3] would succeed nicely, now that they had got this Minister; to which they replied,—“Ah! you say so because he is a Minister of *two* sides (*taha rua*); whereas, our former one was a Minister of *one* side (*taha tahi*), a Native like us.” I do not mean to say, that I am certain that Mr. S. Williams has gone so far; I would still hope not; notwithstanding I am in a great degree inclined to believe the above, not only from the altering state of things, which I both hear and see; but, also, from what I saw when at Te Waimate; and from a conversation that I had with Archdn. Hadfield last year at Wairarapa, in

295 ATL qMS-0492. Hocken MS vol 63.

which he said, that I was much too strict with regard to the Sabbath, &c., and, that he saw no harm in Natives going to Balls, & Games, &c.

5. Be this as it may, one thing is certain, that all the good which has been effected in this District has been done through the simple and plain teaching and preaching of Justification by Faith *alone*; helped, perhaps, by an equally simple *N. Testament* discipline applied with *Love*. For which (I am given to understand,) is now to be [4] substituted, "the regular and often Administration of the Sacrament," (*all* the Baptized being, also "*Regenerates*,") and a laxity of discipline; which, I take upon myself to predict, will, in a very short time, assuredly destroy the very vitals of a true Christian and living Church in these parts.—

6. Most of the principal Chiefs have been here several times of late to condole with me, &c.; Hapuku, Puhara, Hineipaketia, Waihiku, Te Awi, Taylor Te Paea, and others. They have begged me *not* to leave them, and have liberally offered to give me the choice of a good piece of ground in various places to reside on, which they have urged me to accept. But I have told them (as I told the Bishop,) that I shall patiently await *your decision* respecting me.—I have, also, overheard them saying many hard things of the Bishop, and some shrewd questions have been asked me; but I have cautiously conducted myself in respect to all such. The Chiefs have, also, asked, for what purpose did the Governor come here? As he scarcely spoke to them upon any subject;—but, I *believe*, that the Bishop (knowing my great influence here,) [5] got his Excellency to accompany him to strengthen him against me, hoping, indeed, to prevail. I give GOD thanks, continually, that I was enabled to withstand both the Bishop's and Mr. S. Williams' united efforts on the night of their visit.

7. I hope soon to send you the *remainder* of my Journal. I have been, and am, engaged in putting my winter's residence into order, in binding Native Testaments & P. Books, in printing a memoir of Caleb Te Hiaro, and other Natives of this District, in giving out Medicine, &c.

8. I have not yet received the balance of my Salary of *last* year; but hope soon to obtain it; as, I suppose, Archdn. W. Williams (if safe) will have arrived at Turanga by this time, who will, I dare believe, do what is right.—

9. Of the Case of New Testaments (mentioned in my Letter of Jany. 31/53, par. 20,) I have already sold upwards of £5. worth; and should have sold more could I but take their produce (Potatoes, wheat, &c.) in payment. [6]

Praying continually that GOD will guide you in your considering and deciding upon my unhappy case, and craving an interest in your Prayers,

I am,
My dear sirs,
Your very unworthy servant,
William Colenso.

1853 October 31: to the CMS secretaries²⁹⁶

Waitangi, October 31st.
1853

Secretaries,
Ch. Missy. House,
Salisbury Square,
London.

My dear Sirs,

1. My last letter to you was dated May 24, 1853, which, with 124pp. of Journal then sent, I hope you have safely received.—

2. I now hasten to despatch another portion of my Journal (112pp.);—which, I confess, you ought to have had long ere this; but my present anomalous and unhappy situation must in some measure plead my excuse.—

3. Since I last wrote I have been favored with your very kind and truly Christian Letter of August/52, which, with printed circulars & Information respecting the Miss. Chs. Home, I only received in July last. Your loving and cheering Letter—coming as it has at this particular crisis—has affected me deeply; more so, perhaps, than had it been written with a full knowledge on your parts of my present situation. It has acted as a *silver* probe to a wounded soul, which had already been ruthlessly & repeatedly searched out with rusty iron. [2]

4. Unfortunately I cannot now make any reply to your valuable Letter; other, than to thank you for it: I greatly wish I could. Allow me, however, simply to state, (in reference to a subject mentioned in par. 3, of the same,) that my declining to prepare for Priest's Orders was not owing wholly to the matter which you have subsequently heard of respecting me. I just mention this, lest you should (naturally enough,) be led to infer as much.

5. On the 10th. of August last I received a Letter from Mr. Vidal, enclosing an extract from the Minutes of the Central Committee, copies of which I now enclose. Mr. Vidal's Letter, although dated 5 months before, had, evidently, only just been sent from Auckland.

6. Mrs Colenso left here on the 30th. of August last, on her way to Auckland via Te Wairoa; and the latter place on the 5th instant: taking with her my little child.

7. During the winter the Rev. S. Williams unexpectedly arrived in this neighbourhood, and remained during great part of August and September. His primary object (I believe) in coming [3] hither—at all events, in *waiting*,—was to see the Governor, (who was then daily expected in these parts,) in order to get the piece of Land secured to the Bishop ere the Governor should leave N. Zealand. The Governor, however, never came. During his residence in this place, he called two or three times, but I steadily avoided him; however, on his day of leaving he sent a messenger to me, to say, that he greatly wished to see me; when I (thinking it might be from GOD,) consented to receive him, and we spent several hours together. He told me, that he desired to tell me (among other matters) how sorry he now was that he should have said some harsh things concerning me to the Natives of this place on his former visit—such as,—that his father was always opposed

to my being ordained, from my being an unfit person, &c. I dealt very plainly with him, telling him, that it mattered very little to me what he, or any one should say, that I only wished both him and the Bishop (and in fact, all) so to deal with me as they would answer for it before GOD, and as would give them no burthen of Conscience in [4] a dying hour. While he was staying in this neighbourhood the Rev. J Hamlin also arrived, but we did not meet.—

8. I had intended to write you more largely at this time, and with particular reference to the state of the Natives; but I find, that I must hasten of my packet as the vessel sails, and therefore have not time to do so. A pious settler from the Waipukurau (who has been a local preacher among the Wesleyans at Wellington,) called on me the other day, wishing to spend the Sunday with me here. I was grieved to hear him state, that there is now no Sabbath among the Natives; Sunday being the principal buying and selling day; and he was also surprised hear me state, how quietly and properly the Sunday was formerly observed. Card playing, Drinking of Strong Liquors, Petty Thefts, and other sins, are, alas! very common. The Congregation *here*, in the largest Chapel, varies from 10–25, and that on the Sunday morning only; in the other villages the falling-off is still greater; still the Papists have *not* gained *one!!!* All this is no more than I had expected: provided that the Bishop (not knowing the people) should be determined to [5] carry every thing his own way. You may depend upon it, that the worst is yet to come; unless something suitable shall timely be done. I, myself, know of but *one* way; but this I cannot now propound; lest it should be said, that I seek my own welfare. I have heard, that Mr. S. Williams told some of the Natives inland, that they should honor the bishop; they replied, “We honored him formerly, on his two visits, but not now.” And this feeling is, I know, getting stronger. Wairarapa (so long coveted) has just been sold to the Government; and *now* Mr. McLean is at Te Waipukurau, come to pay the Natives *all at once* (contrary to the Agreement), and to endeavor to get more Land; through which there is great conflicting of opinions among the Chiefs; but *all* say, that these evils have come to pass in consequence of *the bishop and the Governor* putting me down; and much more which I durst not write.

9. I keep myself entirely at home. I see but very few of the Natives; although if I were either to visit them, or let them know that I would *gladly* receive them here, I should, I know, have them all with me. Even the Chief Karaitiana [6] Takamoana wrote me a letter begging me to receive him, &c., but I have refused to have any thing to do with him. The principal Chief Tareha with his brother came the other day, having heard that I was about leaving, (which report arose through my selling a few articles to some whites—I not having received any pay from the E.D. Comee. since Decr./51,) and said, That they came to tell me “*not to go*; but to wait and *see the end*.” (a very expressive sentence). And, on my saying (on another occasion) to Te Hapuku, that I heard the Governor was coming, he replied—“What have we to do with the Governor: Thou art our Governor.” From some of the Christian Natives I get the very best of Letters; in fact I had scarcely supposed that they could write such epistles.—

10. You will (doubtless) have heard, that the Bishop had quite enough to do at his *own* place on his return; and on account of which (knowing as he did the state of his college before he left,) it would, perhaps, have been better for him (and for us) had he remained at home. Mr. Barker, too, who

was to have written to me “a [7] severe letter as Chn. of the E.D. Committee”, has not only not done so, but has had quite enough of his own matters to engross all his mind. Mr. S. Williams who was appointed here, is not coming. Mr. Burrows was subsequently appointed, and he too is gone in another direction. And Mr. Paul, who was also fixed upon to look after “the College,” will not come. And now I hear that the Bishop of N. Zealand is about to be translated to the Metropolitan See of Sydney, to which, I suppose, he will proceed, leaving me (like Felix did Paul) bound.—Certainly there is more in all this than is apparent at first sight.

11. I patiently await the arrival of your letter respecting me. I hope that you (at least) will *not* have followed the Bishop’s track; for I consider the Extract from the Minutes of the Central Committee to be mainly his doing; in fact, it is grounded upon his Letter. And here I may say, that this also appears to me to be *another* breach of the Canons of our Church (at least of their spirit), which decide, that “none [8] shall be cited into several courts for one crime.” (Can. cxxi. &c)

12. I venture to enclose a Copy of a Letter which I have very recently written to the Rev. R. Cole; as from it you will gather more respecting me, and also obtain my thoughts upon a few important matters.—

13. You speak in your Letter of August/52 of my seeing your Publications. We used to do so, though never consecutively; but I have not seen any throughout the two past years.—

Pray for me, my dear sirs,
And ever believe me,
Your unalterably attached
And obedient
(although erring) Servant,
William Colenso

(Copy.)

Mr. Wm Colenso,

Auckland 12 March 1853.

Dear Sir,

Under the same cover with this I send you an extract from the Minutes of Central Committee requesting you will be good enough to quit the Ahuriri Station.

I am Dear Sir
Your most obdt, servant,
(signed)
Robert Vidal.

Addressed,
“Mr. Wm. Colenso,
Ahuriri.”

(Copy)

“At a meeting of the Central Committee held at Auckland 2 March 1853.—

Read, par. First of President of Central Committee’s Letter, Novr. 27/52.—

Read Letter of Revd. J. Hamlin Decr. 20/52.—

Resolved,

That the connexion of Mr Colenso with the Church Missionary Society ceased on the 29th of Novr. last, when the Rev. James Hamlin placed the Bishop's Letter of Suspension in his hands.

2. That if Mr Colenso should still be on the Ahuriri Station he be requested to leave the same without delay.—

Extracted from the Minutes
(signed)

Robert Vidal
Sec.”

1853 October 28: to Cole²⁹⁷

Waitangi, October 28, 1853

My dear Cole,

Your last note, dated, 21st ulto., (by, I *suppose*, the “Salopian”) I did not receive until some time after she had sailed from this place for Turanga. As it had no postmark, and as I had also sent purposely to the P. Office, and got “no Letters” in answer, I suppose that it came by some private hands. I thank you much for it, and for what news it gives; for although I hear of papers being very plentiful about us I never see one, neither do greatly care to do so. Mr. S. Williams had been here several weeks *waiting* for the Governor about the pieces of Land, and returned about the time of the date of your Letter. From him I had also heard of the expected translation of the Bishop. I perceive one or two things in your letter which seem to require a correcting remark or two of mine; otherwise you may be led to believe them wholly true. Some of them—*one*, at least—(i.e. “the prevailing belief, I believe, on the part of the Bishop &c. is, that you had tried to regain the person of the mother of the child into your command”:) you ought never to have heard from my respectable person. You know well, what has often been the consequence of a *suppressio veri*; and, that this is not far from (if not leading directly to) a *suggestio falsi*. This infamous story like evil disposed Natives of this place—Karaitiana Takamoana & Leonard Te Kawepo—trumped up just before the Bishop's arrival here;—got the better disposed Natives to believe it, and then the manner & circumstances of both the Bishop's & Mr. S. Williams' coming, did the rest. But I told the Bishop *solemnly*, when we (3) were together, (I was going to say, in *verb sagerd*, than which I know of nothing stronger,—but, I correct myself, I am but a *Deacon*) that it was *utterly false*; and this should have satisfied even him—for, whatever my faults are, no man shall ever be able truly to charge me with falsehood, even in trivial matters—but it did not. It has been said, That he who would aspire to the high title of Historian should be possessed of the temper of impartiality & the predilection for truth & Charity—and [2] they are seldom found apart—absolutely needful for such an one; how much if then a Bishop sitting as a Judge! but the *very contrary* on *all* these points is the case. I recollect reading; that in the passionate strife of the Great Rebellion, common rumour was used by the Puritans as a ground for the internment of Stafford; but that ill precedent has found little favor in better times (till now). The allegation of

common fame is now indignantly repudiated and shown to be utterly repugnant to every rule of law & every sentiment of justice. To give even you a complete understanding of this position of the affair would require a deal of writing; let it suffice to say—that I did endeavour to get the mother to come and look after her own infant (Mrs Colenso having *no girls*, and then as we supposed, being about to leave, when I would be left with the child,) and in so doing—which I did *openly* before *all*, with the certain knowledge of the Bishop being on the way hither,—that he would know all—I *believe*, that I acted most properly. In truth I may tell *you*, that it was my intention—supposing the Bishop had acted as a “Father & Friend” wishing to do the best for all parties in a bad matter, to have asked him to *aid me* in my so doing. It never once occurred to me that such could ever be misrepresented, even by Natives, much less believed by the Bishop!! And here you must not forget that the girl was given *me* by her mother at the Bay of Islands in 1844, who made me only *publicly* promise never to allow her daughter to go to any *kainga* thereabouts;—that, the Native with whom she now lives is my redeemed slave lad, brought up by me from his almost infancy through 18 long years—my steward, carpenter, in fact, almost everything; so that no native *here* has any right to interfere; that I then greatly needed his *immediate aid* in the carpentry line, through the recent ruin of the dwelling house, having previously tried to get the 2 white carpenters living here to work for me, but both being already under agreement they could not. Now, you yourself know somewhat of the burden of having a little child to attend to; but such is light, in a town, compared to what it is in a place like this & at *such a time!*—*where, now*, a person gets *nothing of any kind but what his own hands prepare*.

Then again, you say, “A Priest after a lapse would, or should, I think, on his true repentance, he is reinstated; while a Deacon [3] under similar circumstances *would not*. This is a very good law; and I suppose an old one. But then what is comprehended (according to the meaning of our Church of England) under the word “Deacon”?—(Let the Rubric at the end of the “Form of ordering of Deacons” inform us, at least in part, and, the part too which I wish to bring before you.)—A *young unpractised Minister, inexperienced & newly admitted*, who had *never* had care of souls. Does the writer, then, belong to this class? It is difficult to write about one's self, doubly so when under official censure, but as we are often betimes led into error or mistake, by the use or abuse of words it is almost needful that I should here say a little about myself. And, in so doing, I have now no need to state to you (as I once did to the late Bishop of Sydney, and often to the Bishop of N. Zealand,) that I was repeatedly called and sent to Ecclesiastical duties—or, Missionary work, *preaching the Gospel*—by the (then) highest Ecclesiastical authorities in the whole Southern Hemisphere! In Sydney by Marsden, Hill & Cowper, in N. Zealand by *all* the old Ministers, some of whom are now Archdeacons. So that for several years (before the Bishop's arrival in New Zealand) I was engaged in similar duties to those of a Deacon in England although still a Layman & under many disadvantages. True, I was not then a Deacon—some may say “I was a Catechist” but I was far more than a Catechist—i.e. according to the ancient & legitimate usage of the word. I was, in my own opinion, an *Evangelist*: (I use this word although I am aware that this Office has been by some Divines supposed to be above even that of a Presbyter—but this perhaps is doubtful.) Now it has appeared to me, that

my having been thus called & sent (and *owned* in my work, I must *not* omit this,) is a widely different thing from a Dissenter's ordination;—or, that of a person going forth by his own self uncalled & unsent (which distinction, I fear, the Bishop of N. Zealand never allowed in his mind concerning me). Be this as it may, I have ever been especially clear in my own mind upon this matter; and I may here, perhaps, quote a few sentences from an *Authority*, whose words, I know, you will fully allow, & with which I quite agree:—“Now whereas some do infer, that no ordination can stand, but only [4] such as made by Bishops:— — — — — to this we answer, that there may be sometimes very just & sufficient reasons to allow Ordination made without a Bishop — — — — — Another extraordinary kind of vocation is, when the exigence of necessity doth constrain to leave the usual ways of the Church, which otherwise we would willingly keep: Where the Church must needs have some ordained, nad neither hath nor can have possibly a bishop to ordain; in the case of such necessity, the ordinary institution of GOD hath given often times, and may give place — — — — — These cases of inevitable necessity excepted, none may ordain but only bishops: By the imposition of their hands it is, that the Church giveth power of order, both unto Presbyters and Deacons.” (Hook. Eccl. Pol. 1. vii., c. xiv s11.)²⁹⁸ Now I have given all this first to let you know what you may have already quite gathered) that I consider myself as more than a Deacon i.e. *in the common Ch.-of-England acceptation of the word*,—even as I told the Bishop, “an old experienced and successful Missionary, leaving my very enemies to judge.” But there is *no* need for me to go back so far, as this is now more than 9 years, since I was made Deacon, (a period of time which, you, my good friend, would not have liked to pass through as a mere deacon,)—& further still, the Bishop himself told me, when here in 1852, that he wished me to prepare for Priest's Orders.—

While then I agree with you (as I have already said, understanding, also, the proper meaning of the term Deacon,) in your statement respecting the non-ordination of a *Deacon*; to carry this out in its severity against *me*, would, I dare think, be anything but just. “*Summum jus summa injuria*,”²⁹⁹ is an old adage; worthy perhaps of being here borne in mind.

Therefore I can *not* acquiesce, in the sentence never being reversed. In fact, such would make, the sentence of suspension (one of the lighter Ecclesiastical censures, according to Palmer, and issued “for a *limited* time,”) to be one and the same with Degradation—which is the *heaviest*. But how much even of this *latter* may have been secretly [5] determined against me is hard for me to say; seeing that Mr. Vidal as the official organ of communication from the Central Committee (whose President is the Bishop) addresses me as a layman; in which he is (kindly?) followed by my neighbour Mr. Hamlin, and others.

I assume, that I have no need to point out to you what you must already well know; and yet I may be permitted to recall such to your mind:—namely, my not having been liked at any time by the majority of the different parties who have had a prominent share in the matter. These parties I may class as three, (exclusive of the Papist Priests; and of the Bishop of whom, here, I do not wish to say anything:)

viz. the Government, the Settlers, and the Natives. *The Government* disliked me greatly, *I know*—because I had *refused* to aid them getting hold of the Natives' Lands, and because they could see that I encouraged the natives to withhold the selling of the same as well as for other reasons, also well-known to myself. *The Settlers* you yourself have heard speak, and they have also gone so far as to publish in the Paper several years ago their wishes to get me removed; so of them, therefore, I need not now say anything. *The Natives*, (who are nationally like a silly flock of sheep—all follow the leader, like leaves in the forest when blown by the wind all in a line one way,) may, in this matter, be compared to our own “*people*” at an election time: one party of them was told, that in my being cut off they would have a College & 2 Clergymen, one to look after them, and one after the College, which was also to be upon their own ground: another party was told that they were to have watermills, and ploughs, and I know not what and “500 sheep given by the Governor,” to ensure which they now make over to the Bp. their own *reserved* Land, (which they did!) and to which the Governor was to add a similar piece, which is now (according to the Surveyors; my informants;) 8000 acres!! Another party had hoped to get the *new* Minister to reside with them, (the future *Mission Station* having already been fixed): to another party I, or rather, Religion, was too strict: while another party knew very well that *I knew them*, and it would be such [6] a nice thing to commence afresh with a stranger before whom they would be *sheep* alike: while another party (a “little flock”) were dared to visit me. Now add to this that my own very wife was *actively* against me and the cup is full: the picture is completed. I had *not one* speak a word for me! It is true; I had never sought nor desired anything of the kind. My hope was (and is) where it has ever been—in GOD alone, and through Him, I feel assured, that I shall always overcome; but I do not always realize this. Still, He left not himself without a witness. His voice spoke powerfully in the unsolicited heart; and Hapuku (the Heathen Chief; and Puhara (the Papist one), although both enemies, bravely stood up at two different times and spoke to the Bishop before the Governor in my behalf. The Bishop has put me down, (and I, bearing in mind *my oath*, have obeyed him; and he has gained 8,000 acres of Land (“a goodly price;” & bush) and he has appointed 3 Clergymen here, (none of whom are coming); but, he had, also, done himself an immense deal of injury and the Natives of the district a still greater one. I would not wish the Bishop's share of this matter (as I understood it) upon my conscience, not for the 8,000 acres of Land! It was only *last* year that the Bishop; after a great deal of trouble, succeeded in getting the Governor's assent to a small bit of land, which had been given at the Otaki & Waikanae to him for a school there; while here, where “there is just no one for the College or School,” (Mr S.W.'s words;) more than 20 times that amount of Land—one-half being Government property—is given without a word! “*He that runs may read*.”³⁰⁰

Reviewing all that has been dealt to me in this matter as a man—I have been treated more as a person under Anathema (of the greater Excommunication,) than anything else. It is this exceedingly severe & uncalled for treatment, which has *confirmed me* in my views, and which will (allow me to say) be found to have been peculiarly disastrous to my flock. My case, from the first to last is an

298 Richard Hooker “Of the Laws of Ecclesiastical polity”, Volume 3, Chapter 14.

299 “Extreme right is extreme injury.”

300 Habakkuk 2:2. And the Lord answered me, and said, Write the vision, and make it plain upon tables, that he may run that readeth it.—King James Bible.

extraordinary one, and must *not* be judged by *ordinary* [7] rules; or, if so, great must necessarily be the error. Hence it was that McLean made such an erroneous judgment. Bp. Hall, I recollect made a fine remark somewhere on this point. I think it is upon the story of Moses slaying the Egyptians. Here there is *no injured* husband, nor is the young woman the *less* in esteem—just the contrary. Perhaps you will say, such a state of morals ought not to be, I am not, however, speaking of what ought to be, but what *is*; of matter of fact. Each age, my friend, (and each people too) has an atmosphere of its own; and, as in archery, the truest aim may suffer from the prevailing air:—may none of my stern, unloving judges ever be tempted as I have been.

But I must hasten to close; at least, this theme. Still, what the heart is full the mouth speaks & the hand writes. I doubt, that few, if any, (of all classes) have ever been reclaimed through such *harsh* measures; and this I think, is a truism, pretty generally received now-a-days—at all events at home. I am sure that I have ever found it to be so in all my dealings with men: and I myself am but man; no exception to the common rule. You, doubtless, recollect the words (not wholly unsuitable *here* which John Milton³⁰¹ puts in the mouth of Satan, as saying:—

“If all hope is lost
Of my reception into Grace; what worse?
For where no hope is left, is left no fear.”

How very, very often had this been sadly realized. I think that it was in the case of Athanasius himself although a great man & a Bishop, that something of the kind occurred; fully verifying the saying that “oppression (or, harshness) maketh the wise man mad.”³⁰²

—And then, with reference to my “making some provision for the future—many years it may be”—as you kindly suggest. This I cannot do, chiefly because I have not, and never had, my heart set that way! My trust is (& must be) in GOD for this as well as for other matters. I do not believe that He will suffer me to want; yet, even this *may be needful*, and if so, it will be. [8] If I had no other reason for prolonging my stay here, surely this one would be sufficient—that *here* I can live (*sans* comfort, you may say,) at a comparatively low charge; my garden & orchard & cow & goats go a great way to keep me at little expense beyond my own labor, having 5 years ago paid the Native Chiefs a handsome price for right of grazing upon the adjoining marshy flat. Of course, when I thus speak; you will bear in mind, that, whether the C.M.S continue me in their service or not, *this spot* will not be again required for a Mission Station; and, that all of good or use, which there is now upon on it, is either of my own processing or the work of my own hands.

I have very little of news which I can send you from this quarter. Of the *present* state of the Natives about me, I would gladly be excused saying a word to any one. I know what they *were*, down to the hour of my injudicious & ill-timed suspension; (I speak this with exclusive reference *to them*,)—I then feared what, they might become. You, at Wellington may yet know more of them than you may wish. Remember, it was *only* Alexander who could ride Bucephalus. A Native proverb runs,— “Pull away the centre post, & the house falls”: and (without, I trust, inexperience;) I may *to you* quote, “Smite the Shepherd,

and the sheep will be scattered.”—From the 2 or 3 good, and, as I hope really Xn. Natives I often get the best and most affectionate of Letters; which are highly consoling to me—far more so than if they came from European relations or friends. Archd. W. Williams has lately arrived at Turanga. Mr. Grace is at Taupo; preparing I suppose, (or they hope,) for settling down there. Mrs Colenso left here on the 30th of August, overland for Te Wairoa, (this I think you had heard,) & thence per vessel on the 5th instant taking the *dear* (though *despised*) child with her; for which part (in all the circumstances) I am very thankful. I hope they are both safe, and where Mrs. Colenso’s heart is long before this. I shall now, please GOD expect to hear concerning my other 2 children of whom I now know next to nothing. My daily prayer is, that GOD will be pleased (if fit) to bring us *all* together again: We are now [9] sadly separated: but I am sometimes gladdened in thinking that they—the mother and little ones—are all together and in the very bosom of her family; who are all settled and neighbours.—

I hope, my dear Cole, that you have, ere this, proper domestic help at least; it must be very sad for you to be without it. But servants & laborers of every kind, even Natives, (and that *here*!) are getting above working; demanding & obtaining 5/- per diem & upwards! This want of labor will be a great drawback to the prosperity of N. Zealand. The Natives of this neighbourhood (I am told) demand 2d. per pound for taking wool to the harbour! Last year they had a 1d.; and if they succeed now in getting their 2d. as sure as they next year demand 3d. or more. So that a strong native would easily carry 120 lbs. of wool from one of the Stations to Ahuriri in one of these long days & thus get a £1. for his day’s labor! Not that they take the wool this way, for it is always carried by canoe. I used to give 30/- for 9–11 weeks heavy travelling; I expect, that if I had now to perform those journies I should not get a native to go with me, (if I got them at all) for less than £5. for the trip.—

I think you know, that there was only *one* European built house at Ahuriri (proper), and that one a licensed *Public* House; now there is another building there, *this* side of the Entrance, (the first being on the opposite side,) which is also Licensed for the same purpose!

I am sure that you will think that I have written you enough—both as to quantity & quality—and therefore I close. You may make what use you please of this Letter. And with every good wish,

Believe me, my dear Cole,
Yours very sincerely
William Colenso

Rev R Cole
Parsonage
Wellington

1853 November 28: to Williams³⁰³

1853 November 28: to Vidal³⁰⁴

301 “Paradise Regained.”
302 Ecclesiastes 7:7.

303 Appended to Colenso to Straith 3 January 1854; ATL qMS-0492. Hocken MS vol 63.
304 Appended to Colenso to Straith 3 January 1854; ATL qMS-0492. Hocken MS vol 63.

1853 December 10: to Dixon & Co.³⁰⁵

Waitangi Decr. 10/53

My dear Sirs

I wrote to you on the 1st. inst—enclosing a small order; & also a Bill on CMS. for 66.16.10—wh. I hope will duly reach you.

I did not then think I shod. write you again so soon, but an oppory. offg. I avail myself of it. I now send you a large order, which, being all common articles, I hope you will fully attend to & very promptly execute. To meet it I enclose one of ea of 2 Setts of Bills on CMS.—one for £150— & one for £100— making £250.—

I have not time to write you fully now; but please bear in mind the various little hints I have given from time to time, w. ref. to *size, color, & stoutness*; in particular as to the Boots—to have *nails in their soles*. The *shawls* I know not how to describe, as the former lot of 18 (3 sorts) came together, named indeed in the Inv. but not in the Bale. However, the harsh red & black chequered worsted shawl is *not* the one required; but the other 2. The *Brazil* Hats must be of the best stout kind, or none.

Let the Bales, or Cases, be small, rather than large.

Please bear in mind, that you are not tied to the prices quoted: a few shillings more, per doz, or piece, I shall always *willgy*. give for the better or larger article.

Should the goods greatly exceed the money sent—send only 20 pairs of the 9/4 Blkts, instead of 30 as ordd., and 1 dozen new pairs of Boots, instead of 2 doz.

We very greatly prefer the *Angola* (or semi-ribbed) trowsers to the *Doeskin*: but whichever you send, bear in mind—the *stouter the better*.

There is a blue woollen shirt introd. which has a heavy nap—quite like a blanket, & is greatly liked; could you not send me a few?—

I confess I am disappd. in your Dupl. Invoice, you having promd. to *write in* detail. There are many enquiries of mine still unansd. I might, but I will not, take advantage of *another* error of yours: in this last lot of goods were 2 doz. B. knives, wh. are *not chgd.* in your Invoices; *this*, I suppose, you will rectify.

If you can get me any of the CMS. pubs. from June 1851 (gratis), I should be glad to have them.—

Is the “Brittania” npaper. still in existence? if so, I shod. like to get a copy.—

The last shipt.—£102.11.6—cost *in exps.* to door here £49.11.4!! You will see the abs. necy. of close packing. Last Casks badly packed—never use that harsh wheat straw, rather the fine grass I have seen used, & packed at manufacturies. I do not object to *good* Casks & if the Cask will take more, put in, to fill up.

Let the *Cloth Caps* ordd. have *large* fronts whether bound or not—sun is very powerful here in NZ.

Order: Decr. 31/53

30 yards good stout flannel, at about 1/6, or 1/8

6 grooms’ Black Jackets” cloth fronts & shallow sleeves
 2 sm.)
 2 mid) man’s size
 2 large)

½ doz. (ready made) white muslin cravats, not too fine, length, when folded, about 58 inches

1 doz. best Flat cord Trowsers—)
 6 woollen cord ditto (as a trial)) sizes

2 Blue Cloth Cloaks, with fur collars.
 1—same as supplied 30 Apl/53 but to have a dark fur collar
 1—ditto, about £2.5.0.

½ doz. strong Cotton Drawers.

20 yds. Printed Druggett—scarlet & light

4 shepherds plaid shawls (green colors)
 — 2—28/- as one sent pr. “Adml. S.”
 2—about 20/- or 22/-

2 Black Horse-hair Caps best quality & *largest* peaks—size 1, 7in., 1, 7¼in.

1 piece of colored Mosquito net—*strong* & large mesh.

1 piece of scarlet Lutestring ribbon, black figure 2in. wide.

½ doz. best saffron, in a bladder, & box

1 Ladies work box, similar to the one supplied 16 July 49.

2 cann. gunpowder

1 qt. spts wine

56 lbs sulph Copper steepg. seed wheat, price abt. 8d lb

56 lbs carb soda

2 doz 4 oz)
 2 doz 6 oz) *scented* Hair oil, about 1/- ea or *less*.

4 pieces stout worked wire for meat safe, ea. 2.0 x 2.0 set in a narrow hardwood frame, & wire painted.

1 doz. Packets Walkden’s Blk. ink Powders

½ doz Bridles, (*Head & Reins only*) Tinned Buckles, *without* Bits.

½ doz. Blue pint Jugs

1 doz Blue quart ditto

1 doz. wh. or yellow Bakers Dishes—2 sizes
 — 6 of 11in. “8d. ea”
 6 of 10in. “7d. ea”

6 doz. Blue Dishes Willow pattn.
 1 dz. of 10in 2 dz of 12in 2 of 14in 1 of 16in.

1 Tennyson’s Poems

Little pocket glass (size of walnut)
 or eye glass no. 2, *if such*

Sealing wax, 2 lbs. best Red

[20in, 18in, 16in, 1 dz of ea Tin Dishes]

see memo. to shoemaker

- 1 Carpenter's Brace—*not* the *Bitts*.
 2 men's saddles, 1 mid. 1 large—plain stout, hogskin seat
 6 pairs stout strong woollen girths
 6 pairs stout strong Linen wet ditto
 1 dz wh shirts lin. fronts abt 4/-
 1 dz merino vests 2 sizes mid & large
 2 pairs lace up gents walkg. shoes same size as measure
 4 steelyards 2–300—2–350 ea
 Maize mill—20/-
 1 dz Tin Basons "1/9 ea" 12 June/52

To Dixon

1. 1 ream y.w. hot pressed Post—Blue long folio
 Ruled 4 lines to the inch
 —Foolscap do.
 Steelyards—2, or so.
 Girths
 Ink Powders
 Londn. Porter)
 Br. stout) in Bott.
 2. 1 ream Best laid
 3. 1 ream middle do.
 4. 1 Ream Best cream satin post
 5. Mem. Books.
 ½ gross red leather "8d" ruled blue lines only
 ½ gross ditto "6d"
 ½ gross ditto marbled paper covers "3d."
 6. Candles—2 doz. Belmont sperm 6d.
 7. 1 doz. scizzors
 8. razors 2 dozen 4/- or 5/-
 9. Fish Hooks, length 2½: breadth of bowed part ⅞
 10. Capers 1 Bott
 11. 1 Bottle mushroom ketchup
 12. 1 Bottle Harvey's sauce
 12. Hair seating—chairs (6 chairs 22in long 18 upper 20 lower width & sofa?
 14. 1, long *thin* wool cushion 5.10 long 1.11 wide
 15. Bath Bricks 4
 Marb. paper & Red cloth for Encyc. Britann. by & bye
 Lity Gazette—nos. of
 16. Keatings cough Lozenges 1 tin
 17. Lavender water 2 Bottles best
 18. Bridles
 19. Pinned-handle knives, 1 doz—6/6) *pinned* handles
 1 doz—, 8/6) & curved blades
 - 20 Wedg. rings 1 gr.
 21. 1 doz. d. stones
 22. 4 Shoes, Latty—2 pairs size of no.91
 —2 pairs 1 size larger
 23. 4 ——— Fanny—2 pairs 1 size larger
 —2 pairs 2 sizes larger than last, no.91
 24. 6 pr.— Wi—3 *Red*) child 2 yrs. old
 —3 Blk Leather) 2 sizes
 25. 2 prs. Boots, self, same as "no.24a"—order Apl 30/50
 2 pr d— ½ size smaller—*smallest* hob nails in
 bottom & heels
 26. 2 lbs old Brown Wonder soap
 27. Turkey red Long cloth Twilled childns. dresses
 28. gloves, *garden* & daily wear
 29. 30 yds. good welsh flannel—wh. will not shrink
 30. 20 yds Brown Linen
 31. 20 yds Brown Holland
 32. 1 doz. pairs colored cotton socks Boy 8 yrs
 1 doz ————10 yrs
 33. 1 gross Black & White Hooks & Eyes, sizes
 34. 2 dozen round stoutest Tin Dishes— 4 of 20 inches
 4 of 18
 4 of 16
 4 of 12
 4 of 10
 4 of 8
 35. 4 dozen stout Blue & White handled mugs
 36. 3 dozen Blue pint handled mugs
 36. 3 dozen d— quart d—
 37. ½ dozen Jack planes & Irons
 38. Shoe Blacking—paste
 39. 2 *large* Gardeners Rakes
 40. 1 prong digging up Docks
 41. 2 pieces strong coarse dark gingham for Native girls
 42. 1 piece neat pink striped ditto for child's frocks
 43. pair sieves 2 sizes
 44. Tin of London Gingerbread
- These added, *not* written with copying Ink
45. 6 Reticules, common marketing from Basket makers
 2 largest 2 mid 2 small
 46. 12 or 14 lbs prunes in a Jar
 47. 1 lb. Tart. Acid.
 48. 1 oz Juniper
 49. 2 good Balls
 2 Tops & Cords—1 humming top
 50. a dissected map of the world
 51. a few pounds of Tamarinds in a Jar
 52. 200 ft. glass 8 x 10
- I intend to write again when I next hear from you.

Don't forget me with a few Papers & other periodicals.

Wrote a short *private* note to Mr Latter.

Order, to Dixon, Decr. 1853

=====		
<i>Blankets</i> , 30 pairs best stout white 9/4-----13/9	20.12.6	
20 d-----15/4-----16/-	16. -.	-
<i>Trowsers</i> , 2 doz. angola/or Doeskin,) no.1---117/-	11.14. -	
2 doz. d----- no.2---129/-	12.18. -	
2 dz. moleskin lined soft & dark ---64/-	6. 8. -	
2 dz. d----- white-----70/-	7. ---	
3 dz. Duck stout-----24/-	3.12. -	
<i>Shirts</i> , 5 dz. Common - (better yr. last) ---20/6	5. 2. 6	
4 dz. best Sc. Twill-----27/-	5. 8. -	
4 dz. white-----24/-	4.16. -	
4 dz. yacht-----21/-	4. 4. -	
4 dz. chemises (Mar 11/51) -----25/-	5. ---	
4 dz. Blue serge <i>extra long</i> -----51/-	10.14. -	
3 dz. Red -----54/-	8. 2. -	
<i>Handkfs.</i> 2 dz. Black silk-----50/-	5. 0. 0	
2 dz. Fancy neck-----42/-	4. 4. -	
8 dz. Turkey Red-----9/6	3.16. -	
6 dz. Bandanna-----4/-	1. 4. -	
<i>Prints.</i> 6 pieces Navy Blue 5/4-----11/9	3.10. 6	
2 dz. Ptd. Cott. Dresses (<i>all various</i>) - 3/6	4. 4. 0	
10 pieces Fancy Print-----12/-	6. ---	
2 pieces Pink Gingham, large patt.--	2. 2. 0	
<i>Shawls</i> 1 doz. (Cravat like)-----5/-?	3. ---	
1 doz. (silk lines)-----6/-?	3.12. -	
2 shawls at about 20/- or 18/- -----	2. -.	-
4 "Victoria Table Covers"- scarlet &c 9/-	1.16. -	
<i>Calico.</i> 3 pieces stout grey 36in. -----)		
2 d-----bleached good & wide)	7. ---	
<i>Coats &c</i> 2 Blk "P. Albert Cord"-----26/-	2.12. -	
2 Mixed Tweed)		
2 Angola?) @ abt. 15/- -----	3. 0. 0	
6 Tunics (Mar 11/51)-----21/-	6. 6. -	
1 large waterproof cloak (of same material say 5/-	1.10. 0	
<i>Hats, &c</i> 6 dz. Best wh. Brazl. Hats)		
turned up edges)-----24/-	7. 4. -	
2 dz. Cloth Caps-----40/-	4. ---	
	220. 0. 6	

The places I have selected are as follows:

100 acres at Ouepoto, commencing from S. Headland:

60 acres at Pohatupapa (where, however, there are *not* 25 a. of level ground):

240 (say) at Porangahau; from above the *pa* (N. Bank) to Pipitawai (the old village). The River, the S. & SW boundaries, the hills on W. & N. sides; &, on reaching the E. termination of S. spur of hills, thence, in a straight line, across the swamp to Pipitawai. (see enclosed sketch)

60 acres of forest Land at Eparima

460 acres

The last is conditional—i.e. at present. But I have no doubt whatever that I shall succeed in getting the Natives to sell you some forest land, upon the promise of my coming into their neighbourhood.

Ouepoto I like best of all *for a residence*; but there is no wood, & disagreeable neighbours.

Pohatupapa, I secure chiefly for the little wood, which is also so easy of access from Ouepoto.

Porangahau—I take nearly *all* the flat (marshy though it be in winter and spring, as I have often *proved*). The River is said to be the boundary, but I shall endeavor to get the natives to sell you the two dotted peninsulas, which will soon be islets, and which (if I get them) I shall make to be such; as, in so doing, it will wonderfully ease their village, & all the neighbouring banks, in time of waipukes.

You will therefore see that I have selected 460 acres! = £230. —which money I shall be ready to pay in Cash, either at Wellington, or here: but (I suppose) that the two last mentioned spots (300 acres) would not have to be paid for until you have purchased. —

Now if you can aid me in any way towards acquiring immediate legal right to those spots you will confer an obligation. I need some one to act *promptly* for me in the matter. You may....

[page(s) missing]³⁰⁷

1853 December 29: to Williams³⁰⁸

1853 December 12: to McLean³⁰⁶

Eparima
Decr. 21, 1853

D. McLean, Esq.,

My dear Sir,

You will almost be surprised to receive a note from me from *this* place, and in *pencil* too! But, the fact is—I came here yesterday with only *one* Native by way of the Coast, (by which route I intend returning to Waitangi on Monday next,) looking out for a piece of ground as a residence. —

I have at length concluded to purchase 3 or 4 spots—if all such are still open. Some, I should suppose, must be so—as the Land is not yet purchased by you. —

306 ATL Object #1018317 from MS-Papers-0032-0221.

1854 January 3: to Straith³⁰⁹

Waitangi,
Hawke's Bay,
New Zealand, Jany. 3, 1854

Major Hector Straith,

My dear Sir,

1. Your letter of the 2nd June 1853 reached me here last month; and very very sorry am I to have had such a communication from you.

307 As his next letter to Elizabeth shows, he failed to secure these coastal "spots".

308 Appended to Colenso to Straith 3 January 1854; ATL qMS-0492. Hocken MS vol 63.

309 ATL qMS-0492. Hocken MS vol 63.

2. I had previously been appraised by Archdn. W. Williams, as well as by Mr. Vidal, of the decision of the Parent Committee respecting me: for which, I confess, I was utterly unprepared. Now, however, that I have received your Official Letter I cannot delay acknowledging it.

3. Perhaps, under all circumstances; I had better not say anything more (if I have not said too much already); than to express my great grief at the steps the Parent Commee. have taken in dissolving their connexion with me, and to inform you, that I have no present intention of leaving this District.—

4. My future movements of every kind will, I trust, be wholly [2] directed by Him who has promised never to leave never to forsake, and who changeth not. I still trust to experience (with David), that when my father & mother forsake me there is One, who will take me up. I only wish to be as a *little* child before Him. I hope now to cease from looking to man: this, however, is a hard lesson.

5. I little thought that I should thus end—or, rather, that you (whom I have faithfully served,) could thus cut me adrift—to want, it may be, in my old years. Perhaps I have trusted even the C.M.Society too much: Time with shew.

6. You request me, Sir, to “aid” my flock “in placing themselves quietly under *any* spiritual guide that may supply my place.” Can I conscientiously do this? I trust, sinner though I am, that I never have been, and am not a hireling: GOD’s will be done; with respect to both myself & my flock. His counsel shall stand.—

7. Believing, as I do, that the Commee. have acted wrongly in *this* matter towards both me and my people; I cannot [3] but believe, that the great Head of the Church will, sooner or later, (if I am right) shew them their error: may He do so gently yet convincingly.

8. I have yet a small portion of my Journal (which is your rightful due) to copy; this I hope to do very shortly; which will, I suppose, close my writing to and for you.

9. I enclose copies of my Letters to Archdn. W. Williams & Mr. Vidal; I do this, not because they can now be desired by you, but because I have hitherto sent you copies of all Letters I have written respecting this sad affair, and these will (I both suppose & hope) quite close my writing upon the same—and may be of some service hereafter.—

10. I can never cease to pray for the C.M.S.—both in their work at home and abroad. I have eaten their bread for nearly 20 years. May our gracious LORD and Master abundantly bless you—all! Remember me ever, my dear Sir, in your prayers, and believe me, to be

Yours very truly,
(unfortunate yet still attached)
William Colenso.

[1] (Copy)

Waitangi, Novr. 28,
1853.

R.Vidal, Esqr.,³¹⁰

Dear Sir,

On Saturday last the 26th inst., I received your Letter of the 24th ulto. and, although I have not yet received the original Letter from Major Straith, to which you refer, yet as I have

had a copy thereof sent me from Archdeacon W. Williams, and as the Messenger who brought it returns immediately—I hasten to reply to your Letter.—

The C.M. Society having been pleased (most unexpectedly to me) to dissolve their connexion with me, I, consequently cannot consent to return to *England*. Neither do I propose (for the present, at least,) to remove from this district.

Had they simply recalled me (although even such a separation from my people would be painful) I should have considered it to be my duty to obey their order.

If it be indeed (as you say) “absolutely necessary for the cause of Xt. that I should quit N. Zealand,” and that “without delay”:—then HE [2] who sent me to this land,—who has all power in heaven & in earth,—and to whom all judgment hath been committed—will assuredly remove me from it.

I have also to acknowledge a Letter, which I received from you a short time ago (viz. on the 10th of August.) addressed to me as a Layman; dated March 12/53, and enclosing an extract from the Minutes of Central Commee. held at Auckland on the 2nd of that month.—I am not aware of this Letter now requiring any specific answer.—

And, thanking you for your “very sincere sympathies” so kindly expressed—(the first I have had from any of the C.M. body in N. Zealand)—I am,

Dear Sir,
Very faithfully Yours
William Colenso.

P.S. Mr. Archdn. W. Williams, in sending me a memo. of my a/c. debits me with “Books, £2.6.0”: and, in a note, adds,—“there is a parcel of Books now in Mr Vidal’s store, which are possibly the Books here charged.” If so, please send them to my Agents at Wellington, Messrs. Bethune & Hunter, as I know nothing of the Books with which I am debited. W.C.

[1] (Copy)

Waitangi, Decr. 29,
1853.

Ven. Archdeacon W. Williams,
Sir,

1. In answering your letter of the 14th ulto. (which I did on the 28th ulto., and which I was obliged to do in a more hurried way than I could have wished,) I omitted a sentence, or paragraph, which I have since thought, I ought to have inserted. And, as I believe it to be of some little import, (if not to the C.M.S., at all events to myself,) and as I suppose, that you will, as usual, attend the Central Commee., I now take upon myself to write it to you, for your, and their, information.—

2. The sentence, which I think I should have written, and which should have place amongst the few reasons I gave you for my still remaining on this spot, is as follows:—That, I have heard from respectable European authority, that, in case the Waitangi Mission Station should be abandoned by the C.M.S., or another site be given them by the Natives [2] for a Mission Station, the C.M.S. could not (or, would not) be allowed by the Government to have any claim to the spot of Land at Waitangi.—

310 A copy of this letter, in Vidal’s handwriting, accompanies a letter from Vidal to Octavius Hadfield (Hocken ARC-0180).

3. Now, Sir, if such be the case, (and, in your going to Auckland you can enquire fully, and satisfy yourself,) it appears to me (and perhaps to others) very plain, that no one—not even the natives who *were* once the proprietors,—can advance such a right, or claim, to be heard & considered, as myself—who have both expended³¹¹ and labored much upon the spot, as well as lost greatly through the calamitous fire of last year. A claim which, I venture to think, would, if advanced, be allowed.—At all events, we well know, that by the Colonial Ordinance, all residents—even squatters of the very lowest grade—are allowed to have the first right to purchase their homesteads.—

4. I trust, Sir, that you will quite believe, that in my writing I am not actuated by any desire to establish a claim to Waitangi [3] against the right of the C.M.S.; (far, very far be such a thought from me;) but, rather, that, if what I have heard and stated be correct, I may (at least) be allowed to advance it as a claim to be considered for my present residence.

I should have written to you before but I lacked opportunity, and even now I am without one.

And am,
Sir,
Yours very truly
William Colenso

[1] Waitangi,
Monday Morng., Novr. 28,
1853.

Ven. Archdn. Williams,

Sir,

Your Letter of the 14th. inst.,—covering a copy of a Letter from Major Straith of the 2nd. June 1853, and a memo. of a/c between the C.M.S. & myself—reached me here on Saturday night last. And as the messenger is returning immediately to Te Wairoa, I hasten to reply thereto: which, however, I shall be necessitated to do in a very concise and rough way.

I have *not* yet received the original of Major Straith's Letter.

I am exceedingly surprised at the Resolution of the Parent Commee.; for which, I confess, I was totally unprepared.

I wholly decline their proposal of returning to England; as I cannot see such to be my path of duty.

Had the CMS. merely recalled me home, (although even for this step I should also have been unprepared) I should consider it to be my duty to obey.

I have no present intention of removing from this district. Of course [2] I *cannot* say I shall not remove from this spot.—Notwithstanding, I still adhere to my original views, that (even for you all who now wish me away) I am better left quietly here for a season. Otherwise I must necessarily purchase Land ere I can remove, which will, of course firmly fix me—and that perhaps (seeing there is not at present much choice) where you may also consider me to be much more in the way.

As a matter of course, now that the Society have dissolved their connexion with me, I could not wish to remain a moment on this their ground (I do *not* say “*their* premises”); had it not been for (among other) the following reasons.—

1. The loss of the dwelling-house by fire, and the certainty that another will *not* be erected on this ground.
2. Its present isolated situation, the Natives having removed from Te Awapuni and other neighbouring villages.
3. My having obtained for them (the CMS.) a good & highly suitable site for a M. Station.
4. The present buildings (the store excepted) not yet having been in any way paid for by the Society.—
5. My having several *heavy* & cumbrous articles,—which, though private property, were certainly had for the benefit of the [3] Mission Cause & Natives:—such as, Printing Press,—Type in Cases & Boxes—Printing Materials—Binding Presses and Binding Material; Printing paper, several hundred weight, &c.
5. The impossibility of my being able to remove—even if again “requested” to do so—until I should get a proper house erected.
6. Every thing being more or less the work of my own hands.—
7. My long Service.
8. (and last, though not the least). The Settlers about me, who are mostly Presbyterian, know the truth of what I have here stated;—many of them were much opposed to me (not however originally, on account of my sad fall), some of them now begin to look upon me as a *persecuted* person; and a very little more of severity would fully establish that belief; and which, I know, would act greatly against the interests of the Protestant Episcopal Mission in these parts.—

I cannot now speak as to the correctness or not of the memo. of a/c. which you have furnished. 1st. as to *debit*, £32.6.0;—all my necessary papers from CMS., having been long ago sent to the Secy. E.D. Commee. (Mr. Baker) for his inspection; who, I believe, passed them [4] on to Mr. Barker; I have subsequently applied *twice* for them, but in vain:—2nd. As to *credit*; the travelling expenses in that year ('52), were £39.17.0, as per a/c. rendered, (being increased through the Bishop's visit,) of which you have only allowed me £23.8.9!—

I should have thought that my heavy losses through fire (not to mention many other extra expenses incurred of late,) would rather have called forth your pecuniary sympathies.—

I do not recollect having ever written a Letter to Mr. Fairburn concerning my error, to which you have particularly alluded. I gave his son John a long & faithful relation of the sad affair; and, on the busy night of his leaving with the children, I hastily wrote down a few heads of enquiry to his father, whom I *was then* led to believe would (as a matter of course) prove a friend; that paper I then submitted both to Mr. John Fairburn & to his sister, and they did not in any way disapprove of it. Such cannot, I think, be justly called a Letter; such ought not, I presume, to be urged against me.

311 WC: *Exclusive* of the sum of £95 allowed by Major Straith in his Letter of August [**] as will appear from documents formerly sent to the E.D. Commee.

I wrote Letters to—Rev. J Hamlin, Mr. Baker, & Mr. Puckey, in answer [5] to letters from them upon the sad matter; to all that I have said in those Letters I am prepared to stand to; always excepting any peculiarly warm or superlative expression, which may have arisen from injured or excited feelings.—I am not aware of my having written to any other persons N. of me—the Bp. excepted.

You do not, Sir, know the *whole* matter, nor is it likely that you (or any one in these islands) ever will. Perhaps had you been at Turanga, I should have *first* applied to you, and things might have been different—at least in reference to your and others opinion of me.—

You know well the vast difference which even a *suppressio veri*³¹² makes in a story, how much more than a *suggestio falsi*³¹³ but when both of these exist, and are also viewed through the colored glasses, or a lens of high power, the alteration and distortion are immense.—

You tell me, Sir, that I have sinned “grievously against GOD”—I knew this long ago, long before I wrote to the Bishop—long before any one here (save ourselves, the persons immediately concerned,) knew anything of the matter. I have *never said to the contrary*. [6]

You, also, tell me of my “indifference & insensibility” to this grievous sin. Here is another sad proof of an error of judgment on your part.—I indifferent! insensible!! GOD, Sir, knows to the contrary: my many many bitter nights and days of weeping and praying tell me another tale. If I had £10,000 I would gladly give it—Yea, to *my* very last farthing—not to have so foolishly transgressed. And since, I have done *all* that has been in my power (as far as I have seen) towards counteracting it.

At the same time, I confess, that I have not magnified my sin—either in the abstract, or in its attendant circumstances,—or in its consequences,—as some have done. That many evils have since sprung up, and that many more will follow, is true; but, *I am not to be charged with these*. For, on the contrary, I believe, that I could still have safely steered my bark through all the shoals & dangers, as hitherto, (saving my charge, though losing myself,) had it been left to me; but the helm was injudiciously torn from my hand; hence these numerous evils. Mr. McLean truly enough remarked to me the other day,—“Your people, Mr. Colenso, *were* in good [7] order”—(but why go so far, when the Bishop had told me the same?). That they are *not* so *now*, is not to be attributed to me; rather to the Bishop’s ill-judged (not *illegal*) suspension. Had I *then* left them (as then, too, unfed!!!) sure enough I am, that many of them would have joined the Papists; and what a shock would have been caused throughout N.Z.! Through my remaining, however, *not one* has joined them. To GOD be all praise.

You *may* ask, Why I wish to remain here (in this neighbourhood) *sans* comfort? I wait, sir, my Master’s pleasure; to see, perhaps, his vindication of His poor & despised & much-injured servant; *not*, mind, His approval of sin. Let this, for the time, be sufficient.

I have had plenty of proof as to my mission; I have them now; some, however, are gone before. I am quite satisfied on this head; others will be by-and-bye. Justice will be done me.

I am alone, as to man; from whom I have had *no* help. *All* have deserted me. I am sorry, truly sorry, that you too should be among the number. Yet it is natural that you should, IF you could believe [8] all you heard. Still, such is not ordinarily the case; the worst have some friend or relation to stand by them; but in this I have been made to be like my Master; and HE has graciously afforded strength. How true it is, that adversity tries both love and friendship! Notwithstanding, I believe you to be Servants of GOD: but, oh! if HE were to deal with you as you (all) have dealt with me!!

It cannot be denied that every one of you has acted in the most severe and rigorous manner towards me. To prove this, it has only to be asked, what more could you have done?

I did not intend to say so much: I now stop. I hope I shall not have offended you in the freeness of my unpolished remarks; I do not wish to do so.—

It remains with you to send or not the sum so long due to me from the CMS.—Some for wages hardly-earned, some for monies paid out. *I do not intend to ask for it*. I regret exceedingly that I have been obliged to use one of the Bills originally drawn for Building purposes; this I have very lately done much against my will.³¹⁴ I have wanted, of late; (of course, owing to the disastrous fire;) I may, very likely, again want; if [9] needful for me, I shall. But, I have been repeatedly taught to cease from man; may I remember this Lesson.—

For many years we (*taua*,³¹⁵ particularly,) have gone on together. We are now separated, but we shall meet again. So act, my dear Sir, as to have no misgivings at that meeting. I love you and your work as much as ever, and shall (while I live) never cease to pray for both. Continue, also, to offer up your prayers for me, I need them, much.—

May GOD bless and prosper You! And, if it pleases Him, may HE give you to be one of the first to do justice to His deeply injured though most unworthy Servant,

William Colenso.

P.S. There must certainly have been some Ch. Missy. Publications sent me, as usual, prior to the date of Major Straith’s Letter; (I have had none now for nearly two years;) these, I think, should not be withheld from me. W.C.

1854 March 27: to Elizabeth Colenso³¹⁶

(No. 6) WAITAIGI, Monday, March 27th.
1854.

Mrs. Elizabeth Colenso,
Otahuhu, near Auckland.

My dear Elizabeth,

Your note, dated Feby. 19th., last, per Mr. Alexander, I received a few days ago; and now that the little Auckland vessel, in which he came to Ahuriri, is about returning, I

314 WC: This, however *has been debited against me* in the memo. of a/c. forwarded by the Archd.

315 WC: *taua*—Thou & I: dual.

316 ATL Ms-papers-9478-1. Annotated “No.6”: Nos 1 to 5 are letters from Elizabeth to him.

312 Suppression of the truth.

313 Suggestion of something that is untrue.

must endeavour to answer it. The other note (of which you speak, as having been sent by Mr. Hamlin) dated December 21st., I only received a day or two before the arrival of this—its counterpart. So that more than 5 long months had passed from your leaving Wairoa before I even heard from you at all, and then your two notes (especially your last) are written in such a way as even to make unpalatable the long anticipated feast.

I own that I am quite at a loss to account for your new mode of acting; that is, when I remember how often you spoke about writing fully to me concerning the 2 dear children; (you yourself having tasted a little of the miserable state of uncertainty when here;) and, also, how often you declared what a good child you would train Wi to be &c. &c. &c. I *cannot*, Elizabeth, bring myself to believe that all this was said by you as mere patipatu; for all your notes from Te Wairoa bear testimony to your correct feeling in this matter. In your *last* note (Feby. 19) written 2 full months after the former one, you do not ever once allude to Fanny or Latty; so that, had not Mr. Hamlin kindly informed me concerning them, I should not have known of their being alive! And then, as to Wi: Oh! how you have been drawn aside to falsify your *solemnly pledged* word—and that pledge too, often made by you a matter of prayer to God, as well as *repeatedly* given. I knew (alas! too well) how lightly you considered certain oaths and promises; and I have seen, (to my grief) that you were confirmed in that opinion from what you had heard here from our superiors. Still, I *did* believe, that you really loved Wi, and believing this, I knew that it would enable you to overcome all opposition—even supposing that your belief in the religious part of your promises concerning the child might be shaken through the plausibleness or number of your friends, especially if dressed in the garb of religion.

Yes, Elizabeth, I did believe this, and this was my *only* earthly stay during the first few months of my melancholy life. It is true, that my belief in your affection for the child received a shock when I was so suddenly summoned to go immediately to Te Wairoa to bring him back; but even then I did not fully give way—as I had not received any letter from *you* to do so; and when I found at Moeangiangi your letter per Ihaka (assuring me of your being confirmed in your love &c. towards the child, and desiring me to return) I rejoiced and gave God thanks that He had again enabled you to do what was right for the poor orphan; and again believed you, aye, more than ever. And here, perhaps, you will allow me to refresh your memory with a few sentences from your last letter from Te Wairoa: in yours of Sept. 24th., (after mentioning all about Mr. Grace and others who had endeavoured to prevail upon you to abandon the child) you say, “Do not make yourself uneasy about Wi: I shall not alter my conduct towards him, let people say what they will. Dear little Wi is now asleep in his crib. I did not know how much I loved him till after I had written that letter for you to come to fetch him and then the thought of parting with him often made the tears start into my eyes. I did not feel comfortable not being sure that I had done right in so writing; and when the messenger acted as he did with the letters, I felt as though it were a sign, a “tohu” that Wi was to go on with me. I prayed often to be directed aright in the matter. If the vessel comes in, the “Eliza” or “Antelope” I shall, please God, go by the first, taking Wi with me, of course.” In yours of 27th. Sept. you say—“My dearest William—Do not come on for Wi, or send for him. *I cannot part with him*. If you are on your way, *return*.... I feared the child being taken from me and sent back by a native, but on

considering it afterwards I thought it could not be done unless *I* consented, and that I never could do.” (The underlinings are all your own). Here, then, Elizabeth, are two things painfully apparent; (that is on the face of your last 2 notes) your wonderful alteration for the worse towards the child and myself. I am sure the conduct of the child could not have been a means of your so altering towards him; and I am equally at a loss to know in what way I have subsequently offended you. God is my witness—and there are living human witnesses hereto, (Roka, Matisha, and others)—and I cannot but suppose that my long letters to you by every opportunity, and my little diligent works for you all (both those sent, and these here, now some time ready to go) would all testify—that *it has long been my chief delight to be doing something for you and the children*. Had you, Elizabeth, left this place in a hurry 2 years ago,—or, had you not known all (and a vast deal more than all, which I have never cared to deny) concerning me before you left, I then could see a reason for your so sadly and so soon altering towards us; but such is *not* the case. I warned you, Elizabeth, to beware of your counsellors—more especially of that of the men of the world,—most so of that of the pseudo-religious world of the day. I earnestly besought you *to be guided by the word of God alone*. That you have *not* done so, your note is sufficient proof. You tell me, in your note, what some say respecting the likeness of Wi to Hamuera. Is this new? Did we not often say as much? It would be vastly more wonderful if there were no resemblance. The *cause* is as old as the days of Jacob, at least, who artfully contrived and succeeded; and if you take the two children born nearest to us—Maora’s and Riria’s *last*, you will again see it strongly exemplified: Maora’s resembling Mr. Keir, fair and *light-haired*: (whereas Maora and her husband have jet-black hair and dark complexions, as you well know), and Riria’s quite a little mulatto, growing more and more so—the very image of Pompey the black—both parents being *fair* natives. And then, again, look at Rebecca’s *second* child; was it not the very miniature of the old chief Wi Tipuna? Even Hamuera saw the striking resemblance in the new-born and sickly infant, and the mother also acknowledged it. Dr. English (who has a tolerable share of practice and who often calls) told me, a few months ago, of the great difference between the skin of a native and that of a European or half-caste; a difference which exists even in their infants: the skin of the natives, old and young, quite turning the edge of his lancet, and sometimes being quite impenetrable. Now this, *we too*, have seen; and Wi’s skin is, I believe, thinner than that of any child I have seen here. But I have a *more sure proof*, and I, for my own part am satisfied. But, beyond all this, supposing (for argument’s sake) Wi to be Hamuera’s real child—should this make any difference now? You stood as his godmother when *you* knew not but that he was Hamuera’s child; and, afterwards, you not only helped, but mainly assisted in retaining him (for so doing you shall ever have my hearty thanks) when, if he had been carried off, he perhaps would have died. And, again, when the Bishop was last here, had you not consented to bring him up, he would not (I suppose) have gone to the North. You alone knew what a fearful struggle took place that night, and mainly about the child. And you know what I said to you, and what *you answered* in the last bitter hour of parting. Here is a soul born for eternity as the child is brought up so will he (humanly speaking) live and die. It is in our power (or rather it *was* in mine—it is still, in some degree, in *yours*) to do much for the child, and I, by God’s grace, will to the last do all I can. Do not, Elizabeth, do not act cruelly towards

Wi—I mean, do not (after all your promises and prayers) leave him to be brought up a little Sabbath-breaker, as a little Heathen, never taught to pray. Doubtless you are (as you always were) very kind to your little nephews and nieces; but there cannot be any shadow of doubt that, *before God, the Church, and your own conscience* little Wi has a higher and prior claim. You took him from us—from his mother—and you should (spite of all that your relations and friends can say) act a Mother's part. If you do not, then I shall fear greatly for Latty and Fanny; for I have always seen through life *the evil harsh measure meted back*.

You tell me, moreover, that your father and your brothers would not allow the infant to enter their doors. This subject, you must recollect, *we* had more than once talked over here. I knew, too well, the unkind ways of the world to suppose any other, unless the Grace of God. should have changed the hearts of those whom you were (then) soon to see: and this, I confess, I did not hope: and that, firstly, because your father had been considered to be a more strictly *Bible* Christian than many Church of England men are, hence he had spoken of himself as a Dissenter: and, secondly, because your brother John, to whom I had spoken as a brother (when here) had shown a kind feeling towards the infant, and had even told me that “I should never want a home while he had one”, and then I believed in their affection for you, and I strengthened myself in yours for the child; and all combined, I dared to hope for the best—but have again been bitterly disappointed.

However, viewing the whole matter as I do, I cannot see any way of excuse for you (before God) in casting-off the child. You were not so utterly dependent upon either your father or brothers as to cause you to do so. It has, however, proved your often-written and declared love for Wi. Suppose, for a moment (and do not be offended with me) suppose Wi was *your own* son (like the case of M.D... at the North) and you gone to your family and had been so treated—how would you have acted?—even if you had not had a shilling in your pocket—would you have consented to the separation? I utterly renounce the idea: I feel assured you would never have done so.

—A fire was once within my brain;
And in my hand a dull, dull pain;
But then there came a sight of joy,
It came at once to do me good;
I waked and saw my little boy,
My little boy of flesh and blood;
Oh joy for me that sight to see!
For he was here, and only he.—

I greatly wish you had told me more concerning this Henry Smith. Is he a religious man? Does he go with his family to any place of worship on the Sabbath-day? and, if so, to what denomination of Christians? Are his own little ones taught to pray &c.—these are the principal things I am anxious to learn. I went purposely last week to Ahuriri (for the *first* time since you left) to enquire of Mr. Alexander, but he could not satisfy me; and I have lately written to Mr. Hamlin to enquire of him. I have diligently considered the matter, according to what little information I have, and I cannot see that after all it will be for the child's good to take him back just now. I am sure he is better away from these parts that he may learn the English tongue, which will ever be a taonga to him; and could I but know of his being with a pious and kind person, I should be comparatively happy. I gladly consent to pay the £12 per ann. to you for him (although I hardly know at present how I am to do so)

which I hope to make, at least, £16 yearly, and which sum £16 or more) I intend to send to you by next vessel—if soon—or by way of Wellington. Mr. Alexander tells me that he hopes to have a vessel regularly trading to and from Auckland; and he has promised me a draft on his agent there. I did think of writing a note to this Henry Smith, but on second thoughts I considered it better to wait until I should hear from you again, which I hope soon to do. You have desired me *not* to send you anything more; and you *may* soon add—not to write you anything more; which, however, I hope you will not do. If Henry Smith is a man of no religion, and you could remove Wi to a better place (in this respect) do so. What is the Wesleyan Institution, where I hear there are children? Could you not enquire through your friend, Mrs White?

As you do not say a word about the 2 children in your note, so you say not a word about yourself. And I cannot gather from the few lines you have written that you are comfortable. You went, Elizabeth, seeking happiness; and I sincerely hope you have found it; but, somehow, I question it, as such is only found in the path of duty; which, I fear, you are scarcely now in.

I wrote you a note last month by Powhatu, which I suppose you have received. For very shame I dare not tell the natives here of your having written, and not a word about Fanny and Latty, and Wi cast away! We (Roka, Wiki and myself) worked hard in picking and preserving raspberries and gooseberries, and in drying Inangas, for you all:—but now, alas!—

I hoped that the C.M.S. would allow the 2 children's schooling, and they *may* yet do so: if not, I shall not be able to pay for it, unless I sell off the few head of cattle. I am now doing nothing in the way of getting a livelihood; and through your putting Wi out to board &c. the following sums must be yearly forthcoming:—Wi, say, £16, Matiaha £12, self, say £20 = £48. I shall live as low as possible; and if C.M.S. will pay the children's schooling, I hope to be able to do something for you, but I see no present prospect of funds sufficient to enable us to live separately. The butter here, this spring and autumn, would have been worth more than £30 had there been anyone to look after it. If I remain here another year, I intend (D.V.) to *sell* the apples, instead of giving them away as I have done this year. Perhaps some *suitable* situation may yet turn up for me in these parts, or elsewhere. I think that I told you of my having scraped up all the money I could and sent it to my London agent for goods, which may sell well here if he forwards them speedily. My times are, however, wholly in God's hand. As for myself, I often wish for a *friend* at hand, or a little *suitable* society. I have not yet purchased any land; 3 small spots which I have selected (on the Coast) and wrote to Wellington to obtain, on my going to Mr. Domett the Land Commissioner I found that they were *all gone*! But even in this, I think I see an over-ruling Providence; it may be that I shall never possess any land in New Zealand—and I am sure, except for a quiet residence, or for the children, I do not covet to do so.

You tell me, in your first note, of my cousin being made a Bishop. The news was strange to my ears, and stranger still it appeared to me that *such* information should have been written from *Otauhu*,—whence the letter to me before this one contained so much abuse of my family— who certainly never did the writer of that letter any injury—but so God brings things to pass.

I have since heard that my cousin's appointment is Port Natal on the African Coast and he may write to me to go thither to him. God may have more work for me to do yet in His Great Vineyard; and, if *so*, He will again open the way for me, and again fit me for it.

We have just had another taste of our old trouble, te Waipuke; and a heavier one than any, save the first great one. The water was 4 inches over the floor of school-room and store, and remained at its height a whole day and night. The Pakonoa natives worked hard (for their own sakes) in cutting through the bank, but did not succeed; it however burst and the waters drained off. This was on Thursday last, and it is still raining, it having commenced to rain on Wednesday the 15th! We never saw the sea so greatly in upon us before; it came over the beach without breaking and not only into Waitangi River, but right across! so that I almost feared our houses would be washed away! The whole beach, I am sorry to say, is now flat, so that all Hawke's Bay is open to view. I caught a very severe cold going about in the flood; the whole next day I could scarcely move, but am now a little better. An earthquake occurred on Friday night, a pretty strong one; and another last night, not quite so strong, both about midnight. A settler's son, a boy about 10 years, was drowned at Waimarama last week, washed quite out of his neighbour's hand in crossing the usually shallow river there! body not found. Henry Tomoana's second wife is dead; ditto Te Wai: ditto Paora Torotoro's child and some others. A native from Waipukurau stole my enamelled rice saucepan and a new pair of woollen trowsers (20/- value) from the store. I suspected someone from inland, and wrote a note to Hamuera, and through his searching it was found out. I have since been to the Magistrate about it, and also about Matiu Meke who seems to be really bursting with hatred & malevolence against me; watching for, obtaining and opening all letters I may write to any native, no matter to whom, and having made their contents public (with his own additions) retains them! Matiu's conduct is most insolent and unbearable; the respectable white settlers say: "If it was their case they would break his head with a stick". The Magistrate told me I could proceed against him for felony, if I wished; I, however, have no wish to injure the poor creature, far from it; and the Magistrate has promised to write to him. Nearly all the whites blame me greatly for my lenity, saying that such conduct being not only mean, oft repeated, and felonious, but also unprovoked and ungrateful, ought not to be thus passed over, especially seeing that his own man (Kopakau's brother-in-law) stole some things from this place; to which, no doubt, Matiu's oft denouncing and abusing of me had in a measure prepared the way. I cannot, however, consent to harsh measures; (although I am aware that half-measures will never do any good with these natives) knowing, as I do, that Matiu has been led away through the teaching of his superiors; who too plainly taught these natives uncharitableness; and not only so, but what our Saviour prophesied—"*They shall put you out of the synagogue; yea, the time cometh that whosoever killeth you will think that he doth God's service.*" (John XVI.2.) and the reason (verse 3)—"*These things will they do unto you because they have not known the Father nor me,*" applies to both. Both parties being alike wilfully ignorant of this truth,—that "*God is love*" and "*Love is the fulfilling of the Law.*" I do not mean to say that Matiu's superiors taught him and others in words to act as he is now acting; but this is a necessary consequence therefrom. The New Zealanders are still children in many

things, and like most children are great *imitators*, so that to give them an inch, is the very sure way for them to take an ell—or, what is more likely, a fathom. One native has been publicly censured for sending here for a sheet of paper to write a letter; another (the chief Heta Tiki *staying here*) for coming with my man Matiaha to prayers of a Sunday night; and another for buying articles here: but were I to give you all Matiaha's freaks, I should fill a sheet. Let it suffice to say that Noah has (of himself) written against him.

(Tuesday 28th.) The rain still continues. Mr. S. Williams has been here, in this neighbourhood, about 10 days; but I only saw him casually when I was at Ahuriri, he then on his way to Tangoio. The state of the weather, and, above all, the mud and water everywhere about, *may* have prevented his calling. I have, however, no wish to see him, unless he alters in his opinions concerning many matters. He has held service 2 Sundays following in the large Church here; the congregation, I believe, very small. The natives are getting into a sad state; *all hands* becoming eager drunkards! Rum is now their daily delight!! which they get with impunity and will work for when nothing else will tempt them. Nor is it confined to the men—nor even the adults of both sexes. Mr. Fitzgerald told me the other day that there were not six sober natives in all the villages around Pakowhai! Two more licensed public houses are now set on at Ahuriri *on this side* while "grog-shops" are everywhere. The natives ascribe their predilection for drink to Mr. McLean and the chief Wi Take (Mr. McLean's companion from Wellington); and perhaps truly so. I did not know till lately that Mr. McLean gave Villers the orders to supply them with drink,—and again, lately, at Wellington: now I hear that the Ordinance has been rescinded by the Council at Wellington. Several settlers (of the older ones) have called to see me, and lamented the *present* state of things among the natives. Mr. Fitzgerald said that it was perfectly useless now to attempt to do anything in a religious or moral way for these natives; that he never saw such a sudden alteration for the worse; and that he and others (who were ever interested in their welfare) now "looked upon them as a doomed race"! Reignier is gone to Whanganui, and it is said he intends leaving altogether. There are now a great number of whites in this neighbourhood, most of whom call and express themselves very kindly towards me, and also to the natives concerning me. Some ¼ acre allotments at Ahuriri *town* are laid out, and will be soon offered for sale—beginning at Pukemokimoki on to Newton's at Ouepoto, and some on the other side near Alexander's in larger lots. Mr. Domett has had his house at Ahuriri broken into, and an iron chest stolen and smashed open with an axe but the thieves got no money, still the robbery was a daring one: and a wheat mill is said to have been stolen from Ahuriri, for which Hamuera got suspected, but wrongfully, I fully believe. Still (as I told him) his conduct towards me—his living with that perjured man, Wi Tipuna, and "the well-known thief" Taare Hauaitu, will ever operate against him, I hear nothing of Rebecca, I believe she is quiet among her own people inland. Several of the natives are now absent at Te Wairoa, a tangihanga for Te Apatu. I am told it was a sad sight to see them at Ahuriri (they spent a night there on their way to Te Wairoa) all hands beastly drunk; women and girls, among whom was our Agnes!—insomuch that the whites who could do so all crossed over to the other side and there sat in the moonlight looking on! You will be glad to hear of my having made peace with Eruwini; he came, accompanied by Noah, in a very good frame to do so. I fear greatly that many natives have been lately partaking

of the Lord's Supper at Tangoio, Petane and here, who had far better been away, and that, too, with no previous notice! I had heard that Petane (ever very lax) had cast off *all* karakia. Letters have come up from Hirini Tarahawaiki at Wairarapa to Noah and myself lamenting the sad alteration there; he says,—“This new minister comes often enough, and the Sacrament is given, but, alas! the words, the teaching, the love is all tangi kee,”—and much more of this nature. I feel more than ever strengthened in my belief that the settlers and the teachers will both see and bitterly regret their great error concerning me. “None but a Philistine will ever insult over a fallen Israelite” as Matthew Henry says;—he asks, “When were the Philistines of Gaza destroyed? It was when they were making sport with an Israelite & insulting over him—persecuting him whom God hath smitten. Nothing fills the measure of the iniquity of any person or people faster than mocking or misusing the servants of God—yea, though it is by their own folly that they are brought low.” If you have his Commentary at hand, read his remarks on Samson, one of God's worthies (Heb. XI). Every word that I have spoken God will assuredly bring to pass.

(Thursday, 30th.) Yesterday Mr. S. Williams called; talk general: he told me of sad drunkenness at Wairarapa, (where, according to the favourers of Dr. Pusey's doctrines—“The due administration of the Sacrament was to fence *in* the Church, and fence *out* evil”!!!) Be well assured, Elizabeth, that nothing but the simple preaching of Scripture Truths—Justification by Faith alone—will ever be honoured by God the Holy Ghost. “The due administration of the Sacraments” (as it is called) by Ministers of *man's* sending are not of so much value to this people as Mr. Ready-to-halt's crutches! Time will show the truth of my assertion.

The Victorines &c., of which you speak (in your note of December) I sent long ago with many things of my own (clothes, books, guns &c.) to Wellington, and daily expect to receive an account of their sale. Provokingly enough, about a month back, Mere Hineitaka came with £10 to buy my fur cloak! I fear it will not have brought that price at Wellington. You speak also (in your last note) that “the 2 boxes had arrived at Auckland”. I fear that their contents will (through long keeping) prove both spoiled and of little use. No goods ever gave me (or us) greater labour and trouble than these two unfortunate packages. But, alas! we little thought that our labour of love would prove so unwelcome, so undesired. If you would like to have the preserves, &c. &c. sent, only say so, and I will be sure to send them. In doing so from this place to Auckland, I can pay the freight. The first lessons yesterday (Genesis 43–45) made me weep much: Jacob and Joseph and Benjamin—W.C., Latty & W. Yet I, too, may have an unexpected and happy termination of my sad bereavements. My apples are now embittered with the drought, that the little darling gets *none*! The big box wheat-mill I have just sold to Villers. Teretia has been here to me, to be paid for the little native clothing mat dear Fanny had on leaving; I supposed you had paid Ruanaganga for it; let me know when you write.

I fully hoped to have letters from Fanny and Latty in answer to those I have written them. *Do not bring them up in undutifulness to their Father*; unless you (also) say, they have none. But such vain thoughts will have no effect by-and-by after the mischief is done. You will know the very many threats in God's word against this sin. *I cannot write to them now*, as you have tied my hands but I shall write to

them again (if I live) and they will ere long be able to judge for themselves, especially if God is pleased to grant them his Grace, to know their own hearts and His blessed truth.

During my writing this long letter I have prayed *thrice* specially not to write in bitterness, but in all truth; therefore be not needlessly offended if any portion should seem to be harsh.

I daily pray for you *all* by name, and shall never cease to do so. May God Almighty bless and counsel you, Elizabeth; may He also bless the 3 dear children now and evermore. Amen.

So prays from his heart,
Yours truly,
William.

1854 June 20: to Elizabeth Colenso³¹⁷

(No. 7) WAITANGI, June 20th., 1854.

Mrs. E. Colenso,
Otahuhu, near Auckland.

My dear Elizabeth,

I wrote you a long letter on the 27th. of March last, which I hope has long ago reached you. I have *no* letters *from* you to acknowledge; but as I promised in my last to send you some money on little *Wi's* account, and as I have very lately obtained through Mr. Alexander's kindness (and without immediately paying him) a Bill on his Auckland agent for £20, and a vessel being about to sail immediately for Wellington, I hasten to send it. You will perceive that it is drawn in *duplicate*, this I got done fearing any casualty; and I intend to send you the duplicate by some more direct opportunity, as I hear (from Mr. Alexander) of a vessel being daily expected from Auckland. I had the Bill drawn in your brother's favour, as by so doing it cannot be of any service until he endorses it; so that if stolen & presented it would not be honoured.

At the date of my last, I think, we were suffering from a heavy waipuke, and we are now just rallying from another and a heavier one; or, rather, it would have been heavier had not Ngaruroro forced a mouth long before the flood was at its height, but not until the Boys' House was under water. Such a mouth, wider than the entrance at Ahuriri, and directly opposite to Te Ikapakakahawai—or, where that spot was, for all that land is gone, with the pathways, the grassy knolls, & your and the children's Toetoe bush—all is washed away!! There are now but 3 toetoe bushes remaining between the head of the swamp water and Ngaruroro; and the river has made a new creek (where the children's toetoe bush was) directly this way, which is now 40 feet long by measurement; so that, in a little while, it will be running in its *old* channel again. This flood (i.e. the rain) began on the 31st. of May, and lasted a fortnight!! It is now fine but cold, with much snow on the hills. The little cutter “Kawai” was out in all that severe weather, 20 days from Wellington, 6 of which they had no fire, through midwinter!! escaped by miracle.

Heretaunga has been in *great* commotion since my last; such as you never witnessed. I think I must have told you of

the death of the principal chief Ngatiupokoiri, Hori te Kaharoa at Omaha. Well, all hands went there to tangi; and Hori Niania & Arapera te Ngira were detected together! (you know they had long been suspected). This made a greet stir which was increased by Arapera's confessing that such had always been the case between them, and that Reko, the chief Te Moananui's wife, was in a similar position! Te Moananui & others endeavoured in vain to get Reko to confess:—at last she confessed to Hapuku, implicating also the great lady Te Hei, as being alike with them!—and all with Hori! Now the fire raged—all the principal chiefs being more or less concerned (and the Popish priest, Jesuit-like, at the back encouraging Puhara) a grand Committee was held at Te Aute, and again at Te Waipukurau; and a £1000 for the *first* offence was demanded, but for the *third*, if true, (Te Hei and Hori both denying it) Hori should lose all his lands and be banished forever! Taare Hauaitu set on Wi Tipuna, and Wi Tipuna, Hori, to give nothing. On this the chiefs returned raging: went again & again to Mr. Domett, the R.M. at Ahuriri, and at last it was arranged to be fully heard at Ahuriri. It was also privately determined that if no damages were given, Hori should be set on and killed! Hapuku called on me and said that he the principal promoter would *not* attend the meeting. Things wore a most ugly appearance. Mr. Domett wrote to all the Magistrates and all the respectable settlers to attend; (I well remembering the sad affair at Waitangi, Bay of Islands, nearly 20 years ago, gave Mr. Domett all the information I could to put him on his guard) and the Magistrates wrote to me, requesting my attendance to assist them &c. Well, Thursday, June 1st, was to be the day of hearing and on Wednesday, 31st. May, all Heretaunga went to Ahuriri—all, lords and commons, “rag, tag & bobtail” such a turn-out! Throughout May the weather had been delightfully fine, and I knew that when rain should come it would be sufficient. Sure enough, on the very 31st. it began, gradually. I suppose 200 horses crossed the Waitangi Creek on that day. Early on June 1st. I walked to Ahuriri, and got there pretty dry. The whole of that day, till 6 or 7 p.m. we were hard at work; then we *all* dined together, that is as many as could stow, 25 or so about half being chiefs; all very orderly even over their wine. About 10 p.m. we left, i.e. Mr. Curling, a Magistrate from inland, & myself, in rain & wind & darkness—to walk right over the hill or island to Mr. Domett's house where we 2 slept. We got there partly crawling on our hands and knees! the worst was the descending the zig-zag narrow track down the face of the high & steep cliff! What a wretched time those natives must have had! Next day we recommenced work and after another hard day & *night*, too, we decided as follows: Damages in Arapera's case £100: in Reko's £40: in Te Hei's nothing (for the time) save a most severe lecture from the Bench to Reko, which I had to translate, and *did give* (& no mistake) also, a word of warning to Hori. The payment was immediately made: i.e. £90 in gold and a horse £50 = £140, which was paid over to Karaitiana (who personated Te Moananui who we had advised to stay away) and to Urupene, Ahapera's husband. Late at night Mr. Curling and myself returned as before, in the howling, drenching storm to Mr. Domett's. The next day the weather was worse! I sat on thorns (in the midst of great kindness) till 3 p.m., when, greatly against their wishes, I started on foot on my return to Waitangi in dreadful weather. It was dark before I got half-ways, and before I came to the Church I found the flood up on the bank! I waded to the river's edge and spent nearly an hour in endeavouring to make old Matiaha hear, but in vain. At last I returned, headed the flood water, &

came on over the sea beach, intending to swim across with the key of the study in my mouth; but I found a white man sheltering in Pao Torotoro's deserted hut, who agreed to put me across in a little dinghey he had there, which he partly did, in the pitchy darkness, and I, leaping out, waded to the study; soon after the whole garden was flooded.

There is little good now among this people. There has been *no* Service in the big Church here since Mr. S. Williams returned in April! From Noah I learn that one of Mr. S. Williams' teachers at Otaki had been stealing from him and *forging*! so that Mr. Williams put him into prison at Wellington; and, on his late return from this place, one of his own baggage bearers stole the “Sacrament money” collected here, on their way back to Otaki; this has made a great talk.. These things speak volumes to those who have ears to hear.

The Magistrate wrote a severe letter to Matiu Meke for his conduct towards me; upon which Matiu attempted to justify it by saying—such was the nature of my letter! at the same time refusing to show it. By-and-bye this very letter was dropped by him in the road, and the chief Nopara and others got hold of it, and sent it to the Magistrate for him to see, saying—“ki a matou nei, kaore tahi ne hue a roto” (i.e. to us who have seen it, there is nothing whatever in it (to find fault with). As a matter of course, it was now seen by all—native and white, and I too wished to see it (having quite forgotten it); and a return letter has also been written by the Magistrate to Te Waipukurau, saying (I quote the concluding sentence, as I have subsequently seen it and copied it)

“kahore he hoe o taua tuhi a Neho, ki taku titiro, ki ta nga tangata katoa hoki, ahakoa pakeha, ahakoa Maori” (i.e. There is nothing wrong in that writing by Colenso, in my estimation, also in that of all other men, whether whites or natives). Matiu had the impudence to attend the big enquiry at Ahuriri. He, however, with Micah, his friend, (and Wi Tipuna's brother) had to leave the room. Noah, on the contrary, was spoken well of.

I fear (I may rather say, I know) that Mr. S. Williams has been encouraging Matiu Meke, not, I would still believe, maliciously, but through his receiving and believing *all* Matiu says, as well as all that Wi Tipuna and that party say. But it will all come out one day. Of Hamuera and Ripeka I know nothing. Perhaps I should tell *you* that the Bench of Magistrates gave me their public thanks at Ahuriri, in which all the settlers present joined &c. &c.

I have suffered a good deal lately from ear and toothache, and rheumatism, owing to my getting so very wet and cold, but am better now. A fortnight ago Roka accidentally burnt my bag of clothes which she had to wash, which I could badly spare; some too, I had but lately mended. I fear one or two of my best and new shirts were in the lot—their first washing.

The goods which I sent to Wellington were sacrificed! I almost wished they had been burnt in the fire. The great floor-cloth cost £9, sold for £3. Black dress coats cost £5 each, sold for £1.10.0. Books sold for 1/- per vol. which cost 10/-. The *sable* Victorine sold for a guinea less than it cost in London. But enough of this.

I think continually upon you *all*—all 4. The 3 dear children are ever present. I hope soon to hear from you, & Fanny and Latty. I often dream of you all. My best love to *them all* in the most loving way. I hope soon to write to them; I

should Long ago have done so, but have tied my hands. Tell Latty I have a little *bat* here, living with me in the study and at liberty. All day he hangs by his hind legs, but is pretty brisk every night, flying & crawling about. I hope you either see (at times) or keep a motherly look-out after Wi. Poor little dear! who now takes care of him? in the wet, and mud, and cold. I hope God's holy angels will, if no human being cares for the dear child.

Our town's name is Port Napier. I must conclude and hasten this off. The leaves of the trees which, when you left were scarcely budding forth, are now fallen and falling, making the garden and me melancholy. But I have often a ray shed down, especially on Sundays, when reading God's Holy Word. May God bless you, Elizabeth, and *counsel* you, and soften your heart to receive *His* counsel. This is my constant prayer,

From yours truly,
William.

1854 October 4: to Elizabeth Colenso³¹⁸

No. 8)

WAITANGI, October 4th., 1854.

Mrs. Colenso,
Otahuhu, near Auckland.

My dear Elizabeth,

Ten days ago (Sept. 22) I received your painful and extraordinary letter of the 27th. May last! And, although I have now again read it carefully through (and that with almost more surprise & keen feeling than when I first went over it) I cannot bring myself to follow your example, and so address you differently from what I have ever hitherto done. Neither shall I stoop to notice the many new and ill things you have therein written,—rather, willingly, would I forget them all: for, used as I have long been to harsh language and treatment, I would that the mother of 2 of my children had not so far forgotten herself as to write to me in such a sad, sad way, I fear, however, that anything I could now say, would have little if any influence with you, but I feel assured that you will by-and-bye bitterly resent the course you have taken. May God, in mercy, give you to see your error! May he not visit upon our 2 dear children the sins of their parents! This shall be my constant prayer.

The "Dolphin" is now at Ahuriri, whither I have been this day. Through Mr. Alexander's kindness, I have arranged with him to have my dear little boy, Wi, brought down per next vessel to this place, which Mr. Alexander will be able to effect through his Auckland agent, Mr. Graham. As all circumstances connected with the dear child are now well known *here*, I would venture to hint to you (for your *own good name*) to do what you may have in your power for the child's well and safe coming away from your neighbourhood. Any outlay you may have to make I will most faithfully repay through Mr. Alexander's Auckland agent. I have given Mr. Alexander full authority to act for me in this matter which authority he will transmit to, or act upon through his agent; and as I believe Mr. Fairburn (your father) spoke to Mr. Alexander when at Auckland about

bringing away my child, and as I also believe Mr. Graham to be well-known to Mrs. Fairburn, I cannot see any prospective difficulty.

I had intended to send forthwith a special (European) messenger by this vessel to fetch my child, but as Mr. Alexander hopes that some European men and women will be shortly coming to him from Auckland, and as wages are so high and my purse so low, I have abandoned my original intention. With this I shall also send a letter to "Matiu Porou and his wife Maraeta" respecting the child, and so have done all in my power towards fulfilling my parental duty towards him.

It is true that I said in my letter to Mr. Hamlin (alluded to by you) that—"I always said I knew (I told the Bishop so before Mrs. Colenso) that it would not be advisable for the child to be taken to Mr. Fairburn's. And now I would rather that the child should still go on with Mrs. Colenso and be put out somewhere in the neighbourhood of Auckland, than come *back here to be torn from me again, and that too by natives & brought up by them*. If he can *not* go on to Auckland could he not be put with some quiet settler at Turanga for his *good*?" (These are the very words.) But from your own showing he has for some considerable time been with *natives*! Were he even now with some religious or steady *European*, however poor, I would continue to fight with my feelings (as I have hitherto done *for all* 3) and *not* send for him. You also tell me that "my thus writing to Mr. Hamlin was the great inducement to you to take him on with you;"—which, however, is far from being correct, as your own long letter from Te Wairoa., dated September 24th., clearly shows; which letter of yours was written 3 days before Ihaka returned to you with my letter; and in which you *again* expressed yourself in those kind words quoted in mine to you of 27th. March last. But of this enough.

I have this day heard from Mr. Alexander that a Bill or Draft on Mr. Graham for £20 (which I had sent you in Jun. last) has been paid; whence I infer that you have also received the letter which enclosed it.

In your sad letter of May 27th. you do not tell me a word concerning *our* 2 dear children, which, while in keeping with the tenor of that epistle, must be wholly at variance with their affectionate hearts, as well as with all religion natural or revealed. You wish (you say) "to have no farther communication with me;" Well, I will not trouble you; not, at least, until you are brought to a better frame of mind, but I shall henceforth resume writing to my (our) 2 children, whom I shall ever sincerely love, and whose welfare I shall both continually pray for and seek. I fear I shall not have sufficiently mastered my feelings to write to them by *this* vessel "the Dolphin" which sails directly, but I may yet have an early opportunity by "the Antelope" (the vessel in which you embarked) and which, curiously enough, is now at Ahuriri. As an almost last request—May I earnestly ask you to give them *their Father's love*?

And now, Elizabeth in conclusion believe me, *I wish you well*. I would that you had *not* chosen the rash course you have; one, however, in which you have *deliberately turned aside* from the plain path of duty, and therefore you can never be truly happy. I *cannot* say (with you) that I wish to have no further communication with you; although, through my unfelicitous situation, I am necessitated to succumb to circumstances which I can neither avoid nor control. Would to God, Elizabeth, that you had listened to me—(that you

had “submitted” yourself as a Christian wife should do) when we were at Te Waimate together; when I so often besought you for the sake of our future comfort and usefulness (which I then too truly saw imperilled) to give way; for, as sure as the majestic kauri tree in the forests around you was once contained in an insignificant seed, so surely may all that has since happened be traced up to that apparently insignificant source.—But freely forgive me all the uneasiness I have ever (unwillingly) given you; even as I do you: and, when you are restored to a happier frame of mind, think upon the Father of your children whom *you* and *all* (including our old domestic Matiaha) have deserted.

Your unfortunate husband,
William Colenso.³¹⁹

1855 April 12: to McLean³²⁰

Waitangi,
April 12, 1855

Donald McLean Esqr,
Commissioner of Lands
&c &c &c

My dear Sir

When at Napier yesterday, I heard, that you were then about sailing for Wellington. This information, and the rains, and also believing you to be very busy from your having only returned from Mohaka the evening before, quite prevented my calling. —

I have since heard, that you may not go by the vessel now about to sail: and, therefore, write, to ask, whether you could find time to spare me a quarter of an hour at any day which may be convenient. In your fixing the same, and letting me know, I will ride to Napier, or, should you be coming this way you might perhaps call. —

I am,
My dear Sir,
Yours truly,
William Colenso

319 Colenso wrote at the foot of the page, “N.B. The foregoing letter was returned to me from Auckland and received by me here at Ahuriri on the 28th. January, 1855 bearing on it the following letter by Mr. Fairburn, written across the same:

Revd. W. Colenso, Ahuriri, Hawke’s Bay. C/o Alexander Esq., Ahuriri.

Mr. Colenso,

My daughter is not living with me at present; I, therefore, opened the letter directed to her by you.

The child Wi is gone to the Bay, having been taken from Matiu (with my permission) by its Grandmother and Grandfather; as therefore your letter to Matiu regarding the child will be useless, he having nothing more to do with it, I enclose it with this your own letter. Your draft on Mr. Graham for £20, I got cashed unknown to my daughter, she not being here at the time; finding, however, that she entirely disapproved receiving anything at your hands, I take this opportunity of returning it.

(Signed) W. T. Fairburn, Nov, 6th./54.”

320 ATL Object #1013821 from MS-Papers-0032-0221.

1855 July 17: to Dixon & Co.³²¹

Waitangi Ahuriri NZ
July 17/55

Messrs. R Dixon & Co

Dear Sirs

Two days ago yr Letter of Mar 14/55, contg. a/c., came to hand; and as I see the steamer Nelson is advertised to leave Welling. next week for England, I lose no time in replying.—

In your Letter you tell me 3 things:—1st. you remind me, That you have “a bal. agt. me from Augt./54 of £48.17.” and that you “prefer keeping the accounts as nearly bald. as possible”:—2nd. That my sm. order of Decr. 15/53 “was not exd. bec. it had no remit. to cover it”:—& 3rd. That you were about to send me a part of my order of Aug/54,—which (from Remitt. enclosed, £104., not being sufft. to cover,” and “as I say that I do not wish to get into debt” you should “reduce to bring it within the Remittance”.

Now this is all straightforwd. enough; but, under all the circumstances, it seems (to me, at least,) to be very strange if not somewhat incorrect;—and this I think I can clearly shew.—

I suppose, that, (although we have transacted business for sevl. years) I have no need to go back further than the year of my disconnection from the CMS—i.e. 1852;—& particularly as I have invariably fold. *one* mode of dealing.

In “June/52” you sent me Goods, amtg. to £129.4.0; in—Invoice of the same acknowledging Bills to Credit (previously recd.) for £150.19.0.

In yr next Letter, “Augt./52,” you acknowledge anor. remit. to Credit £38.6.6.; & tell me the few goods ordd. shall “come on in 6 wks”.

In yr next, “Octr./52,” you advise me of another Remitt. by you recd. & passed to my credit for £50.0.0 & “that you hope to transmit every article ordered pr. ‘Royal Albert’ going from thence on the 20th. or 25th. inst.”—

In yr next, “Novr.1/52,” you tell me that “being shut out of the RA. you trust to ex. my order by the “Mah. Shah” to be got away in all that mo.”—

In yr next, (4 mos. after!) “Feby 28/53”—you inform me that “I may look for my goods by some one of Willis’ vessels to be appointed in the follg. mo.”—

In yr next, “21 March/53” you tell me the goods are coming.—

In yr next, “May 10/53” you advise me of those goods pr. “Adml. Grenfell” amtg. to £118.9.6.—

In yr next “Apl.28/54” you thank me for Bills to Credit £316.16.10—

In yr next, June/54, you advise me of goods pr “Jas Scott” amtg. to £308.2.7.—

In yr next, “Augt.16/54,” you enclose an a/c for the 1st time, (tho more than once asked for by me); advisg. me of goods pr “Pudsey D.”—£4.7.6 & with sundry expenses making “£8.2.6”—leavg. me then indebd. to you “£38.15.4.”

321 ATL 80-038 George Petersen papers: Colenso’s rough copy.

This is now followed by yr present Letter of Mar 14/55.

The whole may be thus briefly recapitulated from yr own figures & dates

Dr WC	in a/c with RD. Cr.	
1852	1852	
June for goods—	£129.4.0	May By Cash £150.19. 6
1853		
May d———	118.9.6	Aug. d—— 38. 6. 6
1854		Oct. d—— 50. 0. 0
June d———	308.2.7	1854
		April d—— 216.16.10
Augt d——&c—	8.2.6	1855
		March d—— 104. 9.10

[N.B. The above are the dates when the Remittances were by you *received*; they were *made* by me generally 6 months before.

1855	
Feb'y. Cash—	44. 0. 0

You will also bear in mind, that my Remittance covg. Indent to you—of “Augt./54,” was made in the same mo., as that in wh. yr a/c was sent to me; & wh. only reached me, here, in Jan'y./55; consy. at the time of my making that Remittance I knew nothing of yr a/c.—In the next mo. (Feb./55) I remitted you £44. to Credit, & shod. (as I then told you) have sent you much more, but that I cod. only do so through paying 5 per cent for Bills—wh., from having so many heavy exps. to meet, I was unwillg. to do.

Further, my *sm.* order (of “Decr.15/53”) *without a Remittance* (being I think, my *only one* such during 10 yrs.) was sent as a conclusion of my 2 indents of the 1 & 10th. of *that same mo.*, Decr., wh. 2 indents (by yr own shewing as above) covered £316.16.10.—And now I find (from yr Letter, of Mar.14/55) that you *had received* that *sm.* order on “May 25/54”—a month before you shipped the goods pr “Jas Scott,”—although in yr Letter coverg. Invoice you never once allude to it.

The foregoing are facts—mostly from yr own Letters, & will speak for themselves to any reasonable mercantile man.

Further still:—you state, (in yr Letter of Mar/55,) as a reason why you shall “reduce some of the things ordered by me” in my Indent Augt 22/54—my saying, that “I do not wish to get into debt.”—Now allow me to refresh yr. memory with the whole paragraph (from my Letter of Decr./53,) whence you quote my saying as above.—

— “As I have a few ———— avoided”

I hope you will perceive the difference.—

Again—In yours of “Aug 16/54,” contg. a/c.—you shew me to be indebted to you “£38.15.4”: in yr next Letter (“Mar 14/55”) you give me anor. a/c (to *same date*), shewing me to be indebted to you “£48.17.3”; adding that “the Insurance on goods pr. “Jas Scott” (£8.5.3) & “Pudsey Dawson” (14/-) was omitted in the a/c forwd. in “Augt./54”:—wh. however is again erroneous, as I shall, also, shew by copying your own rendered a/c.—

Dr. WC.—

Now in the goods sent per “Adml Grenfell,” (May/53) you omitted charging me for 2 doz knives—as by me sub'y. pointed out & paid.—

—In the next goods by “Jas Scott,” (June/54) you chge me for 6 caps & 5 pairs Boots not sent.—

[page(s) missing]

1856 November 10: to Smith³²²

Waitangi, Ahuriri
Novr. 10/56.

J. Alexander Smith Esq.,
&c &c
Auckland Museum.

Sir,

Your note of the 14th. ulto. expressing your wish to obtain for the Auckland Museum any Native Mats carvings Weapons &c. is just to hand, and I lose no time in replying thereto.—

Unfortunately for your Institution you could not have made an application in a worse quarter than the Ahuriri District. For, during a close residence of 12 years, I have never obtained a single article of the kinds you mention—simply because they are *not* manufactured here. I should think that Rotorua or the E. Cape Districts are the only likely ones in the present day:³²³ I speak, however, under correction, being guided by what I know of them 18–20 years ago.—

Wishing your Institution every success.

I am
Sir
Yours very truly
W. Colenso.

1857 May 5: to Featherston³²⁴

Waitangi, Ahuriri,
May 5, 1857.

To His Honor,
The Superintendent
of Wellington.

Sir,

I have the honor to address you on the subject of the route through the “Forty mile Bush” (the forest bounded by the Ruamahanga and Manawatu Rivers), in compliance with your Honor’s request, made to me at Napier on the 22nd. ult.

I confess, Sir, that I feel not a little diffident in writing what I know about it; seeing that the Chief Surveyor has already not only both gone over the present Maori track and chained it, but has also drawn up a professional Report of the same, which he has further illustrated by

[second page missing]

I. *Geographical*:—

Commencing then at Te Kotukutuku, on the Ruamahanga river, the course immediately from that stream is up a long hill, which ascent, at first, is very precipitous and also wet (from water oozing from its clifly side), so that it is a difficult matter for a Native carrying a load to get up; having gained the summit, the descent is much more gradual, but over broken ground for several miles, until you near the Mangatainoka River; occasionally intersected by several small streams and watercourses, and many deep

322 Auckland Museum MA 2007/1.

323 William Williams had already written (12 June 1856) saying much the same (Auckland Museum MA 2007/1).

324 Photocopy at ATL 88-103-1/13.

muddy patches, (caused by the loose springy nature of the soil, the immense quantity of decaying vegetable matter, and the constant humidity of the range). From the River Mangatainoka to Te Hawera³²⁵ (a little open space of fern land, the only one in the whole forest, and where was formerly a village,) distant about four miles, the course is tolerably level; which is also the case, with but little interruption, until you reach a very swampy spot, about six miles further on, and where you have to ascend some way on a steep hill's side, named, Pahiatua. Thence the country is again tolerably level (for a N.Z. forest), with occasional watercourses, deep swampy spots, and dark lagoon-like holes, until you again cross the River Mangatainoka. Whence, to the River Manawatu, a distance of about four miles, the ground is very much more broken and difficult, with several steep terraces and swampy hollows.

The surface soil is (as might be expected) universally composed of decaying vegetable matter, intermixed, in the low levels, with alluvial deposits, and which is of unequal depths, varying from 3–4 inches to a foot and upwards.—The sub soil appears to be in a few places of loam, but generally of clay with small broken pebbles intermixed. I have never noticed any stone on the whole route, save the pebbles and shingle in the beds of some of the streams.—And, from the indurated clay slightly schistose in the cliffs of the Ruamahanga appearing again in a ford of the Mangatainoka River near Te Hawera, and again in the cliffy sides of the River Manawatu, I have little doubt but that the same stratum underlies the whole forest at no great depth.—

I have already mentioned the numerous small streams and watercourses which intersect the track *in* the forest; besides which there are two principal ones, the Rivers Makakahi and Mangatainoka; the latter being, at one of its fords, the widest mountain stream between Napier and Wellington. (This River the Chief Surveyor states in his Report to be 100 yards wide.) These two Rivers have to be crossed five times during the route; and at no present fording-place do they possess high banks, except at two of the fords, where they have a tolerably high bank on one side only; but which, from the inclination of the stream and the nature of the soil, falls away with every fresh. I believe, also, that, on close examination, those high banks (3–4 feet) on the one side will be found to be of a saucer-like formation, viz.—higher on the immediate edge of the stream.—

—This saucer-like form is easily accounted for: in time of floods, the bushes on the immediate bank (always very dense until torn away) collect a vast quantity of vegetable matter, which, while forced inwards by the strength of the waters, cannot proceed far into the forest. On the slow subsiding of the muddy water, the mud and smaller light forest residuum (i.e. leaves and twigs) are there detained, and, in the course of a few years, a very considerable deposit is there accumulated. (This has actually been the case—though on a much smaller scale—here, at Waitangi, where I reside—the soil near the face of the lower side of the field in front of my house has been raised more than a foot since the erection of the close (paled) fence in 1845, the lower bar of which was originally about ten inches from the ground, and is now, in some places, from 3 to six feet below it, owing to the deposit of fine mud there stopped by the fence in the time of inundations; this has given that part

of the field a similar saucer-like form.) And this, where the high and raised bank holds, is the cause of those disagreeable muddy back-water spots, so commonly to be met with a little beyond the higher banks of those and similar Rivers.—

In addition to the above, the two wide Rivers, Ruamahanga and Manawatu, (navigable, at all times for canoes, or even boats,) bound the “Bush” on its N. and S. sides, and must also be crossed.—

The currents in all the Bush streams are slow, owing, chiefly, to their very slight fall.—

In several places in the forest around Te Hawera, particularly in the low lands on its N. side, are many dark lagoons, or deep putrid pools, of irregular shape and size; some of which are destitute of vegetation on their banks, while others possess the usual dense swamp jungle.—

Those deep pools and holes contain the waters left by the floods when the Rivers overflow their banks, a case of very common occurrence especially in the winter and the spring. It is also very probable that their bottoms are lower than the beds of the adjacent Rivers.—

In the time of great floods the forest is impassable, the waters rising and spreading over the whole low country for several miles, which waters very slowly drain off.—

I have even known the open ground at Te Hawera to be three feet under water, almost choking the Fern and Grass with the thick muddy deposit it left, and which I have had to work my way through.

Such floods are a great cause of the unusually open state of the forest in the low levels—i.e. with regard to its possessing but little underwood; hence the “good travelling” which the fortunate traveller there meets with in *dry* seasons.—

It is surprising how very rapidly those mountain streams increase, and that, too, from other cause than rain. They often do so after a warm wind has blown strongly for a day or two; such not only melts the snows on the summits in the early spring, but also, (I feel assured,) farther on in the summer, conveys masses of vapour thither from the sea, which is there condensed and quickly precipitated on the lower lands—a fact, I believe, also witnessed by Humboldt on the higher table lands of the Cordillera.—

II. Botanical:—

Under this head I am fortunate in being able to refer your Honor to the Flora N.Z. lately published for corroborative testimony (if needed); the name of Te Hawera forests being often mentioned in its pages as the recorded habitat of many plants; particularly of those species which require either a low watery situation, or constant humidity to develop them.—

Such as, of terrestrial *Ferns* (only found in very low wet woods), *Lomaria fluviatilis*, *L. nigra*, *L. procera*, *L. pumila*, *Hymenophyllum formosum* (its only known N.Z. habitat); of the genus *Hydrocotyle*, several species; several genera of large terrestrial *Musci* and *Fungi*; and of fresh-water *Algæ*; together with a very large majority of the Natural Order *Hepaticæ*; many specimens of which have been declared by Dr. Hooker to be even finer than those obtained by him in the ever-dripping forests of Fuegia and Cape Horn.—

325 Bagnall & Petersen place Te Hawera: “Modern Hamua, on the Woodville-Masterton highway, north of Eketahuna. The name ‘Hawera’ is still preserved in the district.”

In travelling through those low levels around Te Hawera (especially on its N. side), I have often noticed the self-recorded high-water mark of the preceding winter's inundations remaining distinctly traced on the pendant Mosses which draped the trunks of the larger trees;—and which sometimes had risen to the height of three and four feet, or even more.—

Of the larger trees, which are numerous on the lower grounds, *Nesodaphne* (Tawa), *Podocarpus* (Kahikatea, or “Swamp Pine”), and *Plagianthus*, are by far the most common. The Tawa has been spoken of as being “an indication of good soil”; of this, however, I am not quite so sure, as I am of both it and its neighbours indicating a wet one.—

On the S. side of Te Hawera (especially between the Rivers Makakahi and Mangatainoka), there are some very fine specimens of *Podocarpus* (Totara), *Dacrydium* (Rimu), and *Metrosideros* (Rata), to be met with; but they are generally isolated.—

Those forests abound in *Fungi*, many of which are of monstrous size and are rapidly developed after rains or floods; to this circumstance may in great measure be attributed the unhealthiness of those parts: [*Vide*, Statistics.] as, unlike other plants, *Fungi*, instead of purifying the air by drawing-off its carbonic acid and restoring oxygen, vitiate it, by exhaling carbonic acid and absorbing oxygen.

I have little doubt but that the present track, in a great degree, owes its firmness to the interlacing roots of the living trees through which it winds: now only let the trees be felled on both sides of the same, and the roots consequently decay (which, from their chiefly belonging to the most quickly perishable of all our N.Z. woods, would very soon be the case,) and the path on the lower grounds would soon become a muddy drain instead of a travelling track.—

I have often noticed the very peculiar effect caused by the falling of some tree in low dense forests, and by the consequent admission of a little more light and air; namely, that vegetation invariably perishes all around. Now this, I apprehend, will be sure to follow upon the opening of an avenue-like road in such a forest as this, which may be almost deemed primæval; and which, for some considerable time, will both obstruct and endanger the road from falling and fallen timber; the sooner, perhaps, from the fact of its trees being only lateral rooted.—

III. Statistical:—

The Ngatitutaiaaroa tribe of Natives, who, for several years (i.e. from 1846,) dwelt at Te Hawera, lived, before that time, at a village called Ihuraua—a place about 14 miles distant in a N.E. direction through the forests from Te Hawera, but situate on very much higher ground.—

This truly isolated little party (many of whom had never before seen a white man,) proposed to me, on our second meeting, in 1846, to remove their dwelling to Te Hawera, if I would regularly visit them (in common with the other Native villages of the District), as, by their so doing, they would save me several additional miles of heavy forest travelling up and down on the same line. So that, instead of returning to Hawke's Bay from the village near the head of the Wairarapa valley (Te Kaikokirikiri) via Whareama and the Coast, as hitherto, I should henceforth travel towards Te

Hawera and Ngaawapurua over pretty nearly the present track; which, at first, was particularly heavy owing to the (then) trackless state of the forest, as well as the open Fern Lands at the head of the Wairarapa valley; a journey which (from Te Hawera to Te Kaikokirikiri) invariably took, at first, in fine weather and no floods, three long and toilsome days.

On their removal to Te Hawera, in 1846, I noted down the names and number of the tribe; which amounted to,
men 25: wom. 20: childn. 6 = 51.

The whole party settled quietly down; built their huts, and also a little rustic chapel; cultivated different spots of the forests around; and, in the course of two or three years, had all professed the Christian Faith. They rarely visited, and when they did only went to the nearest villages—Mataikona (E. Coast), Te Kaikokirikiri (Wairarapa), and Ngaawapurua (Manawatu).

This little simple and wholly isolated party had a large share of my attention; as, at first, I had sanguine hopes, of their becoming an increasingly pleasing community.—

From several of the Native Xn. teachers of this District (whom I often sent to visit them), they had also much attention: Te Hawera village was altogether No. 1, in our estimation.—

At that early time (1846) I knew nothing of the truly deadly nature of the site they had chosen. The Lands thereabouts were their own, and I could not but suppose that they were the best judges in such matters.—

Finding, however, that several deaths had invariably occurred between every interval of my visiting: that their disorders were constantly of one, or two, types,—Fever, both intermittent and Rheumatic, and Pulmonary Consumption: that the living were greatly altered in appearance, although largely possessed of good food, both animal and vegetable: and, that the floors of their huts were always more or less damp; and, also, having, by this time, both noticed and experienced what I have already written, I began to suspect the true cause of their ailments, and earnestly urged their speedy removal to some better (higher and more open) Site; this, however, I could not now effect. They would not (or, rather, could not,) believe their daily lessening numbers was caused by the unhealthiness of the spot; but (wholly in accordance with N.Z. ideas) by the malediction and enchantments of their old enemies because they had received the Xn. Faith: which Faith, however, they would never abandon, and consequently (reasoning as New Zealanders) the *first* little Chapel of their Tribe, and their dead relations who lay buried around it.—The end is soon told: up to May, 1851, the number of deaths of this small party (including their principal man then lately deceased), amounted to

men, 14: wom. 14: childn. 4 = 32

and the sorrowing remnant were then, at length, yielding to my advice, (or, more properly speaking, commands,) and were about to depart for the open country in the lower Manawatu. In March, 1852, (when I last went that way,) one of the tribe had come from their new place of abode to meet me at Te Hawera; who informed me, that, before that they had left the place, another male had died, making a gross total of 33 (thirty three) out of 51 (fifty one) in the space of 5 (five years)! several of whom were young, both of males and females.

The number of births during the same period was only six, of which, four had also subsequently died.—

The resting-place of a number of these dead, is strikingly indicated in the Chief Surveyor's Sketch Survey, as "Graves"—in the little Fern oasis of Te Hawera.—

The rude little chapel of this people, being the last house built, had been erected on much higher grounds, at some little distance from their huts (and close to the present "graves"). There, although at least three feet higher, the ground had also been flooded.—

In time of floods the inhabitants used to escape to a high terrace on the edges of the forest a little beyond their chapel; where, indeed, they were safe, but quite cut off from all human aid.—

With hopes of alleviating their sad situation some of the party made a cultivation and erected houses on the river's bank at Pahiatua; from this, however, they were also driven by the floods, when they made another attempt upon a steep hill not far off.

At this last mentioned place my (then) principal N. Teacher from Ahuriri found a few of them with their chief, on a visit he made to Te Hawera, when, and only with great difficulty, he got so far as this place, but could not go any further; and, although they had all previously known the day of his coming, and he also, on his arrival, induced a young man to go from Pahiatua as a messenger to them, yet those at Te Hawera could not come to him, neither did the messenger come back, owing to the great depth and extent of the inundation in the forest: after waiting several days the N. Teacher returned to Ahuriri.—

All Natives whom I, at different times, sent to visit Te Hawera, always travelled thither with some fear as to their being shut in by floods. I have known some of the Natives of the place, who had been out visiting, to make ineffectual attempts to return to their home, and to come back to their entertainers and there uneasily remain more than a month through the untravellable state of the low forest.

The Natives of Te Hawera could never succeed in raising Pumpkins and Melons, nor even Maize. On one occasion I did however obtain a small unripe Pumpkin from the old Chief, which had been grown there, and which he had saved for me.—

I learned, from the Natives, that in none of the many streams of this forest are any of those justly-prized edible fishes, (called by them, Inanga, Kokopu, and Paneroro,) so common in the other waters, to be found. Although such abound both in the Manawatu and Ruamahanga rivers.

In this writing for your Honor's information, I have, on the one hand, nothing hypothetical to advance, nor, on the other, any favorite scheme of my own, to seek to influence your Honor in its favor. I had simply a few facts to relate, and which I trust, I have unassumingly done. As a Landowner (to some little extent) here at Napier, I can only wish to see a *good* Road of Communication between it and Wellington quickly opened up; but I have no hesitation in stating (as my opinion), that such cannot be by the *present* route through the "Forty mile Bush." At the same time I am far from denying the possibility of such being yet found between Wairarapa and Manawatu;—perhaps, by keeping upon a higher level, a mile or two W. of, and parallel with the present track, and so reaching the Manawatu river a little lower down; but, from the dense nature of those

almost impenetrable forests, as well as their extent, such a road must ever prove to be a serious undertaking.—

I have the honor to be,
Sir,

Your very obedient servant,
William Colenso.

1857 August 22: to Featherston

Waitangi, Napier,
Augt. 22 1857

I.E. Featherstone
Esq. &c &c
Superintendent.

My dear Sir

Your kind note of June 2nd. I received in the Land Office on the day of the Land sale. I fear you will scarcely credit me when I tell you, that, with the sole exception of the "Esther," which sailed almost immediately afterwards, no Mail since has been sent from this place to Wellington! As however we are now hourly looking-out for the "W. Wonga," on her return from Auckland, I willingly avail myself of the opportunity to thank you for your note: and (while I much regret the circumstance of my Report being somewhat adverse to your Honor's views respecting the road through the 40m. Bush,) I wish to assure you, that the Government may always depend upon my ever-present hearty wish to be of service. As to your publishing my Report—pray do so, if you approve of it. Allow me however, in the event of its being Printed, to request a couple of copies. In fact, I should greatly like to receive regularly a copy of the Govt. Gazette (seeing they often contain highly useful information): I have more than once written to Wellington to purchase Copies, but have rarely ever been successful.—

On Mr. Stafford's arrival (shortly after your Honor had left us), I, of course, waited on him; and, among other things talked of by us, during our short conversation, was the Botany & Exploration of N. Zealand.—He said, there were no funds for the purpose: I even offered to accept so small a sum as £50. a year, *in aid*: but he spoke slightly of Botany & of its kindred Natural Sciences.—I almost fear, that the *dulce* stands a chance of being clean forgotten in the constant caring for the *utile*: Goethe (I think) has it—"we should take care of the Beautiful for the Useful will take care of itself":—and perhaps future years may reveal, (to the shame of the first Colonists of N.Z.,) that the British & Continental Museums will necessarily have to be visited by the N.Z. student of the Natural Sciences of his own Country!

Doubtless you will have heard of the increasing jars of the Natives of this neighbourhood—(those Natives who, a short time back, were spoken of as the first in N.Z. for quietness & discipline!)—well: on Tuesday last, the 18th. inst., they fought in a skirmishing kind of way, (on the fern plain at the W. end of the large wood near this place, where they have been about,) and the result was, 7 killed on the spot, 1 mortally, 2 dangerously, & several slightly wounded.—This, I fear, will prove to be only the beginning of things. It is a very great pity that such a mere handful of Natives should have been allowed to proceed thus far. I am not

aware of a single Magistrate, nor the R.M., ever having once visited them. And I regret to have to add, that the party disaffected to British Rule had the best of it (although they lost 3 on the field); consequently they are now more arrogant than ever. I have spent 2 days among them all (Wedy. & Friday), during which time a kind of truce has been observed to allow of their burying the dead: and, as I have never lowered my tone, I have had, as a matter of course, a deal of insolence &c. &c. to bear. Hapuku and his party, (ever the friends of the Settler & of Govt.,) although the chief losers, have sought for peace, but the others, flushed as they now are, won't hear of it; unless Hapuku will consent to leave his village *immediately*—in which he has dwelt 13 years!!

Mr. McLean (who went to Auckland in the steamer and who is expected by her,) *may*, it is to be hoped, yet be of service—but no N. Zealander (no Polynesian?) is ever to be won by gifts, or kindness, (especially when once they begin to be suspicious or discontented): more of the *suaviter* is needed in dealing with them.

Believe me
My dear Sir,
Very sincerely yours,
William Colenso.

1858 January 2: to McLean³²⁶

Waitangi, Jany. 2 1858
4 pm

D. McLean Esqr.
&c &c

My dear Sir

I am just returned from Te Hapuku, and I lose no time in giving you (in a few words) the result of my Mission.—

He says—that he cannot comply with the demand to leave on Monday next:—that he has no faith in their (Te Moana & Tareha) promises; and even if kept by them, would not be binding on others; as, according to the Nat. Custom, the promise of any Chief, *when respected*, only binds his own immediate followers; and that in the case of the firewood, &c. at Wakawiti, after the first skirmish, which was to be allowed to be taken away, on Te Wātuiapiti vacating that place, before it could be all removed it was thrown into the river, &c; & that, 2 days ago, on a canoe drifting, when Peehi, Puhara's native was sent after it, & Moana said it should be given up, while he & the Chief were tanging over Puhara's death, Tareha & party took away the canoe up into the pa—so that their words are devoid of *mana* &c:—that, *the only* way he can remove, is, by degrees *first*, his Ploughs &c &c *second*, women & children *lastly*, himself—& this has been re-echoed (to day) by *all*: that he never will forsake his people, women, &c: that the other side has boasted their soon getting women slaves, &c:—that you have no force, nor means of controlling them: and that they know well, that, though in following him up & killing him, you could not afford to be very *vici*, as *they know you want their Lands*, &c &c: and as to returning to take away any thing, or *after* leaving to think of having the Crops, are *unheard* of things in Native Warfare; that his

enemies would grab all, & in all likelihood kill not a few of those, who (following out the notice given) might be left.—

He thinks he is safe against their attacks where he is, for some time at least: & speaks of moving at his own time—*Ngahuru*.

Cows, &c., were driven inland yesterday, & Horses this day. —

I cannot help thinking there is a deal of truth in what he says: and, that the other party should either listen to reason—or, must do their worst.

I write this in great hurry to go to Grindell: pray excuse it. And believe me

Yours very sincerely
W. Colenso.

1858 January 27: to McLean³²⁷

Waitangi,
Wednesday night, Jany. 27/58.

My dear Sir,

I have been thinking a little today on what you mentioned to me—viz.—The adoption of some plan by which the Nat. Chiefs would be satisfied & allow the Settlers' Stock to graze on their lands;—and, as it may be several days ere I may see you, and as I wish you to know early my thoughts on the subject (if of any service), lest you should, in talking with the Chiefs, hold out to them any prospect of gain, &c.,—I now write to give you a few of them for your consideration.—

Of course, I know very well that *they wish* some arrangement to be made by which they may gain by the grass, &c. on their *waste* lands;—I, however, would (for the benefit of *all*) strenuously oppose it.—For,

1. Such would keep back (perhaps altogether) the Sale to Govt. of these Plains:—
2. Enhance their price considerably when sold.—
3. Open a wide door to *their taking-in* Cattle (from Settlers) to graze.—
4. Retard *their* Civilization.
5. Perhaps cause difficulties *elsewhere*—as precedents of such a nature (*gain!*) fly among the Natives:—such as —Their making *reserves* of grassy (Baiting) places.— —Their making *reserves* of grassy belts around proposed site of townships.— —Their making demands for grass eaten by Travellers' Horses, Stock in driving, &c. &c.
6. All "Runs" adjoining Natives' Ground and all Natives *Waste* Land adjoining Runs should be on the "*give-&-take*" system: as all Natives now have stock, which is largely increasing: such has been, all along, done by Mr. Alexander.—
7. No impounding should be allowed for trespass on *open waste* unimproved ground—for, from the fact of half of

them being idle, they would give settlers terrible annoyance.

8. They themselves in travelling (often in *large* parties) over Govt. grounds, or even Private property—would never pay for their Horses, &c. grazing.—

9. Impounding (of course) proper, in case of trespass on enclosed Lands, & Cultivations—but here *proper* fences should be imperatively required:—For such would
—Cause them to *fence well*:—
—Cause them to *cease wandering* from spot to spot.
—Cause them to *sell* their *surplus* land—
—Cause them to *abandon* some of their *rapacious* desires:—

10. Besides, a *small* sum (not even ten times the amount per head, or per acre, now paid to the Govt.) would not satisfy them:—and, if a large sum were paid, it would in all probability, be seized by the *Principal* Chief;—which would (I fear) go to encourage his idleness & rapacity—cause him to *encourage* such stock coming about his Land; which would serve to annoy the tribe (they not gaining any of the profits) and they would, perhaps, privately injure the stock, &c.

11. Further—there would be no manner of justice in so acting; such being the common custom with Govt. Lands—which moreover have been paid for—while theirs cost them nothing.—

12. I verily believe that the sooner they are dealt with, as if they were really and truly *British* subjects, the better for them, and for their children, and for *us*.—One Law, one Rule, one manner of acting for *all*: at least *for all in this District*—seeing how *few* they are, how *well provided* they are (or may be), and how *far* they are advanced—some, even *beyond* some of our own countrymen.—

Pray excuse, my dear Sir, the freedom of these few remarks—written, too, roughly.—

And believe me
to be
Ever very truly Yours
William Colenso.

1858 April 15: to McLean³²⁸

Waitangi
15th. April 1858

Dear Mr. McLean,

A rainy day with wind from the S. keeping me indoors, enables me to put in practice what, during the last week, I have several times thought of—viz, writing you; just to let you know (in the absence of your *aid* Mr. Cooper) how it is with us—Natives. The more so as only last Thursday I returned from Poukawa.—

Well then, to begin at the beginning. I left you and Hapuku at Awanui; returning—*facing* the rain—I got back drenched, having had two somersets by the way; & so much bruised from the last (here too on Waitangi flats!) as to be glad enough to keep my bed for 2 days—thinking how ever *you* managed to get on in the rain—to say nothing of the

heke! Early in the following week I got a visit from old Waka, from whom I got a good deal of news—among other things—that they were dreadfully incensed at the other party's daring to sell Puhara's House, &, that they had determined Mr. C. should never dwell there. (This I have heard repeated 2ce since, but, as he will have to pay them money, they *may* not be really serious.) That Renata will not remove to Omahu, but will stick hard & fast to Te Pakiaka; &, by and bye, when the Mill shall be finished, will put up a permanent pa for himself, at Wakaparata.—

Just at this time came 2 *ope's*; *one*, a kind of taua from Taupo to fight agt. Hapuku on account of Matiu—bringing plenty of arms & ammunition, which, I believe, has been handed over to Tareha—this party, was angry enough at H. having removed inland:— and *one*, a deputatn. from Werowero to get these *disaffected* ones to attend his levee or Coronation!—Twice I combatted their arguments—here at Waitangi—assuring them, that this new mode of proceeding they had pitched upon was the very rail road to their ruin: they, modestly & good-tempered enough, acknowledged, that all I had said they had already heard from nearly every respectable pakeha—but that inasmuch as Kawana had called (or, rather, treated) Potatau as a taurekareka, & had said, he should not know him as a King; & all who should, would be considered enemies, (which was all the same as a challenge), he, Potatau, would shew the Native *mana* & would fight!! saying,—“Kaua koe e mahara e, Kaore o matou hoa; he hoa ano kei to matou tuara, Ko te iwi o Paranehe” (France)—we have had letters thence, telling us to sell no more land; and the “Pikopo's” here are our friends, &c., &c., &c.—That this was at the bottom of their thoughts, hence the making of Powder & retaining Gold fields, (in order to work them), was now their main object. I sent word to Ngatikahungungu—not to go to the hui; but they said (to the deputatn.) that had peace been really and firmly made here, they would go, but as it was, Te Moananui alone should go, who left a fortnight ago.—I sent strong & plain verbal messages to Potatau; which, they said, they would “tell him, as I was a friend to the Maori”—speaking very distrustfully, & *much worse*, of nearly all high authorities,—which I was very sorry to hear.—

Last week another *ope*,—abt. 20, came, headed by Te Paerata, to get his people to the hui, he met Noa at Petani on his way N., no more however have gone. Tareha is busy, making his Pa Wakaairo smaller, more compact, and more easily defended. There is a sad split between them & Rangihiroa on account of the money he got from you: they did say, the road from Tarawera to Mohaka should *not* be made by him, & I was charged to inform Mr. A. of it; &, from the road to the land being such an easy transition, they now claim afresh all Lands right on to Tarawera at least! but I should tell you that their design is, to advocate *the right of Ngatimatapu*, (Petane), to the Land of the Roadmaking, & the other Rangatiratanga.

We have had no news nor returns yet from Porangahau, where they are still dividing their profits:—fame says that Purvis, who is still there among them, has received £500 at least: his brother, Hy., told me, last week, that P. was going to England almost directly.—Hapuku I found busy, having got up *all* the *take's*, &, in a day or so would proceed to put up the smaller fencing (*Wana's*), which, with *aka*, were all ready. Some of the posts are very large—drawn from the Mill by 10 bullocks. I was surprised to find *no one* of the inland Natives helping him, save Pao. Nikahere, and Pao.

Kopakau: the *site* is intermediate between Tauatepopo and the small Kahika bush which stands in the raupo swamp—in fact, it is *on* the line of road as laid out by Roy; & Gill and Hap. had been having words about it; Hap. telling Gill, that if he (G.) could *not* make a road over the lower ground, he himself would do that part. I found them all in pretty good spirits—with a certainty of soon wanting food; which want, of *potatoes* especially, was common everywhere inland. One very great evil I had painful proof of—the selling of spirits by the Draymen (wholesale! and legally enough, perhaps, in 2 gall.) not only to the Natives, but to the Road Parties: this will turn *the line of road*, which should be a benefit, into a curse.—Hap. shewed me a block of Land, between Tauatepopo & the little Lake, which he intended to sell immediately to Mr. Cooper, on his return. One incident occurred while I was there, Ho. Pura, (a Pakowhai native) had his collar-bone broken by the felling of a tree.—

Strangely enough—especially when considered in connexion with what Karait. had said, &, subsequently, Ropiha's Son and Tribe—they wished me to reside among them as their Minister—a straw thrown up shews wh. way the wind blows.—

Perhaps you will hear from Mr. Curling that I have contracted w. Sebley & Thomas to build me a Ho. at Napier; for which Kauri, &c., has been ordered. I have also offered nearly all my Lands (Town and Suburban.) for sale, ditto the *Trees* of this place—as the “Herald” will shew. And a surveyor is now laying-out the whole of that Basin (Nos. 39–44, suburban) Town of Napier, where I have projected a Street, or Place, in the Centre of the hollow, & a Terrace on the hill. I will send you a plan when ready.

None of the natives about me know anything certain of my movements. They have held, however, two “Komitis”; & I have had visits from Te Hira, & from the old Lady Winipere, (Karaitiana's Mother), & firewood sent by Renata!! Waka, who comes & goes, has pressed me—if I will leave—to take from their Land further up the flat, or on the other side, or by the Church, or anywhere—to all which I am deaf, & dumb, too!!

A great no. of Taupo & other Natives have returned; and Ngatihori are now busy working timber for their Mill. I had forgotten to say, that one of this Tribe took away the Mailman's Horse from him, the week after you left; alledging it as retaliation; Moa. however made him give it back.

And now my dear Sir, adieu. Believe me ever,
Very sincerely yours
Wm. Colenso.

P.S. Mackenzie is in gaol.

1858 April 22: to McLean³²⁹

Waitangi
April 22, 1858

My dear McLean,

A few days ago I gave you the Nat. news; promising you a *tracing* of the Land I am getting laid out at Napier, which I

now enclose: the tracing is rather rough, but correct; the Land will *not* be opened for sale for 2 or 3 weeks (depending on the Surveyor), so that if you care to have any of the best sections (all ¼ ac.), you will be in time. I consider the situation the best in the Island, while it is *retired* & in the *heart* of Town. And as I (& Dr. H.³³⁰ and others) wish it to be respectable, I have planned it so as to have no thoroughfare, & given for a belt of Trees, &c.—“*Banks*”—after Sir Jos. B. who came with Cook, & published (&, indeed, brought out Draughtsmen with him at his own expense!) & “*Hooker*”, after our N.Z. Flora Botanist.

—A little stir was among the Natives last week; Hapuku heard (“*from soldiers*” travelling) that he was about to be attacked, & immediately all collected within their new pa: while K. and Renata, hearing that Hap. was coming to attack them, collected all their forces *again* at Pakiaka, and were preparing to march to Pakipaki there to lie in ambush, when Wi (Harawira Tatere's son) came down from Poukawa (*accidentally*), & stopped them by telling how things really were: when they vented their *Piri* in a great deal of firing.— —

Two days ago I addressed the B. of Magistrates (granting Publican's Licenses)—on the subject of selling to Natives, and, on that of the Evils arising from the 2-gall. *whole sale* (!) Ordinance: H. Russell & Col. Wyatt were on the Bench.

Believe me,
Yours truly, W. Colenso.

1859 August 27: to McLean³³¹

Waitangi, August
27, 1859.

To Donald McLean, Esq.
Chief N.Z. Ld. Purchase Commissr.
&c, &c, &c,
Napier.

My dear Sir

I have been thinking a good deal of late on the subject of the Native King! and of the “*Runanga*” which seems to be in pretty active operation in various parts. And from having been present in your Office when Matena Ruta (Potatau's messenger (or Minister Plenipotentiary) from Waikato and principal man of the “*Runanga*” here,) delivered his message to you, I am desirous of trespassing on your time and thoughts with a few remarks.—

1. We have evidently two elements now at work—both opposing the British Government; the Native King and the “*Runanga*”: the former, an idea of foreign growth; the latter purely aboriginal.—

2. Yet, in deeming the idea of a Native King of all the New Zealanders as of foreign growth—we should remember, that originally each Principal N.Z. Chief or head of a Tribe had in every sense Kingly power over his own Tribe: and indeed which has been preserved in the Sandwich Islands (whence some of the ancestors of the New Zealanders came,) to the present day. There is therefore no valid reason

330 Dr Thomas Henry Edward Hitchings, appointed Native Medical Officer at Napier in 1857.

331 ATL Object #1020334 from MS-Papers-0032-0221.

why in considering the genius of the people (acting under a belief of imminent danger from without) the N.Z. Tribes should not unite under one common leader. Indeed, before the general reception of Christianity, it was no uncommon thing for several Tribes to join and act as one, under one Leader for the purpose of war, offensive or defensive.

3. A state somewhat parallel obtained among the ancient Britons when invaded by Cæsar and other foreign foes—also the ancient Greeks: when thus banded *as one* their opposition was not only very formidable but almost invincible.—

4. So, especially in a country of such a peculiar mountainous nature as this, and with British Settlers scattered so very widely apart, would such an opposition be formidable, and if once provoked, not easily subdued. The more so from the very *materiel* which is every where made use of, (or abused,) viz. the Christian Religion and Native Christian Teachers, to carry out the designs of the Native King and the “*Runanga*”.—

5. The Native King (in my opinion) has really but small power, especially at a distance from his own Tribe:—this element has most to do with the Principal Native Chiefs.—

6. Every Principal Native Chief might be sedulously told that he is (as far as is, or can be, possible or requisite,) as a King to his own Tribe; his native jealousy and pride should be touched: *divide et impera*.

7. The “*Runanga*,” however, has a very great power—mainly owing to its being a purely Native idea—a resuscitated germ which has lain latent in the Native mind—and has extensive and growing influence over *all*—men women & children—of course, for good or for evil.—

8. It has been commonly used throughout Polynesia—much like the *tapu*: hence, from the introduction of Christianity the New Zealanders were always inclined to assemble in *bodies*, whether for friendly visiting parties, prayers, schools, marriages, Baptisms, burials, or selling Lands; often patiently enduring no small amount of inconvenience and expense. All matters done “*Runanga*”-fashion (“*i te aroaro o te tokomaha*”) have ever been considered binding.—

9. Now this “*Runanga*” power and authority should be noted, and its sinews cut.

10. If the beast is too strong or too ferocious or too wily or too impenetrable to be attacked openly, it should be done by stealth. The fierce Elephant is ham-strung: the wild bull noosed with the lasso.—

11. If we can’t do what we would, we must do what we can.

12. The different Christian Ministers in the Country should oppose it. If not as treasonable, certainly as chimerical & impracticable, and also inexpedient and highly against the welfare of the Native race.—

13. A *competent* person (or persons) should, I think, attend those “*Runangas*” on the part of the Government; but *not*, however, as a Gazetted Government Officer. Such a person would effect much in a quiet way. The Natives dearly love “talk”, and are always generally pleased at Whites being present at their Meetings.

14. Through such person the Government would also know their *real* Native friends; and timely learn the hatching of any secret designs.—

15. If English Law (or a portion of it) could be dispensed “*Runanga*”-fashion, (i.e. by an itinerant Magistrate, or

R.M., acting in concert with the Chief of each Tribe, and openly and at his Native Village hearing cases & giving judgment,) such would tend to remove much existing discontent.—

16. *If possible* His Excellency should see much more of the Principal Native Chiefs; both at Auckland and *among their respective Tribes*. Like Privy Councillors at home and other highly privileged persons they think they ought to have a Common Right of Entrance, &c.—This is the universal feeling of all Tribal peoples; whether the Polynesian, or African, or N. American Indian be considered, or the more highly civilised inhabitants of the Chinese & Russian Empires—they all wish to see, and talk with their “Great Father.” (It was the unintentional lack of this which made the serious revolt against David, & raised the cry—“We have no part in David:—to your tents O Israel!”—) Hence, too, it was that many of the *old* Missionaries had such an amount of influence, even in hard & trying times; and for want of this many of the *newer* ones fail, notwithstanding their entering on prepared ground.—Soft words welling from the depths of the human soul and the warm hand of man effects as much now as in the days of Jesus Christ. The wild man invariably falls before little acts of kindness oft repeated with firmness, as well as the wild horse before Rarey.—the *suaviter in modo* should ever be united with the *fortiter in re*.—

17. If such could not be granted—not a little might be done through a small yet valuable *yearly* present to each principal Chief—say, a saddle—or a suit of Clothing—a plaid—a gun, or a bag of shot. Such should also be given accompanied with a letter *in answer to an application from the Chief*—which might easily be effected through the agency of a well-disposed Minister, or of a Competent Person (par. 13), or of that of a Native Land Purchase District Commissioner.—

18. All Native Christian Teachers should be restrained from assisting publicly at any “*Runanga*”: at all events (*if ever allowed*) they should be strictly confined to their own village or Tribe. *This is of principal importance*. Only keep back the Native Christian Teachers from interfering or helping the “*Runanga*” movement and the whole scheme will soon fall. There are many ways of doing it:—1st. By the Minister representing it as not being seemly:—2nd. By merely telling him, that *while he so acts at the “runanga” he must not conduct Divine Service*, as his passions will be too much excited:—or, 3rd. By finding him congenial employ in another direction while the “*Runanga*” is sitting:—or, 4th. By sending him (“out of harm’s way,”) N. or S. avising at such periods.

19. It is a grossly mistaken notion, that the presence of the Native Teachers at modern “*Runangas*” serves to keep order & promotes good: keep *outward* order of a certain kind they may, but no real good is promoted by their presence at such assemblies. Unless in cases where they are *well-known to be opposed to the Native King & “Runanga” movement*, but such Native Teachers would *not* attend.

20. The Natives should generally and speedily be shewn, that *there is no necessary connexion whatever between the Christian Religion and the “Runangas”*:—disabuse the Native mind on this point and a great end is gained. Here, however, great caution must be used—unless the Ministers generally oppose the “*Runanga*”; for, it must be confessed, that it is here where the main difficulty lies. The union between Religion & Justice is *natural*: the Natives think themselves unjustly treated, with more injustice looming in

the distance:—*ergo* the connexion in their minds between Religion & the Runanga.

21. I cannot conceive of much (if any) difficulty in getting the Episcopal Ministers thus to act in union; for, certainly the Bishops must see some of the many evils which would necessarily follow the encouraging or fostering (however indirect) such a mad scheme. I venture to suggest, that the Government should lose no time in making application in the proper quarter.—

22. Evil minded or thoughtless Whites, using treasonable or highly exciting or false language to the Natives (as to the designs of the British Government), should be hunted up & made examples of. No rank or office or age should be allowed to screen an individual so acting.

23. In carrying out all, or any of the foregoing ideas, I think it should ever be studiously borne in mind, *to take no notice whatever of the Native King or of the "Runanga"*; not only, not to acknowledge them or their acts or doings, but generally to act as if such were not in being or not of the least importance. *Never enquire after them in any direct way*: and, when they are spoken of, *never betray the least desire to hear or know*. Such conduct is sure to be reported & sure to *tell*. Hence, while ever steadily opposing both Native King and "*Runanga*" *indirectly* in the "Maori Messenger," I would *never do so directly*. The Native race are very shrewd, and are ever ready to take immense jumps in the opposite direction. They hate to have their own important doings taken little notice of; a continuation of such conduct is sure to make them give them up. But let their suspicions be really once aroused, and one might just as well ask a rat to enter a trap!—

Here, my dear Sir, I must conclude. I have many other duties, and I have already written more than I intended, but the subject is a most important one to us all, and I have not anything like exhausted all of it. Believe, I pray, in my zeal and faithfulness, although, it may be, I am incorrect in some of my conclusions.

I am,
My dear Sir
With every respect
Yours very truly,
William Colenso.

1860 December 21: to McLean³³²

Napier
Decr. 21/60

Dear Mr. McLean,

I posted to your address last week a few copies (Maori) of Renata's speech & of Mr. FitzGerald's answer.

I now *enclose* one—that it may not only reach you, but come under your notice. As I think Mr. FitzGerald's answer to be a really good one & well suited to the times—I would suggest that it be printed in your "Maori Messenger." Of course I would not recommend the printing in that serial of Renata's speech.—

I feel sure you will believe that I have been for a long time anxiously noticing all *your* movements at the N.—and all your sayings to, or concerning, the Natives. And am sorry,

very sorry, that you have such a host of Enemies arrayed against you—especially among those who ought to know and do better.—

You, I know, will be quite ready to believe—that I lose no opportunity of aiding and assisting your views & plans as to the Natives—the War—& Maori King. I would that all *here* were but unanimous—I mean of those who both speak Maori & have some influence among them.

Could you not get me a ½ doz. copies of Karere Maori instead of a single one? For years I had 2—but of late only *one*—& this one, together with *one* which comes for Supt.—we give away—and I am often besieged for more. I have also been told by the Natives that they do not get them as they used to. If I could not get ½ doz. copies regularly, yet that no. or more, sent me whenever there is a defeat of the Natives, or any *good* article to them, will sure to be of service.

Hoping you are quite well, & with every good wish and respects.

I am,
Yours truly,
Wm. Colenso.

1861 September 2: to Mantell³³³

Auckland
Sept 2/61

Hon. Walter Mantell
&c &c

My dear Sir

I have your note of this mg., wishing me to inform you, of "Mr Donaldson's efforts at Napier, their utility."—

Unfortunately, I cannot say much, if anything, in his favor.

1st. from his antecedents: I should infer he would never be *stable*.

2nd. from what I have heard Karaitiana and other Natives say, I was of opinion, they did not value his exertions too highly.—

3rd. I look upon his plan (as far as he has told me of it, & let it be known through the Papers—in which he is a terrible scribbler)—as a highly questionable one—as to its usefulness, or even being attainable.

4. I know nothing of *his peculiar fitness* for the office of teaching Maories; am rather inclined to doubt it.

5. He is *now* thoroughly sober: but *you know* what the Maories say of a man who *was* t'other way; and who seeks to get a living by living in their *pas* to teach them: they cannot (or rarely) appreciate a good motive. D's. *seeking* to do them good (in his way) actually operates against him.—As to, "whether the Provl. Authors. will join the Genl. Govt. in aiding &c."—

I don't think they would:—

1. Because D. sent in a petition for aid, 6 months ago, which led to a debate & was refused.—

α. Bec. did not believe in its practicality

β. Bec. so much *set aside* for Maori Teaching already in the Prov.—Grey gave 3, or 4000 ac. of the *best land* of Prov., & the Natives gave same amount—a property worth £10,000.—

γ. S. Williams at Te Aute has had, from £7000 yearly granted for Schools, £1000. or more; & *has not a single scholar!!* (This I had from *his* Natives just before I left.)

δ. Bec. Donaldson's plan runs counter to the Bp's.—whose aim is & has been to draw away the N. youth from their *pas* to the *quasi* College.—

I think I have said enough: you will see I have written *confidentially* to you.

Ormond is a Mr. of Provl. Council, & of Exec. Cl. also; he could give you (perhaps) more information.

In haste
Yours faithfully
Wm. Colenso.

1861 December 12: to McLean³³⁴

(Private)
Napier
Decr. 12/61

D. McLean, Esq.,
&c &c &c

My dear Sir

For the last week or more I have been going to write to you—but I am *so busy* every day that I have not found time—until I have been much too fagged.—

What I wished to say to you is—that, in the event of Sir G. Grey coming hither to see these Natives, (which, I suppose, he will be sure to do,) *do you come with him or be here while he is here*—for, I have heard enough to convince me, that some of those Natives will make great attempts to get back some portions of Lands *bona fide* sold by them to you & paid for by you,—to alter boundaries—to represent their not being half-paid, & so on.—And I much fear they are organizing among themselves deep laid schemes of this kind, & mainly against yourself. You know them well enough to know, that they will scarcely dare to do any thing of the kind to your face—but, your being absent, is quite another thing.—“Now or never”—is their belief—& I almost fear they are *privately* encouraged by some *whites*.—

I hope you are well.—I have heard nothing (by Letter) from your city since I left. I have suffered a great deal—throughout 10 weeks—from severe Rheumatism. The *present* warm weather is however doing me much good—more than all the medicine I have taken—though I am not yet free from pain.

Our Natives are very quiet—notwithstanding Bousfield's outrageous conduct—it is (I think) charitable to conclude him to be a little “cranky.” The Natives are leasing (after their fashion) on all sides. Will they not fall out about *division* of utu reti? Hapuku & Urupene are now almost at war—no doubt they would if they could.

I should greatly like to know *the fate of that letter of mine to W. Tamihana*—given into the hands of Wi Maehe of Rotorua.—Did it ever reach Wi Tamihana? or was it delivered to some white *not very far from you*? When I gave it to W.M. *the Bp's. Native was with him*. Try to know whether W.T. recd. it.

Believe me ever
My dear Sir
Yours sincerely
W. Colenso

Date? to McLean³³⁵

Monday morning

Dear Sir

I regret not being able to attend the S. Comee. this mg. The mail did *not* arrive on Saty. (daylight)—and *this* day is the first of the year with all the new Maori Contractors; I shall therefore be engaged at P.O. Tomorrow I hope to be with you.

Yrs truly
W. Colenso

P.S. I suppose you know 3 make a quorum?

1862 March 10: to Catchpool³³⁶

Napier
March 10th. 1862.

Dear Sir

Since I last saw you (on Saturday 8th. inst.) I have been both Considering & Reconsidering what you then stated to me, about my future assisting you, in your Capacity as Chief Post-Master, in arranging with the Native Mail Carriers of this Province, at some Specified Sum pr. Annum for my Services for so Interpreting Translating & Arranging When without thought, (being very busy) I said “£10. (Ten Pounds) pr. Annum”. But, I Added “rather than do the work for that Sum I would willingly give £1. pr. Annum to be entirely free from it.” I have since had time for reflection and I now write Dear Sir to inform you:—

1st. That I would very much rather have nothing at all to do with the onerous & most unpleasant duty, if some suitable and convenient helper could be found. But,

2nd. That if the Genl. Government should wish me to assist you (As hitherto & from the commencement of our Native Mail Service) I can only consent to do so on being in some degree paid for my Services. And that the lowest sum I would take (And then still consider myself underpaid) would be £30 (Say Thirty Pounds) pr. Annum. Of which I scarcely need inform you full £5. pr. Annum would necessarily be as heretofore given away.

Further: as the Post Master General The Hon. Crosbie Ward in his late visit here both saw a specimen of what I have had

334 ATL Object #1012750 from MS-Papers-0032-0021.

335 ATL Object #1010181 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

336 From a ms. copy.

to do for the General Government, (As above) and said that such Services ought to be paid for I would beg to be allowed to say that, in the Event of my being paid for the work of this year just past, the similar duties I also performed of those of the two previous years should not be forgotten.

E. Catchpool Esqr.
Chief Post Master
Napier. Signed

I am
Dear Sir
Yours Faithfully
Wm. Colenso.

1862 date? to McLean³³⁷

Wednesday
Mg

D. McLean Esq
&c &c &c

My dear Mr. Mclean

For the last few days I have been hoping to see you—to fall in with you, in my usual going to & fro. If you are wholly disengaged this evening I will call on you—say 6 o'clock—when I leave office.

I shall bring the two last numbers of the *Herald* in my pocket.

Yours truly
Wm. Colenso

P.S. since writing the above I have heard of your leaving Town this day—are you *now* disengaged?

1862 June 27: to McLean³³⁸

Friday night
June 27, 1862

My dear Mr. McLean,

As the Wh. Swan has not arrived, and as I leave *tomorrow* per Storm Bird for Wellington, and therefore may *not* see you—I just write a few lines to inform you that I have received your note of 5th (*only yesterday*)—and am sorry Dr. Knight has been disappointed. The little packet which has been missed, contained—a long letter from myself—and a French work on Lichens—*Stictæ*, by De Lise, with Atlas of Plates—which I had promised to lend Dr. Knight, & which he had wished greatly to see—and I had long waited for a good opportunity.—

Do not however think of it—such things will occur, & do occur with us all.—

Mr. Watt told me to day, he fully expected you by Steamer (Wh. Sw.) You will be a little surprised when you hear of our Civil Commissioner.—The town has been full of no other talk all the....

[page(s) missing]

337 ATL Object #1008566 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.
338 ATL Object #1016324 from MS-Papers-0032-0021.

I little thought poor old Waitangi would ever have been the means of so much talk among the Settlers.—

—As I find you do not take in the H.B. *Times* I have addressed one to you to go with this.—It is rather a curious coincidence to see the two Papers—pulling together in a public matter.

—One thing I am very very sure of—that Sir George will find it a step in the *wrong direction* to allow of any deed—*openly & fairly* made, with the *full sanction* of the *powers*—to be called in question. As sure as ever the Waitangi Deed is so dealt with, so surely will the Natives apply to have other Deeds similarly dealt with. I am about to petition Sir George for Compensation, and I intend to accompany my petition (which will be drawn *very temperately*) with a Letter, of few words, to be signed by the *old* Settlers and J.P.'s—say a dozen or so: and I may ask you to sign it.—I shall send up to Wood, from Wellington.

Before you quite leave us, I should like to have a note from you, stating, how you found the Natives of *this District* on your first coming here—& whether you (then) had reason to believe, that my exertions among them had been of an useful & beneficial nature.

I had arranged to go by Storm Bird, because she was advertised to sail on Tuesday 1st July and now she leaves 3 days earlier!!—I wished to see you.—

The little sums of which I gave you a Memo. perhaps you will kindly place to my Credit at Bank of N.Z.

Hoping to hear from you,
Believe me,
My dear Sir,
Yours sincerely,
Wm. Colenso

1862 July 17: to Grey³³⁹

Wellington
July 17, 1862.

His Excellency
Sir George Grey, K.C.B.
Governor of New Zealand
&c &c &c

Sir,

I do myself the honor of briefly addressing you with reference to a petition from myself to Your Excellency which accompanies this letter.—

I should not venture, Sir, to trespass upon your valuable time at this particularly important and busy period, were I not necessitated to do so in consequence of the very extraordinary decision of the Civil Commissioner of the Hawke's Bay District, lately given in his Court there against myself.

Should you not, Sir, be already fully acquainted with that Case, you will find it faithfully reported (*copied from the Court record made by the Magistrate's Clerk*,) in the Hawke's Bay "Herald" of June 28th.

339 Archives Ref. No. IA1 242; Record 63/2384 in Colonial Secretary Record Book 244.

My principal reasons, Sir, for losing no time, in both writing to you and forwarding my Petition, are:—

1. That you may early have a faithful outline of the whole matter:—
2. That you may certainly and quickly know, that I neither had, have, or can have any intention or desire at all approaching towards anything of a factious or embarrassing nature;—but, on the contrary, a most hearty disposition to aid Your Excellency in your zealous endeavours after the good of the Natives. (Hence, also, Sir, I early seek to acquaint you of my wishes lest I should be again misrepresented.)
3. That, as a sworn and loyal subject of Her Majesty the Queen, I should lose no time in informing you, Sir, that I have very good reasons for believing, that the desire of the “King” Natives of Hawke’s Bay, to have back the small piece of Land at Te Awapuni, is only a beginning (as it were) of a trial of strength on their part, as to how far a sanctioned and written Deed in which Her Majesty the Queen is the Grantee can be broken; and, if so, to follow it up by seeking to have other Deeds broken in which Her Majesty is also the Grantee, the matter of a consideration (as in the case of other Deeds) being to them of small moment.—

You, Sir, who have known so much of this people, must be aware, that, with them, a “*tapu*” (in the name of a powerful chief) can never be broken. If, however, such should be done and permitted, then the “*mana*” of his name would necessarily be greatly lowered, or gone for ever. Now Her Majesty’s name, in this said Deed, (taken in connexion with the utter irreversibility of the gift—“*mo ake ake ake,*”) is, *to them*, very similar:—at all events is quite a cognate idea. I may add, that Mr. Commissioner MacLean, always took this (my) view of the case (with reference to the 10 acres at Te Awapuni); believing with me, that to set aside the Deed of Gift would prove a dangerous precedent (and this was our opinion long before any of the late troubles or demands arose).

Moreover, according to *their own* customs, the Natives would never have once thought of seeking to remove me, or to regain possession of the Land, had they not been (in 1853–4,) incited and encouraged to do so. The very facts of their having called my “*waka*” to shore—publicly selected my abode—stepping out the boundaries, fencing it in, and building my dwelling-house (*the principal Chiefs with their own hands*) and my clearing it, and raising food—having children born, and my own blood shed thereon—each of these, much less all—would have constituted a legitimate claim in their eyes—and according to their established customs and usages.

Should Your Excellency, however, be pleased to determine the said Land to revert to them;—I would beg to suggest, (to save, if possible, any future trouble from them,) that such should be done under your own Deed and Seal, and not upon the mere word of one of your Officers.—

In making those remarks I trust Your Excellency will clearly perceive, that I am not actuated by any desire to retain Waitangi: (to me it is, and must ever be, a place of many associations pleasant & unpleasant,—and time was, when I could scarcely have borne the loss of it:) believe me,

Sir, I only seek that which I conscientiously believe to be for the common good of the Colony.³⁴⁰

It was my intention, Sir, not to present my Petition until I had received an open Letter to Your Excellency, signed by the *early* Settlers and Magistrates of Hawke’s Bay, bearing testimony to the truth of the same, which should accompany it. For the above-mentioned reasons, however, I desire to lose no time; and I hope you will allow me to forward on to you, Sir, the said Letter on my receiving it.

I have the honour
to be,
Your Excellency’s
obedient humble Servant,
Wm. Colenso.

To His Excellency Sir George Grey, Knight Commander of the most honorable Order of the Bath, Governor and Commander in Chief in and over Her Majesty’s Colony of New Zealand and its Dependencies, and Vice-Admiral of the same, &c, &c.—

The Petition of William Colenso, Clerk, Provincial Treasurer and Inspector of Schools for the Province of Hawke’s Bay, and member of its Provincial and Executive Councils, and also of the General Assembly of New Zealand.—

Humbly sheweth:—

That your Petitioner came to New Zealand in the year 1834, as a Missionary from the Church Missionary Society.

That your Petitioner, though often performing long and difficult Journeys, mainly resided in the Bay of Islands till 1844.

That during the whole of that period your Petitioner never once broke the rule of the C.M. Society—viz. not to acquire nor possess Land from the Natives.—

That in the year 1844, your Petitioner came to Ahuriri to reside, (which place he had visited in the previous Year) being sent thither by the Bishop of New Zealand.

That among other stringent conditions imposed by the Bishop of New Zealand upon your Petitioner, on his coming to Ahuriri, (having previously limited him to the use of ten acres of Land,) was this, viz., that he should not hold nor acquire any Land without his consent.—

That your petitioner was the first European Settler in the Ahuriri, among a little-known, fierce and untractable Tribe.—

That your Petitioner dwelt on a small piece of low land of ten acres at Te Awapuni in Ahuriri aforesaid; which Land was freely and publicly ceded and given by all the Chiefs, Owners, in the year 1845 to Her Majesty Queen Victoria, by regular Deed of Gift, drawn upon the spot in the New Zealand tongue by the present Bishop of Waiapu, (as

340 Minute added: “Mr Gisborne! write to the Bishop of New Zealand stating that Mr Colenso proposes to give up this land on receiving £300 compensation for his improvements & request the Bishop to inform the Govt. whether Mr C. has received at any time allowances or compensation from him or the Ch. Missionary Society... W. Fox 21.7.62

The Bishop of N.Z. 22 July/62—Selwyn replied on 4 Aug. that he had never had any pecuniary trans. with Colenso and had forwarded his letter to the Bishop of Waiapu.

directed by the Bishop of New Zealand, and advised and sanctioned by your Excellency's predecessor Governor Fitzroy,) to be by the Crown re-granted to the C.M. Society.

That soon after, or within two Years or your Petitioner's coming to Te Awapuni to dwell,³⁴¹ the Natives who were formerly the Owners of the said small piece of ceded Land, seeing that your Petitioner had laid out very largely upon it,—in Building, Fencing, Planting, Draining, and Sowing Grasses,—began to demand payment for the same, (as well as for many other things which lay wasting and rotting around, such as drift firewood, flax, raupo, reeds, cockle-shells, pumice-stone, etc. etc.,) and which demand they, for a considerable time, never ceased to reiterate, and that often in a very obnoxious way.

That at that very time, (and indeed throughout the whole of the period of eight years—from 1844 to 1852,—during which your Petitioner remained in connexion with the C.M. Society,) your Petitioner regularly used and spent all that he could devote of his Salary (never laying anything by) besides sundry gifts from Christian friends in England, in feeding and clothing his large Infant School, and many other children of the more distant natives, as well as the numerous sick and infirm of his large District, and also in procuring glazed windows doors and furniture for Native Chapels and School-Houses: no allowances having ever been made to him by the C.M. Society for any of those purposes.

That your Petitioner never once paid to any of the Native Grantors of the said ten acres of Land anything as payment or as rent; always firmly meeting them with the statement, that the transaction had been closed: and he fully believes, that, in due time, his constant firmness on this point had its desired and proper effect.—

That during those eight years of heavy toil and no little hardship, your Petitioner never once left his District: for which, and for the great and unexpected improvements within the same, he, in March 1852, received the thanks and congratulation of the Bishop.

That in December, 1852, your Petitioner's connexion with the C.M. Society suddenly ceased.—

That in the following month (January 1853,) the very large and strongly built Dwelling-house of your Petitioner, (which had but lately been quite finished,) was, with all its contents, and the adjacent out-houses, entirely destroyed by fire.

That by that calamitous accident your Petitioner lost everything he had, (save a portion of his Books, which were in a detached building,) among which were many valuable zoological and fossil specimens—the unwearied collecting of nearly twenty years.—

That up to this time, (and, indeed, till 1854,) your Petitioner did not possess a foot of Land in the Colony.

That in March, 1853, the Bishop of New Zealand (accompanied by Your Excellency) visited Ahuriri: when the Bishop wished your Petitioner to leave the place on which he had so long resided, and which he had mainly at his own expence made habitable; but which your Petitioner (considering himself hardly used, after nearly twenty Years heavy Service, and being nearly destitute, without means or resources, or any other New Zealand home,) refused to

do,—without, at least, compensation for his outlay and improvements: the said Land not having been granted to His Lordship the Bishop of New Zealand, nor required by him for a future Mission Station, in consequence of the then recent removal of the Natives from its neighbourhood, and, also, of a very large block of Land having been recently granted for that purpose at Te Aute.

That shortly after, two, out of five, Native Grantors, instigated (as your Petitioner believes,) by European influence, endeavored to induce your Petitioner to remove from the place.

That, subsequently, the Bishop of New Zealand applied to the then Crown Land Commissioner and Resident Magistrate (Mr Domett) to eject your Petitioner.

That your Petitioner was afterwards written to professionally from Wellington by the Bishop's Solicitor there (Mr. Brandon) to cause your Petitioner to give up both possession and also the Deed of gift.—

That your Petitioner (by his Solicitor, Mr. Hart,) still demurred to do so without equitable Compensation.

That, in 1858, a Government Surveyor (Mr. Kempthorne) was sent by the Chief Native Lands Purchase Commissioner to survey the said piece of Land, in order to a Crown Grant being issued for same to the C.M. Society; to which Surveyor the Native Grantors pointed out the boundaries.

That one of the Native Grantors—and perhaps the principal one of the original five—the Chief Puhara, (who was unfortunately slain in battle by Karaitiana and Renata in 1858,) though a steady supporter of the R. Catholic Religion, not only always advocated your Petitioner's remaining, but, with his last words to your Petitioner, (in the presence of Te Hapuku,) besought him never to give up or leave the same.

That of the four remaining Native Grantors, one, Te Waaka Te Kawatini, to your Petitioner's certain knowledge, is most averse to the said piece of Land being taken from your Petitioner: and, further, that your Petitioner has very good reasons, for believing, that another of the said four Grantors (Te Hira Te Ota) is still (as he ever has been) averse to such being done.—

That your Petitioner has learned from unquestionable authority that the Natives who severally addressed both Your Excellency and the Hon Mr. Fox, (et Te Pawhakaairo and Matahiwi,) on your recent visits to Hawke's Bay, concerning the said piece of Land, were Renata and Paora Kaiwhata, Natives having no real interest in the reversion of the said Land, not being original Grantors of the same, nor belonging to the Grantors' *hapu* or family.

That your Petitioner has not himself for the last four Years been either told by the Native Grantors to quit or to pay rent for the said Land, though frequently seeing and conversing with them.

That nevertheless your Petitioner has reason to believe that two of them (Karaitiana and his brother-in-law Tareha,) do now (since their connection with the Native "King") wish to have the said Land back.

That your petitioner was summoned on the 21st. June last, to appear in Court to answer an information (laid under the Native Land Purchase Ordinance of 1846,) charging him with being in occupation of Native Lands; That you

341 Inserted, "By whose authority was he located upon the land."

Petitioner appeared on the 23rd. of June before the Civil Commissioner, by whom your Petitioner was fined £5., (although, as your Petitioner believes, totally unsupported by evidence, and also upon illegal and unauthorized information,) and ordered forthwith to give up the said ten acres of Land at Te Awapuni to the Natives.

That your Petitioner is not now greatly desirous of retaining possession of the said piece of Land, especially if it be the wish of Your Excellency that such should revert to the Native Grantors.—

That your Petitioner however believes, from his long experience and knowledge of the Native character, and particularly from their present unsettled and unsatisfactory notions, that such a step as the destruction of any sanctioned Deed of Land, however small, formally and publicly granted to Her Majesty the Queen of England, would not be a wise one; and one assuredly to be followed by demands for similar concessions, wholly or in part of other Deeds of Land, transferred by them to the Crown.

That your Petitioner therefore respectfully submits for Your Excellency's consideration, whether it would not be more advisable under all the circumstances of the case (now that the Trustees of the C.M. Society have expressed their determination not to apply for a Crown Grant in trust for the said piece of Land,) to direct that the aforesaid Native Grantors be paid by Your Excellency's Government for the said piece of Land.—

Lastly, that if it be the wish of Your Excellency that your Petitioner should forthwith leave the said piece of Land,—together with the houses, gardens, field, brick chimnies, fences, and other improvements thereon), that Your Excellency will be pleased to take into consideration the facts narrated in this Petition, and to direct, that your Petitioner be equitably compensated for his real improvements on the said Land, to be determined on the spot by fair and equitable arbitration:—, or, should it be Your Excellency's wish to have this (already disagreeable) matter closed as quickly as possible, your Petitioner (in order to save any further writing, trouble, or delay,) would be willing to yield up possession, etc. on his receiving the sum of £300 (Three Hundred Pounds) as Compensation for his Improvements and fixed Property which must necessarily be left.—

And your Petitioner will ever pray.—

William Colenso

Wellington,
July 17th, 1862.

To His Excellency Sir George Grey, Knight Commander of the most Honorable Order of the Bath, Governor and Commander in Chief in and over Her Majesty's Colony of New Zealand and its Dependencies, and Vice-Admiral of the same, etc. etc. etc.—

We, the undersigned, early settlers, magistrates, and land proprietors in and of the Province of Hawke's Bay, having carefully read the Petition of William Colenso of Napier to your Excellency dated Wellington July 17, 1862, do hereby certify that we have long known the said Petitioner: that we believe his statements in the said Petition to be correct: and, that we heartily recommend to your Excellency's favorable consideration the Petitioner's Prayer for equitable

compensation—should it be Your Excellency's wish that he should leave the piece of land referred to by him in his Petition.—

J.C. Lambton Carter
James B. Ferguson
Alexander McLean
Thomas Lowry - settler
Alex. Alexander
T.K. Newton
H.B. Sealy
Edw. Catchpool
W. Maltby
Philip Dolbel
W.R.B. Ferguson
Jno. Chambers
Wm. Smith
Fredk. Sutton
William Couper
William Lyon
W.B. Rhodes
E.W. Stafford—in so far as the prayer for “equitable compensation”
Ed. Augustus Carlyon
James H. Northwood
J.D. Ormond—In so far as regards the prayer for equitable consideration
Robt. Hart

1862 August 23: to Grey³⁴²

To His Excellency
Sir George Grey, K.C.B.,
Governor, &c. &c. &c.,
of New Zealand.—

Wellington,
August 23rd. 1862

Sir

I did myself the honour of forwarding to your Excellency, on the 18th. of July, a Petition and Letter from myself.—

On the same day, your Excellency did me the honour to acknowledge the receipt of the same, and to inform me that “you had lost no time in forwarding the same for the consideration of your responsible advisers.”

In that letter, Sir, which accompanied my Petition, I stated my intention of also forwarding an open Letter from a few of the early Settlers and others of Hawke's Bay to your Excellency in support of my Petition, and begged permission to forward the same, on receipt thereof.—

Having lately received the Letter referred to, I now have the honour of forwarding it enclosed herewith to your Excellency.—

I doing so, however, I beg, Sir, to be allowed to state,—that during the 10 days the said Letter was at Hawke's Bay, (having been sent by me per “Queen,” and having been there posted to return by her,) the weather was so very wet and rivers high that scarcely any communication could be had with the interior; and which is the sole reason why

certain of the early respected residents there had not been to town, and were not communicated with.—

I may also, Sir, be further permitted to add, (having very recently heard here, that it was being industriously circulated that I had received large sums of money from the C.M. Society towards, or on account of, the present property at Waitangi,) that I never received from the C.M.S. any sum or sums whatever on account of the same, save the sum of £15. (Fifteen Pounds) towards the erection of the large wooden building there; indeed, my only main difference with the C.M.S., during the 20 years I served them, was entirely owing to their disinclination to allow my reiterated (just) demands for necessary outlay on the station: and which, Official Correspondence extending over a series of years would fully prove.—

I have the honour to be,
Sir,
Your Excellency's
very humble Servant,
Wm. Colenso.

1862 September 12:
to the Colonial Secretary³⁴³

Wellington.
September 12, 1862.

The Hon.
The Colonial Secretary,
Wellington

Sir

I have the honor to inform you, that, having sent in a Petition and Letter (concerning my occupation of 10 acres of Land at Waitangi in Hawke's Bay) to His Excellency the Governor on the 17th. July last and having immediately received a kind answer from His Excellency informing me that "he had lost no time in forwarding the same for the consideration of his responsible Advisers;"—and, further, having also forwarded to His Excellency on the 25th. ulto., a Letter covering an open Letter from the early Settlers and Magistrates of Hawke's Bay in support of my former Petition, and having, again, immediately received a similar answer from His Excellency, "assuring" me, that he "had lost no time in forwarding the same for the consideration of his responsible advisers;" (and now, Sir,—that we are about to separate, and I to return to Hawke's Bay;) I beg that you will—with your coadjutors in the Ministry—be pleased to consider those Papers above referred to, and inform me of your decision thereupon.

I feel the more necessitated to ask you, Sir, to acquaint me with your determination before we separate—from the fact of my having recently heard, from my Servant left in charge of Waitangi, of the side fence of my garden and orchard there having fallen—partly through strong winds & winter weather, and partly through the large herds of Settlers' Cattle continually rubbing against it; so that I must be prepared for an immediate outlay of from £20.—to £28.—to restore it.

³⁴³ Archives 1863/2317–2519. A Domett was the Colonial Secretary.

I believe, Sir, that you were well acquainted with the place during your residence in Hawke's Bay, as well as with those respectable gentlemen & magistrate who have supported my Petition.

Awaiting your answer
I have the honour to be,
Sir,
Your mo. ob. servt.
Wm. Colenso

Wellington, Sept. 16th

Memo.

The accompanying Letter was not sent on the day dated, because of your being so very busy,—now, however, House having been prorogued—steamers gone—& Governor absent—I send it W.Colenso.

1862 September 26:
to the Colonial Secretary³⁴⁴

Waitangi
26th Sept. 1862.

The Hon. The Colonial Secretary
N.Z.

Sir

You inform me, Sir, 1. That "the best course under all the circumstances will be that I should surrender the piece of Land in question, &c."—and, that, "You agree to my proposal of a reference to arbitration," and call on me to "nominate an arbitrator," &c.—

2. That "two questions only will have to be determined by the arbitrators,"—the 1st. being,— "What amount, if any, was granted to me at any time by the Church Missionary Society towards the making of improvements on the Land while it was a Mission Station."—

In reply I have to state; (taking the last first).—

1st. That this proposed question of yours (above stated), is (as I read it) wholly a new element, placing the whole matter on an entirely different platform. A question, I fear, which, if not impossible fairly to answer, makes the settlement of the real question at issue more problematical and distant than a suit in Chancery. For,

- a. The place "was a Mission Station" from A.D. 1843 to 1852 inclusive; and ceased to be such ten years ago.
- b. The very many necessary papers (being more or less vouchers) of receipt and *outlay*, spread over the whole of that period; in the shape of a multitude of Letters, (official, semi-official, and private, to and from persons in N.Z. & in England,) accounts, Bills, Invoices, Memoranda in English and in Maori, &c., &c. Many of which, I am almost sure, are not in existence, and cannot be forthcoming; although I had religiously preserved them up to the time of the fire (in Jan'y. 1853,) which destroyed the large Mission House and outhouses, and nearly all my moveable property.

³⁴⁴ Archives 1863/2317–2519. A Domett.

c. Could all such Papers be found, I feel assured, that no Settler at Hawke's Bay would undertake any such arbitration, to be founded on any such documentary investigation respecting Houses and other works, of some of which, owing to fire and floods, there is absolutely no trace remaining! (and which, in all probability, would also call for the appearance of European witnesses not living in Hawke's Bay;) such an inquiry would necessarily be a work of considerable time and expense, and could only be conducted on the spot by a skilled person sent purposely by the Government for the occasion.

d. The fair result, however, of such inquiry, would be, my obtaining that still larger outlay repeatedly sought by me from the Church Missionary Society; but which,—after so many years of nearly fruitless endeavor,—I finally abandoned on the destruction of the then Station by fire in 1853, when, also my connexion with them ceased.

e. But is such inquiry now really needed for the settlement of the *simple* question?—of Compensation for my own private outlay and private improvements? of what, in fact, I am now called upon to leave; ten years after the place ceased to be a Mission Station! If the Government should answer this question in the affirmative, then I must respectfully decline nominating an Arbitrator, as I feel assured no one of my acquaintance would undertake such an onerous office. Such could only be effectually filled by a Government Officer specially appointed.—

2nd. If, Sir, on the contrary, the Government really “agrees to my proposal,” (as I understood it)—to consider what I am equitably entitled to in surrendering the place, then I have no hesitation in naming Mr. Alexander of Napier to act as Arbitrator in my behalf.—

I shall hold myself ready to obey an order from the Government to surrender the place to whomsoever they may appoint to receive the same.

I have the honor to be,
Sir,
Your very humble servant
William Colenso.

1862 October 23:
to the Colonial Secretary³⁴⁵

Napier, October
23rd. 1862.

The Hon. The Colonial Secretary
Auckland.

Sir,

I have the honor to inform you, that, as early as possible after my return hither from Wellington (on the 24th. ulto.), I lost no time in preparing to remove my Goods and Furniture from Waitangi, and in meeting there the two Arbitrators appointed by the Government and myself—Messrs. Chambers and Alexander.—They, having first chosen D. Gollan, Esq. J.P., as Umpire between them should they disagree, proceeded to inspect and to consider

what sum ought to be awarded to me as Compensation on surrendering the Premises. From them I received their Award in writing, a Copy of which I enclose.³⁴⁶—

As I wish, Sir, to be as brief as possible on this (to me) unpleasant subject, I will merely add, that I have already removed six cart-loads of Goods, Furniture, or Books, Agricultural Implements, Timber, &c.—and intend removing the whole of the remainder (about 3 loads more, all which is packed and ready) tomorrow;—when I shall visit the place for the *last* time.—

Awaiting your Commands,
I have the honor to be,
Sir,
Your mo. ob. servt.
Wm. Colenso.

1862 November 11: to McLean³⁴⁷

Napier, November
11th. 1862.

D. McLean, Esq.,
&c &c &c
Napier

Dear Sir

I do not know whether you are aware of the Government of New Zealand having requested me to surrender Waitangi to them, promising me compensation for the Improvements, &c. thereon. I have agreed to do so, (and, in fact, have left never more to return,) and the Arbitrators appointed by the Government and myself, (Messrs. Chambers & Alexander,) have sent in their award.—

I, yesterday, received a letter from the Under Secretary, enclosing a copy of a Letter from Bishop Williams to the Hon. the Col. Secretary, respecting myself and Waitangi.—

This Letter has been sent to me by Mr. Gisborne,—“in order that I may make such remarks thereon, for the information of the Government, as I may consider necessary.”

I am truly sorry to find, that Bishop Williams' Letter is (to say the least of it) altogether of a highly depreciatory character.

As, however, the concluding paragraph of Bishop Williams' Letter is wholly concerning information which he states to have been given by *you*: and as I know nothing whatever of any such circumstance as he relates,—I am necessitated to ask you if you know any thing of it? I enclose a copy of that portion of Bishop Williams' Letter.

Also:—as Bp. Williams (in his said Letter) further says—“the original raupo house was in some way (!) burnt down, and Mr. Colenso then lived in a *small raupo* building:”—which words, without explanation, being of a nature to mislead the Government,—I will also thank you to state your opinion of “the *small raupo* building,” abovementioned,—which stood, and still stands, in the garden at Waitangi. I do this, not merely because of your

345 Archives 1863/2317–2519. A Domett.

346 Chambers and Alexander valued the improvements on the land at £350.

347 ATL Object #1015759 from MS-Papers-0032-0221.

often having been in it, (before the time of the fire above alluded to,) but because (if I mistake not,) you were so much pleased with it, that you employed the Natives of Ahuriri to erect a *similar* one for the Government in this town; and which was afterwards occupied by the Crown Lands Commissioner (Mr. Domett), and since, to the present time, by the Resident Magistrate (Capn. Carling).

I am
My dear Sir
Yours very truly
Wm Colenso.

1862 November 14: to Gisborne³⁴⁸

Napier
November 14,
1862

W. Gisborne, Esq,
Under Secretary,
Auckland.

Sir

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter dated 6 November 1862 with Enclosure (for which I thank the Hon. Mr. Dillon Bell); and I greatly regret that—having to leave (according to Official notification) on Monday next, the 17th. inst., for Petane and Te Wairoa Districts, to Inspect the Schools there, and from which tour I shall not return before the 29th. inst.,—I shall not be able to reply to your letter until after my return from my visit of School Inspection.—

I have the honor to be,
Sir,
Your mo. ob. servt.
Wm. Colenso.

1862 December 10:
to the Colonial Secretary³⁴⁹

Napier, December
10th., 1862

The Hon The Colonial Secretary
Auckland.

Sir,

On the 14th ult. I did myself the honor of acknowledging the receipt of your letter of the 6th ulto. (with enclosure being a copy of a letter from Bishop Williams to the Hon. the Colonial Secretary, dated September 5, 1862);— at the same time informing you, that, in consequence of my then approaching official visit to the Wairoa district as Provincial Inspector of Schools, I could not possibly answer your letter by return on the steamer “Queen” to Auckland. Having, however, returned from my tour of Inspection on the 28th. Ult., and having also just concluded the common heavy monthly duties of my Office as Provincial Treasurer, I have now the honor of replying to your Letter, and of

making such remarks on Bp. Williams’ letter, for the information of the Government, as will, I trust, be found suitable and conclusive, and at the same time as brief as possible.

2. Before, however, that I proceed to notice Bp. Williams’ Letter, I would beg to call your attention to a slight clerical error in your Letter of the 6th. November. You there speak of “land occupied by me at *Te Aute*”;—I presume that you mean Te Awapuni, or Waitangi,—from which Te Aute is 25 miles distant.—And, further, to be allowed to refer you to my letter to you of the 20th. September last, especially to clauses marked, *b*, *c*, and *d*, when considering the Copies and Extracts enclosed.—

3. Permit me also, Sir, at the outset, to state:— that— while I clearly perceive both the spirit and aim of Bp. Williams, in his letter to the Hon. the Col. Secretary concerning me,— and am sensibly alive to all the charges so Christianly (?) expressed and implied by the writer,—and strongly feel that (if really necessary) I could easily answer and refute them;—that were all Bishop Williams has stated in his letter perfectly correct, such (both in the opinion of several judicious friends to whom I have shewn his letter, as well as in my own) has nothing whatever to do with the real matter at issue:—viz. my receiving equitable compensation for my property and improvements recently abandoned at Waitangi, at the desire of the General Government.—May I be allowed, Sir, to call your attention for a moment to clause E. par 1, of my letter to you of September 20th 1862?—

4. Bp. Williams, in par 3 of his letter, states:—that, about the year 1844 or 1845 I had received from him the sum of £70 (seventy pounds) to cover the expenses of a temporary raupo building and of fencing at Te Awapuni; (also, intimating that I had received no more;) and, further, in par. 4, that in 1853 (December) my connection with the C.M. Society was dissolved.—

5. The said £70 was indeed received by me from Bp. Williams in the Bay of Islands in October 1844, (when preparing to remove to Hawke’s Bay, after a residence of ten years in th Bay of Islands,) not merely, however, “to cover the expenses of a fence and a temporary *raupo* dwelling,” but as the first instalment towards the expenses of forming a Mission Station in a distant, wild, and (then) little-known part of New Zealand,—including, also, my own expenses incidental on removal, (which expenses were by him, as Archdeacon, increased, through my having to call at ASuckland for the Rev. J. Hamlin and family, and all his household goods and Station Stores, he also then removing from Manukau to Te Wairoa in Hawke’s Bay.) While in the Bay of Islands, (in October, 1844,) and *with Bp. Williams’ (then Archdeacon of this district,) express sanction, and, indeed, advice*, I purchased 2000 feet of timber, 4000 bricks glass, iron, paints, oils, doors, and window sashes, (this last item alone, cost me £9.0.0, being ordered by himself of his brother’s carpenter,) and also took from Rev. W.C. Dudley Mission Station stores, (nails, paint, saws, etc.) amounting to £26.14.10; which stores had also been ordered purposely for him by Bp. Williams for Te Wairoa Station in Hawke’s Bay, (to which Mr Dudley was originally appointed):—all which, and much more is clearly shown in an abridged copy of my first (original) half-yearly station account (*Enclosure No.1*,³⁵⁰) forwarded by myself from Ahuriri to the Committee of Missionaries held at

348 Archives Ref No. IA1 242; 1863/2384.

349 Archives Ref No. IA1 242; 1863/2384. A Domett.

350 WC: Enclosure No. 1: copy of ½ yearly Station acct.

Poverty Bay in June, 1845; by whom, however, all building and station expenses above £73:10:0. were disallowed!! (“*original*,” because it is the account returned to me by the said Committee!— and, note, that the prices charged by me for goods provided for the Maories, (money being of no use *here* in those days) were those of the wholesale English manufacturer:—e.g. best 9/4 blankets 5/9, and 10/4 ditto 7/- each:—whereas, in cases not altogether dissimilar, Bp. Williams and his friends were not only allowed “Sydney prices” for goods so sold, but “3 times that amount”!

6. Further: Bp. Williams, at that very Mission Committee, held in July 1845, at his own house in Poverty Bay, (while disallowing my necessary outlay,) actually paid himself the sum of £15.13.4, being his own demand for *additional nails, hinges, gimlets, locks, etc.*, being a further part of the Mission Station building stores originally ordered by him for the Wairoa station, and which had been landed at Poverty Bay, and having been there drenched with salt water in landing by native canoes, were *almost useless*; in fact, the locks had to be taken to pieces and cleaned, and the nails had to be *burnt* before they could be sundered: a copy of this account I also enclose (*Enclosure No.2*).³⁵¹

7. Moreover, and as being further confirmatory of the above, I beg to proffer (*Enclosure No. 3*)³⁵² extracts from two Letters from myself to the C.M.Society, in June and December, 1846,—*i.e.* of so much of each of them as related to the Mission Premises at Waitangi. Also, (*Enclosure, No.4*),³⁵³ a copy of a letter from the Secretaries of the C. Missionary House, London, to Bp. Williams, respecting the same. And, also, an Extract from another letter of mine to tyhe C.M. Society in 1849, (*Enclosure, No.5*).³⁵⁴

8. Bp. Williams in par. 5 of his letter, further states, that “The original raupo house was *in some way* burnt down.” Unfortunately for me *I was not in it at the time of its taking fire*, but an intimate friend of Bp. Williams was, and therefore *he may know* more of that calamity than I do. One thing, however, was well-known here,—that I lost nearly everything I had by that fire. Bp. Williams goes on to say (par.5) that, after the fire, “I *then* lived in a *small* raupo building,”—as if it were merely some make-shift—such building, however, was a very strong and nice cottage, 26 x 18, wholly floored with *kauri* on double joists, having two rooms, a brick chimney, 2 doors and 4 windows,—being, in fact, a beautiful specimen of strong and ornamental Maori work, in tracery, colouring, and *totara* carving:—a building, known to yourself, Sir, and also to your predecessor Mr Fox. The “*small* weather-boarded store” (also mentioned, in par. 5, by Bp. Williams,) measures 30 x 22, is high, divided into two rooms by a planed wooden partition; has 5 windows and 2 doors,—one room being laid with a mud floor, and the other floored with *kauri* timber.—

9. In par. 7 of his letter, Bp. Williams further states,—“For the buildings therefore which had been erected” Mr Colenso had received a *stipulated* sum, &c. &c.—This I utterly deny; and believe, the documents now enclosed are fully sufficient to disprove all such “*stipulation*.” No doubt, (as he states in the same par.) “I incurred expenses on my own responsibility, and laid out my money upon land over which I could have no [legal] claim.”—This I have proved to my cost and extreme dissatisfaction.—

10. Bp. Williams’ statement in par. 8 has been fully answered by me when before the Civil Commissioner. I had invariably replied to that demand, (vide my published letters to the Bp. of N. Zealand’s attorney, Mr Brandon,)—“*If I must leave all I require is equitable compensation*”—I should also add, to prevent misconception, that I was never once requested to remove from the said spot by the C.M. Society; although I had early made them acquainted with my determination (they being willing) to end my days on it.—

11. As to par. 9 of Bishop Williams’ Letter, all I can say is, that I am totally ignorant of every portion of it. I beg to enclose a copy of a note of enquiry which I wrote to Mr. McLean, and also a copy of that gentleman’s reply.³⁵⁵

12. Bp. Williams, in par.3 of his letter, after mentioning “the *temporary* raupo building,” says,—“that a weather-board house was not erected, nor was it indeed required for the reason which is given below” (*viz.* the dissolving of my connexion with the C.M. Society, in 1853)—But, surely, there must have been some other reason. For this “*temporary raupo building*,” (mark, not merely “*raupo*,” but “*temporary raupo*,”) was ordered by Bp. Williams and myself when in Hawke’s Bay in 1843,—and yet, by his own voluntary admission, no weather-board house had even been commenced 10 years after! Why was this? Because the said “*temporary raupo building*,”—or, the Mission house,—(which Bp. Williams well-knew, having several times been hospitably entertained under its roof,)—was a strong, well-built, commodious house; the main part of the building being 50 x 36,—neatly reeded in imitation of cane-work, and highly ornamented with native carving;—(some of the posts were nearly two feet across,—all of them were of hard-wood, and dubbed down smooth with the adze;)—containing 12 rooms and two large corridor-like passages, floored, (including its large verandah 46 x 8) with *kauri* and *totara* timbers; having 16 windows all glazed, three of which were 6ft. 6in. folding french sashes,) and 17 doors, and two excellently well-built brick chimnies, (which, spite of earthquakes, are still standing and good). A house, which all who saw it admired, and which the Bishop of New Zealand more than once said, he very much and greatly preferred to a weather boarded one.—Sir, I am happy in being able to enclose an accurate ground-plan of it, faithfully taken from the old original (*Enclosure No.7*).³⁵⁶—

13. Moreover, I should state, that, in addition to the *one* “*temporary raupo building*” of Bp. Williams, there were also, (*besides* the weather-boarded store, and snug study, already mentioned,)

1. A *totara framed raupo house*, 27 x 14, having 3 rooms, 4 glazed windows, and 3 doors, and a good chimney; used for Maori male domestics—(this building

351 WC: Enclosure No.2: copy of Archd. Williams’ acct.

352 WC: Enclosure No. 3: Extracts from 2 Letters.

353 WC: Enclosure No.4: Copy of a letter & Resolution from Secys. CMS.

Appended to this enclosure is a “Note by Wm. Colenso. N.B.—it will be seen from the foregoing Letter, that the *Duplicate* letter I had written to the C.M.S., (enclosing a copy of my outlay,) in December 1846, and had transmitted to Archdn Williams to be by him (as Chairman of the Eastern District Committee) forwarded to the C.M. Society, *had been retained*,—such not having reached them by Feby. 1848. Wm. Colenso.”

354 WC: Enclosure No.5: Extract from a Letter of mine to C.M.S.—1849.

355 WC: Enclosure No.6: note to Mr. McLean and his answer. Although Colenso certified enclosure 6 as a “true copy” it differs somewhat from the original (above).

356 WC: Enclosure No.7: ground-plan of old Mission House at Waitangi.

was twice erected).

2. A *School-house*, for women and children, 40 x 20, having 4 glazed windows, a door, and a pair of gates, and neatly enclosed within a paled totara fence.

3. A *roomy store-house*, (or "*rua*") for potatoes, pumpkins, &c., raised on four strong posts, native fashion.

4. A *boat-house*, also twice erected.

5. A *privy* properly finished.

6. A *Stock-yard*, all totara, brought from the interior.

7. A *goat-house and yard*.

8. A *fowl-house and fence*.

9. A *well*, dug, enclosed, and arched over with totara slabs.

10. A *house for bees and for garden tools*.

11. *4½ acres of fields, garden and orchard ground, and court and farm yards*, well fenced in 8 compartments, having also 8 gates.—

Together with *many choice fruit trees and perennial roots* of various kinds, purchased at Auckland and the Bay of Islands, and *Grass and Clover seed* from England.

14. In concluding my review of Bp. Williams' letter, I may be allowed to make a passing remark on the beginning of his par. 4,—where he says,—“About the year 1853 *it became* known “that Mr. Colenso had been guilty of gross immoral conduct, in consequence of which he was suspended by the Bishop, &c.” Sir, I will not ask the necessity of this “voluntary” statement on the part of this Christian Bishop in writing to the Government about Waitangi, concerning a matter which occurred 12 years ago—concerning a person with whom he had been on terms of intimacy throughout a period of nearly 20 years!—but, I think Sir, I may justly complain—first,—of his entirely overlooking (or hiding) the fact, of my having become my own accuser to my Bishop of my conduct—(whether “*grossly* immoral”, or not,)—and secondly that Bp. Williams, in addition to his sad want of charity, (in thus voluntarily opening old sores) shews his utter forgetfulness of that memorable classification by his Great Master,—viz. that “out of the heart proceedeth”—not only “fornication”,—but, “*Evil thoughts, and false witness, which*” (He said, *equally with that,*) “*defileth a man.*” —It would appear, however, as if this Bishop only knew of *one* kind of “immorality.”—

15. And, I cannot but deem it proper (in my own defence) to inform you, Sir,—that the real cause, or causes, of dislike (so correctly and plausibly concealed,) on the part of Bp. Williams against myself, arise from *other sources* than that alluded to in par. 4 of his letter; but of which (although I may justly enough do so) I will not *now* say any thing.

16. Since commencing this Letter I have received answers from Messrs. Alexander and Lowry to a note of enquiry which I wrote to each of them respecting the old Mission House at Waitangi: they being the only Settlers in this District who saw the Mission Premises previous to the fire. I enclose copies of my notes to them,—(*Enclosure, No. 8.*)³⁵⁷ and of their answers to the same (*Enclosures, Nos. 9 and 10.*)³⁵⁸

I have the honor to be

Sir,

Your most obedient servant

Wm. Colenso.³⁵⁹

357 WC: Enclosure No. 8: copy of a note to Messrs. Alexander and Lowry. [see below].

358 WC: Enclosure No. 9 & 10: copies of replies from Messrs. Alexander and Lowry.

359 A minute by Reader Wood is appended: “Minute—I think that the interference of the Government in this matter at all is most

1862 December 13: to Alexander and Lowry³⁶⁰

Enclosure, No. 8.

Copy of a note of enquiry written to A. Alexander, & Thomas Lowry, Esqrs.—separately.—

Napier, Decemr. 13/62

To A. Alexander, Esq., J.P.,—

and, also,

To Thomas Lowry, Esq.

H. Bay

Dear Sir

The Genl. Govt. has very recently sent me a copy of a Letter from Bp. Williams of Poverty Bay to the Hon. the Colonial Secretary, concerning myself and Waitangi. The Bishop has written in very disparaging terms respecting some of the Houses that were there; speaking of the Mission House as only “*a temporary Raupo building*”:—of the weatherboard Store, as “*a small one*”:—and of the nicely ornamented study, merely as “*a small raupo building* in which Mr. Colenso lived after the fire,” &c. &c.—Of course the whole gist of Bp. Williams' Letter is, that I ought to receive nothing further for *such* Improvements: and that, in my having received from him on the part of the C.M. Society, (at the Bay of Islands, in 1844,) the sum of £70.—that that sum covered all Building Expenses including Fencing (down to the present time, 18 years!)—or, at all events, I ought to receive no more.—

Now, as you, Sir, were one of the very few persons now in Hawke's Bay who saw the Mission Premises at Waitangi during the time referred to by Bp. Williams—*i.e.* from 1845 to 1853—before the Mission House there was destroyed by fire—I will be much obliged in your kindly stating your opinion as to those said three Buildings and fencing, for the information of the General Government.—

I am,

Dear Sir,

Yours truly

(signed) Wm. Colenso.

unfortunate. The quarrel is clearly between the C.M.S., Mr Colenso and the natives. How to get out of it now that it has gone so far it is difficult to see, but if a loophole should appear we ought I think to take advantage of it, perhaps this very question of the Arbitrators award may afford one, & I quite agree with Mr Bell in thinking that if the value of the house that was burned has been included in the £350-0-0 that it ought not to be paid. As regards the fund from which the compensation is to be paid when the amount is agreed on, there is only one available namely native purposes.

The most important question is what is to be done with the land? The deed of cession is not forthcoming, and until we get it, or a true copy of it, no action should in my opinion be taken, as this is manifestly not an ordinary case of sale for a valuable consideration but a cession to the Queen subject to certain conditions. Reader Wood, Jany. 28/63”.

360 Archives Ref No. IA1 242; 1863/2384.

1863 June 17: to ?³⁶¹

Napier 17 June 1863

Sir

I have received intelligence from various sources to the effect that the Waikato's are using every endeavour to instigate the different tribes in the country to a general rising and the Town of Napier is included in their plan of attack. A flag named Maui has been brought from the Waikato and is now in the possession of the Petane Natives, the rising of this flag is to be the signal for an attack on the town of Napier.

The Waikato propose to send 100 or 200 men to aid the resident Natives and those of the Wairoa and East Cape in this undertaking.

The Petane Natives have pleaded for delay until they have more food and they are busy preparing cultivations at Maungaharuru to supply the different tribes. The Waikato urge immediate action.

I should observe that Maungaharuru is a broken range of mountains on the NE side of Hawkes bay extending inland towards the Mohaka river. And it appears to be chosen as a central place of rendezvous for the different tribes concerned in the proposed attack.

The Waikato urge speedy action in the matter. This movement has been in contemplation for a considerable time but the Natives have observed the utmost secrecy respecting it.

I enclose herewith copies of letters that have come to hand from the Waikato and Taranaki indicating to some extent the spirit of disaffection which exists among those tribes, as will be seen from the symbolical language and waiatas made use of. I have to request that care should be taken not to make the contents of those documents known to other Natives as such a course if known would prevent my obtaining further information from the Natives who have confided the contents of those to me on the understanding that they should only be used by myself as a means of putting the Europeans on their guard.

I have every confidence that the Settlers in this Province will act with proper spirit in any emergency that may arise, but considering the large force of Natives that could readily concentrate on this place I feel reluctantly bound to represent to His Excellency's Govt. that the force now stationed here will not be sufficient to protect. At the same time I regret to say that they have not been trained to the use of arms; neither has any organization taken place by which their services could be effective in the event of any sudden raid or incursion by the northern tribes. I need scarcely allude to the fact that a great mass of the Native population in the Island are situated in the N. Eastern frontier of this Province, that the resident Natives here are connected with all the tribes from here to the East Cape, that in the event of any outbreak they would unite their forces to attack the place and by having 100 of the troops at Napier removed inland to the Waipukurau as recommended in my letter of the the remaining strength of the detachment here including volunteers and militia would

not be sufficient to hold the place against the numbers that could be suddenly collected against it. I am therefore reluctantly compelled to apply for an additional 100 troops for defence, a request which I would not think of making in the present state of the colony did I not conceive that circumstances which are almost daily developing themselves fully justify my doing so.

Major Whitmore will no doubt communicate with you as to the steps he proposes to take with reference to the militia and I should add that it is most gratifying to have the aid and cooperation of such an able and efficient officer in the present crisis.

1863 August 29: to Grey³⁶²Napier
Augt. 29, 1863Sir G. Grey, KCB
&c &c &c
Auckland.

Dear Sir George

At length I essay to fulfil my promise made to you at Wellington,—and send you now, by post, a few of the *earlier* & scarce publications in the N.Z. language—which I believe you had not in your Library of N.Z. literature at the Cape.—

I should have done so before, only I have been delaying in hopes of some more turning up or out of my various old packages of Books, &c. And still I think I may obtain others, and if so will also forward them.—

I enclose a memorandum of the various publications, one or two of which, may, I think, interest you. You will see that I have added a Copy of that 8vo. N.Z. New Testament printed at Paihia. I have done this (although I believe you have a Copy in your Cape Library,) because this (a picked) copy was also bound at Paihia by myself with the intention of presenting it to our *first* Governor, who, however, died before it was finished.—I have also added Copies of the first two publications in *English*, printed in N.Z.—merely because of their being *the first*.

I am,
Dear Sir George,
with every respect,
Yours faithfully
Wm. Colenso.

Memorandum of N.Z. Publications, sent to Sir George Grey, in August 1863.		
Date when Printed	No	Title & Remarks.
1832 "	1 "	Letter from Viscount Goderich to N.Z. Chiefs. Ditto from British Resident to Ditto.
1835	2	Epistle to Ephesians & Philippians: <i>1st. Book</i> printed in N.Z. (Feby. 1835.)

³⁶¹ ATL Ms-papers-0035-45. Attributed to Colenso (but perhaps written by Featherston?): the original is a draft, replete with amendments and deletions, and the handwriting is not typical of Colenso's.

³⁶² Auckland Council Libraries GLNZ C28.2.

"	3	Gospel of St. Luke—containing, also, a copy of preceding.
"	4	2 Copies N. Chiefs' Declaration of Independence.
1837	5	Tract (<i>first original</i>) in N.Z. lang. by W.C.
1839	6	Address from Bp. of Sydney.
"	7	Tract (ditto) Consecration of Burial Ground at Paihia
"	8	Small Prayer Book with Hymns.
1840	9	Part 1, of a work on errors of Ch. of Rome, by W.C., printed at Sydney.
"	10	Part 2, of ditto—printed at Hobarton.
"	11	Jonah & <i>part</i> of Daniel, 1 st . Edition, transld. by W.C.
"	12	Writing Copies Lithographed at Sydney for W.C.
1842	13	Tract: reception of 3 Priests of Ch. of Rome into the Ch. of England by Bp. of London: by W.C.
1844	14	Ch. of England Easter Hymn: printed at Waimate at the Bp's. Press: transld. by W.C.
1848	15	Rules for Ahuriri Schools—by W.C.
"	16	A Sermon (one of many)—Ditto.
1849	17	A Tract shewing errors of Creed of Pius IV., printed at Ahuriri by W.C.
1850	18	A Curious statement by the Chief Te Hapuku, shewing his title to certain Lands (originally given by <i>one</i> person). Printed at Ahuriri.
1852	19	A Catechetical Introduction previous to Confirmation: by W.C. also, printed at Ahuriri.
1837		New Testament, 8vo.
		<i>In English.</i>
1836		A Copy of the 1 st . Book in the English language printed in N. Zealand.
1839		A Copy of the 1 st . Placard in the English Language printed in N.Z.

W. Colenso.

1863 September 1: to Bourke

Napier, September 1st.
1863.

Mr. P. Bourke, Esq.
Chief Post-Master,
Napier.

Dear Sir

Having to attend the meeting of the General Assembly, called for the 19th. proxo., I have to tell you, that I shall not be able after this month to continue to render you any assistance in translating and Interpreting in your department. I assure you, I regret this at this peculiar time for several reasons:—1. my having done the work from the very beginning:—2. my thorough knowledge of the Maories of the Province:—and, 3. my fear, that you will not readily find a fit person to succeed me. Mr. Grindell, to whom I have already spoken, says, his hands are quite full;

and Mr. Hamlin, I hear, is about to leave the Government Service. I still hope you will be able to secure Mr. Grindell's Services, who is, by far, the most fit person that I know in Napier.—

I may also just mention for your guidance, (as I shall soon be absent, and as your predecessor and myself had finished the heavy work for this year before you took office,)—that should the Translational Clerical and Arranging Maori work for 1864 prove to be so heavy as it was in 1863, and should you not be able to secure the Services of some one already in Government Employ, you will not possibly be able to get the work done for any thing like so small a sum as has been hitherto paid. Of this, however, the Post-Master General (the Hon. Crosbie Ward) is, I know, pretty well aware.—

I am,

Dear Sir,
Yours truly,
(signed) Wm. Colenso.

1863 November 6: to Catchpool³⁶³

Auckland,
Novr. 6. 1863.

E. Catchpool, Esq.
&c. &c.

Dear Catchpool

For the last week my conscience has been saying—to write to you—and now, within 2 hours of the Mail closing I essay to do so.

The news by this Mail to H. Bay will astonish you:—

1. Domett My. *out*, Fox My. *in*.
2. Increase is ours!
3. Parliament is to close about 24th.
4. Destructive whirlwind.—

1. The D. My. although they were very strong in the House, & had summoned us & we were waiting for work—chose to squabble among themselves & resign!! And lo! the Govr. accepted their signatures and immy. sent for Fox who had only a few hours landed here! At first nothing was more clear than if F. made a My. of *his own* party such would only last a day—he knew that, & and made a Coalition Ministry (what I had fought for here 2 yrs. ago)—in which Whitaker is Premier, Fox leader in Ho. of Reps., Col. Secy. & Nat. Minister, Wood Treasr., Russel, War Minister, & Gillies Post. Mr. Genl., & to reside in N. Island.—& now, all opposition is merged in support, or at least quiescence. I think Domett has been trapped,—poor fellow! he has now no office & not a penny! But there will be plenty of suitable offices under the new Laws & policy which indeed D. sketched out & inaugurated.—Last night we sat till X, & passed 2nd. readg. of Confiscation Act, & of a Yg. Court Martial or speedy prosecution Act for all treasonous matters—which was (of course) opposed by Dr. F., Mantell & Fitzgerald—Division 26 to 10.

2. Meremere is ours in the old nest but no egg nor birds! The scamps there were outflanked by the general on Saturday mg. last—who took in the dark 600 men in "Pioneer" beyond, & placed them w. guns in position—

intending on Sunday to show them his teeth—they in less than 24 hours paddled away very quietly, leaving however their 3 big guns (which they had brought from Ld. Worsley, & from Raglan! fancy their toil!! the bitter regret!!!) also their horses (lots) and acres of potatoes nearly ripe. They took advantage also of the river being desperately flooded; & so went in their canoes over low lands & marshes where they could not by them be followed.—But they will be followed, & *made* to give in, & *give up their arms* (their land being *already gone*) before peace can be made.—They are carrying on their *murdering of boys* & poor peaceable settlers as before. (see Papers). But now too their town supplies (food) will be stopped—their boats & canoes seized, &c, &c—the marvel is, such was not done earlier.—

3. It is said, we are to be dismissed by 24th—I, howr., dont believe it.—possibly by “Ld. Ashley” *next* mo.

4. A whirlwind, tornado, or what you will occurred 2 days ago, within a few yards of where I am now writing this (on edge of water close to Wynyard place), which did much damage at Parnell—the W. end of Auckland, (as far off as your office from Fitzgerald’s old residence) smashing houses, & breaking limbs of children & carrying away wholly some buildings. All in 5 minutes, damage estimated at some thousands.

I send you a Paper containing Fox’s speech, &c. All our Militia are now away in the country, save the Reserves—and yet—this busy town is (or seems) *full!!* but in the House—the Royal Hotel for instance the want of servants is felt—waiters, Cook, &c., goes on My. duty, & yesterday evening the landlord himself was ordered off! He refused to obey, saying 2 nights in the week must suffice, or he must shut shop.—

And now about *your* matters, in which I have not yet moved, waiting for your promised Letter from Tiffen but as he is now here, & Fox moreover *in*, I shall hope to do all I can for you:—if I don’t get that Letter from you by return of Rangatira, I shall immy. speak to Fitzherbert, & go to work.

Between ourselves—I may tell you from what I have privately & confidentially heard, P. B—ke will surely lose his office, unless he immediately reforms. I am really sorry for him, but I fear he *could not* come up to what is required. In the event of the Govt. being determined to remove him—would you like to be again at the head of that Depart.—or would you like for M—I to have it?—One of the Ministry complimented me for *not* having signed the address to the P.M. General in favour of P. & O.—this may tell you how the matter has been canvassed among them.

Shand is here (who was at C. Islands) what doing I don’t know, but of all frights! I suppose his hair has never been cut since he left Wellington for the Islands.

Almost every day rain, with sunshine—glorious weather for gardens, & *plenty* of vegetables, Brocoli & new potatoes & Cabbages, and all good things.

I hope you are well and all things pretty comfortable about you. Whitmore returns today—ordered off (at which I think he is vexed)! Dr. F. brought Letters from Renata & Karaitiana, & made a speech as to their goodness loyalty & truthfulness!! the Letters are against the present, as before against the last, Governor. Now had Dr. F. merely tabled them, seeing no other in the Ho. could speak to them, not knowing their contents, which he alone knew, the matter

would end there: but I gave notice last evg., that I would take up the subject on Thursday next, meanwhile they are to be printed—so we shall have a fight.—Fitzgerald, yesterday said some foolish things, so did Mantell (he always does), & Dr. F. about the poor ill-used Maori!!

Wasn’t I astonished to hear of Lyndon’s move!!

A Dieu: Believe me
very truly yours
W. Colenso

1863 November 25: to Catchpool³⁶⁴

Auckland,
Novr. 25/63.

Dear Catchpool

Your most welcome letter of the 12th. I duly recd. I thank you much for it, for all news, and for *all kind words & feelings*—of which one sees little nowadays. I did hope to write you fully, but I must refer you to the Papers. I have not *done* any thing for you yet—but I have been supporting the Ministry strongly & openly, & *I see* that will be of service when the time comes. Since your letter reached me, we have been doubly busy (I mean particularly the My.) so that to seek to do any thing with the My. *now*—or, until Mail leaves for Engld.—wod. be injurious. The *war*—the *House* crying give, give,—answers to queries, Papers, &c &c &c,—the despatches in & out: wait a bit—I’m here, & have made up my mind, even if house is prorogued by sailing of Ashley, *not* to leave by her but by Ranga.—if requisite—so as to finish if poss. your case.

I beat Ormond openly & fairly on his Ld. Req. Bill-division, which he demanded, 24 x 12: O. is very savage, & ungenerously in reply, told the Ho., I opposed the Bill, *because* I had lost my sit. He is going to try again! under *another* title but he won’t find me asleep or absent from my post.

I “shewed up” Dr. F. & Fitzd. & Mantell in Renata’s matter, having got copies of R’s. letters in Mail affair on table; and house went w. me.—On the Estimates—sent down by Govr. in n. of Queen in due form—is £350. Compens. for me. Ormond *kindly* wrote to me that he must oppose it conscientiously!! & demand papers, &c—He may do so, & he may be unpleasant, (he can) but he won’t succeed in stopping it.—

The My. did not speak of *you*, in the matter of the P.M. but it was offered to *me*—I refused it. More anon.

I shall never take any *Provincial* Office: if I cod. get an easy & *suitable* one at say £100. per ann. *in* Napier, (or higher out) I would close.—I may.

The Papers teem with news: the victory at Rangiriri, saddened by our severe loss, will be productive of good. Our soldiers are more plucky than ever. The Maories may give trouble, but are now nowhere, & ’tis only a matter of time: several of the Head Waikato Chiefs are either killed (2) or prisoners—but I refer you to the Papers. The Govr. told me, the Genl. had in his reconnaissance mistaken the height of the parapet &c (21 feet high!!) hence the loss of

Officers & men—4 times did they advance to the Charge—only to be shot down, had they not surrend. they would have been taken by storm in the morn'g., the forlorn hope was told off, & they thirsted now to avenge their comrades. In the S. Cross you will see the Estimates pubd. Note yr. P.O. & Customs (*Private*) O. told me he should seek to lessen your Cust. Expend.—as he knew some of yr men had nothing to do! But I shall be there. In 2 nos. of the N.Zealander, you will find reports of 2 of my sayings, tolerably faithful.—

I have had no Eng. Letters by last mos. Mail: just see if there are any for me & forward.

I had a kind Invit. fm. Govr. to go to Kawau in steamer w. him, but, poor devil! I could not face the sea before “100 ladies.” I dined there (Govt. Ho.) on Saty. last.

A Dieu!
Believe me ever
Yours
Wm. Colenso

Hand better today: yesterday dreadful.

Yesterday I went to the funeral of 3 Officers—3 bands (abt. 60) concourse prodigious dust dreadful.

Memorandum by Wm. Colenso. M.H.R. to accompany Mr. Catchpool's papers—

“The two copies of Letters which I have taken, are those addressed by Mr. Catchpool to The Hon. the Secy. of Cr. Lands Auckland; (1.) Augt. 27 1861, and (2) Decr. 16 1861.

“I have taken these, 1st., because Mr. C. had no copies of them by him, and I was under engagement to return them; and, 2nd. because Mr. Fox can very easily see the Originals. I would earnestly recommend the speedy settlement of this long outstanding matter to the early consideration of Mr. Fox.

“Mr. Catchpool is now advanced in years, is, and has been for many years, a most zealous & deserving Govt. Offr.—has evidently shewn a good deal of patience in the matter, (owing, no doubt, to his being a general Govt. Officer,) and his original land-order is now only worth half of its first value in the market (apart from what it might have been worth to him—as he truly states in his *private* letter to me (left for Mr. Fox's consideration,)—if laid out by him on his arrival at Napier, or, indeed, in Wellington Province.”

(signed)
W. Colenso, M.H.R.

Auckland
Decr. 18, 1863.

(true copy:
W.C.)

1864 January 23:
to the Colonial Secretary³⁶⁵

Napier,—
Saturday, January 23rd.,
1864.

The Hon. The Colonial
Secretary, Auckland

Sir

I have the honor to address you respecting a matter affecting myself, brought on Thursday last, the 21st inst., before the Provincial Council of Hawke's Bay, and which yesterday ended in a Resolution empowering the Superintendent to make an enquiry, and, if satisfied, to proclaim my seat therein vacant.—

I do not know, Sir, whether I should more properly write to the Attorney General on this matter; but, if so, I trust you will pardon my writing to you, and forward my letter to the Hon. the Attorney General. I see, however, by the late *Gazettes*, that you are also at present acting for the Post-Master General, which is with me an additional reason why I should now write to you.

The Case is simple, and well-known, and is as follows:—When this Province was first formed, the inland Mails were a Provincial charge, and carried by Maories; consequently I, as Provincial Government Interpreter, had to do all the Interpreting work, &c. After about twelve months, the said Inland Mails became a General Government Charge, and then, on Maories again becoming Contractors, the Chief Post-Master here (Mr. Catchpool) requested me to assist him. I did so, and (although I soon after resigned my Office of Provincial Interpreter,) have done so, with little intermission, down to the present. I believe that I assisted the Chief Post-Master for two years, without asking, or indeed expecting any remuneration. I, however, had stated to him, on several occasions, my inclination to cease assisting him,—mainly from the fact of the number of Inland Mails carried being greatly increased, and all performed by Maories, and the work of writing, interpreting, arranging, &c., &c., becoming increasingly heavy.—

At about the time of the late Post-Master General's (the Hon. C. Ward's) visit in 1862, it was arranged, that I should receive a £50. gratuity for former Services down to June in that year; and, that a Sum not exceeding £30. should be at the disposal of the Chief Post-Master for what assistance I might render during the following year, if I would continue to assist. At the same time, the Chief Post-Master at Napier was instructed, not hereafter to Contract to pay so much for special assistance without leave. Early in 1863, on Mr. Catchpool resigning the Office of Chief Post-Master, and myself (shortly after) also resigning that of Provincial Treasurer, I again wished to cease assisting the Chief Post-Master here, but I was (on *strong official importunity*) induced to continue to do so, to aid the *new* Chief Post-Master who had only recently taken Office. But, in September 1863, I informed him by letter that I could not assist him any longer (copy enclosed).³⁶⁶ At Auckland, however, the then acting Post-Master General, Mr. Reader Wood, begged me to do so again on my return to Napier; (Mr. Elliott Elliott having also previously written to Napier

365 NZ National Archives.

366 WC: copy of Letter to C. Post-Master, Napier, Sept. 1/63.

to that effect,)—on returning hither from Auckland, I consented to assist the Chief Post-Master as formerly; only stipulating, that I should be paid according to the amount of work done, for which I should send in my account of charges quarterly.

This, Sir, (or rather, what I did for the Government up to September, 1863,) has now been brought against me in our Provincial Council by Mr. Ormond (Member for Porangahau), and by Mr. McLean (Superintendent), as disqualifying me (under the “Disqualification Act” of 1858,) both for the Provincial Council and the House of Representatives. And which, of course, I have disputed, and do deny; believing, (as I have always believed,) that I hold no “office” nor “place” within the meaning of that Act.—

I enclose, Sir, six printed Copies (such as I happen to have left,³⁶⁷) of some of my work for the Public Service; that you may the better form some idea of the character and *amount* of it; among which you will find, the “List of Tenders received for Mails for 1863,” nearly 170 in number! all which had to be translated arranged and answered; although of the very many *other* Maori letters to translate and answer, as well as of the many personal arrangements with them, occurring at all hours, you, Sir, can really have but a faint idea.—I would also further refer you (if needed) to copies of correspondence of last year, (filed in the General Post-Office Auckland,) between the late Chief Post-Master of this place, and also the principal Chief of Poverty Bay, Raharuhi,—to shew something of the *importance* of the aid which I have had the honor to render to H.M. Service in this part of the Colony—for all of which, as I take it, the Country Residents in this Province should much rather be ready to thank me than to find fault.—

I have the honor to be,
Sir,
Your mo. ob. servt.,
Wm. Colenso.

1863 January 25: to the Attorney General³⁶⁸

Napier,
January 25th. 1864.

Sir

With reference to a letter from the Superintendent of Hawke’s Bay to you, seeking to invalidate my Seat in the Provincial Council of this Province as well as in the House of Representatives (and of which letter I only last night heard,) I have the honor to inform you, Sir, that, (supposing the Superintendent should write to the General Government concerning that matter, yet not knowing of whom,) I wrote officially on the 23rd. instant, to the Hon. the Colonial Secretary about it:—at the same time begging that Gentleman, should I ought to have written to you kindly to forward my letter. And, as it is possible that the Hon. the Colonial Secretary may be out of town (for business with the Maories,) at the arrival of the “Lord Ashley” at Auckland; and as I should wish you, Sir, to see my Official letter above referred to before you reply to the

Superintendent’s letter, I have now written to inform you of it.

I have the honor to be,
Sir,
Your mo. ob. servt.
Wm. Colenso.

The Hon.
The Attorney General
Auckland.

1864 March 11 to the Superintendent
Auckland Province³⁶⁹

Napier March 11th 1864

His Honor,
The Superintendent

Sir,

Having been selected and requested by the Commissioners of the Royal Exhibition at Dunedin to contribute to the essay on the Botany Geographic & Economic of the North Island of New Zealand, and having undertaken the task, I have the honor to beg your Honor kindly to aid me in fulfilling the same, by forwarding to me at your earliest convenience any information, statistical or otherwise, relating to the Economic Botany of your Province, which it may be in your Honor’s power to afford. It being my earnest desire to do justice to every Province—particularly in shewing the large amounts of valuable timbers, barks, gums, drugs, fruits, vegetable & fibre, &c, annually used within the Province, (as well as the quantities exported therefrom, and, also, to give some approximate quantity of what may be still available, or annually so

I have etc
(Sd.) Wm. Colenso.

1864 June 3: to von Haast³⁷⁰

Napier, June 3rd., 1864.

Dr. Julius Haast,
&c, &c, &c,
Geologl. Survg. Office,
Christchurch,
Canterbury,
N.Z.

Sir,

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your printed Circular, dated “Geological Survey Office, Christchurch, May 5, 1864,”—in which you ask me “to support a motion which will be brought forward at the next Meeting of the House of Representatives, that some assistance be given to

367 WC: Six printed copies of official papers in Maori [****]
relative to Mail Service, from 1860 to 1863.

368 National Archives, Wellington, ref. ***)

369 Auckland Museum Library MS-76
370 ATL MS-papers-0037-046.

the publisher via England who will undertake to issue a translation of Dr. von Hochstetter's popular work on New Zealand."—

In answer, Sir, I have to state,—

1. That, *as a Rule*, I never pledge myself to support any motion until I am pretty well acquainted with its details, merits, & advantages.
2. That, from having had in New Zealand the honor of the personal acquaintance of, and after correspondence with, several eminent foreign & British Naturalists, (of whom I may mention, D'Urville, A. Cunningham, Ross, Franklin, Hooker, Dieffenbach, Wilkes and Sinclair,) whose researches and publications I have willingly aided to the utmost,—I shall consider myself enlisted to aid the the republication of Dr. von Hochstetter's work (in an English dress,) *as far as such may be really beneficial to the Colony*.—
3. That it will, however, have to be well-considered, (seeing our young Colony is already so far involved with heavy Loans, Provincial and General, and an unfinished and costly war, whether *at the present time* our Public Money could be well spared for such a purpose as this (however commendable) referred to by you.
4. And whether the future (*not*, by any means, a *distant* future,) would not be altogether preferable for such a Publication: when the many newly acquired Geological facts relative to the Middle Island recently collected by Dr. Hector & by yourself,—to be, as I hope, ably supplemented by much more,—as well as certain valuable information relative to the natural productions, &c. of the Colony, to be shortly hoped for, (from the series of essays called for by the Dunedin International Exhibition,) could be put together and made both generally and beneficially available. Seeing, too, that Dr. von Hochstetter's *actual* knowledge of New Zealand *as a whole* was necessarily very limited.—

I may, also, be allowed to add, that I saw at Wellington, in 1862, (in the Provl. Council Library,) an English translation of all that had been then published by Dr. V. Hochstetter relative to New Zealand: in which I noticed some things which were erroneous, and which were, of course, obtained by Dr. von Hochstetter, during his short stay, from information only.—

With every respect,
I have the honor to be,
Sir,
Your most obd. Servt.
William Colenso, M.G.A.

1864 August 10: to Gunn³⁷¹

Napier,
Augt. 10 1864

R.C. Gunn Esq
&c &c

My dear Sir

Here am I, already following you with a note: I seized the first steamer—as I know not how long you may be in Wellington, or, indeed, the Straits.

I enclose a portion of the “N. Zealander” paper, containing the marrow of what I said on that occasion: *you* will smile at some part of it—*i.e.* the reference to the *Moa*—which was, you will recollect, published under your kind auspices at Hobarton.

I am so busy I can hardly find time to write. In the *glens* about Wellington (going in the direction, over the hills, *behind* the R.C. Schools &c) the rare fern *Trichomanes humile* is to be found; and on the hills near the lighthouse (about ½ to ¾ mile *in*, from sea,) *Lindsaea linearis* var.—having lower pinnules deeply cleft &c. The only habitats known to me of these Ferns, S. of the E. Cape. —

Hoping you will thoroughly enjoy your visit.

I am

My dear Sir
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

1864 September 2: to Hector³⁷²

Napier, Sept. 2/64

My dear Dr. Hector,

I enclose a List (from memory) of a few small valued articles I should like to send to your Exhibition: if you can kindly point out *how* they may be *secure while with you*. I would not object to paying a small sum (if needed) for that purpose. I do not see how *private* Exhibitors, being non-resident, can send any *small unique* articles unless this difficulty is removed.—My present purpose is to send them by Str. in December, if I obtain a satisfactory answer. If there is any thing in the List you would not greatly care to have, please note it; and, also, tell me, if you are well found in “*Moa*” Bones: as I have not many very good ones left.

Perhaps it would be advisable to have a small glass-topped shew Case made here for the smaller articles.

I am at work on our essay: but I fear I shall not have it quite ready by “October”—but you may depend on it by *November* Mail Steamer. The hindrance (*unforeseen*) has mainly arisen from our provokingly long Pl. Council Session—just 2 months! (the longest hitherto being only 3 weeks)—and partly through my not getting answers to many of my written applications N. and S. of me. Please shew the “*List*” to Mr. Wm. Mason, M.G.A. to whom I have also written by this Mail. Hoping you are quite well

I am
My dear Sir
Yours truly
Wm. Colenso.

371 Mitchell Library CY4265.

372 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

1864 October 4: to Hector³⁷³Napier, October 4
1864

Dear Dr. Hector,

A month ago I wrote both to you and to Mr. W. Mason, and I have recently heard from Mr. Mason that you were in the Country: Mr. Mason's note is quite satisfactory: I thank him for it, and fully intend to send you a few articles in December.—

I now write, (as a hearty well-wisher to your Exhibition,) just to ask, If you have, at Otago, a copy of the *Flora Nov. Zeland.* of Dr. Hooker, 2 vols. 4to, which you could place in your Exhibition: as, if you *have not* and would *like* to have the loan of one, I would gladly send you my copy, which has colored plates:—or, if preferred, the whole *Flora Antarctica*, 6 vols. I think you should have a copy in the Exhibition, as it is the only *British* scientific work (of any size) on the natural productions of *our* Native—or adopted—Country. Let me hear from you. The essay I hope to send by next Mail.

I am

My dear Sir

Yours truly

Wm. Colenso.

I could also send you Owen on *Moa* & *Apteryx* if required. W.C.

1864 October 29: to Hector³⁷⁴Napier, Oct. 29th, 1864

My dear Sir

I have just thrown up my Cap with an hurrah! at having *finished* copying the Essay, which I willingly dispatch by this Mail. I greatly fear however you will *not* like it. I confess, I do not myself, and therefore, I cannot expect you should: but there it is—yours, and wholly at your service. I have tried to write so as to please 4 or 5 parties, and though I have greatly exceeded your limit of “40 pps.”, I still found myself cramped for room. However, from your published letter to Mr. Eccles, I infer that some of your projected essays will not be forthcoming, and some others will be gathered into *one*,—so that you may find *room* enough for this. I suppose, this Mss., including Tables and Notes, will make about 50 pps. If you *must* shorten it, par. 22 may be well omitted. You will see, I have written it very plain, so that no error *ought* to arise on the part of the Printer in spelling any *Maori* or *Latin* word: which errors I abominate. I have a very good reason for adding the short “P.S.”—On receiving your first letter, I wrote to several in authority, & others—upwards of 20 letters—the *only* answers I received were those I have noticed. R. Graham (Suprdt. of Auckland) really exerted himself: he wrote 10 official letters to folks in his Province, (who might have aided,)—only 2 of them replied, and only *one* (Mr Heaphy) sent any thing. Copies of their letter were also sent by

Graham to me (with a copy of his *good* Circular to the 10, and their names, &c!) Heaphy (personally unknown) wrote a voluminous Ms., (nearly 30 pages and much of it collected from various small local publications,) which he sent me through the Auckld. Suprdt., with the request—*it must be used in its entirety, with acknowledgement, &c.* I immediately wrote back, saying, I could *not* do so, mainly because I *knew much* of what was therein written, and that a large part had been long before the public, &c.—offering to return it immediately (honorably & without using a line,) unless I were at liberty to use it (if needed) without conditions. Mr. H. wrote me directly, to use it as I would, &c.

I should greatly have liked to have given a Botanical Map of the N. Island, but cannot for want of time. I have strictly followed Dr. Hooker's nomenclature (as pubd. in *Fl. Nov. Zel.*), except where he himself, in his *late* letters to me has altered it—believing that he will do so in his Manual I have also altered it—but only in a few places, not touching upon our *Mss. sp. novae*.

Of course, all my Anglo-Maori work for the General Governmt. has been wholly set aside—I mention this, as I was bound to get such finished in 2 years from date, which I know (now) I shall not do; and I may by-and-bye need a little interest at headquarters to procure me an extension of the time stipulated—other wise I shall have to *refund* the small advances I have received on the work.—

I have your note of the 13th. I am very sorry (on account of the exhibition) that the Gen. Assembly is about to meet, as I shall *not* have time to rout out many interesting specimens which have been packed away for 2–30 years! I intend to give you a week more of time, and will do what I can: the things will leave for *you* on or about 16th. Novr. You did *not* say if you cared for any *Moa* Bones, and so I shall not send any, not having any first rate specimens. Owen's 2 works (*Moa* & *Apteryx*) I shall send—ditto Cook's *Voyages*—the *large* Govt. edition 4to. with Atlas (as you may not have it, and it should be there). Also *Flora Antarctica* 6 vols. 4to., &c, &c.

I intend leaving for Auckland on the 18th. prox. Wishing you every success

I am

My dear Dr. Hector

Ever sincerely yours

Wm. Colenso.

1864 November 12: to Hector³⁷⁵Napier, Saturday evening,
Novr. 12th. 1864.

My dear Sir

I have just screwed down the 3 Cases of Sundries, intended for your Exhibition, of which I enclose an outline list.—

I had no idea, when I commenced, I should send you so many, or have had so much trouble and labour: one reason of my doing so much for you, (apart from my hearty cooperation) is, *my having heard* of but little being

373 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

374 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

375 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

generally done in the N. Provinces. Of one thing I am pretty certain (both with regard to things now sent & essay,) that whether I shall please or not, *I have really "worked with a will."*

I wish—on your account—our Assembly did not meet so soon, as, Had I more time, I could have put up what I send more satisfactorily: I leave on Thursday (17) for Auckland.

Of the things now sent:—

1. They are all packed *well* by my own hand.

2. Of the *Books*: I had asked you about *Cook's Voyages*—but perhaps you overlooked it in your reply; I have however risked the sending them; as, if you have *not* got them, you will (I imagine) welcome them. I also send *Raoul* (as *his* plants & plates are mostly Mid. Island,—and the classic *Forster* (if only to compare the *first published* drawings of *N.Z. plants* with those in Hooker's *Fl. Nov. Zel.*,)—*Owen's Moa & Apteryx* you wished, and I send with great pleasure: if *you can*, get them bound in one, (we have no B. Binders *here*,) I will pay, & so exhibit. I have enclose a Copy each of 2 of my *early* publications on *N.Z. for you*; & hope you will do me the honor of accepting. I have also enclosed vol. II. of the *Tasman. Journal*, and a No. of the *Annals. Nat Hist.*, each containing my little Monograph on the *Moa*, (*both referred to by Owen in his large work*),—in fact, that in the "Annals", he himself sent thither to be printed;—that however in *Tasm. Jl.* is the more full and popular. If your Juries should note any of our *bonâ fide* *N.Z. pubs.*, I hope they won't overlook this. I regret not having a single copy left of that Monog. I leave it entirely with you to "exhibit" the "*Tasm. Jl.*", or "*Annals*" number, containing it, or not. You may smile at the lithographs in the *T. Journal* (i.e. those of the *Moa bones*)—but *at that time* there was *no* lith. artist in *V.D.L.!!* The *Books*, &c., in *Maori & Eng.* printed in *N.Z.* were *wholly* done by myself, without assistant! Such (in those days) was not to be had in *N.Z.*, and I had no alternative but to gird up the tighter.—

3. There are several choice & unique things in case 2.—(be sure to *open* the small round box, & small tea chest of *wet* sp. yourself,)—particularly

a. *The Bell*.

β. *The geologl. sps. Antarctic lands*: (the officers of that expedn. told me, "they were (to them) worth more than their weight in gold"—and I only got them through giving them of my own *stores*.)

γ. *The Land Shells* (*N.B.* those corresponding Land shells mentioned in *Dieffenbach's* work, vol. II (*Gray's Catalogue*), were *surreptitiously* published; I discovered them, and gave to others (*under promise &c.*) through whom they reached *Gray!!*

δ. *The Fishhooks, Cord, & Carved Box*.

ε. *The 2 specimens in spirits* (just put into *fresh* spirits (after 25 yrs.) & look as well as ever!

θ. *The Moa bones*: (I had also mentioned *these* to you, but you also overlooked it in replying: it *may* prove to be a different sp. from any known—at all events different from your Southern sps. I have several of the smaller bones of *the same specimen*, but I really cannot put up any more.—

Of the Geological sps. in Case 3, I fear *you* won't think very highly. The *N.Z.* ones however are mainly from places where no professed Geologist has been; and I wished for *you* to see them—they might be serviceable. The one from Cape M.V. Diemen—the one from the *top* of *Maunganui*

(*Tauranga Harbour*,—2 or 3 fossils from *H. Bay*, &c. please take care of—many are (to me) painful & pleasing mementoes of the long past! I should greatly like to have your skilled opinion on a few of them. I have still a lot more.

A word as to what I have *not* sent, *i.e.*

N.Z. Botanical specimens

N.Z. sea, river, & Lake shells

N.Z. Fossils—

N.Z. entomological sps. &c

These I have *not* sent, wholly through want of time: my Fossils are not fit, being still in their matrices.—

I believe our Local Commee. have *lately* engaged a Mr. W. Faichney to go down and look after *H. Bay* things: but Mr. Wilkinson (to whom I shewed your & Mr. Mason's notes,) would rather my small numerous interesting things were sent to *you*,—since you had so kindly undertaken, &c.,—but Faichney can take *all onerous* duty. I am sending an outline List of the articles to Mr. Wilkinson.

I shall insure them as follows, Case, no.1 £60: 2, £150. 3, £40 = £250.

The *Pine Cones*, *if wanted*, might be sold: a few I sold here at 4/- ea.—

If the essay I sent should be *well-printed* (*in extenso*, or nearly so), I should like to have, *extra and at my own expense*, 200 additional Copies struck off: could you also manage this for me?

If you should find time to scratch a line to me, do so to me at Auckland.—

Heartily wishing your Exhibn. every success. Believe me
Yours very sincerely
Wm. Colenso.

P.S.

Monday evg. 14th.

I now close. I have just seen Mr. Wilkinson, who strongly wishes to publish in our local Paper my *outline List* furnished him, in order, if possible, to induce others &c., and I have assented to his doing so. The 3 Cases are at the "Spit"—and will be carefully put on board the "*Queen*" Str. tomorrow. It has just occurred to me, that you *may* find the fresh (methyld.) spirits (which I put on the *Hatteria* lizard) discolored—as I recollect using a piece of new *red* sheep-skin (having no white) to tighten the large bung, & the motion may extract the colour—if *so*, and it requires new spirits, may I further trouble you to obtain such, &c., and charge to me: and let me know the *amount* of all expenses incurred for me, and I will remit.

I am also sending you in addition (and at Mr. Wilkinson's request) a handsome Carved Paddle.—Yours faithfy.

W.C.—

1864 November 23: to Catchpool³⁷⁶Auckland,
Wednesday
Novr. 23/64.

My dear Catchpool

I don't like for the steamer to leave without a word—though I am *not* in a writing humour, (*yet*.) and my thumb is not by any means in a better frame than my inner man.—

We got alongside wharf here, on Saturday at 2 p.m. a fine passage, but *I* as usual;—no clothing off, & no eating, and a *sm.* bot. of “champ.,” which I got on Friday evg., made me worse, being *cyder*, & that bad. On that day we were prorogued until Wednesday, and again yesterday until tomorrow. They are now hatching—or Cabinet Making.—Weld is the Premier: Fitzherbert (as P.Master Genl.) Sewell (!)—Atty. Genl.—and they are trying hard *now* with Ward (as Col. Tr.) & Major Richardson as War Minister: though *Whitmore* is spoken of (!!) Col. Russell too is just come—looking very hungry with a beard to his waist!—I have read upwards of 150 pages (in print) of the passages at arms between the Governor & Ministry: surely the world will be astonished! Months ago they were *irreconcilably* estranged:—sad very sad is this kind of work—I cannot *write* more.

Fox & Co. will have to be thanked—by & bye it may be.—Doers of good & prophets of all kinds are seldom honored in their brief day.—

Of course, if Fitz. remains in My., *he* will do you service. It is said—we are to be here but a few days, or 3 weeks or so:—and that in March, the *yearly* session is to come off at Wellington.

It is also said, that my quond. friend O—d, is *still moving* in the matter of ejecting me, & hopes to do so! (*Private this.*) *Some one* must be encouraging him: all will be out by & bye.—

Weather fine, dry,—lots of vegetables & all good things—such as we don't see at H. Bay Hotels &c all crowded:—

Tomorrow is the *shew* day of Horticultl. Socy. & of Articles for the N.Z. Exhibn. Otago, I shall go & see.—

His Excy. says he is much cut up, at “unhandsome & ungenerous treatment” from Fox & Co., but qu?—Fox, I hear, has not spoken w. him for 3 months!! Look at tomorrow's papers for Ministry: excuse this, & Believe me, ever,

Yours
W. Colenso.

Fox is well & jolly—but there is no speaking about any priv. matters just now. W.C.

A good deal of seeming indign. *here* at Ormond's conduct towards me about the seat.

I have written to no one else in H.B. save to the Boy.

1864 December 2: to Catchpool³⁷⁷Auckland,
Friday night
Decr. 2/64.

Dear Catchpool

Many thanks for your kind note of Novr. 26th. The mere sight of your well-known writing did me good.

Yesterday—just at close—I was somewhat roused by Weld's placing your Papers on the Table “by command.”—To day I purposely went over to see what they were. I enclose you a List; I was *surprised* to find among them your private letter to me of last year (which I had—at Fox's request,—left with him for his information,) and also my memo. to him concerning the same! fortunately there is nothing in either of any material conseq. other than concerning our matter. I suppose *I* shall have to follow this up in a few days:—I shall take counsel w. Fox, Fitzherbert & Weld, before I do any thing—I enclose a copy of my memo. to Fox, for your information. I send you a Paper of today—containing also an “*order paper*” of tomorrow's work! *Most* are for having a *short* Sess.—but at this rate such cannot be—a few days will decide. You will see there a notice of Motion from G. Graham respecting Members regg. P. money.—I saw the great goose this day and he will let it drop (at least he says so). Two things agitate Auckld. the removal of seat of Govt. to Wellington—and Weld's strange resolutions—to request home Govt. to withdraw Troops—but *this* he *cannot* carry—& is in a fix. He has unwisely called it a Ministl. quest.—and no one knows whether his My. will remain in Off. or not. Fitzh. *financial* statement comes off tomorrow,—what they intend—where the money is to come from—we shall hear. I must refer you to the papers for Pol. news—do not trust the New Zealander—rather the Herald—or the Cross. D.Bell is *seeking* to do something for himself. I hope he will not get in—any how! When Ormond came into the Ho. I went over & shook hands w. him. I am getting to dislike *this kind* of Pol. life very much: no sincere desire to do good—so much intriguing—scheming—party-champagne-drinking &c &c. I see but few who care to work.—I have seen the Govr. 3 times out, & he has talked w. me; he wishes me to go to the Chatham Islands & other N.Z. islets—botanizing—but I doubt his sincerity towards *me*. I was invited to his evening party—(dancing, &c.) last night but I did not go:—about 150 were present—many yg. officers. 5 or 6 men o' war now here, & troops such a lot. Auckland is going in for separation, & may get it. The *immediate* removal to Wellington, & *no Aucklander* in the My., has greatly soured them. Dr.F. is always at Weld's back; but there is *no strength* in the My. You must not believe *all* the speeches you see were spoken as they are; the gilding of the reported palm does much, and the taking 30–40, or more copies by each Member of a daily does more,—Many of the Southern Members are rich—I am not.

A short Bill has been introduced to place Civ3il Officers on *same* footing as militia officers—by the M. Off. Amendment Act of 1862—so that any civil offr. losing his life, or receiving hurt in service, gets a pension, &c. [I have had a letter from Dr. Hector, speaking very highly of my essay (“as a work of wh. N.Z. may justly be proud,”) *private*.] Turton has got a good apt.—as you will see—£600. a yr. & expenses, &c. I shall try & make some better

arrangement w. *Weld*, if he remains in My., before I return—that is, if we do not fall out: which I shall try *not* to do. It is said we are only to be here a fortnight or 3 weeks—I hope so. I have not been well: the *great* diff. in living, & irregular hours, tell upon me. I was 36 hours very ill—but by fasting, &c—I got over it. I hope Mrs Catchpool & yourself are well, and that you have visited the garden on the hill. Weather fine—showery &c.—Rely on my doing all I can: & Believe me

Yours truly W. Colenso.

P.S. there will be *no* Appropn. Act this session. We are not working today as *Weld* & Fitzherbert were *fagged*: we work tomorrow instead. And on *Monday*. The Taranaki murder & mutilation is causing some excitement. A Dieu.

1864 December 3: to Hector³⁷⁸

Auckland,
Decemr. 3 1864

My dear Sir

Many thanks for your kind note of 15th. ulto. received per “Ashley” a few days back. I am glad to hear of the Ms. (essay) having reached your hands, and of your being pleased with it. I also saw the heavy appearance (to say the least of it) of those *masses* of Botl. Names—and at that time, they were *more*—for I had another *Set* of them. I may say—having also placed them geognostically—shewing soils, &c. This I soon abandoned for want of room. At that time however I tried to tabulate them (the *whole*), but I could not succeed to my satisfaction. If you can throw them into a Table, pray do so: or deal with them in any way you may approve of. It has occurred to me, since receiving your note, that if they could not be well tabled—*i.e.* in columns—they might perhaps be placed in one list, having the figs. 1, 2, 3, &c. to represent Zones, and the letters, a, b, c, &c. to represent areas (of course having first given the *headings* of the various zones & areas in a par. to itself)—somewhat thus

Veronica speciosa, 2. a.
----- elliptica, 3. b.
----- nivicola, 7. g.

The making out of the *list* would cause a little trouble, as, I think, the plants should be placed systematically—not alphabetically.

—But I merely mention these thoughts—crude, I confess:—do, my dear Sir, as you think best with the Ms.—If I were nearer you I would willingly help you.

I hope you will have safely received the 3 Cases I sent you per “Queen”: I am, also, glad I put in Cook’s *Voy.*, as I *now* find you wish for them. I was at the display of articles from this Prov., and was much pleased with many things I saw—only had I previously *known* of some, I would not have burdened you with certain mats, & small geolog. sps., &c. &c. which are of little service. Here, in the room where they were shewn, there was *such a crowd*, that I saw nothing closely. I have just recd. a Letter from my old friend Dr Hooker—in Sept. he had handed over 100 copies of the 1st.

part of his work—to Morrison the Agent—and I find from Dr. Knight that Morrison had reported them to him (or to the Govt.), & had shipped them by (I think) the *Motueka*. Hooker had sent me a copy by post (which I have not received), also a copy to Knight—which he has *lent*.

The Inscript. of the Bell, I had sent him, he was about to take to the Meetg. of the Assn. at Bath,—and would report anon: he wants a photog. & another copy of the Inscript., & its history:—for wh. he must wait a while.—

I am sorry to find, from Mr. Mason, that Dr. Shortland is gone to England without doing any thing towards his essay on the Maories. M. mentioned a name or two to me, as a person whom he thought might still perform it—I doubted, and recommended he should see the Governor—perhaps I was wrong.

I *fear*, I shall *not* have the pleasure of seeing yr. Exhibn. I am glad you surmounted your difficulty w. the Provl. Govt.—although such has thrown you back.—I grieve to find so *few* in all N.Z. who really care for scientific pursuits—but this is a grief of my whole life.—Believe me ever

My dear Sir, Yours faithfully
—Wm. Colenso

P.S. The Governor spoke to me about visiting Chatham Islands—I said, all the N.Z. islets should be explored—especially Poor Knights, 3 Kings, &c.—as before, it will come to nothing. W.C.

1864 December 7: to Hector³⁷⁹

Auckland
Decr. 7/64.

My Dear Sir

I am very greatly gratified in receipt of your truly kind & hearty letter of the 24th. ulto. I am very glad that the 3 Cases reached you safely—and I think (sometimes—in the *midst* of drier harsher matters)—how much *you* will be gratified (and other lovers of Nature among you,) at seeing a *few* of the specimens I have managed to send—and this is a true source of joy to me.

I am also happy in finding that my essay has given *you* satisfaction. I note what you say w. reference to the difficulty of tabulating names, &c. I too (as, I think, I mentioned in my last note,) met with the same diffy. I *quite* agree with you that it is far better to put the names of plants in column lists—rather than Continuously:—and I should have so written them, only I kept before me the limitation of “40 pps.” Since my last, it has occurred to me, that the whole (*i.e.* Zones & areas) might possibly be put into 2 Tabular Lists—thus:—(prefacing each List with all the headings of the vac. Zones, or areas, in a short paragraph.)—

378 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

379 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

Name of Plant	1 3°	2 3°	3 3°	4 3°	5 3°	6 3°	7 3°
Veronica speciosa	/						
———diosmæfol.		/					
———tetragona						/	
———nivalis							/

and so on with areas. But this I merely mention—as I have not the Ms. before me; & really much of its disposition has been *driven* out of my mind—with subsequent and very off. work.—Politics (especially Colonial!) have as much affinity for our nat. Sciences as pea-stakes for peas;—would even that they afforded as much support!—

I am glad to find, you have some of our N. *genera* among you—as this strengthens my opinion as to our Bot. region. (By the way, I have just seen Seeman's List of Fiji Isld. plants, (London, 1862,) and am again pleased in finding several of our N.Z. gen. there, & some sp.—which are not (known to be) intermediate—save insular—*i.e.* at N. Isld. &c.—) You say you have 3 gen.—

Nesodaphne—*Caltha*—& *Davallia*:—I presume; how., only *N. Tawa* not *N. Taraire*; and I further presume that your sp. of *Caltha* & *Davallia* (seeing we have only 1 of ea. gen.) are ident. w. ours. I should say;—By all means *omit them*:—strike them out, also the species:—at the same time (I think,) I have, subsp. in Ms., spoken of the *no.* of *gen.* w. sp. peculiar to the N. Isld.—therefore the *no.*,—if you strike them out, will have to be altered.

Further: if you have not *Nesodaphne Taraire*—that sp. will have to be mentioned (in striking out the genus) among the sp. peculiar to the N. Isld.—

I venture (*pardon* me) to doubt, your having *Hoheria populnea*—*i.e.* the truly Northern sp. (on wh. A. Cunningham founded the gen.)—I have never seen it S. of the Thames;—there are *other* species—widely differing, (in app. at least,) throughout the N. Island, wh. Dr. Hooker calls *vars.*, & on wh. we have "*fought*"!—in fact one of his so-called *vars.* Dr. Asa Gray has made (*I think*) into a genus—that, too, (described by Dr. H. as found by Raoul at *Akaroa*.) I had found at Wairarapa, and sent to him at an early date, with a note, pointing out the *very differences* noticed by A. Gray.

(In one of Dr. H's. late notes to me, he says,— "You will see I have restored many of your species," &c (I quote from memory).)

I should much like to know—by & bye—if your *Hoheria* is the N. Isld. plant of A. Cunn., as, if so, such is a fact worth reflecting on. The *only* other sp. I feel somewhat doubtful of in your List, is *Veronica diosmæfol.*; as this sp. (although I know H. gives Cook's Straits for a 2nd. habitat,) I have not seen S. of the Bay of Islands—& this is a striking sp. at first sight.—

I shall use my influence w. Mr. Wilkinson, (& perhaps you, too, will mention such to him—when you may write,) to get

all expenses on Cases, &c, (which you speak of) allowed: I am almost sure such will be done.

Yesterday—I was again conversing w. our Mr Mason about the essay on the Maories:—and I was sorry to find—Dr. Shortland had done *nothing*—left *nothing*! (which, *entre nous*, I suspected.) I told M.—I really could not afford to *give* any more time; but (seeing some such essay was absolutely *necessary*.) I would undertake it—1st. on being allowed 2 months to prepare it (*i.e.* send it on to Dunedin by M. Str. from Napier in *March*): and, 2nd. on being paid;—either a stipulated sum, or, such a sum as you (Commissrs.) might approve of on your reading it. M. sd. he wou. see the Commsrs. *here*, today, & let me know. I may hear from him bef. I close this,—

Adieu! may your "digestion" continue good (as the Chinese say) in the midst of your worry—you are entered on.—

Ever believe me, my dear Sir, Yours truly, W. Colenso.

Friday 9th. This mg. Mr. Mason has informed me that they wish me to write the sd. essay, & will remunerate—consequently, I remain *here* a week after our prorogation to collect necessary information.

1864 December 16: to Hector³⁸⁰

Auckland
December 16/64

My dear Sir,

Before this can reach you—you will know of our School-House being closed. As I said in my last I have remd. behind to glean information for my 2nd. essay—at which I have been busy these last 3 days.—I leave by next Steamer per W. Coast—likely, the "Rangatira", on 23rd.—to reach (D.V.) Napier on Xmas. day.—

I was with Sir George this mg. going over his garden &c. and I am glad to find he intends visiting you, to open your Royal Exhibn.—

I cannot learn from Mr Gillies—or any of your Bror. Commissrs. here—what is the *precise subject* of the essay which Dr. Shortland was to write; and this throws me back a little; I know I have a *List* of the essays at *Napier* (though I have wholly failed to find one here) and I may learn therefrom which it was assigned to Dr.S.—I write however, now, to ask you in 2 lines (knowing how precious your time is,) to tell me what it was. As I hear that Mr Taylor has done some essay of that kind, (with which I hope you may be pleased, but I have grave doubts,)—I shall try hard to send you this essay by Feby. Mail: ever yrs. truly,

Wm. Colenso.

1865 January 4: to Hector³⁸¹

Napier, Jany. 4/65

My dear Sir

Heartily wishing you the compliments of the season—I have to thank you for your letter of the 20th. ulto.—recd. by me *here* a day or two after my return last week—

I am gratified in hearing that *you have been so in going over the Books* I forwarded; and in knowing, that, as far as you had then opened, the things I sent were *safe*, &c. You have done right in getting a good Case made, which I shall settle with you for promptly when your account for that & other matters is rendered.—

I have commenced working for you—again—and shall do my best: I was rather disappointed in not *ferretting* out more useful statistical information from the *Nat. Depart.* at Auckland.

I shall try to send you, by this Steamer, a parcel of nuts, *valuable in commerce* from our S. Sea Islands. I have seen a Letter from Price's Belmont Candle Co. London, wishing much for the oil, & saying, it is of *more* value in the market (& to them) than almost any other veg. oil. Supposing you may not have any of these nuts in your exhibition, I secured these at Auckland, (a few I gave Sir G. Grey,) and exhibition over, you can divide them between yourselves Canterbury & Nelson—they may grow in the Bot. Gardens. The foliage of the tree is very peculiar being large white & downy on *upper* surface!—

I have just got (by post) a Copy of Hooker's N.Z. Hand-Book, part *I*.—and I have been diving into it a little. Speaking *confidentially* to you, I am vexed & pleased—a kind of bitter sweet sensation! *pleased* at seeing so many *sp.* & *gen. novae* from Mid. Island (mainly of your & Haast's collecting)—& also at my old friend having *at last* given way—in the matter of several of my plants—Phormium,—Aciphylla,—Librocedrus (Thuja),—Veronica—Thelymitra—Coprosma—Coriaria—Gentian, &c &c—(which, howr., he ought to have done nearly 20 years ago—or more, for some!) but *vexed* at more displays of his synthetic vein, (helped, no doubt, by Bentham.)—You will see a great no. of valid species—which *appeared too as such in his Fl.Nov.Zel.*—now looped up as *one* sp. and some *gen.* (i.e. Ferns)—Polypodium Grammitis Nipholobus, &c., all made into *one* genus! this, I observe, Sir William has just done in his *Species Filicum*—while Moore (in his *Index Filicum*) has made lots of *gen. nov.*—seemg. to glory in having as many *gen.* as species—&, curiously enough, all these *new* Works have come to me by same Mail; so that a person is utterly confounded at this disagreement of our *Doctors*.—

I have not had time to go *fully* into the Hand Book, (besides my larger wk. is w. you.)—I hope you too may have a copy: I know of 100 being shipped by "*Motueka*" (or some such named ship) for N. Zealand. I am pleased to find you had found & sent to Dr. Hooker some of the same plants I had found here (N. Isld.)—which, no doubt, was a means towards bringing him over:—and *very much pleased* at your telling him you had detected a *3rd* sp. of *Phormium*. I see he has altered our *Laurelia* to the Tasm. *gen. Atherosperma* and so confirming my opinion in my essay—as to their

scarcely being distinct—also, yielding the *2nd* sp. of (*Thuja*)—now *Librocedrus*—as I had therein said.

But, anon:—your grand day is fast approaching. I hope you will have fine w.—the Governor—good attendance—all in Order within—*all you can possibly wish, & give great satisfaction*: & be *pleased* yourself.

Believe me, I shall *keep the day*, here; & be with you in spirit, & dream at nights.

—Ever my dear Sir

Yours sincerely

Wm. Colenso.

P.S. I have already written Hooker; promising my new *Crypts.* after I have finished the essay. Not a word from him about the *Bell*. Inscriptn.

2nd. P.S. I enclose a *label*—for some large common glass bottles holding the nuts sent.—

P.S. *3rd*!! It has just occurred to me to say, that if you should *not* have a copy of Hooker's Hd. Bk. & wish to see it—let me know and I will gladly forward it by *Mail*. W.C.

1865 February 1: to McLean³⁸²

His Honour the Superintendent

Govt. Offices
Monday Mg.

Dear Mr. McLean

I just write you this line to tell you, that I am right glad to hear of your being better—and, that the *sole* reason why I have not called to see you—is, my belief that (for your health & speedy convalescence) you have already *too many* visitors:—

If I can be of *any* service to you, in any way—or if I have any thing handy (just over the fence)—don't fail in making it known. I would I had known of your returning so early, as I *had* some fine peaches—which I gave away.—

Don't think of *answering* this.—

Believe me

Dear Sir

Yours truly

W. Colenso

1865 February 2: to Hector³⁸³

Napier
Feb. 4 1865

My dear Sir

I wish to write you a few lines by this Mail, to tell you how deeply I sympathize w. you—at Otago—at your being so greatly disappointed (& injured) by the non-appearance of Sir G. Grey among you. It has grieved me very much. I

381 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

382 ATL Object #1001613 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.
383 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

have seen an account of your opening, and am glad to find the “Ramsay”, with all the foreign exhibits, has arrived.

I am hard at work for you, & *hope* to send you my Mss. by next Steamer.

I have received a Copy of Dr. Hooker’s “Hand Book”—part i. I am glad to find *you* have sent so many new & choice things from your Southern Lands.—I always told Hooker there was a great plenty yet to come from N.Z. I am glad to find he has at last done justice to some of my *old* sp.—particularly to the *Phormium* & *Coriaria*:—though I think my own naming for the *Phormium* should have stood. I find you also speak of a 3rd. sp. I hope you have received a Copy: if not, & you wish it,—I will gladly send you mine by Post.—I have not had time to go much into it. I wish I could have had it 4 or 6 months back. Mr. Francis has kindly sent me a copy of his “Chatham Islands’ plants” by Mueller—I am very glad to see it; but I do not agree in much that M. has done. Hooker, too, has *lumped* both sp., & even old genera, together in his new work.—

As before, wishing you *every success*—I am

Yours faithfully

Wm. Colenso

P.S. Kind regards to your good colleague, Mr. Wm. Mason.

You tell me—*Mr. Taylor* wrote the essay on Zoology: I hope he will have satisfied you. If I had had my choice, it would have been the one I should have chosen.

I am glad to find Seemann is publishing the Feejee Islands Flora: our Eng. Mail has not yet turned up. W.C.

1865 February 25: to Hector³⁸⁴

Napier
Feb. 25 1865

My dear Sir

At length I dispatch my Ms. to you. I have labored hard to get it done to send by *this* Steamer—and the Copying I have found a very heavy job: plain writing being most tedious to me, ever since I lost the use of my thumb (for writing) 2 years ago.—

I fear you may find the Ms. too *long* (may that be its *only* fault!) but I question if it is much longer than the former. Of course you will deal as you please with it: I quite expect to hear of its being cut down—cut in, & cut out. I only hope I shall have given *you* satisfaction. If you should have time and patience to read it through, you will find (I think) a few novel & strange matters. I wish I had had more time allowed to write it. I well know I shall not please *some* folks: some, indeed, may please to call me un-orthodox!—but I have (I believe) *conscientiously* written, *from experience only*; and I am sure I have some knowledge of the subject.—While copying, I have often thought on Faust’s truthful saying (to Wagner)—“Who dares call the child by its true name? The few who have ever known any thing about it—who *silly* enough, did not keep a guard over their full hearts—who *revealed what they had felt* &

seen to the multitude,—these, time immemorial, have been crucified & burned.” — —

I have still the *Notes* to write and send by next Steamer; also the Comp. Table of Dialects;—the Table of N. Island Natives, Tribes, & Geographical position is *enclosed*. I thought I would send this on at once, as, *if it should be deemed worthy*, you can get on with the printing it. The Notes will make only a *few* pages, and will (I think) prove interesting.

If you should print the Essay in its entirety—or nearly so,—I should like to have a few extra Copies printed at my expence—say 50 (fifty).—

I hope your Exhibition is doing pretty well. I have scarcely heard any thing of it since the opening. Am sorry to hear of more fires w. you:—& now we have heard of *more* serious ones at Auckland! In haste—

Ever my dear Sir, yours truly

W. Colenso.

1865 March 2: to Hector³⁸⁵

Napier, March 2/65

My dear Sir

Yours of the 10th. ulto. (posted at Dunedin on the 15th.)—with packet containing Dr. Shortland’s Ms., reached me on the 27th.—2 days *after* I had posted my essay to you (per “Queen” Str.) and which left here on the 26th.—

I thank you much for forwarding the Copy of the Essay; which I have just read, & now return, with a few remarks on a ½ sheet fcap., *put up with it*.—

From *my point* of view—it is sloppily put together, and illogical;—I am a *little* disappointed in it. I do not say *much*:—as I have ever been seeking to know, how or why Dr. S. became an authority in these matters. I well recollect his 1st. arrival in N.Z.—(*after* his brother’s,—who only remained 15 months *acting* Goverr.) and that he was stations as Aborigines-Protector (!!) at Maketu. Dr. S. was then young & wild,—& his appointment caused (at the time) much talk. (*entre nous*.) I am not aware of his really having known any other parts of N.Z. than the neighbourhood of his Station and I do not think he was many years in the Country.

I can hardly suppose you will publish *both* essays—and Dr. S’s. has the priority, &c, &c.—*I am very willing to receive mine back* if there is the least hesitancy on the part of the Commissioners,—as I should like to have much more time for such a work—there is little of *labor limæ* in it; but, apart from that, I should like to make *enquiry*, &c &c. It is however possible, the Government (who readily helped me with Census & other Papers,) may wish to see mine published.—If you should *not* pub. Mine, do not allow it, or any part of it to be copied.

I am right glad to hear of the increasing no. of your visitors, and of their preferring the N.Z. exhibits. I have the almost *sure* prospect of going to Wellington for a “3 months”

384 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

385 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

during Sess. of Gen. Assy.—perhaps to commence early. I am sure I shall *not* be able to visit you—although my heart is there long ago: many thanks for your kind wish. My “notes” (*hindered* by this Ms. of Dr. S’s.)—you shall have by the Str. which leaves here *on 14th*.—A note, from our good friend Dr. Hocken, by this last Mail, tells me,—“I have been trying to get your Inscription on the Bell deciphered, but in vain; and must send it to Holland, for that purpose,—there seems to be no doubt it is Javanese.”—He wishes me to help him in the *Cyperaceæ* & *Gramineæ* of N.Z., but, I fear, I shall do little (if any) more in *distant* Botanizing: I am not what *I was*, physically.

Ever my dear Sir

Yours faithfully

W. Colenso.

P.S. I have several times intended to say, but always omitted doing so—that you can leave out the words—“By W.C.”—in either or both essays—that is if you wish it. I put the words in—following suit w. Dr. Müller. W.C

1865 March 6: to Mantell³⁸⁶

Napier March 6
1865

The Hon. Mr Mantell,
Wellington.

Dear Mr. Mantell

By this day’s Mail I send you an Offl. Letter of enquiry after two young Ngapuhi Natives. I much fear they may never again be heard of, and that there are several others in the same predicament: pray do all *you can in the matter*.—

I suppose I am indebted to *you* for the offl. letter of Jany. 11th. (now only replied to by me) desiring me to proceed with the Maori Lex. I am sure I thank you heartily, and the Govt. also, and I hope to receive every efficient & needful help to enable me to do it properly—to carry out my plans long ago told to Sir George & to Mr. Fox. I have also written to you, by this mail, for further information. I should have written before, but I have been working hard at the “*Essay*” (2nd), which is now, I hope, in the hands of the Commissioners—but will they print it?

Do not believe all—or a tithe—of what you may hear respecting our Natives and their Pai Maraire visitors. It is a great pity the venal local papers should go so far as they do—acting so unthinkingly.

I believe Hapuku to be very very far from joining them.

I should like to write to you officially (if required) respecting a most severe sentence inflicted by Mr. Justice Johnstone on 2 young Natives here, (4 years imprisont.), and which however legal, is, under all the circumstances, most harsh, and at this crisis highly injudicious. It was a very common Maori case of purlieu (*not* adultery), & the Natives know of the *Settler* at Taranaki having lately recd. a *less severe* sentence for what they would call murder! I sincerely hope the Governor will reduce this *severe* sentence to 6 months (or 12).—

I write in haste
And am,
My dear Sir,
Yours faithfully
Wm. Colenso.

1865 March 10: to Catchpool³⁸⁷

Napier
March 10th. 1865.

Dear Sir

Since I last saw you (on Saturday 8th. inst.) I have been both Considering & Reconsidering what you there stated to me, about my future assisting you, in your Capacity as Chief Post Master, in arranging with the Native Mail Carriers of this Province, at some Specified Sum pr. Annum for my Services for so Interpreting Translating & Arranging When without thought, (being very busy) I said “£10 (Ten Pounds) pr. Annum”. But, I Added “Rather than do the work for that Sum I would willingly give £1. pr. Annum to be entirely free from it.” I have since had time for reflection and I now wish Dear Sir to inform you:—

1st. That I would very much rather have nothing at all to do with this onerous & most unpleasant duty, if some suitable and convenient helper could be found.—But,

2nd. That if the Genl. Government should wish me to assist, you (As hitherto & from the commencement of our Native Mail Service) I can only consent, to do so on being in some degree paid for my Services. And that the lowest sum I would take (And then still consider myself underpaid) would be £30 (Say Thirty Pounds) pr. Annum. Of which I scarcely need inform you full £5. pr. Annum would necessarily be as heretofore given away.

Further: as the Post Master General The Hon. Crosbie Ward in his late visit here both saw a specimen of what I have had to do for the General Government, (As above) and said that such Services ought to be paid for—I would beg to be allowed to say that, in the event of my being paid for the work of this year just past, the similar duties I also performed of those of the two previous years should not be forgotten.—

I am
Dear Sir
Yours faithfully
Signed Wm. Colenso.

E. Catchpool Esq.
Chief Post Master
Napier

1865 March 13: to Hector³⁸⁸

Napier, March 13, 1865

My dear Sir

By this Mail I send you—in a Book-packet—the remaining portion of the Essay on the Maori Races:—*viz.*

1. The *Notes* to that Essay (therein referred to);
2. *Appendix, No. I.*,—a Comp. Table of Polyn. Dialects, &c. also,
3. A small addition (of half a short sentence; and a footnote) to be added to that Essay; and,
4. Half a sheet of Corrections of a few Printer's Errors in your Official Catalogue.

I can assure you I am right glad to have done with it—for the time at least. I have striven hard throughout to do justice to both sides, (within the narrow limits allowed me—of time & space,) and also, to give useful interesting information in the *notes*. I think they will prove to be of a popular nature. I suppose your printers will have *music type* (as ours have here!)—if they have not, you will of course alter that note to suit.

I had a Copy of your Official Catalogue lent me (by an acquaintance just returned from Otago,) for a few hours; and perceiving a few *errata* respecting my exhibits I have enclosed (in the Book packet) a sheet of corrections. I had not time to go fully into the Catalogue, but I also noticed several errors (typographical) in the scientific spelling of some of your Bot. exhibits—which I suppose you will see to.—

I value Forster's works much:—and have always thought very highly of the man (or men, *pater et fil.*)—I am sure you would like to dip into them. As you have my "Cook's Voy." I availed myself of my *privilege*, and borrowed from the General Assembly Library, 2 vols. Of the same work—hence my quotations.

My next immediate job, is to work up my *Crypts*. For Dr. Hooker: which I hope and shall try hard to have ready for April Mail hence. Did you receive the nuts of *Aleurites* (Candle-nut), and were they of any service?

It has occurred to me to ask you (since you may have some Polynesian visitors—I mean *Europeans* residing in the Islands,)—Could you get me any of the *local* publications in their respective dialects:—or, put me in a way to get them? Does any of your merchants trade, &c—with any of these Islands?

Again wishing you every success—and that I were nearer,
I am

My dear Sir
Yours sincerely

Wm. Colenso.

1865 March 30: to Hector³⁸⁹

Napier, March 30, 1865.

My dear Sir

It seems as if our letters were destined to cross! Since my last to you I have received your two kind notes of the 8th. & 16th. inst., for which I have to thank you. From your last I find you have been so near me as Wellington, and by this time I suppose you are safely returned again to Dunedin, and will have received my last to you of the 13th. inst., with the "*Notes*", &c.

There are just one or two matters in your two letters which require answering.— 1. with reference to Shortland's essay: you say,— "the Commissrs. may wish to have *both* published, to which I suppose you can have no objection".—To this I reply, *Certainly not*; do as you please in the matter.— 2. with reference to my accepting remuneration, (and which you approve of,) I should perhaps tell you, that I agreed to do so, just because time to me is *more* valuable than money, and (in this case) I have been actually obliged (as it were) to pay—or allow—for time. In January 1864, I arranged with the Genl. Govt. to write certain Anglo-Maori School Books, &c, for a certain sum, to be finished by Jany. 1866.—Before, however, I left Auckland in Decr. last, I got Mr. Weld to extend the *time* 6 months longer (but *not* the pay,) and this I was obliged to do, because I had already then given you so much time, & *had further agreed to write Essay No. 2.*—

—3. I have little doubt but that had I had more time allowed to write Essay No.2, I could have further strengthened my positions therein taken. Already several things have occurred to me which are new. I have also, since I sent the sd. essay, read "Lyell's Antiquity of Man," and my good Cousin's (*Natal*) part *iv.* on the Pentateuch: and am not a little pleased with much I found in both works—especially with the copious quotations in the latter from "Nott's Types of Mankind", (for which work I have just written to England,) and from Prof. Owen's "Addresses"—which I had not before seen or heard of. A few of my select acquaintances here, who know of my having written Essay No. 2, and of the very *short time* allowed me for doing so, are of opinion I should add a short Postscript to that effect, which I think, with your permission (especially if you print Shortland's) I shall do. If there should be a demand for mine hereafter in a separate form, perhaps the Commee. would no objection to my adding to it, & further improving it for a second (and separate) edition?

4. About the *Bell*: You tell me that your "Chief Surveyor recognizes the inscription as *Tamul*, and that he wishes to obtain a Copy to send to Logan at Singapore":—*by all means let him do so.* (If a photograph however should be taken, please let me have one for Dr. Hooker.—The Commissrs. are also *quite welcome* to take a photog. of it, or of its Inscription, for their Catalogue—if they approve of it,—or, indeed, of any thing else of mine in the Exhibition.)—I doubt however the Inscription proving to be *Tamul*. I have the Tamul Characters, Malayalim, and Cingalese,—and have often compared them all, but have failed in identifying them. At the same time 2 or 3 of the chars. on the Bell do come very near to 2 or 3 of the Tamul chars.—*i.e.* to the short *w*—the initial *va*,—and the final *na*. I earnestly hope the Inscription may contain its *date*. On

referring again to your letter, I find you say,—Your C. Surveyor “*can decypher it*”:—what then does he make of it? You did *not* (in any former letter to hand) tell me of its being Tamul, &c.—

5. Be assured, *I greatly regret not being really* able to visit your Exhibition. I should very much like to see it, and indeed to spend some time in studying many portions of it. Seeing you have had but a *short* season,—could you not keep it together (mainly) *for another summer?* even if you had to shut it up for the winter.—This thought has often occurred to me of late.

I shall be very happy to receive a “proof” of the Essay. I hope your Printer will have a clever and careful *Reader*: I am sure I have written all (especially any foreign language) very plain, so as to provide against typographical errors which I hate. I hear from our Mr. Wilkinson that he had the pleasure of seeing you at Wellington. Believe me, my dear Sir,

Yours very faithfully,
Wm. Colenso.

1865 May 10: to Hector³⁹⁰

Napier, May 10th., 1865.

My dear Sir

Since I dispatched my last to you I have received no less than 5 notes from you!—dated, 5th., 6th., 21st., 28th. (2) ult., the last 3 (with proofs of first 2½ sheets of Essay, & lith. of Bell) by steamer 2 days back: for all which I am not a little obliged & indebted. I should have written to you 10–12 days ago, in reply to your notes of 5th. & 6th. ult., but I waited the arrival of the “proofs” therein mentioned. I find I have nearly a doz. subjects to write on, and I scarcely know where to begin—although I am determined to get out of your debt for letter writing. 1st. then, I observe your last 3 notes are headed “Geolog. Survey of N.Z.”—May I not congratulate you on some new & good appt.? I hope so. I had *heard* (from—Wellington.) of something of the kind being on the *tapis*: and now I hope, for the sake of the Colony & of Science (as well as of yourself) this is *au fait accompli*: and I hope this may bring you into our neighbourhood. 2. I am sorry to find, that you are obliged to use funds reserved for Essay printing, &c, for other purposes; hence, you say, you will have to shorten some of the Essays, and among them my Bot. one—*i.e.* omitting the more systematic part: I leave all that, my dear Sir, entirely to you—cut out what you please. I see, however, by “proof” (“*Analysis*”) sent, you intend giving the *whole* of the 2nd. Essay, which (as you justly say) *is long*, yet (in some parts) almost painfully (spasmodically) contracted. If you are “*hard up*”, I am willing to give your exhibn. this Essay also: I have been thinking of doing so ever since I got your intimation of the state of your funds, &c. [*Entre nous*: My writing that Essay (or both) has already been a means of much official scribbling between our N.Z. Nat. Minister Mr. Mantell & myself, and will (I have little doubt) end in my throwing up the Anglo-Maori job I had commenced, (which if I do I must also refund £150. “advanced” during 17 months)—The Maori *Lexicon* (on which my heart was

set, and about which, I think, I must have written to you,) is already *in nubilus*!—but more anon.] 3. As to the “proofs”:—allow me to say, I am not over well pleased with them; your Printer evidently slops his work; indeed, I should say, he is not used to *Book* work,—perhaps to Composition on Newspapers only. The “*Analysis*” is *not* well-done—why the word “*Analysis*” should be in the *biggest* letters I am utterly at a loss to know. The line “*Ethnology*”, or, “*the M. Races of N. Zealand*,” should have been the leading one—& so throughout all the Essays.—By compressing the “*Analysis*” a *little* (which it would well bear) he could have put it in 3 pps., and have begun his 4p. with the body of the work, which would have looked vastly neater. I have noticed a few ugly typographl. errors (which I enclose on a slip) and lots of deviations from proper (or my own) punctuation. I, perhaps, notice these things the more, from having had practically and critically to superintend the C. Mission Book press for many years. I fear my “*Copy*” (Ms.) was *too well written*; hence it has been placed in the hands of an apprentice or inferior workman:—a common trick w. printers. Since you have determined to print the 2 Tables (Appendix), and as the little type in them cannot be immedy. wanted,—could you not forward corrected proofs of these to me, for final revise & correction? as if not *wholly* correct—especially the 2nd. one, they are useless. 4. I notice that, both *in* Essay and *on* one envelope, you add F.L.S. to my name. I would ask, is this correct, were I not sure you would not have done it if it were not so. Yet, perhaps, more *in posse* than *in esse*. If I do not mistake I shall ever remember this delicate & fresh proof of your kind attention. *Hitherto* I have never sought, nor greatly cared for any thing of the kind, but, *since I wrote the Essays*, I have corresponded with Dr. Hooker about it, & expect by next Mail to hear it is so. Had I listened to the overtures made to me 25 years ago, by French, German, & Belgian men of science & their patrons, I suppose I should by this have had a tail of nearly half the alphabet! 5. I also feel much indebted to you (and to Mr. Thompson) for the charming *lith. & phot.* of the Bell. I think them excellently well done—especially the *lith.* part. I shall not fail to write Mr. Thompson a warm letter of thanks for his exertions: Dr. Hooker, I am sure, will be delighted beyond expectation. I feel a double amount of satisfaction, at such good lithography being done among us. I tried hard when in Auckland (twice) to find a good artist lithographer, but failed; and I have often dwelt with delight (dashed with regret) on those few plates of Müller’s Chatham Isld. plants executed in Melbourne. Surely we shall eventually have such a clear Inscriptn. deciphered!—Boyle wrote meditations on a Broomstick—Byron on a skull,—& Burns on a Daisy, &c, &c,—what depths of thought are stirred, what reveries may not fairly be indulged—on that old Bell:—would that we could make it *speak*! 6. Three days ago I recd. a Copy of your Offl. Catalogue from our Mr. Wilkinson, (I believe he had had them some time before, but had supposed I also had received a Copy.) Mr. Wilkinson told me, he had paid you for the *outlay* on the Exhibn. Case, which I was glad to hear. I have not yet gone through 1/6th. of the Catalogue, still I feel greatly pleased at your having such an Exhibn., and *now* feel considerably vexed with myself for not visiting it; (particularly since the principal matter for which I had absented myself—viz. the Anglo-Maori books for the Govt. is likely to be abandoned) I have heard it highly spoken of by many,—and, in particular your numerous & valuable exhibits. I am delighted to find *you* had so many good & interesting Colonial subjects from almost the whole Circle of Natl.

Science—and am particularly pleased with your *fine provincial* Colln. of Ferns, and of Birds. (See Postscript).—Among the latter I am right glad to find my dear little owl (whēkāu), which I discovered in 1845, in the Tararua mountains, and have never before, nor since, heard of. I do not see, however, in the Ornithologl. List, the prized *Huia* (*Neomorpha Gouldii*), or the elegant *Fulica N.Z.*, but I have not yet gone closely through all. If Buller's nomenclature is correct (which, in some few cases at least, I venture to doubt) much of it is wholly new to me. However, the portion of the Cat. printed at Dunedin is full of typographical errors, especially in scientific spelling, which is anything but ornamental or pleasing: if it were to be printed I would willingly set about correcting it. It is so much the more conspicuous owing to the English printed portion being free. I notice, with regret, how conspicuously our J.A. White has placed himself (see, p.156,)—for, setting aside the fact that those sps. of flax (*Phormium*) did duty before at the old European exhibitions, (J.A.S. then being a kind of *quasi* Collector for Auckland Museum,) his "*Linum perenne*, or perennial flax" (!) is our common N.Z. *L. monogynum*, which is well-known (comparatively) to be utterly useless as a fibre-producing plant, particularly as to *quantity*: and his "Yellow Kowhaie, a substitute (??) for Quassia", is the common *Edwardsia* (or *Sophora*)—concerning which "Substitute" J.A.S. has been regularly roasted! And his s-speaking of the "Error of the local Agent", is far from gratifying.

There are a few *small* Ferns mentioned in *your* lot, I should much like to have specimens of,—that is, if you have any to spare—e.g. *Cystopteris fragilis*, *Hymenophyllum unilaterale*, *minimum*, & *Lyallii*, *Trichomanes strictum*, *Colensoi*, & *Malingii*, *Aspidium cystostegia*, *Asplenium Trichomanes*, & *Richardi*:—perhaps, by and bye, I may be able to return in a few N. Island ferns.—From our local paper of this day I find your Exhibition closed last Saturday, 6th.—I feel somewhat sad at this: (much as I have felt at beholding the melting away of the gorgeous Mexican Day Lily:) I cannot help thinking its sun has set too early. You kindly inform me, that you will see to the careful repacking of my exhibits, for which I shall be still more indebted to you—indeed, I fear more altogether than I shall ever be able to repay. You mention some as being desirable for a Col. Museum: but you do not say *what*—or *where* this C. Museum is to be. Had you not better let me know what you wish *before* you pack them? Should any one wish to have the Flora *N.Z.* they can have it at Cost price, with what I paid at Auckland for binding; or, if preferred, in *parts*, I have a colored copy at Cost price, (although I paid W. Lyon, Wellington, considerably more for some of them).

Hoping you are well, and assuring you, that I am often thinking of you and your Temple of Science.

I am, my dear Sir,

Yours ever sincerely
Wm. Colenso.

P.S. (May 13th.) Since writing the foregoing I have been dipping deeper into the Off. Cat.—The more I do so, the more I regretfully know of *what I have lost*! I note with fresh pleasure, your *numerous* fossils, geologl. & mineralogl. specimens, alpine plants, & extensive herbarium, &c., &c. and shall still hope to see them somewhere as a "*Museum*". Ten years ago I endeavoured to stir up Dr. Featherstone *our* then Superintendent; and,

subsequently, the Genl. Govt. of that day, on this point,—but without avail.

—In going closely over the lithog. of the Bell I find a *slight* deviation from my words in Catalogue, which, I have little doubt, will cause many enquiries to be made. I had said—"I have, somewhere, written but I cannot tell where (*if existing now*, after 28 years.)—and when at Auckland I wrote to some old chiefs, but, thanks to the troublous times, hitherto without answer. The words in lith. make it *more certain*, &c.—Vale! W.C.

1865 July 21: to the CMS Secretaries³⁹¹

Napier, New Zealand,
July 21st., 1865.

Secretaries,
C.M. Society,
London.

Rev. & Dear Sirs

Enclosed is the Original of a Memorandum respecting a large Church Bell the property of the C.M.S.—which for a long time has been in my possession.

When obliged, in 1862, (sorely against my will;) to leave Waitangi, I wrote a note to the Rev.S. Williams, informing him of my being about to do so, and requesting him to take charge of this Bell, and of some Maori Books belonging both to the C.M.S. and to the B. & N.B. Society, but, as I did not receive any reply from him, I brought away the Bell and Books to Napier in my last cartload of goods.—

Subsequently I have been often asked—both by the former as well as by the present Minister of our Church in this small town, as well as by some of the Congregation, to lend this Bell—which I have at length consented to do on the conditions expressed in the Memorandum.

I may add, that I have this day written to Rev. S. Williams enclosing the *Duplicate* of the within Memorandum (keeping the *triplicate*): and, that I have from time to time, as disposed of, accounted to the B.&N. Bible Society for their Books abovementioned removed hither by me. Some of the Books of the C.M.S. (Maori Pentateuchs, &c.) are still in my charge.—

And, further, that if the C.M.S. could conveniently *give* the said Bell to the Church of St. John's, Napier, it would be most thankfully received. As a Congregation we have had to purchase a site for our Church and Parsonage, to build enlarge & endow, and to maintain our Minister, which *altogether* falls rather heavily to our small number.

I am,

Rev. & Dear Sirs,
Very truly yours,
Wm. Colenso.

1865 August 2: to Hector³⁹²

Ho. of Representatives,
Wellington,
August 2/65

My dear Sir

For some time past I have been expecting by every Mail to hear from you—as mentioned in your last (received) note,—or to receive “the *proofs*” of the Essay.—Rather thoughtlessly perhaps on my part, as I have good reason to know you *are very busy*.

I heard, yesterday, from Mr. Paterson, that you might be this way in a fortnight: when I shall be glad to see you.—

I had hoped, that the *Maori Essay* would have been printed by before this, and a *few* copies (at least) in the hands of a *few* of our Members—& the *Ministry*, & the *Governor*. Such *might have been* of some little service, but ?—if not to stop their utopian theories respecting the race, at least to help me towards my being employed on the M. Lexicon.—Mantell, with (or, rather, *to*) whom I have written very *much* on the subject of the said Lexn.—& who in his *last* (6th. ult.) agreed with me, & promised “fully to confer & settle when I should arrive in Wellgn.”—had resigned (!) before I came so I am again *at sea* as to that & getting disheartened.—

* * * *

Our political horizon is rather “squally”; Bar. falling rapidly. Our (precious) “*reply*” was battled over yesterday till 1 o’clock this mg.

Remember me kindly to Mr. Mason who is *expected* here: and if you are *not* coming soon, & could give him 1 doz. of the M. Essay *if finished* for me, you would further oblige yours in haste

Wm. Colenso.

August 3rd. *Since* writing this I have been asked by some of the leading members of the Govt.—as to the M. Essay—W.C.

1865 August 2: to Catchpool³⁹³

G. Ass. Library
Wellgn. August
2 1865.

My dear Catchpool

As I believe *you* would like to get a line from me, I single you out of all my Napier friends on this occasion.

To begin: we had an ugly embarkation (as you may have heard)—*twice* attempted ere we got out & on board: 39 hours doing the passage, to me it was a time of little else but perfect misery, *almost* causing me to vow, that if I ever set foot on land again, catch me going &c &c. Our Capt. made Wellington lightho. at one a.m. on Thursday, but, not liking to enter (!) boxed about in the straits until daylight (to the disarrangement of his stewards’ pantry)—at x. a.m.

we anchored. An ugly Wellgn. morning rain & wind—& severe *hail* storms: it cost me 10/- *cab hire* alone that day. Lyon very kindly came on the wharf to meet me—at first I went to an Hotel away beyond Rhodes’—in the evening to my lodgings (taken for me by L.) in Wingfield St.—not far from the Ho.—& arranged for 15/- extra (i.e. £2.15.0) per week to get *Breakfast* & firing &c. My rooms are small, but the *only* 2 in the little cot (save the skillion & garret, into which the man & his w. & child stow themselves!) the front door, open to the S.,—opens bang into the sitting room, ditto the back-door, ditto their ladder & trapdoor to the upper, & the fire place (such as I never saw) just large eno. to roast a lark, & chimney smoky! The Bedroom, on the ground floor, is very damp—from which I have a good share of Rheumatism.—And I fear, I cannot well leave it (the lodgings)—although I *may*. I spend most of my time in “*the House*”—or its Library, and Dine at Bellamy’s at 6.—

I should tell you—that as we were leaving (shoving off the Boat)—I bawled to Routledge—for your watch—he ran, & pitched it into the Boat, as a Cricket Ball; I secured it—& on Saturday last I took it to Shaw: I *then* discovd. your notes—& lost no time in dispatching yours to F., covering it with a note that I should like to see him *whenever*, &c.,—but he has not yet responded: in fact F., & Weld, have both been ill, through “over work”—no wonder for F., as the Provl. Council is still sitting. At last Friday’s sitting I found out that Mantell had resigned!!—& as yet no N. Mr. has been appd. D.Bell (just arrd.) has been offd. the sitn., but he (wisely) refuses: Fitzgerald is *now* talked of,—as the coming man.—In fact, the *whole* of the Ministry wrote a memo., (since printed) that they should resign on the meeting of the G.A.,—but the *last* dispatch from Cardwell (2 days before opening) saved them.—The old game has been again played,—lots of letters—priv. & off.—between the Govr. & the Genl.,—(as betn. G. & Fox,)—which will do G—y no good at home—& irk *the Colony still lower*: the old general has *plainly* spoken,—concerning the removal of the seat of Govt.—the *job* of the Waitotara purchase, “a second Waitara,”—the want of common-sense, & “trash” of Mantell—so you may guess the love of the whole lot for him!!—of course, much “*secret dispatch*”—writing on both sides, wh. seems to have engrossed their time & attention, while the Colony was (financially) going to the D—I.—

The Govr’s. speech, (given the day before I arrived,) and our (precious) reply, you will see in the Papers. Yesterday we commenced in good earnest at noon, & sat till 1 this morning, mostly on the *reply*: sharp & bitter things were said on both sides:—by Stafford, agt. *Weld* (!) & Sewell—by Weld in reply—by Williamson agt. the Ministry, & by sarcastic Richardson.—Though opposed to much of the reply, we had promised *not* to divide on it: at 1 this mg., Weld, *unwisely*, called for a Division (amid loud cries of “no, no,”) & persisted in having it: on which, we left the Ho. joined by several Otago & Southland Members: even Featherstone & Harrison, did so: Ormond also: so that there were only about half left—when the Division was *not* taken. I spoke, *against* some parts of the reply—*i.e.*—the Natives into Parliament—their love of “law & order”—their loyalty—peace being partially established—& the absurdity of *thanking* (!) the Governor for taxation. Such *may* appear in the Wellington papers: if so, you will see it. We go at it again this day: the Native franchise Bill, against wh. I shall speak—& *lots* of other work. There will be lots of *sparring* this Session—Stafford seems to be regularly primed: & now that Weld has come out, too, so bitterly &

392 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033
393 ATL Ms-Copy-Micro-0193.

tauntingly (which Stafford cannot stand)—mischievous will be brewing.—There is a strong feeling, however, to support the Weld Ministry—especially from the South. But it is weak: Fitz. (one of their best) is very weak in health.—The increase of duties is from *stamps* (but this perhaps includes *more* than we know—*perhaps* Papers! among others.)³⁹⁴ All say we are in for 3 months *certain*. Bunny has been returned to the disgust of many Wellingtonians: It made us laugh to see Fitz. & Waring Taylor march him up to be sworn!

Wellington is wonderfully improved outwardly. The Asphalte foot pavement all along Lambton Quay makes it dry & nice walking. The day I left you, "*Tract*" published in the "Herald" a letter against me—I wrote a reply, wh. Wood *may* have pubd.—I hear Ormond was the writer—but I believe *Carr* (*as before*) was.—Good bye

Ever yours truly
Wm. Colenso.

No.2.—

Friday mornng.

My dear Catchpool

In haste I write this P.S.—Yesterday I sent to Mundle a Book for my Boy (a Rob. Crusoe) directing it to *you*—will you kindly ask M. for it? Lear will call on you for the Book.—

Last evg. I was *disgusted* at seeing how I was misrepresented in the "*Advertiser*"—and intended to bring it today before the Ho., but this mg. I have seen the "*Independent*" which is tolerably *correct*: I said what the *I.* states, & much more.—

The 57 Maories, prisoners, are safe on board of a schooner, under guard. The fire-bell rang this mg., an hour before cock-crowg.—but it was a vessel on fire (I hear). The weather is again very fine: I am daily getting stronger.

Believe me
My dear friend
Yours faithfully
W. Colenso.

1865 August 12: to Catchpool³⁹⁵

Wellington,
Saturday night
August 12/65
7 p.m.

My dear Catchpool

I am here alone in this fine library (Gen. Assy.)—nearly as large as a young Church.—At this hour I ought to have been dining with the Govr.—3 hours ago I sent an apology—as I do not feel well—a tom-cat could knock me down!—I have been very unwell since I wrote to you—& had begun to enquire after a Medical Man—but did without him.—I recd. your kind note for which I thank you much—

³⁹⁴ WC: The Ministry—on being pressed—said, that, *at present*, all of the Provinces share of Customs they purposed taking would be the *surplus*: it was curious to hear Fitzherbert defending it!

³⁹⁵ ATL Ms-Copy-Micro-0193.

it was refreshing to see your handwriting. *This day* has been one of sad news,—murders at Opotiki, of several whites—& of Fulloon, a Govt. Interpreter & half-caste, (a useful officer)—ditto at Whanganui of Lieut. Waring, 50th. regt.—loss of the screw "Alexandra"—at White Cliffs Taranaki,—and, last night, a fire here in Wellington, Victoria Hotel burnt down, horses, &c.—

Yesterday, after a long & adjourned debate, a sad sad "petition" (or rather, saucy letter,) from Wm. Thompson the Maori Chief, was *received* by the Ho. We fought against it (Ormond & self—Major Richardson, & some others)—but to no effect;—he says, he will have his Maori King—all our doings (fightings) are *murders*—we must give up *all* the conquered country, &c, &c,—& then he will make peace!!!

This precious document was written in April to Fitzgerald,—& what makes it the worse, is, that a much later, & better one, written in June, by G. Graham, had been received by us the day before.—Verily what are we coming to!

It is reported today, as an *on dit* *parly*.—that Fitzgerald is to be Nat. Minister: if so, there will be a jolly row!

Last Sunday the weather was most doleful wretched wet & miserable! for four days since—Monday to Thursday—delightful—yesterday & today strong W. wind, with dust & sand. It is rumoured the Weld My. is but so-so—& are likely to go down by the run—on the matter of the $\frac{3}{8}$ ths. which, it is sd., they intend to divide w. the Provs. If so, there will be a fight; we shall know shortly. They are scheming for money in every way—and are (I hear) hard up.—

I reminded Ormond to take up your case in the Private Grievance Commee. (of which he is a member) & he assured me he would:—we are a *little better* "friends" than we were—but I am not to be deceived. We have scarcely begun work yet.—

Nearly all the Members are now here, and the big room looks well, when it is lit up with its 25 fine large Kerosine Lamps:—often crowded of an evening. It was a painful sight (to me, at least,) to see MacAndrew sworn in—he had just arrived from the S., and was sitting at the farther end, when the Speaker rose, & sd., "If any Member is present who has not been sworn, &c." Poor McA.! not one of his Otago brethren escorted him, (the rule is, for 2 Mrs. to do so,) and he had to walk up alone—& be sworn, repeating every word in sol. silence—& then to sign the roll, and then go back *alone*: it was truly an *ordeal*! He is, however, of the unblushing cheeky assured type:—& since has spoken several times, & *we* have since crossed swords!—he is going in for a repeal of the N. Provinces Act—and sd. "he never knew of Provl. Councils not doing Justice to outlying Districts"!!! which caused W.C. to rise & speak.—Strange—Cracroft Wilson has been questioning the Govt.—"as to 3–4 R.M's. at Napier!" and Burns (Otago) as to the statement in H. Bay "*Times*"—concerning ammunition to marines from Auckland;—which led to much talk.—

I am now trying the giving up Dinners ("6 p.m.")—and taking a Lunch *as Dinner*, at 2 or 3, instead—of course I lose all the *good* things— "4 Courses and a Dessert,"—but I cannot wait till 6, and if I take ever so small a lunch, I cannot eat Dinner.

Last Tuesday mg. *early*, I was surprised by a visit from Capt. Bulkely, A.D.C., to Govr., at my lodgings—to tell me Grey wished me to visit *all* the Southern outlying islets—Auckland, Campbell, Emerald,—Ballemey, & other—Islands,—as a Scientific Explorer &c!—to think over it, & to see G.—I saw him on Thursday, &, again, yesterday. Had a long talk—but could not consent to it. Then he wished me to explore, all the islets off the E. Coast N.Z.:—making Kawau head quarters—his life boat & 6 good Maori crew, &c—this is not yet *settled*. I spoke about the Lexicon, &c., and I think G. was a little put out; he took notes of what I said for ministers—but *I expect nothing* from them:—I shewed Grey some of the Offl. letters.—Yesterday I saw Richmond (now acting Nat. Minr.) about Lexn. but got little from him: he sd. it was wanted very much; but the *time*—I sd.—“3 years,”—and, “I wou. undertake, *on an order of Ho.*, without pay, until finished”;—this he is to consider. [If I would follow Faustus, & sell myself, I cod. get that—or any thing else—in their gift.] Grey wishes much to see my essay on Maories—& Dr. Hector (who is now here) has brought proof sheets, 108—pps.—notes, yet to come.—

Hope this will find you well, and Mrs Catchpool better.
Believe me

ever & always
Yours truly W. Colenso.

McL. has written, to say, he is coming here on 15th.—

P.S. Sunday August 13th. Fitzgerald *is* Nat. Minister!! This will please but *few*; and will make Weld's My. *weak, now*. I don't believe they can last out the Session.—

Sunday 13th. Weather truly glorious! a dead calm.
Monday 14. an awful day—wind & dust: Man of War struck her topmasts.

Monday 14th. I have written today to the Editor of “Advertiser” concerning his constant misstatements: the Cornerstone of new Cathol. ch. is to be laid next Monday 21st.—Farewell———W.C.—

P.S. Lyon will pack a small parcel for my Boy, *to your address* or care, in a case which he is sending to Stuart & Co. for Howick:—please receive it and send it on to Sutton's by one of the Traps for Lear.

1865 September 1: to McLean³⁹⁶

Private
&
Confidential.

Wellington
September 1/65.

His Honor D. Maclean, Esq.

My dear Sir,

I find the “Rangatira” is to leave this port for Napier on Monday next, and I hasten to give you some information which I have lately (by “Queen”) received from Napier.

I have had 2 letters of warning, written by a *friendly* pair of Natives living between Havelock and Waipawa, (whose

names and village I must not divulge.)—from which I quote verbatim:—(the first is written to the boy, Willie.)—

... “ka nui te pouri o toku ngakau ki a korua ko tou papa, nui noa atu te aroha, na, he korero tenei, naku ki a korua, he whakaaro roa, kia tupato ki nga mahi o te ao, ara a te hauhou, ka tata tonu nga mahi a te arero kai taewa o te maori te kino ki te ao koia ahau ka tuhi atu ai kia rongo korua, kia noho tupato kei wareware te ngakau ki te mahara.” (the second, to me, is much the same, he adds.)—“E hoa, e Neho, ko tena korero i tuhia atu na, he mea tuhi tahae na mana, kia rongo korua, E hoa, ko ta mana nei mahara, me i kona (Napier) ano koe, kua tae atu mana ki kona, &c.—kei korerotia e korua taua kino ti te tangata, &c. &c.—

These letters were written on the 24th August, and fortunately forwarded on by Bourke to me.—

Curiously enough, a Native Chief (at present here from the North,) shewed me the other day—on finding I had known his relatives and friends at the Bay of Islands—a long and *good* letter he had written to the Govt. here, warning them not to be careless, and not to trust too much to their *best* Maori friends. I have not told any one here of my letters from Napier, save Ormond,—and I only hope, I may not only be in time, but that you (we) may not have any disturbance from that quarter.—

I hope you are quite well. Ormond will give you all pol. news.

Believe me,
Yours faithfully,
Wm. Colenso.

Date? to McLean³⁹⁷

Monday mornng.

His Honor
the Superintendent
of H. Bay

My dear Sir

Many thanks for your kind note and invitation of this morning,—I was quite glad to see your well known hand writing again, and that you could write as usual after the long shaking you have had.—

I should very much like to attend any Meeting of Natives in Town called by you—also to be at your Dinner today, (as I think some of the *old* pakehas should be there;) but I am far from well; I have for some time past been obliged to be extra careful—never showing out after dark, nor in rain—and I would not be out today only business called me forth. I did not move out yesterday; and I feel anything but well now—partly owing to damp feet.

I am therefore obliged (believe me unwillingly) to beg you to accept my apology for not attending the dinner.—*which I am glad to see got up & given to the Chiefs.*

If you should not be *over pressed* for time or with company—I will try to see you in a few days:—Believe me, yours very truly

W. Colenso

1865 date?³⁹⁸ to Hector

Friday noon

My dear Sir

In a conversation with the Governor this morning, he *twice* expressed his great desire to see the sheets of the “Maori-Essay”—which you have brought up—as early as possible.—

Could you conveniently forward them to me at some early period—Yours sincerely

Wm. Colenso.

1865 date?³⁹⁹ to Hector

Saturday mornng.

My dear Sir

I trust you will freely excuse my troubling you with so many frequent notes.—

One thing in their favor, they require *no answer*.

I find I shall not be able (here, in Wellington,) to do justice to this “*Errata*”—unless I have the Mss. Could you not get it, without difficulty, brought up by Mr. Mason? if so, pray do.—

Yours truly
Wm. Colenso.

1865 date?⁴⁰⁰ to Hector

Wednesday mg.

My dear Sir

Herewith the proofs, or printed sheets, w. corrections.

Of course you will quite understand, that only *about half* of what are marked will form the page of *errata*. The corrections here are of 3 kinds—viz—

1. “literal” errors, which will form the *errata*.—
2. bad punctuation.
3. broken, & wrong fount, type; capital letters where small ones should be, & *vice versa*; and italic where Roman, & v. v.—

[These 2 last (2 & 3), have been marked by me, should *another Edn.* be called for, &c.)

I should much like to write out the page of *errata* myself.—

I would greatly prefer doing so *after* reading the “Notes”, (as there may be others, &c). If you have recd. the “Notes”, or Ms., by “Ashley”—pray send them to me.—

398 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

399 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

400 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000147/001/0090

And please let me have these sheets now sent when you shall have done w. them.—

Yours sincerely
Wm. Colenso.

1865 September 29: to Hector⁴⁰¹Wellington, Sept. 29th, 1865.

Jas. Hector, Esq., M.D.
&c &c &c
Wellington.

Dear Sir

I have just received your note of this morning, covering an official note (no. 3024,) from the Hony. Secretary to the Dunedin Exhibition to you of the 25th inst., and also Ms. notes, 21, 22, & 29, to my Essay on “the Maori Races of N.Z.”—which notes are considered by the Commissioners to be “objectionable,” and such as “ought not to be printed.”

I have again closely perused them, and, failing to discover any thing objectionable in them, I confess I scarcely know how to reply.

It must be clear, that in my writing on the New Zealanders, (who have been, and are, so heavily charged with immodesty,) I wished to shew what they were – what the first navigators & visitors found them to be: of course, if those notes (collected from rare and authentic works,) are to be struck out, my own opinion & early knowledge of them (being contrary to the general modern estimation,) will appear still more peculiar; while by such suppression of the truth not only myself but also the N. Zealanders will not have justice done us.

—Pardon me, if I say, I had thought the day of ultra-fastidiousness in scientific enquiry had well-nigh passed away.—

In order, however, if possible to please all parties, I have no objection to the striking-out of the middle part of note 21,—(beginning “the writer recollects,” and ending at “comforted,”)—also, the first part (or the whole) of note 22 (at the same time I feel such would be a suppression of the truth)—and, the term “making water,” in note 29, could perhaps be modified by some more delicate word, or euphemism,—or given in Latin!—or, if still objected to, let this note (29) be struck out altogether.

Once more, and in conclusion, may I be permitted to observe—1. That, viewing the Ms. Essay and Notes as being the property of the Commissioners, they should deal with them as they please: but, if they should choose to print them with much alteration or suppression of parts, or of (necessary) notes, that I should be allowed to reprint them in full (say, at least 2 (two) years hence,) if by me desired.—2. That, if the Commissioners should on the whole prefer to decline the printing of them, I am quite willing to receive them back, leaving it entirely to them to make any allowance to me for trouble expense and loss.—

Should I live to complete my large projected work on N.Z.,—statements and notes of a much more

401 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

“objectionable” character than any to be found in the present Essay & Notes, will, of necessity, be found in it.—

Believe me

Dear Sir

Yours truly

Wm. Colenso.

1865 (Date?): to Hector⁴⁰²

Friday night

My dear Sir

I send you all the Papers: I have written in a hurry, & *in the Ho.!*

In the conclusion of my letter I have said—“trouble, expense, & loss.”

“Expense,” caused by being a fortnight in Auckland at my own cost, collecting information, &c.

“Loss”—by setting aside for 2–3 months the work I was engaged on for the Govt. (for which I could draw—regular—advance—£12. 10. pr. mo.)—but which I fear (& mainly through the *Essays*) I shall never finish, & consequently have to refund what I drew.—

Ever yours

W. Colenso.

1865 late November: to TB Harding⁴⁰³

Friday mornng.

My dear Sir

I thank you much (as a subsr.) for *English* news, & for your *article* of yesterday.

Please send me, next Monday, by your son, 10 copies of the Times of Novr. 24th.

I sent you a letter which I should like for you to insert. Please let me have the *printed* one back again.

If you look into the *Advertiser* of 22nd.—you will see a letter from Wakelin which is one of the *best* I have seen from a Wellington man: do read it—his 1–14 reasons do him honour, & would bear republishing. They express my thoughts—if not my words.—

Also, see Otago Daily Times of Novr. 16⁴⁰⁴—which contain MacAndrew’s Resolutions for *their* Provl. Council—if these are carried *there*, then the Colony may begin to look-out.

You might write an excellent article on the Govr. *withholding his assent* from the H. Bay Represent. Act. I believe every session (since McL.) our (*their*) Acts have been thus treated.

Yours &c

(in haste)

Wm. Colenso.

402 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

403 ATL Ms-copy-micro-485 Reel 1.

404 This is in the *ODT* of 16 November 1865, dating this letter.

1866 February 10: to Hector⁴⁰⁵

Napier, Feby. 10/66

My dear Sir

Yours of 14 Jany. (from Oruru) only reached me 2 days back. I had previously received yours from Bay of Islands (written about Xmas.)—and *I much regret* I had not known of your *N.* movement: as I could have pointed out to you some marked (& easily found) localities, where plants peculiarly *N.* are found—and of which specimens are desired—but you may have found them:—besides, a few geologl. remarks on things formerly noticed. I wish I had got your 1st. letter from the *N.* *earlier*—as, then, I could have replied with some chance of finding you still there.

The “Manawau” (? *Manaoa*—as I once wrote it,) is (I suppose) the *true* *Dacryd. Col.* I found it near Whangaruru in 1840,—1; I quote a portion of what I then wrote about it (as pubd. by Sir W. Hooker in the “Lond. Jl. Botany” for 1842, p.301.)— “The king of the whole lot is my new Pine from the high hills near the E. coast. For many years I had heard of this tree from the aborig., but could never obtain a sp.... They said it never rotted; and they reserved it (when detected) to hold the remains of a deceased chief, &c. — The tree is about 50 feet high, and 2½ in diamr. In appearance it somewhat resembles the *Kahikatea* (*Dacryd. excelsum*) and I venture to suppose that it may constitute a new & connecting genus between *Phyllocladus* and *Dacrydium*: this however you will ascertain.... I send also a spn. of the wood. The bark on the trunk is deciduous, but not like that of the *Totara* which is fibrous.” And in Sir W’s. “*Icones Plantarum*”, part XI., Jany. 1843, is a plate (no. DXLVIII) and description.

I know that *Dr. H.*, (“Manual”)—speaks of my finding it at Taupo (Tongariro &c)—but *I* have ever ventured to believe the “Taupo” plant to be a different sp.—so, I would also say respecting your plant from Otago—ditto of Menzies from Dusky Bay—ditto of Haast & others, Canterbury:—and now, your *not* recognizing as identical, the *N.* with your *S.* plant confirms my suspicion. I am glad you found *Colensoa*—an excessively local plant; Cunningham, & myself (some 5 years after him) only found it near the Whangaroa. I wish you had got *good* sps.—and *seeds*, or a *living root*, I had long intended to get from the *N.*

If I decipher correctly your concluding sentence— “Have you ever been North of the Great Sandhill district?” I must answer “*Yes*”. I travelled from Hokianga (mouth) to Cape M.V.D.—by Coast: thence back to “*abreast*” of Mt. Camel (*W. Coast*) thence *across* to Ohora, Rangaunu, thence Kaitaia—Whangaroa, &c. &c.

There are several *choice* things in the *N. Dist.*—among which are, a *Drosera*, *Calorophus*, *Fagus*, *Lycopodium*, *beyond Kaitaia*; a *Cassytha* & *Todea*, near Mt. Camel, a peculiar *Veronica* at Cape M.V.D.,—an *Asplenium* on the Coast,—a *Laurus*, or *Nesodaphne* (which I still believe to be distinct) in the woods—leaves much larger than *N.* *Tawa*—& glaucous underneath, & back very black. &c, &c.—

But all these are from memory—after 23 years of absence!

405 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

I hope you will have found some *dozens* of good *new things* in Botany: leaving out what *you* are *sure* to find in stones, &c.—

I exceedingly regret to find, from Wgn. Papers, that a serious robbery has taken place at the Museum, in which I fear yourself & *Mantell* are great losers: such conduct is *doubly* bad.—

I have heard nothing from Dunedin: are they getting on with the “Essays” at all! I have lately had a long letter from Dr Hooker, who enquires eagerly after the “Essays” and—who is well again. You will be glad to hear the *kumara* roots I sent him,—while at Wgn.,—reached “in splendid condition”. The boxes of *Crypts*. had also been just received.—

Let me hear from you, as to your discoveries &c &c—when you may have time.—

Believe me

Yours very sincerely
Wm. Colenso.

Date? to McLean⁴⁰⁶

Sunday Eveg.
31st

My dear Mr McLean,

I wrote to you on the 25th. Per “Whanganui” Str., which letter I suppose you have received,—I think I wrote to you *feelingly*.

I have now, with some difficulty, concluded the enclosed on the same subject. I hope you may not be displeased at my taking your question in the *official* way, and so writing to you now *officially*. Please let Mr. Ormond see the letter, and, if *agreeable* to you, could you not well lay it on the table of the House,—or get it printed as a Paper for the Members? If you should agree to my Proposal—I shall have to write to you again shortly.

I am my dear Mr McLean
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

Date? to McLean⁴⁰⁷

Monday mornng.

His Honor
D. McLean, Esq
&c &c &c

My dear Sir

I called & waited a while on Friday, but Wm. Morris was so outrageous that I left.—I again looked in on Saturday, but you were busy (as usual). I think I have now called about 8 times—6, before you went S.—

I wish to see you as early as convenient on *one* matter—and now this week will be holiday. If you could fix any hour I

would suit your leisure—whether at office or at your private residence.

I have said, I wish to see you early on *one* matter—I have also others to talk about, but these can stand over.

I am
My dear Sir
Yours truly
Wm Colenso.

Date? to McLean⁴⁰⁸

Tuesday
30th

His Honor
the Superintendent
&c &c

Dear Sir

I regret to have to inform you, that Pat. Flanagan yesterday, I being absent, brought a load of coal to my house across your field. I feel particularly annoyed at it, as I had not only (yesterday morning) agreed to pay him extra for coming up by Dr. Hitchings—but had sent my own man to repair the ruts where worn by the water from the late rains.—

I trust such shall not happen again.—

I am Dear Sir
Yours truly
Wm Colenso.

1866 March 6: to Eccles⁴⁰⁹

Napier,
March 6 1866

Dr. Eccles,
Hon. Secy.,
Dunedin Exhibition.

My dear Sir

Before I left Wellington in November last, I understand from our good friend Dr. Hector, that you were pretty far advanced in printing your Exhibition essays. Dr. Hector being now away to the N., precludes my asking him, how such are getting on? I therefore trouble you, my dear Sir, with this note. The fact is, I have had repeated friendly enquiries from several quarters respecting these essays,—or (more strictly speaking,) the *two* which I contributed: may I ask, whether they are printed?

If the *Botanical* one is completed I would thank you to forward a copy each to Dr. Hooker at Kew, and also to Dr. Seeman, London (addresses below). I find, by last Mail from England, that there is to be an “International Horticultural Exhibition & Botanical Congress” on a large scale to be held in London in May next,—to which I have been specially invited to contribute a Paper, but there is no

406 ATL Object #1008419 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

407 ATL Object #1018963 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

408 ATL Object #1018984 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

409 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000147/001/0120

time;—a copy however of our Botanical Essay might not be wholly unacceptable, and if sent by *this Mail* will arrive just in time. In my letter to the Honorary Secretary of the Congress, I have mentioned my writing to *you* to forward him a Copy of the Dunedin Exhibition essay on the Botany of N.Z. (N. Island).—

Pray my dear Sir, freely excuse my troubling you, and
Believe me
Very faithfully yours
Wm. Colenso.

P.S. I hope Dr. Hector fully informed you as to the extra no. of copies of each essay I had requested to be supplied with.
W.C.

Dr. J.D. Hooker,
Director Royal Bot. Gardens,
Kew, London.

Dr. Berthold Seeman,
Hon. Secy. to Bot. Congress,
57, Windsor Road,
London N.

1866 March 26: to the Native Minister⁴¹⁰

Napier, 26th March, 1866

SIR,—The Government having appointed me to prepare for publication a Maori-English Lexicon (in conformity with a resolution of the House of Representatives), I have the honor to request you to invite the kind assistance those officers of the Government who may be acquainted with the Maori language or who are visiting Maori districts, in order to the more perfect as well as to the more speedy completion of the said work.

You will find, Sir, on referring to correspondence which has taken place between the Government and myself on this subject—(particularly to my letter to the Hon. the Colonial Secretary, of 17th December, 1863, and also to a subsequent letter to the Hon. the Native Minister, dated 5th July, 1865⁴¹¹)—that such valuable cooperation has been always by me considered so necessary to the better and early accomplishment of the Lexicon.

Such efficient aid may be rendered many ways by those gentlemen, particularly by their forwarding to me—

1. Any memoranda (however small or rough) which they may have already made of any local or strange Maori words or phrases, or of any peculiar local usage of common words.
2. Or of any songs, proverbs, sayings or recitations: especially those that are old, local, or little known, or which may contain strange words or phrases (such as can be very well written by any intelligent Native).
3. By sending me from time to time, any words or expressions which may appear to them to be local or

strange, or peculiar use among the Natives of their respective districts.

4. By pointing out to me those Maoris of their districts who they consider to be well qualified to become correspondents to assist me in my linguistic inquiries.

5. And by stirring up and encouraging those Maoris to reply fully and promptly to all such inquiries when made by me.

As it is my intention in the prosecution of this work hereafter to visit some of the less known Maori districts, those officers may also have it in their power still further to aid me in my inquiries, should I visit any district in which they may be resident or with which they may be connected.

And, as a copious and complete Maori-English and English-Maori Lexicon is believed to be a work of very great utility to both races in the Colony, as well as of the highest importance to the scholar and philologist,—and as the want of such a work has long been felt,—it is confidently hoped that every possible assistance will be readily afforded by all who may have it in their power to aid in this truly National undertaking.

I may also state, Sir, that it is purposed when the Lexicon is published, to give due individual acknowledgement to all who should have assisted in its preparation.

I have, &c.
W. COLENSO.

The Hon. the Native Minister, Wellington.

1866 June 12: to Hector⁴¹²

Napier,
Tuesday night
(xii p.m.)
June 12, 1866.

My dear Sir

I cannot allow this Mail to leave without sending you a line—now that I know you are again at Wellington. I had intended to write to you this day, ere this hour, but I have spent an agreeable afternoon, with Messrs. Woodward & Knight, & so have put off till *last* moment.—

I only knew of your return to Wellington from Dr. Eccles last week!—I had thought you were still *busy* at Auckland.—

I do not think I am in your debt, for letter-writing, and, if you have *any* spare time, I should much like to know of your Botanical discoveries in the North.—

I suppose you received my last—and you will have heard, that I shall *not* have the pleasure of seeing you, & your Museum, (I fear I calculated too strongly on my doing so when last at Wellington,) this year—at “the gathering of the clans”—i.e. the Gen. Assy.—

I informed Dr. Eccles, that I had the *Ms.* of the Essay on “Maori Races” *here*—having brought it away from Wellington with my numerous and heterogenous Parly. &

⁴¹⁰ Published in the *NZ Gazette*, April 1866. The Minister for Native Affairs was AH Russell.

⁴¹¹ Maori documents of this period were destroyed in a fire.

⁴¹² Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

other Papers! Shall I send it to you by Post, directly; or, will it do when Ormond leaves for Genl. Assy.?—

I have had very nice Letters from Dr. Eccles.—I hope the Essay on *Maori Races* will soon be printed. I wish, greatly, it were in the hands of several whom *we* know.

I am very hard at work on my *elementary* Books, and have little of *grace* (entre nous) to look for from Col. Russell. I would that Mantell were still in office! Pray remember me *most kindly* to him.—

I have a *long* letter from Dr Hooker by last Mail—he says—“our plant of *Senecio rotundifolius* has just died, I am sorry to say. Do send me some seeds by Post.”—This is a Southland, or Otago plant, can you do any thing for him—and *Kew*?

My dear Sir, do write a *line*, at convenience,—and believe me,

Yours truly

Wm. Colenso.

P.S. I fully expected you would return by *E. Coast and Napier* & I got out & ready many things Bot. & Geolog. for you to see.—My *thumb* is quite done up.

1866 June 27: to Hector⁴¹³

Napier June 27
1866

My dear Sir

I received your note of the 15th. inst., and thank you for it. Marvelling at your not having earlier recd. mine sent to you at “the Bay”. And, also, at your not noticing my main question in my last relative to the Mss. which I had brought from Wgn. Now however that *you* are (justly) entitled to receive packages per Post *free*—I send you the said Mss. by this Mail, & not by our Mr. Ormond, [who is no greater friend of mine now than he was last year: alas! for politics]. As I said before to you (I think) or perhaps Dr. Eccles—I scarcely know how this Mss. came to be packed up by me—save, that it—with many other *similar sized* packages, (specimens, & Parly. Papers,) were all cleared out together, & sent to Lyon’s to be packed with some Books & papers of mine. I did not even find it out here for some time after my return—and then I *fully* expected *you* to return to Wgn. by this Coast:—but enough of this.—

I wonder whether it will ever be published? — — — — —

However the 2 main subjects of my present note,—are,—1. Can you *frank* packages per Mail to England? I wish to send some roots (*Caladium*) to Hooker for Kew by next Mail—and I shall forward them hence to you—so far, I know your “jurisdiction” extends. Gisborne kindly franked the last for me from Wgn. to Dr. H. and those roots then sent “arrived in splendid condition” so that, if you *cannot*, G. can, and I have *no doubt* will.

2. I am now sending by this Mail my first 2 elementary English Maori Books to Col. Russell—(contg. about 220

pps. Mss.). I need not say to you, I think,—I would that Mantell were Nat. Minister, or Dr. Shortland, or even Mr. Weld: I have had several letters from Col. R.—all of a severe *martinet* style, which I *don’t like*, and which cannot be productive of good.—I see that M. is (rightly) Member of the Leg. C.—(I am glad he is, and D. too,) and I wish you to ask him, *to seek to see those Mss. of mine now sent*—I think he can do this very well, from his having been N. Minister, and from our having corresponded (officially) largely about the work. I may also tell you, that Col. R. & myself do not speak to each other—ever since the Waitangi affair here, (which M. understands,)—though I believe, the fault as to silence *is his own*.—His last offl. letter to me (written *after receipt of mine*, which shewed him how things were, and how my engaging in Public duties, and in, & for, N.Z. exhibition, had thrown me back, & how I would try hard & get these 2 parts (now sent) ready by 30th. June.)—informed me—he *would* have all by 30th. June, he would give no longer time, &c, &c. (He might as well have asked for Jupiter’s satellites.) In doing what I have (especially *in the copying plainly for press*) I have burned a good deal of midnight oil!—but the great difficulty with me in *plain* writing is, the loss of my thumb—all being done w. my fingers.

Perhaps you, or M. might mention to Sir George of the Mss. being sent to Wgn.—and Sir G. might wish to see it. All I want is *fair play*,—& not to be left *altogether* to Col. R. (who knows nothing of Maori) & to the clerks in his Depart.—

With you, I regret my not visiting Wgn. at this time—I confess, I did *not* expect it last year, although a little, very little reflection would have served to shew, the hopelessness of my contest in such a small Province as this with its Superintt. Had I known such would have been the case, I should have troubled you much more in your *Sanctum sanctum*.

Excuse this, written in my rough way.—I have lots of letters, &c. to answer—having set aside my own private work &c for those Mss.

We have had a little rain this morning, the first for many months! Therm 62°! this mg. Bar., last week 30⁵/₁₀ths. most unusual weather.—A *very warm* wind yesterday from NW., our warm quarter.—I long to see you & to hear your account of *your N. travels* &c., in which I am greatly interested. Believe me

Ever truly yours

W. Colenso.

P.S.—I may also add, that Col. R. said, if such & such were not done, he would not recommend any appropriation for the Lexicon.!!!

You can, if you think well of it—shew this scratch to Mr. Mantell.

1866 July 13: to Hector⁴¹⁴

Napier July 13/66

My dear Sir

I have recently received a letter from a Botanical Correspondent at Auckland, in which he says,—

“Can you recommend me to a likely purchaser of my Collection of *British* plants? It comprises specimens of about 1400 forms of Phænogams, Filices, &c. and about 340 Mosses. The Flowg. Plants & Ferns unmounted, arranged between sheets of demy sized (18 x 11) paper: the Mosses in part neatly mounted on small sheets & part in envelopes, all correctly named, localized. &c. and could be mounted to order. It is really a good Collection, & I am thoroughly sorry, to be obliged to offer it for sale.”—

There is no one *here* to whom I could even mention the subject! And I have thought—you *may* be able to give a better answer, & so I have written to you. Please mention the matter to Dr. Knight in particular:—although Dr. Knight may have the British Mosses.—

We had rain on the 11th. for the first time—for many a long day—(I had nearly said, from *before* I left you at Wgn!) and again yesterday—nice good rain, the trees & plants of all kinds were jubilant & thankful.

I fear that the *Caladium* roots are much too big, and they are beginning to grow—shoot—But I will examine them again tomorrow;—and if fit, will forward some.

We had a slight shock of an earthq. yesterday mg., near 8 o'clock; only a gentle rouser—but with preceding *rumble*.

We know nothing of your stirring times—as yet:—only we have just received a Copy of the Governor's speech.—

Hoping you are quite well

I am My dear Sir

Yours truly
W. Colenso.

P.S. I know nothing *personally* of the person who is “obliged” to sell his Herbarium—but I have ever entertained a very high opinion of him—for probity, &c.—from the general tenor of the numerous letters I have received from him. W.C.

1866 July 30: to Hector⁴¹⁵

Napier July 30/66

My dear Sir

Many thanks for your kind note of the 18th. By this Mail I send you 2 boxes of Roots (*Caladium* and *Batatas*?) for Dr. Hooker, which please frank & forward.—I gave up the idea of sending the *Caladium*, as it was beginning to sprout—but I have selected, &c, &c, and they *may* get home living,—or, *some* of them. If you would like a few roots—or Sir George—I could send you some; let me know.—I am right glad you have a *plant* of *Senecio rotundif.* for Dr. Hooker.

414 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

415 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033

You had not previously informed me of it.—(I should like to have a *leaf*.) I am writing to Auckland, to ask about price, &c., of British Herbarium, & will let you know, when I get a reply.

The English Maori Elementary Books (Ms.) *were sent to Col. Russell*” Rolleston acknowledged *receipt* of them, in the Col's. absence.

I look upon it as a great — something — that those Essays have not been published. I should have thought, that the first one,—or ones,—printed should have been sold immedy.,—as you say “as independent pamphlets”, or Essays,—and so have made some small return. I am glad you have written about them, and I hope they (or some of them) will be forthcoming shortly.—For many reasons I wished my *Maori* one to be “out”—I have repeatedly promised Dr Hooker, & others, at home, a Copy & now Dr. H. says (speaking of Crawford—Malay linguist)—that “I had better make haste, as he is 86” &c &c—Is *that* Essay printed? and if so, could I get *one* Copy for Crawford?—On second thoughts, I suppose it is not yet, as Mr. Thomson (your Otago surveyor) also wrote to me about Crawford & his wish to see it, and he is on the spot.

I hope you are well, I often think of you & Wgn. A smart-*ish* shock of earthq. last evening at X min past 8, with its usual precursor rumble—coming from your direction. Believe me

Very truly yours
Wm. Colenso.

1866 August 15: to Hector⁴¹⁶Napier Augt. 15th. 1866

My dear Sir

By this Mail I have written to Col. Russell what I hope will be a final reply to his unpleasant letter. I have even gone so far as to tell him rather than have any more such letters I would repay the whole of the advances I have received during two and a half years.

I thought it proper to let you know this, as from many remarks which I have from time to time made to you I cannot conceal that this has mainly arisen through my helping the Dunedin Exhibition by which I lost so much time—had Mr Weld and Mr Mantell remained in Office this state of things would never have come to pass. Mr Fox, Mr Weld and Mr Mantell ever behaved to me in this matter as honourable men. I still think that seeing so many of the Royal Comms. are either Members of the House or holding high Provl. situations this might still be stayed—for in order to raise this sum if I have to repay it I must sell some property as I have no spare cash.

I tell you all this my dear Sir before any final action shall be taken in this matter—lest on hearing of such you might afterwards blame me for not having informed you in time.

I cannot write myself owing to a severe whitlow on the front of the forefinger of my right hand—which has given me awful pain for the last ten days—but which has been

416 reference: this letter is not written in Colenso's hand, but is signed – very shakily – by him.

lanced—I have not yet had a reply from Auckland. I hope you are well & enjoying yourself.

I am
My dear Sir
W. Colenso.

1866 September 4: to Hector⁴¹⁷

Napier
Sept. 4 1866

My dear Sir

Enclosed I send you part of a letter I have lately recd. From Mr. Thomas Kirk of Auckland, the owner of the Brit. Plants I wrote to you about.—You will see what he says: please *return me his letter*, my hand will not allow of my transcribing: I write this in pain & w. difficulty.

Last mo. *While in great agony*, I got a friend to write to you a note, which I dictated: it was written in a hurry, as well as pain, & I scarcely know what I said, but I hope nothing wrong.

My hand, as you may see, is still of *little* use: my forefinger is rigid, &c.—and I may never have the use of it again. If so, this will necessarily cause an entire revolution in all my plans. I hope you are well. I have suffered a great deal but am now free from much pain. Believe me,
Ever yours truly

W. Colenso.

1866 October 9: to McLean⁴¹⁸

Tuesday mg. Oct. 9th. 1866

His Honor, D. McLean Esq.
&c. &c. &c.

My dear Sir,

Thinking over the present state of affairs (Hauhaus and settlers) it has occurred to me—to offer you my personal services to go and see these unhappy people—this morning, if you approve of it. To try to bring them to a better state of mind—or, at all events, to know their wants, and (if possible) their intentions—before proceeding to the last resource.

I suppose you know well the old Native Custom (which these half-wild peoples no doubt still hold) or in such matters to treat with “Chiefs”—or those whom they consider to be such. I will call on you at your office at x a.m.

I am,
My dr Sir,
Yours truly,
W. Colenso

417 Museum of New Zealand Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000198/001/0033
418 ATL Object #1013623 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

1867⁴¹⁹ March 18: to Grey⁴²⁰

Napier, March 18th

Dear Sir George Grey

The letter accompanying this has been delayed here—nearly a month! For, on my going to the P. Off. in Feby., I casually heard from Mr. Henry Russell & others that you were daily expected here, & at that very time were supposed to be on your way: this is the reason.

Two steamers arriving yesterday from Auckland without you (and two others leaving *for* Auckland to day)—I now forward it.

Sincerely hoping that your delay in visiting Napier has not been caused by illness.

I am (in haste)
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

1867 March 19: to McLean⁴²¹

Tuesday
March 19/67

My Dear Sir

I called at your office this morning, hoping to see you—I wished just to tell you (in confidence) what I heard from Tareha on Saturday last.—

I fell in with him at the Spit—on my way to Petane to vote for Parsons.—I asked him when the *hui* was to take place at the Wairoa, & if he & other Heretaunga Chiefs were going? He said, He supposed they should go *with* you—but that they would rather be *specialy* invited by the Wairoa folks—adding, “Kei te mohio ano koe ki a matou tikanga.”—

Of course I don’t know when you may be going thither, but it does seem to me (if time would now permit) that it might be advisable to bring this so-called *special* invitation about.—

There *appears* to be some amount of dissatisfaction about Tareha; & I don’t think he would have spoken so very freely had he not just had a glass somewhere.

Pray excuse this: it may be wholly unimportant.

I am
my dear Sir
Yours truly
Wm Colenso.

419 No year is noted, but it must be 1867.
420 Auckland Council Libraries GLNZ C28.2 (Grey New Zealand letters)
421 ATL Object #1009275 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

1867 June 21: to von Haast⁴²²Napier,
June 21, 1867.Dr. Julius Haast,
&c &c &c
Canterbury.

Dear Dr. Haast,

Your friendly & frank note of 10th. May I had the pleasure of receiving about the end of that month, and should have answered by the last Mail S., had I not been very unwell—scarcely able to read a line, or to do any thing,—and now that I am a little better I cannot delay any longer, although I feel shaky—unequal to the task.

1. With reference to Dr. Hochstetter's work on N.Z.—I hope your own many interesting discoveries and also Dr. Hector's will either be added, or will quickly follow as a fitting sequel. Please secure me a copy for which I shall immediately send a Draft when I know the amount.

2. Darwin's *Ms.* (enclosed in yours). I greatly wish I had this earlier, but I will do my best to answer it, though *not immediately*. You speak of a Botanl. essay of mine which you had read in *Ms.*, (that, I know, has been printed,)—but what I valued more was my *brochure* on the Maories, (also written for the N.Z. Exhibn. Commissioners,) but which I find, from a note just to hand from Dr. Eccles, has *not yet* been printed!! This, although much too hastily written, in Jany. '65, (I having only been allowed 6 weeks for its completion,) contains what would interest Darwin,—and indeed contains answers to a few of his queries. If you are writing to Darwin, you can tell him,—that I will do my best (*con amore*), and write to him some time this year 1867.⁴²³ He will, I think, recollect me, as I saw him in 1835, when he was in N.Z. with Fitzroy: besides he knows of me from my good old friend Dr. Hooker.

I should tell you, that by this Mail I intend writing to Dr. Hector (with whom, I find from Dr. Eccles, the printing of this essay, &c, &c, now rests,—and from whom I have also just heard,) once more to urge on him the speedy printing of that essay.—If you have any great influence with him,—or with any of those Gentlemen of your large Province about leaving you for the Genl. Assembly,—*do use it: (entre nous,* I have had my thoughts, that my essay on the Maories has been delayed from its possibly having been declared *heterodox!*)—At all events, whether in *Ms.* or in Print, I should greatly like for you, & Dr. Hochstetter and Darwin to see it, small & hastily written though it be.

3. Your request for N.Id. N.Z. plants I would most gladly comply with—but I have so often been applied to that I have now but a *scanty* Herbarium left, still I will bear your request in mind, and will hope (and really wish) to help you by-and-bye; as I intend travelling again in the interior this approaching summer. But I find time very precious, particularly since I undertook this heavy (unassisted) task of the Maori & English Lexicon.—

I thank you much dear Dr. Haast for your very kind expressions and Invitations. I may *next* year visit your part of N.Z. I must some time see the Maories of your neighbourhood, and also those farther S. And with every good wish for your success in all your scientific

undertakings—in all which I feel deeply interested—
I am, dear Dr. Haast,
Yours very truly
Wm. Colenso.

P.S. I have just received the 2nd. part of Hooker's N.Z. Flora, and am disappointed—Large collections of the smaller Cryptos. I had sent him during the last 3 years are unnoticed. W.C.

21st. June
eveningDr. Julius von Haast,
F.G.S., F.L.S.,
&c &c &c

Dear Dr. Haast

Allow me to request your acceptance of two little scientific works of mine (herewith sent) long ago published. Not that they are *now* of any value, but merely to shew some of our A. B. C,—rude & early attempts.

I regret to say that mine on the "*Moa*" (published earlier) is *wholly out of print*, or I should have much pleasure in sending you a copy.

Believe me
Ever your truly
Wm. Colenso.

1867 June 26: to Hector⁴²⁴

Napier, June 26, 1867.

My dear Sir,

I feel much obliged to you for your kind remembrance of the 18th. inst.—it seems to take one back to old times! You express a hope that "I may be able to drop you a line"—and you may see that I again gladly hasten to do so.

Of course I had heard through the Public Prints, of your long absence & journey & privations—and, I fear, sufferings from a *dislocated* shoulder &c, &c,—and if I had known your exact whereabouts I should have written to you. I am truly glad you have returned to Wellgn.—"*come home*" again—& hope you have secured lots of specimens. My neighbor here, Mr. McLean, had kindly lent me your 1st. Report on the Coal Deposits, in which I felt much interested. I have even been a heretic towards the so-called orthodox origin (*sic*) of Coal,—and think (empirically?) that the very occasional presence of veg. remains prove (to me, at least,) the very opposite x x x. I would you had told me something of what you have found in Botany—of *sp. nov.*—during your long absence in those unknown regions—but of all this I hope to hear anon.—

I have just read a copy of the 2nd. part of Dr. Hooker's Flora Nov. Z. (HandBk., I mean,) and confess my disappointment—although I have not yet gone deeply into it. I had collected—largely & diligently—of the *smaller* Cryptos., etc., during the last 4, 5, years, and sent them, but *none* are noticed therein. I have however received from Dr.

422 ATL MS-papers-0037-046.

423 No letter from Colenso to Darwin has survived.

424 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000147/001/0402

Hooker a kind of synopsis of many of them, written by Leighton (of Shrewsbury), just sufficient to show several of them to be new—some to N.Z.—some to science,—a few of the latter have been lately named by Nylander. In many instances, however, Leighton has merely given the *genus*—which I knew before.

I am glad to find from yourself & from Dr. Eccles, that he sent you my note of enquiry about the essay on the Maoris: but, I fear, you are mistaken in supposing it to have been printed, as Dr. E. says (to me) it is *not*. (Several are, as I find from MacLean.) If you have the means and if it is worthy—or, if it is to be printed at all, pray do get it done.

It is so long since I last heard from, or wrote to, you, that I scarcely know exactly when it was. I think it was during the last Session & not far from this time. I know I was then suffering from a bad hand, which, after many weeks of misery, ended in total loss of right forefinger (ankylosis) now rigid. This threw me out considerably in all my little works and plans. I had to learn to write *sans* forefinger, as well as thumb. And lately again I have not been very well—but hope to be better ere long.—

I have been working *hard* at Lexicon, and I find it harder work *every way* than I had conceived it to be: still I *will* (D.V.) accomplish it. [*Entre nous*: I have had more or less of difficulty with the “*Department*” about it:—difficulty in getting the salary (£100., net, per ann.)—which however I eventually got up to Decr. last: difficulty in pleasing, &c., &c., so that I have lately been *told off*., that no further vote will be taken until the Govt. is assured of its *substantial* progress (!) and this the *first year*!! This I have officially welcomed—only, I have said, let my examiner be some one who is a fair judge of *brain* work, and neither a pol. nor ecclesl. foe. It may be better—*if I cannot please the ever-changing powers*, to have the Govt. aid withdrawn; but I shall strive hard to please, as I really wish to do the Work, and I cannot well do it without the allowance. As early as ’63, I saw & pointed out, it would not be well to have it under a “*Department*”. Can you *quietly* help me in any way in this matter? now that the Assembly is about to meet—*i.e.* if help should be needed.]⁴²⁵

I am thinking of visiting Wellington in the spring, & may, *during the Session*, if I can have free admission to the Genl. Assembly Library. I think such was the rule, or privilege, formerly at Auckland to ex-members of the Ho. of Reps. (ask Domett).—Perhaps you would not object to asking Major Campbell some day when convenient,—whether such is the rule, or allowed, now. Please also remember me most kindly to him.—But I should seek it both as an ex-m., and as a person employed on a Literary Work for the Govt. under a resolution of the House. It would suit me better to be at Wellington *during* the Session, as then some stranger natives may be also drawn to the Capital, of whom I could make many enquiries. If I visit you I shall expect to regularly ransack your museum—being free from *political* Chains: as I scarcely saw anything last time.

Dr. Eccles is on some Botanical work—but he has not told me clearly what.

I send (to you) a packet of seeds for Kew, pray frank & forward it for me. By Papers per last Eng. Mail (*Suez*) I find Dr. Hooker has published a paper in the “Popular Science

Review,” on “*The struggle for existence amongst plants*,” particularly noticing our N.Z. Flora:—have you seen it?—

Tell Gisborne, not to forget to forward me my 4 Copies of the 2nd. Part of HandBook: be sure to give him my best respects.—

Remember me also very kindly to Mantell—I have to thank him (or you) for copies of Indices to Part I of HandBook—Maori & Lat.—which were really wanted & are very useful. I hope he likes his seat at the City *Board*! albeit tough joints & short commons! Always glad to hear from you. Believe me, my dear Sir, ever very truly yours

Wm. Colenso

Slight earthq. this evening: Bar. 30.45 4 p.m.

1867 July 27: to Hector⁴²⁶

Napier July 27 1867

My Dear Sir

Since my last hence to you, I have received 2 letters from you—one, of 1st. inst., with *six* copies of my Botanical Essay in sheets—for which welcome sight I thank you much. But, please, inform me, when you next write—whether *I am to expect any more copies*,—as, until I know, I cannot give away one. I ask this, because you do not tell me any thing about it in your letter: you say, indeed, “you had recommended that a certain number should be circulated without delay, & the remainder reserved until the rest of the essays are printed, when they will be issued in one volume.”—But, to whom? Dr. Eccles, in an official letter of May 15/66, says—“Dr. Hector did not mention that you wished more than 50 copies of ea. of your essays, *to which you* (in common with each of the essayists) *are entitled*—of his own essay.”—

I also wish very much to get copies of *all* the other essays when printed, particularly of Munro’s. Please, my dear Sir, remember this.

Then I have also yours of the 23rd. inst., for which I am very much obliged, and I am sure Dr. Hooker will be to you for the seeds so kindly forwarded—especially if he gets them still possessing vitality.—

I hope I have not given you too much additional trouble in teasing you about my missing sheets of *Ms.* (Lexicon). It is most mysterious, to me,—what has become of it. *Nolus volens* I must go in for 2 days real search over *all* my papers (Mss. printed & blank)—and, then, if I find it not, I must e’en set to again on *that* part. Don’t, pray, trouble the Nat. Dept., about it.

You tell me, that the Indices (Maori & Latin) to the Flora, I received, were “only *very rough proofs*.” of course I could not know this, as *no* letter came with them, & besides they (4 copies) were cut & trimmed to suit, enclosed in an envelope & franked from the *Secy*’s. off.—so that I did not know that they came from *you*, rather from *Mantell*. You say “You are going to republish the Maori Index to the

425 This paragraph has PRIVATE written across it.

426 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000147/001/0426

Flora,” & ask for my contribution. This I shall *gladly* give: but, I confess, I dislike a heap of crude names & remarks from Settlers every where—even to women—ignorant of Maori, & who may have received their so-called information from Maories just as ignorant. For, in this respect, the *present* generation of Maories is far inferior to the past & passing ones. I do not like to correct others’ errors in Maori names—I would rather expunge them altogether. I notice not a few names & remarks of this kind in Hooker’s *recent* vol., which I would were not there. But as your Printing Office must be very busy just now (in fact, I do not understand how you are to get the essays printed until the Assembly is prorogued,) I suppose you will not be able to republish your Index for some time. Be this as it may, *I shall most willingly help you in it*. Let me know what you wish me to do.

I am *much interested* in your *Book* debates in the House. Can you send me a sp. of *Hymenophyllum unilaterale*? If 2, then one of the large, & one of the small vars.

Believe me, ever,

My dear Sir

Yours truly

W. Colenso.

1867 July 27: to von Haast⁴²⁷

Napier, July 27 1867.

Dr. Julius Haast,
etc., etc., etc.,
ChristChurch.

My dear Sir

Yours of the 13th. is to hand, and I lose no time in replying, and in sending you with much pleasure by this Mail, an English republication of my monograph on the *Moa* (originally published in the Tasmanian Journal). I would prefer your seeing the Tasmanian printed one, as that is a little fuller—but as my *only* copy is bound up in a *thick* vol. I cannot well send it. However, in this republication (what I may call) the popular part only has been left out, (in order to compress it,) and also the plates (2), which were *very poorly done*, as, in those days, there was no Lithog. printer in Tasmania!! nothing has been added.—It was republished in England by Sir W.J. Hooker (*old* “Lond. Journal of Botany.” vol. 3. p. 3, &c.,) and by Profr. Owen, in the “Annals of Natl. History,” (now sent,)—& repeatedly and most honorably quoted & mentioned by Dr. Mantell (V.President of Geological Socy. London)—*our* Mantell’s Father,—in the Journals of the Geological Society vols. 4 & 6, for 1848, & 1850, (which Journals I both suppose & *hope* you have, as they also contain a great deal about Mantell’s Fossil & Geological discoveries in your Island & neighbourhood, as well as much about the *Moa*, with many diagrams & plates;)—and also in his subsequent Work—on the “Fossils of the British Museum” (Bohn’s edition, 1851,) pp. 93, 94, &c. I mention these works, as, if you have *not* got them, you should certainly see them before you conclude your Paper on the *Moa* & its geological age, &c, &c.—Of course you have a copy of *Owen’s* Work on the *Moa*: mine is still with Dr. Hector.

En passant—I would beg to call your attention to what Dr. Mantell says of my little early attempt, (in “Quarterly Journal Geological Society,” vol. 4. p235,)—He says: “I would remark that Mr. Colenso who was the *first* observer that investigated the nature of the fossil remains with due care & the requisite scientific knowledge, (having determined the Struthious affinities of the birds to which the bones belonged, & pointed out their remarkable characters, ere any intelligence could have reached him of the result of Prof. Owen’s examination of the specimens transmitted to this country,) has given, in his masterly paper before quoted, very cogent reasons for the belief that none of the true Moas exist, though it is probable the last of the race were exterminated by the early inhabitants of these islands.”—

I do this, because I have thought I have had but *scant* justice done me here (in N.Z.) in not a few scientific matters,—while at home (England) and on the Continent (Paris, Cherbourg, Gottingen, &c,) I have been most honorably dealt with.—

I shall look forward to your forthcoming work on the *Dinornis* with much pleasure, and shall receive a copy from you of that, or of any other of your scientific works, with very many thanks. I am rejoiced to hear of your great good fortune in securing such valuable specimens of the *Dinornis* (sp.) which you are now engaged in articulating. Such must prove a great acquisition to your Canterbury Museum,—& some day I hope to see them & you.

I *fully sympathize* with you in the non-publication of your Geological essay by the Commissioners. I have lately received printed copies (6) of my Botanical one from Dr. Hector; and I also find from him that mine on the *Maories* is at last in printing! While I regret it did not come out when written, (Feb./65) I regret much more that I was *obliged* to write it so hurriedly; still I may go in for a 2nd. edition *with additions*, if *permitted* by Messieurs the Commissioners. I thank you much for your very kind interest—as shewn in your writing to Dr. Hector about it.

Dr. Hector tells me, he is going to *distribute* copies of the Printed essays so, of course, *you* will get one of mine from him, otherwise I would send you one of the few I have: I am now writing for more copies.

I am glad to hear Dr. Hochstetter’s Work is far advanced. I may tell you that on the arrival of the Novara Expedition in the Auckland waters, I commenced and partly wrote, a rather long letter to Dr. Hochstetter (as I had *personally* known so many of our early scientific visitors, Continental & English,)—but when I found he had remained behind in N.Z. I did not go on with it, thinking he might visit Hawke’s Bay.

I see from Dr. Hooker’s Hand Book, he is a Member of the “Philosophical Institute of Canterbury,”—I, here, was not aware of such a Society: what are the Members doing? Is any thing being published by them?

Allow me to ask,—Did you ever hear any thing of a Countryman of yours named Schmidt,—who was here (with me) in Jany. 1854, & who was shortly afterwards in Canterbury & Otago? I heard, he perished miserably in exploring—but? I lent him 12 of my most valued (& curious) pencil sketches—which he was to have returned from Wellington.—I would give £1. each, to recover them, if existing—

Believe me,
My dear Dr Haast
Yours truly
Wm. Colenso.

P.S. You can return the *Ms.* now sent at your convenience when you have quite done with it. W.C.

Could you send me a specimen of *Hymenophyllum unilaterale*, and of *Hymenophyllum ciliatus* (lately found by Travers) W.C.

1867 August 30: to Hector⁴²⁸

Napier Augt. 30/67

My dear Sir

Your two notes of the 1st. and the 23rd. arrived together—or within 1 hour of each other! The 1st. came over-land at a slow rate, & was also detained, with Coast Mail, a week, owing to flood in Waipawa river.

I can now merely reply in a hurried way having much to answer, &c, by this outgoing Mail.

First, then,—*I am glad* you thought of putting my name down towards the cabinet for Hooker: I leave to your discretion as to sum £1., £2., or £3.3.0 (as you say you have 30 or 40 subsrs.)—and *let me know when you next write* how much I owe you, and I will send the amount.

Many thanks for the 20 addl. Copies of essay: I think you said, you were about to distribute some Copies, I should like to send one to Travers, to Mantell, to the Governor, & to one or two others (& to Mr Ackland)—but I hesitate doing so as I think you would have sent them a copy ea.—am I right?

When you have done with Owen's work on the *Moa*, I will thank you to return it—*no hurry*, but I have been asked to give a lecture of some kind or other—and I may go in for this—or it may form a *dish* among others.

Thanks for the seeds of Tussae grass—which I shall distribute by pinches to a few careful individuals here. I am sorry you gave Rolleston the trouble of hunting for what could not be found in his precincts—of course the *fault is mine*. Now, then, I too must hunt—I have, of & on, done so: it is a most mysterious disappearance—but I must find it, if above ground & here.—

Domett's note Cong. Library &c.—being nothing in favour (for which, through not hearing, I was partly prepared,) of course I don't visit Wellington just now. Is the Library open during the recess?

The good P. Master General has stopped my priv. of franking, &c,—which the Governor granted me last year (before Mr Hall came into office)—I knew nothing of it till last week!—I am writing to Mr Richmond about it.—

I fully intended to write to Hooker by this Mail but cannot. It is plaguy our having so little mail Commn. w. Wellington.

When you have spare time (if you ever have any) let me have a line.

Believe me
Yours faithfully
Wm. Colenso.

Could you send (by Ormond) any scraps of the common *matrices* of gold, or of the *N.Z.* overlying or underlying Rocks of same. W.C.

Would you kindly ask Mantell to secure & send me copies of all *printed* Maori petitions?

1867 November 8: to McLean⁴²⁹

My dear Sir

I have your note of this morning, enquiring if I knew any remedy for the Piripiri.—I am sorry to say that I do not: I only wish I did. I have long been of opinion that this plant was likely to give you (Flock-owners) much more trouble & loss than the thistle,—about which so much has been said.—

One thing is certain—the Piripiri is prodigiously spreading and is a *Maori* & likes (or lives in) all soils & situations. I was astonished—in 1863, in going to Wairoa—to see so much of it at *Petane* valley, Tangoio, & *Mohaka*.—all, I think, owing to the sheep carrying the seeds onto bare, or burnt off, land.—

I had a plant or two in this paddock,—where the hay is now cutting,—and I worked hard to destroy it, for several years: I think I have prevailed,—but, if so, it was only after a hard & long fight.—I know it springs from portions of old roots—something like sorrel, & dock; and if rooted up & thrown down carelessly, and wet weather comes on, it will take root again.—

I think you will have to come to paring it off, with a sharp spade, or good hoe, every season *before it seeds*, and burning it; an active man could destroy a good deal in a day where the ground is open, as I have known *one* plant to spread out as large as a dining table, & it is soon turned over. I should think—if turned up in early or midsummer, & then the spots sown with white clover in early autumn, (especially if there is any lime in the soil, as there is here on Scinde Island,) that it could be eradicated.—

I hope your *present* loss of wool, through shearing early, will not occur again—as I suppose your *full* quantity would be on their backs by the early season of next year.—

I am sorry my dear Sir that I can not say anything better respecting the extirpation of this enemy.

And am
Yours very truly
Wm Colenso

Novr. 8/67

1867 November 14: to von Haast⁴³⁰

Napier, November, 14th
1867.

Dr. Julius Haast, F.G.S.,
&c &c &c
Provl. Geologist,
Canterbury.

My dear Sir

I cannot tell how sufficiently to thank you for all your kind favours. Yours of the 16th. Octr. I received only a few days ago, (We only get steamers from Wellington thrice a month,) with enclosed synopsis of 6 Lectures. I hope you intend to have them printed, if so, get me put down for ½ dozen copies. I had previously received your letter of July 27 (which crossed, at sea, mine to you of same date), and your very valuable Reports, with maps, Diagrams, and Alpine Views, all which has exceedingly interested me—although I have now but *little* time to call my own,—as I dig hard daily by sunlight & candle light at my *opus magnum*—Lexicon: (would that in so doing I could please! nevertheless, I try to do my best, and am working *con amore*.)

I am glad to find Dr. Hector remembered you with a copy of my little Botanical *brochure*: I would the one on the *Maories* had also been printed, but I hear *it is to be*. Dr. Hector was here last week and is gone to Taupo and Northwards Gold-hunting, &c. He only spent a *short* hour with me, his stay in Town being very brief, although he had come overland from Wellington. I hope you will make a *complete* work of the *Moa*:—how I shall feast myself when I get that grand dish of your cooking! The Photographs will do much for you. I anticipate great things, as I see you are deservedly fortunate, working hard,—and have many great advantages in your noble province. I hope you have some real lovers of Science among you;—this way I fear they are nearly as scarce as the *Moa*.—

When you receive your parcel of Hochstetter's work, remember me with a Copy—and be sure to let me know *all* expenses—I will remit immediately in one sum for all.—

I note you say—“I see your great Maori Lexicon goes on famously.” Ah! Have you read what is recommended in the “Hansard”? (last number, or next to it). That some of the House tried hard to stop it, by knocking off the vote—although Mr. Stafford nobly took my part.—One said, it was anything but fortunate it had been given to *me*, who could not do it: that he had seen my writings for Dunedin Exhibition, which were, alas! such things, &c.—And now I am officially informed, that my work is to be inspected and reported on, as to its substantial progress (as if it were a House or a Barn), and that great doubts exist as to any vote being taken for it after this financial year.—Scant courtesy, I think: yet so it is: Heigho! “*Geduld überwindet alles*”⁴³¹—as they say in your Father-land.

I have received Copies of Part II of Dr. Hooker's Hand-Book, and am much disappointed, as I sent him some hundreds of specimens of microscopical Crypts., during the last 3–4 years, and at which I worked very hard, *none* are inserted. Depend on it we shall find plenty more *species novæ* yet.

430 ATL MS-papers-0037-046.
431 Patience overcomes all.

I have more than once thought whether you had not some intelligent Native with whom I might occasionally correspond *in re Lexicon*. Since you have mentioned Rev. Mr. Stack's name, perhaps you would not object asking him, if he knows of any one, and could give his name, address, &c. I have several at the N.—

I am writing largely by this Mail to Dr. Hooker & others, so you must please excuse brevity.

Ever my Dear Sir
Yours most sincerely
Wm. Colenso.

1867 December 2: to McLean⁴³²

Monday mg.
Decembr 2nd. 1867

His Honor D. McLean Esq

My dear Sir,

As you very kindly said you would shew Mr. Stafford the propriety of re-granting me the privilege of franking and receiving *on Service*, I have thought it best to send you a copy of my Official about it to Mr. Richmond.—

I have lately had a letter from the N. asking for *stamps*, in order to forward me papers,—and I have also lately had a letter from Hokianga, which, being insufficiently stamped, I had to pay not only the amount wanting—but also the *fine*, so that I really am in a *fix*—for if I send stamps (6d. of course) they may or may not be properly used,—and if *too much*, then there is a loss—if *too little*, then I am fined additional—& all out of my pocket.

Besides, I take 5 copies of the “*Waka Maori*,” to send to those very men who are helping me,—which I have *now* to put stamps on!—in addition to subscription.

I should think a *word* from you to Mr. Stafford would be sufficient (I have been thinking often of writing to him myself, and would have done so had I not written to Mr. Richmond)—as Mr. Stafford originally Gazetted it, very early in '66, before that Mr. Richmond or Mr. Hall took office.—⁴³³

I return your Papers with many thanks for your kindness. Now that you are about to lose the Judge, and other Visitors, if you would fix some day for an hour's talk on public matters I will thank you

And am,
My dear Sir,
Yours truly,
W. Colenso.

432 ATL Object #1016880 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

433 Colenso was granted the privilege of free franking on at least three occasions—initially in 1866, and twice in 1885, while he worked on the Māori Lexicon (Robertson GI 2009. *The Rev. W. Colenso to frank free*.... Postal History Society of NZ Inc, Newmarket).

1867 December 6: to Grey⁴³⁴Napier
Decr. 6, 1867.

To His Excellency

Sir George Grey, KCB.
&c &c &c
Kawau, N.Z.

Dear Sir George Grey

For some time past we—Napier folk—have been daily on the lookout, hoping to see *your* Steamer coming into our Bay, but on Saturday evening last a Steamer was seen steering N. also under sail, which is believed to be yours. Such being the case I fear we shall not now have the pleasure of seeing you *here*, if (as we hear) your intention is to leave for England in January via Panama. I should much like to see Your Excellency again in Napier,—and, above all, I regret deeply your having to leave at such a critical period in our history as the arrival of H.R.H. the Duke of Edinburgh among us. I would, dear Sir George Grey, that (*at least*) you had been requested to remain to receive the coming Prince, & to accompany him to visit some of the principal Chiefs and Tribes of New Zealanders, as from such a course much good might reasonably be expected. I confess I feel some difficulty in attempting to convey to your Excellency a scanty outline of my thoughts on this subject.

I did hope to see you at Wellington in the past spring, and had I gained what I through Dr. Hector sought—permission to visit the Genl. Assembly Library *during the Session*—I should have done so. (I have since however obtained permission to use it during the *recess*.) I wished to talk with you about the Maori-Eng. Lexicon on which I am engaged; and could I have supposed you would so very shortly and suddenly leave us, I should ere this have done so. I will not however trouble you now, and by letter too, as your time must be very precious indeed. If, however, you have any Maori Mss. lying *together*, (which you do not intend to use shortly nor to take with you,) and you would kindly grant me the loan of them during your absence, you would in so doing both confer a favour and help in a great work:—you may rely on my taking the utmost care of them.—And as I remember all your kind expressions respecting it, and believe that you would like to see it finished, I would just ask you dear Sir George Grey, (if I *may* do so—under all the circumstances,) to intimate such a desire to Mr. Stafford, or to some one of the Ministry,—as I think such would be beneficial both to the Work & to myself.⁴³⁵ For I have recently received an Official letter from Mr. Rolleston—in which I am informed, “that some doubt exists of the continuation of the Vote beyond the present financial year”. I hope, however, to be able to complete it whether I continue to have Government *pecuniary* assistance or not:—hitherto, I am sorry to say, I have had *no other*; even the privilege of franking and receiving on P.S. (which your Excellency had kindly granted to me last year) has been taken from me,—so that many of my Mss.,

&c., now out among several distant Natives cannot readily be returned.—

I have lately opened a box of Maori Mss.—vocabularies, travelling Journals, and my old Ms. Dictionaries of the N. dialects (Ngapuhi and Rarawa,)—which I had packed up in 1842–3! and am almost stunned with the overpowering world of thoughts—rushing & sweeping over the N.Z. history of the last 30–35 years—which these silent yet powerful witnesses evoke!

I am daily working hard at the Lexn. *con amore*, and I find it *hard* work, harder than I anticipated. I hope, however, to accomplish it; and that you, dear Sir George Grey—whether among us or in England,—will, some 4 or 5 years hence, hear of the same.

It has just occurred to me to ask you to say a word to Mr. Williamson, Superintendent, (as I suppose you will be sure to see *him* again,) in favour of his helping me—I mean, his encouraging Paul Tuhaere, the Chief in his Executive, (to whom I am about to write,)—or any other person, to do so. I trust in mentioning this I am not exceeding.—

And—as I cannot now reasonably expect to have the privilege or either writing to you again, or seeing you, ere you leave N. Zealand and us,—permit me, dear Sir George Grey, heartily to wish you a safe and prosperous voyage back to the Old Country,—and (if such be your intention) an equally safe & prosperous return to us at no very distant period:—I venture to think and say, N. Zealand ought not to lose you.—

I am,
dear Sir George Grey,
with every respect,
Yours very truly
Wm. Colenso.

P.S. As I believed you would be very sure to receive a copy of my little *brochure* on the Botany of the N. Island from Dr. Hector, I did not send you one of the *very few* copies lately to hand. I would that my *second*, on the *Maories*, had been printed, as I should have much liked for *you* to have seen what I have said respecting them. W.C.

Date? to McLean⁴³⁶

Saturday

My Dear Sir

I feel greatly indebted to you for your so very kindly remembering me,—both while at Wellington, and now here in sending me your Southern Papers.—

I felt sorry you did *not see* Sir George Grey: I fear you will not now do so, unless you take a 2nd. voyage.—

I return with thanks your “Otago Witness” kindly lent.

I regret that I have no fruit in my place *called* a garden: I *had* a decent show—but, alas! the sun & early strong winds have done for them. I am

Yours very truly
W. Colenso.

434 Auckland Council Libraries GLNZ C28.3 (Grey New Zealand letters).

435 Grey replied (from Kawau, 15 February 1868), “I will write to Mr. Stafford expressing a strong wish to have the pleasure of seeing the Maori-English Lexicon completed. Such a work will hereafter be of the greatest possible historical interest. I will also speak to Mr. Williamson....”

436 ATL MS-Papers-0032-0222.

Date? to McLean⁴³⁷P. Council Library
1 pm. 29thHon. D. McLean
&c &c &c

My dear Sir

On second thoughts I have run in here to write you this,—*first* to apologise for *so* intruding on you this morning; I did not know you were there, but having called *twice* at your office *here*, & not finding you, and hearing, I might possibly learn somewhat of your hour of being here from your Secy. there—I went over. I should have called yesterday—but on coming here I saw such a shoal of natives' horses outside, that I thought you were engaged, & would not.—

I fear I shall not be able to come down again this aftn. I feel so very Rheumatic, this damp day: so, pray do not expect me at 3 p.m.

I should like to see you again, if possible, before you leave—provided you should be disengaged; and I will endeavour to call early at your office some *fine* day. I wish to speak to you both on Public & Private matters—but neither of very great importance.—

I am
Very truly yours
W. Colenso

Date? to McLean⁴³⁸

Saturday morning

My Dear Sir

I regret I was not at home when your note of Tuesday last arrived.—I went, *early* that morning to Waipukurau by the "Coach," & returned last evening: the weather, as you say, is truly delightful: I enjoyed the ride down yesterday very much.

I now send you Ramsay's Book—over which (although you have already read it) I expect you will have a few additional merry moments.—I can fancy *a certain party* wishing him & his Book at the bottom of the Red Sea;—and viewing him with a kind of "righteous horror."

Many thanks for the Papers: I sat up last night to read *Kemphorne's letter*—although I do not greatly like the man.—

Hoping you are well. Believe me
My dear sir
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

P.S. I brought a "kit" of dried Inanga (Maori dried, but done *cleanly* & for me)—*would you like a few handfuls?* I always liked this fish, fresh or dried.—If you like them, *pray do let me know.*—

My hand is very shaky today—partly, I suppose, owing to the shaking & jolting of yesterday.— W.C.

437 ATL Object #1007050 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

438 ATL Object #1007395 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

Kemphorne's letter was published in 4 parts in late December 1867 and early January 1868.

Date? to McLean⁴³⁹

Mondy Evng.

My dear Mr McLean

I entirely forgot that I am engaged to dine with Col. Wyatt & his Men on Thursday evening—having refused all his many invitations since I arrived; until I should be at liberty will you kindly allow of this excuse? and, if you have not otherwise arranged, allow me to see you on Wednesday or Friday: and do you choose, and please let me know.

Ever my dr Sir
truly yours
Wm Colenso.

1868? to McLean⁴⁴⁰

Wednesdy. mg. (8 o'clock rather cold).

My Dear Sir,

With *many thanks* I return your N. Papers: I feel very much obliged to you for your so kindly remembering me with them.—

Could you conveniently fix some day this week for my seeing you in your office on our Business? (Friday would suit *me* well—but I will make any day suit.) I purpose going inland again! next week.—

And if you would read the Correspondence with Mr. Domett, concerning T. Sn. 400—also have some talk with Cr. Lds. Commissr., Mr. Weber and Mr. Wilson about the bit of land here on the brow (cut off from the end of the road, in '66)—it would help on matters, which should be settled.

In haste I am yrs. truly,
Wm. Colenso

1868 February 1: to McLean⁴⁴¹

Friday Mg.

My dear Sir

I am much obliged to you for Dr. Hector's Geogl. Report, it has interested me much,—I am sure I scarcely know how to thank you for your very kind remembrance of me.

I think you are "about right" (as the Americans say) in speaking of this being *our driest* season in H. Bay. More than once of late I have thought, whether the burning off all the rank indigenous herbage—and so much of small bush & forest—which once covered our ground and tended to keep the earth damp (and in many places *wet* all the summer through) has any thing to do with it—moisture below attracts moisture from above, & it is well known that trees & plants do so.—

439 ATL Object #1016298 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

440 ATL Object #1015252 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

441 ATL Object #1008457 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

Two things I heard of yesterday—that Sir G. Brown had arrived in Wellington—and that Dr. Selwyn had accepted Lichfield See.

I hope to send you a few Peaches with this—if the winds have spared any.

Could you fix some day next week when I could see you in your Office.—I have been long waiting, but without wishing to intrude, or to step in before another whose business may be more important; any day shall suit me. I am

My dear Sir
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

P.S. I don't think there can be much *real* analogy between our floods & droughts—and those of Australia; the difference of latitude, of size of countries, of interior (as far as is known) &c &c—would bar all such; still (as you observe) there is the *apparent* one. W.C.

Did you note in "Independent" of 4th. (which I saw at Spit.) how different they had the wind at Wellington on Sunday & Monday last? & while the Bar. there indicated a gale such fell not at Wgn.— W.C.

1868 April 24: to von Haast⁴⁴²

Napier April 24 1868

Dr. Julius Haast, F.G.S.,
&c &c &c
Ct.Church,
Canterbury, N.Z.

My Dear Sir

Two days ago I was much gratified with receipt of your favor of 10th. inst.—also of your photograph, so very kindly enclosed; I prize it and shall take great care of it. As you expressed a wish for mine, I enclose one—such as it is! (Done at Wellington, in '65, for General Assembly, in hurry on leaving, & in a gale of wind & rain.) I beg your acceptance of it, it is not so well done as yours.—

I have read your kind Letter twice; and, while I hasten to reply, I feel I cannot do so as *either* of us could wish. I have *not time now* for any extra writing: indeed, I have far too much writing to do, (my hand too being disabled), and I could never expect to get through but for something of a "stout heart & resolute will."—I dig at my Dicty. work daily: *to me*, it is much like what your Tunnel *was*,—or that of Mt. Denis,—but *every stroke* of the *little pick* did something towards its completion.—

I had hoped to have *seen* somewhat of your work on the Moa *by this*. I shall keep a look out for Dr. Hochstetter's Work.—

You remind me of "Darwin's queries." Ah! had my (unfortunate) essay on the Maories been printed, I should have answered them—in part at least—long ago (I wrote to my old friend Dr. Hooker some time ago, requesting him to tell Darwin what I was waiting for.) If that essay should *not* be printed *before* next meeting of Genl. Assembly, I shall give up all hopes of ever seeing it. Your own present

enquiry too—about the *ancient race* of this country—would also (*in part*) have been answered by that essay.—

—But your own question can not be answered *off hand*. You ask,— "Is there any *tradition* that *before* the Maories came to N.Z. *another people* inhabited the Islands?"—

1. What do you mean by "*tradition*"?
2. What by "*another people*"?
3. Did the (present) Maories *come* to N.Z.?
4. When?

—All this, and *much more* which these spirits evoke, I cannot answer now.—I will merely briefly say:—

1. There *were* Natives in N.Z. even according to their own "*tradition*" before they came.

2. I am *no believer* in such statements as, "the present race came here 4, or 500 years ago" (!!)—as related by Taylor, Buller, & others (*usque ad nauseam*)—by persons who have gulped down what the Maories of *today* have said, as *wholly* true—Baron Munchausen tales & all!!—and have never considered the subject. Perhaps I should not err in saying, that such consideration was *beyond their* powers; or any, indeed, of their class or standing in the Great School of Nature. They did not know how to separate the nucleus of Truth from its many enveloping cysts or layers of Myths:—or (to speak somewhat geologically,) how to get out the innermost fossil septarium from its many zones.—

Respecting the "Journal of Geologl. Society"—I regret you did not get the loan of it from Mr Mantell. It is vastly too much to have "*copied*" *here*, being (altogether in the different parts) about 50 pages, and containing besides several *interesting* geologl. Diagrams. Moreover there is also "Mantell's Fossils British Museum" (Bohn's edition), which is *still later*, and which contains additional N.Z. information concerning the Moa: *this too you should see*.—

[*Entre nous*: I don't think Prof. Owen and Dr. Mantell agreed very well: some old dispute I believe, so that, possibly, you would not get all of Dr. Mantell even from Owen's great work.]

Now I recollect that Dr Mantell's *first* memoir on the Moa, (August 1848,) was *republished* in N.Z., in the old Wellington "*Spectator*" Newspaper—very likely in the autumn of 1849; and as you may find an old file of that Paper in CtChurch, I direct your attention to it. I should think you could find *Bohn's vol.* at some one of your Libraries or Bookshops. *If not*, (both, I mean,) I shall be willing to *lend you* the vols. or parts (though I am *not now* privileged with franking per Mail,)—only—if you send for them—I shall expect to receive from you at the same time copies of your Moa photographs, *which I so much wish to see*, having never seen an entire skeleton of any of the species.—

I can say no more now. While I thank you for mentioning my request to Mr. Stack, I regret now that I had asked you to do so;—but, if I recollect aright, it was only to request him *to point out some intelligent Native* with whom I might correspond.

I notice the late Auckland Papers speak of "*Tin being now discovered* in the Thames" (!) I sent to Dunedin Exhibition a specimen of Tin obtained from the Thames in 1838!—which is also mentioned in the Offl. Catalogue.—

With every good wish,
I am, My dear Sir,
Yours truly
Wm. Colenso.

1868 late April:⁴⁴³ to McLean⁴⁴⁴

Wednesday Eveg.

His Honour
D. McLean Esq.

My dear Sir

I send you enclosed a note I this day received from Hokianga: if you have nothing later, or more authentic, from that quarter, it may interest you. The *former* part of the note is nothing.—

If you have Auckland *Herald* a s.t. of 22nd. or 23rd. I will thank you for a sight of them, when you may have done with them. Latimer is *gone* to England in “Maori”—left on *morning* of 22nd.—while “Ahuriri” (hence) with my letters to him, reached Auckland in the *afternoon* of that day: so he did *not* get them.—

The weather, &c. prevented my going inland yesterday—but I purpose going next Tuesday. Hoping you are quite well. I am

My dear Sir
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

Date? to McLean⁴⁴⁵

Saturday morning

His Honour
D. McLean Esq.

My dear Sir

I return your Papers, so very kindly lent me, with many thanks. I have read Fox’s long speech (which so reminds me of him, and of some of his sarcastic speeches in “the House”)—and think he is right in some parts of it, as to Natives’ Rights, &c.—

Have you seen T. Williams’ speech? If not I can lend you the “Evening Post,” which contains it. I think the whole trial should be printed in a pamphlet—I have not seen the evidence.

I am glad to find you liked the “Starling.” Did you ever read “Dean Ramsay’s Reminiscences of Scottish Life and Character”? If you have *not*—you will (I think) like it much. I have it & should be happy to send it to you.—

I am
My dear Sir
Yours truly
Wm Colenso.

Read Sewell’s letter on the Consolidated Loans, &c,—it is in the “Canterbury Times” of April 25—now returned. W.C.

Date? to McLean⁴⁴⁶

Tuesday Mg.

His Honour
D. McLean Esq.

My Dear Sir

I see (by Herald) you have called the meeting by IV tomorrow.—As I have *promised* our neighbour (Marshall) to be at his examinations &c. tomorrow, & which (I think) begins at 3—I shall not be able to attend.

Pray *so draw your address* as to obtain a large number of signatures. (In haste)

Yours truly
W. Colenso.

1868 June: to McLean⁴⁴⁷

June, 1868
Tuesday mg.

My Dear Sir,

I scarcely know how to thank you for all your kind remembrances of me with Newspapers—knowing too (as I do) how valuable your time is, and how much occupied of late—bearing in mind that *you take the field today!*—

I now return them with many thanks.—

I did greatly wish to see Dr. F’s. address; I knew you had *not* got it—ditto Athenæum: ditto Routledge and Kennedy:—somehow, *all* seem to have been neglected!

So, last evening, I went to Catchpool—from whom I got a file of “Independents”—and was just got deep into the Dr’s speech—when your kind missive arrived.—

I see he still harps upon his everlasting string of H. Bay interest £2500 per ann.—a nice picking (as things are!) for him: Dr. Fn. can speak feelingly as to “the act of spoliation” (*in re* Marlborough)—he seems to *forget* that *such* cuts *both* ways; and that we feel it in this—“interest”! When I was in the Ho. (I think in ’62) I had thought of bringing it before the Assembly (in some shape), of how much of *our* Duties were then—& for years—swallowed up by Wellington—and I should assuredly have done it but for Dr. Knight to whom I mentioned it and who recommended me to wait, as the Govt, knew of it, & intended doing something,—& that he would not lose sight of it &c. &c.

I am *right glad* Fitz. has done so much in England:—glad too, for Stafford’s sake (who has been sadly hounded of late,—the *old* story.)—I have little doubt but that what Stafford told the Nelson folks will prove true—in spite of all the N.Z. Press says.

If you have not read Rolleston’s speech (on being elected Suptdt.) do so;—ditto Stevens’ Letter on Finance; and “*Dunedin’s*” Jesuitical letter:—I hope this man will *never* come to Otago.

I see, you are to commence today, *without* your old aid-de-camp (Ormond)! You may say “There is precious little now

443 Latimer left for England on S.S. *Maori* 22 April 1868.

444 ATL Object #1027419 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

445 ATL Object #1007659 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

446 ATL Object #1002092 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

447 ATL Object #1017987 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

to fight about,” or,—well, I won’t trouble you with any more *stray* thoughts.

I much wished that Wilson had finished that Deed—(W’s office is just a little Chancery.) I have been to him 2 or 3 times, but don’t intend to go again until *Council is over*: leave it till then.

But do let *the other matter* (the 2 sections on inner harbour) be *settled* in your Ex. before you again break up: it has been left too long already.

Wishing you well through this mo. of June—and hoping your meeting will be productive of great good to our Prov. I am, my Dear Sir,

truly yours, W. Colenso.

Date? to McLean⁴⁴⁸

Tuesday morning

My dear Sir

I have to thank you for the Otago papers. I regret I have *not* a printed copy of my Essay on the Maories (I have often wished for one) I have written again & again about it, & the *last* I heard from Dr Hector—was, it is to be printed at Govt. Press—that was when you were at the Assembly.—

I send you your Essays you so very kindly lent me, and have to apologise for keeping them so long—they would have been returned shortly after I had them only you were away—and I had carefully put them aside.

The *burr* you speak of—I dislike much, & root it out—also the *lucerne* (which is too common here, although of great value in S. Australia as a *green crop*).

I hope you will enjoy your ride and am

My dear Sir

Yours truly

W. Colenso

P.S. I have sometimes thought that my Essay on the Maories is not *orthodox* enough—?

There were *no Otago Papers* in the large lot you sent me.—

1868 July? to McLean⁴⁴⁹

Tuesday noon

My Dear Sir

I return your Saturday Reviews with many thanks.—

Have you seen Major Richardson’s speech to the Electors of Clutha (Otago)? If not, it is *well worth your reading*: you will find it in Wellington Independent of July 2.

I am, Yours truly

W. Colenso.

I have *not* the paper (July 2) or I would gladly send it. W.C.

1868 July 18: to Hector⁴⁵⁰

Napier July 18, 1868.

My dear Sir

A short time ago I received a small packet of *N. Botanical* specimens from your Col. Museum, for which, I suppose, I am indebted to *you*. But whether collected by yourself or by Mr. Kirk, I know not, as no note came with them: they have however *gratified* me very much. I should have thanked you for them ere this, but I had also *previously* received a small packet of Plants from Mr. Kirk, on which he wished my opinion. And as I was about to go through them, I put off writing to you till I should have examined *both* lots,—which I have just completed doing.

I had however written a note to Mr. K. *before* I received his parcel of plants, (our communications crossed at sea.) which I had ventured on after reading in the “Weekly News” an interesting paper, entitled, “the Cruise of the Glance”. I informed him in my note, that his *Celmisia* from Manaiia, Malvaceous plant (“Hibiscus”) from near N. Cape, were both known before. I now feel doubly obliged to you for your timely remembrance, as the parcel from Mr. K. did *not* contain a sp. of the *Celmisia* nor of the “*Hibiscus*”, which above all others I wished to see.

Curiously enough I had sent *living* specimens of those two plants to Kew Gardens in 1842, in a plant Cabin by H.M.S.S. “Tortoise”. Of the Malvaceous plant I have now no doubt, although it was obtained from the Country between Cape Pocke and the Cavalles Islands,—while of the *Celmisia* I have scarcely any doubt, as I got my specimens and several living plants from a high & steep hill a little to the NW. of Mt. Manaiia, (over which the old Maori track formerly led into Parua Bay,) where the plant then grew plentifully but was not in flower. The Malvaceous plant too I never saw in flower of ft. (I had spoken of it as a *Sida*,)—but when I left my old garden at Paihia in 1843, the plant was thriving (so was the *Celmisia*), but the person who resided there after me cared *nothing* for plants or gardens.—

I fear, however, that my *living* plants forwarded to Kew of those 2 genera, perished on the passage. They were put in from the garden only the day before sending off the said plant Cabin, the “Tortoise” having suddenly made her appearance in the Bay of Islands from the Thames nearly a month before her time! Fortunately however, the *other* plants were all well rooted in their boxes.

At the same time I sent to Sir W. Hooker dried spns. of the *Celmisia*, (poor spns. with old scapes, much like this spn. you have sent me,) and, on my receiving that part of Dr. Hooker’s *Fl. N.Z.* which contained the *Compositae* and finding it was *not* there, I wrote to Dr. H., who, in reply, said, it had been overlooked, was since found, & would be afterwards noticed.—I mention this, as, from Mr. Kirk, I learn, it has been supposed to be *C. Munroi* (which it *may* be, but qu.,)—and *that species*, I note, has been made *since* the publication of the “*Flora*”.

The little *Pittosporum* (elegantissime!), “*P. Gilliesianum*” of Kirk, has given me no little work. (Mr. Kirk wished particularly to know about this plant.) I have examined it carefully (hunting up old descriptions by R. & A.

448 ATL Object #1011933 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.
449 ATL Object #1013258 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

450 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000147/002/0055

Cunningham of their small *N. Pittospora*.) and have been obliged (from Book descriptions) to conclude it to be *reflexum* of *R. C.* I have just written largely to Kirk about it, telling him so, and giving him my reasons. I fear he will be disappointed. It was however wholly *new* to me.—

The *Panax* from Whangaroa, said to be a “*new* sp.”, is surely *P. Lessonii*, or a var. of it;—the specimen however was an imperfect one.

The *little linear-leaved Shrub*, is one I know *well*! It caused me many a fruitless hunt year after yare to find it in fl. or ft. I have supposed it to be *Santalum Cunninghamii* in a *young* state, (not a var.,—although I believe there are vars. or even *species* of that genus in N.Z.,) be this as it may, I sent living plants to Kew in ’42.

Of the larger-leaved specimens of *Pittospora*, from Mt. Manaiia & from Whangaroa little can be said, until *flowering* specimens are obtained: that from Manaiia may be a *sp. nov.*—

The *Dacrydium* from Whangaroa has also caused me some consideration & search. It may be new, or rather, one of the *old* ones now first detected in fruit. I have ever believed that (at least) 2 species are included under *D. Colensoi*, of the Flora & Hd.Bk., (not of Sir W. Hooker’s *Icon. Plantm.*.) there may be as many as 3,—(i.e. *I. D. Colensoi* (vera) of the N., a middle sized tree,—tab.548, *Icon. Plantm.* II. *D. (Podocarpus?) biformis*, of Sir W.J.H., tab.544, *loc. cit.*, a small tree, 10–12 feet, of Ruahine, &c., which I never found in fruit, only *m. flowers*: III. The little lovely *erect* sp. of Rangipo (Tongariro), 1–2 ft. high, loaden with fruit:) all this I have long ago told the Hookers. Sir Wm’s drawing of *biformis* (sup.) accords closely with Kirk’s specimen bearing 2 kinds of leaves—the same indeed on the Ruahine plants. Its aggregated fruit brings it near to its closely allied congener the Tasmanian *D. Franklinii* (the celebrated Huon Pine), the foliage of which is also very near to *D. Colensoi* (vera). Sir W.J.H., in a note on *D. Franklinii* (“Lond. Jl. Bot.”, vol.IV. p.153,) says,—“*Dacrydium Colensoi*, to which *D. Franklinii* bears a considerable resemblance, produces also several terminal female flowers, but one only ever arrives at maturity”.—I hope however *good* spns, m. & f., of this *Dacryd.* have been forwarded to Dr. Hooker.

I did not intend to have said so much on these plants when I began.

I hope you are quite well, and doing well; it seems long since I last heard from you. I have received Hochstetter’s Eng. work, but have not yet found time to look into it.

Believe me,

My dear Sir

Yours truly

Wm. Colenso.

1868 July 31: to McLean⁴⁵¹

Private & Confidential

Napier
Friday 31st. July

Hon. D. McLean
&c &c &c

My Dear Sir

I just write you a message sent to me from Porokoro and the M. Chiefs—assembled at Pakowhai.—(After lamenting your absence & Mr Cooper’s and saying they had only 2 men left whom they could trust,!! Mr Locke & myself—they say)—brought by Te Awapuni,

“Haere, mea utu ki a Neho, kia puta te kupu ki nga pakeha,—e, *kaua e hikaka, kia tangata-maatuatia te Whakaaro.*”—They have fetched Porokoro from his place and will keep him at Pakowhai, as *they don’t like the aspect of things*; they fear any incursion from inland, now that the returned natives are made desperate. They also wish their own people back from Poverty—*do not like those Europeans* in command, &c &c.—

I have thought it to be my duty to write you these few words. I would you were here; perhaps had you been here things might have been managed better at Poverty. *I regret exceedingly* that the returned natives have been hunted. I think they might have been quietly managed.—But I fear it is too late now. Without very great care I foresee serious times—more for outlying settlers.

Volunteers—*such as one would wish*—are not to be had in sight of Auckld. gold diggings:—and unless the *Natives* have *full confidence in their leaders, they have no heart.*

There is much dissatisfaction among them I know,—the Europeans getting their land bit by bit for grog, &c. &c. *forced upon them—their seeking* to reduce the rents as agreed on by Lease—their mortgages—Bills of Sale, &c. &c., (as Hapuku’s and others)—Bp. Wms. building here & *leaving* his flock—the article which appeared in “Waka Maori” about lowering their rents—every thing tends to make them gloomy & sour. &c &c &c.—

Could you run up by Str. to P. Bay? *You* might do good.—

I have *hazarded* all I have scribbled—but I have done so, as if I were confidentially talking with you.—

Excuse the scrawl—done here (with people going in & out) to catch the mail.—

If I can be of any service you may depend upon me, although I fear that time is past.

I hear there is *news*, by steamer just in from Poverty—but I don’t know it yet.

Believe me

My dear Sir

Yours truly

Wm Colenso.

P.S. You are at liberty to tell *Mr. Stafford* any portion of this. W.C.

1868 September 14: to McLean⁴⁵²Napier, Monday night,
September 14/68.

My Dear Sir

A short time ago I heard from a friend at Wellington that my Essay on the Maories would not now be printed, "solely for lack of funds."—

This afternoon I wrote a note to Dr. Hector, asking him what would be the *expense* of printing it at *Govt. Press*—and, if he could get any help from Col. Govt.,—Otago Provl. Govt.,—Institute,—Governor, or Members of G. Assembly, towards it:—and, also, if he & his brother Commissioners (Dunedin Exhibition) would have any objection to return me the Mss. in order to *my* getting it printed *here*, at my expense—of course, being aided by subscribers: and I shall hope soon to get his reply.

Now it has occurred to me, that a few months ago you wrote me a note, asking for the loan of the same essay—and that possibly you might both *wish to aid the getting it published*—by speaking a few words to some of your Countrymen from *Otago* (for whom it was written), and also to any one else around you,—and be *well able* to do so: hence I have told you all this. I have *not* let Dr. H. know, that I am writing to you, or to any one else about it. I may add, that I gave Sir G. Grey my imperfect *Proof sheets* (on to 88 page) of the said essay—which, he said, he was very glad to get, and had long been looking out for.—You will recollect a *Maori Robinson Crusoe*, published some 20 years ago at Wellington:—have you got it here? if *not*, I will thank you to *borrow* it (for me) from some one of your Wellington friends: I much wish to see it, and I have tried almost every where *I could*: but you know *I have few* friends in the "Empire City."—From the fact of the said book having been printed at Wellington, there must be several copies among the "gude folk" there.

From the day's Auckland Paper, I see the Rarawa Native has been sentenced to Death—but he will *not* be hung *I know*, from what the Judge & Jury said: now if you have any influence with the *new* Governor—in Maori matters—do, my dear Sir, use it in this case. If he is sent to *penal servitude* depend upon it there will be a N. Maori row—I hope the Governor will get *good* counsel, & that he will *act* on it.

I was very glad to find you *fêted* Sir George at Wellington, and that *you* took a prominent part therein. It was quite by chance I fell in with him—at the Wharf—and I was glad I happened to be there—as (like w. Kg. Richard of old) "few cried God bless him."—You so *fêting* our old Govr. is the best bit of news I have heard for some time.—

I was not out all last week! Weather wet; *very* so for us, and it *still continues*. I went yesterday—& again today,—to see Carter, who has been very ill at the Club; confined a whole week and I knew nothing of it!—He is now better—but very weak. He told me, he was not able to write, Mrs. Carter is with him.

I hear, *you* have a *long* speech in the last "Hansard,"—that I hope to read tomorrow evening. Political news hence I must leave for others. Your place is looking very green: a new House is building on Sealey's Hill nearly in a line with Dinwiddie's from your verandah.

Hoping you are quite well &c &c I am

My dear Sir

Yours truly W. Colenso.

452 ATL Object #1008040 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

1868 September 14: to Hector⁴⁵³Napier Septemr. 14/68.

Dr. Hector,

Dear Sir,

In the past month I have been thinking of troubling you with a line (a *last* line, I may say,) concerning the unfortunate Essay: but I have hitherto put it off, thinking you were much too busy to be approached.—

But a short conversation I lately had here with Sir G. Grey—*en route* for Wellington—prompts me now to do so.—Besides, I have thought, that I should not allow the session to pass before writing to you, (if I wrote at all,)—as you have all your former Otago co-adjutors now with you.

I should tell you, that I heard from Wellington about 6 weeks ago,—that the Essay was not likely to be printed, "solely owing to want of funds."—

Assuming this to be the true position, I would now ask:—

1. What would be the expense of printing it at Govt. Press—say, per page, or per sheet,—1000 Copies?
2. In the event of such being done, would the Govt. aid, in any way; or the Provl. Govt. of Otago,—or the Governor,—or your Institute,—or the Members, G.A., generally?
3. or could subscribers' names be readily obtained—at once, and on the spot at your headquarters (now that the Houses are sitting), so as to *ensure* a lessening of printing expenses.
4. or have you (and your fellow Commissrs.) any objection to my getting it printed (say *here*) at my own expense, and, in my doing so, could I *depend* on any known help from any quarter, public or private.

(I would willingly subscribe 20 guineas towards its being printed at Govt. Press.—if only to enable me to fulfil the many promises I have made about it to those who were enquiring—one of whom, *Crawford*, I see, has lately died.)

Or could you point out any *better* way, than what I have touched on?

Could you write to me shortly in reply?—I wrote to you about 2 months ago, I suppose you received it.

I am

Dear Sir

Yours truly

W. Colenso.

P.S. I gave Sir G. Grey one of the *imperfect* Proof Copies of the Essay—which he seemed *very glad* to get, saying, he had been long looking-out for it,—but it only went to the 88 page. I have still 3 of such imperfect Proof sheet Copies by me,—have you any of its *later* sheets or pages by you? that you could send me. I ask because I recollect seeing a Proof Copy when at Wellington in '65, which was *complete*.

453 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000147/002/0073

1868 date? to McLean⁴⁵⁴

Friday Aftn.

His Honor

D. McLean, Esq.
&c &c &c

My Dear Sir

Many thanks for your kind note of this morning—you are no sooner back, than you are kindly thinking of your neighbour! I had heard of your having arrived, indeed I thought I made you out with my glass yesterday—I fear you must have had a rough passage, but it was well you were *not* out *last* night.

I thank you much for *Crusoe*, and will return it to you in a few days—so that you may return it to the library: I have long had the *P. Progress* (a *poor* translation)—I therefore return you the copy you sent.

I am indebted to you, my dear Sir, for all you have kindly done, or attempted, in way of Dictionary—“Essay”—&c &c. I am much gratified in finding that you had seen the *one* copy, and that you approved of it: I return Hector’s note (enclosed).

It was one thing, however, to have printed it as an Essay, (Hastily written—in “6 weeks,” all the time allowed me!)—and at *that time* too,—and now to print it among the more carefully written “Institute” Papers:—but better perhaps thus, than not at all: Sir G. Grey greatly wished for a copy.—

I know nothing of what you may have been doing at Wellington during the last fortnight—(indeed I know little of what is doing *here*, as I have not been in the town for more than a week)—as my papers thence have been very irregular, so, also, from Auckland.

I hope to do myself the pleasure of calling on you at your office in a few days—perhaps on Monday or Tuesday;—I hope you are quite well, and that you will continue so, as I am sure you will have “lots of calls”—at the same time you will *need* rest—after all your battlings, late sittings, and mental worry,—and if you do not secure it, you will find you are burning *both ends* of the candle.

I am truly glad you are returned to us.

I am
My dear Sir
Yours truly
Wm. Colenso.

P.S. I got a letter from Latimer last evening—he arrived in London Augt. 12—105 days passage,—of which, 48 (!) from Auckland to C. Horn.—

1868 October 15: to Hector⁴⁵⁵Napier,
October 15/68.

My Dear Sir

I have to thank you for yours of 17th. ult. (received here on 30th.)—and should have done so ere this, but for violent cold & irregularity (or paucity) of known Mail conveyance to Wellington.

As to the said “*Essay*”—

If thought worthy of a place in the 1st. vol. of your “Institute Transactions”—as you propose—I can have no objection. Only it is more of a sketch—outline—or pamphlet kind, than usually obtains in papers for such a volume. I trust you will be sure to *add* the short *P.S.* I wrote (of some 8–10 lines) to it, as, if more time had been allowed me, (or, if it were *now* to be done,) I should, on not a few heads, have written more fully and *decidedly*.—

Also, I should very much prefer the *omission* of “Esq” and “M.G.A.” (after my name) on title page.

And don’t forget me with a few (say 50) Copies *extra*—which I will pay for—or shall I write to the Govt. Printer about it?

You say—“If the Governor sanctions it you may purpose bringing out *all* the essays in the 1st. vol.”—Do you include those *already printed*? If so, my dear Sir, please let me know; as there are some 8–10 little errors in my ptd. Botl. one, which I have marked, & would send them to you.—also, in this case, to leave out “Esq” &c.—Besides it would *look* much better (if not really read clearer) if the several Botl. *genera* were put in lines.—(I will *clearly* point this out, when I hear from you, that it is your intention to print the whole of the said Essays.)

I know nothing of what has been doing with you (in the Houses) since Ormond’s return: I sincerely hope your “Vote” is secure. Surely little enough is done for *science* by our practical utilitarians. I know not how it may go with the *Dicty.* vote (whatever that may be). I had committed it to Ormond (who *has* returned) and to McLean (and he too is returning—for what I know now on his way)! Had I not done so I think I should have troubled Mantell or Domett. Did you see any of the official Letters I have been *obliged* to write about it? Ormond told me they (or some of them) were laid on the Table.—

You ask me, if I could send some Papers for your Institute? I don’t know what I might not be tempted to do if I were *free*, but as it is, alas! I am bound hard & fast in my *heavy* job:—which however I daily *augment*, & yet daily *lessen*.—

I have no doubt but that I shall be greatly pleased with your papers—when published: I *envy* Wellington on account of its Institute, Museum, Geolog. Corps, and Library. May she *know* her good day—Believe me

Very sincerely yours
W. Colenso.

1869 April? to McLean⁴⁵⁶

Friday eveng.

My Dear Sir,

Herewith I return your two Independents you kindly sent me with thanks. I think you may gather somewhat (*political*) from Fox's speech.—Should you note anything in your Otago papers *concerning Bp. Jenner*, I would thank you to allow me a sight when you may have quite done with them:—I expect there will be some warm work down there with his crosses & candlesticks!

I send you a few of our peaches, and beg you to accept the same—I would they were better.

What a blowing dirty day this has been! I pity the folks on the Flats. I have not been in Town for the week.

Hoping, you are well,
I am
my dear Sir,
Yours truly,
Wm. Colenso.

1869 July 1: to Hector⁴⁵⁷

Napier
July 1/69 (night)

My Dear Sir

Yours of 23rd. ult. is only *now* to hand: and though I can badly afford time, (being hard up, writing for English Mail,) must try to reply.

I cannot find any time at present to do any thing towards republishing that Essay in an *enlarged form*,—unless the Govt. would first consent to liberate me for a while, as I have an abiding recollection of being already unpleasantly taken to task by the Govt. (Col. Russell) for past loss of time (through writing those 2 Essays, & for Dr. H's. Hand Book)—which caused much Official Correspondence.—

I feel assured they would not (perhaps *could* not?) so relax, or liberate me for a while;—and I should not (*in these times*) willingly agree to stoppage of allowance. Last off. Letters (of 1868), Mr. Richmond's, were peremptory, that the Work *must* be ready by April 1/70—!!

Besides, I think (hurriedly) that a republishing of it in an *enlarged form* just now would scarcely be fair or Courteous to your Phil. Socy.

If, however, *you are willing* that it should be republished as *it is*, with the *Notes* & the *Table* added (which would make it more popular), & a few necessary slight corrections, I am quite agreeable, and would leave with you the making all needful arrangements with the Printer & Publisher.

I scribble this hastily to be in time for "Rangatira", which, I hear is to leave tomorrow.

May I ask—Do you send Copies of the "Transactions" to Sir G. Grey, Dr Hooker, Bp. of Lichfield, & Mr. Darwin?—perhaps you will kindly tell me when you next write.

I am

Yr. sincerely
Wm. Colenso.

1869 November 16: to Hector⁴⁵⁸

Napier
Novr. 16, 1869

My Dear Sir

Your kind note of 11th. I received yesterday. I had previously received your telegram—to which I should have replied in *like* manner if I had your privilege—or if it had required an immediate answer.—I cannot understand for the life of me how you can suppose *I* ever had the Mss.!! why, if I had had it *here*, of course the *Notes* (which I always wished to be printed) could *not* be printed! You will recollect that the Notes were *not* printed at Dunedin—merely the Essay. When in Wellington in '65, I read *your one complete* Proof for Press—but it had no notes,—and I am pretty sure that I must have then & there seen the ms. (of *Essay only* perhaps)—and returned it to you from Gen Assy. Liby. the Copies you sent me from Dunedin—some 6 or so, (stabbed through & tied with big cord) only went so far as 88 page, or thereabouts.—One of these I gave to Sir George on his leaving N.Z. for England.—

However, *I know nothing* of the unfort. Ms. and must now turn to & copy those notes—some of them I can do readily enough from Ms. notes of them (*rough*):—I only wish I had *not* promised them to Dr. Hooker: I have not time; & vastly too much daily & nightly writing &c &c.

I am glad to hear from you of your being so well employed: shall be very glad to *see* you here. Look out, if you have no *good* golden news to tell our "citizens" anent the Kaimanawa!—more anon.

No doubt I could get out something for your vol. if I had time at disposal:—but (*entre nous*) don't you think I ought *first* to be admitted a Member?—Have you forgotten what I said once before on this?

Could you get me another Copy of your 1st. vol.—or one cheap. I must tear up this one for Hooker, and I have already bought 4! & paid postage on 3 of them to England.

Am glad to hear that H. got his Cabinet,—that K. saw it (and him), and that H. was "proud of it".

Would you mind asking Mantell, if he has not some *stores* (however old) of Southern Island words (Maori)—and if he would let me have them? I have long been about writing to him. Excuse this scrawl and Believe me ever,

Yours very truly
W. Colenso

456 ATL Object #1006020 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

457 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa MU000147/002/0206

458 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa MU000147/002/0332.

1869 October 30: to Hector⁴⁵⁹Napier
October 30/69.

My Dear Sir

A few days ago I received a letter from Dr. Hooker, dated 6th Augt.—it was long in coming to Napier, through being taken on to Auckland in some Govt. letters, (as I suppose from its being franked thence by Governor's Priv. Secy.)—I got it by the merest chance (in going to post my letters for England) in time to reply to briefly by our outgoing Eng. Mail.

He had received the vol. of your Instit. Transns. which you (?) had sent him: had read the Paper on the Maories, which pleased him & sent it on to Prof. Huxley, and now they wish to reprint it in Engd., & have written for permission, &c.

In reply (as above), I consented,—adding my wish for the *Notes* to accompany it: & saying, *you* had them originally: and that I would lose no time in writing to you, &c. (which I now do, by *first* Steamer,) and would send them to England by next month's Mail.

May I request you, my dear Sir, to *try and hunt them up*, (they may have been left at Otago,) and let me have them for Dr. H. If, however, they are irretrievably lost: then let me know *early* this unwelcome information (say, within a week after receipt of this,—you can do it by telegram in half a doz. words,) and I will try hard & re-write them (by staying up a few nights) so as to be in time for our next outgoing Eng. Mail.—

I sent you a local Paper the other day, containing my Centenary attempt on behalf of Cook & his comrades—we kept no holiday!! being too ungrateful, or too Bæotian. They seemed to have managed better at Canterbury.

In writing to you of Dr. H. moves me to ask, Did he safely receive the Book-Case, or Side-Board, or whatever it was, you sent him: and was he (or they) pleased with our N.Z. woods displayed?

Hoping you are quite well. I am
Yours very truly
W. Colenso.

(if there), that you saw me so, I will thank you: I write in haste. Hope you are well.

Yours sincerely
W. Colenso

1870 May 26: to Hector⁴⁶¹Napier
May 26/70

My Dear Sir

I cannot allow another Str. to leave us for your City without thanking you for your especial kindness, in writing me your *esteemed note* from on board of your steamer—also for the vol. (II.) of "*Transactions*" recently to hand.—I have not yet found spare time to go regularly into this Book—(only to look into Mr. Potts' interesting Paper on our N.Z. Birds)—but intend to make it my fireside companion during our approaching long winter evenings: it appears to be more profusely adorned with illustrations than the last. I see Kirk has several papers which I cannot look into.

I hope you are well. I heard of your having again started from home—S. this time. If the St. Kilda goes to the Bounty Group—I hope you will send some one on whom you can *rely* by her, as I suppose you could not go yourself.

I regret to say that my hand has been very much affected for more than a month—so that I could scarcely write my name! It is again better now—“took a turn” towards good behaviour on Monday last, or I should not be able to scribble to you.

When it is outrageously out of order it sadly affects my mind (spite of all my “Philosophy”!)—and then that reacts, you know how—I sometimes think it must be an anomalous phase of gout—to which my father was a long martyr!—and which I had regularly some 25 years ago. But whether or not it is an ugly Visitor, and sadly puts me out in all my writing.

Believe me always
My Dear Sir
Sincerely yours
Wm. Colenso

1870 April 4: to Hector⁴⁶⁰Napier
April 4/70

My Dear Sir

I am just posting my official Letter to the Native Secretary—explanatory of delay in sending them copy of Maori Lex., owing to Rheumatism,—and in it I have ventured to say, several of their officials, *here*, visited me & saw me in my helpless state—also, “Dr.H. of Wellington”, so if you would kindly tell Cooper, or Gisborne, or McLean

1870 July 28: to McLean⁴⁶²Napier
July 28, 1870

Dear Mr. McLean

For the last 48 hours I have been considering whether I should write to His Excellency or to you,—and if to you, whether officially or non-officially,—and have concluded on the latter.

Knowing how very much you must have to do just now, I will be as brief as possible.

459 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000147/002/0339.

460 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000147/003/0077

461 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000147/003/0107
462 ATL Object #1013447 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

It is on the subject of the Maori Prisoners at Otago. In the "Otago Witness," of July 16, (which you may have seen) I find these words:—"Another of the Maori prisoners, Horopapera Hopu by name, died in the hospital on Sunday night. He was a sufferer from chronic asthma, which was the cause of his death. He was 25 years old. This is the *eighth* Maori prisoner who has succumbed to asthma."—In other Dunedin & Southern papers, (which you also may have seen,) I have also noticed it said, that the Maori Prisoners will all be *released* by Death before the end of their Sentence (3 years).—

And it is just because that I, too, both believe & fear this, that I now take upon myself to write to you.—

Were you not so very well acquainted with the real natural wants & ailments of the Maoris, I should consider it a duty to shew them to you; but, as it is, I am sure I need only to call your attention to what you must have frequently noticed in former years, when, like myself, often travelling and sojourning among them: *viz.* (1) that they could not stand exposure to cold or wet (like Europeans), even in this Northern Island, where the climate is so very much warmer, especially in the winter season, than the rigorous one of Otago Province: (2) that they never could long exist deprived of fire, even in summer, to which they are invariably accustomed from their infancy: (3) that "chronic asthma" is not a very common complaint among them (when living apart from Europeans), and even to those long afflicted with it, it rarely proves fatal—witness your old friend the aged Porokoru Mapu (who has been a sufferer from it ever since I knew him, in 1843,) old Rihara at Te Waipukurau, & Hoani Waikato: (4) that whenever the Maoris have been attacked with any disorder (real or fancied) and a few die, the remnant, giving way to their foolish belief, that they are doomed & will soon die too, fall off like sheep—and this would have a double effect upon them where they are, as they would be sure to be told that such was in the Papers.

In briefly writing on the rapid decrease of the Maoris, (in my Essay on the Maori Race, published by the Govt. in the 1st. vol. of "the Transactions of the N.Z. Institute,") I have therein stated, the exposure to wet, cold or damp, the loss of warmth, & the being subject to gloomy fear, as being among the chief causes.

Such being the case, (which I think *you* will readily allow,) may I not ask, If something cannot be speedily devised and done by the Government to save the lives of the remnant of the prisoners—even if it should amount to the early removal of them to warmer & more congenial quarters?

Prisoners at home, (of a much worse stamp & class than these unhappy men,) when it is shown to the authorities that their health is endangered by confinement, are often humanely removed to other places, and not unfrequently liberated.

I notice too, that Kepa has asked for their liberation (which, if I mistake not, he also did in very plain terms on his first interview with the Hon. Mr. Fox at Whanganui last Summer,)—that Wi Tako and others have sent in to the House of Representatives a certain petition as to the one sidedness of our laws, being wholly in our favour & against the Maoris,—and that similar language has been used by Tareha and Mete Kingi both in & out of the House; while here (as doubtless you know) Karaitiana & other Chiefs are loud in expressing similar opinions.

I recollect telling Mr. Ormond, that I considered your liberation of those Maori prisoners at Auckland last Summer, as a very excellent measure, both humane & *diplomatic*.—Although not a few (who know not the Maori) ventured to disapprove of your doing so.

I could say more, but I think I need not to you, and my hand is again very unsteady today. But this I will venture to add, in conclusion,—that I think you may very well and very easily arrange with Kepa & others as to the safe custody of those unhappy fellows.

Believing that you, who know me well, will not consider this note as intrusive, and apologizing for troubling you,

I am
 dear Mr. McLean,
 Yours truly
 Wm Colenso.

1870 October 24: to Mantell⁴⁶³

Napier
 October 24/70

My dear Sir

I have been solicited by a settler here named Doyle to write to you, to ask, if you will sell him 3 sections you have in the Ouepoto gulley (nos. 11, 14, & 15) and on the hill at the S.W. end of this (Scinde) Island. He says, he will give you a fair price for them—and, that he wrote to you some time ago—but got no answer—I believe this was his 2nd time of writing to you about them: his reasons for applying to *me*, are, my having sold to him my section there, also another which I had close by to a neighbour—both being soldiers of 65, & my being formerly so well acquainted with that Regt. & its Colonel—Wyatt.

I may add that he gave me for my *corner front* section, £25.—& his neighbour gave me for one near by (no. 17) £12.—and I assure you I was only *too glad* to sell them at that price (I would have sold for less) as that part of our "city" (!) is the very fag end, and must be (I fear) for years to come.—

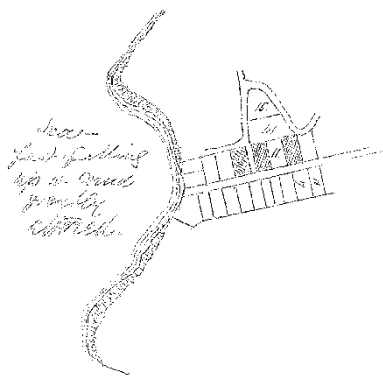
He mentioned (though not perhaps for me to *write* to you) that he would give you £75. for the 3 sections—all I can say is, if they were mine I would sell them for that sum. *The front section* (no. 11) is a nice little one (he has one on each side) the 2 back ones are wholly hill, & much cut up by the Soldiers in pitting—encamping &c.—

I hope you are well: I agreed in much you said in *L.C.* I would write more but for my hand which is very nearly done up altogether for writing, and the Dictionary, I must leave off wholly for some time!

Bel. me yours very sincy,
 W. Colenso.

I enclose a rough tracing for your guidance.

N.B. Should you require a Land Agent *here*—at any time—I can recommend Mr. Andrew Luff—who has done work for me—& may do so again. W.C.



Doyle's sections are marked diagonally.

Yours—are 11, 14, 15.—

I sold, 16, 17, & 9: have no more now in the said gulley.

There are only 3 residents in all that end of Island!

W.C.

1870 November 9: to Mantell⁴⁶⁴

Napier
Novr. 9/70

W.B.D. Mantell Esq.
&c &c
Wellington.

My dear Sir

You Telm. of 31st. Octr. was duly recd. since wh. Doyle has seen me *twice*—he sticks to me like the Old Man of the Sea to Sinbad! and although I only write w. diffy. (no longer *currente calamo*!⁴⁶⁵) I have given way & write once more. He wishes you to put a fair price on your goods—as he thinks he has made a fair offer. *Could you not do so?* as you say “If D. offers a fair price I will sell.”

It is possible he would go to a few pounds more: he spoke of offering another £5.—

But if you will set your price, or put them in the hands of some one here, as Agent, whom D. may see, then the affair may soon be settled.

I think I must have told you in my last—that it is *nothing to me*—I mean I have no interest whatever in the matter.—

I write with diffy. & in some pain—but I try to redeem my promise & to save a Mail.

Pray try to decypher my scrawl.

Bel. me
Yours truly
W. Colenso

If you should see Dr Hector—please remember me to him.

464 ATL Ms-papers-0083-261.

465 without premeditation; written off at once.

1870 November 26: to Mantell⁴⁶⁶

Napier
November 26, 1870

My dear Mr. Mantell

Having been engaged this day in putting up our Society's Papers for the Manager N.Z. I. who is now *en route* for Wgn. and will call here tomorrow on his way thither,—I write you this. (Bearing, of course, in mind, your present duties in Leg. Council.)

Among those Papers are two of mine on the *Moa*, (2 *old*, & 1 new,)—and I would beg of you to use your influence in the N.Z.I. to get them published in the forthcoming vol. of “Transactions.” You may remember, that I wrote to you *about Part I* long ago, and received your kind answer,—and on that I have acted—That *first* part was read here *last* year,—but detained for part II. to accompany it.

There is also another of mine, (“Contributions &c.”, no. 2,) which may particularly interest *you*—there is a good deal of Maori wit and lore in it.—

Unfortunately this paper *may* be my *last*! I did both plan & hope to get on with several *of them*,—but the action of the “Directors” N.Z.I. last year *re* my “Ruahine Journey” papers, has completely shut me up! (as I cannot wish to be served so again). I may, however, continue to write them for *some other* Co.—but ?

And now a word *re* this precious Property Tax Bill, Do strike out the worse than Goth-like doubly Bæotian tax on *Books, plates, drawings, specimens, &c, &c,*—or I must knock under, & that at once.

Hoping this may find you enjoying good health.

I am,

My dear Mr. Mantell,
Yours very truly,
Wm. Colenso.

1870 November 26: to the Govt. Agent⁴⁶⁷

Napier
November 26, 1870

The Agent
of H.M. Col. Govt.,
Napier

Sir

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 23rd instant, accompanying a copy of a letter from the Colonial Secretary's office to you, (in reply to yours of the 5th. instant respecting my present inability to proceed with the preparation of the Maori Lexicon,) and have to thank the Government for their expression of regret and your self for forwarding the same.

I have the honor to be
Sir
Your mo. obt. servt.
Wm. Colenso.

466 ATL Ms-papers-0083-261.

467 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-1.

1870 November 30: to Mantell⁴⁶⁸

Napier November 30 1870

The Hon.
W. Mantell,
Wellington.

My dear Sir

Yours of Novr. 16 I have received and have seen Doyle twice, and have arranged with him that he is to pay you £90 (Ninety Pounds) for the Land. (For, as you had originally fixed on £120. (too high, however,) I thought I would try, in all fairness, to get you another bid, it was however hard work, & only done, through my promising to assist him in raising the money.) And as a "middle man" is requisite to complete the transaction I have agreed to act (if you have no objections)—making myself hereby responsible to you for the above sum (£90.) on my receiving from you the Cr. Gt. & Conveyance to John Doyle—which sum should be for this remitted by me to you in Wellington:—or, you can send the Gt. & Conveyance to Mr Brandon *here*, the Manager of the Bk. of N.Z., with instructions to hand it over on his receiving the £90. for you.—It is requisite that the Conveyce. from you should be here, as Doyle has arranged to raise $\frac{2}{3}$ rds. of the Money on Mortgage of the whole property including his own.

If your Cr. Gt. has *not* been requested—you will please pay *this fee* (always usual *here*), and you may also, I think, pay that of the short & simple conveyance to him—as £1.1.0 should suffice for a simple endorsement.—But if not (this latter) get it done, and forward *early*. If you agree to this,—just say so by Telegraph, that I may also get the mortgage ready.— In haste

Believe me

Yours truly

W. Colenso.

1870 December 15: to Mantell⁴⁶⁹

Napier
Thursday
4 pm

My Dear Sir

Just 4 words to cover enclosed Draft: I was this mornng. obliged to go to examn. Marshall's Boys. As I went—early—Rangatira was coming-in! The Manager of Bank was there, & told me I could get a sola Dft. *after* 3, so on coming down to Town, I found, to my dismay, the Steamer sails this evg. on her return—& Mail closes instantan almost, so I sit in Govt. Buildings & scribble this.—

I send you full sum, £90.,—as you have said you will allow for Registrn. of £1.1. towards Conveyce.—(together about £2.2.0) I *suppose this will quite pay* for drawing Conveyance at your town—less stamps, to be had here.

I will write you again by next mail south, on other matters.

Believe me

Ever yours truly

W. Colenso.

P.S. I do all this on my own responsy. as I have not yet seen Doyle. W.C.

468 ATL Ms-papers-0083-261.
469 ATL Ms-papers-0083-261.

1870 December 29: to McLean⁴⁷⁰

Napier
Decr. 29 1870

Hon. D. McLean
&c &c &c
Wellington

My dear Sir

Yesterday I received a painful letter from Capt. Curling—he has no aid from home, and he wishes now to leave by "Maggie" for Sydney, "if his friends can raise the passage-money and a few pounds in his pocket on landing". I therefore venture to trouble you with this, for your mite. Although little can be said in the poor fellow's favor, I trust that you (for "auld lang syne") will consider it an act of real charity—to help him in his distress. It is not much that is wanted, yet it falls *on us* (as I experimentally know,) at any but a good time.—

I hope you are well; and that you will forgive my thus intruding on you.—

And heartily wishing you a happy new year I am

My Dear Sir

Yours truly

W. Colenso.

P.S. I fear you will not be in time to answer by post—but if you should be willing to help, & would telegraph—"Yes & sum," that would do.—

Would you kindly mention it to Mr George Cooper? W.C.

1871 January 12: to von Haast⁴⁷¹

Napier
Jany 12/71

Dr Julius Haast

My Dear Sir,

It seems a long time since I last heard from you, or (I may say) of you (as I don't now receive any of our Southern Papers): I hope however you are well in health, and working well for both Province & Colony.

Sometime ago a cursory Review, a mention of you, in an English Paper, met my eye, from which I should infer you had written some work on the *Moa*, which I should have liked to see.—

My object in writing you now, is, to ask for the *Number* of the "Annals Natural History" I lent you in July '67, containing my little Paper on the Moa: it is my only copy, and I should not like to lose it.—

I trust you know that I did *not* get any copies of my essay on the Maories—published in Transactions Institute N.Z. vol. I.,—I tried hard, but failed to get any, otherwise I should have sent you one.

My hand, which has been very bad for writing, is now better again, but I cannot yet do much at a time.

Believe me

my dear Sir

yours truly

Wm. Colenso.

470 ATL Object #1007052 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.
471 ATL MS-papers-0037-046.

1871 May 25: to McLean⁴⁷²

May 25 1871

Hon. D. McLean,
&c &c &c

My Dear Sir

I have been thinking over our Conversation of Monday last about the Lexicon, and as I do not see that I can do anything more than I have already often mentioned—to *continue to go on with it, to the best of my ability*,—as I have always done (save when hindered by infirmity,) I write you these few lines to inform you of it. *My wish is to finish it, and that as quickly as possible*, this (D.V.) I shall strive hard to do. Having however only one room in this house with a grate (my parlour), I could not well have a copying clerk here at work during the Winter, as this House is a very cold one (not being Papered), but I hope to be able to engage one when the warm weather comes round again.

As you are busy, and your time for leaving us drawing near, and as I only crawl down to Town (in pain) for the Council, I won't trouble you again with calling, unless you may wish to see me. I therefore write you this.

When convenient please send me the chq. £5. *re* J. Curling.

I am

My dear Sir

Yours truly

W. Colenso.

1871 June 24: to Hector⁴⁷³

Saturday evg
24th

My dear Sir

Herewith I send you what little I know of the Karaka—i.e. as to its *preparation* for food, and poisoning *symptoms*:—hope they may be of service.

I should not now scribble additionally but I somehow think that you may *not* have the case alluded to in the “Notes”:—in the Tel. you say—“Your notes *in* Essay are hardly full enough”—but *the notes* I mean were *not* printed: let me know if you should not have this (I mean) & *you wish to have it*.

I have had a sad three months of Rheumatism (sciatica) only now leaving me (?) I should like to move out for a change if I could—would visit your city at approaching season if I had business there.

Hope you are well: have not heard from Hooker for an age: see by “Nature” he is in Morocco!! Ever yrs truly

W. Colenso.

1871 July 1: to Hector⁴⁷⁴

Napier,
July 1st. 1871

My dear Sir

I received your telegram of yesterday, which I acknowledged, and now send you, enclosed, a copy of the Note (top Essay) on the case of Karaka poisoning I had referred you to. I have copied it *in extensor* as you will see. I felt pretty sure that you could not have those “Notes,” (the appendix to the essay which was *not* printed,) but the fault (if any) arose from your telegram of 23rd. ulto having—“your Notes in Essay are hardly full enough.”

By the bye, would not those “Notes” suit the pages of the present vol. of “Transactions”? I humbly think they would: they are interesting and elucidatory and not unscientific, and all more or less of a popular character; and could be very well made to refer to essay in 1st. vol., to which indeed they belong.—

If you agree, and will use them at once, let me know by telegram, and I will (once more!) copy them. I did so, you may remember, 2 years ago, for Dr. Hooker, (of Prof. Huxley), Dr. H. in reply said, he had read them and sent them to the Ethnological Sy.

A little error of the telegraphist in your 1st. tel. about the Karaka made me laugh; he commences,—“Am investigating Karaka *position*” (? for poison).

Believe me ever

Yours truly

W. Colenso.

1871 July 13: to von Haast⁴⁷⁵

Napier,
July 13 1871

My dear Sir

I cannot allow another opportunity to pass by and leave all your kind remembrances of me unacknowledged although I feel totally unfit for writing!

I have received your esteemed letter of March 3rd (received 29th), also your pamphlet on the Moa, and a Lyttleton Times of April 8, containing some “Additional Notes” on the same,—for all which I thank you heartily,—which please accept.

Your letter &c. found me laid up with Rheumatism, which, with but little variation for the better, has continued till now: and prevents my doing anything. Again & again I wished, and even attempted, to write to you, but always put it off,—as I wished to give *you* a better dish, to write to you more fully, than it since has been or is now in my power to do. (Against my wish the town-folks here again made me a Member of our Provl. Council, and to it I had to be taken and brought back in a Cab!) I can be on my back and read tolerably well, when pains are not over strong, or when not too dull from opiates,—but to *sit*, especially in a writing position, is the great difficulty: had it been summer I would long ago have tried the Taupo sulphur hot baths:—but enough of this.—

472 ATL Object #1011871 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

473 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000094/001/0097

474 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000094/001/0107

475 ATL MS-papers-0037-046.

I cannot now by any means go into—do justice to—or write to you as I wish to do on your new Book on the Moa: I hope to do this yet, but shall I ever? I have read your work with much interest. I am glad and rejoice with you in your many discoveries—which really seem to increase daily!

Two or three things, however, in which I venture to think you are somewhat aberrant, and in which I cannot agree with you, I will briefly mention:—

I. “The proverb “*He Moa kai hau.*” (a wind-eating moa)”—such *may* be its meaning, but I should *not* so translate it, & consequently, what you have so ingeniously built thereon falls to the ground.

II. In *Lyttleton Times*—some 60 lines or so, from—“I have been told the present race”—to “wild man of the wood.”—I would you had not written most of this, as I think your *philological* conclusions are incorrect. And as to Taylor, he is *no* authority (w. me), his Book (mainly compiled by *others*, whose brains, eyes, & hands, he used, &c.) is a wretched *olla podrida*: the most faulty I know of on N.Z., especially on every thing connected with the N.Z. language. *Taylor never knew Maori.*

III. Your remarks on my (in 1840) supposing the N. Zr. to be of *Malayan* origin—of the Cassawary, its troubles, &c.,—might, I think, had better been omitted,—at all events, *not* adduced to build any thing on, nor to support any hypothesis, seeing I had long ago abandonad all such *origin* or national stem for the Maories: as, indeed, shewn in my essay (of 1864). In Mr. Stack’s paper (in same copy of *Lyttleton Times*) on same subject, there is much more that is incorrect—he even quotes *me* (!) as *holding* the foolish belief in the truth of the Maori migrations—whereas I have repeatedly stated my belief of such being mainly *mythical*.

Go on my dear Sir, in your praiseworthy ransacking and collecting, and gather all you can, from *Nature*, and add your own thoughts and conclusions thereto—you will yet get her to speak: but (if I may be allowed to say so,) eschew *all* dependence on any thing philological respecting the *Dinornis* & its old congeners. You, in the M. Island, are much worse off than we here, respecting anything of philolog. Maori—and I am pretty sure that Mr. Stack *cannot* help you in this respect—indeed, to judge from what I have seen, more likely to lead you astray, though not willingly, of course.

Mr. Mackay’s information (quoted by you top of p. 8, pamphlet) is correct: believe me, *no Maori* of 30–35 years ago, ever once supposed the Moa bones to be those of a *bird*—they always obstinately denied it:—that they since have done so, is entirely owing to the *pakehas*.—

You enquire after specimens of Maori carving—canoe figure heads, boxes, weapons, tools, &c.,—there is absolutely nothing of the kind hereabouts, nor have there been for many years—the unfortunate wars of the last few years enabled the enemy to clear off or destroy every thing of that kind they could lay hands on.

No doubt you want such for your Museum, of which I have heard so much, (and which I should so like to see!) and I may tell you (*entre nous*) that your better way would be, to get your Superintendent (or some *influential* friend of the *present* Ministry,) to try the *Native* Minister, Mr McLean—he, I think, *may* yet have something of that kind left.

Pardon this scrawl and ever believe me yours truly
Wm. Colenso.

1871 September 14: to McLean⁴⁷⁶

Napier, September 14, 1871

Hon. D. McLean

My dear Sir,

I hear the “Luna” is to call this evening *en route* for Wellington: so I will write you a few lines, and, as I have rather more than usual to notice, I must e’en take a larger sheet.

1st. Shortly after you left I received a huge packet from Hone Mohi Tawhai (Hokianga) containing a fair Ms. of 14 foolscap pages! written by himself—for insertion in the “Waka Maori”:⁴⁷⁷ it was all about the N. Lands Court, *upholding* it (as against what had appeared in the W.M. against the Court,) but at same time shewing, in 8 or 10 instances, where it wanted mending: I thought it (on the whole) a very good Letter, and intended forwarding it to *you*. Meeting however w. Grindell in town the next day, & telling him of it, & shewing it to him (having it in my pocket), he begged me to let him have it *instantly* for *immediate* publication in the W.M.,—which he wanted, then & there, to get out &c &c. I gave it to him: & you may judge my vexation, in finding that *soon after* he left Napier for Waipawa, (settling about “40 m. Bush,”) & thence went off to Rangitikei & I know not where! I told Mr. Ormond of this—and I hope he had related it to you.—I should so like for *you* to see that Letter.

2nd. Before that Mr. Ormond left, some natives applied to me, bringing papers of their ?grievances, to draft a Petition for them to the G.A.—I referred them to you. No. Then to Karaitiana, *their member*. To him they went, & in a week or so, returned to me, with their matters more in order, saying that K. had caused this to be written & that he had wished me to look over it. He went to Waipawa (also about the “Bush” sale) & did not return till the last moment, & then to start for Wellington. I have subsequently sent him his papers, telling him to begin at the *right* end, for if he has not sought officially *here* to get his grievance rectified, it would be of no use to attempt it there: I also told Mr. Ormond of this before he left. I believe it to be relative to the boundaries of some Reserves, & of the Land sold, near Maraekakaho.

3rd. By last Mail from the N. I have Letters from some Ngapuhi Chiefs—one says (I copy it)

“Engari pea a kona e whai korero ana, tena pea koe te rongorongo na i nga korero o nga Runanga pakeha o Poneke, o Ingarani pea hoki, he korero teka pea taua mea i rongo nei ahau, e kiia ana, Kahore a Wiremu Katene i tomo ki te Paremata, tae rawa atu kua riro a Te Makareni ki tawaahi ki Ingarani ki te tawahi, he Runanga mo nga Maori o Niu Tireni, kia hautopea atu ki te mata o te hoari, te taane te tamaiti te waahine:—he korero tito pea u a taaua.”—

Perhaps it would be well for you to know of the Northern M. Member if he has written N., and if *not*, then get him to write a good Letter directly.—But you will know best.

I think it is a great pity (or mistake), that the “Waka Maori,” which is now in *request* at Waikato & elsewhere among the Maoris, is not *now working doubly* (I might say,) to let

476 ATL Object #1007259 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

477 Māori newspaper *Te Waka Maori* was established on 21 August, 1878 by Grindell and Gannon.

them know something of what is going on among you: I feel sure such might be conducive of much good.

Several little ugly things have transpired since Mr. Ormond left, relative to the natives, & some of them you and I have talked about: and as I am pretty confident that such will bring their *cross of trouble*, if not timely attended to, I just mention them—you can easily imagine how the natives talk of them.—

1st. Karaitiana was summoned *after he had left* for Rates (Papakura Block), & judgment by default for £38 & costs. It was allowed that he had paid the *first* similar demand. (Has he, or his lands, recd. any benefit?)

2nd. Runs are advertised, as having poison laid, & dogs seen will be shot, & persons trespassing will be prosecuted, &c.—I send you enclosed a sample: but how are the *natives*, mostly perhaps concerned, to know of it?

3rd. I also send you an extract from our local Papers of an impounding Case inland. And

4th. Of another very hard case—the making (according to *English law*!) of Hiraka (Hori Niania's son) pay for goods had by his runaway wife (Arihi) and *her paramour*. This is a doubly hard case—as all the circumstances are so notorious. I have but little doubt that Firth supplied her with all the goods, after her leaving him: she & the ex-policeman live close to Firth. Such things cause our Laws, &c., to be—hated, as unjust. Surely they could be modified. You will see, my dear sir, that they do all press *one way*.

Although I consider it a part of one's duty to tell you all this, I would not do it *now* were it not for 2 things—1. You may be able to ameliorate some, *this session*: 2. You have *no occasion* to reply to this.

I have read Vogel's finl. statement (as sent us per telegram), and, as far as I understand it, I agree w. it, and think, in some things, he has managed very *adroitly*.

I wish I were at W. to hear the Debates. I hope you will pass a really good Education Act—one, wholly secular, I should prefer—& such will be by & bye, here & elsewhere as the world gets wiser.

Hoping you are well, I am
My dear Sir, Yours sincerely
Wm Colenso.

1871 October 7: to McLean⁴⁷⁸

Napier,
Octr. 7th, 1871

Hon. D. McLean

My dear Sir,

I have to thank you for your kind note per "Luna,"—finding, from Mr. Ormond, that Mrs. Grindell was going to Wellington to her husband, I wrote a note to Major Green, asking him to see her, and get (if possible) Hone Mohi's letter, which, no doubt, was left by G. at home, or to telegraph to G. about it, so as to get it for you.—And I shall hope to hear it will timely reach your hands.

Mr. Ormond has kindly given me a copy of Mr. Turton's Report: I am not at all pleased w. his remark (p.12)—"The claims of the Creditors of Te Hapuku amount to £739. — this sum would be reduced fully one half, were items for the sale of spirits not legally recoverable, *and items the recovery of which is barred by the Statute of limitations struck out of the accounts.*" This, *latter*, can only apply to *mine*! And what he owes me is only for goods (and money lent to him, and paid for him)—not charging a single farthing for interest as others have done.—

Of course Mr. T. is a *new* hand here, and knows nothing of the particular case.—I am sure that no *old* hand could have so written: I am sorry for it, and can only hope that neither Te H. nor any other will (or can) so *lower* themselves as to follow it out: but the *hint* has been given them, and that by a high Official.

As Mr. Locke is with you, who is one of the 2 Trustees and the principal one too, I have troubled you with this remark in your present busy time—that you may be able to speak to him on the matter—the acting *equitably*.

I won't trouble you just now with any thing more. Hoping that you are well, & wishing you were well through the Session.—I am,

Yours truly,
Wm. Colenso

1873 October 21: to Hector⁴⁷⁹

Napier
Octr 21 1873

My Dear Sir

Yesterday I received a copy of your circular of the 13th. Inst., informing me of your being about to reprint the 1st. vol. of the "Transactions", and requesting me to point out any errata I may have noticed in my contributions in that vol.

Speaking from memory I should say, that the "errata" (Printer's & Editor's) are very few; but what I wish particularly to know is, whether the great erratum (?) or omission of the "*Notes*" to the essay on the Maoris will now be printed w. this 2nd. Edition? If so, then I would mark the proper spots where the *small* reference figures to those notes should come in. Of course, *you* know how very much I regretted their being omitted,—however, that could not be helped. And, I suppose, you will recollect that, at your request, I made you a *second* clean copy of all those "Notes" some time ago, which Ms. I hope you have both safe and at hand.

Please let me know early about the printing of those Notes in this 2nd. Edn.

Hoping you are quite well—I am

Yours very truly
W. Colenso.

1871 October 28: to McLean⁴⁸⁰Napier,
Saturday Oct. 28 1871

Hon. D. McLean

My dear Sir,

I said, in my telegraphic reply to your telegram of Thursday respecting the Maori Dicty., that I would “write fully by Ahuriri Steamer”—then on her way to Napier. As she returns this evening I would now do so,—but, after all, I scarcely know how.—

I also received your kind telegram in reply, but I am not sure that they are “Official,”—and as I have a great dislike to re-commence any more official writing (having already written so much of that kind to so little purpose), I will take advantage of the doubt and so write *non-officially*.

1. Your first enquiry was—“Will you be able after the Session is over to send here part of your Maori Dictionary, as it might be printed from time to time?”—I don’t think this plan a preferable one; and that, in a great measure, owing to the new Ed. of Williams’ Dicty., *just out*, and which (though faulty and deficient) is quite sufficient for the Public for general purposes. New words, and fresh additional meanings of words well-known, are every now and then coming to light, and which may equally belong to the former as to the latter part of the Work.—

Had the offer I officially made to the N. Minister (Col. Russell) in ’66 been accepted—to publish the Dy. in 4 parts—2 of them would have been published ere this, and the Government and the Public been satisfied; and I, too, be now receiving pay for my labour. For, while I am going on with the Work, and intend (D.V.) to continue to do so, I cannot conceal, from all parties, that I am hardly used by the Government (not particularly *yours*), who have twice broken faith with me in working for them, and so driven me to do what little I may towards getting my own daily bread. Could I have supposed that the Government would have so acted I would never have undertaken the Work—and I have, consequently, wished a 100 times that I had not. *Thus* circumstanced, and with daily more or less of Rheumatism, (a fresh return yesterday at poor young Kenny’s funeral, though day very fine,)—I hesitate to promise as to when the first part of the work would be so ready as to be followed in steady succession by the remaining ones.

2. As to Mr. John White, a paid Govt. Officer, asking for a “Consideration” for his 150 (!) collected Maori words—which may or may not be of value—it seems, *to me*, preposterous. And yet, perhaps, not so, bearing in mind what too many of the Colony think with regard to their doing anything, however small, for the Government! In my telegram in reply, I referred you to the Notice on this subject in the Gazette, of April ’66, p. 159, and which I hope at your early leisure you will read. Yet even that was *not* inserted (by Col. Russell) as I had wished: there were 2 or 3 official letters about it—I wanting the tenor of it to be inserted as from the Govt. and *not from me*, but Col. Russell chose this way of doing it, and his short addition to it spoiled all, as the consequence has been that not one has ever helped (nor replied to *my* letters) save Locke and Grindell. I think that those old words which J. White says he has collected should be obtained; but, if he *must* be paid for them, let us know first what we are to pay for,—as I *may* have them already; and if he declines to let me see

them *with their meanings*, let him send the *words only*—keeping the Keys—until reported on to you.—

I quite agree with you, that we should have “good examples in pure old Maori”: this I have always aimed at; and it is *this* which has made my work so much the more heavy,—giving me 3 or 4 times the amount of writing.—

Do try, my dear Sir, to get hold of that Ms. of W. Baker’s, which you mention: it *should*, it *must* be found: I had also heard of it. Baker was the best of all the M. Interpreters I have ever known. I would he were alive now! It was he who gained all the *old* Maori for Rev. R. Taylor, and which Taylor has, in attempting to use or cook, utterly spoiled (as *Taylor never knew Maori*).

Could you not also send me properly sealed up, the *Ms.* referred to in Sir G. Grey’s vol. of Maori Poetry, page 18 *Index*, *note*, (at end of vol.). I telegraphed the other day to Locke about it. Please send me this, if you can, and if possible by Mr. Ormond.

Believe me I shall continue to dig away at my long and heavy job as I best may—none the better however for being left to do it without help or pay!

You can make what use you please of this letter, and, if you wish it, I will recast it officially.—

Hoping you are well, and wishing you well through your Sessional labours. I am, My dear Sir,

Yours very truly,
Wm. Colenso.

1871 November 9: to McLean⁴⁸¹Napier
Thursday, Novr. 9.

My dear Sir

Last evening I received a letter from a native of Te Aute, and I think you should know of its contents,—as you may not now have any one there to acquaint you with what is going on, and you still have Karaitiana with you,—to whom a word in season may be of service.—

The writer of the letter says:—

“I tenei wiki he hui ki konei, nga kainga kotahi te kau, he Hapa, he Iriiri, he Komiti mo nga pukapuka mai o te Paremete a Henare Matua mo Tamaki, he unu mai i raro o te ringa o te Kawanatanga o Nepia, (kite mea ia e maunu,) *Ko Karaitiana ka noho ia ki raro ina korerotia a “Tamaki.”*—

And, in another letter *to a native* (which I have,) also dated the 7th. are these words:—

“I tae mai a R—— ki konei i tenei ratapu, i haere mai ki te Hapa, kit e Hui hoki mo nga pukapuka mai a Henare Matua, i tukua mai i Poneke. Tena pea te Kawanatanga o Nepia e hinga i a Henare Matua, ina hoki kai te unu a Henare i Tamaki ki waho i te hook a te Kawanatanga.”—

Rumours are also among the Natives as to what Karaitiana (or Manaena & others) intend doing with regard to certain sales, Leases, &c, &c, of these outer plains.—

Note that sentence & its meaning, "*Ko K. kakoho &c.*"

I write to be in time for the "Keera," hourly expected: I would also call your attention to the enclosed cutting from the Extra of the "Herald"—to hand last night. Permit me, *again*, to call your serious attention to it—for surely such can be no better than *murder*. In a conversation I had with you here in May last, you assured me, that all such killing should be at an end—that Ropata was then on his *last* journey, &c &c. There have been several since of this kind by those mercenary bloodhounds, and I *feel sure* that the time will come when we shall suffer for it. What would have been said if such an action was done by the Russians to the French? Is not this horrid act *akin* to the tragedy in the Santa Cruz islets—which we all deplore?—Great fault was found by us with the *ambush* near Taranaki in '62—when our officers were killed, but that is as nothing when compared with these. It seems to me that *of late* much has been done (in this kind of way) to strengthen the King party; for *I know*, that *nearly all natives* really view this pursuit of Te Kooti and this killing of the Maoris with him as a set to against the race, & every event of this kind strengthens them, & the Kg. party, wonderfully.—

Would to God that 6 months ago you had made a *golden bridge* for Te Kooti to escape to Tawhiao!—that would have been the right thing.

I cannot write any more now:—I did not intend to write to you at all, or I would have done so before, I mean about my *own matters*: I saw in the "Herald," a report of what you said in the Ho.—"that I had received *no pay* from March '70, & that the Work would *entail no further expense to the Country* though *much remained* to be done."—All right:—I have yet to learn of *one* in the Govt. ranks, from the General to the lowest Sub. who will thus work.

Believe me, yours very truly,
W. Colenso

P.S. Could you let Mr. Ormond see this? W.C.

1871 November 18: to Grey⁴⁸²

Napier,
November 18, 1871.

Dear Sir George Grey

Permit me to trouble you with the following:—

During the past month I received several telegrams from Wellington respecting the *Mss.* of your Vol. of Maori Poetry published there in 1853. I knew however, nothing of them, never having seen them; and, eventually I referred the enquirers to the note in your Vol. of Poetry (Index, p.18) wherein it is stated, that the said *Mss.* had been deposited by you in the Library of the Wellington Athenæum.

Yesterday Mr. Locke (who, I think you know,) returned from Wellington, and on my enquiring of him the result of their search, he informed me,—that, after much trouble & repeated personal interviews with Dr. Hector, Mr. Dillon Bell, Mr. Mantell, some of the Members of the Government, Mr. Lyon, & others, he, at last, saw a Mr.

Logan, who was formerly the Secretary of the Wellington Athenæum, who stated as follows:— "That, the *Mss.* of Sir George Grey's Maori Poems were left in his charge, and he kept them for many years, until a Mr. J.B. (or J.) White, a Maori Interpreter, took away the Papers to Auckland, stating he had Sir G. Grey's authority for so doing; and that he (Logan) had often endeavoured to get them back but without success."

I told Mr. Locke, that, under all the circumstances, I thought you should be informed of it,—especially as (from what he had further heard,) there appeared to be a doubt in the minds of some of the folks at Wellington, as to whether Mr. White was really directed by you to take the said *Mss.* away; seeing, that you had in your Work stated publicly where they were deposited, &c. &c.—

Moreover, Mr. McLean, in a telegram to me about the Maori Dicty, about a fortnight ago said, that a Mr. John White had been in correspondence with him, offering him for a consideration 150 old Maori words he had collected.

—And so I have taken on myself to write this to you.

Hoping that you are enjoying sound health in your Paradise-like Island, (of which I have heard so much)

I am,
Dear Sir G. Grey
Yours truly
Wm. Colenso.

1871 December 6: to Mantell⁴⁸³

Napier
Decr. 6/71

My dear Sir

I will now answer that kind & friendly poportion of your letter of 16 ulto.—the main & pressing business part having been concluded. I should have written before, or by "Ashley" which left here this day—but I *could not*.—(You know John Curling, our late R.M.,—well, all this week I have been trying to get up a small sum to enable him to leave here next week for Sydney—friends few (in hour of need) and money still scarce.)

In that last letter of yours, you kindly say, you would send me the peculiar Ngaitahu words you had, if I wished. *Please, do so.* Get them from Mackay *as soon as possible*, and forward them.

I have been "lying on my oars" of late anent my Dicty. owing to my hand (the Doctors wanted "absolute rest for a year" or so,—and it is only at times that I can write legibly at all, & without pain, but my hand is a little better now.) Yet I hope to be going on again shortly.—Perhaps all the faster & better for resting. Albeit I have *no pay* from the Govt.—I shall never trouble them again for any on this account.—

No doubt I shall be glad to see your "Botanist's Paper—in Tahiti 30 yrs. ago."—Why did you, or Dr.H., never think of making me a Member of your Instit.? I was asked from

482 Auckland Council Libraries GLNZ C28.4 (Grey New Zealand letters).

483 ATL Ms-papers-0670-1.

Auckland (long ago) to become a M.—I said, No:
Wellington—I suppose.

Doyle is already fencing &c. I suppose you received Draft, all right. If I don't hear from you (anent the Ngaitahu words) in 2 months, you must allow me to trouble you again.—

Heartily wishing you a happy N. Year! I am Yours truly,
W. Colenso.

I had (and have) thought of paying a visit to Engld. but fear I must give it up—mainly through want of *funds*. W.C.

1871 December 11: to McLean⁴⁸⁴

Napier
Decr. 11 1871

Hon. D. McLean

My dear Sir

As I am not going to say a word about *myself*, I may perhaps intrude.—

I wish to say a little concerning young Carter, (who left here in the “Keera” for Wgn. on Saturday, to join the Constabulary force,)—could you not possibly find some *more suitable situation* for the youth? I am quite sure he has very good parts, and with a little more teaching, would become quite an acquisition to any Govt. Department. He is also very anxious to learn more, & I think would get on rapidly.

So impressed was I with this, that I sent word to his Father, that I would give £50. (the utu of a section I have on the White Road) towards his 1st. year at Dunedin, if Carter could find the remainder. I don't know anything of the charges there: but I think *you* have influence with the Dunedin folk. And if the £50 I offered (for the section) is required by you for that purpose, you shall have it.

You may see what I have written in the “Herald”—respecting our Maori Prisoner, & *why* he (*like others*) should be pardoned.⁴⁸⁵ You know what I have told you in past times, respecting the Maoris,—always aiming at the common weal.—I would that *you knew* what *I now know*. Believe me, that, as in the case of those to whom a proper & prized lenity has been already shewn, so *here*: I hope, most sincerely, that should you see what I have written in the Herald you will consider it.—I am very sure you will *after* I am gone; if you don't before. I have heard & read very strange things indeed of late. I cannot write you more.

I am,
Yours very truly
W. Colenso.

484 ATL Object #1004349 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

485 Colenso's 1871 *Fiat Justitia*; being a few thoughts respecting the Maori prisoner Kereopa now in Napier gaol, awaiting his trial for murder... was first published as a letter to the editor of the *Hawke's Bay Herald*.

1871 December 22: to Governor Bowen⁴⁸⁶

Napier, December 22nd 1871.

Governor Sir G.F. Bowen,
G.C.M.G., &c, &c, &c.

Dear Sir,

I have the honour to address your Excellency in a few words, although personally a stranger, respecting the unhappy Native Kereopa now in our gaol here; to which, although such may be somewhat irregular, I would humbly beg your merciful consideration.

Before, however, that I enter on my subject, I would apologise for the informality of this communication, feeling assured, that, when your Excellency is informed,—that the Steamer “Luna” is expected here this very day on her way to Wellington,—that by her his Honor the Judge who tried the said Maori goes to Wellington,—and that we know not when there will be another Steamer going thither,—you will freely overlook all such, and allow of this apology.

I deem it to be my duty, Sir, as an old (if not the oldest) European resident in these parts, well-acquainted with the Natives here and elsewhere and with the *true* state of the native mind,—as a well-wisher to the Colony and to the Government,—and as a loyal subject of Her Majesty the Queen, to make you acquainted with the following (although it may be that I am shortly about to leave New Zealand, perhaps for ever).

And to this I feel the more encouraged from perusing the very faithful and excellent maxim quoted by your Excellency, when writing on the Execution of Maoris, in your Despatch to the Right Hon. Earl Granville, in which you say,—“In this as in other countries the maxim holds good which declares, that ‘the grass soon grows over blood shed on the battle field, but rarely over blood shed on the political scaffold’.”

At present there is a great and increasing spirit of dissatisfaction existing among the Maoris against the Government,—even among those who have been hitherto loyal and friendly; such is kept very secret among themselves,—still and deep.

Every thing of a harsh or severe tendency on the part of the Government against any of their people, or the common popular feeling, wonderfully strengthens the said spirit of disaffection, and is secretly and extensively made use of as against the Government.

There is a very great feeling every where among them in favour of the prisoner, Kereopa, even among those of them who have suffered largely both in loss of property and relatives through the visit of the “Hauhaus” to the E. Coast.

All natives consider it a political prosecution; though some speak of it as a revengeful one on the part of the Church.

It is highly doubtful whether Kereopa committed the various acts charged against him; or, if, in some degree, he did, whether such have not been both greatly exaggerated and colored by the Opotiki tribe in order to remove as far as possible from themselves (for various reasons) the stigma of such an atrocious crime. Such, I may be allowed to remark, is a very common thing among the Maoris.

486 Archives J1 137, No. 1873/600–798.

It is believed by many here, that one of the principal witnesses against him is the very man who placed the rope round Mr. Volkner's neck.

I may be allowed to mention, that I wrote a letter to the Editor of our own principal Paper (the "Hawke's Bay Herald") on Kereopa being brought here as a Prisoner, shewing how on equitable grounds alone he ought not to be severely dealt with; (a copy of this curtailed I also forward to your Excellency;) and finding I could not get the whole of it printed in the said Paper I have concluded to get it printed in a pamphlet form, but it is not yet ready. I append, hereto, a printed *Resume* taken from the same, to some portions of which I would venture to beg your Excellency's attention.—

After I had written the said letter I visited Kereopa in the gaol.

He told me, that he wished to get a number of witnesses on his behalf brought forward; and, at his request, I told Mr. Lee, his Counsel appointed by the Government, of it.

He also told me, on my asking what these were to prove in his behalf, that he wished them to prove:—

1. That the Instruction given to their Hauhau expedition when sent out by the Hauhau prophet Te Ua were, *not* to kill pakehas; and that they could not deviate from them.
2. That long before they had reached Opotiki it had been determined by some of the Opotiki Chiefs to kill Mr. Volkner as an *utu* (in revenge) for their slain Chiefs and people, who, they said, had been killed through certain information given to the Government by him, and that Mr. Volkner had known of this, and had, therefore, on being warned and ordered off, as the few friendly natives could no longer protect him, timely taken away his wife and family.
3. That the deed was done by the Opotiki natives themselves, when inflamed with drink and their thirst for vengeance. (See Appendix Journal Ho. of Represens. 1865, E. No.5, Enclosure 2 No.5.)
4. That he had no hand in it; did not see Mr. Volkner put to death; and did not know who really did it, save by report.
5. That he saved Mr. Grace from the same fate, through claiming him as "his pakeha".
6. That the Hauhau visitors, being of a stranger tribe (or people—*iwi*) kept together, aloof: and here he appealed to me, from my knowledge of their ancient customs, whether they could, or he could, on such an occasion, possibly have commanded or ordered the Opotiki Tribe; and if he had even done so, whether they would have listened to him.

And, Lastly, that those Natives of his own Tribe might hear the lies which these witnesses had deposed against him.

I only saw him on two occasions, although I had an Order from the Visiting Justice of the gaol, and had planned to visit him daily; my visiting him being most strangely interrupted through the Gaoler sending me word by the turnkey, that Kereopa positively would not see me any more! We were on the most friendly terms, and he seemed highly rejoiced to see me and parted from me with regret: I cannot account for this (?)alteration.

His attempt to commit suicide is no proof of his guilt—quite the contrary.

I firmly believe, your Excellency, that mercy being shewn to this unhappy deluded man Kereopa will be productive of great good both to the Maoris and to the Colony; particularly from the fact (in addition to what I have already adduced in my *Resume*,) of £1000. having been paid for his capture; so that they will very clearly see that our Government and Rulers are equally as far above any sordid, as any revengeful, influences, arising from the payment of Public money.

I pointed out to Governor Browne, in 1861, (among many similar matters,) how very advantageously imprisonment with degradation might be used by the Government in dealing with high Maori Offenders, and that such was in their estimation worse than Death.

And again apologizing for this intrusion on your Excellency in a few ill-digested and hastily written sentences, which apology I trust you will under all the circumstances be pleased to accept, I am

Sir,

Your most obdt. servant,
Wm. Colenso.

1872 January 1: to von Haast⁴⁸⁷

Napier, Jany. 1st. 1872

Dr. Julius Haast,
&c &c &c.

My dear Sir

I will write to you (*con amore*) my *first* letter of the New Year! in reply to yours of 24th. December, received two days ago:—for which, and for the accompanying Papers, containing your new Paper on the Moa and Moa Hunters, I have to thank you.—

First, let me offer you the compliments of the season: heartily wishing that *this* year may prove more successful to you in Geological Palæontological & Ethnological results than any past one has been.

I have read *twice* with very great interest your new Paper and rejoice w. you in all your researches & new Discoveries—believing you have yet more in store.

I should greatly like to see Dr. Hector's Paper on the Moa, also Mr Murison's—of both which I know nothing. (I suppose they are *not* printed separately.) Of Sir G. Grey's Letter to the Zoologl. Socy., also mentioned by you, I am equally ignorant.

You ask me to give you my opinion as to certain statements made by some Writer in the Lyttleton Times,—*viz.* "that there are wooden carved boxes in the Northern Island in the hands of celebrated Chiefs in which *Moa* feathers were (and probably at present are) still preserved.—Such statements have been made also by Mr Davies in Auckland, as I have been informed."—

I wish you had sent me a copy of the said "L. Times," containing the Letter referred to.—

1. Does the writer say, *he has seen the Boxes*?
2. Does he say, *he has seen the feathers*?

Even if thus far in the affirmative, (I have been so sadly bored in past years with statements repeatedly made by *unscientific* individuals as to plants, minerals, &c., that I would ask,) Is he a person *qualified* to pass an opinion on such feathers?

For my own part I greatly doubt the correctness of all such statements. I never once met with, or heard of, any thing of the kind in “the olden times” in all my rambles (& enquiries) in the *N. Island*.

Could you not write to Mr. Davis, & get all the information you can? (I don’t know him.)

I do not greatly marvel at Sir G. Grey’s Letter,—as I have little doubt but that Sir George heard something of the kind from the “1000 aids” of his Government *employees*,—all, more or less, ignorant of natural science, and all desirous of pleasing, &c, &c. And, the *old* rule of Maori etiquette must not be lost sight of here—*viz.* of commonly assenting to leading questions, especially when asked by a superior—and, indeed, such was often done to put a stop to importunity &c, &c. I doubt, however, if Sir G. Grey made, or followed up, those enquiries *himself*. I don’t see how he *could* have done so.

Of Mr Walker’s statements concerning the Legends of the Friendly Islands, I had heard before—long ago. Indeed, it is in print somewhere—I *have seen it*.

I note you make me to say—“that I would translate differently the Maori Proverb *te Moa kai hau*, &c., although I don’t give you my translation.” Now if I were to give you what *may* be the *meaning* of those words, (not merely a translation of them,—which was given to the world by Sir G. Grey some 15 years ago, and whence, I suppose, Mr. Stack obtained it,) I should be obliged to go deeply into the whole matter—its entire Paleology, including Exegesis & Etymology, stretching far away into the cognate Polynesian Dialects, and into the long *past!* in fact, to write a tolerably lengthy Paper, or disquisition, on the Paleology of the extinct Moa. This would take some time, which I cannot (now) give it,—besides, I want *more light*—which I am in quest of. I have, however, often thought of taking it up. But, oh! there is so much of this once noble Language now completely *Dead!* that, *to me*, it is almost heart-breaking. Every day shews me more and more receding for ever from one’s grasp.—And now that the Colonial Government has *completely* thrown me overboard (see “*Hansard*,” 1871, vol.xi, p.669,—only for “March last,” read, March 1870, having received no pay from them since that time—March 1870;) I am obliged, once more, to turn my attention to other matters, and to look after my own *private* affairs, long neglected; so that, I fear, I shall *never* finish what I *once* fondly hoped to do.

I send you a pamphlet just printed—*portions* of which may interest you a little.

And Believe me
Ever truly yours
W. Colenso

1872 January 8: to TB Harding⁴⁸⁸

Monday
Jany. 8/72

My Dear Sir

Being in town today I made some enquiry about the “Posters”. From what little I could learn, I find, that Mr. Morrison the Watchmaker ordered them (through, I presume, your “Agent”, Hooper) and that he considers himself responsible, and that he should have paid for them long ago if you had sent to him the acct. He will pay you for them.—

Perhaps you will permit me to remark that I think the charge of £1.—much too high. Could you *not* lessen it to him? You may recollect that *I* sent my advertisements to all 3 Daily Papers (at that time) when *one* would have answered, as well. I merely make the remark now, as I have from time to time, heard it remarked the very high prices *here* for advertising etc. unless one haggles beforehand.

And there is a great difference between Posters and Posters i.e. as to their being desired, lucrative, or advantageous.

I am
Yours truly
W. Colenso

P.S. I think I may go inland tomorrow—but I will send the Bal. some *early day* by your son.

I have heard it remarked (and I was gratified in hearing it) of the proper way *you* had noticed the execution of Kereopa.

1872 February 20: to Grey⁴⁸⁹

Napier
Feby. 20, 1872

Dear Sir George Grey

I am very much obliged to you for your kind note about the missing Mss. of your published Book of Maori Poetry. I have communicated its contents to Mr. Locke, and we have written to Wellington, hoping to recover them. And now I have to trouble you about another lot of Maori Mss.

A few years ago, perhaps ’66, or ’67, (it was when you were here in Napier,—’68,) Mr. Locke came to see me in a hurry to get from me a lot of Maori Mss. of his collecting, which he had kindly lent to me, (but which I had only just glanced at,) these he then wanted to hand over to Mr. McLean for you to look at, and (as both he and I then understood,) to return to him (and to me) when you should have done with them.—I have more than once spoken to Mr. Locke about them, but he has never heard any thing of them since. I now make this application to you, with his knowledge and sanction. He also says, that when he gave the Mss. to Mr. McLean for you, the understanding was, that if you wished to publish them so much the better, as the only object Mr. Locke had in view, was to have them preserved. And I, for my part, only wished to read them closely for new words and new idioms, and (possibly) new

488 ATL: MS-Copy-Micro-0485-1.

489 Auckland Council Libraries GLNZ C28.5 (Grey New Zealand letters).

usage of words already known. If you have them still by you, could you not send them to me for my perusal? Also, any other Maori Mss. you may happen to have, whether prose or poetry,—you may depend on my taking the utmost care of them, and only using them for the purpose of enriching my Lexicon, which I am still working at;—although entirely cast off—as to any pay—by the Government from March '70! Could I have once supposed in '64, (when you, Sir George, as Governor, expressed such a deep interest in the work,) that the Government would not heartily co-operate, I would never have undertaken it.

If you have also a *spare* copy of your Book in Maori, entitled, “Nga mahinga a nga tupuna Maori, &c.”, (published in '54, by Willis, Charing Cross,) and you could give it to me, you would confer a very great favor:—as I have tried in England & elsewhere but in vain to get a copy.

I have recently received another lot of old Hawaiian Books, which have gratified me much. Our language (that is the ancient Polynesian) must have been originally a grand yet simple one; like many other things, beautiful and majestic in its simplicity and purity *i.e.* without any foreign admixture; as it is, the various streams of descent, or Dialects, are (or were,) magnificent in their ruins. What would I not give thoroughly to know them *all*! So as to have them at my fingers' ends.—

I trust you, with all your many advantages, are continuing to do all you can to conserve what little remains to be gathered here in N.Z. I feel assured that a future generation will marvel at our *past* apathy in this matter.

I see, by late Papers, that an ancient Ynca Drama, translated from the Quichua, or Aztec, language, of the time of the Peruvian Incas, has just been published: also a Grammar and Dictionary of that language by the same Scholar.

Hoping you are quite well, I am,

Dear Sir G. Grey,
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

Date? to McLean⁴⁹⁰

Saty. mg.

D. McLean, Esq., M.H.R.
for Napier

My Dear Sir

By Herald of this mg. I find your Council labours are over, I therefore drop you a line as M.H.R. for Napier.

I suppose you will be leaving us on Monday.—

Perhaps you may recollect, that last year (in reply to Macfarlane) you said, in the Ho., that you did *not know* any thing of the work on which I was engaged: as, no doubt, the matter will come up again this year, and as I cannot wish *you* to give a similar answer—would you kindly call here (at any hour today, or, *tomorrow*) and *see*, & so be able to speak more definitely if required.

In so saying I do *not* ask you to support it: that I leave to you.—

490 ATL Object #1015765 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

As time is now so short, I hurry this; and if you cannot come I pray you to excuse my putting the request. Mr. Ormond has been here (officially), and I expect him to call again.

I am
My dear Sir
Yours truly
Wm Colenso.

1872 June 19: to TB Harding⁴⁹¹

Napier June 19th, 1872.

My Dear Sir,

I do not know if you were in the Council chambers at its opening on Monday.—I wish to call your attention to a Notice of Motion I tabled then, and to ask you to print it *whole* (not merely referring to it) as it will (*D.V.*) come off next session. Of course Mr. Fannin will show it to you—or, if not, I can send you a copy—but I prefer your getting it from him.

Hoping you are well
I am
Yours truly,
W. Colenso.

1872⁴⁹² November 23: to McLean⁴⁹³

Napier
Saturday night (23rd.)

Hon. D McLean
&c &c

My Dear Sir

It has occurred to me to drop you a line—with reference to what you said this morning, that you should like to have a conversation with me, &c.,—that, I leave town by Coach on Monday morning to visit the *nearer* Country Schools, & intend returning to Napier on the Friday night, or early on Saturday morning (29th. or 30th. inst.)—and could call on you on the Saturday (30th.) if that would suit you. And, if so, please let me have a line from you to that effect. I am

My dear Sir
truly yours
Wm Colenso.

P.S. I should also tell you, that on the Monday following (December 2nd.) I have again to leave town by early Coach to visit the farther Country Schools, Waipawa, Waipukurau, Hampden, &c,—& shall not return until late on the following Saturday.

491 ATL: MS-Copy-Micro-0485-1. TB Harding was proprietor of the *Hawke's Bay Times* till 1873 when he sold to his son.

492 The letter is dated only “Saturday night (23rd.)”, but refers to Monday 2 December, which, during Colenso's tenure as School Inspector, occurred only in 1872.

493 ATL Object #1026339 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

1873 July 21: to McLean⁴⁹⁴Napier
July 21 1873

Hon. D. McLean

My Dear Sir

Although you are “te ngakakii” in business, just now,—still, I think, I may venture to write you a line when *it requires no answer*.

Whether it was a misunderstanding on my part I don’t know—but I fully expected you would call while here—believing, that *you yourself had fixed to do so*. Therefore I staid at home, closely, after Council,—day & night, thinking you would call. Perhaps you were too busy: but had I not depended on your calling, I could & would have called on you: as I wished to have some talk with you about Native Matters.

Last week Locke shewed copies of Parts I & II of that English-Maori work of mine, which I hear is in request. Could you pass the word for me to have a copy of each part (or, 3 copies of each part)? And, by-and-bye, when you are less busy,—tell me, *whether you would wish the work to be continued*.

Col. Russell, who received the Mss. from me when Native Minister,—was a means of stopping it:—and has always, I believe, opposed it,—unknowingly, perhaps.

Well: I hope *you will get well through* this session. Don’t be *quite* surprised should you see me some day in the gallery!!

I went last Thursday to see Alexander: he is very low, but still sensible, though he wanders at times. I don’t think he can recover, or will last long. His Brother has since arrived, and is now with him; at which I am glad.—I believe he will soon be a *grandfather*.—

Believe me
My dear Sir
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

1873 August 25: to McLean⁴⁹⁵Napier
August 25 1873

My dear Mr. McLean,

I cannot allow another Steamer to return to Wellington without acknowledging your note of the 15th. inst. At the same time I am as far off as ever from being able to “make some proposal about the Lexicon.” Ever since the receipt of your note the subject has been uppermost in my mind: (indeed, I may truly say it has been so from July 23, when I received the Offl. Telegram concerning it, so that between it and Rheumatism I have had a jolly life of it! Not being able to offer, or even think of, anything that would be satisfactory and at the same time *practicable*, has caused me to delay writing you.

I have felt not a little vexed about what has been said in the House about it & me—with no one there (apparently) to shew (or willing, or able to show,) how the whole matter really stood. *I* am repeatedly blamed, and made the scape-goat for the Govt. *laches* (not, however, *your* Govt.) Had the Govt. kept faith with me, the Work would have been very far advanced, and in a very different state to what it now is. I have since seen in the *Hansard* what was said, and I find you were all wrong:—you, in saying I had received £1180. (here is an error of nearly £200, as the Treasury has always lumped together the payments for the Lexicon and those for the Elementary Books &c., lately published: this latter being a separate affair, arranged for in ’63, when Dr. Shortland was N.M.,)—and also, in your *not* saying that I had *never* in any shape or form received that aid from the Government which was expressly stipulated for; and further, in your not clearly stating,—that, from the time when the Govt. broke their faith and ceased to pay me, they had no longer any other than a *quasi* moral claim, which they *could not press*: that’s the position. At the same time I notice that *you* spoke kindly of me, for which I thank you. On the *second* occasion, Mr. Reader Wood was wrong altogether,—“*it ought to be stopped at once*,”—I cannot comprehend. Did he not see that the Govt. had already “stopped” payment?—or, did he think I was still being paid? or, that I could, or would, continue slaving at it year after year, since March ’70, for the paltry “£100. at completion”?

Last year I had serious thoughts of getting a Select Comee. appointed to enquire into it,—so that the House may know *all* about it, and justice should be done me in the matter:—and a Commee. may yet be appointed. Were printing cheaper I would have had the whole history of it, printed as a pamphlet—for the information of Members and the Public.

You ask me to make some proposal: well, what I would do, if I had the means, (if, say, I had sheep, and was a monetary gainer through the late rise in wool,—whereas *I* am a great *loser* through this very prosperity!)—I would just hand back to the Govt. every farthing I have ever received (including for expenses & outlay,) and burn all my Mss.;—or possibly sell, or give, them to France or Germany: states which value & patronize literature and scholarship.—Do not think, my dear Sir, this is a *new* thought;—not so: I told Mr. Ormond so, in 1870, when the Govt. cut me adrift. I feel, & I have long felt, that I was a great fool to have ever entered into any such an agreement with them—devoting my whole life & energies for something over £200. per ann.,—and then to be repeatedly taken to task, and snubbed & spurned, year after year, by persons who know nothing at all of the matter, or the Work! The fable of the dying Lion and the Ass is as nothing to it.—

I will, however, write you again in a day or two, when Mr. Ormond returns, by which time I may (?) be able to think of something.

You may make any use you please of this.

I am,
Yours very truly
Wm. Colenso.

1874 October 24: to the Secretary, Auckland Institute⁴⁹⁶

Napier,
October 24th 1874.

The Secretary
of the Auckland Institute,
Auckland.

Sir

We have recently succeeded in forming a branch Philosophical Institute here, and as we wish to imitate those older branches in the larger Provinces—at all events in our Rules & Regulations,—I have the honour to request that you will please to send me a copy of the Rules of your Institute to lay before our Council at their next Meeting, which will be held shortly:—and am

Yours very truly
W Colenso
Hon. Secy.

the desolation of that sad word *never*. Who knows not what that word wraps up—*Never*—it *never* can be undone. Sleep on! But yet there was no sickly lingering over the irreparable: the moment was come for action, “Rise, let us be going”. Now the broad general lesson which we should learn from this is,—that a Christian is to be forever rousing himself to the duties which lie before him *now*. Cease lamenting the past—the past is *past*—rise & be going—doing—count your resources; learn what you are *not* fit for and give up wishing for it: learn what you *can* do and do it with the energy of a man! That is the great lesson of this passage. Jesus *went to meet* the soldiers. In after years the disciples understood the lesson and acted on it:—they braved the Sanhedrin—they fronted the world. Under this there lies a great principle. Under no conceivable set of circumstances are we justified in idly sitting—“By the poisoned springs of life, Waiting for the morrow which shall free us from the strife.”—Under no circumstances, whether of pain, or grief, or disappointment, or irreparable mistake, can it be true that there is not something to be *done*, as well as something to be suffered. And thus it is that the spirit of Christianity draws over our life,—*not* a leaden cloud of Remorse and Despondency, but a sky—not perhaps of radiance, but yet—of most serene and chastened and manly hope. There is a *past* which is gone forever! but there is a *future* which is still our own.— —

1874 December 20: to Emily Tucker⁴⁹⁷

Written for my Sister,—far off in body, but with me
in thought this day, Sunday, Decr. 20th./74.

Opportunities of doing good do not come back. (Much have I missed the doing of—through life, by not more closely attending to this: may I be forgiven!) We are here in this world for a definite purpose—to educate our own hearts by deeds of love, and to be the instrument of blessing to our fellow men. There are two ways in which this is to be done, 1. by guarding them from danger,—2. by soothing them in their rough path by kindly sympathies. (Jesus asked his apostles to do this for him in Gethsemane—Mark xiv.) And it is an encouraging thought, that he who cannot do the one has at least the other in his power. If he cannot protect he can sympathise. Let the weakest, let the humblest remember, that in his daily course he can, if he will, shed around him almost a heaven! Kindly words, sympathizing attentions, watchfulness against wounding men’s sensitiveness—these cost very little, but they are priceless in value. Are they not almost the very staple of our daily happiness? (*I* value them perhaps the more from my *not* meeting with them: it has been my *lot* to know *much* of what the Psalmist speaks, Ps. cxx. 4–6: notwithstanding it has not changed me, nor the desires & aspirations of my soul.)—From hour to hour, we are supported, blest, by *small* kindnesses. And when we consider that our life, it may be, is nearly run out,—and that we love & desire such things,—how much (*we may ask ourselves*) have we done in *that way*? Let us awake in time; and dread the remorse of conscience when at last awaked to brood over the irreparable past! In the few words which Jesus said (41, 42) was a most cutting self-reproach, for they contained all

“If any man will do His will he shall know.” John vii. 7—That is, if any man wills, resolves, has the mind to do the will of GOD. It is not written, If any man does His will,—but if any man has the spirit and desire. If we are in earnest we shall persevere like the Synphenician woman,—even though all around discourages, and God’s word seems to drive us back! Many people go to Church because it is the custom, and all Christians believe it is right to do so. But there are hours, (and they come to us all at some time of life or other,) when the hand of Mystery seems to be heavy on the soul—when some life-shock scatters existence, leaves it a blank and dreary waste henceforth frozen, and there appears nothing of hope in all the expanse which stretches out before us, except that merciful gate of death which opens at the end—hours when the sense of misplaced or ill-requested affection, the feeling of personal worthlessness, the uncertainty and meanness of all human aims, and a doubt of all human goodness, unfix the soul from all its old moorings—and leave it drifting—drifting over the vast Infinitude, with an awful sense of solitariness. Then the man, whose faith rested on outward Authority and not on inward life, will find it give way: the authority of the *priest*: the authority of the Church: or merely the authority of a document proved by miracles and backed by prophecy; the soul—conscious life—GOD—will be an awful desolate Perhaps. Well, in such moments you doubt all—whether Christianity be true: whether Christ was man or god or a beautiful fable. You ask bitterly, like P. Pilate, “What is Truth?” In such an hour what remains? I reply, Obedience. Try to leave those thoughts for the present. Act: be merciful and gentle—honest: force yourself to abound in little services: try to do good to others: be true to the Duty that you know. *That* must be right whatever else is uncertain.—And by all the laws of the human heart, by the word of GOD, you shall not be left to doubt. Do that much of the Will of GOD which is plain to you (however small), and

⁴⁹⁶ Auckland Museum Library MS-76.

⁴⁹⁷ ATL Ms-papers-10535-1. What follows is a paraphrasing of excerpts from sermons by Frederick W. Robertson, written by Colenso for his sister, probably Jane Emily Tucker (1817–1896).

“You shall know of the doctrine, whenever it be of GOD.”—
(Some of this I have experienced. W.C.)

A few thoughts on the Nature and Laws
of Revelation.

First.—Remember Revelation is made by a Spirit to a spirit,—“GOD hath revealed them to us by His Spirit.” Christ’s words—is the voice *without* the man, the Spirit, is the Voice of GOD *within* the man. The highest revelation is not made by Xt., but comes directly from the universal Mind to our minds.—Now the Sp. of GOD lies touching, as it were, the soul of man,—ever around & near. In every man this is true. The Spiritual in him, by which he might become a recipient of GOD, may be dulled, deadened by a life of sense, but in this world never lost. All men are not spiritual men, but all have spiritual sensibilities which might awake. All that is wanted is to become conscious of the nearness of GOD. GOD has placed men here to feel after him, if haply they may find Him, albeit He be not far from any one of them.—

The *condition* upon which this self revelation of the Spirit is made to man, is Love. These things are “prepared for them that love Him,” or, which is the same thing,—revealed to them who have the mind of Christ. Let us look into this word *Love*. Love to man, may mean several things: love to GOD can only mean *one* thing: GOD is a Spirit, GOD is a character: to love GOD, is, therefore, to love His *character*: for *instance*, GOD is love,—GOD is Truth,—God is infinite.—

GOD is Love—and to love men till private attachments have expanded into a philanthropy which embraces *all*—at last even the evil & enemies with compassion—that is to love GOD.

GOD is Truth!! to be true, to hate every form of falsehood, to live a brave—true—real—life, that is to love GOD.—

GOD is Infinite—and to love the boundless reaching on from grace to grace, adding Charity to faith, and riding upwards ever to see the Ideal still above us, & to die with it unattained, aiming insatiably to be perfect even as the Father is perfect—that is to love GOD.—

This Love is manifested in obedience,—Love is the life of which obedience is the form. “He that hath my Commandments & keepeth them he it is that loveth me.”—Now here can be no mistake. Nothing can be love to GOD which does not shape itself into obedience. It may not have full fruit as yet, but it is growing tending that way. God doth not despise the day of small things—neither does he quench the smoking flax: We know who said—“Gather up fragments—let none be lost:” and, “*First* the blade, then the *ear*, then the full corn in the ear.” So with GOD—strong feelings, warm expressions, varied internal experience co-existing with continued disobedience—GOD counts not as Love.

To this Love, adoring & obedient, GOD reveals His truth. For such as love, it is *prepared* (or, rather, by the well-known Hebrew manner of speaking by inversion of words,—*such are prepared for it*. Love is the condition without which revelation does not take place. As in the natural, so in the spiritual world: by compliance with the laws of nature, we put ourselves in possession of her

blessings: obey the laws of health & you obtain health: temperance, sufficiency of light, and air, and exercise,—these are the conditions of health. Arm yourself with the Laws of nature, and you may call down the lightning from the sky: surround yourself with glass, & the lightning may play innocuously a few inches from you—It cannot touch you—you may defy it—you have obeyed the conditions of nature, and Nature is on your side against it.—

In the same way there are conditions in the world of Spirit,—by compliance with which GOD’s spirit comes into the soul with all its Revelations,—as surely as lightning from the sky, and as invariably,—such conditions as these:—“The secret of the LORD is with them that *fear* Him.”—“No man hath seen GOD at any time,” but “with this man will I dwell, even with him that is of a *meek & contrite* spirit,”—“If we *love* one another GOD dwelleth in us”:—“If any man *will to do* his will he shall know of the doctrine,” &c. Reverence, love, meekness, contrition, obedience, these conditions having taken place, God enters into the soul, whispers His secret, becomes known, and imparts the knowledge & conviction and holy hope and trust in Him.—

Now these laws are universal & invariable—they are subject to no caprice: there is no favourite child of nature who may hold the fire in his hand without being burnt:—there is no selected child of grace who can live an irregular life without unrest,—or be proud, & at the same time have peace,—or indolent, & receive fresh inspiration,—or remain unloving & cold, and yet see & hear & feel the things which GOD hath prepared for them that love Him.—

Therefore the Apostles preached the Cross to men who felt, & to men who felt not, the Revelation contained in it. The Cross is humbleness, love, self-surrender: these the Apostles preached. To conquer the world by loving it:—to be blest by ceasing the pursuit of happiness, and by sacrificing life instead of finding it: to make a hard lot easy by submitting to it:—this was their divine philosophy of life. And the Princes & great ones of this world amidst scoffs & laughter, replied, Is that all? Nothing great, nothing to dazzle, nothing to captivate! But the disciples of the *inward* life recognized the Divine Truth which this doctrine of the Cross contained. The humble of heart and the loving, felt that in this lay the mystery of life, of themselves, and of GOD, all revealed and plain. It was GOD’s own wisdom, felt & known by those who had the mind of Christ.—

Now the application of all this is very easy, Love GOD, and He will dwell with you:—obey GOD, and He will reveal the truths of His deepest teaching to your soul. Not *perhaps*: (away with that word!) for, as surely as the laws of the natural and of the spiritual worlds are true & irreversible, so are these things prepared for obedient love:—an inspiration as true, as real, and as certain as that which ever prophet or apostle reached, is yours,—if you will have it so.—

—And if obedience were entire & love were perfect, then would the Revelation of the Spirit to the soul of man be perfect too. There would be trust expelling care, and enabling a man to repose on his Father:—there would be a love which would cast out fear—there would be a sympathy with the mighty All of GOD:—selfishness would pass, isolation would be felt no longer:—the tide of the universal & eternal life would come with mighty pulsations throbbing through the soul. To such a man it would not matter where he was, nor what: to live or die would be alike. If he lived,

he lived unto the LORD. The bed of down, surrounded by friends,—or the martyr's stake, girt round with curses,—what matter which? The ward in the hospital,—the union work-house,—the quiet cosy comfortable home, or the lonely friendless couch in a far-off & savage land,—what matter which? It would matter little what he was,—the ruler of a kingdom, or a tailor grimed with the smoke & dust of a work-shop. To a soul filled with GOD, the difference between these two is inappreciable;—as if, from a distant star, you were to look down on a palace & a hovel, both dwindled into distance, & were to smile at the thought of calling one large and the other small.—

I have touched on “the *mind* of Xt.,”—which mind should also be *ours*. Just consider His considerate kindness:—“I have compassion on the multitude—bec. they have nothing to eat.” (There was *tenderness*!) Again, to the disciples:—“Come ye apart into a desert place and rest awhile” (He did not grudge them relaxation.) Then his dying words (under severe torture of body, & desertion by his own!)—“Behold thy mother!—Behold thy son!” He was too exhausted to say more: but he could think of her desolate state when he was gone, and with delicate thoughtful attention provide for her well-being.—

Now there are people who would do *great acts*,—but, because they wait for great opportunities, life passes, and the acts of love are not done at all. Note, this considerateness of Christ was shown in little things: and such are the parts of human life. Opportunities for doing *greatly* seldom occur—life is made up of infinitesimals. If you compute the sum of happiness on any given day, you will find that it was composed of small attentions, kind looks and kind words spoken feelingly,—which made the heart swell, and stirred into health that sour rancid film of pride and misanthropy, which is apt to coagulate on the stream of our inward life, as surely as we live in heart apart from our fellow-creatures!—

Doubtless, the memory of each one of us will furnish the picture of some member of a family (we have seen or known) whose very presence seemed to shed happiness. A child,—a little daughter, perhaps, whose light step, even in the distance irradiated everyone's countenance. What was the secret of such an one's power? what had she done? what doing? Absolutely nothing, but radiant smiles, beaming good humour, the tact of divining what every one felt, & every one wanted, told—that *she had got out of self and learned to think for others*:—so that, at one time, it showed itself in deprecating the quarrel, which lowering brows & raised tones already showed to be impending, by sweet words:—at another by smoothing an invalid's pillow;—at another, by soothing a sobbing child;—at another by humouring & softening a father who had returned, worn-out & weary and ill-tempered from the irritating cares of business. None but she saw those things. None but a loving heart *could* see them. That was the great secret of her heavenly power.

Call you those things *homely* trifles, too homely for a religious discourse, or a sermon? By reference to the character of Christ, they rise into something quite sublime. For *that* is loving as He loved. And, remark, too, these trifles prepared for larger deeds. The one who will be found in trial capable of great acts of love, is ever the one who is always doing considerate small ones. The soul which poured itself out to death on the cross—was the spirit of

him who affectionately thought of the wants of the people,—contrived for the rest of the disciples,—and was thoughtful, even when in agonies, for his mother!

Still further:—*It was a love never foiled by the unworthiness of those on whom it had been once bestowed.* It was a love which faults desertion, denial, unfaithfulness, could not chill,—even though they wrung His heart. He had chosen: and He trusted. Even in ordinary manhood, that is a finely tempered heart, one of no ordinary mould, which can say,—“It ever was my way, and shall be still, when I do trust a man to trust him wholly.”

—And yet there was every thing to shake His trust in Humanity. The Pharisees called him Good Master! and were circumventing him all the while! The people shouted Hosannas! and 3 days after were shrieking for his blood! One disciple who had dipped in the same dish, and been trusted with his inmost counsels, deceived & betrayed him:—another was ashamed to own him:—three fell asleep while he was in agony and preparing for death:—*all* forsook him. Yet nothing is more surprising than that unshaken, I had well-nigh said, *obstinate* trust with which He clung to his hopes of our nature, and believed even in the very face of demonstration.

As we mix in life there comes especially to sensitive natures,—a temptation to distrust. In young life we throw ourselves with unbounded and glorious confidence on such as we think well of—our error soon corrected: for we soon find out—too soon—that men & women are not what they seem. Then comes disappointment,—and the danger is a reaction of desolating & universal mistrust. For if we look on the doings of man with a merely worldly eye, and pierce below the mere surface of character, we are apt to feel bitter scorn and disgust for our fellow-creatures:—No wonder if we are tempted to think,—“friendship *all* a cheat—smiles hypocrisy—words deceit,”—and they who are what is called *knowing* in life contract by degrees, as the result of their experience, a hollow distrust of men, and *learn* to sneer at apparently good motives.—That demoniacal sneer which we have seen, ay perhaps *felt*, curling the lip at times,—“Doth Job serve GOD for nought?”—

Now the only preservation from this withering of the heart is Love. Love is its own perennial fount of strength.—The strength of affection is a proof not of the worthiness of the object, but of the largeness of the soul which loves.—Love descends, not ascends. The might of a river depends not on the quality of the soil through which it passes, but on the inexhaustibleness and depth of the spring from which it proceeds. The greater mind cleaves to the smaller with more force than the other to it. A parent loves the child more than the child the parent; and partly because the parent's heart is larger, not because the child is worthier. Jesus loved his disciples infinitely more than they loved him, because his heart was larger, his love stronger and deeper. Love trusts on—ever hopes and expects better things; and this, a trust springing from itself, and out of its own deeps alone (1 Cor. xiii).

And more than this. It is this *trusting* love that makes men what they are trusted to be, so realizing itself. Would you make men *trustworthy*? Trust them. Would you make them true? Believe them. This was the real force of that sublime battle-cry which no Englishman hears without emotion. When the crews of the fleet of Britain knew that they were *expected* to do their duty, they *did* their duty. They felt, in that spirit-stirring sentence, that they were trusted;—and the

simultaneous cheer that rose from every ship was a forerunner of victory—the battle was half-won already.— They went to serve a country which expected from them great things,—and they *did* great things.

And it is on this principle that Christ wins the hearts of His redeemed. He trusted the doubting Thomas, and Thomas arose with a faith worthy his being trusted by his Master. He would not suffer even the oaths and lies and denials of Peter to shake His conviction, that Peter might love him yet; and Peter answered nobly to that trust, to that sublime forgiveness. (But my Xn. Bishop refused scornfully to *trust me* again, even when repeatedly besought to do so,— although he has had ample proof, during 20 years of heavy past faithful services, to which he had also borne witness!) The last prayer of Jesus was in extenuation and hope for the race who had rejected him! He has loved us—GOD knows why; I do not—and we, all unworthy though we be, respond faintly to that love, and try to be what He taught us, & what He would have us.

Therefore come what may, my dear Sister, Hold fast to Love. Though the mountains should be removed into the midst of the sea—let us continue to *trust* in GOD—our loving Father in heaven: though men should rend our heart, let them not embitter or harden it. We win by tenderness: we conquer by forgiveness. Oh, let us strive to enter into something of that large celestial Charity which is meek, enduring, unretaliating, and which even the overbearing world can not withstand for ever. Learn the new Commandment of Jesus: not to love merely, but to love *as He loved*. Let us go forth in this spirit to our life duties: and we shall find that we shall carry every thing before us, and win victories for our GOD by the conquering power of a Love like His.

May this be our happy lot! Amen.

Written for my dear sister, on Sunday afternoon, February 7/75:— Napier, N. Zealand: by W. Colenso.

Date? to McLean⁴⁹⁸

Napier,
Thursday, 6th.

Dear Sir Donald McLean

I was very glad to hear, in town today, from Mr. Ormond, that you had returned, and that you were in much better health than when you went to your Station.—

I waited awhile, in hopes of seeing you, as I had heard of your coming to the C. Chamber to see the Natives,—but when I saw their number, & recollected the *short* days now,—I beat a retreat.

I am afraid you may not be *here* much longer, and so I write this,—just to let you know, that I shall be happy to call on you at any hour that may be *most convenient to you*—whether by day or by night.

And am
Yours very sincerely
Wm. Colenso.

Date? to McLean⁴⁹⁹

Monday 15

My dear Mr. McLean

Many thanks for your kind intimation. That party however is *clear*—I would that I could say as much to those S. of Ahuriri.

When shall I see you again? I have looked in twice—but you were not. One of those times however I was deceived (*unintentionally*) by Capt. Carter—as you were within.

Tomorrow early, I leave for Clive to inspect the School there. I will call on you at ½ past IV. this evening.

Ever yrs truly
W. Colenso.

1875? February 16: to McLean⁵⁰⁰

Napier
Tuesday Feb'y 16

My Dear Sir

When *we* are to *meet* again (at the rate we have been going on since your return from Wellington) I really don't know!—Now this is just what I have often thought of late—and what I should still be thinking (seeing I have called at your office—five or six times—never yet once met you in Town—and have lately heard of your being unwell & confined to your house a little more than usual,) but for the events of last evening which *force* me to pay *you* a formal visit on Friday next,—and I should be most unwilling that such should be our first interview, or correspondence, after so long a silence, hence I scribble you this as a kind of *karere*.

I may tell you that I arranged for the Deputation to wait on you on *Friday*—as I saw it was too late for the “Herald” of this morning to give you any report of the meeting—and the “Times” would not be out before Thursday—and I thought it right you should have a fair public Report of the meeting *before* that we saw you.—

No doubt you heard (some 2 months or more ago) that a Public Meeting was then sought to be convened to consider this question: a paper signed by (I believe) 98 respectable Rate payers of this Town was brought to me by a Deputation chosen from among themselves asking me to convene such a meeting: I refused however to do so, mainly on the ground that I held no Po. situation nor any Public one,—that I was more retired than half of my fellow townsmen, &c, &c: they gave in very *reluctantly*, and I promised them that if they got up a Public meeting that I would attend & take part in it. Your re-appointing a Collector of this obnoxious rate, & his going his rounds, has brought this meeting to pass:—I had the *first Resolution* sent to me on Saturday with a request that I would move it, to which (after reading it) I consented: and because I did so last evening I am made one of this Deputation.—

That is just the plain state of the case. What *I* said, I suppose you will see in the “Times”—to which I must refer you. I think (notwithstanding the weather) it was the *largest*

Pub. meeting I have ever seen in Napier.—as a small (though not erroneous) test of real public feeling, I may mention, that (*after 2/3rds. or more of the people had left*) it occurred to the getters-up of the meeting to call for a 1/- or 6d. collection to defray expenses:—£2.14.0 (the amount required) was gathered in no time, and monies afterwards tendered were refused and returned as not required. Indeed, I saw more than one working man tender a half Crown—there was quite a rush to subscribe & no shirking; just so it was to sign their names to a pledge to stand together to defray legal expenses (if needed).

I am, my dear Sir
Yours truly W. Colenso.

1875 March 17: to Balfour⁵⁰¹

Napier
March 17/75

Mr. Balfour

Dr Sir

I have just received your note of enquiry of this date—I am sorry you should have had the trouble to write it.

I duly received your letter, ditto the chq (enclosed) for £1.1.0, and you have been admitted a member,—our rules are now in the printers hands, & I hope soon to be able to send you a copy.

I am
Dear Sir
Yours truly
W.Colenso
Hon Sec

1875 May 5: to Luff⁵⁰²

Napier N. Zealand
May 5, 1875.

My Dear Sir

According to my calculation it is 3 little months this day since you left N.Z.—and, as I always add that time for a Ship to make her fair home voyage in,—I do hope that you and yours are now safe on English ground—with thankful hearts and in good health.—

We have this day in our Papers a telm. of the arrival at home of the “Merope” (I would it were the “Waikato”) but I don’t know when she left Lyttleton—any how she had a good passage—April 27.

My last to you was on the 10th March, when I also swent 8 papers: and papers by last month’s Mail but no letter: I was then too busy, & not well.

I have heaps of things to tell you of—if I could see you—but I must pick and cull for a letter.—First then, of the sad mortality, which has been too common here ever since Jany. 1st. As I told you in my last, it was mostly young

children at the beginning, but for the last month or so it has been young men & women,—healthy, strong, apparently—and youths—and children too. The no. of deaths is largely in excess of the births: I will just note a few whom you know:—

Mrs Orr (young Orr’s wife)
Tim Sullivan
Young Northe
Young Lingard
Young Garry (3rd son)
Young Webb (*eldest* of H.E.W’s.)
Young Jacob: a clerk in the N. Bank.
A young man at Dolbel’s, whom he brought out!
Minnie Parker!
Miss Firth (F’s. niece, 7 months out)

& Several young Immigrants, newly arrived.

Edmund Sutton (Watt’s) was all but gone—but is now convalescent. At P.D’s. there are 7 down *now* with severe illness—and P.D. and his Brother shadows! just worn out: it is feared his niece must also succumb.—

The disorder appears to be a kind of low fever,—which begins insidiously, & in a few days all is over! It is common every where—inland—S. at Wellington and *all* the S. Provinces, & just as fatal: also in Melbourne, where, too, the deaths exceed the births.—

Our med. men are nearly worn out; charitable aid—for sick, suffering, families (Immigrants) deprived of fathers, &c &c—much called for,—& a good response made.⁵⁰³

W.W. Yates’ son, *nearly* gone; is now recovering slowly—his nephew is in danger:—I never knew of such a time here, & never expected to see such; it has tended (as you may suppose) to put a gloom over every thing.—I have often thought it is *well*, perhaps, that your family are away from it.—

It is 2 months this day since Willie left—and I hope he & his ship are about the Equator—all well.

Second, Political: This day at noon I stood (once more) on the hustings (Odd Fellows’ Hall—*this time*) for City West.—see the Papers I send: polling comes off next week: I *may*, or may *not*, be returned: Lee is my opponent, and has had it all to himself while I was absent (3 wks.) School Inspecting; L. has been working hard: I have done *nothing* (the *old way*!) but may be returned: I don’t care very much about it. I think I may be also nomd. for Suburban South (J.A. Smith, & T.K. Newton are out on this—my *own proper* District, in which (alone of Napier I am a registered elector);—but as the polling is on the day after that of City West, if I am returned for that, I shall decline (of course) on this. Orr (Senior) Buchanan & Bennett (Puketapu) are fighting for Clive (A. Russell having retired); it is thought Bennett will get in: W. Russell & Maney will be retd. for Nap. Country—Tiffen (who had but a poor chance having that day retired) having this day been brought forward suddenly against R. Stuart (Mayor) for N. Suburban: Sutton & Lyndon (!) *are returned* for City East!!—L. without even appearing!!! S.Johnston has also been returned for Waipukurau. A. Deane is out for Ruataniwha: Laurence in

⁵⁰³ Typhoid was especially prevalent in fast-growing towns, where cesspits often leaked into water supplies. Infants and young children were especially vulnerable. Registered typhoid deaths in New Zealand peaked at 323 in 1875 (<http://www.teara.govt.nz/en/epidemics/3>). Measles and scarlet fever were also epidemic in that year.

⁵⁰¹ ATL 88-103-1/07. Original at MTG HB 67861.

⁵⁰² ATL M5-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

his place) for Te Aute (here the Hanings are going to oppose), J. Herrick for Hampden. Canning is returned for Porangahau: Ormond standing for Hastings: Tanner for Havelock: Kinross & Lascelles for Port (a fight)! Towgood for Petane: *P.D.* for Mohaka (to be opposed by Cabel;—J. Burton & Carter to fight for Wairoa.—I, *alone*, have had a jolly lot of abuse in the D.T.,—some unknown friends have been writing a little in my defence in the “Herald”: I was *away*: Inspecting Schools, Lecturing, and—, well, *you* shall hear:—anon.—

I rode in one day from Porangahau to Waipukurau—and in another day rode back: & was not I tired!! I have been also to Danneverke, & on to Tamaki Hotel, *walking*—& then walking back in pain to Railway Hotel—& was not I tired! In riding to Ongaonga (Herrick’s & beyond to a new school) I was thrown—or rather horse fell a plunging fall, as if shot, on Bridge’s run,—I over its head, a complete somerset! flat on my back, & not so much hurt from the fall, but the beast, in rising, trod on me twice (stomach I think): Rev. Mr. Eccles was w. me: we both thought all was over—the agony was so great, I suffered much from pain—but *no serious injury*! I rode however in pure misery that day, over 30 miles (*obliged* to do it), up to Hebison’s—then back to Newman’s, then to Hampden—late cold & weary—to bed there.—I got back here to rest a while on Saturday 1st. I am thinking *seriously* of resigning my office—have spoken to O. about it, but he won’t listen to it—but I believe it will be nevertheless. And now I have not told you the half of my misery,—for all the while I was absent I was ½ mad with Neuralgia (Rheumatism in ear, temple, & jaw, & there only *all the time*.)—which began a week before I went inland, & still continues—I had but *one* night’s sound sleep all the 3 weeks I was absent: Oh! it was misery, misery, day & night, and no relief.⁵⁰⁴—While at Waipukurau, on a Sunday evening, Mr White was to preach, &c.—I went, vii. passed; Congregation uneasy, when one of the “Elders” came to me & asked *me* to take the Service: I said, wait a little longer; well, I did so, he (a Mr Palmer—as I found *afterwards*) selecting 2 Hymns,—and I acting “in a Family kind of way”—but a more attentive Congregation I never addressed. Certainly I was taken by surprise:—after just 23 years of silence! GOD be praised: *you may guess* my thoughts & feelings. During that week I gave a Lecture (while lame after my fall), to buy the Scholarship prizes—an attentive audience.—

Mr H.R.R. sent me his letter calling on me to join in fencing “60 Chains” at Hampden! I suppose I must do so. Mr R. & Sheehan always together. Have not sold any more land yet. “Richmond Park,” Lloyds; that was Gill’s) is to be sold tomorrow—I send a plan. Subn. Sn. Scinde Island no.23 was cut up & sold yesterday—bringing fair prices (see Paper). Knights property is *all* taken by Sheriff Tylee, suit of his quondam friend Schiller! Bridge over gorge, Manawatu, finished. Sir D. McL., K.M.G., &c &c. is here, & has been here at Maraek.—, some 12 days tomorrow; I believe, he appears in Town.

My 2 old Servants cleared away—taking,—well, *what they pleased*, with them; they gutted the kitchen; coolly saying, I had nothing! but I did not find this out till 2 days after—when I went to town to see Scully about it,—but gave it up (on 2nd. thoughts there) as I could not—or would not—swear to any thing: but it was *flagrant*; &, indeed, served me right. What made me feel it the worse was—that (first) I

gave W. on leaving, 2 sovereigns to give them (as from him) one each; & when they left, I gave the fellow, for his wife, £3. *extra* on account of any little jobs (sewing) she might have done for me. They also took away the fowls—saying, “they had bought the eggs & had reared them”!! I have 2 good *quiet honest* servants now—members of Redstone’s Church—from Clive;—and we are *very quiet*: had *lots* of applications for the place.

Well, now I must close: Pratt has given up his business; Wood is married to Mrs Gowing: Joe Rhodes is also gone home. A. Deane goes next year:—Shall I follow?

Hoping you are well—& wishing you the best of all good: Believe me, Yours truly.

W. Colenso

Friday May 7th.—3 more deaths this day
W. Smith’s son *Frank*—Swan’s son; and a fine young Scandinavian woman—this last in hospital. Smith has 2 more down. N. Williams 2. Newton’s eldest son is *very ill*. It is a *sad time*. Saw Mr. Sidey today: he is well—we talked *feelingly* of you. Kinross is returned for Port. Burton surveyor for Wairoa. A. Deane for Ruataniwha.

Capt. Newman’s daughter married to manager U. Bk. Mrs Tiffen upset travelling at Taupo, & *much* bruised: a new bank erecting next to Abraham’s—where Sim lived. Shareholders got rid of Grammar School—Mr Irvine has taken it.

1875 June 2: to Luff⁵⁰⁵

Napier, N. Zealand,
June 2nd. 1875.

My dear Sir

Where are you *now*? & *how*? are questions I would greatly like to have answered, & that satisfactorily. It is now 116 days (according to my reckoning) since you left our shores, & we have not yet heard any thing of your ship! Grubb & myself have been rather anxious of late:—I wrote to him yesterday, saying, that I would wait till the 5th., when, if we heard nothing, I should telegraph to Shipping Office at Dunedin:—I fear, however, they have not yet got any news. Several of our ships *from* England have been making long passages lately: “John Norman” to this port is now 143 days out! but the “Merope,” which you saw at Lyttleton, (Willie’s ship,) had a good passage home. Willie, too, should be now *nearing* England—this being their 88 day,—but yours much longer.

The lately received *sad* news of the “Schiller”—following so closely on that of the “Cospatrick”—has made us more than usually anxious about you—but we must continue to hope & to trust in GOD.—

My last to you was on 5th. May—which, with Papers then sent, I hope you may duly receive. In that I told you of the Election,—that has come off and I was *beaten*: shamefully so, I may say, when the *number* of the Town who voted for me is considered: 10 for Lee (he could not get one more!—this is known,)—& 15 for C., of this 15, I got 5, of whom 4 were from *Country*, viz. Chambers, W. Couper, Dolbel, Grinvell from Wellington (who landed in a gale in the new

504 A good description of tic dolooureux (trigeminal neuralgia).

505 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

Life boat!) & poor old Wiggins, who was brought on Crutches from Hospital: so that only 10, of the Town proper, moved out of their seats to vote for me! I was *assured* by a Govt. *authority* that 35 had promised, or pledged, & that I was quite safe: his 35, did *not* include my promises,—or Robjohns (of whom *he* was doubtful) but who *did* vote for me. *Afterwards* there was a little commotion about it: “Who could have thought it!” &c &c and a few have apologised to me for not voting—saying, they had been assured I should get in flying, &c, &c. Some of the old, good, settlers (as Chambers, W. Couper, Robjohns, & others) are vexed, & wondering at it. Of course, Lee is (or was) exultant! I have said Good-bye! for ever now, to all Elections here. It is *rumoured*, that the Methodist *bodies* turned against me at the last moment, owing to my not fully fraternising with them, & to my opposing *Denominational* Schools. I have written *largely* to *you*: but it is all over now!—

Others, however, of us, *old* hands, got a worse beating: Lambert was ousted by Rechab Harding!! who got in on G. Templar Rechabite & Methodist votes. Tiffen was beaten by R. Stuart, & was very wrathful about it; Newton was (unexpectedly) beaten by J.A. Smith (Tiffen, I believe, did this in revenge—as, no doubt, Newton, Lyndon, Tuxford, & others, sold T.)—& Newton, too, was *very* vexed.—I voted for him, & expected he would be returned. But, notably, Buchanan was out-&-out sold, beaten dreadfully by *Bennett*,—Road-overseer!! “Oh! what a fall was there, my Country men!” When the 6 Maori votes—(who all voted for Buchan) & his own & his son’s v. are deducted, he could only have had a *very few* at Clive—notwithstanding his bragging, some (J.A. Smith, Knowles, Sutton, & others) went out from *here* to vote for him, Buchanan. Herrick is in for Bridges seat: Dolbel, again for Mohaka; Towgood, Petane: Burton, Wairoa, Laurence (W.R. Harding) for Te Aute; I expect Lambert is *sulky*. Tiffen & wife are off directly for America. The new Council will have *10 new*, & 10 old hands: we shall see how they will get on together. I think it a very good thing that Buchanan is *out*: and it *may* prove to be a *really good* thing that I am out—as now I have one less tie in this place; & have been thinking *largely*, since, about returning to England; even to proposing to O. to resign Insp. of Schools—which he won’t hear of, but which will, I think, surely come to pass.—

Weather continued fine until *last* week in May—when winter set in. This has been a gloomy day—cold wet: *heavy* atmosphere: a huge amount of snow on Ruahine—all fell in a few days last week! The great sickness still continues—*lots* of folks sick (mostly children & young) w. Low Fever; no abatement yet; my own man down—3rd. week, & but very slowly bettering. I told his poor wife to confine her attention to him (it being so Infectious, too.)—so there has been but little of Home comfort in this *lonely* house.

Sheehan (for Natives) has put J.D. Canning’s big Porangahau Run into the market; C. has got one, a principal owner, to repudiate it: more work for the Lawyers. Sheehan (for Karaitiana) has thrown up Awanga land: K. Hill is again applying. H.R.R. has put the Hampden Land into the market. Knight is prosecuting Miller, Stock Agent, who got out an Execution against all K’s. landed property. Some £6000. *is to be* spent in getting 2 artesian wells, & a huge tank up near Sealy’s—this by Munl. Council!—Lee, for Price (D.T.) has threatened D.M. & Co. w. prosecution for Libel: H. published the letter!—

I am tolerably well,—& pretty free from Rheumatism, but I must be careful,—not ½ my schools have been visited, yet, owing to the general sickness!—Many buildings are at a stand for timber. Where Marten kept an Eating house, a *fine* Drapery establishment is to be, lighted from roof, & extra large windows. New Bank, where Sim lived, next to Abrahams, a neat Building.—I have gone occasionally to Criterion to lunch (for dinner)—& Johnson, Baker, has sent me some cold boiled meat & Bread,—but such, *in the winter*, is not very nice, day after day. I am glad that Willie is away. Caldwell, Baker at Havelock, is dead from it,—also Kelly, a gardener, at Taradale, & *several* others—*young* folks. No Doctor has gone for a *long time* out of town—not to Clive, nor Havelock, nor to Meeanee—they are worn out, or nearly so! I dread this fever—& with reason—30 years ago, this season, I was attacked at Waitangi, & nearly died—I was very bad, & no human aid, delirious, & all that,—I well *remember* the fearful hideous sights I saw in my delirious state, and oh! I was a long & *weary* time in getting roused. Often have I held by the old fence there, & *cried*, & wished for death!—Many Natives had it then, & many died from it.—Newton’s eldest son is slowly getting better. Moggridge’s family are all down,—& others on the opposite hill. I dread the arrival of any Immigrants, as I fear many of them will be doomed! I never knew such a sad time here in Napier.—

Tuke, & K. McLean, seem to have a deal to do as *auctioneers*; but all have *work*. T.O. Williams is about to cut up his Suburban Sns. end of Shakespeare Rd. Prendergast is here, in *new* Ct. Ho., holding Court,—Trestrail v. Giffard to day, but see the Papers I send. I fear my letter & papers to you in our *March* Mail were lost in “Schiller”. Sir Donald had the gout, & retreated to Hastings,—he is now better, & goes *today* per “Luna” to Wgn.—It is said, *he* must *lead* in the House! unless Stafford can be got to join. Sheehan is *here*, having resigned his Off. as Provl. Secy. at Auckland; Heretaunga cases are *not*, I hear, coming off this Court.

And now I must once more say Good bye! I hope you are safe & well *all* of you in England before this—Believe me ever,

Yours truly
W. Colenso

Friday, June 4th.
4 p.m.

P.S. I must now close, no news yet of your Ship, a steamer arrived at Bluff bringing London telegrams to 26 May. In the second trial, this day, Giffard v. Trestrail, for trespass, &c—Giffard won, Damages (I believe) £350. (T. gained the *first* trial yesterday—I have posted the Paper to you)—pity they did not settle it out of Court—*Law exp. heavy*.

This day is a delightfully fine one. Luna has remained to take the Mail in mg.

Hope you & yours are well & safe, & that we may soon hear of your being so. Fare well.

w. Best wishes
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

1875 June 2: to McLean⁵⁰⁶

Dear Sir Donald McLean

Your kind note of enquiry *re* Lexicon is to hand, and I regret to have to reply in the negative.—

However I will try hard to get a sufficient portion ready & send after you.—

I have not been well lately, now 4 days laid up Influenza, but am getting better. I heard continually from Dr. H. of your getting round, and was much gratified in hearing it.—I should have called last week but I knew you were (as usual) besieged—& your time far too valuable. Wishing you a pleasant voyage.

I am
Yours very truly
W. Colenso.

2 June 1875

P.S. This—unfortunately—is my *most busy* time of the year as Insp. of Schools—not merely through midwinter vacation at hand, but having my Annual Report to draw up—and a whole lot of Tabular Statistical Information for P. Council. W.C.

1875 June 19? to McLean⁵⁰⁷

Napier
Saty. 19th⁵⁰⁸

My Dear Sir Donald,

After a great deal of “revolving in mind & coming to no satisfactory conclusion”—I have written the enclosed,⁵⁰⁹ which (as I take it) serves to place the matter of the Lexn. fairly before you in a few plain words.—I have only *one* purpose in the matter, to aid all that I can while I may.

I do not know where you are *now*: but I post this. And when I hear of your arrival in town will wait upon you & *see your face once more!* —

I am,
My Dear Sir Donald
Yours Very truly
W. Colenso.

1875 July 2: to Luff⁵¹⁰

Napier, N. Zealand
July 2 1875

My dear Sir

Were I to attempt to tell you how very much *you* have occupied my thoughts of late—you would scarcely credit

me. My anxiety was great about you—not hearing any tidings of the Waikato (which moreover bore the name of being a clipper—& was *selected* by you)—three times in June did I telegraph to head quarters at Xt.Church, and at last on the 23rd. I got a meagre telegram saying she had arrived—but nothing more. We don’t, at present, know even the day of her arrival—but suppose it to have been about the middle of June—so you must have had a *long* passage. I hope, in due time, to hear of your being quite well, also your wife & family. No news yet of *our* H. Bay Ships—“W. Cundell”, “Q. Bee”, and (Willie’s) “C. Queen”—but hope to hear of all of them shortly.

Since my last to you (of June 4) the “County of Kintore” and the “John Norman” have arrived here—the 1st. w. Immigrants & a splendid passage of only 82 days, & *all well!* Young Newman is her Doctor: I have heard good things of him *at his profession in Engd.*, but he *looks* very young & boyish): the “J.N.” had a very long passage—but arrived safe, & no passengers; she is now landing her Gas pipes, &c. &c. I know that my last month’s letter has *not* yet left N.Z., (I suppose you will get it w. this.)—it was a sad stormy time when the “Luna”—w. Sir D. on board—left for Wgn., but she was obliged to put back from Palliser Bay to Cape Kidrs. for weather, remaining under our Cape some 3, 4 days, so, was too late for the Mail! &, strange enough too, it was the same a week before w. the Suez Mail hence, which was left here! much growling as usual. I fear that my *first long* letter to you, & Papers, by the *March* Mail, were lost in the “Schiller”. The Storm which detained the “Luna” did much damage—especially among shipping, & loss of Seamen, all along the Coast from E. Cape to Bluff—the beaches at Timaru, Oamaru, &c, being strewn with wreck! The wind blew down the Wesleyan “Church” in Cl. Square,—altogether a perfect smash, not a stick of the main building left standing,—I always thought it was too slight, and too pretentious,—or, attemptedly imposing: floor 7 feet from ground, a great flight of steps, huge roof, &c, &c. 3 fine *red* gums, which you have admired, were also blown down in this place—2 in avenue, & 1 in garden—uprooted & prostrated. I, however, slept well that night, being now so securely boxed in w. trees, so that this house did not feel it much. Since then we have had another gale,—less wind & *more rain*,—great floods, & the usual loss (see Papers): I was at Waipukurau, *caught*, & shut up there, doing nothing! (losing time & money) for 8–9 days! I went on to inspect Waipawa School before vacation (it having been omitted owing to the bothering Elections.) &, there being no room in the rowdy houses there, I went across in the rain & darkness to the Waipukurau; the next day it *poured*: & soon the rivers were very high (flocks of ducks in HRRs large paddock near Lloyd’s garden!!) & no crossing for Coach until end of the next week. I came by the *early* mg. C., although I had *promised* Rev. J. White, & others to meet them at Waipawa in the mg. & return to N. by *afternn.* C.,—however, I felt impelled *to go on!* & then the aftn. Coach broke down, this side of Te Aute, a sad overturn & passengers *hurt*: thanks be to GOD, for his deliverance!—P. Gow keeps the Hotel there now, & seems a *nice quiet* kind of man, & has a *large amount* of Custom. The day I went in, Miss Kelly of Pakipaki (no.2) was married to Bishop,—S.W.’s. overseer. I cannot get Mr S.W. to come to any arrangement about my Waipawa Sections: he writes, & talks, *very fair*—but *does* nothing, &, consequently, I cannot (well) sell a Sn. there: a Ch. Commee. has now been formed at Waipawa, & the *new* Minister Mr. Eccles, who also took my part in the matter,

506 ATL Object #1022689 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

507 ATL Object #1001405 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

508 This letter clearly relates to the 21 July letter, and June is the only month in 1875 that has a Saturday 19th.

509 Apparently a paper about the Maori Lexicon, not now among the McLean papers.

510 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

brought the subject before them: but no! the Comee. being formed of Arrow, Collins, Rathbone, Philips, &c.,—have the majority, & say that Rochfort, Abbott, & all *are wrong!* Shall I go to law? or shall I give all up?

Here, too, in town:—the Municipality *are* carrying on! Their 1st. Common Rate is now out; I give a sample; Hague's paddock, Rent £30., they assess at £60. Steed's, Rent £35., they assess at £50., my House & paddock £95 (I don't object to *this*), but my little *gateway* and, Wilkinson's Cliff, is, £18. more!—then the unoccupied Beach Sns., those by Mao. Club, £45. *each*, annual, value to let—all the others (scraps, & all, from Scandinavian takings) in proportion:—I have been to see the Mayor: he says, They cannot alter it now, my only remedy is to Appeal before R.M., which I must do. Then they are seeking to carry a Water Rate,—hills to pay for flats! and have sent in to me an Order to erect an earth closet within a month, failing which they will do it, & make me pay: this, I suppose, they will do—but they cannot make me *use* it! The P. Council is now sitting, and I see (last night) Lee managed to get Hills exempted from this Water rate,—if Gen Assy. will assent to it. J.A.S. tried to get my £100. struck off! it ended (I see) in £50. being added thereto; but this won't keep me in the work,—it is far *too heavy* for me,—I mean the *clerical* portion: still I thank the P.C. for their *expression*, &c.

Another very nasty thing (to me,) has happened here:—you may recollect 2 Sns. in Carlile Street not very far from Grindell's, belonging to Te Hapuku, & to "the Queen" (or Te Hei); well they had a nice ascent, for building, towards my hill: somehow the Railway (*Weber*) got their assent to level, &c. (for, I hear, a £5.)—of course, in so doing, ruining that property:—well, the quarry men went on, leaving no batta, & *undermining mine*, when down it came! Hague's fence—4 posts & rails,—a perfect ugly charm: I knew *not* of it, (you know I don't go out *there* much, & my man was ill w. fever,) Robjohns came to tell me of it—& the very puriri posts & V.D.L. rails were now being carried off for firing!—I went & saw it—called on Weber,—*not his* now, he left it secure, go to Peppercorne: I sought him, 2–3 weeks (rainy time). Hague now threatening about his horses, as I have to keep fences up, and at last P. says, *he left it*, because the Railway sub-contractors would undermine, & give him "jaw",—he saw then what was coming; & now I have been on those fellows track; & Scully has taken it up: *all talk* about it, as a great shame (you can see it from MacMurray's)—but I fear that I, in this case also, "must grin & bear it"!—The property *there* is now spoiled—a £100. would not compensate, & no one can say where the said charm will stop. My man is still weak,—*not yet able to do any thing!* Two nights ago P.D. came to see me,—it was 8, and I, of course, *alone: no one had called of an evg. since you left!* & I almost wept at seeing any one. I do not think I can stand this excessive loneliness: I hope I may not, foolishly, *try it on too long*, — —

The P.C. has gone on very well, an exceeding "happy family": A Deane Speaker: J.A.S. seems the *leader* of the Opposition! but cannot *do* any thing. All the estimates were passed in no time. H.R. Russell's petition for compensation (in Motuokaia Land Case) is now employing the *Select* Comee. If he gets any—what should not some others also have? But see the Papers I send you.—

The sickness is at last stayed in Town—but is still heavy in the Country—about Te Aute, &c.—Nicholson's wife, Kaikoura Hotel, is laid up—and Johnson at Poukawa, & many others. The young folks of the Town (Newton's,

Moggridge's, Smith's, Yates' &c) are recovering—but very very slowly.—

Barry tried to sell sections at Taradale, by auctn., but failed; cut them up too small (they say). Lyndon is going next week to sell a new Township at Pukahu, called Wolseley (!)—near Close's land & Collins' House. H.R.R. is also going to *try* his Hampden Land: but see the papers.

Young Irvine is worse, in the Asylum! his Brother passed his second (or senior) examination *creditably*. Ross has left the Grammar School. Knight (*again*) lost his case against Miller! he is now in town as a clerk—somewhere—perhaps with Lascelles.

Plenty more of law coming-on between Natives & Europeans, holders of Land!—Lucky, you & I, to escape that trouble, cost, & anxiety. Dolbel took a gentleman to see his Mohaka Run—out in all the gale! lost his horse! forded rivers on foot, breast-high,—little to eat—no house at night, & returned nearly dead! P.D. has got Rheumatism!! & I fear, through foolishly *persevering*, has lost a *good* customer: but then he (P.D.) tried hard to get through, owing to *approaching* Council. Wilson's terrace not yet finished: another large Building ("Orange Lodge"?) between it & Trestrail's.

And now I must conclude. I hope you & yours are all quite well, & enjoying with a zest the Eng. summer. I am pretty well. And heartily wishing you every good.

I am, My Dear Sir,

Yours truly

W. Colenso

P.S. I had forgotten to say, that yesterday Grubb spoke to me about your Premium—I told him *I will pay it*.

Maclinder is to keep Parkin's house, & Mrs P. is to be married to Topping: *on dit*.

1875 July 21: to McLean⁵¹¹

Napier
July 21/75
(midnight.)

My dear Sir Donald McLean,

In sending you the Mss. you wished for—of *both* parts of the Dicty.,—and my long letter or *resumé*,—I can only hope you may find time to give them (the *latter* particularly) some little attention. I know that you are and must be busy. You will see that I have (*painfully*) worked up from the very beginning of the Dicty. such portion (with I. O. Ka, and the other *particles*) being by far the hardest part of the Work—*i.e.* to do it well & fairly: which *I feel I have not yet accomplished*.

The pages that will follow will contain a verb or two taken from under some consonant in the latter part of the Dy.—

You may remember, that some time back you requested me to give "good Maori *examples*,"—you will find plenty given! Of course, by-and-bye, (should the Dy. ever be printed,) some of the examples may be omitted.

You have also, officially, asked me for “some *proposal*” concerning the Work. Well, you will find 4 given in my letter, to which I have already called your close attention.

I fancy *you* will endorse my remarks, &c. under the word *Atua*.

Please let Mr. Ormond see all my Mss. I hope you will get my official letter (*resumé!*) printed with the pages.—

I fear I cannot now write to your Printer about them.

Hoping you are *quite* well & strong,—& wishing you health & strength, &c, &c during the whole session,

I am,
my dear Sir Donald,
Yours faithfully
W. Colenso.

1875 July 25: to McLean⁵¹²

Napier,
Sunday, July
25: midnight.

My dear Sir Donald McLean,

Just at XII have I finished writing! for 3 successive days and *long* nights (each until mg.) have I been *hard* at work not even over the door-step, & without dinner! I *am tired*.

I received your telegram and replied briefly, and I hope you have received what I sent per “Luna” all right. I now send you a little more:—(1.) of the Maori-Eng; just a couple of the heavy root verbs, (that those who know nothing of our N.Z. tongue, may *see* what amounts of work there is!)—and, (2) a few pages of the Eng.-Maori part, just enough to make (I suppose) 2 *pages* of the Specimen Sheet, which I hope you will get *printed*: (should a little more be required) to make up 2 pages, you can take it from what I have already sent you—the *Eng-Maori* parts.)

You informed me, that some Member had already tabled a Motion *re* the Dy.! He seems (if I may say so) to be in a hurry. I hope you will *not* reply, until you have what I sent you all ready (with this also) *printed* to lay on Table: or, that you will request him, to hold on a bit: but there you know best.

Now I have just copied all in the rough from my Mss. I may add, that, if ever completed and printed,—(1.) It will not, of course, be so diffuse as you now have it: (2.) It must be first settled, whether *aa* in some words—as *taaua*, *maaua*, *maaku*, &c.—or *ā*: (3.) It must also be settled, whether the N.Z. alphabet shall run as *I have it*, (*all* vowels, A,E,I,O,U, *first*, and then the consonants,—as the *other* Polynesian dialects have it, and as ours *formerly* had it.)—or whether it shall run—A, E, H, I, K &c.

My dear Sir Donald—You will be too busy to write, but I shall be thinking of you, often.

I hope your health will be *good*, first rate; and I heartily wish you well through all the heavy duties of the Session,

Believe me to be,
Yours very truly,
W. Colenso

1875 August 25: to Luff⁵¹³

Napier, N. Zealand
August 25 1875.

A. Luff Esq

My Dear Sir

Words won’t express how right glad I was to see your own hand writing again! You will have heard from me, that I have heard of the arrival of *your ship*—after a long passage (which I was sure was wholly unexpected on your part,)—but I wanted to know more than that: viz. how you & yours had sped & were! Well on the 6th. Augt. I had the *pleasure* of recg. your letter via Brindisi, also the nice interesting Diary kept by your son. I had no idea you would have seen so *many* ships! so widely different to what it was when I was an ocean-voyager! Two days ago (on 23rd.) I recd. yours of June 29, for which I also thank you (I must tell you that you have *not dated* either of your letters,—I go by their *postmark*.) I am so glad to find that you & yours were well, & that *you had* the very great pleasure of seeing your Father (this strikes a chord in my bosom!)—also your Brothers.—You also gave me the news of the arrl. of “Cel. Queen” in the Thames—my nephew has written from Cornwall, on 27th. saying Willie has teleg. to them when official on 25th., & my Brother had gone up to London (as he did before) purposely to receive W. but, strange to say (for there *was* time enough) I got nothing *more*.—

One thing your last letter lacked, you never mentioned your family;—is George at school, or where; believe me I am interested in their welfare, & be sure you let me know.—

Mr Grubb is at P. Bay, acting R.M. for a month or so: he has written to me to tell you he recd. yr. letter (from Suez), & will write by-&-bye. not perhaps by *this* Mail: he is *alone* there & has plenty to do. I am keeping *George’s Diary* for him, until his return.—Henn here in our P.O. is also alone! he has G. Lindsay as a cadet—but he is too young & too strange yet to do much). Henn is worn-out! & young Miller, who was getting on nicely & promises well, is, I regret to say, Laid up w. Rheumatic fever, & is *very bad* (so his father told me,)—Miller himself has been, also, confined to his bed for a week or more. Mrs Johnstone, Confectioner’s wife, died yesterday. Maori MacKenzie is also dead—from the fever, & several others inland—both Europeans & Natives. The “Friedburg” from Hamburg, w. 251 immigrants, arrived yesterday—*all well*; *no* deaths on voyage (91 days from Start Point) but several births: these immigrants are nearly all foreigners—I hope they may do well: our winter is passed, weather tolerable but unsettled, peaches in blossom. I have been much more unsettled of late, than I could wish—1st. a little anxiety about you & W.—2nd.—the matter of the great slip or chasm here in the hill side, which is daily increasing! & no one can say (owing to the loose soil) where it will stop—all done by Dunbar, & Weber, & others digging for Railway works—instead of going a little farther off to the *small* hill which is Govts.—well, to add to above folks right & left, have had some surveyors who have come *into* my old paddocks & driven in pegs—& only this mg. I was obliged to go down & stop them fencing within my fence!—

3. Then the Appeal against Rates on Monday last (23rd.) in R.M. Court, the precious M. Council not caring to *consider* our complaints—Robjohns, Ferard, Self, & others—I got

£36.—on *the whole*—struck off: but nothing on *these grounds* (viz. Hague's, Watt, &c.)—Duncan, J.A. Smith, John White & Sealy—Kinross, too, on Bench:—I send you a paper.—The chief reductions were made by the Bench on 3 Sns. on the White Road (2 by Mao. Club, & 1, the remg. unsold portions of 309 & 316)—&, as I take it, through my showing that J.A.S.'s sections,—same side, adjg., but *nearer* this way—were rated less—viz. £30. (mine £35. & £40.) Some one on the Bench said, it was owing to mine adjg. the M. Club!!—Renouf, when sworn, I asked why. Said, because I (and *you*) had valued them at so much per ft. frontages, &c, &c. I questd. R., If that was the "*fair* reasonable value," wh. the Act mentioned: and, if there was no difference in selling in bits (trouble, time & expense) than selling in a lot:—and if he considered my price so fair, why he did not value J.A.S at same?—&c. &c.—However Robjohns, Ford, Ferard, myself, we all gained something on our Appeals,—I (of course) *least*. You could scarcely believe Sealy saying (& arguing) that T.S. 108, where my gate & brambles are, was *all flat*!! I have now to pay £17.19.0 yearly! only *one* rate!!

Worse still, both the Papers have, of late, been pandering to the low common Chartist-like opinion—Why should certain folks have large fine properties, gardens, &c, &c,—and that they should be made to pay heavily in Rates, &c, &c,—all which is *applauded* by the 1000! Stuart, Tuxford, & Swan, are *obliged* to retire in Rept., but are all asking to be re-elected. Renouf told me, that the ½ ac. opp. to the Brewery on White Road, was lately sold for £300., & that W.H. Russell sold *all* his Onepoto Sns. remarkably well, all at once and at (about) £80. each! I could not but think of *mine*!—

4. There is any amount of trouble about *all* the Abbotsford Sns.,—party. those you bought: S.W. won't (now) give in, & Rochfort (!) turns round, & says, "he don't see how Mr.W. can": &, "it will take a long time to settle," &c &c— for peace' sake, I must make up my mind to lose pretty much ground there—if I wish to sell.

5. Drower's sm. P.N. for saddlery, fell due on 19th, & was dishonored!!—it came on me as a thunderclap, for I had gone to B.N.Z. to arrange the draft for Walsall: I wrote to D.—who has offered a *part* (2/sths) at *end* of mo. (*after* this Mail leaves) and a Bill at 3 mos. for 3/sths.—I have again written, but, as yet, no answer.

6. Yesterday—after 2 days (or nights) talk, off & on, w. Price, I sold him *the remg.* land at Tarawera, 244 ac. @ £4.10., to be pd. for by instalments extendg. over 3 years, Int. at 6. Cotterill told me, W. Couper wishes to *pay* for his B. Shop, &c, at Havelock: conveyance is making out. Wilson is gone to Engd. Naden Brors. have dissolved Partnership. Colledge has left Jacobs, & joined Craig, who has bought stock &c from Dinwiddie (Herald), & dissolved *from them*. P. Dinwiddie is going out of Business. I have not seen Rev. Mr Sidey for a long while; he has been unwell, but is better. J. Woods *eldest* son is dead from fever: they are, I hear, at New Caledonia!!—

Garry is *still* boring on 333 (Robjohn's Brewery Sn, Wellesley Road) but no water—40ft. deeper than Railway well. Speaking of Grubb, forgot to say, he sent me your chq. to sum for £15.— which *squares* what I had pd. him for you. If Regr. at Wgn. comes on me for fees on your acct. I will gladly pay them. (I see they are going to alter stamp duties to get more money)—& make *mortgages* pay. You must look to Papers for *political* news—they are still

fighting over Abolition of Provinces Bill, but the Opposition number but few.—You ask what ship Rhodes went by? He did not leave for England:—only America, and (I believe) India. Tiffen & lady left last week *en route* for America: she has been *long ill*. I recd. 2 papers from you "Dy. Telegraph" & "Graphic":—the "Wananga" is now a bulky affair of a Paper—pubd. weekly at old Times Office—& abuses McL. *roundly*! Redstone (smith) has a store built next to Meth. chapel for Grocery: & Carlile, solr. has a *concrete* off. building next to Blythe's. J. Hamlin pulled down most of yr. Ho., & has greatly enlarged & raised it *high*. M. Hamlin poor fellow! is just gone to Auckland to be *cut* again for Cancer (in throat & *neck now*.) or *die*!—During the first week of this month I suffered severely from *Neuralgia*—day & night—*no relief*! & I was nearly mad, & nearly gone too. I enclose an advt.; could you get me a bottle, & put it into a tin box in cotton, & send it:—of course I will pay *all* expenses.⁵¹⁴—My last letter to you was a *long* one on 30th July—I find, from a late Gaz., that *Donald*—bought on H.W.P. Smith's Run 271 a. rural Land: and I heard the Remark,—where was Duff? This day 4 ½ ac. Sns. on W. Spit were sold *at upset* price only! by Govt., Lyndon, J.A.S. Scully, & Miller, purchasers. They have been puffed largely in *Herald*: speaking of the Bridge,—of £100. being a sure return ere long for the £10. note, &c, &c., &—*no bid*!!

Sealy has been buying largely in Woodville—he took however the precaution to go there first. P. Dolbel is well, & I believe will succeed in selling his lease or right on his old Mohaka Run. Your old acq. R. Brown of Clive has sold out,—and is now a wanderer! he thinks of migrating to Povy. Bay. So: *good night*.

26th.—Young Irvine is back again, looking *very* weird-like! he is allowed to go about anywhere free: but I think his coming back *here* is wrong: his father told me, 3 weeks ago, that his mother had gone to Wgn. to get him sent to his Brother in Melbourne,—that might have been *right*. Irvine, is rated at £300!!—

Trestrail told me in town today, that he had lost *all* his hill property here in town—that is it took it *all* to clear him in the lawsuit, (*double* one) in Sup Ct. w. Giffard. I was sorry to hear this. The Friedberg Immigt. Ship which only arrd. on 24th.—left this mg. early for Java!! *Dispatch*.

And now my dr. Sir good bye

Bel. me ever & always Yours W. Colenso.

1875 September 22: to Luff⁵¹⁵

Napier, N. Zealand,
Sept. 22, 1875.

A. Luff, Esq.

My Dear Sir,

My last to you was on 25th August, since which I have had no letters from you, but 2 papers of July, for which I thank you.—

⁵¹⁴ Colenso attached a clipped advertisement from a newspaper:

<p>NEURALINE gives instant relief in TIC DOULOUREUX, Neuralgia, Sciatica, Toothache, Rheumatism, Gout, and all Nerve and Local Pains.—LEATH and ROSS, Homœopathic Chemists, No. 5, St. Paul's Churchyard, and 9, Vere-Street, W. All chemists, in bottles, 1s. 1½d. and 2s. 9d.; by post, 1s. 3d. and 3s.</p>

⁵¹⁵ ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

Our Mail for Engld. is closing and I don't like for it to leave us without a line to you. I have a few items of interest to mention, though not of a pleasing character. Poor Mrs Tiffen died at Wellington last week, & there she has been buried. She had been long ill here, and, as a last resource, a sea voyage & travelling in America was thought of—but she only reached W.—F.T. went down, but not in time to see her alive. This last week has been a sad one of *sudden Deaths here*: a man named Ellis, a carter, was killed, in Dalton Street, near Dennett's; in driving, his horse bolted, and he, leaping off, fell, & the wheel went over his neck & chest—dead immy. Two evenings ago, a Scandinn. at work near Dolbel's Brick Yard, was killed instantaneously by a huge rock falling on him. The same evening, an hour after the arrival of the "Helen Denny," one of her passengers would swim on shore, from the moorings, & was drowned; body not found. And this mg., a newly-arrived Immigrant named Mason (who had taken honours at King's College) was found dead in a closet on the White Road belonging to a man named Fairhead: he had just taken his breakfast.—

The "H. Denny" had a beautiful passage of only 86 days; no sickness, and only one death—and that a weak infant. She came in, pretty close, & went round the Bluff looking well with 24 sails set! & Colours flying, & fired 3 guns! Her Immigrants seem a nice lot.—The "Merope," and the "Waikato" left E. at the same time, & the "Chile" 3 weeks before but these have not yet turned up: the "Strathmore," which left E. in April has not been heard of, & is supposed lost.⁵¹⁶ I received a letter from Registrar at Wellington, requesting me to pay fees; I did so—£1.0.0.—as you desired. But I have still money of yours in hand, as I have *not yet paid* the old Road Board Rates at Havelock,—I have written about it 3 times. W. Couper has pd. me for his triangular bit at Havelock (formerly Garry's),—and Avison has also paid the *smaller* sum for his *triangular* plot.—P. Dolbel has sold his Mohaka Run (through Miller, but P.D. *doing the work* going thither *twice* w. the purchaser, &c., &c.) for £1400.—(not, however, Cash.) and Miller has charged £70!!—I suppose now P.D. will be able to get out of debt. He is very well. The Taradale Road is just open again: Rymer will run an extra 'Bus that way.—Tuke has fenced in Mrs Tuke's land near U.M. chapel, & has stuck up a notice to let it; he is now living in W. Thomas' old House. I see a Building commenced next to Dr. Hitchings' old earth fence, on the diagonal short cut after leaving my Gate,—whose it is I don't know.—Knowles has leased that entire section. Garry has failed (at a heavy loss) in getting water for Robjohns' Brewery; the 2 E.R. Sns. thereabouts were let last week by auction: one for £15., 15., & 20, & one for £10., 15., & 20,—ea. 3 years.—I have sold nothing since. Your old acq. Brown of C. Clive, is selling off. I have run a fence (at last!) across my hill paddock, from the gate to the Ngaio bushes; and have blocked up the *upper* fence & gateway in the corner,—& have put my *upper* Milton Road gate & entrance to rights.—A few more houses are going up in the town—one I see on J.A.S.' section near mine & M. Club. Wilson has 3 tenants for his 4 house "Terrace". Whitmore I hear is in Melbourne, on his way here.—H.E. Webb is out for P. Bay, in P.Cl. Auckland against S. Caulton—and will, they say, get in! (I must send you this mg's. Herald, that *you may see* a squib! in it: *you*, above all, will understand it.) The Abolition Provinces Bill has been carried, after *long* & severe fighting, by ⅔rds. of

the Ho.,—but the troubled waters have *not yet* subsided!—Heaps of bitter words said: Sir D., and J.D.O. dreadfully abused—particularly in *Auckland Papers*. Karaitiana has told the Ho., that if there are to be only 4 *Maori* Reps., the M. won't come again! (Just what I long ago foresaw, & told D.McL.) Sir G.G. goes in for a tax (export duty) our *Wool*: and *Doctors* are *not* to be *Coroners*.—(Both of these were also brought forward by one!) Two Select Comms. have given H.R.R., & Robertson, *Damages!!* & called the attention of the Govt. to the state of the Land laws, &c., in H. Bay! H.R.R. has just got a Comee. to enquire into Te Aute, & Pov. Bay (Williams' farm!) trust and Henare Tomoana & Karaitiana are petitioning *re* "Goughs" (!) & Maori Islands:—but, I believe, Tareha got paid for this *latter*. But I must refer you to the Papers for news: Mr. Grubb tells me that *he* will send you Papers this month—so I shall not.—

Willie, who got home *well*,—asks me for *your* address, which I am giving him by this Mail. W. saw Braithwaite in Devonshire, & had a *talk* with him. My Brother, who was in L. waiting, & who went on board of the "Cel. Queen" in St K Docks (on *her entering*,) tells me he thinks W. will go to sea again. I shall be ready to pay *any* premium for a *good* ship & *master*:—(in the spring,)—but I shall hear more by & bye.

I have again been laid up a week & more w. Rheumism. caught in the U.M.School Room, which is *unlined*: I am better again, & have been 3 days his week in Miss Gascoigne's School. I hope you are *quite* well, and also all your family,—& hoping you may *all* bear the severe Winter of England, I am

Yours truly W. Colenso.

I forgot to tell you of Drower & his 5 months' rent. I obtained the *whole* money from B for £8.13 at my own responsibility. And after some time waiting on D.—he sent me a Chq. for £130. & a renewal at 3 mths. for £150. The Chq. however dated 31st. Augt. I sent it in on 1st. inst.—and it was *refused payt.*!! This upset me. I wrote to D.—he did *not* reply—but after *waiting*—the Chq. has been paid.—

I have not seen Mr Sidey since I last wrote, he has been unwell, I was told, but he is now better and able to do duty. I counted 170 Black swans in the lagoon 3 days ago!! they will devour all the fish.—

1875 September 24: to Enys⁵¹⁷

Napier
Sept. 24 1875.

J.D. Enys Esq, F.L.S.
&c &c &c.

My Dear Sir

Yesterday I received your note of the 7th. inst.,—enquiring respecting *two* of my little publications (in former days!) on the Natl. Histy. of N.Z. (North Isld.),—in reply, I have to say, that I cannot supply you with copies (save, perhaps,—if of any use,—of the *smaller* one of the "*Ferns*.") Both papers (with others) were originally published in Tasmania, (through my good friend Lady Franklin, *late*ly deceased,) in

⁵¹⁶ She was wrecked on Crozet Islands and the story of the survival of passengers and crew was later related by Colenso in a letter to the editor.

⁵¹⁷ ATL Ms-papers-0670-1.

the "Tasman. Journal of Natural Science," vols. I & II, (1843–1844.):—and also, the *larger* one, by Sir W. Hooker, in the "London Journal of Botany," vol. III. for 1844. Another of my papers, originally published in Tasmania (as above),—that on the "Moa,"—was, in part, republished by Professor Owen, in the "Annals of Nat. History," for 1844:—as, indeed, your Dr. Haast, has, I think, subsequently stated.

During my first years in N.Z., (from '34 to '40) I paid particular attention to its Natl. Histy., then but little known,—particularly to its Conchology, Entomology, & Geology (of course, of parts which I then knew), sending copious specimens to England—where they will be found some day! (I may mention, to you, that I discovered *Helix Dunniae*, and *H. Bushyi*,—and gave specimens to Mr. Alexander Bushy, of N.S.W., who touched at the Bay of Islands on his voyage to England,—and who there ———.) *Afterwards* I took up *Botany*, in great measure owing to my dear friends Allan Cunningham, and Sir W. Hooker.

Should you care to have a copy of the little *brochure*, on *Ferns* (now antiquated), I will send you one with pleasure.—

I am
My dear Sir
Yours very truly
W. Colenso

P.S. I could *lend* you vol. II. of the "Tasm. Jl. of Nat. Science," which contains the bigger paper, *viz.* the "Journey" &c., you saw,—if such would be of any service: sending it to & fro, by *Registered* post.—I should not like to lose it. W.C.

1875 September 30: to McLean⁵¹⁸

Tuesday Evg.
Sept. 30/75.

Dear Sir Donald McLean

I am just back from the Country Inspecg. Schools, & my hand is still shaky from motion of train, &c. &c.

Enclosed I send you a copy of last Saty's. "*Wananga*,"—I have marked a few passages for your notice. J.W. (to *please* his Employers, I suppose,) always translates with a twist *against* the Govt.—sometimes the plural for the singular, and sometimes the downright positive statement for a mere allusion.

You will also see what he says of the "Waka Maori"! a short time ago he copied a severe & lying article from the *Evg. Star* against Mr. Ormond, & then, too, making the black (as in that paper) *more black*.—

I also noticed in the "Auckland Wkly. News" that G.T.C. (Chapman, I suppose) was very severe upon *you*! Outrageously so! Perhaps you saw it.—(I think it was in the paper of 18th.—or, possibly, 11th.)—

I hope you are *still* well in health—*strong* against all your pol. foes.

Tanner was telling me yesterday that the Court of Appeal had as good as said, that, the mere passing of a Block through the Native Lands Court did not confer such a legal title as a party could take a stand on:—If so; Could not H.L.R. be yet approached *re* the old village of Waipukurau? (You may remember I spoke to you about this, some years ago:—as *you* reserved it (the village) *to & for the poor folks all living in it, in the Name of Her Majesty*; otherwise they would not have signed the Deed of the old (1st.) Hapuku Block.

If the matter of the Mao. Lex. comes up at all, I shall *not* be surprised if Sir G.G. speaks *against it*; (or against myself) not withstanding all his former old and long fine talk to me! Should he do so, you may quietly point out to him what I have said of him (in that matter) in my *resumé*. I hope, my dear Sir Donald, *you will get me that resumé printed*.—

Believe me
ever, Yours very
truly, W. Colenso.

P.S. *Latimer*, whom you *once knew*, has gained his Degree of B.A. at the University of Camb., & is now going-in for *M.A.*, & studying at the Temple, London.—

1875 October 20: to Luff⁵¹⁹

Napier, N.Z.,
October 20 1875.

My Dear Sir

You can fancy me *here*, with *all* my surroundings & sitting down this night to write to you! My last to you was on 22nd. Sept., which I trust you duly received since then (i.e. *last* week) I received your 2 letters of July 26–28, & Aug. 24, both of course by the *same* S.F. Mail (Let me tell you: 1. that you began your letter of July 26, saying—the *next day* (27) was the Mail day, & yet you add, without a word, a *very short* Postscript on 28th & post your letter *on that* day, to slumber nearly a month in the P.O.!! 2. In yours of Aug. 24th, you say,—“Last Mail we did not receive any letters from H. Bay,”—I cannot understand why. It seems that I have letters from friends in London, written the *day before* (23) acknowledging & answering my letters of both June & July, which of course had been by them received on 23rd.—I can only suppose that you must have some how got yours 2 days after!! (I wrote you *long* letters in both June & July Mails,—but but I knew the *June* one *from H.B.* did not get to Wgn. in time, owing to the Sy. gale, which made the “Luna” put back to Cape Kidrs.)—but I shall hope to hear by your *next* that you did receive them.—

I don't know of any thing in your 2 letters (above mentd.) requiring answer,—I would you had seen Devon &c *not* under water,—and that I could hear of your being *settled* down somewhere & very very comfortable—that is, if you will, shall, or can settle down in *England*—which several of your old acqs. doubt. I hear that J. Rhodes is *tired* of it, & is (about this time) leaving for N. India—& then return to N.Z. Col. Whitmore arrived here 2 days ago,—with Ormond, Stokes, Locke & Fannin,—all from Wgn. in “Luna.” Session just over,—Parlt. to be dissolved *tomorrow*! Two Bills of note have been passed—Abolition

of Provinces (*no more P. Councils!* so I have not lost much,) 2 in the new Representn. Bill, a 3rd. Member for *Napier* (or H. Bay),—then there are 3 other Bills affecting us:—1. to allow Corporation to borrow £10,000—for water works; 2. to enable them to fill swamp &c. &c. 3. to enable the Port Ahuriri Bridge to be built. Fannin went to Wgn. on some matter of disputed, or complicated accounts—went overland, away altogether nearly a fortnight.

I have not *seen* Mr Sidey since my last (nor for some time previous) I believe he is pretty well. Dr. H. told me *here* on Sunday last that Mr & Mrs Sidey were at Miss Ormond's evening party last wk.,—& of course the Dr. I have been laid up just all this month but *not* from Rheumatism this time. On Sept 30 I went by *early* train (7.30) to W. Clive School, & caught a severe cold, which was increased in returning in the *draughty* train (*door & windows open!*)—in a day or two I had a fearful cough—a raging, horrid one with voice lost, scarcely human and got so bad in the following week, that I began to think of putting my Papers &c. in order, fearing I might not have 24 hours more! Providentially my *head* was *very clear*—only chest & throat affected:—& it was the anniversary day of my old friend Catchpool's death! Of course now you are gone, I had *no* visitors, & the evenings & *long* nights did *seem* lonely—aye, *were so* of a *reality*! Dr. H. has been very attentive & I still take med. every 4 hours: I am *much better*, but far from being all right. I put on my boots on 18th (2 days ago) & went to town but could scarcely get back. The weather is *delightful*—and I ought to be a-visiting my schools, but cannot just now. Of course, if I don't, it will seem I shall have to resign—though, for many reasons, I don't wish to do so just now. Just the state of my health. I have not called to see Mr. O or F.,—& they have *not* called on me; I did think that my neighbour would have done so,—perhaps I was wrong in expecting it.

Poor Martin Hamlin has returned from Auckland: the Drs. can do nothing for him, so he *must* die from Cancer,—his case is much like that of F. Slaters. Sheehan brought up all the Heretaunga & other like matters in the Ho., a long speech: C. took him up, & told him some queer things—insomuch that S. got his motion negatived loudly in the Voices. H.R.R. too has come out very bitter in "Lords"—but, I am told, only to his own cost. I hope you will see the Papers—which Grubb is to send you, instead of me. Wilson has only let 2 of his 4 terrace Houses (the 2 end ones); I fear that may prove to be a bad spec. Dr. H. tells me, that W. had borrd. £500. from Tiffen to build them, &c. Some more Houses are going up—on Wh. Rd., & on the Hill—in *several places*. Garry got water—Robjohns & Ellis' Brewery—but lost it again through pipe choking: they are still hard at it. The plot *between* your old shop & Morrisons is being built on (I think for McVay), & I also think that N. & C. are going to have *his* present shop. Several *new* Houses being built at W. Clive, Havelock & Waipukurau. Orr says that W. Clive is going ahead more than any other place, including Napier. At Waipukurau they have also a Branch Bk. (U.B.A.), of which Torr is to be Governor.—only fancy *John Alexr. S.* becoming a "Good Templar", *Methodist* Sch. Room Brauch,—of course, he has *something* in view. There has been a storm in a teacup at Waipukurau—S. Williams & Eccles v. Levy, Poole, & others, *re* Parsonage! Lots of writing in Herald, & more to come. The new Ch. of E. Minister (Mr Sherman) "*selected* by Bridge!!" has arrived *there* at Waipukurau. 3 new Houses built just below my gate opp. side, next to Drs. *old* earth fence: one a Bakehouse! The H.B. Agricl. Socy. have half their annual show fair of stock at Hastings—*much*

grumbling. I hear that H.R.R. is fencing between *us* at Hampden, but, my informant says, (a *resident*) that he does not think he is right as to *the line*, as it wholly deprives me of water:—more trouble I suppose. The Wesleyan Ch. below me, is looking well, just shingled—perhaps rather too much of pinnacles, &c &c—seeing it is only wood work.

Well now, I must conclude. You owe me much for letter-writing: dinna forget I often,—too often—*think of you*: should it be otherwise?—

And with kindest regards and best wishes I am my dear Sir,
Yours, W. Colenso.

Lee & Cornford have dissolved partnership (just as we thought)—M. Boylan Waipukurau is a Bankrupt. Dr Gibbes' wife just got a son—a smart Drapers Shop opened on plot—corner—next to Sandy's *old* shop.

1875 November 12: to Mantell

Napier
Novr 12 1875

My Dear Sir

As I am writing to you offy., *re* the Geologl. Maps, I just add this.—

I am not sure but that I ought also to address you offy.,—if so, pray forgive me.—

It is to enquire about the *copies* of the Trans. of the Instit. 1874, for *our* Members,—If such will shortly be forwarded? A month ago I received a copy of the same, (as a *Member* of the Wgn. Branch,)—and this prompts the enquiry.

Further: I don't know that I need to say any thing more in reply to your 2 telegrams of Novr. 3 & 4, *re* the election of a Hony. Member, than I have already said in my brief telegraphic reply. I was very unwell at the time, and still am,—slowly recovering (?) from a severe & long attack of Bronchitis, which completely floored & almost carried me off! I noticed in your telegram you said, "such election is to take place in *October*,"—but, as I read the by-law, it should be in *Novr.*—however I may be wrong.

Did you see the *resumé*, *re* the unfortunate Maori Lexn., I wrote & sent in July for the Members of the G.A.? that they might *clearly know* how matters stood. Your *name* & initiation of that matter were prominently stated. That paper should have been in Members' hands,—and I fear it is not even now printed!!

What about the reprinting of the 1st. vol. of Transactions? Dr. Hector wrote to me, asking, if I wished to correct my Papers in it?—In reply I wished to know, whether the copious & interesting (yet necessary) *notes*, which I had sent with the original Ms. (& *again* to Dr. Hector, on his informing me he had mislaid them) could not be added thereto?—But to this I never obtained any answer. I believe that Dr. Hector was absent, S., at the time. Could you tell me anything about it?

Hoping you are quite well.

I am, my Dr. Sir,

Yours sincerely,

W. Colenso.

1875 November 15: to Luff⁵²⁰Napier, N. Zealand,
Novr. 15, 1875.

My Dear Sir

My last to you was on the 20th October—at a time when I was very unwell. Last week I recd. yours of 21st. Sept. Also, some papers including a Graphic for all which I thank you.—

I shall not be able to write you a *long* letter this time, for I am just returned from Taradale, in trap, & I find, to my horror! that Grubb (who has for a week been telling us of the S.F. Mail leaving on 18th.) *now* informs us in the “Telegraph” of this evening, that he must make up his S.F. Mail *tomorrow*, 16th.—and I have several letters to write!! Perhaps had I not in my last to you (& to a few others) written of my *then* state of health I should not now write, under this pressure. No doubt at that period I was *very* ill. Dr. H. has recently told me that *he* was struck w. appearance & symptoms. That he had never seen me so bad before. I am not yet *out of the wood*. I am still taking med., *plenty*.—I went out, on Friday last (12th.) to see Ormond who had been back nearly a month & I had not seen him; & today I was obliged to go to Taradale (Martin’s) to see M., whose 3-year term is up, & who would not turn out—although I had let the place to another, @ £20. pr. ann., which sum M. had refused to give, & had taken N. Williams’ 16 ac., adjg., & built a ho. on it, & my place going to ruin,—weeds *only* & fences *all down*! M. had *since* found out that he cod. get by subletting £25. a year, & so wished to keep it on. However, that is all settled.—My voice is returning *slowly*, but no power of tasting or smelling: cough less, but w. pain in chest, *increased* when I stoop forward to write—as it *is now*. I think I told you, in my last, of the Sns. in Carlyle St, which were the Natives’—well, Blythe got them from them, as I could not go to Lyndon’s auction; I sent him an offer—£2. pr. ft. frontage for all—not for 1 or 2—(that was the *Reserve*). L. however sold 2 (nearest Mundell’s), at 44/-, or so,—*perhaps* all *after*, but I don’t know. Knowles (as *usual*) has done well for *himself* in his ¼ ac. (R.) corner next Odfws. Hall: he has actually cut it up into 7 lots, with a lane 9 ft. wide, & they are all let & 4 built on, smallest @ £7. pr. an. largest £10. or more; but *he* has spoiled Cl. Sq. w. his hookery. Lindsay has cut up Weber’s opp. corner of ½ ac. into 5, has let one, or more, & is anxious only for *good* tenants. Peppercorn’s place fencing-in & improving Cl. Sq. is now before the Muny. £750., and I suppose they will go in for that *also*! The Mayor has given notice of a Rate No. 213, for Water! & Goring is now sinking a Well, near his Foundry for them. G. *got water* for Robjohns & R’s. Brewery is being erected fast. Lindsay *sold* the Sn. nearly opp. to Wh. S. Brewy. at £2.10 pr ft. frontage!! (it belonged, I think, to an Aucklander).—Watt *gives up* his paddocks next month. 4 are *out* for Napier—Mayor, Capt. W. Russell, Sir D., and—today—Tuke, & this evening’s paper speaks of a Requisn. to Sutton!! Capt. W.R. called to day, for my vote,—which I have promd.—If I don’t come out myself: I cannot help thinking I have a kind of (*quasi*) right to this 2nd. Nap. seat. Major Carlyon is also dead, making 4 from that family within a short year! he died at Sydney, & his body has been brought back. Bower (ack.) accosted me, some time ago, as *your* agent, for Rates due from you. I asked, on what Sn.? but he could not tell me

then: I promised to call—then I became unwell, but I called 3 days ago, (as I should soon write to you)—and I found it was on your House!! I told B. that was sold to J.H., &c. What confused B. was—Renouf’s putting down J.H. for the *adjoining* Sn. By the way, how could you jump to the conclusion that Reardon, Bl. & S-k-r., was going to *leave*? A mistake that of yours.

R. Price has been *repeatedly* walking-in to me of late, *re* Mao. Lexn., & *such matters* (the old story). From *his* paper I find, that the Ho. voted me £200. for the Elementary Maori Books, (2 vols.) written by me in ’63–’65, on Hon. Mr. Fox’s order (endorsing Dr. Shortland’s *Off.* letter) but the money *promised* had not been paid, and I, vexed, had omitted to ask (order) for it. R.P. runs his head agt. it—as being some *thing new*.—& I have not cared to undeceive him!—The anny. in your old ch. came off very well: Mr Sidey was last week at Waipukurau, & they are soon to have a Presbytn. Minister there (a Ch. of Engd. one arrived there last *mo.*) H.R.R. gives land, & something towards maintenance. The Ch. Reserve at Hampden (No. 14, containing 2 acres) is to be sold, upset £4. pr. ac. I see a Mr Purvis has Sns. on 3 sides—I hear that Rathb. wants it.—

Well now I can’t write *you* any more. I wish you *had* told me *much* of your voyage, & that you *will* of your passing an Eng. winter: all about it.—

Goodbye! with best, aye *best* wishes,
—Believe me, ever yours, W. Colenso.

P.S. I saw plenty of ripe strawberries at Burton’s today (15th.) (you will remember the plot), but the old man was not polite enough to offer any.—

I have not seen Rev. Mr. Sidey since my last to you; nor, indeed, for a long while before that: he is however well. Neither have I seen Grubb, or Dolbel, or any one—save Fannin, who called one day in passing. W. Marshall has also been very unwell, similar complaint to mine (*Bronchitis*), & so have several others I hear—inland,

Farewell W.C.

Possibly go next week to Waipukurau for *change of air*.

I also recd. yours from Exeter of Aug. 31st. via Brindisi.

Rev. G. Morice has arrd. w. his wife, & is now at Xt.Church, so his brother William told me here last week, he came here to *buy the mare*!—I am to give my decision about her shortly. WC.

16th.

This mg. I sent my man to P.O. And Mr Grubb writes to me a note saying—please tell Mr Luff that I have been greatly interrupted last few days—one of my children took ill,—the Inspector of P.Offices arrived & is still here, & the Mail is to be got together (*both*, indeed, S.F. & Brind.) & sent off today—2 days earlier than was advertised—*so I cannot write to him by this Mail*: his letter has been received: will write by next. Remember me kindly.”—
(a fine glorious soft rain today!) WC

1875 November 20: to Cheeseman⁵²¹Napier
Novr. 20/75

Mr Cheeseman,

My Dr Sir,

I have some recollection of having some time ago received a very kind note from you—which emboldened me to trouble you w. this.

I have lately received from a person of Auckland (a *Mrs.* or *Miss* Leech, I presume,) a small Book compiled by her of the Ferns of N.Z.—I dare say you too have seen it. Well, in it, she refers to *you*, & to a Bk. you had lent her (“Jl. of Botany Brit. & For.”), which *restores* to my old Fern (*Lindsaea viridis*) its origl. name—as *published* by me in 1841: then there are other new (*to me*) statements therein, e.g. *Hymenophyllum subtilissimum*, *Lomaria Patersoni*—*Gymnogramma Pohoi* &c &c &c—

Now I wish to ask you, if you have any *small* Books (not bulky)—which would throw any light on those alterations;—which seem to me to be not only against all standard & world-recognised rules (as to *right of priority* of nomenclature), but against *us* N.Z. field Botanists in particular.

Sir W. Hooker half-allowed my *H. Frankliniarum* to be a species (see *his Species Filicum*): and his son, subsequently, (in Hand Book, 2nd part,)—says, that if distinct from *aeruginosum* (which I well knew it was) then it must stand as *H. Frankliniarum*: now, for Lady Franklin’s sake, I wish to preserve its *first-published* name.

So also with *Polypodium sylvaticum*,—this plant is *not* an *Aspidium*.

Did I send you a copy of my *old* publication on Ferns? If I did not, I will, w. pleasure, do so.—

I have not received any of the Trans. or Journals of the Linn. Socy. since ’65!! (the fault however is *mine*,)—hence I am ignorant of very much.—

For many years I have had *no time* for Botany,—now, however, it may soon be different.⁵²²

If you send me a parcel for a few days by post—I will of course pay *all* Expenses w. thanks.

And if you should have a sp. or two *to spare* of *Hymen. Cheesemanii*, *Trichomanes rigidum*, &c &c—you could send them: (also *T. Lyallii*, & *T. humile*).

I shall not now reply to Mrs (or Miss)—*tell me which* until I hear from you.

I am, Dear Sir
Yours (in haste for mail)
W. Colenso.

521 Auckland Museum MS 58/Box 5/Folder 3. A draft of Cheeseman’s polite and supportive reply is in the same box, dated 29 November.

522 Cheeseman struggled to answer this: he drafted “Should you take up N.Z. botany...” then changed it to “Should you return to work in N.Z. botany...” then to “Should you resume active work in N.Z. botany, as you must, and as I hope you will do...” then “I am glad to hear that you (are) thinking of resuming active work in N.Z. botany....” Nothing if not ambivalent!

Todea superba (which was also re-named *Leptopteris superba*,) I see is come back again to the genus I had originally assigned it!!

1875 December 12: to Luff⁵²³Napier, N.Z.
Decr 12 1875.

My dear Sir

Your kind, full & most welcome letter of October 30th came to hand on the 8th. inst. Right glad was I to find that at the time of your writing you were *all* well, for you & yours are *often* in my thoughts,—whether I am at home or abroad.—My last to you was on Novr. 16th, since which much have taken place, of wh. I must endeavour to give you an outline.—To begin with the first, (in times, I mean)—the very day after (17th. Novr.) I got out *my* address to the Electors for the *new* Napier seat in our Parliament, and, two days ago brought out *Maney*! we are now 6 or 7 entered in the race, 2 of whom only can win, so a rare lot of us *will* come to grief!—of whom I may be one. Sir D.—*should* be sure of one seat. (I hope he may get in without difficulty, but there is much against him, secretly). Then there are, Stuart (Mayor), Capt. W. Russell, Tuke, Maney, myself, & J. Rhodes is *publicly stated* to be brought forward (I believe, by Lyndon)—and Fannin told me 2 days ago that Sutton is also to be trotted out! It hung on for a long while, as to Sutton,—who was only waiting the decision of the Judges on the Mangateretere case; if that should be in his favour then he wd. come out, & Hitchings told me that he (H.) felt *sure* that S. would be at the head of the poll!! The Judges, however, gave it *against* Sutton—and so he is *not* coming out. I hear that he *feels* it, & so does Nielson & others. Mr Hutchison who lent S. £5100. on that security!) Lee, too, was long talked of. The writs arrived last week & Sealy (confound it!) has fixed on the 20th. for nom. day, & 30th for poll day:—instead of allowing the holidays to pass,—which he could have done as he is allowed a max. of 30 days by stat. This daily interferes with me.

I don’t however think that S. knew of this, or knowing of it, acted on it—rather as I view it to suit Sir D.—who is now at the Criterion. It is said, the chances are between Stuart & W. Russell. Maney’s coming out will take away *Catholic* vs., and several country ones from R.,—If Newton & J. Rhodes come out, such will weaken Stuart and of course myself of whom I say nothing.) Tuke (the old goose!) has *no shame*! But he is come out to vex the Govt.—he tried *hard* for a billet & so he will work this way as against G.R. who is the Govt. man. Stuart & his Commee. *are working*, so you know how the canny Scotch can & *do* work secretly. Alexr. S. *is* whisking about! He is a Good Templ. now, & an officer too & *using* it, and Stuart has recently been re-installed Mayor, on the *nomn.* of 2 or 3 of his *Council*! no other having been proposed. Of course, I *not* being a F. Mason, or a G. Templ., or Forester, or Oddfellow, or Methodist, or R. Cathc., or Teetotaller, or Orangemen, or H.B. Clubbite, being too much of a *Catholic* in the real & true sense of the word) to belong to any sect or party, have but a so-so chance; still, I do believe I would beat them if they would (or could) fight fairly.—I published a Maori advt. in the Maori Paper (Te Wananga), which took w. the

523 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

Natives, and some of them wrote in reply, agreeing &c., but I find their letters have not been published (the Natives told me this: I shall try to see them openly at Pakowhai shortly. Stuart & Tuke have also addressed them in a Maori advt. Tuke hopes to gain them through his having said Heretaunga was worth £30. per acre. I have sent circulars *asking* for a vote to *every* voter on the Roll (including Stuart, Tuke, Sir D. &c.) Two have returned by Post my Circ. one being Hooper the Barber (he puts his name inside) (I have employed the other Barber ever since the lawsuit) one being unknown to me. Although I *fancy* the writing is that of Knowles. The Govt. wish (I *hear*) to get in W.R. to aid them in the Heretaunga matter.

A few good friends in town have (of their own accord) promised me their votes (as you know). I ask no one:—among them Turton & Lascelles, Grubb & Robjohns, 2 (N. & Close's), Higgins (2), several working men & carters and a number in the Council. Still, you may (rightly enough) ask, Why bother myself about it? and I will endeavour to ansr. your Question. First, I *see* I am daily getting less able for my present duty (schools): I can sit & read & write & think (thank GOD, my faculties are clear,) but I cannot knock about the country & sit on hard forms in draughty school rooms, (I have twice seen O. about resigning, but he will not hear of it & begs me to hold on:)—but come it *must*, & that *soon*. Second, the Govt. have, in their way, closed the Mao. Lexn. work. Third, my sons are in England, & are willing to remain there; but I wish to know, (before I take the inevitable step) whether there is any work or duty I *may*, *can* & *ought* to do with L. before I should leave it (ever believing & holding *that part* of the Ch. of Engd. *Catechism*—“to learn to do my duty in that state of life into which it shall please God to call me”—hence, too, it is that I can take & *bear* defeats perhaps better than many—especially when I have *sought* direction—as I always do—in *all* matters, & abstained from every species of *bribery* & undue influence, so—. If again defeated—why then another indication England-wards: for I dreadfully *need some Society*—now I have *none*.—But I must stop this.

Now for *sad* news: poor Ernest Weber has been killed instantaneously while sitting at his writing! A muff of a fellow cadet, named Webber, in acquiring a gun wh. Mr. Weber had lent in the winter to Mr Miller, Railway Manager, & wh. he had left *loaded* in the room, fired it, & the charge entered at base of E.W.'s. skull, died immy. not even a cry! A card had been put up for the muff to aim at, up above, near the ceiling, & it is believed, though the lad denies it, that he aimed at Ernest, thinking by the close report to frighten him: he says—the gun slipped!! There was an immense sensation about it. Poor W. feels it:—and so do I. I have thought, how could I have borne it—if it had been Willie: and then of *you*—how you would have suffered if it had been one of your dear sons. Yesterday we had *two* fires!—one at 1 a.m. near Carley's house (& everything up near Tylee's & Fannins): & one Massey's Wood & Coal Depot just below nr. Cl. Sq. this at 4 p.m. Day remarkably fine, little wind & that from N.W. or Wesley. Church would have *gone*! Boylan's *isolated* store was in danger; but it was wholly saved. Massey (a hard working man) I am told by my man James feels it *bitterly*. Renouf's wife is dead; also Mrs Stewart, who lived in Poole Road; and *poor dear old* Mrs Wilson. Lear is in a *sad* way: nearly blind, only knows one by voice; has lost *every thing*; not having A1. At present he sits all day in the verandah of the Royal when fine, in the sun: I only *first* heard of it 3 or 4 days ago.—I fear he took to drinking heavily, after his

wife's death; placed immoral unprincipled persons in charge—they receiving all the monies, & trusting whom they pleased, & it ended (as Mrs Ford told me) in L. giving up everything, Ho. &c., Milton Road, to Swan, & to Neal & Co. who got *all*!! I was led to give the poor creature money to buy *shirts*. Aldridge, too, has come rapidly to grief, has given up Butchering,—& is out on the spree! Bishop, baker, is Bankrupt. Hack, of Brewster St, is selling off to go home in “H. Denny.” A man named W. Lyon hung himself at Puketapu—a hardworking sober young man—he had had a falling-out w. one of his companions. *Several* have *suffered* from Rheumatism—I have lots of *sympathizers now*! Houses are springing up—in your old street opp. your gate—2–3. Dinwiddie making a rookery! so over end of Wh. Road between the 3 Roads old & new: & on the hill near Lee's old residence, W. of me: & next to Dr. Spencer's (on Rymer's)—a shop for Martin, tailor: while the Herald office is enclosing the whole of J. Wood's little garden, the Gums having been chopped down.

Miss Carter is married to L. Margoliouth: and a short shopman at Boylan's, married. Rev G. Morice, now stationed at Xt.Ch. has got a little one. Rev D. Sidey is now *there*, at their Assembly. I have not spoken to Mr S. for 3–4 months!! I have been but little in town: I should go oftener there but I have no place I can *sit down* in: Dr H. thought of my engaging a spare room for that purpose at the Masonic, and I agreed to it,—but have since given it up.) I have sold a sm. bit of Land, 33 ft. frontage, next to the corner of Sale Street, to a man named Goddard for £100. *at end* of 9 yrs. or *all* to be left for me, he paying £10. pr. ann.; he has already put up a house on it. Have let the 2 Paddocks (wh. Seed had) to Johnson, baker, the *inner* one, & to Scorgie butcher, the outer one, at £20. pr. ann. *each*. Hague also paying £5. addl. Scally, had not yet put up the fence wh. he undermined, & *refused*, at last, to do it: so, he is in Lascelles' hands.—Capt. Birch of “Chili” died at sea. The “Inverness” had a good passage, & brought a goodly lot of Immigrants *all well*: & they *soon* got berths. W. Morrice has been here again about the black mare. I told him of her hurt, which, no doubt, unfits her for *hard* riding & *long* jourmies: He offered £7. & then £9. for her. I have since written to him offering her for £12.—would rather he should have her (for his Bror's. sake) than another. She is rolling in fat, & no wonder,—I never saw the fields (& Cl. Sq. too) so *green* before in *Decr.*—*green everywhere* owing to our showery Summer.—Gary has an excellent flow of water from the new artn. well near the old one of Watts',—it looks *well* from the hill, *spouting* away;—great waste of precious water, though.—Robjohns Brewery is advancing—looking somewhat strange there, below. The Gas-meter & all its many buildings are looking well. The Australian parrots build & breed here in Napier,—they are here, 5–8 in a flock, & have *stolen all* my early cherries; they are *beautiful* birds, but, I do think I must shoot them. The big *black* slugs, which are by 100d's, have also devoured all my *strawberries*.

And now a word of myself,—*health*. I was getting round slowly but steadily, &, 3 wks. ago, I made my first easy move out to Taradale in trap, taking my man w. me, for I was still weak; since then I have managed to visit Meeanee, Taradale, Puketapu, Hastings, Havelock & Reignier's, schools, and was holding out well, indeed getting stronger, but on Thursday (9th) I went to Rearden's (the wind was desperately high, N.Wy., making several willows come down,) & though I kept my hat on, the building being very draughty, I caught a *severe* cold which has again confined

me, & brought on a return of that nasty Bronchitis Cough so that I *could not* go to Campbell's school, on the *next* day, as had been arranged.—I am to try to do so tomorrow; & then the day after inland, all this week, retg. on Saturday for Nomn. on the Monday: I have very grave doubts, at times, as to how this *Bronchitis* will end—thinking it may result in something like A. Kennedy's, or Wm. Marshall's,—(W.M. is now very ill w. it.)

Dr H. told me, a fortnight ago when settling w. him that though he had known me 20 yrs. he never knew me so bad before—this I had known from my *own* feelings, as well as from his coming up the glen so *frequently*. But, *if returned*, I may be able to do *that* work, & shall, if it be GOD's will.—

Tell your sons, that I gave out a tolerably hard *compound* fellowship Sum to be done by the schools, as a special prize Sum,—and from Mr Campbell's school I have 9 returns—in *extenso*—the best one, as to execution, &c (*all* being correct) is *James Brandon's*:—then comes Miller, Polack, Bowden, H.C. Robjohns, G.F. Williams, W. Walker, G. Walker, & Claudius Cato,—and I have lots from the other Schools, particularly the Country ones, *whence* 2 from *Girls*. I will enclose a copy of the Sum for the Boys' sake. I have also lots of essays sent in,—not yet examined. Over 300 *good* prizes have I sent out just now. Never was such a time here with the Scholars, they are overjoyed & rejoicing—and the Masters are drawn out into the vortex! The Scholars *leave* their play & *hie* at 5 to work at Sums & "Essays"—if the boys were but Voters,—*then!!!*—

I think it is time for me to stop! Still I have more to say. Fannin has purchased T.P. Russell's at Puketapu, &c, so making that property *one*.—The "feed" is glorious this year! the Cows, &c., are up to their knees everywhere in grass & Clover! Archdn. Williams is getting a residence (at last!) built for *him*, at Povy. Bay: he *ought* never to have left it. Tuke asked *old* W. Morris, the whaler, to give him his vote; he replied, If he had £500. he woud give them all to me, & turned to, & wrote me the story. At Meeanee Tuke asked a gardener there (named Gillice, a Tasmanian) for his vote: "What for?" said G.—"To go to the Ho. of Assy." said Tuke. "That," replied G. "is *your* house of Asy., there at Peddie's." G. (a *perfect* stranger) came afterwards to town, & proffered me his v. Arihi has issued a warning advertist. relative to Locke's *late* purchases at Wairoa, saying *she* will *not* agree to it. (And she has a very great claim, I know, as her *Mother*, a great lady, came thence.)

I called on Sir D. 3 days ago—he was busy, very civil & *more* to me; he began talking about the Lexicon, & how that *that* was now *settled* (?) I said, I did not come to talk about *that*, & would see him again.—He wears specs. now for writing. Sheehan has but just ret'd. to Town; he came overland, & spent some time at Mt. Herbert. Burton & wife are again enqg. after the 2 sections at Hampden for their *son*—who "has saved a little money": I have not yet replied; have had no time.

And now, what shall I say? I shall look out anxiously to hear how you pass the Eng. winter; *don't hide anything from me*, for, if I am *again* beaten, (which I *may* be; & if so,—as I have written to Willie—I shall *not quite* cry my eyes out.)—then I may, next year, be preparing to *follow you* and W. And if I am *returned*, I shall trouble you in my next w. a Commission or two. Drower has *not* yet paid for the saddlery; *has paid* another wee portion.

And now I must say Good bye.

May every blessing my dear Sir be yours and your dear family's.—C. Dolbel should be now near N.Z. His brother P. desires to be kindly remembered. Grubb is well but busy, not yet in *new* P. POoffice.

With every good wish for your welfare, Believe me
ever yours sincerely
Wm. Colenso

1875 December 25: to Cheeseman⁵²⁴

Napier
Xmas. Day, /75.

My Dear Sir

First—the compliments of the Seasons (Xmas. & N. Yr.) to you, and many happy returns. Second—I have to thank you for your very kind prompt and full response to my note, in your truly welcome letter of Novr. 29th., and for all its valued enclosures,—excellent spns. of Ferns, & No. 148 of Jl. of Botany. Your letter and its contents quite stirred me up! but, unfortunately, I have but very little time since its arrival—my hands (and head, too!) being full; with Inspecting our Public Schools, (Xmas. being near, & my late illness having thrown me back,)—and now the Election!—which, happily, will *end* next week. This day is always with me a kind of solitary one, when I am very much alone,—my servants, too, having holiday & absent,—and so I endeavour to use it to the best advantage, in reducing the big increasing pile of unanswered letters on my table:—yours, however, I cannot answer so fully as I wish.

I am rather surprised in finding, that I had *not* sent you a copy of my *old* publication on some of our N.Z. Ferns,—which I had thought I had done: I now send you a copy with the greatest pleasure,—only wishing it were of more value or use. I marvel at Baker speaking of *Lindsaea viridis* as only bearing a *Mss. name*—when both Sir W. Hooker (in his *Species Filicum*) and Dr. H. (in his *Flora Nov. Z.*) mention its having been *published*, &c.,—this, Baker ought to have known. There are, however, more N.Z. Ferns (*species*) than they have allowed,—some of which are in my little publication,—which our working N.Z. Botanists will by-&-bye confirm. I have, in Lowe's Exotic Ferns, vol.iv., very good and (apparently) carefully drawn coloured figures of *Lomaria Patersoni*, (an *old* and well-known Fern,) which, if correct, clearly shews the entire specific distinctness of our N.Z. *Lomaria elongata* (?)—(*L. heterophylla, mihi*, publicn.: *L. Colensoi*, Dr. Hooker, Icones Plantarum, tab. 627–8.)—*L. Patersoni*, as there shown & described, differs in outline, substance, habit and veneration.

So, as to my *Polypodium sylvaticum*, (of which a colored fig. is given in Dr. H's. Flora N.Z.,—after, too, a long dispute between Sir W. & his son Dr. H. about it,—Sir W. always affirming it, & Dr. H. the contrary,—who, at length, adopted his father's views,)—this, now, is made one with *Aspidium aculeatum*,—to which genus it does not belong!

Then, as to the *new* alterations (mentioned by you,) of our long-known *Dicksonia*,—those (our then known N.Z.

species) were clearly distinguished by Sir Wm. in his *Species Filicum*. vol.I. pp.68, 69 & even drawings given! I never had any doubt of their specific distinction, & believe we have 2 other species—*certainly* one, which is very distinct,—especially in *habit*, and which I therefore named *D. unistipa*,—from its growing much like the common *Pteris esculenta*.

J. Smith, formerly of Kew, a very close observer of Ferns, in writing on them, says,—“further observations have led me to regard the different modes of growth (*vernation*) and general habit as affording important auxiliary characters for assisting in defining, &c.”—

I feel much interested in what you tell me of another N.Z. *Davallia*: I have long suspected this, (Sir W. Hooker & myself corresponded about it,)—from the fact of a species which Sir Wm. published, naming it *D. Lindleyi*, & giving N.Z. as its *habitat*, (*Species Filic.*, p.163, where is also a plate of the plant,)—and it is certainly *very near* to Forster’s “*Trichomanes solidum*,” (now a *Davallia*),—which Forster, in his *Prodromus*, said was *from “the Pacific Islands.”* I shall be curious to know if these plants should prove to be the same.

The “*Synopsis Filicum*” I have never seen: I suppose it is merely a catalogue of names.

You enquire after the local habitats in the Auckland Province of a few scarce plants. Of some of them I well recollect their *old* homes! (35 years ago!) but even if I were *there*, should I find them *now*—denizens of the soil as before? I fear not, judging from what has taken place in this Province, even within the last 10–12 years:—

Lycopodium Carolin.,—boggy flats near the sea shore at Ahipara, beyond Kaitaia.—

Thelymitra Colensoi (which I suppose is my *Th. straminea*), on barren hills among fern inland from Whangaruru Bay, but rather scarce.

Quintinia elliptica,—dry forests, Bay of Islands.

Australina pusilla,—plentifully, sides of small watercourses in shady thickets at Owae in Whangaruru Bay, & along that Coast to Ngunguru.

Pimelea Urvilleana, dry hills among Fern, Bay Islands.—

Senecio Colensoi,—rocky cliffs, sea shore, Bay Islands, &c., (but much *more* common *here*, at Cape Kidnappers, &c.—

I believe there are several of our Orchids yet undescribed, especially of the genera *Thelymitra*, *Pterostylis*, and *Microtis* (or some closely allied genus). I remember a gem! which pleased me much: I never found it but once, but then it was plentiful and in a good state. I took it to be a *Microtis*, & named it *M. autumnale*,—it was colored purple & yellow, & very *sweet scented*!—it grew with *Thelymitra Colensoi*. It is *not* one of Dr. Hooker’s *Prasophyllae*.⁵²⁵ But I must close.—

I return, with thanks, the no. of the Jl. of Boty. you so kindly lent me. Did I ever send you a copy of my Journey (or “Excursion”) in N. Zealand? printed also in Tasmania, about the same time as the Ferns. (Possibly, I am confusing you with Mr. Kirk, both in this, & in that of the “Ferns”. I shall always be delighted to hear from you, and to receive any specimen, especially of Ferns; and *hope* to be able to send you some ere long.—

I have lately written to Miss Leech,—as I could not put it off any longer,—although I had not found time closely to

examine her little work,—which needs extensive correction, &c.—

Believe me,
My Dear Sir,
Yours truly, W. Colenso.

P.S. Do you happen to know a Mr (*or* Rev.) J.W. Wallis, of Raglan? If you do, & should have the oppor. please tell him I will write to him *shortly*. W.C.

1875 December 27: to Enys⁵²⁶

Napier
Decr. 27/75.

My Dear Sir

What can you think of me? when your kind note of Octr. 12th. remains unanswered! At the time of its arrival I was still in the Doctor’s hands (and did not get free until middle of November!) and when I slowly got round again, my hands were *full* (head, too!) as Provincial Inspector of Public Schools.—Xmas. approaching fast, & work undone! Then I got into the election turmoil (not yet over), &c. &c. All this time your letter (with many others), lay on my writing-table, and I was often reminded of you. However you are to be a *gainer*, by this delay; for I have *found* you a copy of that old “Excursion” of mine (which you wished to have), and I now send it with much pleasure. (I had set it aside, 2–3 years ago, intending to send it to a son of mine at home in Cornwall.)—I also send a Copy of my little *early* Work on the N.Z. Ferns” please do me the honour of accepting both.—

—*Re* the Ferns, as described in that little *brochure* of mine,—I have recently heard from a scientific friend, that Baker, Dr. Hooker, & others, (authorities in Fern matters at home,) have lately acknowledged (at last!) the correctness of some of our N.Z. species therein described,—which they had contested & disallowed:—viz. *Lindsaea viridis*, *Dicksonia lanata*, &c.—I believe, that future *working scientific* Botanists, in this our adopted country, will, by-and-bye, confirm others.—

Most gladly shall I receive the specimens you mention,—*Lomaria dura*, *Hymenophyllum ciliatum*, *Aspidium cystostegia*, &c.,—*at your leisure*.

I have not Taylor’s work here, but have little doubt of my having seen (& sent home) the butterfly (*Diadema*) you speak of—as, 25–35 years ago, I was an extensive collector. And I know I had seen *all* that Taylor mentioned,—and many more. Last year I reared several specimens of *Danaïis*—it was a truly gorgeous and wonderful sight to see them emerging from their Chrysalis state!—

I hope to have more time shortly to call my own, & will then, once more, turn my attention to scientific natural objects & matters long long neglected: and possibly, may be able to send you some specimens.

Pray accept my apology, and, heartily wishing you the compliments of the Season, (Xmas. & N. Yr.)—

I am,
My Dear Sir,
Yours most sincerely
W. Colenso.

525 Possibly *Corunastylis pumila*..

526 ATL Ms-papers-0670-1.

1875 December 29: to Harding⁵²⁷Wednesday
1 pm

Mr R.C. Harding

Dr Sir

I have *just* recd. a letter of importance from Mr Waymouth of Auckland—an answer to which I am to pass on by post to your cousin at Mt. Vernon, but there is *not time* now.—

Could you run up *early*? so as to be here before tel. off. closes at Waipawa.

Yours truly
W. Colenso.

1876 January 1: to McLean⁵²⁸Napier
Jany. 1. 1876.

My Dear Sir Donald

To you shall be my first note of this New Year.

—To congratulate you upon your re-election, and *proper* position at the poll (which I was glad to see), and to wish you heartily a Happy New Year, and many returns of the same.

I suppose you are to-day at your run enjoying your holiday with your family. I should like to see you *privately*, whenever it may be convenient for you after you return to Napier. I shall be at home all the coming week, (save on Tuesday when I go to Clive to vote for Mr. Ormond,) and will be at your command, if you will kindly let me know of your early space hour.

I am
My dear Sir Donald
very truly yours
W. Colenso.

1876 January 9: to Luff⁵²⁹Napier, N.Z.
Jany. 9, 1876.

My dear Sir

I wrote you a long letter on the 12th. December, since which I have not had anything from you: our Eng. M. arrived at Auckland more than a week ago, but it is not yet to hand (although St. left with it 5 days back: we may get it tomorrow. The weather has been extraordinary (Grubb says, “dreadful”) from New Yr’s. Day inclusive). The sun has been shining a *little* today, & the tree locusts, poor things! have been also chirruping a *little* this mg., their first song for the year!—rain every day, so that, while not cold in-doors, I have been obliged to have fire & to again put on

worsted socks for the damp. Water everywhere below, & *mud* too! Hay & Grass seed *lost*, to a large amount, & lots of sheep unshorn: the *whole* Spring & summer has been very wet, & I have no ripe gooseberries yet. Wilson’s & Tuxford’s gardens, however, are benefitted & looking splendid! the whole island, back country, hills are still green.

My last letter will have told you of the elections, then nearly coming off. Well, *I am beaten*: (all to rags as the boys say) & no mistake; & certainly most *unexpectedly* so. I must refer you to Papers (I send a lot) for particulars. Had I known I was to have 2 Governments (or 3, with Municipality) against me, I would not have stood. You never saw *here* such an excitement!—It commenced on Monday,—when Sir D. & self had a show of hands in our favour,—this made the Mayor’s party *mad*!—And they *did* work! and at *last*, several of my best supporters (Robjohns & others) fearing Stuart would get ahead of Russell, (& seeing that McL. & O. were working hard for R.—) they voted for Russell (in this, I agreeing) & the Maoris led by H.R. & Sheehan, voted for Stuart so did the *Catholics*. More, it is *said* that R. promised to join their Ch. if returned! At Pakowhai, a few days before the poll, Karaitiana & his relations *assured* me they would vote for me!! You will see much of me in the Papers, but more than once, allowing that I was the proper person. But I now *know* that McL. & O. did *not* wish me returned.)—you will see Hawes’ letter! and the Johnny Gilpin parody, was done by the writer,—I suppose *you* will *guess* all the allusions readily. Buchanan has since had a *worse* defeat at Clive, where there were only 2 candidates: and as to R. Pharazyn at Whanganui: and old Cracroft Wilson too, at Heathcote! the election must have cost Stuart a *heavy* sum! money was *lavishly* used.

Helen Denny—our 1st w. ship sailed, about Xmas, with nearly 20 passengers—among them Doyle & family: “British Empire” also left last week: J. Wood is dead—at Noumea, N. Caledonia. Mrs Tanner’s son is going to England, with Mrs St. Hills—Mr. H.H. going also. *I would go this month* if I *could*: I am hedged in, & cannot see my way—unless I *sell all*. If *you* were still here & in business, I could manage it, but I do not like to give *full & ample* powers to anyone here in business—besides, w. several of them I am *not over* friendly. Topping is insolvent,—so I went there yesterday in rain, & got from Mrs. T. the lease—losing the rent! I was to have seen O. & *resigned* Inspectorship but the very wet weather has prevented me: I may go out tomorrow A Govt. sale of Land last week netted over £10,000! Ormond bought largely at Woodville: (see the Paper I send), notice also what is said of Mackay’s shop & N. & Close’s shops.—I have sold “Silinine” to Mr. Morice for £10. not yet taken. Aldridge, is *honest*, (just as I expected). Considering the weather—the work Inspg. schools—the bustle & bother of Auctions for I even went to Clive yesterday in the pouring rain to vote for O.—(& so keep *my* word.)—and the *defeat*—I have enjoyed pretty good health: far better than I had anticipated: I have been often thinking of *you & yours* how you bear the Eng. winter. Brandon told me, yesterday, that *Gollan* now enjoys good health, & will very likely *not* return.

Martin Hamlin’s Land (50 ac. W. Clive) is in the market: I enqd. price, £35. pr. ac! The land at Meanee which you let to Martin, and he let, & I let to a person named Read: well he threw it up as I would not allow him to *sublet*, & I have since let to to a Nursery Gardener here, named Gillice. P.

527 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-1.

528 ATL Object #1018583 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

529 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

Dolbel had a wedding in his house on Xmas day, a nice young niece of his, whom he brought w. him, to a young man thereaway named *Hollis*. (Perhaps you may know him,)—P.D. was *here*, for an hour last evening—*quite an event!* W.Thomas *never* calls now: why, I do not know. I saw Mr Sidey the other day, he was on horseback. I gave him your messages; he sd. he had heard from you: I *think* he, too, had greatly altered towards *me*: reason why, I don't know. It is loudly *talked* of that Stuart, (Mayor,) became Insolvent at Otago, only paying 5/- in £1. & managed to make over property to wife, & run to bror.-in-law! I did not hear of it, until *after* the Hustings Scene.—I suppose, he will never forgive *me*!

Mr Redstone, they say, is about to be removed; I am sorry for this, for he is an active & useful little fellow, & came out *well* in the trying time of sickness last autumn. Poor Martin Hamlin is still lingering! Grubb is about going in to new P.O. at last!! I had almost forgotten to say, Capt. Read has been returned Member H.R. for East Coast!! (if "*These be thy Gods!* O Israel!!") Sorry am I at this. Just the "Herald" rejoices, because such (I suppose) suits McL. & O.!

Now for a joke. Yesterday in going to Spit, in trap, Kinross entered; & so in after Whitmore & Kirch (Patea). K. & Wh. talked about Read. Wh. didnt like the idea of such a low fellow, &c. K. said, He was as good as many in the House! I asked of K., "*Which Ho.?*"—& there was a scene! K. got red, & hesitated; Wh. pulled his pipe from his mouth & looked daggers at me: B. coloured up! I said, to Wh., "You have no need to look so fiercely; there was no harm in my qu. which I repeat."—Again, asking K., who declined to answer, when B. & self *laughed out*,—& so did the other 2.—(My *only* joke, or merriment, for New Year.) A large house is being erected here on the hill, in a line from my *end* parlour window & Barrack-hill, (looking from my room). Very conspicuous.

Two only items of scandal:—Robjohns (bachelor) has gone off, *very ugly* stories about him & niece. Silas Palin brought up a Mrs Roadknight (or some such name) for a *scandal* in *Sup. Court*!! & lost her case!—I think she was *hardly* used.—Terribly slashing articles in the Maori Paper against H. Bay "ring"! I don't think Ormond, Williams & Co. have *really strengthened themselves* by putting in Capt. Russell; he, & his bror. being also deeply involved in same mire: and so, I fancy, the Ho. will think.

(10th, night.)

This mg. I got your letter of Novr. 18th. and all the many papers you have so very kindly sent, including a huge "*Graphic*," also medicine in packet. I can only just thank you now for all these good things. Your opening remark about arrival of S.F. Mail & *your not yet* getting any letters—(bearing in mind you were in London & wrote on 18th.) amused me much; for my eldest son writing from *near Durham*, on 17th., acknowledges receipt that mg. of mine to him by that mail, so that Durham got their letter before London!! I expect *this* will go by *Suez*: I saw Grubb, to-day, who was very busy, & who read me a telegram from Wgn., *both Suez & S.F. Mails* are to go *overland* by *Peters*: Suez will be in *time* (leaving there 16th.), but S.F. may not; so I shall, I think, make sure. I went to town to day, in great measure, to see Ormond, but he & family are at Wallingford, for holidays, not having had any holiday, owing to elections, and weather: this caused another put off.

I thought on you again today, "D.Teleg." sent in their Bill for advertising, election matters, £10.19.6!—I went to Herald, got theirs, *same* work £5.3.6: so I posted over the way—and, after calling *twice*, & a long altercation, I paid them £5.10. taking a receipt in *full* & *they* deducting, "*overcharge*; £5.9.6"!! I knew that amount (£5.10.0) down, I said, I woud. pay *no more*. Stuart, I hear, is kicking dreadfully at what he has to pay: and no marvel!—

I shall send you tomorrow, the "Herald" w. Hawthorne letter (whatever that may be): Buchanan, poor fellow! did dreadfully bad at *his* election: it is now known, that out of the 31 or 32 for him were 10 Maoris, 5 or 6 of H.R.'s. people & servants, & B. & his sons (B. voted at Kaikoura) —so that he only got some 6 or 7 Europeans.

The Natives everywhere are going to *Register* & boast what they will do!—and they *may*—if the Europeans continue supine!—

I told you that Mrs Carter was married to Margoliouth. I have heard from the *best* authority, that she refused *Maney*. (It is said, & is, perhaps, true,—that neither Tuke nor Maney, really intended to stand, but they had, *each*, a point to carry w. the Govt. & by *this means* & they have both succeeded!!)—

Quite common talk,— "Newton, *now* will be J.P.!" Poor young Northe, after suffering a deal from Rheumatism, is just gone to Waiwera Springs.—J. Rhodes is *not* yet back in N.Z.; Coleman is. Dolbel says, I am sure to die in Eng. climate; he & his brother suffered. Well, I hope you & *yours* will not. *You*, I think, are *hardy*, more so than your flock. And now, my very dear sir (whose absence I mourn continuously!) Good bye.

And w. best wishes believe me *Yours*, W. Colenso.

P.S. (Jany. 11th. closing.)

Your old acquaintance Brown of Clive—called this mg. he is just from Pov. Bay, where he has been looking about for 3 months. And, on the very day of his leaving (yesterday) agreed there for 100 ac. at £8.—paying down (at Capt. Read's remark!) £200. cash—to secure the Land. The Conditions are, B. is to pay £800. in *cash* before end of Feby. (He has £450. of his own—but, of course, he requires money for stock.) I pity the man's acting!—if he cannot borrow *largely* he will lose his £200.—& *he sees it now!!* I have promised to go to Town tomorrow, & try to get him help.

Br. says, that M. Hamlin's Land, 50 ac. at West Clive, has some (reported) flaw in the title! something between Sutton & him.—

"Hudson" not yet arrived; perhaps not far off.

Again good bye.—Be sure to let me know how you have *endured* the winter. And now

Believe me
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

3 weeks ago I recd. a notice fm. Govt. about your Premium; I spoke then to Grubb about it; G. said, I could hold on a while: yesterday I found it had been paid by you w. Chq. But, while *I am* here, I will always *look out*. W.C.

Swan has engaged *all* the Cabs, before hand—one however was left which Capt. R. got for £2.2. On the polling day *this* was also plastered with *Stuart's* papers, 4 colours!! Swan had given Cabby £5.5. to leave Russell!! —We got one new one, brand *new*—

I purpose calling on you at your office on Wednesday morning.

I am
Yours very truly
W. Colenso.

1876? February? 4: to McLean⁵³⁰

Napier
Friday 4th⁵³¹

My dear Sir Donald

I was in town yesterday & heard of your having arrived,—but, supposing you would have *plenty* of visitors, I did not call:—and today I suppose you are at the Ram Show:—I will hope to see you early next week.

I received several new Books by last Mail, some of which I have thought you might like to see—that is, if you have any spare time.—

I send you one of them, which I only commenced last evening, in reading pages 40–49 I again thought of you, and I think you will find something good in it—you will see it has reached the 9th. Edition!—

I have not yet seen Mr. Ormond since you and I last met.

Hoping you are quite well. I am

Yours very truly
W. Colenso

1876 February 12: to Karaitiana⁵³³

No Nepia,
no te 12 o nga ra o
Pepuere, 1876.

E hoa e Karaitiana

Tena koe, korua tahi ko te iwi. Tenei taku kia rongo mai koe. Na, a mea ana ahau, kua pahure te wa wha kaku raruraru, ara nga wa pooti wa reihi;—koia ahau ka tuhi rawa atu ki o teina na, kia Henare ma, kia ma hara mai ki ahau,—hei aiane tonu ano, koi noho ana ahau.

Na, e hoa, kei pouiri koe ki taku tonanui ki a ratou, me titiro kite wa roa I tatari ai ahau, kei riri koe ki ahau. Tenei ake ka kite maaua ko Te Hiana,—a, ki, e moa, ka ata kite a matou hanaa, ka pai, tena kite kore, heoi ano taku (engari ma, taku Roia ano, ma te Rahere, e ngaki toku ma te.

E hoa e Kara e, ko koe taku I titiro toa ai, a e titiro nui nei ano,—ara mo to tuunoa kite Paremata, mo to ingoa hoki, mo to taaua nei hoki wahi tahi. Heoi, ehara I a au tenei, kit e mea ka turi, mai o teina na,—a ka kawa a Te Rahera, ka taa mana hoki, ka tooia mai ki Te Kooti nei, ka nupepa-tia niutia hoki hei wha Kairingarongo mai tetahi tangata.—Na, kit e penei rawa, kei mea horua, ko to teina amua a he nei, no ku korua e wha ka korero i wha-kuiti.

Heoi ano, e hoa e Kara. Ka rongo hoki koe.

Na hu,
Na to hoa-matua,
Na Te Koreneho.

Fron Napier

Date? to McLean⁵³²

Monday night

My dear Sir Donald

I am very much obliged to you for your very kind invitation to dine with you tomorrow—which I would with great pleasure accept:—but I am *in a fix*!—

My two servants, man & wife, are members of Rev. Mr. Redstone's Congregation and of *that Church* (U.M.) and I had given them leave to go to the great and *last* Tea Meeting tomorrow evening; I (of course) staying at home: as it is *needful* now-a-days for some one to be in the house of nights. Well, the man is quite (?) willing to stay at home, but the wife (a *good servant* though timid creature, who has only been a short time in N.Z.,) won't go out *alone* to town of an evening:—of course, both would remain at home for me to go out if I were to ask, or press it,—but I don't exactly like this, under *all* the circumstances (their being greatly attached to Mr. R., who is also a Countryman of theirs,) and they have *not* had a holiday to the Races.

So, my Dear Sir Donald, I am *reluctantly* obliged to decline this kind invitation of yours—and, in doing so, would ask you to *renew* it—for some other day when you may be free from engagement, and to afford me that pleasure.—

Dear Karaitiana⁵³⁴

Greetings to you two and the tribe. Here is what I have to say. In my opinion the time has passed for complaining about trials, about race time and voting time;—therefore I am writing to your younger relatives, Henare⁵³⁵ and the others, to bear me in mind;—and after this I will rest easy.

Now, my friend, lest you be downcast at the import of my message to them, consider the long time I waited, and do not be angry at me. Te Hiana⁵³⁶ and I have only just seen

533 ATL Ms-Micro-Copy-485-1. I have found no other private letters in te reo.

534 Karaitiana Takamoana, a former pupil of Colenso's, Christian convert, powerful rangatira and MHR for Eastern Māori 1871–9. Translation by Frith Driver-Burgess.

535 Possibly Henare Tomoana or Henare Matua

536 Possibly John Sheehan, (MHR 1872-1879, 1885; Minr Native Affairs 1877) who is referred to elsewhere by a Māori transliteration "Te Hiana". While considerably younger than Colenso, both were involved on different sides of the Hawkes Bay Repudiation Movement: Sheehan was a friend of Takamoana and his lawyer in the movement, while Colenso counselled Takamoana and other chiefs that pursuing repudiation would only land him in greater debt to his lawyers.

530 ATL Object #1012156 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

531 The annual Ram Fair was held in February.

532 ATL Object #1018719 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

this,—and, as I said, we appear somewhat similar, very well, then, if not, then there's nothing to be done, but for my lawyer, Te Rahera⁵³⁷, to avenge my injuries.

Kara, my friend, I considered you for a long time, and considered in depth too,—your parliamentary position, your name, and also our shared area. However, I will not do this, if your younger relations are obstinate,—they will caught up by Te Rahera, and will be summonsed, and towed into the Court, it will be in the newspapers as news, and this person will elevated as famous. Now, if this comes to be, you two might say it's the begrudging younger relative only, but it was you two who spoke ill of me.

That's all for now, my friend Kara. Open your ears.
Yours, your wise friend,
Colenso.

1876 February 18: to McLean⁵³⁸

Napier
Feb. 18/76

My Dear Sir Donald

I have just received a copy of "Fortnightly Review" for November, which contains an excellent article by Prof. Tyndall, (in reply to his several critics on his famous Belfast speech)—I should like for you to see it: if you will send for it on your arrival I will gladly pass it on. There is also another able paper⁵³⁹ in it,—on, "*Our wars w. China, are they just?*"—well worth *your* reading, if you have time.—

I am Dear Sir Donald Yrs truly
W. Colenso

1876 date? to McLean⁵⁴⁰

Napier
Monday 7th⁵⁴¹

My dear Sir Donald

Your note of this day found me down in Milton Road "mending my ways"!—or I should have sent what I now send by your man.

I send herewith 3 more Books received by last Mail, which I know (if you have time) will interest you: 2 of them are very lately published.

I shall endeavour to see Mr. Ormond tomorrow, but I fear he will be much too busy to allow me *an hour!* or, half of that period. I will gladly see you early.—

537 A Te Rahera appears, advertising his services as a lawyer in Gisborne, in advertisements of 1878. "Te Rahera" G. W. Russell, a young lawyer (and later politician), served in Gisborne in the early 1870s.

538 ATL Object #1009996 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

539 WC: there is much in this paper having close analogy with our N.Z. wars, & present state, &c.

540 ATL Object #1011000 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

541 February or August 1876.

Could you send a telegram to your Govt. Printer—to know what may have been printed of those Mss. of mine you caused to be passed on to him for that purpose:—and if *in time*, to send to you copies of the same per Rangatira?

How are you off for *fruit*? I would hazard the sending you some *ripe peaches* (such as the rains have left!) but I suppose you may have *better*—still should you care for any, I will *gladly send* you plenty:—*and if so please let me know*.

Hoping you are well. I am
Dear Sir Donald
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

1876 February 23: to HBPI members⁵⁴²

Napier, February 23, 1876.

Sir

At a meeting of the Council of the H.B. Philosophical Institute, called by the President and held on the 21st. instant,—the President, his Honor J.D. Ormond, Esq., in the Chair,—it was resolved; on a motion made by the Vice-President, the Right. Rev. the Bishop of Waiapu,—

"The the Honorary Secretary draw up a Circular forthwith, and forward the same to the Members of the Institute,—to shew them our position with reference to our not receiving any copies of the volumes of 'the Transactions of the Institute' for 1874."—

In November, 1875,—on receiving a copy of the last volume of "the Transactions" for 1874, then just issued, (which I had got as an old member of the Wellington Branch of the N.Z. Institute.)—I wrote to the Manager, the Hon. Mr. Mantell, to ask, "When the Members of the H.B. (branch) Philosophical Institute were to expect their copies?" And his reply was, "That we were not entitled to any of the volumes for 1874, through our not having become affiliated in time."

I am really sorry for this most unexpected decision. But you will see, that it is no fault of mine (as your Secretary), and that I cannot help it. Our General Meeting to adopt Rules, &c., took place on the 11th. March, 1875; on the same day I wrote an official letter to the Governors of the New Zealand Institute at Wellington, requesting affiliation. On the 24th. of the same month an answer was received, stating, that our application should be brought before the Board of Governors at their next meeting; and on the 15th. April the official letter was also received, informing us of our incorporation;—which has also been subsequently announced, and our respective names given in full, in the last volume of the Transactions.

It is true that this last volume (though issued late in 1875.) is really of work which mainly took place in 1874; hence, I suppose, our not getting any copies. It is an interesting and large book, containing over 600 pages and several plates; and I would that all our members had received a copy! Such a disappointment, however, cannot occur again.

542 MTGHB 18581.

In conclusion, I may add, (to inform those members residing in the country,)—that notwithstanding the above drawback (which, after all, is only for the time, and merely affecting us individually,) much good has been done our Philosophical Institute generally:—which, it must not be forgotten, is a slip planted to bring forth good fruit for the *future*. Several valuable specimens in Natural History have been obtained, and are in the hands of the members of the Council; £20. has been just granted to purchase Scientific Books for the new Library; £100. has been received as a donation from the Provincial Government, and carried (with other monies) to our Credit at the Bank; and Papers on various subjects have been promised and are in preparation by some of the members, to be read at our future meetings.

I have the honour to be,
Sir,
Your mo. ob. servt.
W. Colenso
Hony. Secretary.

P.S. I have further the honour to remind you, that (according to Rule 3 of our Constitution) “the Annual Subscription of £1.1.0. is payable in advance on the 1st. day of January in every year”:—and, therefore, I will thank you to forward the same to me at your early convenience.

W.C.

1876 February 24: to Grey⁵⁴³

Napier,
Feby. 24. 1876.

Dear Sir George Grey,

Last week I received a few copies of the enclosed letter (a kind of *résumé* re Maori Lexicon) which I had written in July last for the better information of the House of Representatives & the Government,—*but* which has only *just been* printed! and it has occurred to me (as I have mentioned your name in it, and as you formerly took such a great interest in the Work) to send you a copy, just to call your attention to its contents. Although I fear in so doing I am intruding on your valuable time and many duties.—

I do not know if you were in the House on the 19th. October, *at the time* when (after some opposition and unpleasant remarks, *vide*, “Hansard,” pp. 590, 591,) £100. was voted for me on my giving up *all* my Mss. to the Government. But, as neither my explanatory letter nor specimen pages were printed and in Members’ hands, I have demurred to assent thereto: and so I have just officially informed the Government.

I believe the “Specimen pages” are not yet printed! and perhaps never will be.—

Hoping you are quite well. I am
Dear Sir G. Grey,
Yours faithfully
Wm. Colenso.

⁵⁴³ Auckland Council Libraries GLNZ C28.6 (Grey New Zealand letters).

1876 March 8: to William Colenso⁵⁴⁴

Napier, New Zealand,
March 8 1876

My dear Nephew and Niece,

I hope you are both quite well,—ditto ditto all the young ’uns. I was only this evening looking at the sun setting—so much earlier than of late—when I said, to my servant, Well, there is one good thing which I always think on with pleasure every year about this season, viz, that in our losing the sun and summer, they at home are getting it—and *longer* days. But you will not have much *real* summer until this reaches you! then your May (Hawthorn) will be in flower—and the children happy in the joyous returning season of warmth and sunshine and calm fine weather.

Now I have two of your letters unanswered before me on my writing table! one of Sept. 19, and one of Decr. 13—to hand by last mail.—I have also to thank you for *seeds*, by both letters: of flowers (Abyssinian Primrose, &c.,) and of Savoy and Turnip. These latter are in the ground, with good hopes of their growing and turning to good account: of which more anon. I have a few seeds of some of our *minor* plants for you, and I hope to get you some more next month, when I go over the hills and far away a-visiting the Country Schools; and, also, some of the Blue Gum (Eucalyptus) when ripe! which grow in the garden—some 50 feet high! Willie knows them well—having climbed them.—I am pleased to hear *you* are Willie’s Banker; be sure you don’t allow him to draw all out too readily; of course I know, from him and from you all, that he is saving for a yacht,—all right! if he can do so—and if the said yacht is a sea-worthy one,—*and if he will not be too venturesome*. I have promised W. an extra mite towards it (or her) to go hence per next mail.—You speak of *Ferns*, I have a splendid fellow (*Cyathea medullaris*) growing here in my garden just in front of the window, whence I see it every day: it is now—that is the long fronds—some 10–12 feet, growing in such lovely living elegant filigree-like arches, —more like a waving feathery palm than a fern! And then it is so surrounded by trees that it cannot well receive injury, blow high or blow low! But after all, in their native haunts in the forests is the place to see them in glory and beauty. I am glad that you have met with some of my works on N.Z.,—or on some of its productions. I gave up writing such for the Lexicon job—a *tough* one and a *bitter* one to *me* as it has turned out (see my Parly. letter) but never mind.—

I sometimes think on you when I look at some of the many signboards which we now have stuck up at the Railway Stations, (I suppose a similar plan is carried out in England)—but it is the very neat clever artistic mode in which these are done and put out of hand that makes me think of you! For several years we had no good sign painter, nor imitation wood and marble painter, now we have both: the many and varied colours and tints which are used in these decorations please me much. I send you an Illustrated Australian Paper by this Mail. I do send w. generally every Mail, but Willie comes in for it—as his paper. I had from *two* correspondents in England, the Xmas. No. of the Graphic and Illustrated News sent—but none came to hand! the old shameful story I fear—of being overweight and so seized at the London Post Off. I suppose Young Luff’s *log* duly reached you—you don’t mention it. Yesterday till a

⁵⁴⁴ ATL Ms-papers-10535-1.

late hour I was writing a long article on the *Crozet* Island for our paper⁵⁴⁵—if printed in time I will send you a copy. This day a barque (the “Inverness”) has left us loaded with wool for Engld. and taking nearly 20 passengers. I looked at her with regret!—

Talking with a *little* newspaper runner last evening, outside the house, when he came w. the Evg. paper, I found that he was one of a family of nine! (the 3rd!!) they arrd. w. their parents two years ago, and the father died last autumn from fever—leaving the poor Mother w. 9 in a strange land. He got a bucket full of peaches, for his brothers and sisters, and as many as he could *well stow away*. Peaches have been plentiful this season (they generally are) the heavy rains of January did not do them any injury, although the Apricots, Gooseberries, and early plums were destroyed.—Many bucketfulls have been given away here from this garden this season, and *more* have rotted on the ground.

If you can manage it: without *great* trouble, I should like for you to send me a case (100 tin boxes, perhaps in a case) of the New Sardines,—or Pilchards put up Sardine fashion: I see there is a store at Mevagissey, and I believe one also at Newlyn near you. The *cost* I will *immediately* remit with thanks, indeed I would send the amount now If I knew how much. If you send any—they should be “halve” (the *larger* size boxes or tins), and of the *Best* quality. It is a curious thing that some 25 years ago, or more, when I first saw Sardines here—I said they were much as young Pilchards, and I remember writing to my father about such becoming manufactured at Newlyn, and St. Ives. Moreover, if you send any make haste in doing so that they may find me here.

I was much pleased to find from Willie’s last letter—that you were all together at Xmas. and were a merry party,—and—thought of *me*! My only fear has been for W., whether he could stand the cold of your severe winter; although I do believe that he had more of cold to suffer and endure on board of the “Merope” on his voyage to N.Z.

The map of Cornwall you sent me (from W.) arrived all right! I thank you both for it.

And now my dear nephew and niece I must close. Kiss the little dears for me: and accept my kind regards, and Believe me to be

Your affect. Uncle,
Wm. Colenso.

Memo. of 4 small packets of seeds of N.Z. plants, enclosed in this letter.

1. *Veronica Lavandiana*, a pretty shrub, which does well in cultivation: 2–3 feet high. (Grows in the garden here)

2. *Linum Monogynum*:—a true Linum (or Flax), a shrubby plant, perennial, of neat growth, bearing largish white flowers ;—(grows on our hill-pathway from town.)

5. *Angelica rosafolia*,—a shrubby plant having aromatic leaves; grows with preceding. (N.B. Both 2 and 3 like dry soils.)

4. *Wahlenbergia gracilis*, a pretty little blue flowered herb,—but perennial. Sometimes called the “N.Z. Bluebell.” Grows with two last.

W.Colenso.

(Willie knows them all)

1876 March 9: to Luff⁵⁴⁶

Napier, N. Zealand
March 9th. 1876.

My Dear Sir

My last—long—letter to you was dated Feby. 10th (*concluding* part)—I hope it will safely reach you in due course.⁵⁴⁷ Our S.F. Mail is to be made up tomorrow, so I must write. By *Herald* this evg. we have London news to 7th. (per *our* Cable!!) which informs us of Wool being rather low—& of the S.F. Mail having been delivered at London on 6th.—that is (I suppose) *our* Jany. one to you.—

Since my last to you I have recd. 2 letters from you—viz. Decr. 15 and Jany. 2 which have interested me greatly—as I was anxious to know how *you* would stand the Eng. Winter, which this season appears to be extra severe. I saw Gollan last week who declares the *cold* drove *him* out of Engd; he *arrived well* (like Rhodes) but (like him too) has been laid up a bit through (the Drs. say) the change of returning to N.Z. but this I *cannot* understand. G. is still in town!

First, let me tell you, that I have recd. by this last Eng. Mail, a letter and a *small* packet, both from London, addressed to a “Mrs E. *Morehouse*, c/o A. Luff Esq”—at *first* I thought of sending them on to Canterbury, but on seeing the difference in *spelling* the name, I have not done so—what shall I do with them?

Second, Bank Ex. in October last (& indeed from July) was “60 days, 1%—30 days, 1½%—sight, 2%”—& Brandon tells me, all the Banks in N.Z. were alike.

Third, in a P. Gazette pubd. some time back, I noticed, in list of Cr. Grants, one for *you* for *Oeroland* (I think); I set the Gaz. on one side to send to you, & now I cannot find it!

Fourth, I have *this mg.* got from Scally from “Roy’s hill”—£1.12.0—for 16 Puriri posts I let him have to finish his job of fencing: I enclose a *sketch of the chasm*, &c, by which you may know my *present* loss & injury there:—and now Weber has bought the adjoining Section purposely to remove the soil into a Sn. just opposite in the water, which he also had purchased,—of course his own *private*. He told me he should take all care, & if he should be the unfort. cause of any damage, he would pay—“up to £50.” Bless the man! I would not take £100. as equivalent to what has *already* been done!! By a Parly. Paper I find, Johnston (Wgn.) has been paid £700., *Weber’s award*, for his 3 Sections in Swamp—between Railway & Munro Street! I twitted W. about this,—as he has told me that he would never allow (award) me a ld. for the damage done me, & for the earth taken for the Railway.—W. retorted, he had awarded (*obliged to*) the Gas Co. £100. for the ¼ ac. the Railway had taken: had it been all mine I question if I should have got it. I was at Waipawa last week, and I find

545 Copies of *Hawke’s Bay Herald* for 1876 are missing from Papers Past. The Strathmore, en voyage from London to New Zealand, was wrecked on Crozet Island in July, 1875, and her survivors rescued in late February 1876. Their ordeal preoccupied the NZ press for several weeks.

546 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

547 The preceding surviving letter is 9–11 January 1876.

the Road Board has *ruined* my Section *on the hill* (above Bibby's & Grant's) which you purchased. I was astonished! They have cut rather *within* the boundary of my sections & the fall is 10–12 feet perpendicular, & the earth crumbly!! I went to Bibby, Rathbone (*Chairman*) &c.—they say, they wanted the earth to fill up below, & that the contractor did cut too deep, & that B. seeing this stopped him:—and, that there was *no redress* against the Public Board!! The next day, the wealthy Rathbone, after some demur, paid me £3. for the £4. *I had paid Parker* 12 months ago, for R's. share of dwg. fence,—saying—"It was badly put up"!!—I felt *ashamed* of R. "He asked if the £3. would satisfy me?" I said "Anything for a settlement & quietness: If he felt satisfied in offg. me £3. for what he knew I had paid £4., relying on his word that he wou. pay—then I wou. be so." — MacKay, I fear I shall have trouble with, poor fellow! he is a great loser through the Jany. flood. J. Dolbel—who assured me, last yr, If I wou. wait till Feby. he cod. do something, is still putting off! He says, his wool by "*Cel. Queen*"—9 Bales sold at 7d.!! & 15 were withdrawn, & such don't pay expenses! I enclose a sketch tracing of retaining wall now putting up in Milton Road, on Wilkinson's old Sn. The Contract was taken (through Peppercorne) for near £60.—120 feet:—my man soon saw that they intended to feather the work!—*i.e. this height to start* from at lower end, & to run it away to nothing at upper!! On my return from inland I saw Contractor: "Yes, it was to be so"!! We went to P.,—had a long talk! & I believe the Contractor was right—though, *I am again* the sufferer!—he shewed it by his tender, so much the whole job, or so much per cubic yd. (25/-)—at which price is about $\frac{1}{2}$ of the whole! I had allotted £50. (in mind; & had told P. this,) & now it will cost nearer £100! I believe, I shall have the *lower* section also walled in (lightly & roughly) & then level away mound & fill up & in.—One or two houses going up in town, but several are empty—as Berry's (3) Noble's (2).

The other day the "Inverness" sailed for Engd. with her load of wool & *several* passengers—among whom are Price of Motuotaraia & his wife—going home for *her benefit*, to see if Doctors can cure her. A small Schooner was on shore last week, just where the Steamer was, but she was got off. See this day's *Herald* which I send you with some others. R.Price actually *took* my *part* in 2 articles *re* Mao. Lexicon!!! I send you Copies. Drower has *not* yet pd. for saddlery—3 Dishond. Bills!! And now I am *waiting on him*.—More Bankrupts since last—Plante, Mrs Welch, (whose husband died lately at Wairarapa,) Wright—a painter, &c, who had the *new* shop next to your old office, and others from inland.—

This mg. Mr Grubb, seeing my man in town, sent word—"he wou. not be able to write to you by this Mail being *so busy*." The *new* P.O. knocks them all up! the letters, for instance, are now delivered *within* in a large room, & the one who had to attend to that work, went off from the other business. The Insp. of P.O. has been here, & spent a few days w. Grubb, but he does *not* see that G. needs extra help,—& they nearly had words: he is a *young* m. lately from Engd. but was trained to P.O. work there. I shall be *very sorry* if G. should leave, (he is now going to have a short furlough,) for I like him much—& he has done not a little towards supplying the *hollow vacancy left by yourself*. I enclose in one of the Papers a Circular of the H.B. Phil. Institute: tell me if you *remain a Member*. Mr Smalley—through dint of hard striving—has sought *me* to assist at their annual Demonstration next week,—J. Rh. in Chair. A

big house is building on Harding's flat for his son Rechab, who is to marry M. Miller's daughter,—Miller, too, having become a Rechabite!—(and I believe Joe is going to have one at the new station—"Forest Gate".) H.R.R. takes on himself to make all the Ministers who use the School Room at Waipukau. to pay for it, and now Lyndon (for Ch. Trustees) is suing H.R.R. for Parsonage!!! Mr Hamlin died just as the last Mail left. Mr Tylee is got round again, & just at office. He shewed me a Book of *photographs* bound at Dinwiddie's,—of fearfully lowering pen & ink scratches of many of us, (much like *those* of Tiffen—but it is *doubtful* if T. is the author,)—there is myself (often), Justice Johnston, McLean, Lee, Lambert, & several others. Tylee expressed surprise at my not having before seen it,—and other *photos. also*. The train runs now to Te Aute (*i.e.* this side of the Hotel, $\frac{1}{2}$ a mile)—I don't like it—as it makes me *sickish*! (Willie, in his Dec. letter, speaks of having written to you, but at that time, had recd. *no* answer. Do him all the good you can—for my sake: he is dwelling *very quietly* with my Brother & his *large* family.—

I am pretty well—but *obliged* to be *very careful*. Have to commence travelling next week, but *don't like* it. The weather is *fine*: Waite, schoolmaster at Waipawa, married Wheeler's daughter (called, *now*, Tatham)—she was at H.R.R.'s.

The Xmas no. of the *Graphic* you mention did *not* arrive. So also the no. sent by my son—I suppose owing to their being of extra size! Thanks for the bottle of *Neuraline* per Hudson; I have it *all right*—I may soon require it, & in using it, shall think on *you* more than ever.

And now my Dear Sir with very kind regards to all your family,—I am, Yours ever,
W. Colenso.

1876 April 5: to Luff⁵⁴⁸

Napier
April 5/76
9 a.m.

My Dear Sir

Your letter (Feb. 10) is to hand,—but I have *no time* to answer it, or to write by this Mail—for in paper, $\frac{1}{2}$ hour ago, I find "Mail closes at 10 a.m. *Friday*!! (it has been all along—"at 8 p.m. on Friday next, 7th—but the S.F. M. Str. has broken down off the Akaroa—& now our Mail must be rushed instanter by Sn F to Auckland.

I fear I shall not have time to send a single paper to you or to any one and Grubb has been unwell, & on a month's leave of absence—I have not seen him for 3 weeks. I have been away—Ist at Wairoa, bar-bound there a week! 2ndly at Danneverk & Tamaki, school there, (bitterly cold snow daily on hills)—retg. only on Monday night, 3rd, to make out Teachers' accounts for Quarter—& off again (D.V.) on the 10th—for all April, *certain*. I am toly. well—barring Rheumatism.—Glad to find you & yours were well. Governor has been here, & left yesty. mg.—*I did not* see him, being absent. Tylee is still *very unwell*—ditto *Friberg*.—both, I fear, past work.

Good bye.—Some Papers from you to hand, no time yet to look at them.

With kind regards
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

Your letter shall be sent next mail—It is in my iron safe.

1876 May 2: to Luff⁵⁴⁹

Napier, N. Zealand,
May 2nd. 1876.

A. Luff, Esq.,

My Dear Sir

At length I am writing to you again, having been obliged to omit the doing so last month (and so to all others in Engd.!)—I merely gave you a scrap then—just to let you know I was alive! Yours of Feby. 9th. I duly received, & was glad to know you were tiding over (or through) the Winter pretty well: I hope this may find you & yours very well.—I have a plenty to tell you—if I had but time,—but I have not just now. I have been out a-visiting all the far-off Cy. Schools in March & April,—returning on 29th April to town, on purpose to write by this outgoing Mail,—on Saty. 6th. D.V. I return again to my work, which is (& has been) heavy—& winter is rapidly advancing. Mid. of March I went to Wairoa, by steamboat, & was there bar-bound a *whole week!!* we tried it, but sea was too high so returned; &, when we did come out, — — — it was *no joke*. Nevertheless it was grand, and (to me) soul elevating, to see the little thing fighting her way. I would not go below to be battened down. Returning to N. at V p.m. I was *obliged* to be off next morning & go right awa' to Danneverk, as the Teacher was resigning & leaving next day: there, in the evening, after school, I had to walk in rain & Sy. gale to Tamaki Hotel,—and, at last, return all the way to N. to make out Teacher's Qty. vouchers—which done, off again to Porangahau, & then (again) to *Norsewood*, &c &c—I have yet to go to Hampden, Patangata, Tamumu, &c—*inland*: have been much hindered by wet & gales, but have had pretty good health so far. I carry your *Neuraline* w. me, but have *not yet* used it.—

First, however, to business.—I send you, enclosed, the Regd. Letter you sent me addd. to yourself (I still have *another* letter of yours, so addressed,—perhaps the duplicate.) I also send a letter I recd. from Wgn., addd. to you,—on getting it (it was placed in my P.O. box) I wrote to Stevenson & H., a few words, & recd. their memo. to me, which I also enclose, w. my reply of yesterday on it.—

On my return on Saty. last, I found a lot of letters awaiting me,—among them a P.S. note from Tabuteau, infg. me, of a small box per Capt. of "*Madeline*," contg. a *Watch*—& to appear, to pay duties, &c. Well, I did so, yesty., & opened it before him—of course it was your (2nd.) box of "*Neuraline*": stamped value "from 1/- to 2/6" & now, Mr. T., how much duty? the proper Fraction of 1d. he cod. not assess—so I escaped! full thanks to *you*, nevertheless.)

We have still more of sickness & death than we could wish—young Butler (who was in Tel. off.) died of

Diphtheria, 4 days ago; & poor Mrs Locke is very dangy. ill with it, & has been so for more than a month; Tylee is still holding out, but his legs are paralysed! Bp. Williams too, has been struck in paralysis of right hand & side. Wm. Hunter is dead. *Two more* of the Northe's (unfortunate family (one being Mrs Taylor) are dead. Sim, the tailor, had a son drowned—bathing in the surf! Brandon has another son. Rechab Harding is marrd. to a Miss Miller (daur. of M.J. Miller—who became, *they say*, a Rechabite to catch Rechab.) John Harding & wife are gone home. Margoliouth (& Banner) is riding the *high* horse: a splendid building made out of *old P.O.* & next to "Dy. Tel." buildings,—now a large store, *Auction* Mart, &c &c. Many new Houses are building all around—on hills,—White Road opp. Swan's By., on beach near to Kelly's *old house*, Carlyle St, &c. &c.—Waipukurau is also going ahead. Trestrail is there w. a large *shop*, but *what* to do I don't know. They (at W.) are going in for a Hall, a Hospital, and a *Ch.* of Engld. (for this *latter* all the money (about £1000.) has been sub.—I *refused*. Drower gives £100.—(he has *not yet* pd. for Taddy.—another paltry renewal!) Waipawa is also going ahead, in buildings—a new *Ch.* of England—I have *refused*, *until* S.W. does me justice *re* Ch. Res. boundaries. At my *great* sale there (March 23)—a *large* attendance, but *no one bid* for a *single* lot, & Turley submitted *all*. T. played a better part, as Aucr., than I thought he could: that affair has cost me (again) over £30.! The paddock (wh. was Parkin's) is let for 5 yrs. to Bennett @ £30. Parkin's old Hotel is greatly enlarged. *Fletcher* is going to have one built near the Railway Station. Collins Land there, was cut up & sold *very well*.

During my absence inland, my man, James, caught my *old* servant Aldridge in the garden stealing figs! James had watched him, slinking along, & climbing over the fence, near the big gate. No doubt A went for apples, w. his kit, but they were gathered the day before! poor wretch (he has been completely *done up*, some time ago, & self & wife taken to drinking heavily!)—he was very abject about it—*his being caught*,—hope he will not come this way again. Young Torre is leaving us—his goods are to be sold this week; I delivd. your kind remembrance. They (Weber, & Neal & Close!) are still going on w. more ruinous excavation below me,—& yesty. I saw Lascelles about it, who is to write to Blythe a L. letter.—Lascelles' new offices are fine ones—*next to yours*. Rees Watkins, & Jarman, bought cash a *sound* ¼ ac. near Grindell, & Rees has put up a decent house at £250. Nice curbing, &c, in *some* streets and in *some parts*—as Neal & Close's & McKay's but *not* Morrison's! also Tuxford's!! You must look into Papers for Harbour Works, &c, &c.—N.B. one advt. for 1,500,000 ft. of heart of totara!!—& nearly 100,000 cubic yards of stone wall!—money to be borrowed on *future* rates!! Turton is about leaving us for Dunedin: he went as far as Woodville thinking about investing there—but *does not like it*: it costs too much to clear the Bush. I have had *anor.* wall built—the *front* of my T.S. 108 (66 feet)—from corner on Cl. Sq. up to the little "Bluff," so that the gate is now blocked in, & old Bridge taken away. This is just finished. Another house has been built *below*—near C. Dolbel's, on Weber's Leasehold: in going down the little winding pathway you see lots of *little* houses!! Did I tell you, in my last, that yg. Irvine, after returning home, had gained the Armed Constabulary? The "Graphics" you mention as having sent (includg. Xmas. one) never came, I suppose you only put on the 1d. stamp—my son also sent me some, but *non est*. H.R.R. & natives are having terrible

long & large meetings: *he* has been residing in “Arihi’s house” on the hill at Te Aute. *They say*, H.R.R. wants to have as much as he can of *that* property secured to him (to raise money!)—and *Karaitiana* I am told, has really signed a mortgage for £3000!! We had a *good lot* of apples on our 2 small trees—the wet season (summer) suiting them. The old Masonic Hotel & Billiard Room are *no more!* the frame-work of new one is up, & covers that ground.

I am still thinking of visiting Engd.—& that by C. Horn—to follow in your wake. My pair are going to have a young ’un in a few weeks—which won’t *add to my comfort!* The “Lady Bird” is now coming-in, & she has the S.F. Mail,—so, I *may* have to add to this. Tye (HRR’s old clerk) is out as Aucr. McGreevy has built a *large* Horse (& goods) Repository at Waipawa. P. Dolbel is just as ever—full of *promises!* (*no reality*).

May 3rd., (night)

I now continue my letter. Yesterday night I recd. yours of March 8, & was glad to see your well known hand writing, and to find, that you & yours were getting through the winter *well*. I went to town today & saw Grubb (who is also writing to you), G. recommended me to send you the 2 receipts (L. Insurance) also the Govt. note—which I now do, enclosed. I noticed, today, that they were carrying the *curb* along *past* T. Morrison’s, I was glad of it. A large Brick Building, 40 x 20 within, & raised upon a 2 ft. concrete plinth, is building for Oddfellows *behind* present Hall,—contract (I believe) £450. It is a pity it is entirely hidden—I *never saw it before*,—but then I have been absent. I shall send you *this day’s* paper (among others) that you may see the *last* bit of our M. Council; note, F. Sutton’s Bill; & nearly £100. for the use of the Oddfellows’ Hall for 1 night to give a Pub. Ball to Governor & this money (less a watch) went into Sutton’s pocket. You will also note the *row* about price of gas. That “Herald” should complain I marvel at—they keep up the *extra* charge for their paper. I fear Ellison getting the valuation will be a raising of Rates on *me*—as well as others. Gollan is going to reside *in town*. Sealy (it is said) is shortly “going home on his *pension*,” &c. I dare say my letter to you of Jany. *per Suez* M. will have turned up in due course. I am sorry for your sake, that you say,—“I have not yet settled down to anything”: I wish you had comfortably & with *good prospects*. You say, “You cod. not advise *me* to come to Engd.—but you don’t give the *reasons*. I do believe, that if you were here (or some one *like* you, whom I could safely trust) I would go to England by end of this year: but, as *you know*, my matters are so many, so scattered, & *so small* (singly) that I fear I must e’en remain to look after them. It is sd. that old Fitzherbert is to be the Speaker (a sop!)—& Rolleston (no friend of mine) Minister of *Education!* *under whom* I would not be. I *cannot* tell you about Pakowhai Estate—what it is. Tylee was got out, & to town, today, in a trap; he may get round: I did not see him. Mrs Locke is worse: I fear, small hopes. I send you *in today’s* paper, a photo. overlooking *the Bakery*, &c. &c. below; the building appearing to right—is the Wesleyan. Ch. It was taken somewhere on my (*our*) hill. The old Masonic Hotel (Bar, &c) looked so funny today: the new Bdg. is erected *over* it, & the lower room in this new one is higher than the roof of the old one!—it looks like a big Bird Cage! Money is getting scarce,—& is rising in market. P. Dolbel has lately borrowed £600., on a mortg. from Bee to him of some 300 ac. of Mohaka land,—he has given £350. for the *mere goodwill* of 3 yrs. lease, to run, of a small p. of land nr. him which was Gill’s (Masonic), & on

which there is a fair rent to be paid by P.D., & a good purchg. cl. at end of 3 years! I fear he is getting crazy: he (of course) has not *got* a 1d. for *me!!* the remr. of his £600. goes in fencing &c. on his Petane (Maori) Run. There is a nice piazza like verandah now from Mandy’s *old* corner right up to Cobb’s Coach corner—save the one interval of Hague’s shop—the adjg. 2 small Bank premises—I have never heard a word since *re* our old Clive friend Brown. We have plenty of *apples* (kitchen sorts) this year in the garden, & some pumpkins. Frost began early—at Wairoa & inland, in March, & several times since: the weather is very fine *just now*. I forgot to say the Govr. was *here*—overland from Auckland—I was *absent* all his stay. Mr. O. & Col. Whitm. took him about—inland as far as Kaikoura, by rail. He is a *very plain* dressed man, & is sd. to resemble (in app.) Dr English.—

And now my dear Sir once more Farewell. I am sure I write *you a terrible lot!* Please remember me kindly to your family. I am glad to hear of your sons getting-on at school. Believe me, with much affection, to be yours truly, W. Colenso.

No 3!) (supplement)

May 4th. 1876

Although I have written so largely to *you* I must give you more! In bed last night I thought on a few matters which you would like to hear. 1. McLean sold his Akitio run to a Mr J.Armstrong—“25,000 acres freehold, 1,200 sheep, some cattle, &c—for £35,000.” It was announced in papers *as if* done by Miller,—then a tel. from Wgn. that D. had himself sold it. 2. Col. Russell has sold Mangakuri, “21,000 ac. freehold, 18,000 sheep” to J.Williams, Karamu, for £50,750.” J.W. had *recently* sold his Kereru property. 3. I did not tell you *all* of P.Dolb’s troubles. P. had given Miller 200 sheep for sale, & M. sold them to Bridge; P. came for money, “call again tomorrow;” P. did so, grumbling at loss of time: on the morrow P. found that M. had deducted £25. (or 20)—being *overplus* Run fee M. had lately paid to Sealy, on behalf of Gammel, who had taken P.D’s. Mohaka run). P. would not allow it, but was obliged to give in. Sealy *now* says that such is the Law of all those Runs over there let on a kind of Lease—viz. to rise in rental every 4 years, or so. P. allows that he had told Gammell, that the Rent was only so much, as he had hitherto been assessed, throughout the whole term; and M. tells P. (*now as Gammell’s agent*) that poor P. will have to pay that heavy & *increasing* overplus every year of the term!! If so, then better P. had given it away. Bee, Kinross & others there (5 or 6 in all) have paid the increase but under *protest*. Sealy told them, If they did not he would immy. relet them! I suppose there will be a lawsuit about it. 4. I sent you a “D.Tel.,” which (some how,—conscience-struck, it *may* be,) had suddenly taken my part—in 2 successive arts. *re* Mao. Lexn.—Sir D. did *not* like it, I know: Carlile wod. not (? could not) defend his Patrons. But *suddenly* the “Evg. Post” (Wgn.) comes out with a most atrociously twisted article about *me* & it:—& curiously enough *this appeared 2 days after Sir D’s. return to the City!!* A friend there sent me a copy: I send this to my eldest son, I would I had another—but I think the “Evg.Post” is filed somewhere in London—if so, try & see the number of March 6/76. The Parly. Paper contg. my offl. Letter was printed in Jany. & known in Wellgn. early in Feby., the “Dy.Tel.” (& “Weekly Mercury,” too,) commented on it *fully*,—so that there is no *apparent* reason why the “Post” should have been so long silent—& at last, & at *that* peculiar time, break out: it

seems to me as if manufactured, & *made to order*.—I have not since heard from D. although he promised to write to me *about it* (in reply to mine to him, Official, of Feby. 16)—I don't think he (or they) *can* reply. The publicn. of that Parly. Paper has done me (or my cause) a world of good. I don't think I shall ever again have that Lexn. matter hurled (or hinted) at me. I got copies of the Parly. Paper (buying them at 3d. ea.) & sent them round to *several*—in N.Z. Judge Johnston, Sir G. Grey, Sir D. Bell, Dr. Haast, Macandrew, & many others;—some old settlers here—have said to me, “How could you remain so quiet?”—only by *knowing & feeling I was right: that* sustained me.—

And now, let me add, to *you*, that I have always thought you were somehow *against* me in this matter (I mean, did not think or agree with me,—or the Work)—at all events, I have fought my battle single handed, & *no help* from friends and acquaintances. *To God be alone the praise!*
Farewell,

Yours faithfully
W. Colenso

1876 May 31: to Luff⁵⁵⁰

Napier, N. Zealand
May 31/76.

A. Luff, Esq.

My Dear Sir

I have already written to you on 2 & 3 of this mo., & now I am again scribbling! & no letter *yet* to hand from you but I hope to get one in the mg. The Mail via S.F. arrived on *time*—but the fine new steamer “Australian” passed on without landing *our* mail, and I venture to think her Capt. acted rightly, for the night was both dark & tempestuous, & raining too! & I feared, as I lay in bed, something might happen to her—to the mails or passengers, (going or coming in) if she anchored near us. I think it very wrong to make those large *ocean* steamers run down our stormy broken coasts,—and I hope that ere long, that arrangement will be set aside—if only on accounts of its *extra* expense.—“Rangatira” left Wgn. with our Eng. Mail last evening @ 5 o'clock, & should have been here I think. This is to leave Napier on 2nd June, so I am obliged to begin writing now. The “Australian” grounded at Port Chalmers in going up the channel, & lay aground until next tide, fortunately without damage. The “Kiwi” also got on “Rangatira” *bank* here last week in going out, but after 2 days lightening her (taking-out cargo, &c.) she was got off without injury, & left yesterday for Wgn.—

Visiting Country Schools, on 8th. inst. returning here on night of 28th. (the next day being Queen's B.D. & holiday)—found things *queer*—the man's wife being laid up (from the day before!) expecting delivery—& I feared it might prove a serious case, your old Dr. was up & down (weather *then* bad too) however on Quns B.D. the stranger came! a girl, & she has not yet been seen by me,—I doing *all* the household work within my dwelling, &c. This event *may* bring about others in its train: small things often cause larger ones.—But I have wished myself, at *Waipukurau* hotel again! This week I should have been at Meeanee

Puketapu, &c., but the Sy. weather has kept me at home—we have had a glorious autumn down to 28th. inst. inclusive, and though I had some rough adventures in travelling, &c, yet I came *through all well* & in good health & spirits,—though I have plenty yet *to do* ere Vacation day.—

At Waipukurau I recd, an Offl. telegram—then to await arrival of the Govt. Commissrs.—Gisborne Seed. Knowles, (Weber, also, who was then inland,)—that interview took place on night of 19th.—they had *lots* of questions to put & I hope I satisfied them: we shall see by-&-bye what the upshot will be. Speaking of Weber—I may tell you, he is in part provided for—as Engr. of Harbour Works w. his old saly. £600.—the building my 3rd. wall! E. side of Sn. 108. I am completely moated in now! You will see in “Herald” of 29th. my letter about a new road⁵⁵¹—a *short* one to Barrack Hill, &c, which should have been done years ago.—There has been some commotion in our town during my absence—a Mrs Wright murdered her little baby (a *strange case*)—they built a house adjoining your old office (*now* Lascelles' office & a good one, too,)—and a desperate burglar named Symonds in gaol for 10 yrs! broke away from Miller's hard labour gang, & after having been in *the town* a whole week! was captured at night in Tiffen's garden! J. Chambers the good peace-loving Quaker jumping out of bed & out of the window too in his nt. shirt to aid the gardener in his capture: he, or they, may gain the Victorian ⚔ for such deeds of daring & valour! From the papers the 2 yg. Sealys at Canterbury have been taking a kind of lesson from H.B.S. the elder, in the Ld. Off. *there: our* Sy. does not like the remarks made, & has come out w. a letter in “Herald”—but it won't do. P. Dolbel is in more trouble; his nephew (Rd's. son) had Diphtheria & P. in endeavouring to save him, caught the disorder! he has had a time of it for 2–3 wks. both are better, & now his sheep have the “staggers” *dreadfully*—2 of his *imported* ones dead! Poor P. was here today, looking worn & very sad.—Fannin, too, has more trouble,—2 now of his young children very ill (perhaps same disorder!)—he is wearing out—no rest by night at home. Several children have died of it, & of Fever, *not* noticed in papers. Mrs Locke is bettering slowly (going, tomorrow, w. father & mother to hot springs near Auckland); Tylee *is* able to come to office. Routledge has resigned the Hon. Secretaryship of H.B. Agl. Society. Donald McL. *has* had a *long* interview w. his Maori Majesty which (it is said) is likely to be productive of *good*. New Buildings going on in town, notably—Masonic Hotel, & 2 *new shops* where your “L.Ho.” stood & the ground betw. it & Morrison's—*these would surprise you!* McLay's is a handsome buildg., so is N. & C's.—with a *fine* smooth concrete pavement *all round it*—having N. & Close in large black letters in pavement before all entrances! There are to be 4 new hotels in town—McMurray's nr. Railway Station, one—where Sebley's old one was—one on reclaimed land at wharf—one by a Scandinavian on Wh. Road; the Empire hotel at Waipawa is to be greatly enlarged, & the old “pound” removed.—The Taradale Road is again put to rights, & to be thrown open tomorrow (1st. June.) Our Parlt. is to meet on 15th. O. is going *early*, no Council now. It is said, in this evg's. “D.Telegraph” that the Chf. Justice had ruled several pleas in *plaintiff's* favour (Arihi Hiraka v. Gordon)—what they are, or whether true, I know not (see *Herald* of June 1). An old settler named Jeremiah Fitzgerald was drowned near Waipawa on Saty. evg. last; I fear he was *not sober*. I had a

550 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

551 This newspaper is not available.

very plentiful crop of apples from my 2–3 trees this yr., enough for self & for neighbours.—I have not seen Grubb for some time, he is at Pov. Bay,—the P.M. there having been dismissed.

June 1st. I have recd. your letter of April 5 & 6—glad to find you were all well. I cannot reply to it fully by this mail—but hope to do so by next. I send you some Papers as usual, which will interest you, I know.—I am tolerably well—obliged to keep a sharp lookout for the enemy, & feeling shaky—no doubt owing (in part) to the large lot of English letters just to hand & which I must answer.

Good bye & kind regards, Yours truly,
W. Colenso

P.S. (June 1st.) You know well my situation here *as to property*;—what would you *advise* me to do, with reference to my returning to England, at (say) end of this year? Give Lyndon power of attorney to receive Rents, &c. (& *not* to sell?)—or *how*. If *Wilson* were here I would ask him. I am thinking of trying Brandon,—*viz.* to get his opinion. I would sell all I could,—but there is no market just now—either for Town or Country properties, save *picked* ones. Don't fail to give me your honest *valued* opinion. P. Dolbel's is (I am sorry to say) one of my *worst* ones (as to paymts.)—next, Sladen's, owing to late floods, &c &c; & these two are ½ of my income—leaving out pay as Inspector, which will soon now cease.—W.C.

P.S. No.2. Again have I opened my letter. I am thinking of offering *all* this hill property in one lot; or, all excepting house *party* of front paddock,—I will see Brandon *quietly*, & try. It would well suit any *capitalist* as an Investment.

I forgot to say—that Ferard came to Waipukurau with 3 Commissn.—& with him I had a *nice* talk,—I never had such w. Ferard before. He & his are going to England, Miss Wilson also:—he has let his house to Gollan for one year certain. J.A.Smith, Cable & Burton (Wairoa) came on to Waipukurau & on to Woodville; they sent a telegram to host P. Gow to prepare for them!!! at table (in com. room) J.A.S. did not like a remark of Cable's; John put down his K. & f. & sd. vary gravely, to C.,—that “it was consd. a very impertinent thing to contradict in company.” I expected an explosion, but it passed without carnage.—

1876 June 28: to Luff⁵⁵²

Napier, N. Zealand,
June 28th. 1876.
(night)

A. Luff, Esq.,

My Dear Sir,

My last to you was on the 1st. inst.,—I little thought *then* I should again write to you in June! since the date of my last to you, I have recd. yours of May 4th. (to hand last week,)—with chq. encl'd. for £10. (there was no need for you to send this). First then to business,—*nil at present*. Your letter came in a dreadfully busy time—school vacation close at hand, and still *several to visit!* & Tylee wanted *all* Teachers' (& other school) accounts in with him by

yesterday—as he may have to send in an account of payments to Head Quarters by 30th.!! So I have been at work night & day, & *Sundays* too! Last Saturday afternoon I was to have been with Dinwiddie, *re* your invoice, having previously been well for a few months but I was unwell on *that day*, & my illness, *severe* Diarrhoea, (which came on also on *that day*, & very suddenly too—no doubt, owing to the change)—prevented my going down: indeed I have not been out—even to the field!—since Friday 23rd, although the weather this week has been gloriously fine!—but I hope to be able to do so tomorrow. Had I gone on Monday 26, or Tuesday 27, I could not have seen Dinwiddie, he being one of Sp. Jury in case of J. Stuart v. Bank of Australasia on those days.—I fear I shall not be able to tell you much more about your cases of stationery *this time*: I doubt, too, if they will suit Pov. Bay. Read is now in Ho. at Wgn. From what *little* I have learnt, they are come to a bad market—being, too, so much of *one* sort: had they been cheap *Books* no doubt D. & Co. might purchase. I think you should not *so buy* and send out—here at least—place small & market slow. Your Letter &c. I have sent to Mrs Moorhouse c/o M. Studholme. I have not yet seen any one of whom I could learn anything of Close, *Senr.* of Pukahu. *I may soon*.

We have had a *Fire*: tolerably severe, 6 houses in Hastings Street including Pocock's painter's store—see the papers I send: fortunately the weather was fine &c.—or — — — They however are rebuilding! Not so Meeanee! of all the wretched doleful looking places I have ever seen—M. is the worst! From Rymer's (*inclusive* up to Peacock's Rd residence (late Lee's) most wretched, ugly, ugh! mud & water, & *weeds in water* on nearly *all* of *Sladen's*, both what was mine & what he got from Peacock—100's ds of acres *utterly valueless at present*: (S—'s year is *up* on 30th.—I am afraid even to think of it!) and the road, *horrid*. Scarcely get on, & so it has been *all* the summer! No rain yet this winter.

We have got a bunch of *new* J.P.'s.—Newton (of *course*) & Lyndon (*ditto*), and Rathbone, & Rechab Harding, and Friberg, & long-legged Hamilton (formerly Wilkinson's Overseer), and H.H. Bridge. Now *Mrs. N.* has got *her wish* gratified; may she flourish! F.Sutton remarked—“It was too bad to leave t'other Municipal Councillor H.R. Holder, out in the cold”: but was it on *account* of the Mun. Cl.? *I throw not*. Cook is also Wharfinger at £200. pr. ann. Sainsbury is the new Munl. Solr. *vice* Cotterill resigned,—& Hoadley, Secy., to Harbour Board. Grubb, Registrar of Births, *Marriages*, &c. at an extra £25. pr. ann., his hands are *full*, & he is not *over strong*. P.D. & family are all well, but look *shaken*. Kelly has shut up, & ret'd. to town; Hy. Mackenzie took the whole place. Jack Marshall has let his place at Meeanee & is coming to town.—Several new Houses building—one not far from Meth. Church, on *extreme* E. end of Sn. 254 piles in swamp *water & fronting this way*, whole ¼ ac. fenced in, looking as if it were for a fishing box—but a very decent looking house:—one, on beach, near Kelly's old House. One close to Mr. Mays:—& *several* on Hills: Rev. Mr. Parkin (Redstone's successor) is leaving W. Marshall's cottage:—*no sun there in Winter!* J. Locke's son is dead from Diptheria. Mrs Wright acquitted of wilful murder, ground of *insanity*: a curious case (see Papers). H.R.R. is *not* going home! He has sold his Tikokino property to Bryson (so I hear). Bryson's bror.-in-law had made his bed, &c, here among my trees in Milton Road; the police dislodged him: *why* he came there I don't know; neither do I know him.

June 29th. night

I went to town today—mainly on your matter *re* Dinwiddie. Had not been down to town for a week—found it *very busy*: D.— & *all*, up to neck in business, & writing, &c. Eng. Mail. Morrison absent in Engd., & Carlile at Wgn., makes it hard (I *think*) on D.,—there are now 2 accountants & 2 shopmen there!! Well: I cod. do *nothing* w. D.—I even offered (without authority) to take £10. *less* than yr. amount, & a 6 mths. Bill *no int.*,—but no. It appears some (most) of the sd. Goods are known in the market—as *slop*, viz. 100 reams paper!—cheap eno., no fault w. figure. D. seems greatly intd. in your favor, from old assocn. & had thought of taking them *himself* for your sake but no. He has *tried* hereabouts in H.B.—*no*. Read is wholly out of business. Adair has it; I may next week write to him—to Graham—but I fear the result will be *nil*. Hope you will be wiser in fut.; I wonder you should have come out in *this* way—in this place.

But I must hasten to close.—Let me tell you, I think your letters (nearly *all* to me.) are of a sloppy nature, fag-end, like, of time:—for some months I have had it on my mind, & now I tell you: surely you can not be so immersed in business! I *strive hard* to give you the *best* of our news, & the pick of our H.B. Papers.—

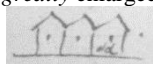
Capt. Birch, goes to Engd. by the Str., & so does Large's daughter, with Ferard. The train *has crossed* the Bridges to Waipukurau. In tomorrow's *Herald* will be a full Report of J. Stuart's trial but it is got up by *J.S.*—I saw him, & yg. Harding. together in tailor's Room!! Have heard *this day* of more *trouble & loss* for me in land transactions: more (D.V.) in next—

A Dieu, & Yours very truly
W. Colenso.

P.S. 29th.

Saw Webb!! in town today—wearing a Bell-topper! *much as ever*. Garry succeeded yesterday in getting water in the *new Municipal* well, near to the other—*both close* to his foundry. Holt has *greatly* enlarged his work-shop—double

what it was, thus



I see by Home News Mr and Mrs Burnett left London in "*Holmsdale*" for N.Z.

1876 July 3: to Rathbone⁵⁵³

(Copy.)

Napier July 3/76

W. Rathbone, Esq.,

Dr. Sir

Mr Luff (late of this town) sent a consignment of stationery, 7 cases per "*Madeleine*" to Messrs. Dinwiddie & Co. Unfortunately they, being well-stocked in those goods, do not want them and so Mr Luff has written to me to offer them in one lot here in H. Bay before I send them to another Province. Therefore I write to you.

553 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

The whole amount of Invoice (including expenses to Napier) viz £150. I am informed by Mr. Dinwiddie that the goods are uncommonly cheap: this I should have supposed,—and suitable too, or Mr Luff would not have secured & sent them out. Mr. Dinwiddie is willing to open the lot & take what they may require,—but this is wholly beyond my instructions.

I may mention the Invoice contains, among other articles, the following—

100 Reams large cream laid note
&c &c &c
&c &c &c

An *early* answer will oblige

I am

Yours truly

(sgd.) W. Colenso

(A copy also sent to Graham & Co. of Gisborne—W.C.)

1876 July 21: to Rhodes & Co.⁵⁵⁴

(copy) Napier, July 21/76

Messrs. W.B. Rhodes & Co.
Wellington.

Gentlemen

In accordance with a letter of instructions lately to hand from Mr A. Luff of London, I have this day directed 7 cases of Stationery which arrived here ex "*Madeleine*" to be shipped to your address & Care per "*Kiwi*" which leaves here tomorrow for Wellington, and I enclose Invoice and English Bill of lading of the same, received by me from Dinwiddie & Co. of this town, to whom the 7 cases were originally consigned. Mr. Luff informed me in his letter that he had written to you concerning these goods. I have a 2nd. copy of Invoice, & of Bill of lading which I will also forward if you wish it.

I am, Gentlemen,

Yours truly,

(sgd.) W. Colenso.

1876 July 24: to Luff⁵⁵⁵

Napier, N.Z.
July 24, 1876.

A. Luff, Esq

My Dear Sir

A day of wrath! & gloom, of wind & rain—as if the tail end of a tropical gale, confines me to my room, & so I make the most of it in writing to England, & *to you*.

My last to you was on June 29; *that* is still *here*, & with all that mail in postmaster Grubb's safe keeping. *You*—of all our Eng. correspondents—may easily divine the reason *why* you have no letters or papers by our outgoing *June* mail—

554 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.
555 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

being our midwinter mo.—the big steamer passed on—keeping the even tenor of her way, from Wgn. to Auckld.—without calling, to the great annoyance of us all—including several passengers for England who were waiting. Worst of all the weather was *not* so very bad *in here* that day, & she passed H. Bay about noon; & the surf was *too high* in the evening, & on following day,—I have little doubt she went on before (& *feeling*) the approaching S. gale, which her Bar. also (no doubt) shewed,—& *so far* I have taken the part of her Capt. But in my opinion it has been wholly wrong that those big Ocean Steamers should have to Coast N.Z. Islands from N. to S. to drop the Mails.—

Since date of my last, I have had 2 from you: one, the *duplicate re Cases*, via Brindisi, & one, yours of May 31st. which, with Papers (a lot) arrived here July 17th., & for all which I thank you.—

And now, *first*, to business, *re* your 7 Cases.—I have tried, & done nothing, so they are *now* on their way to Wgn. I hope they may get there safely.—It is a *high gale*, but steamer left on Saturday, 22nd., evening, & will be going *before* the wind.—

I wrote early to Rathbone, & on receiving his ansr., to Graham & Co.; I had to wait several days for Graham's reply (being winter & no Steamer running) & on receiving it, I went to Spit to ship the Cases per Rangatira (on Thursday 20th.)—but while there, it occurred to me to *see* Kinross about the goods; I did so (after some waiting, he being engd. w. Tanner), & at K's. request I left the Invoice w. him for his salesman to see. Next mg. I got his ansr. Then I found I could *not* per Rangatira as she was going first to the Bay & Customs would not allow of it (I should say, I wished them to be shipped while she was alongside the wharf, & *not* to be *lightered out*: (on the *Sunday* mg. too,—this *latter*, could be done.) Well, the "Kiwi" being also here, I made arrangements for them to go by her; & now I had hoped my work was at an end; so I came back, & wrote my letter (at night) to Rhodes & Co. (The gale was then brewing! it has been threatening for several days.) On Saty., mg., 22nd., Cook came up, in a fright, & in the rain, to let me know, that the Customs *would* open them, & were then at it. I rushed down (as if it were a House on fire!) & got in time to stop it, & after a long parley w. Tabuteau, I got the good put on board "Kiwi," & so ended my troubles—of that kind; but getting damp it brought back a nasty Rheumatism and cough. Dinw., Cook, Routledge, & others, say, *they could not* have succeeded with T.—It appeared, that T. had written on the Bond Store entry (3 months ago) "not to be delivd. without examination"—& so, *now*, he had to cancel his own Instructions, & write to Wgn. about them. Indeed, I was determined that had T. not given way, I would have kept them, & written to Seed about them.—T. said, that it is *in such goods*, others have been smuggled; (so *it was here*): I did not know there were Duties on Stationery: Cook says, about £13. being 10%. T. makes Dinw. *open all* there. I send you copies of my letters, & the answers from Rathb. & Grah.—I did *not* write to Drower—my *experience* preventing me—and as Capt. Read is now *out* of business which is in the hands of a Melbourne man named Adair. I did not write to him.

And now in all faithfulness, I should tell you *two* things: 1. that there is talk about you losing your old prudent head, in *so sending out* goods; & such an *unsuitable* lot or, rather *too much* (for so very confined a market):—and then there is *much said*, at your expense, which is new to me, besides *this* shipment,—of Furniture to Large & Townley, & of

Ironmongery to some one else, & then, the *Saddlery* comes up (I *defend* you *in this*, as I knew all about it),—even your "friends" (?) shake their heads ominously—2. The old story of *you & I & A. Deane!* comes up again; that *we were* in partnership *in that*, & *now we are in this*,—Saddlery being witness. &c. &c.—On the whole, much has been said even in my hearing, which is unpleasant.

I hope you will be no heavy loser by those goods: you *must let me know*, eventually. Why did you send the Chq. for £10.? *there was no need of that*. Now, however, that it is here, & I see you have re-numbered it, &c., I will present it, when I go to town: I have pd. Cook *this day*, (sent it by post) as his was part outlay.—

I sent Mrs Moorhouse her letters, &c. & enclose her "receipt."

2 p.m.

It is now blowing fearfully! & raining too, wind from NE. I fear for 2 barques which came in yesterday; I have not seen such a day for some months.—The big trees in garden, & around house are lashing ea. other furiously! Two days ago the yellow acacias were in all their annual glory! Now! — — Sic transit gloria mundi. But I must go on as I have much to tell you. I would give £5. to have *you* here this evening. Tanner & family leave by *next month's* Steamer: his son with E.B. Hill & his sons, were only 84 days on their passage to England by "Avalanche," fine weather all way—save a short gale at C. Horn. I hear, that H.R.R. *finds* himself in a mess. Travers told him the other day, that, as to Arihi:—supposing she were a minor, her doings had been covered & upheld by her *Trustees*, & by her husband,—H.R.R. got furious,— "What of my time, my exertions, my money?" & soon got Hiraka, A's. poor husband, to sign over to him all his right, life-interest, &c. in some 5 or 6 lands (Arihi's)! When A. found this out, she got ½ mad w. R., & so did Hapuku & all the Natives,—A. *now* returns to the Govt. & to Locke,—& no one knows the end. H.R.R. has turned agt. Campbell Poukawa; C. had bought Chapman's rights, & R. found out that one of the grantees (a yg. woman from Waimarama) had signed—years ago—& *not her husband*

She has always contentedly taken up her share, £22. per ann. R. now agrees to give her husband £50. per ann. for his wife's share, & is commencing law proceedings agt. Campbell!—To *me*, all this kind of work is sickening!

The Assy. are fighting still, some *ugly words* from Sir G. & Sir Donald! more feuds in the distance. I send you a "Hansard"—that you may see Treasurer's speech, & note all about *Govt. raising price of Land*. Karaitiana has not yet taken his seat; Locke, Sutton, Buch., Ferrard, & others are *now* on their way down—in this *gale*!

We heard of Dr. F's. death, by telegram. Next day, the Ho. voted his daughter £3000. Who will succeed him? it is rumoured, Vogel,—Stafford,—Fitzherbert,—McLean.—I don't believe any one of them will. An Offl. letter from the Crown Agents (Sir P. Julyan & Mr. Sargeant) has been recd. by our Govt. & printed—in which they say, they will never again have anything to do with Vogel!! it has made a great *stir* & will yet cause more. Perhaps I never told you, that Sir Penrose Julyan is my first Cousin, (my mother's sister's son,—just as Bp. of Natal, my father's brother's son),—his father, Capt. R. Julyan, was an R.N.—I *recollect* them well.—I must not forget to *thank* you for this excellent photo. of Bp. Natal: it is well executed—but I was

disappd., as I thought it woud. prove to be *yours*, which I have not yet got.

I suppose I told you of Bp. Wms. paralytic seizure: I *wished* to see him—*once more*, & trusted to Townsend, 2 months ago, to carry my message. Last week, in talking with S. Williams, I mentioned the matter, saying I *suspected* T. had *not* delivd. the message, & *I was right!* S.W. wrote, *saying so*, & that the Bp. would be *very glad* to see me.—

[Fannin *at door*, to say, our barque on shore total wreck & the other *driving on!* don't know if men saved:—may GOD have mercy on them!]

To return (if *I can!*)—I went to see him, found him well *bodily*, & that *is all!* He can *scarcely speak*, intellect wandering,—just 3 or 4 words at a time; but if you can give the *key-word* of his sentence or thought then he will run on for a minute or so. He *would* place a chair for me by the fire (& *would* open the door for me when I left!)—we talked of *old times*,—& of his *going*, & of course of *my* being but a *short way* behind him in the race,—& of our looking to *Him*, whom we had served, for help & comfort; & *we shall have it*—according to our need. Our eyes spoke our thoughts & feelings more than our tongues. I was warned, previously, not to talk too much, or stay too long; his hearing is *good*, & so is his sight, & his powers of motion, handling, &c. I must go again to see him in a day or two. But what am I to think of Townsend?—As for Mr Sidey—I never see him now. Mr Smalley calls occasionally & so does Mr Parkin, Redstone's successor.

I have seen the offl. Report of 3 Commissrs.—Motley is the only one of P.G. Officers to be kept on for a time. What will become of Fannin? He *may* get in for a County Board billet. Inspectors of Schools are to become Col. Govt. Officers: I *may* be too old: but the *Inspr.* here, is to have £400. a year, & travg. expenses £1. a day & a secy. to Educn. Board, is to do the drudgery I have had to do. A remark is by them made, of *my doing all!* I find that last year the *Inspr.* of Wgn. Schools had £400. a year & travg. exps. £1. per diem & £100. extra from Marlborough for going over to inspect the schools there—while the Secy. Edn. Board, Wgn., had, also, £400. It is rather *hard lines*—that I should have had only, £100., or £150. ('75-'76), while another gets £400. for about $\frac{1}{2}$ the duty. But, if I resign or am dismissed, I shall get something *now* for loss of situation. The *Supers.* are to have, *each*, 2 years salary allowed them. There is to be an Edu. Board *here*, (we must follow fashion) & for the *1st. one* (only to last till February) Ormond, Chambers, Capt. Russell, & Tanner, were to be the *Board*.—

In money matters things are dull: this continued fall in Wool has an ugly appearance—but it is what I always thought would, *must*, come.—Capt. Newman sd. to me the other day (in his usual rapid way), If his son had only waited, he (Capt. N.) might have saved at least £1000. for the Estate, but it is always the way of those young fellows when they fall in love! (now, that is the sentence, but I know *nothing more* and did not like to ask!)

A man named Gillice, a gardener from Tasmania to whom I had let J. Sutton's house, &c., bolted, cheating the rent. A man, named McKay—who came here last year from Dunedin with a *woman*, w. *her* 6 children, & whom I had always supposed to be man & wife, they have just fallen out & separated & cut & run!—I had sold him, or *her*, that *corner* Sn. of T. Sn. 309, 92 ft. frontage @ £3. = £276.—&

she had pd. down £90. to pay remr. in 3 yrs., @ 10% int. He worked hard, & fenced, & put up a good house for a Butcher's shop (his outlay near £250.) when being dogged to do so, I lent *them* £100. P.N. @ 12 mths.,—I knew she was getting £12. a month, as rents from Dunedin. However, they are *gone!* I was *obliged* to lend (? give) the man a few pounds to help *him* out: Neale advanced £35. to the woman, on her arguing over *all* her rights, &c., & Margoliouth is Trustee—but they could not sell the Ho. & premises—only £340. bid for it; while land is worth £4. a ft. I am right enough—but *no money*. I was *obliged* to trouble P.D. with a *very heavy acct.*, 3 weeks ago—with a request for *half!* it alarmed them, but I have got *some—less* than a $\frac{1}{4}$ th. From Sladen *nil*. And J. Price gave me notice 3 days ago, that he could *not* take up his 12 mths. P.N. due next month.

Do not think I am unmindful of your inquiries *re* Pukahu, & Close, senr. I have been endeavouring—but with small success; I do not know whom to ask, & not cause suspicion: if I could see Wm. Marshall, I could know. However, I have ascertained that Cl. has left & come to town to live, & that the house is *not* insured (w. Kennedy & Co) in his, or in your name: but I hope to learn more shortly.

Several houses building—on Wh. Road, on Thomas' section, the *whole* of it now,—where the late fire took place:—on hills, near the "Elephant's foot" hill,—3 *there*, & one near to Lyndon's *old* residence on the hill (in a nook) overlooking. Sealy let his Sns. well; ea about $\frac{1}{2}$ ac. or so) put up at £300,—at *end* of 14 yrs.—to pay "6% int.," some brought 10 & 11.

I *suppose* I shall have to put some of my land into Lyndon's hands, but of all the buildings since you left—*your own houses* most astonish me, or where they stood. Hamlin has made a grand entrance or rather, entrances for there are 2 roads now leading up, & such a large house, & the trees nearby all cleared away, with a stone wall terrace above—all looking well from the road, while just opposite is a row of *six* good verandah cottages. And where "L. House" stood—is a new *neat substantial* house of *concrete*; Neal & Co's. was higher than Morrison's, McVay's *new* one, is higher than N. & C., & now this concrete is by far the highest of all—the best house in the whole row. While the "Masonic"—makes Tuxford's look *very very small!* Meat is *high*; I pay 7d. for beef or 5d. for mutton. Hague retired, so his wife told me; through having to *Book* so much! & no money. I send you vol.viii. of our "Transactions N.Z. Institute"; am glad you continue a Member—for your Boys' sake. My man's wife not yet well; I am still obliged to *job* indoors, &c. I send a Report of J. Stuart's trial: that mention of P.D.'s. Bill—is awful! I knew all about that. It was only left as an accommodation B.—if P.D. *should* want any, in England—& P. got—none!

My hand is sore & aching,
& so Good Bye, Believe me ever
Yours truly
W. Colenso

No. 2

Friday night, 28th.

A. Luff, Esq.

My Dear Sir

The big Steamer has been delayed at Port Chalmers, owing to the *severe* gale, which rendered it impossible for her to

cross the bar there—so *our* mail has been delayed;—hope, however, it will get away *this time*! The said Steamer *was* to have been on her way hither, & our mails closed before this, but she only got out of Pt Chalmers today!—

And now I will add a little. Several *old* Settlers have lately died. *Old* Mrs Nairn at Pourerere, Mr Wilson, newspaper proprietor at Auckland—long a partner w. Williamson there. Mr Elliott, a Newspr. proprietor at Nelson, Mr Brittams at Canterbury, &c. &c—

The “Bebington” arrd. at Auckland after 160 days!! & 16 deaths! she was put under Quarantine: some of her immigrants are for H. Bay—A man named Craig was drowned at Clive during the time of flood 3 days ago;—Clive suffered most this time; & Railway—in 2, 3, places,—for 2–3 days traffic suspended.—I hear that Col. Whitmore’s garden & grounds suffered largely.—

Wilson of Canterbury, Alley’s *pseudo* friend, has been made to *smart*—at last. See, the statement in papers.—

In talking w. Capt. Newman, I find that it is his son *Bruce*—& that the estate is in *Pov. Bay*.—purchased from *Natives*—the *fair one* I don’t yet know.

H.R.R. has acted shamefully towards poor Sladen! S. sought a paddock for his sheep, & engaged w. H. Tomoana, so they were *there* repasturing: now Karaitiana was at Wgn., & their ground had not yet been marked off—what did H.R.R. do, but send Sladen’s sheep all to the Pound at Hastings; Kinross told me, it cost Sladen more than £20. in Pound fees!!—

Drower (& others) inland, also crying-out against H.R.R. loudly;—what will the *end be?* & *when?*

The Crew of the Coq.—cannot get their wages! The Capt. telegraphed to Owners in Newcastle,—they will not respond. Fortunately a good subsn. has been got up for them. One of the young sailors (a very nice looking yg. fellow, & teetotaller) came *here* to look for Willie—they were fellow-seamen in the “Merope,” & in the same watch.

Tonight is the *beginning* of the real fight in Ho. of Reps.—it may last a fortnight!—*Our* Railway has *much more* than paid its keep.

Weber had a very nasty kick from his horse (in the lower belly.)—he is just moving out again.—

Both “Kiwi” & “Rangatira” returned to Napier yesterday, but no line to me from Rhodes—perhaps none was required.—I *hear* that Close’s son is residing in the father’s house at Pukahu, but I’ll seek to learn more yet.—Fannin’s eldest daughter, Ada, was married, a *short time* ago, to a *very young* fellow named Bone, living at Witherow’s: she has a child. Poor F. seems much cut up! what with one thing and another! *this year* has been a trying one to him.—I *hope* he will *not* seek solace in the bottle.—

Good bye—again
Bel. me ever yours
W. Colenso.

29th. see this mgs. paper about Sir D. made to order!

latest

It is said, that Karaitiana will have *his seat*, & that Read will lose his.

(last)

Saturday 29. I seal & send off, not being able to crawl out myself—last Saturday’s wetting has laid me up for a season here. W.C.

1876 August 18: to Benj. Smith & Co.⁵⁵⁶

(copy)

Napier
Aug 18/76

Messrs. Benj. Smith & Co

Gentlemen

By last mail from England I have recd. a letter from London from Mr. A. Luff (late of this place), in which he requests me to inquire of you “Whether there are any Rates due on the Okutuku Section lot 242?” If there are, I will thank you to let me know the amount, which I will send you

I am &c
(sgd.) W. Colenso.

1876 August 23: to Luff⁵⁵⁷

Napier, N. Zealand
August 23 1876

A. Luff, Esq.

My Dear Sir

Here I am, your old attached Correspondent sitting down to my old table in this parlour—where you & I have sat together so many hours, in days forever fled! to talk over men & things!! You *can* fancy me truly enough—for *every thing here* is just as you left it,—but I *can not*, do what I will, fancy you in England with your environments. Would we could converse by electricity, or telegraph (spiritual, or mental), a *future* generation may do this.—

But let me rein in:—your prized letter of June 28th. reached me here on Aug. 15; right glad was I to see (once more) your dear old handwriting, and to find you were *all well*! Thank GOD for all His many mercies.

My last to you, containing receipts, was on July 28th.—I hope you will duly receive it. As our Mail closes on 25th., & I have several letters to write, I have better make sure, & scrawl to *you* now.—

The day (as yesterday) is really beautiful! Blue sky, blue Bay!—the Acacias *still* glorious in their dazzling yellow embroidery: flowers blooming; Almond trees in full dress, & Peaches preparing to follow soon: so *you* may guess that our shortlived Winter *has passed* & spring *is* come!!—

And now to your letter & to business. I recd. a memo. from Rhodes & Co. of the safe arrival of you Stationery (this I enclose). I wrote Ben Smith & Co. on yr. behalf, *re* Rates on the Feilding block, & late (9) last night I was aroused from my quiet by the arrival of their telegram in reply: which I also enclose: I hope they have sold well for you. (I was a little put out w. the *appearance* of the telegram—thinking it *must* be from Govt.; I do not (as a rule) deal in

telegrams.) I also enclose the letter you wish to have sent; the one you sent to my care from Wellington. And I send you a copy of my School Report (compressed this year there being *no* Provl. Council, and printed as a Gazette:—*perhaps* my last! I also send you a copy of the “*Waka-Maori*” as it contains the letter from the natives of Te Aute, denouncing H.R.R., and for the publishing of which (the *Wananga* says) H.R.R. is going to prosecute *Grindell*!!—I also send some H.B. Papers, which will interest you.—

And now as to News! for Politics generally I must refer you to Papers.—The Parliament have sat over 2 months & not yet hatched a single egg!! The squabbling & debates & personalities are terrific! After more than a fortnight *heavy & late* debating Sir G. Grey lost his Resolutions *re* Separation:—and Whitaker also lost his. Last night the *Counties* Bill was (at last!) allowed to be read a 2nd. time, but when it may be finished in Commee., & in what guise I dare not venture to suppose.—Sir G. has *lost* ground; it is said, he no longer *heads opposition*. Sir Donald has had *much* to *endure* (quietly if not patiently): Capt. Read is said to be *ousted*, & *his antagonist to go in*!! (costing Read perhaps near £2000! & no little trouble loss of time worry & downright vexation.) Vogel *may* become Agent General in England (unless House can bar him) & Ormond *may* become Premier.—It appears they *must* borrow 2M. directly; Rates & Taxes are coming thick & 3-fold; a Municipal Act Amendt. Bill is now before the House, in which Municipalities are empowered to *rate for Gas*!—Newton J.P. & Lyndon J.P., have both *sat*!! Rathbone, as J.P., has only yet come out as a Chairman at a Public Meeting.

In one of the Heralds I send you—you will find a letter from Hon. Mr Northe (Leg. Cl.) which has caused any amount of fluttering & disturbance—his own Brethren (L. Councillors) took him to task for it, & he had tried to back out a *little*:—but read it, *and com.* (I think, that both you & I *know* somewhat of what he has written). In one of the “Dy. Telegraphs,” too, you will see a letter against me, signed “*Parent*,”—that is Rymer! who took up cudgels for his sister-in-law. The correspdt. in the Cy. who sent me a letter *re* Kingfishers (part of which I pubd.) is your old friend J. Stevens, *senr.*; but Nairn, & L. Tiffen, & several others, have also thanked me: still the poor Birds are *being killed*! Tanner & family leave by this Steamer for Engd. Lyndon’s 4th. son is dead, after only 2–3 days’ illness. I enq. of Sealy the cause. S. said, he had fallen down & hurt his head, a fortnight before, so, when taken in his bowels, he was soon gone. We are stirred up a bit by a man named Langham being charged by a Coroner’s Jury with killing his wife! It is a sad case; you will see all about it in papers. I don’t think I told you in my last how very cruelly H.R.R. served poor Sladen (I had the story from Kinross). S. after the great flood arranged with Hy. Tomoana to graze his valuable sheep in *their* joint paddock at Pakowhai; things went on well, till Karaitiana (*part* owner) went to Wgn., when Mr. H.R.R., acting for Y., sent all these sheep to the Pound at Hastings! It cost S. more than £20. in pound fees, &c, besides the bother!!

I believe I have, at last sold my Hampden Land to Ingram for £625. £125. to be pd. down, (on 1st. proxo., & £500. on mtge. @ 7% for a few years: I fancy Burgess will be vexed. Ingram pays H.R.R. for fencing. And I have just let (w. pg. clause) ½ of my T. section next Mao. Club, *this side* (554) £30. pr. ann. pg. cg., end of 7 yrs. £300.—I think *much* of you in all these transactions. Cotterill is about selling out & leaving, he has given up Gardening, & is *disgusted*.

Two days ago my man found Peppercorne’s men hard at work *excavating under* my land in Reserve T. Sn. no. 70 corner of Faraday Street: so I wrote off to Municipal Engineer, & stopped it. Another new house is built on beach near to Kelly’s old single house there—making 4 in all. Trestrail’s Carpr’s. shop is become a “Rechabite Hall;” and a small house is put up, just in front (in part) of Trestrail’s late dwelling house—it is to be a “goldsmith’s” shop—& gas has been laid on! They have commenced laying their pipes for water-works; what with one laying & another the streets are being continually dug into, and the curb sadly gridironed!—McVay’s sign is a dandy one,—a pair of white horses in black harness on the move—very well done. I think *our Town & District* is very healthy just now; 2 days ago the unfortunate “Bebington” immigrants were allowed to come out of Quarantine. Mr Grubb paid me a visit yesterday, and sitting in your old seat (armchair) reminded me strongly of *you*—so that I very nearly cried. I do not know if I have had more than 1 Visitor since I last wrote to you (Mr. Smalley). Fannin is in more trouble—& *whirl*—his old horse fell over the cliff & was obliged to be shot: his Salary has been stopped—owing to some mistake in Immigrants accts.—but G. Richardson & Tabuteau who have gone closely into them say F. is *right*: he has taken his niece from the S. to live with them (as his own): his Sister is about being marrd. to a person from Canterbury: he has had an offer from the Govt., if he will *remove* to Wgn., *but he will not*. Notwithstanding F. is as merry as a Cricket, & desires kindest remembrances to you.

And now I think I must close. I wish you *could* write me some similar news—of *persons & things* which interest us. I hope you are well, & will continue so. I am tolerably well, save Rheumatism.

And w. every good wish, believe me, Yours truly
Wm. Colenso.

Young Torre is gone home to Engd,—having been left something like £20,000!!

No.2

24th. Last night in bed I thought on ½ doz. things I had *not* told you of,—so here I am again!—

All I can learn about Close, *Senr.*, & Pukaha, is, that he has left it for town, he had hurt his leg badly in the wet time, & lost stock, &c,—and now his son who married John Harding’s eldest daughter resides there—but I can learn no more.—

Inglis has left Miller & set up in partnership with Upham late of Bank)—as Land Agents; & office above T. Sutton’s old store (next to Whitty’s.)

Kenneth McLean has failed—his debts over £2500. assets £700.—he *coolly*, offd. his credrs. 5/- in £.—wh. has been accepted! If folks *will* live *beyond* their incomes, what must be the result!

“Burnett, wife, child & servant” have arrived in N.Z. from home. W. Thomas’ daughter Mrs Rice & her husband had a fair passage home (90 days) in “Iverness” *hence*,—they are in London, she under “the *best* Doctor in England” (so says W.T.)

Tuke had some sheep to sell for old Chase—he sold them to Rhodes, & he paid over the money to Chase without deducting his com.,—afterwards T. sued C. for it, & *lost* his Case!! (It is doubtful if *Joe*. *will* pay.) Tuke’s *simplicity* in

Court was great! (I thought on Miller the nipper & P. Dolbel.)

Grubb told me he should write to you, he has been buying some more land adjoining from France.—G. is very well.

Turton is at Dunedin—but it is *rumoured* that he is to succeed Sealy: I, however, doubt it.

Fielder is in the Stamp Office as Master—and this is *in* the new Post Office Building.—

Lyndon, Holder & Bryson have to turn out of their Municipal seats, (perhaps to be re-elected,)—but there is talk of “fresh blood” being wanted—Lee, Cornford, Campbell, Large, Carnell & others are spoken of. Election (I believe) is on Sepr. 7.

Great fuss just now, *again*, between Revds. Townsend and Robinson (new)—both the extreme of each other in Doctrinal matters. A meeting is to come off *this evening*: shall I go?—

I saw Mr. Sidey the other day; I told him of you—he said, he had written to you. He has been unwell from Bronchitis,—caught too, *in train* (like mine!) owing to the women must have the windows down! Thoughtless things, they are always huddled up.—

There is no similarity betw. Maire & Box wood; both are hard, and so are Diamond & Flint. It is the *fine grain* of Boxwood which makes it so valuable. [Just as I had written so:—a knock at door: Mr. Ellison w. assistants to *measure* land!! in order to their *fresh rating*! they are at it now.]

On looking over your last letter again, I read the following: (*if I am correct* in decyphering it!)—“I will enquire for our English post for letter re Maori Lexicon.” I mention it, as you may be able to illuminate it.—

Langham has been committed to take his trial for murder of his wife! a sad case.

I notice a sad case in a late Australn. paper; a yg. man 15 years in Bk. N.S.W. from boyhood—only son of a widow w. whom he lived—must join those Boating Clubs & *must gamble*—Defalcation £6000. Tried on 1st. chrg of £500. pleaded guilty: 5yrs. penal servitude. (J. King, again.) He was greatly *liked & respected* in the Bank. May our yg. fellows here stand.

1876 September 19: to Luff⁵⁵⁸

Napier, Sept. 19/76

My Dear Sir

On 13th. I duly recd. yours of July 26th., & was pleased to find you were all then well: may this find you so. My last to you was on 26th. Augt.—which I hope you will receive, also the Papers &c then sent. I have been laid up 8–9 days in bed, severe lumbago, & only came down yesterday to sit up,—to you I try to scrawl my *first* English letter; I am writing however in pain. I shall *endeavour* to put you up a few Papers, (although to do so will try me *hard*, as I cannot yet well get about the house, *or stoop*!)—which will let you know a little of our H.B. doings.—I was *anything* but

pleased in finding your sons had lost your *whole* mails Papers!! of the two, *I* would rather that my letter to you—had been lost—I *feel* I cannot write you a long letter this month.

1st. of Business—and I suppose I must have told you that I was negotiating w. Ingram for my Hampden Land,—well, that is *concluded*,—£625 he paying £125. leaving £500. @ 7%, and, of course, paying H.R.R. for ½ of divg. fence—which acct. (strange to say, as the fence has been perhaps 8–9 months) H.R. has *not* yet sent in. I have also sold or let, w. a purchg. cl. ½ of the large Tn. Sn. *this* side of Maori Club for £5. per. ft. frontage. Tuke came here one day in a dreadful hurry to see me about my selling *this Block*, or a good part of it,—I offered 4 Sns. Subn. (39, 41, 42 with part of 40 and about 15 ac. @ £500 per ac.—Although T. was *sent* by his employer he wanted *me* to pay him. I (at last) sd. I wod. give him £50. *if he sold*—but, in writing, I told him I wod. *not* place it in his hands for sale:—a week after he told me in town (in passing), “strike off 2, & it wod. be a bargain,”—meaning I supp., £300. pr. ac. I believe his employer was the Capitalist who put £10,000. in Bambury’s hands (see Papers). Tuke told me how Watt had *done* Browning: W. *wanted* the Subn. Sns. (48, 49?) & he put Aitken to go & offer £1000. for them; he did so. B. sd. they were worth more, but he must see his nephew, first; next day, A. saw him again; £2000. sd. B.; A. sd. he wod. take them; B. said he wod. *not* pay the £100. commission, so A. gave the Chq. of W. for £2100.!!—no doubt they *are* worth more. Watt is going to give £4000. to build a house thereon! I believe I *might* have sold *all* this Block to Tuke including house,—but I could *not* screw up my courage to *that* high pitch! But had the Education Board finally concluded with me about the Inspectorship I might have agreed to *all*. I enclose a note from Witty, wh. I have ansd., saying I am *not* your regular Agent, but I wod. mention it to you—pray direct me. *Great disturbances* here between the 2 Clergymen (Townsend & his *new* Curate Robinson) ^{7/10ths}. side with R. so T. is nowhere! *It is not yet ended*. For the *greater* pol. disturbances in the House of Reps.—you must see Papers.—I *have*, & *do*, thank GOD I was *not there*. How little we know of the *future*! Fannins younger sister Alice was married on Sunday (17th.) to a yg. surveyor from Xt.Ch.,—so much *off* his hands. 3 days before his bror. Eustace went *mad*, in F’s. house!! & F. in tying him &c. sprained his right thumb. E. was soon sent to asylum. P. Dolbel is at Wgn., w. his Petition, *re Carter’s mistake* in letting the Mohaka Run. I drew it up for him—or, rather, *them*,—himself, Balfour, not Fannin. Bee, are in it.—Well, I can say no more, & have striven to do that. I am bettering; & with kind regards, &c &c

I am yours truly

W. Colenso.

(I see “you have been to *Walsall*”: perhaps I had better tell you, *privately*, that I have *wholly* ceased writing to that place)

22nd. I close & send you 10 *packets* of newspapers put up in pain & with difficulty—I am a little *better*!!

1876 October 11: to McLean⁵⁵⁹Napier
Monday 11th

Dear Sir Donald McLean.

I suppose you either get, or see, regularly, the Maori Paper ("Wananga") published here: in the number to hand this morning—is a *loose* advertisement, or Circular, respecting it—a copy of which I enclose, (as you may not have one sent you,) you will see what they say of "*Waka Maori*."

This number contains the Mao. Members' speeches in the House, *re* Hauraki Petition, and Sheehan's speech *re* Heretaunga Lands &c.—(I have not yet *read* them.)

I see old Pao. Pareko is dead: no doubt you will remember him.

I close in haste for Mail. I hope *you* are well; I am so-so, suffering *still* from the effects of a *fearful* bad cold & cough.—

I hear, that both yourself & Mr. Ormond gave Sheehan "a Roland for his Oliver" *with Interest*;—I shall be glad to see the "Hansard," & read it, when it arrives. I was pleased to find the House negating the matter quietly on their voices.—May you have strength (physical), dexterity, & patience to hold-out to the end!

Believe me
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

1876 November 2: to McLean⁵⁶⁰Napier
November 2/76

My Dear Sir Donald McLean

I very much wish to write you a few lines, and I feel that I must *not* allow the "Rangatira" to return this afternoon to Wellington without my doing so. For I have been in town to-day, and I have heard from Locke, how ill you still are, (—who, I think, had seen Mr. Ormond, I have *not* seen him yet.) I do not however exactly know how you now are or how this may find you, & though I wish greatly to write, I do not wish to do that which might (in your present weak state) excite you, or retard your recovery.—

I have wished to tell you, how *thoroughly* I have sympathized with you of late: perhaps (in some peculiar respects) more so than any one else among all your numerous friends and acquaintances. Were you well & in robust health (as of old) you would have had quite enough to bear up against and to battle with in your place in the House. Though (probably) had you been there and well, some of your opponents would not have ventured to go to the lengths they did introducing &c. In reading in the *Hansard* the many repeated statements and remarks of your political foes, (including Karaitiana,) I could not help wishing that I, at least, had been there,—to reply, and to acquaint the *new* Parliament, (and the, comparatively, strangers to N.Z.,) of a little of *the past*.

You may recollect how I once stood with those Natives, (not merely in Hawke's Bay, but Wairarapa, Pov. Bay & the East Coast,)—when you *first* travelled this way; and you may also have heard and known how I had laid myself out for them—sacrificing every thing, including my small salary,—and, in later years, nothing cut me more than that base ingratitude of theirs! which, of course, I had more or less always painfully witnessed,—and which caused me feelingly to quote in my Essay on the Maoris (N.Z. Instit. Transactions, Vol.I.), those deep-meaning words of Shakespeare:—

"Freeze, freeze, thou bitter sky;
Thou dost not bite so nigh
As benefits forgot;
Though thou the waters warp,
The sting is not so sharp,
As friends remembered not."

Where would Karaitiana (& others) have now been but for you and for me? *I*, who taught him (and them) in his Savagery—*first* his Alphabet, and then (*slowly*) to read, write, and cypher, and, finally, Baptized him, his Parents, & his whole tribe!—and you, from whom & through whom, they have already received thousands, and have, with proper care, untold thousands more certain in prospect and in store! I fear, you cannot help feeling this deep base ingratitude of theirs,—which towards *you* (as, indeed, it was towards myself,) has been, and is fomented by *pakehas*.—

I was pleased, however, at one thing:—that your political *pakeha* enemies were obliged to allow the *great* benefit of the Maori Schools; though, here, too, the Maoris had neither eyes nor heart to perceive and allow of it.—On the other hand, I was grieved to find the vote for the "*Waka Maori*" not carried: that, I am sure, is a step wholly in the wrong direction; and I much fear the Govt. will yet find it to be so.—

I hear you are thinking of resigning your Office of Native Minister.—I scarcely need tell you that I deeply regret this; and, if your health would allow of your retaining the office, I would beg—implore—you *not* to do so. I *never* liked the Maoris being in the Parliament, fearing the *ultimate* result,—but now that they are there, they can only be fairly met by yourself (and a *few* like you)—who *knew* them well in the *past*, & who knew how to deal with them.—

But I must close, for fear of wearying you.—Were you nearer I would go to see you,—and will, even now (overland by coach) *if you desire it*.

You can, if you please, direct your secretary to write me a few lines,—just to let me know how you are, & whether I may venture on another note to you. I have been unwell some 5–6 weeks, my old foe, Rheumatism; but now, with the warm weather, I am rapidly getting round again.—would that you were also!

And now, my dear Sir Donald, in conclusion I would say, and that with a *feeling* sorrowing heart,—try and keep up your spirits, and put your trust *quietly & increasingly* in our *good & loving* Father, ever *the same & ever near*.

And, with every good wish,
Believe me, Yours sincerely
Wm Colenso.

559 ATL Object #1022963 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

560 ATL Object #1007495 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.

1876 November 3: to Ormond⁵⁶¹Napier
November 3
1876His Honor
J.D. Ormond, Esq
President, H.B.P.I.

Sir

I have the honour to inform you that an adjourned Meeting of the Council of the H.B. Philosophical Institute will be held in the Government Buildings Napier on Monday the 6th. instant, at 3 p.m.:—(1.) to approve of certain standard Scientific Works for its Library; and (2.) to nominate some foreigner as Honorary Member, in accordance with the rules of the N.Z. Institute:—when (if convenient) your presence is particularly requested.

I am, &c.,
W. Colenso,
Hony. Secy.

1876 November 3: to Ormond⁵⁶²Napier,
November 3rd, 1876.His Honor
J.D. Ormond, Esq
&c &c &c Napier

Sir

I have the honour to inform you, that at a Meeting of the Council of the H. Bay Philosophical Institute held in the Government Buildings Napier on Monday the 30th. ulto., it was resolved:—

“That the Honorary Secretary be directed to acquaint His Honor J.D. Ormond, Esq. General Government Agent, that the Council of the H.B. Philosophical Institute respectfully request him to obtain for them the use of one of the unoccupied rooms in the Supreme Court House, for the purpose of a Library and Meeting Room.”

I have the honour to be,
Sir,
Your mo. ob. servt.
Wm. Colenso,
Hony. Secy.

561 MTGHB 74426.
562 MTGHB 74426.

1876 November 3: to Ormond⁵⁶³

Napier, Novr. 3. 1876.

His Honor
J.D. Ormond, Esq.
&c &c &c

Sir

I have the honour to inform you, that at a Meeting of the H. Bay Philosophical Institute held in the Government Buildings Napier on Monday the 30th. of October, it was unanimously resolved:—

“That His Honor J.D. Ormond Esq, as a member of the H.B.P. Institute, be appointed to Vote in the Annual Election of Governors of the N.Z. Institute.”

I have the honour
to be, Sir,
Your mo. ob. servt.,
Wm. Colenso,
Hony Secy.

1876 November 14: to Luff⁵⁶⁴Napier, N. Zealand,
November 14/76.

My dear Sir

Last week (8th.) I recd. your long & welcome letter of Sept. 15, & was again gladdened with the sight of your well-known writing & to find you were *all well*!

Our outgoing Mail leaves on 17th. and I must write to you *now*,—as this time is an over busy one w. me, I only having *this day*! re-commenced my Inspection of Schools (which I ought to have begun in October—but Rheumatism & *changeable* weather (though *fine*) hindered me,)—was at the U.M. School *all day* & feel *fagged*—& tomorrow I am off early to Meeanee & so on.—When I go to Havelock, where I purpose spending a night, I will do all I can for you *re* Jens Neilson.

My last to you (w. papers) was on 19th. October, which I hope may duly reach you. I shall (if it arrives from Wgn. in time—having written for it) send you no. 34 “Hansard”—that you may see how Sir Donald has been “pitched into”—in the house, & that, too, in his absence! His day is gone by!! (rather soon!) He has been *very ill*, & is only now slowly recovering: he has long been removed to Dr. Grace’s *house*—for constant medical attention. The “Inverness” arrived, w. *our* usual “luck”—*all well* not a sound of sickness during the voyage, & one birth.—Unfortunately there are *many* hands still unemployed here,—& no small grumbling.

The Province of H. Bay is *dead*! No P. Council, no Super., & the Officers who remain in the Govt. employ are *now* of the *Genl.* Govt. Service. Sealy has *fully* resigned: Tylee is *C.L.C.*, & *acting*—for the present—w. G. *Richardson* in signing cheques: I hear, *that* work will fall to Tabuteau: a Mr. Beetham is to be our R.M., he has been some 5–6 yrs. a

563 MTGHB 74426.
564 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

Warden in the S. Goldfields, so has had some experience w. the unruly! may he prove to be a worthy man!

The last day that Sealy sat—some (*a few*) of our J.P.'s. went to bid good bye, & Joe. Rh. (who was spokesman) made a great blunder—stating that “S. had been 25 yrs. in Govt. Service, &c.” Sealy is selling his Woodville & other land, & is seeking to lend his money & I don't think *he* will *return*. I saw Tiffen *last week* who is looking *well*. Fannin has not yet got a billet, —there *may* be one for him somewhere, —I hope so—a *suitable* one—for his family's sake;—but (*entre nous*) he has been much too careless of late; which I have grieved over & told him of.—*The Education Board* (J.D.O., Chambers, J. Rhodes, Newton, & Lee,) are to meet on Monday next, 20th. — — — — *we shall see*. Mrs H.R. Russell & her daughter returned to Waipukurau last week,—amid a great to-do! (see Papers) An attempt at fire was made in White Road, & fortunately discovd. *in time!* £200. Reward offered. The Crew of a boat belonging to the “Columbus” barque (our first wool ship) was upset on the bar last week, when Kraeft & his crew put out & saved them. P. Dolbel has brighter prospects!—at which I am *doubly* glad! His petition to the House was successful, and the *letting* of those back runs is to be *as Carter* let them— “¼ per acre for the term”—this will save P.D. Further, Miller (the nipper) has told him, he will pay D. Cash (*less discount*) for those outstanding Bills on the Run: (*I think* Miller & his partner wish to mortgage:)—and this *suits* P.D. His Ram, which (some say) ought to have had one of the many prizes for such sheep at the show, has been shorn, & fleece weighed 23½ lbs.,—the heaviest of *all!* it not being a full year's growth. There is to be *another* wedding at his house on Saturday next—one of his Jersey nieces to Balfour,—Kinross' overseer: I have been warmly invited—but *cannot* go. J.D.O. is away at Wallingford.—

Another Artesian well is sinking—near to the last Corporation one, & for them. Several houses building all around; I hear the Carpenter's hammer continually: some on T. Section 288, and a 2-story one on 308; and one on 237; & the space between Pat. Flannagan's & J.A.S.'s. *old* Ho. has now 4 addl. houses, the B.G. Trees having been felled! so here, opp. my gate, on Newton's Sn., the trees *all* felled and the earth hedge levelled, & the old House renovated & enlarged and twisted round fronting the street, and close to it; I suppose N. will build another. My gate (there) has been *removed!* with all the lower fence; the mound (to right of entrance) is being levelled, & thrown to fill up T. Sect. 108.—Cont. for filling-in, £26.10. Wilson, Dentist, is enlarging his house w. a great addition, 2 story high, & end on, joining the other, and blocking up entirely what small view J. Anderson had! Tuxford's garden looks very well. Dr. Gibbes is going to build on the *corner* Sn., opposite to Wilson's;—he has leased ½ of it, @ 15/- pr. foot per ann.! It is Williams'. I have been over & over asked to sell—good building sites, & have at length consented—*on certain preliminary terms* (I have written you out a copy one of which I have sent to Gollan, to Canning, & to Brandon)—but I am not anxious about it.—Lee told me, that J.A.S bought back the *one* (& the best) Section of his 8 ac. block sold at Auction,—for, I think, £15.—but John is a severe loser, *at present*, by that whole transaction. I have written officially to Municipal Corpn. about Tennyson St. (S. end), & about Owen St. N. The Contract has been taken for the filling-in the N. Swamp Roads, & the work is just commenced—at the little hill, end of Thackeray Street. I hope they may *complete* it!—J. Watt has just come hither to *reside*; he has been *very ill*—

Bronchitis. I met the other day in town with a Mr. Paterson (now, the *Hon.* Mr. P.) who, in '61–'63, was in the House w. me: well, we talked of *old* matters—& I was surprised at *one* thing,—he was *formerly very subject* to the abominable sea-sickness,—but on his last voyage to Scotland & back to N.Z. by sailing ship, was tolerably *free* from it! Here is *hope*: hurrah!⁵⁶⁵ I have *no* strawberries again this year! Why, I don't know. James says, they dried up—but the season is a *wet one*—everywhere green. However, I have my *first* gooseberry tart today. There are fine strawberries in the town for sale—but (I *hear*) dear. I send you a copy of the Auckland “Graphic,”—drawings by Sam. Begg, Junr. I am sick at seeing so *much* in the papers (Eng.) about & *against* the Turks! my sympathies (politically) are wholly with them.—Depend upon it—their *end* is *not* yet, despite Dr. Cummings (& others) ratiocinations, & Spurgeon's (& others) *prayers*. People forget that the so-called Xn. “Church” (!!) has shed *more* innocent blood and inflicted more tortures (in *cold-blood*, too, & under the guise of Xts. Religion!!) than all the Turks & Mahometans under the sun. I must not forget to thank you for your Papers (still unread),—and I should tell *you*, *confidentially*, that Mr Symons of Walsall & myself—do *not* now correspond.—If I were *sure* of remaining here—I would give you a little Commission to execute in London for me,—w. my old Agents, R. Dixon & Co. Fenchurch Street: *I may yet*.

Today I walked by (*old*) “London House,” & thought of *absent* ones & *old* times! N. & C's. 2 stores—are *fine* ones, *particularly* the last new one—nearly *all* concrete, & McVay's looks well, too: but the *pavement there* beats all! *fine* good concrete work, quite *smooth*: I thought on the *old* front with its green grass edging! — — — but *now* there is no one *there* to speak to *me*.

And so, once more, Goodbye.—May this find you & yours well. I *may not* find time *next* month to write.

Believe me always my dear Sir

Yours very truly W. Colenso.

How do you manage *re* Income tax?—let me know.

H.R.R. has just commenced an action for libel! against the printer of *Waka Maori* & Grindell for the letter wh. appeared therein written by a Maori. Damages £10,000!!!

(Correct extract)

1. The sites I would offer comprise the best pick of all the land I have here; and are I believe among the best situations (if not the very best) in all Scinde Island; to say nothing of their nearness to the Railway Station, &c., &c.
2. They are situate on the flat-topped hill running parallel with Carlyle-Street, from entrance to Faraday Street nearly to Clive Sq.—through suburban Sections 39, 41, & 42.
3. They are laid off in ¼ ac. rectangular Sections, & they are all level.
4. The Street, or Road, in front (proposed to be called the Esplanade,) is nearly ¼ mile in length, level to straight, and is to be (say) ½ chain wide.—
5. It is intended *not* to have any houses on the E. side of the Road so as to keep the view open and unobstructed.—

⁵⁶⁵ Colenso was terribly sea-sick on his voyage to New Zealand, and later refused an invitation to botanise in the subantarctic islands for fear of it.

6. A chain, or chain & half on the E. slope of the hill, would thus be left, which, on the W. edge, could be planted with a row of evergreen shrubs,—or, which might be also disposed of in corresponding lots to the respective takers of the building sections: such would form excellent gardens, the soil there being so very deep and rich.—

7. From the laying-off the property, (sacrificing the *building sites* on the E. side, as above, for the sake of the noble prospect,)—as well as from the extent & number of the roads or streets leading to & from the same, through other portions of my land, it is evident, that the value of those selected Building Sites is thereby largely increased,—to the detriment of course, in value of the remaining portions of the state.

8. It is proposed that in selling by auction (or leasing, if preferred) the said Building Sites, the following conditions (or something similar) are to be *first* agreed to,—in order to keep the locality respectable:—

1. No House to be erected of less value (say) than £500.
2. No public house to be allowed on the Terrace.
3. The taker of any one ¼ ac. Section to have the option of taking also the next one at same price.
4. No sale (or Lease) to be considered complete unless (say) six Sections are disposed of. [This will be seen to be absolutely necessary when it is known that there will be over 20 chains of *Carriage Roads* to be formed through my *other* land to give easy access to the said Esplanade].
5. The upset price of each Section to be (say) £300.

9. I shall send a copy of these terms to one or two other gentlemen enquirers, but I shall *not* advertise or seek to sell until these conditions, or similar ones, are by gentlemen desirous of obtaining a building-site agreed to.—At the same time I am open to their modification to suit *bona fide* buyers. I am not, however, anxious of selling *now*, believing that the proper time to do so will be when the N. swamp is filled-in.

A plan of the said property (so laid out) can be seen at my house: it was laid out by Triphook in '58, and will, I think, be found suitable. Mr Rochfort has also made *another*.—

In case *all* the Sns. should be disposed of at once, then a percentage of the proceeds (to be agreed upon) to be laid out in forming & making the road of the Esplanade.

1876 December 4: to McLean⁵⁶⁶

Napier
Decr. 4/76

My Dear Sir Donald McLean

I only returned to Napier by late train on Saturday from 40 m. Bush, &c.—but I had heard inland of your arrival here & of your being so *very much better*,—which I was glad to hear.⁵⁶⁷

I must be *very* busy every school day with the schools between this & vacation, but I shall have *Saturdays* at command, & will do myself the honour & pleasure of calling on you next Saturday—should the weather prove favourable, and you disengaged.

Hoping you may rapidly rally—and once more be yourself again—I am

My Dear Donald
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

1877 January 8: to Luff⁵⁶⁸

Napier, N. Zealand,
January 8/77.

A. Luff, Esq.

My Dear Sir,

On the 4th. inst. I received yours of Novr. 14th., & was glad to find you were all well. My last to you was on Decr. 12th., since which several things (events) have happened, marking peculiarly our *New Year!* 1st. Death of Sir Donald McLean, which took place on evening of 5th.—he was buried yesterday (Sunday) amid a *large* concourse of people; the grave was dug *within* Barclay's fence, & close to that of Mrs B.,—it was a dreadfully hot day, & the 2 *long* services (first, Mr. Sidey's, & second, Mr Irvine's, Masonic Chaplain,) were almost unbearable. Sir D. has gradually sunk; they had 4 Doctors at last about him, but it was of no service. I had a very kind note from him, written by himself, on the 14th. ulto. (the day he left for the Station) full of hope, but he soon became worse there, & returned to his own house (lately occupied by Ormond, Mrs. O. & family having left for Wallingford just before Xmas.) I saw the body yesterday—face thin & worn & expressive of *much suffering*; the poor son, who was in the Chamber of death, seemed much careworn & not very strong.—A useful man is *gone*; his place will not easily be filled; I hope the Natives *will act reasonably in future*. On Decr. 31st. Gowing's son, a nice little boy, was killed by lightning in Wood's house at Waipawa, & the others had a *narrow* escape.—(This was our first New Year's day *news!*) Bp. Hadfield's son, who was at National Bank here, & *much liked*, died also last week, rather suddenly; believed to have been caused by rupture of an intestine in rowing! Mr. P. Bourke's daughter Dora also died last week after only a few days' illness,—thus, 4 deaths in the first week of New Year (& others, too, unknown to us). In this evening's Paper is a telegram announcing the destruction of Purvis Russell's house at Woburn, by fire. Towgood, too, is gone to England! having parted from his wife (somehow)—& *all* the Furniture, &c. are advertised to be sold without reserve next week. Willy, having *lost* his trial against the Bank, has advertised his house &c &c for *sale*,—he removing to Wairoa. In a *subsequent* trial (Sup. Court here), W's. conduct in *another* matter was commented on,—and, I see, he "*resigned*" his office of Curator of Intest. Estates (which took place *soon after* return of the Ch. Justice to Wgn.), Banner has it now. I could not see that W. had a leg to stand on in the case between him & Bank,—& *expenses heavy*. Nairn's furniture, &c, are to be sold tomorrow. J.N. Wilson is still in Quarantine—on an islet near Auckland—smallpox in Mail Steamer!—only think of that—*J.N.W.* in

566 ATL Object #1000198 from MS-Papers-0032-0222.
567 McLean died a month later: 5 January 1877.

568 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

Quarantine!! *George* Carter (Capt. C's 2nd. son) is married to Brooke Taylor's 3rd. *daur.*—and Alfred, his brother, is (I hear) to marry *another!* I don't like it.

The Municipal Corporation, voted the Mayor £200. as *honorarium* (he *present*, who took it, as "all right!") 16 poor souls were brought up today for *Rates!* they all have to pay with 5/- ea. expenses.—Newton has been obliged to resign—as a Contractor ("Dy. Telegraph"—which has *all* the printing now, for both Genl. Govt. & Borough! so that Carlile & Co. are ½ mad!!) C. & Co. have so abused N. Ky & Knowles, that writs for libel have been served on C. & Co., damages £1000. each!! (some of *our* New Year's fun!) There was rather strong excitement in some places over the County Council elections (*viz.* Waipukurau, Waipawa & West Clive), Sy Johnston beat H.R.R. at Waipuk., Rathbone & Laurence & Herrick beat Buchanan, McLean (Gwavas) & Dr. Stokes (B. was nowhere, & *rightly served.*) & Whitmore beat Sutton at Clive: Sutton was next to mad! (H.R.R. but little better) & both Sutton & H.R.R. have commenced law proceedings!!! I much fear that some of our County Councils may act foolishly; if so, they will *retard* our prosperity. Of course another new election for Napier will soon come off, &, no doubt, His Worship the Mayor will be in the field,—also (I hear) F. Sutton! & there may be others. If *this old man* is *offered support* he will try it, *not else.* The Mayor was to have given a grand public Ball on night of 5th., great preparations were making at Oddfellows Hall,—even putting up additional *rooms* outside,—I may say (to *you*) that we stopped it on *that* day as Sir D. was dying; the M. told me, that some of the *Invitees* had said, Who is he, that the Ball should be delayed? &c. &c.—(I *felt grieved*: what a world we live in!). Two or three things have tended to make me sorrowful *today*,

1. *this day* 24 years ago, my house at Waitangi & its contents were burnt;
2. *this day* 24 years ago, McL. bought this spot (Scinde Island) of the Natives;
3. Gollan & self talked *feelingly re* McLean yesterday: O—d. was dreadfully cut up, because (w. Dr. Grace) purposely in the "Stella" to *see McL.*, but he was too far gone to talk—or to hear anything! O. is just gone to Wallingford, & will remove w. wife & family shortly to Wgn.

I think I must have told you in my last, that I had written *plainly* to O. about my office, &c. &c,—pressing for a definite ansr., *one way or t'other*, by 31st. Decr.; this I have *not* yet got, I *wish I had*; but "he will *see me before he goes S.*,"—we shall see.—

I have *not* see P. Dolb. since my last, & am sorry at this: the more so as McKay has been served w. a writ (debt) & I can not get any thing from *him!* (How shall I *act there?*) Bibby is at me, for ½ dividing fence at Waipawa, which, of course, I must pay. I suppose, I shall have to go round money *seeking* shortly: I hate it. The Ormonds testimonial is likely, I think, to succeed, R. Stokes (so M.S.T. says)—spoiled it by *his* maxm. & minm. £3.3.0 and 10/-. I note what you say about Witty & the dividg. fence, & sections, & will see him shortly: he only returned today from Wairoa. I have been a bit *sad* w. Jens Neilson's affair: I told you in my last, I had written to him; well, in my absence (schools) the enclosed letter came from N., when Xmas. (*lawyer's* holidays) was over, I went to Lascelles to see the sd. Deed,—& was told that "2 months ago *your agent* Mr Cotterill, acting *under p. of attorney from you*, got the Deed from L. to send to England"!!! Of course I was *obliged* to tell N. this:—he did not like it, & it *looks* ugly. Dr Gibbes' new house is begun. F.Sutton has a *mansion!* at Mangateretere W., where he now lives. I only saw it on Saturday. Tanner's *grounds* (trees, &c.) are looking *well*. I

went to see Sturm on Saty. last—for the *first* time; he *deserves* more support than he gets. Our Ch-of-Engld. *dissentions* are still going on—worse, I think, than ever! I saw Mr Sidey last week, & we talked; he was looking remarkably well; I remembered *you* to him. Fannin is elected Clerk to H. Bay County Council, £100. pr. an. to begin (*soon* to be £200.) so he will *now* do. The rainy weather in Decr. hindered me much, so that I only finished my last school on 22nd. returning *tired* on evg. of 23rd., but *to work* on Xmas. day, boxing-day, Sundays & New Year's days—until all Teachers' accounts were ready for Edn. Board.—But I will *not* be servant-of-all-work much longer. O—d. is now Mr. of Public Works. "Helen Denny" left yesterday w. several passengers,—hope she may arrive safely; but I have heard fears expressed (inland & elsewhere) of *wet wool*.

I have not yet opened all your Papers, I send you some as usual. Had O. *decided* (one way or t'other) I could have told you *more*: several immigrants still in Barracks, able-bodied men, too,—who are much discontented, & here is the "Fern glen" coming with *more!* Grubb is very well. I saw J. Dinwiddie last week, he was well. So good bye, once more, &

Believe me, Yours truly, Wm. Colenso

No.2

Jany. 9th. 1877

I thought I had helped *you* to *your share* of the pie—last night, but I am at it again!—

I have been thinking of you (as I often am), and I find I have not replied to a portion of your letter:—with reference to your Wairoa Sections, I purpose going thither in Feby. (if I *continue* to hold my off. of Inspector) and then, on the spot, I will make enquiries.—My 2 Sections (399 & 400) near Harbour, are still *unbroken*; I don't greatly care about selling them *just now*—what will you offer for them? I have lately had Ellis (Brewer), Miler (Railway) & others enquiring after an allotment on the hill—I have told them pretty nearly what I sent you; Canning, Gollan, & others, are coming after shearing. Robjohns has *hindered* the opening of Tennyson St., (S. end); I had heard he would and w. election coming off the Mayor cannot afford to offend R. & *his party*.—I have also lately heard of a trial *impending*, between G. Hunter & Blair's widow's *husband* relative to his property of Robjohns' late Blair's.

The National Bank gave £1000. for the *little* corner! where Lee's office was!! there is to be a fine building there, which (with the new Masonic at the other corner) will cause Tuxford to build!—

I note what you say about Barraud's Book: the Govt. got it "*hot & heavy*" for subscribing so *much* to it: it was Vogel's wild doing. I thought the Govt. richly deserved it: it was a counterpart of their doing *re* Buller's compilation—N.Z. Birds,—which was not wanted. Barraud, again, is *truly himself* in all that matter!

Young Lascelles (the little wee fellow) has left his father's house, & Bray takes him up—as a husband for his daughter.—15!!

I went *purposely* last friday, to see Bray about it; had a long talk w. them (2) B. & wife: I hope my visit will not be in vain—but I fear—*Tempus omnia revelat*.

Carter's 4th. son is going w. the Heslops (Jr.) to learn the art & mystery of Station life; may he do well.—

This mg. appears Carlile's *first* article in favour of Mr Mayor—as our Member—if he will cut adrift from the malignant Repudiation party!—I have heard that Carlile is about to marry! It is time (if at all) for he is getting greyer & thinner than ever!! Miss Harvey has resigned the U.M. Town School; & Mrs Carr has done the same at Meeanee—going today to Tauranga (Bay Plenty) to her daughter Mrs Gascoigne: Miss Cooney is to have the Meeanee School.—

The men are still at work on my corner section (108) having been *hindered* by so much rain in Decr., they may finish this week; it will be a good site for a House. the old ragged mound is nearly gone!

I have written a letter to W. Wesley Bookseller, 28 Essex St. Strand, contg. also a draft for £35, for some Books for our H.B. Phil. Institute, & sent him a copy of Rules w. our Members' names. Had O. decided, &, *in so doing*, decided me! *not* to return to Engd. then I should have asked you to ex. a little commission for me w. my old Agents—Dixon & Co., Fenchurch St.,—this must stand over.—(Grubb told me this day, he could *not* write you this time).

Evening: I now close. Our Eng. Mail is off tomorrow overland to Wgn. I have had several visitors today who have hindered me a little. Among them—Mr Grant, the School Mr., on a tour returning from Wgn. by Coach; he is looking *well*, & has a good school (130) at Onehunga & Mrs Grant another, about same: it was very kind of him to call on me—this *very hot day* too! He leaves this evening. In Telegraph of this evening—5 Candidates are named! Rhodes, Tiffen, Buchanan, Stuart, & Sutton: Sutton's address is to be out tomorrow! The Mayor gives his *great* Ball *tonight*.

Good bye, Yours ever, W. Colenso.

1877 January 23: to Hector⁵⁶⁹

Napier
Jany. 23/77

Dear Dr. Hector

I have been thinking of writing to you for some time past—1. To hand you the enclosed (if *you* may *know* the writer? & if you are able to aid him:—*I know nothing* of him):⁵⁷⁰ 2. To thank you for 3 parcels of Books (your Museum pubs., *I suppose*) lately to hand for our Branch Institute: you shall have an Offl. Recognition &c. when we next meet.—

Hoping you are well I am

Yours
faithfully
Wm.
Colenso.

Obliged to send it in its envelope—as the letter does *not* contain my name. W.C.

1877 February 4: to Luff⁵⁷¹

Napier, N. Zealand, Sunday
Afternoon, Feby. 4, 1877.

My dear Sir,

My last to you was on Jany. 8, & 9.—*Our* Mail by S.F. not yet arrd. *here*, although it got to Auckland *last Sunday*! its own proper day. Unfortunately for us, the “S.Cross,” which had arrd. there from Napier only the day before, had something amiss with her boiler tubes, & so the authorities sent the Napier portion by “Star of South” (just got back from Fiji), she—with *her sheep*, reached Pov. Bay yesty., so I suppose we shall get our letters tomorrow; but the outgoing Eng. Mail leaves here, *overland*, on Wednesday,—therefore I *don't* wait the receiving of yours.

There is pretty much of news—but the great topic is *the election*! for the vacant seat of Napier: nomn. day is Thursday 8, & Polling Day Thursday 15th. There are 5 Candidates *now* in field (& one *withdrawn*, R. Stuart,)—Sutton, Buchanan, Rhodes, Tiffen, & W.C. Any amount of letters in the papers! (none from *me*, nor on my behalf,) and Sutton & Buchanan have been holding meetings (*each*) at Hastings, Taradale, Wairoa & Napier, abusing each other nicely (!). Sheehan, too, going about with B. & of course, upholding him.—Sheehan is *now* a voter on our *new* Roll; wh. contains nearly 1200 names!!—some merely as “Ratepayers,” some as “Lodgers.” Folks say the fight is between S.B. & W.C.—Tiffen (it is said) will be nowhere, & J.Rh. not much better:—we shall see. I fear, through T. & R. fighting it out, that B. may get in; both T. & R. take votes *from me*, (such as Chambers, Locke, W. Marshall, & others,) but I *don't* (that I know of) take *from them*. I am taking it *very easy*—as an old soldier, or veteran; I only issued my Address *3 times*, & I ask no one for a vote. Not a few, however, have let me know they will vote for me.—

We have had some Weddings!—the Editor “Herald” W.W.C. to Miss Julia Begg (4th. daur. of S.B.)—Manoy to a Miss Moss (Jewess) of Wgn.,—and Renouf to a Jersey woman (relative of J. le Quesne's) named Le Moyman; & Thompson (the old baldheaded schoolmaster, now Campbell's asst.) & a Scandinavian girl!!

The Town Swamp Roads are advanced to Monroe St., *in* Cl. Sq., & have *made the turn* towards Cape Kidnapper. Weather of late has been *dry* & hot (w. *winds*), & *today* it looks as if a Black N. Easter was brewing. I have had some nice Peaches of late in my garden—would I could give *you* some.

Methodist (Wesleyan) anniversary just over (2 months *before* its time!!—some folks say, owing to J.Rh. & coming election he being Chn.—*of course*!) *only* Mr Irvine was there as a Speaker—nearly *all* singing by “Amateurs of Napier.”

A Row is brewing—or *begun*! between W. Marshall & S. Williams, (or, I fear, *all* the Wms. clan) see the Papers I send: I am sorry for it,—and for W.M.—it will be the old story of the Earthen Jar & the Brazen one!

F. Sutton *lost* his case—*against* Whitmore, *re* return for Clive; & H.R.R. gained his against Sydney Johnston, (but merely through a slight irregularity on part of Drower the

569 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000094/003/0230.

570 With this letter is one from Charles B Plowright seeking to exchange English for New Zealand fungi.

571 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

Returning Officer) & now H.R.R. and Sy.J. are out again for another election fight!

Mr Ormond has just *cleared out*, with family, & dear old Mrs Thompson!—gone to Wgn. to reside. Watt & Farmer have just *really settled* w. the natives—paying them *nearly* £20,000! Sheehan & *all* the natives owners assenting. Hiraka (Arihi's husband) is just dead:—more work, I suppose, for the Lawyers! J.N. Wilson is back—at last!—came overland from Wellington; he is *looking* well,—stouter (in face) than he was: he shook hands w. me the day he arrived,—but, since then hands in pockets, & gruff as before!—“Whats bred in the bone &c.”—Wood, Shoemaker, of Kaikoura, is dead; & a poor old woman, named McMahon, was killed by the train near the Governt. Cottages. Grubb is well, but very busy. Dr. Gibbes' house is advancing, & promises well; it should be, for Dentist Wilson's is very pretentious, & must cost a good round sum. Mr Sidey is very well. So P.D. & his family. And your old friend Cotterill; and Fannin.——

I have not yet been to Wairoa—I purpose going thither this month,—but I go nowhere until the election is over, lest the Croakers say, I went electioneering. A letter came to me for you, postmkd. Wairoa,—I took it to Grubb (seeing it was in an envelope w. Red Seal Royal Arms—who sd. “It was a demand for Rates, as there were many in the Mail;” so I opened it, & it is so. I shall enclose *part* in one of the papers.—the demand is on “£4.0.0 rateable value of 5 ac. & 2 Tn. Sns. Clyde,”—which, of course, I shall pay.—

Ellison & Son have run *our* rates *up* nicely! I suspected they would do so. My house (formerly £90.) is now £150. *same* as McLean's & Ferard's—while Irvine's & grounds only £100. & Dr. H's. & 7 acres, only £105. Then the paddocks are greatly increased,—ex. Hague's (formerly £60.) now £100.—Couray, Hague's successor, has told me he must give it up. I shall *appeal* in the House, but, I fear, with but poor chances of getting relieved!

I have at last (after long deliberation) written Offy. to Edn. Board, wh. meets *tomorrow*, resigning my office of Inspsr. *unless I am better paid*,—for I still do *as much* clerical work as ever (70 letters in Jany.—besides *heaps* of other work—Returns for Genl. Govt.—purchasing & packing Books, Maps, Black Boards, Slates, &c, &c,—all the schools, & Teachers' accounts, &c, &c, &c.)—for F. is only Secy. to *the Board*!—I don't greatly care which way they may decide: *we shall see*.

Sladen's 7 yrs. mortgage is up in March (how time flies!)—I have written to remind: he replies he is “*not* prepared”; how will it end? Mackay (Tamumu) has done *nothing* yet! his affairs are shaky, he has put *his Debtors* into Cornford's hands, who *may* extricate him.—

I have made a curious arrangement w. G. Stewart, Porangahau,—you know he borrd. money (£300) from Kinross,—well, time (3 yrs.) is up, & K. wished it closed. For the 72 acres I had leased to him he pays £20. pr. ann. w. a purg. cl., *at end*, for £230. that land is *now* worth £10. an acre! & I have lent G.S. £200. on my own land! raising the pg. clause to £430., & he paying £40. per ann. henceforth.—He is getting on well—*slowly & surely*.

Lyndon & others tell me that money is rather *scarce* (so Banner & Co. *this day*, 6th.)—properties *don't* sell—many are in the market,—& money is sought after. Robjohns has built a House on no.334 (next to Brewery) & Dr. H. is

going to fence his paddock, posts so on the ground:—he keeps 3 traps now, & is always driving about.

A house (for a Watchmakers Shop) has been put up in Emerson St. *next* Sn. this way to that I sold to Mrs Tuke. Tuke (the goose!) has put up a high iron fence (like Tiffen's) in front of his house (Thomas' old one) & door of *same*! so that it looks like a prison—or Asylum! I only saw it yesterday.

Wm. Thomas' son, George, who was in the Customs,—and who has been doing the Gentleman (or better,—being more truthful,—the *idle* life) for 2 years, & who is now at Fiji—writes to his father, that they will get *all* that prosperity there! I have seen the letters; it seems strange, of course, the old man, wife, & son-in-law “Alf. Price *Esquire*”, are *in excelsis*. Charley, too, the other brother, has another boy born—and “there never were such infants”!! (as the grandmother says, who has sweet photos. of them all.—

Feby. 6th.—

I now proceed to close:—I found, in twon today, & at P.O., that *another* Bag of Papers &c (Mail) had turned up—& among them, two more from you, one (I fancy) the big *Report*,—with $\frac{2}{3}$ rds. or more of the address and wrapper gone—but, “enso, Esq Nap.” remaining, & in your own well-known hand-writing, which both Grubb & I could swear to.!!

Yesterday (5th.) the Educn. Board sat, & I find (from a *priv.* memo. from F—n,) that the Board will *not* increase my pay:—but they will agree to only *one* inspection in the year, & to lessen my clerical work, by their Secy. doing the Correspondence—or $\frac{1}{3}$ rd. of it.—

In this I am, as it were, *checkmated*: I am in a fix, & I cannot *see* my way—until *after* the election.—

More anon.—

I send you an Illustrd. Paper, which (the old magpie, at least,) will remind you, & your sons, of the Antipodes!

There is great excitement over this election! Buchanan or Sutton *may* get in; owing to Rhodes & Tiffen, *each* having next to no chance, standing out, if R. or T. were to retire, then the one remg. would stand a good chance. I shall be “in my lot”: and I don't think *lowest* in the poll. If I *could* swallow the “Good Templar” (creed, or bait,) I could make *sure*: (it has been *offered*;)—but I dare not do that.—

Weber wanted me to believe today, that Ellison is so *very* careful & conscientious that he *must* be *right*—in the matter of *rating*: I asked W., If my house & its 4 acres, could be *rightly* valued, as being of the *same* value as McLeans with its 5 ac. & its good road to the door?—

Sutton came in then (in Cl. Chr., & Harbour Bd. day), & our talk ended. Vautier told me, they were determined to see Tennyson St. S. *cleared out*: it is full of privies, fowls-houses &c &c.

So now, good bye: & with kindest best ever flowing feelings of attachment & regard, Believe me

Yours ever & always
Wm. Colenso.

1877 March 7: to Hector⁵⁷²Napier,
March 7. 1877.

Sir

I have the honour to acknowledge the receipt of your Circular of Feby. 21/77, *re* Analytical Index of Trans. of N.Z. Institute,—and the number of copies our members are likely to require.

I have delayed replying until now, but can no longer defer doing so. And seeing nearly all our Members are in possession only of the last (viii) vol., I don't think they generally would care to have a copy of the Index. Therefore four or six copies, (*including* one for our Institute & one for myself.) are all that I believe will be required. I have the honour to be, Sir

Your mo. Ob. St.,
W. Colenso, Hon. Sy.

1877 May 1: to Luff⁵⁷³Napier. N. Zealand,
May 1/77

My Dear Sir

My last to you was on the 1 of April (finally closed on 7th.)—in it I sent various matters *re* your settling for me w. Dixon & Co. of Fench. Street, also 1st. of a Dft for £20. (the 2nd. of same Dft. I now enclose,—though, if my last month's letter, *registered*, should miss,—you will not be able to do any thing for me (as I have *no copies* of D's. Invoices & Letters which I sent you). Shortly after my last I went inland, visiting schools, & only returned on Saty. night (28th. inst.,)—when I found yor letter of March 9th., with lots of papers & other letters. You have astonished me in saying there was no letter for *you* by our N.Z. *January* Mail: I wrote you a *long* one, and a pretty full one, giving some important & interesting news; I hope it has turned-up since you wrote, all the others I then wrote from here with yours, had been received & answered by the March Mail.—I have seen Grubb about it this day, but he can throw no light upon it. However I am glad that the Papers reached you.—

I returned to Napier on Saty. night, to make out certain School Returns for the Edn. Board (& through them for the Govt.,)—having received an official letter from F. on 25th. at night (Waipukurau), posted *that day*. containing a telm. from Govt. to Chn. of Board dated 11th., requiring "*early*" reply, & yet F. writes his letter on 17th. & posts it on 25th!! even then I am referred to 27 Clause of E.B. Act, which I found to state plainly, that E.Board must send in *their* report &c., "on or before May 1st."!! So I set to work *hard* on Sunday 29. & on Monday 30, finishing by 2 pm. & sending papers to secy. Fannin. *But*, the work is *his*, not mine. However, it is *over*: I was vexed. And now I shall *have* to return to Country again in a day or two.

I had fine weather while out & rode many miles; finding rising before the sun, & riding away in the cold mg., with

severe hoar-frost & bitter cutting wind, almost *overpowering*. I rode from Wallingford to Porangahau, in time for school, & next mg. rode back in time to catch the Coach. Last week I went on Tuesday to Ashley Clinton, 4¼ hours going & 3½ hours returning, losing much time in Sandy Grant's & Bridge's (late of A. Deane's) gates—16 in no.,—opening & shutting, 16 x 4 = 64. I saw *your* freehold (that was). There is sad feeling among Settlers far back, owing to *no* roads, & Lambert (see his letter to County Council, on this subject) & S.G. combining not to allow of any—without being *paid* for the land: L. has locked his gates & the settlers have forced them open. On Wednesday to Tamumu & back. On *Thursday* to Hampden, slept there that night, & *early* next morning, started for Bush Settlers some 5–7 miles beyond Ongaonga (Newman's), or 4½ miles up the valley from Herrick's, returning to Waipukurau that night having ridden about 40m.—The week before I rode in train & Coach w. Grubb to Takapau & Norsewood,—G. going on to Wellington, having a week's holiday.—No going to Wairoa yet by sea, the steamer has been barred in there all this past month! with *less prospect than ever of getting out*. The sea here today is awfully grand & noisy, reverberating in this house: I never saw a larger surf here, breaking, too, a long way out, in a long succession of rollers; the wind being little, and *off the land*, the Bay is calm,—or without broken water.—

Ormond & Carruthers (& 2 parsons!) nearly came to grief a fortnight ago, the "Wanaka" (*big*) Steamer arrived in time of heavy sea: could not be boarded! Evening, "Sir Donald," Str. made the attempt, & in returning was carried onto Rangatira reef! as she could not be got off, & seas breaking over her, signals made for assistance, (Kraeft being on board.)—Murray went out, but could not get near her! it was a time of peril; but, at last, she got off & came in.—

Ford's failure (Criterion) has caused *much talk*: how? why? &c &c. Watt, bought all goods &c. in *one lot* at auction under Bill of sale, for £3800., and it is said, F. won't pay 1/- in the £. I have heard he spent his time in Billiard room &c., *trusting to Barmen!!!*

A *new* election (making 3rd.) is to come off for Waipukurau riding, last (2nd) being also decided illegal owing to Retg. Offr. Arrow: I *heard*, that Syd. J. won't stand again.—

Syd. J. & his Dad. have an excellent opportunity of doing well with a Township at Takapau,—if they were but wise enough! but no, they will not sell a ¼ acre! & only Lease for 21 years!! The Natives might do a good stroke, there, now; but no! they also follow suit!!

I heard that David Hunter employs nearly 100 men at his place. A Church is nearly built there;—also one at Nairn's. At this latter in hoisting the big Bell, it & the scaffold fell, & one poor man was nearly killed.

Rees Watkins' wife had twins about 3 weeks ago, & yesterday she died! rather suddenly; her husband went off, as usual, w. the train, thinking she was better, & she died in his absence.

I see that "Psalms & Prayers as used at Trinity Church (Wesleyan)" are to be had at Dinwiddie's,—this is to meet the great increase from Townsends!—

I think I told you I had put Sladen in Lawyer's hands! *sorry to do it*: so Lascelles has tackled him, & Sl. *at last* has seen Cotterill & Moore (U. Bank) who blame the goose for not accepting my *easy* terms: we find that he has given a 2nd.

mortgage to his Brother for £2000!!!—and if I press, or sell, his brother will (I fear) get nothing! The Lawyers & Moore were to meet today about it; so as to allow Sl. time to write to his father. I have also been *driven* to put Mackay in Lascelles' hands.—

My own health has been *good*; though I daily have Rheumatic twitches, & aches, especially on exposure. Nothing but my firm belief (as of old in toiling missy. days) "*the path of duty is the path of safety*," could have enabled me to face what I have of late.—I have often gone forth with many fears, & returned rejoicing w. thankfulness.—

And now a word *re* the War, of which we get telegrams (our last being "London 30th," *yesterday*!!) What a sad state of things: who can see the end of it? I greatly fear it will—it must—become general in Europe, & then *our* Cy. must also go in! As I have said before,—my sympathies are with the Ottomans, or Turks, believing that they are wronged—by that Colossal Czar. My prayer is, that our GOD may help the *wronged* one. I have great faith in the Turks (i.e. the Mohammedans) for it is evidently now a war of Creeds. And, to me, it is pleasing, to find the R.C. Xns., the American ditto, and the Jews, united with their fellow-Countrymen against the assailing & blaspheming foe! The Turks are *brave*, & they are temperate in eating & *drinking*, and, better still, they worship the *one true GOD*. No saints nor angels, no virgin nor Mediator, no Crosses nor Crucifixes, no images nor pictures, no holy water nor holy bread nor holy wine!—but GOD alone—*Allah*! may *He* protect & deliver them. Amen.

With kind regards. Good bye. Yours ever
W. Colenso.

No.2 Wednesday May 2nd.

I thought last night I had *finished* to you by this M. (having several others to write to),—but I have this day again gone over yours, & I find 2 or 3 things to reply to:—at the same time I feel so-so,—influenza, I believe.—

You mention Witty & Wairoa: he is residing there now,—going-in for Hop-growing! in which he *may* succeed. I shall go there before very long—when river is open; & purpose spending some days, when I will do your little work; I have purposely deferred it until I go thither. W's. house &c was put up to sale the other day, but reserve was not reached: you will see all about it in papres. Sir D. died wealthy (at least I think so: probate for (I beleve) £180,000—for which duty was paid.—*All* left to the son; will was a very *short* one. I heard Capt., & Mrs H., were disappointed; but there was a Letter w. the will, addressed to young McLean to do something for them & others;—& I have heard that he had done, saddling the estate w. about £1000. per ann., for their lives.—The Natives I have heard, have made overtures to young Donald; & he, guided by Hast, has replied,—shewing his willingness to meet them, where any needs exist, but not to upset &c. any arrangements of Sir D's.—I dare say he will go to Engld. before long.—

It is said the 2 Stokes are going home: I think they ought to do so. Berry has shut up his shop (which did so well), & is going to reside in his *new* House just built, N.E. corner of Cl.Sq., T Sn. no. 254.—

I send you, an Auckld. paper containing Dr Skae's Report on Lunatic Asylum, & a leaf from a Wgn. Paper containing Fox's speech at Whanganui. I find the sea was high enough

last evening to come over McVay's & Neal & Close's premises: so that, had *you* been in "*Lond. House*," you might have thought on Saxby &c. &c.! It is fine today.

And once more good bye
Yours truly, W. Colenso.

No. 3 !!

May 4th. (night).

Yesterday I went down to see some of the damage done by the sea: I found all your seaside fence gone wholly!—& the big corner stone you had there washed over towards C.P's. stables!—part, also, of the new fence Sup. Ct. Ho. was smashed in. I noticed, this mg., the men engaged in baling out Criterin H. Cellar; such a lot of dirty sea water! The sea got in to Neal & Close's concrete Cellars & did some damage.—P. Palmer's 2 children are dead, both of croup: one being the little boy who used to play about the Stables. Fletcher's wife (Blacksmith) is also dead; and several others of town & Country.

G. Thomas is still in Fiji, and is well; he is almost "sure" of gaining the property there bought by his brother Henry: if so, it will be of value.

I found that Grubb had paid (somehow) the Rates for you at Wairoa. I paid him today his outlay, 5/- having money of yours in hand.—

Among the papers I send you, are, 1. a Waka Maori; and 2. a N.Z. Illustd. Herald, containing a large view of Auckland; I hope both may reach you.

Torre is here, but I have not yet seen him; Mr. Moore (U.B.) told me he was very well. Clive Square, lower Dickens Street, & the pond opposite Morley's, are full of water—forced through soil by heavy sea.—Note all in the late papers *re* Mun. Council,—lighting town!! &c &c. Dr. Gibbe's new house is advancing—looks well *on the whole*, rather prominent & striking there, but is too much *titivated* for me. Tuxford's *garden* looks well; rain is wanted in our *hill* paddocks, &c.—I send you the *latest* papers. And once more Good Bye—with every good wish, believe me

Yours truly
W. Colenso

H. Mackenzie is going to *buy, right off*, the subn. Section I leased him at Hastings. W.C.

1877 May 29: to Luff⁵⁷⁴

Napier New Zealand
May 29 1877 (night)

A. Luff, Esq.

My Dear Sir

My last to you was on 1–4 of this month, contg. 2nd. of a Dft. for £20. both which I hope you may duly receive.

On the Queen's Birthday (24th. *here*), I received your welcome letter of April 3rd., also several papers;—& was pleased to find you were all then well.—May this find you the same!

Our only Eng. M. closes here on Monday next (June 4) at 8 a.m., but I commence now my letter to you, fearing if I put it off, I may not find time to write at all! even now I have more to do, in a short time! than I *can* do, and this is my trouble. I was to have gone to Hastings today (school) but the rain set in & hindered: I have been working hard (since my last) but I make slow progress—having suffered so much lee-way in all all March in vainly waiting on the Wairoa Bar!

At this time I have 3 jobs in hand, schools: Eng. Mail: H.B. Phil. Instit. the Annual Meetg. *must* be held on the 4th. June, & I have *all* to do!—I greatly fear I shall not be able to see all the schools before Vacation, but I will try hard. I am sure *not* to go to Wairoa until *July* (as early *then* as possible)—because I fear if I were to go thither about (say) 15th.—18th., I should not get back in time to go through Teachers' Quarterly accounts, &c. for Edn. Board Meeting (July 2), & so they would have to wait a whole month for their *Quarter's* pay, & *year's* bonus!—which they could not afford to do. Your land matter there stands over (as agreed between us) until I see it: but it is *not losing* in value.—

I have lots of news to give you, rather more serious than usual—*Fires*: we had a severe & short one in town on Sunday night (19th).—Mrs MacGregor's large new House in Emerson Street was burnt down—inmates escaping with difficulty. The fire was exceedingly fierce: I could read well by it in my Bedroom; fortunately there was but little wind. *And*, on Wednesday night following, the fine extensive Stables & Coach House at Hotel Waipukurau was completely burnt up—with *all* its contents, *11* horses!! several buggies & coaches, stores, &c. &c. *Great loss*.—*Deaths*: several; among them, Vaughan of M. Hotel,—at sea, on his way to Australia for health, only 3 days out! a man a Carpenter (whose eldest son was with Powdrell) named Goddard,—killed by the wheel of his own cart going over him on White Road:—young Carrington the Surveyor—at Taranaki,—of whom I have written before: a young man named Davies—formerly a Clerk here, a nephew of Rev. S.W. (Tannian who formerly worked for me)—a man named Talty who died rather suddenly in Dickens St, & some others. *Weddings*: Cotterill (Lawyer) to eldest daughter of Mayor.—*Births*: Mrs Bennett, Mrs Locke, & some others (in Papers). Accidents &c., several, notably the total *loss* of the "Ocean Mail" on Chatham Islands with a very val. cargo from Wellington to London; lives saved: a sad affair. I have for more than 30 years had a dread of the group—lying as it is in the very line of a vessel from Wgn. or from Lyttleton. You will see a very full account of the casualty in the *Wgn. Papers* I send you (with some more interesting matter—including Bankrupt *rascality*!). At a Races in P. Bay, J. Bourke's son met some other horse in *full* career, & was thrown losing front teeth, &c, &c.,—lots of accidents from (careless) shooting,—including the waste of powder on 24th.

Gisborne is proclaimed a Municipality!! (may they like it!) Taradale is brought under Rivers Act (may it prove of real service!) Fannin (of Mohaka) is returned for that place in Wairoa Council! H.R.R. is returned for Waipukurau. Webb, has started his paper, "Free Press," at *Wairoa*! May it prove useful & serviceable and not become too supercilious & "cheeky." Sir D.—has been abused in the "*Wananga*"—in a letter by a Maori. The poor (young) Native has been hung (*brutally*) at Auckland and the great Native Meeting here at Omaha has been saying *big* things. What they (Karaitiana

& Co.) *have* done, & what they *will* do; that S. only cared to get in to defend his iniquity; & that all *those* Europeans are trembling for the consequences which they know are coming!—The Maori who wrote against Sir D., plainly, says,—the Maories know *all* about *his death*, that it was through *his* perceiving he was done, & could no longer oppress, &c., & that he foresaw the consequences, &c, &c, &c. (I dare say, several Maoris think so.) The new R.M. has 6 months leave of absence already! R. Stuart is acting, & Locke, is to act as Judge of Assessment Court, & of F. Lands (Maori Land).

The *various* Ministers are still alive! each one after his own peculiar view, & all, save one (the Jew), for money!! Macfarlane (U.M. Suprtd.) has been here a week & more preaching &c &c. A Jew Minister came—& performed certain rites, & "consecrated" *their part* of Napier Cemetery. Bp. Cowie, from Auckland, is now here, doing that kind of work for Taradale, also for the *buildings* there, & at Waipawa & Waipuku., & confirming children, & ordaining (2nd. time) Mr. Eccles.—And your friend Mr Sidey is now away Lecturing, &c, &c,—for the good Presbytn. cause—at Waipawa & at Waipuku., &c.—It is a pity they cannot agree (in such a sparsely populated Cy. as this) to build plain useful & snug Buildings for D. worship, in which *all* might agree to meet, turn & turn about. For my part I don't believe in their Churches lasting long—any of them—they must *all* alter greatly before that. *All of man's garnish* to the plain & simple Gospel Dish must be thrown aside, & *then* — — — There are several cases requiring *charity* just now: see Papers. George Fan. has been unwell, *again*! I wish he would *drink less*. I have told him so. Tylee tells me, that for *every* viewing of a Map, &c &c there is now a fee! which he calls a *good thing*, I, the *contrary*.—

There has been a terrible row at Taradale. Neagle had both mortgaged & given a Bill of Sale to an Auckland firm, & on their *suddenly* taking possession, N. endeavoured to shew fight: took away Ledger, &c. by force!—it is to be a Sup. Ct. case.—*Too many insolvents* of late. The big hole W. of Edwards' is now being reclaimed; & the Swamp is quietly jogging on with.—

I have had my bother (with *more at hand*) with some of my tenants, &c. Sladen, I told you of. Mackay, you will see in paper (*greatly deploring* it did I appear in Court!) to stay execution. Rathbone offered a Bill—long date—which I have taken; but how by-&-bye? Some others (3 of) I have agreed to defer for *a while*; but I fear with *poor* termination. *P.D.*, I regret to say, I have not seen since my last; & have written to him, (for he had forgotten me), & no reply yet. Last week I saw Lyndon (as Abbott's attorney) *re* Waipawa Lands; I lose nearly 0.3.0, the difference between Rochfort's survey & my conveyce. from A.,—and Turley's survey according to Waipawa "*lights*"—& the Road Board there *have acted* on Turley's! & the "Church" will *not* give in! I have since written to Lyn. & given him till June 1st.—but I fear a Lawsuit may be the end: *I hope not*.

You ask— "which? Invest in Land, or in mortgage?" I could *feelingly* say, *Neither*. I *won't*, if I can get any money in: I should prefer *Bank @ 5%*—I have had more trouble during this last 6 months than I ever had before. And there is more coming! I should tell you, that Sainsbury asked me for the Cr. Gt. of Hy. Mackenzie's (Lease) at Havelock, which now of *course*, M. will have.

I must not forget to tell you of the *funny* mistake of Joe. Rhodes:—he, through Lyndon, advertised sections in Old

Clive to be sold, when in came the owners bringing their *old* (non-registered) Deeds from J.Rh. with them! they had *long ago* built on them, & Joe. had clean forgotten it!! & had *no* memo. of it whatever. Hardy was telling me, that *old* Clive is picking up a bit now (quite time!) 2–3 *new* Houses built there.—

My own health has been fair, I have *endured* (in travelling, by night too, & *in* mud, & on foot, in *the dark*—pitchy dark & wet, & *cold*, seeking a shelter, &c &c) in wet & *very windy* weather, since my last; but our real winter has scarcely begun! It was *much* more so, early in April! I was, however, laid aside 3 days last week, which I thought was fever. I cannot well do a *long*, or *hard*, day's work now. I can get on with half a one very well. I stayed at Betine's Waipawa, it was nice, quiet, & clean.

I see Wright (Cy.) is gone to Engd.—having “made his fortune.”—Abrahams is going next steamer, he wants *your address*.—“Schichallion,” hence, I find has arrived safely. Renouf has removed to Kaikoura; he has the Contract for building Presbytn. Ch. there.

I enclose a letter, which came to me,—it *may* not be worth sending. How did you come off with our Stationery sent hence to Rhodes?

Boylan has removed his door from corner, to centre of shop fronting Masonic. A huge culvert across from Manoy's Corner to Newton's Corner.—

I put up for you yesterday the latest news, 2 papers. I hope the Russians will be *beaten*—“to rags.”

I wish you & yours every Blessing, and am my
Dear Sir

Yours very sincerely
W. Colenso.

P.S. Just a word from P.D. *re* business, Lyndon wrote on 31st. May, offering me £35. as Compensation; but I want £50. as the least I can take. I have however promised to *see* him again—first.

W.C.

Sunday night June 3rd.

And now I must close. Grubb came here early this aftn. & remained till dusk, the *first* visitor for many a long day. He has written to you. Since I commenced *my* letter there have been 2 or 3 Railway accidents but no lives lost. (see Papers). I note in your last your asking for a little Commission in London: Hope you will *like*, and *accomplish*, the one I gave you with Dixon. I would say a word about *Papers*,—send me those containing good Law *Judgments*—whether Ecclestc. or Civil; something really worth your sending so far,—what I send you from this little wee hamlet, must be, in every respect, more or less interesting to you as you *know* place & people.—But those you send of the *Weekly Times*,—D.Telegraph,—& Times, are good. I saw P.D. *in town* yesterday, *another* wedding coming off *there*! another niece, Jersey *couple*. I am invited but *cannot* find time to go.

1877 June 25: to Luff⁵⁷⁵

Napier, N. Zealand
June 25 1877.

A. Luff, Esq.

My Dear Sir

Out outg. Mail does not close until 30th., but I fear if I do not write to you *now* I may not at all, for I am desperately busy! (end of Finanl. Year! & Edu. Board sitting on 2nd. proxo. & both Bd. & Govt. wanting *every* thing in by XII p.m. of 30th. including my Annual Reports. I have just worked up *all* the Qly. Returns which have come in (through sticking to it all day *yesterday*—Sunday!)—Teachers, as usual, being behind: and now I turn to you. I wrote to you on the 3rd. of this mo.,—still I have much to say if I had time. Yours of May 3rd. came to hand 3 days ago, glad to find you were all then well, & that the Photos. of Manawatu reached you safely. Did you get the Illustd. Austn. paper containing likeness of Sir Donald?—You make me smile when you speak of “owing me for outlay”!! Do you forget the money you *sent* me? &c &c—but more anon.

Since my last Sup. Court has sat;—Libel Case (Ky. Knowles Newton, v. Carlile & Co.,) dreadful sounding of bugles & trumpets, &c. Jury gave Ky. ¼d. damages!!—Judge spoke *against* it, & would *not* grant costs! Mrs Blair (Keith, now,) v. Neal & Close (or rather N. & C. v. Keith) about the Bakery &c in Carlyle St., N. & C. *won*: but Robjohns tells me he understands, she is going on with *all* the others! Neagle, Taradale affair, fined £100. Canning v. H. Matua,—C. *won*, but H.M. made over by *mortgage* every thing he had, including his buggy, to H.R.R.!! But see the Papers I have already managed to put up for you. I send you also a Waka Maori that you may see the *nice* Map of the seat of War got out for the Maoris &c in it. I send you also some larger N.Z. papers, in which you may see matters of interest,—poor Singleton Rochfort!—

Dr. H's. son, Claud, has had a narrow escape, fell between the trucks, & got much mangled, but can be mended—they say Louis Pelichet, also broke his leg—in autumn, but is well again.

Jeffares has *both* Toll-gates & Gleadow has to “cut & run”! Neale has been to me about Tn. Sn. 108, for a Wesleyan. parsonage (Smalley began it)—but, as I have no time, have put it off until *next week* Pocock is offering his Sns. (see advt.)—I wrote to ask price of the corner one in Cl. Sq. (*under water*), answer just in,—£400. Bosh!! Miller has lately sold a Run away in the Pohue direction (see Papers), and Maney's *Moteo* block is to be sold by auction next mo. “by order of Registrar of Sup. Court.”

Whitmore, J.N. Wilson, Capt. McLean, & Blythe, are gone to the hot springs—all for Rheumatism. A culvert has just been made in M. Road, *above* my gate, and down in Cl. Sq. W. side—but, I fear, much too narrow, as they *always* are. Many thanks (till I pay) for the seeds—come in good time, & apparently capital condition. The tenant (Gillice) who took Martin's place, has bolted, & cheated me of 5 quarters, & now I have let it to Troy,—who will soon *purchase* it at just what it cost: *I am tired*.

I send you Papers contg. all about the *trials*. Have to go to 2 more schools this week, weather permitting: still fine. Was at 6 last week, am pretty well done. To Wairoa (D.V.) in July.

Goodbye, Very truly yours, W. Colenso.

Meeting of H.B.P. Inst. went off *very well*. Sending a *Paper*.

1877 August 15: to Hector⁵⁷⁶

Napier,
August 15, 1877.

Dear Dr. Hector,

Taking you at your word I send you herewith enclosed 2 Papers,—(1. “On the day on which Cook took formal possession of N.Z.”,—2. “Notes on the metamorphosis and development of *Danaïs berenice*, or an allied species,”)—which I read at our meeting on Monday night last. Dr Buller was present, and I have seen him twice, since, *here*,—& it is mainly through him that I venture to send you the *scrap* drawing appended to Paper no. 2; you will see it has been taken off my pile of scraps.—And Dr. Buller has also one of the perfect insects I raised.

If I mistake not, Paper No. 1, will interest you much: I should be glad to have *your* opinion on it. Perhaps you may get it read at one of your meetings during the “Session”,—on account of its historical & political import. I think the Governmt. will (or *should*) take it up:—if they don’t some others will.

Many thanks for the *full* number of vols. For our members: you have, in this, “done us a *power* of good”!!

Buller will tell you of our *first* meeting. You may see we are not *aided* by our newspapers. However we have made a beginning!

Find time to let me know *positively*, that if I write out (for the 3rd time,) those *notes* belonging to the Essay on the Maoris you will get them printed in next vol. of Trans. I have had Locke, John White, Spencer, Weber, & several others on me, requesting me to get them out. I will re-write them, & read them at one of our meetings, if you will promise, as above, (also, not *again* to lose them!).

Can you help me in the following? If so, *do*.

In “Queen Bee” I had a valuable case of Books (insured at Inv. Price, £44.)—nearly all scientific, from Continent & from England; I had been some time in getting them together, & in getting them bound:—& now, I fear they are *gone*!

I wanted the Botani. portion for my new work on our Ferns, and I was awaiting their arrival with impatience.—It has occurred to me, that the case, being small, *may* be among the salvage lot,—and, that, as it was lined w. zinc, the contents *may* be uninjured. What I wish you to do for me, is

to speak to some *influential Nelson* man now among you,—or to scratch a line to some one at Nelson on whom you can depend,—& so, if *as above*, to buy the said case, or the Books (or a part* of them) for me. I am writing briefly to Edwards & Co. about it.

Hoping you are quite well
I am, my Dear Sir
Yours truly
W. Colenso

*which I could name, by let. or by telegram. W.C.

1877 August 29: to Locke⁵⁷⁷

Napier
Wednesday
Augt. 29/77.

S. Locke, Esq

My Dear Sir,

I hope you are getting reconciled to your situation.

Last Thursday mg. I sought you: but lo! the bird was flown! (I had been looking for you a day or two before, but I heard you were busy.) Had I seen you, I should not now be troubling you with this.—

1st. I wrote to Dr. Hector—& among other things, I said, that Weber, Locke, Spencer, John White & others (*Members*) had been speaking to me about getting the “Notes” (to the old essay on the Maoris) printed in the “Transactions”, & asking Dr. H., if he would agree to it on my *again* re-writing them—for the 3rd. time:—I have had no reply to this, but if you should have the opportunity, speak to him about it.—Dr. H. *has* acknowledged receipt of my 2 papers (read here 3 weeks back), & said, that Dr. B. had given him a *good* account of *our* meeting.

2nd. I wished to speak with you, about the loss of *all our Library* Books in the “Q. Bee”! (and several others of my own, which I wanted, & which I regret,)—but I have, since, telegraphed to the Agents at Nelson,—& I find there is *no* chance.

3. About Gannon.—I enclose a note, which please, either *give* to, or *post* for him. He received the vol. for ’76, & Report &c of the other day, & *should* pay his subsn.:—but if he *will not*, then he should not be allowed to “loaf” at Wgn., as a *Member* of our corps, & so get admission *free* to the Wgn. meetings. He could have spoken to me (when here), or written to me, if he wished to *cease* being a member.

You will not have time to write to me, I know; but send me a *paper*, now & then, if *any thing good*—especially of your *Libel* case.

“Manaia” left last night leaving me—who was waiting—behind!! Atward & Carroll told me yesterday, they should not go until *this* night!

Should you *see* Lyon—give my best. Kindest regards.—
I am Dr Sir Yours truly
W. Colenso.

1877 September 21: to Luff⁵⁷⁸

Napier, N. Zealand,
Sepr. 21/77.

A. Luff, Esq.

My Dear Sir,

Yours of July 26, I recd. last week, & was right glad to find you were all well. It seems but a very short time since I last wrote to you on 18th. (& 25th.) of August! time flies indeed, with *me* now! I suppose it is mostly so, the older we grow; or is it (poetically speaking) that *his wings* are grown longer & he flies faster?—However, there are *lots* of *news* at this time, (& here, during the past month,) such as it is; but I would rather *talk* w. *you* about it than write. I send you a rather larger lot of papers than usual, (nearly 30 I do believe), & to them I must refer you for much which will interest you—and while on the subject of Papers, let me add, that I received but a *few* from you in this last Mail (6 I believe), & *not* the “P. World” of which you wrote, saying such contained views of the *Wst.*—I own I felt disappointed: I think I did wrong in some former letter to you in which I remarked on the quality of some of those you kindly sent; as, I fear, such a remark may have caused you to withhold: but your new *Weekly Times*, & *Dy. Teleg.*, are always valuable: I don’t care so much for your *dearer* (useless!) Papers—as “London,” & “World,” & “Live Stock Journal.” I had hoped to have recd. the full trial of Bradlaugh & Mrs Besant; I find (by scrap!) that the lady made a *noble defence*; she is a near relative of Lord Hatherley, the great Lawyer, & should do so. I was disappointed in not getting a *full report of that trial*.

A few days ago we were startled & grieved in hearing of the loss of the “Avalanche,” (news reached us within 36 hours!) several old Colonists with all their families gone! That was the Ship I had selected to go to Engd. in—if I went. And the Capt., I find, was Willie’s old Capt. (of Q. Bee & Merope), so that had W. returned to him (as the Capt. both wished & sought), in all probability he would have gone too! There are other curious matters, too,—viz. the loss of *Capt. Wm’s. old ship* (Q. Bee) here just 3–4 weeks before,—& the loss of the other fine new ship “Ocean Mail” (which was to race w. the “Avalanche”)—just 3 days after leaving Wgn.—I think your *channel* is about the *most dangerous* piece of water a ship has to pass through. We have not yet got the *full* account of our N.Z. folks lost in her, but it is sent for.

There have been several deaths,—Plante (Draper), G.Sinclair (the old *thirsty* painter!)—a yg. man called Graham (formerly a carpenter in Napier,) killed at Woodville in felling a tree, H.P. Smith’s *wife*, of Aorangi, Johnson, Land Agent who was formerly in “Herald” shop; Mr T.G. Smith’s daughter, & some others. (Plante’s death is a *sad* story: his wife seduced by Britten left P., & B. took her to Wgn. &c. &c.)—

Fannin has been to Woodville, & invested all his compensation money there. (foolish, I think). Holder is just back from Woodville, told me, today, that he has over 1100 ac. there! which he is getting cleared, &c. A large portion of *my* land is in the market (see advt. in *D.T.* (*none in “Herald”*!))—a few enquirers, but they want it for nothing—which they won’t get. (I am selfish enough to wish *you were here*.) Mrs Tuke told me, she had been

offered £400. for that bit of land near U.M. Chapel, but she won’t sell it for that!!—

You may wonder at my *not* advtg. in “Herald;” they refused to insert a letter I wrote (on “Chinese Immigration,” unless I left out the *Extract*,—which, of course, I would not do: so, after 3 callings & 3 talkings, I took back the Ms. I sent it to R.P., asking him if he would publish it, (telling him, it would *not* break squares with us if he, *under all the circumstances*, should refuse,) he however, did so directly & freely;—so he, subsequently, *got my printing*. Ever since, *Jas. Dinwiddie* (a little *fussy* pompous fellow) arrived, there had been a great difference—or growing coolness—between us; *James*, too, is a great man (a Triton among the minnows!) at the Methodist School-room meetings, and as I had ventured to touch *them* up a bit, the letter was *so* dealt with.—

We have had an *election*! of 9 Councillors,—6 *old* ones (*all who stood*) & 3 *new* ones were returned: the 3 *new* ones, J. Rochfort (*head* of poll), Faulknor, & *John Dinwiddie* who came in *lowest* of all, & scarcely at all. But see the papers: I think you will laugh when you read *some* of the *names* of those who came forward.

A *Working-Men’s Club* is now the talk, & will (if *managed rightly*) prove a good thing: I have *long* been in favour of it. Russell, M.H.R., Sutton, Sheehan, Rhodes, Buchanan, & others, are *Honorary* Members!!

Another Club—“Union,”—has been also established at *Criterion*. Ford is in the “Masonic.” *Fancy Balls* are all the rage! one came off last night: see names & *characters* &c &c in this day’s paper! I hope none *owe* any *old* accounts.—

The Education Act, has, at last, crawled through *Lower House*, but with many alterations & amendments: notably the striking-out of the “L. Prayer” & Bible reading clause (at which *I am glad*). The Inspectors are *now* (by alteration in *Comee.*) under the E. Boards (local), & also under one *Genl.* Insp. to be appd. by the Govt. This alone would (I think) determine me; as I don’t believe in 2 masters,—espy. at my age & w. my experience: but *we shall see*.

And what do you think! Stokes’ overseer, (now the 2 S. have cleared out!) has come out with *no roads* from Hampden to Waipawa, or from H. to Kereru!! but has generously offered to shut up *all* gates, only one day in the year—i.e. for the present. But see the papers. A great row, too, over Te Aute Estate—which “Herald” is *fomenting*! Ch. of E. “Synod” is to meet here next week (what to do?)—Anderson is *gone—wholly*—to Akaroa: so that that feud has turned out just as I said it would & must, at the very beginning: *all* must go!—S.B. Hill takes the town; & Irvine (*occasionally*) Taradale. Sidey has been writing *re* Education, v. Catholics, & they against him. Bp. Redwood has been here & is returned to Wgn.

In the “Waka Maori” Libel case, the Jury gave H.R.R. £500.!!! (a very badly defended thing) R. is now ill at Wgn. *Sheehan* questioned O. in House *re* Ahuriri bridge, & the Petane folks are wrathful agt. S. & Capt. R. & full of *thanks* to *Sheehan*. But as to the goings-on in the House! I lack words & powers & time to describe it! (see the Papers,) the worst is, *the end is not yet*. The Govt. are now pledged (forced by Opposition) to alter taxation next year, so as to include property & income!—will the *upper* Ho. agree to it? Grubb has been writing & *lecturing*, against the Australian travelling Insurance Officer, & G. *has the best* of

it. (see Papers.) Great trial case here all *this week*—this the 5th. day of *examination* for *Committal* only, & not over yet! 2 lawyers on each side, & Ct. Ho. crowded: R.D. Maney v. G. Donnelly for *Horse-stealing*, &c.—(Hard swearing, I fear, on *both* sides!) I believe the *real* cause is, that H. Donnelly (both G. & H. *formerly* in R.D.M.'s. employ) finding out a *flaw*! in Renata's big Lease, has succeeded in getting in the Patea land, for himself & Co.,—to the ruin (?) & discomfiture of R.D.M., Studholme, Moorhouse, & Bank of Australasia: (so I hear,—but I don't know exact particulars).

P.D.—shews *no sign* yet! neither Sladen: & 2 or 3 P.N's. (from *old hands*) are *again* renewed!—

“Helen Denny”—lately arrived at Port Chalmers; the Capt. (Ruth) married in England, Vaughan's daughter, who went home a passenger in her. You will find from my last, that Munn had sold his Sn. to Robjohns.

Cable has sold out at Wairoa. I have *not* been there yet! the Bar is again bad, & the *end* of the school Quarter is *near*.—

Oddfellows Hall is being *greatly* enlarged, & 2 story. Tennyson St.—in by W. Thomas', is cleared (at last!) 20 ft. wide for carts, & a high back curb, for the *present*, to help the houses there on W. side. Raffles St. *across* the big swamp is just finished—*viz.* the running of it across, so that folks can walk over it (in *dry* weather) to & from Railway Station. Lyndon did *not* sell any lot of Turner's Section: *he* valued the ½ ac. at £500., but the Trustees wanted £700: so none were sold. Early, one mg., Tuxford removed the Tel. post from *before* his garden,—to just where his neighbour's (Townsend—now gone!) fence joins his: I suppose he got leave. I asked him, Why? he replied, Because the old papers (ragged advertists.) blew into his garden!! The Gas Lamps are up, & now it turns out, that *no* contract for the supply of Gas has been signed!!! I have re-conveyed to Abbot the disputable bounds at Waipawa, & have got £50. (3 mths. B.) from Lyndon & I wish the grasping Ch. folks much joy! I fancy, they will regret they refused my repeated offers.—Mr. Sidey wants an Organist for St Paul's, & a Teacher for the *Port* School.

For a fortnight I have been “6's & 7's”:—yesterday fortnight my man's wife was suddenly brought to bed, & the midwife, whom they had engaged, had gone to the Country: she is still very weak & worn, &, of course, has *not* been *in here*, to do anything for me: fortunately *I know* how to work & wipe & dust, &c &c—but I don't like it, & I suppose this will (*must?*) cause another separation! I *am tired* of this kind of thing.

Weather delightful! I am still keeping well: for which I hope I am thankful (I ought to be). May this find you *all* well, and believe me my dear sir,
—with kind thoughts & *remembrances*, & kind regards,
Yours ever very truly, W. Colenso.

1877 October 10: to Luff⁵⁷⁹

Tuesday October 10/77

2886 My Dear Sir

This mg. on my way to Spit to see Capt., steamer,—going to Wairoa, I went to Land Regn. Office to see if I could hunt up anything about Sealy's 2 Sns. (1 & 2 / Wairoa),—after some search *the vol.* was found & I find they are Regd. in *D. Black's* own name (without ref. to Sealy or to anyone else) & *no sum mentioned*: I felt disappointed, & I tried to see something more concerning them, but no use!—

The Fee was 2/- (always now in looking at *anything* Reqd. *under Ld. Transfer Act!*) & they wouldn't take money—nor *common* stamps—so I had to go & hunt up “*Law & Deeds Stamps*” (a new kind of thing) but the only *legal tender* there)! Returning with my red 2/- stamp, I tendered it, but no, I must gum it on to the sheet of paper, say what it was for & then cancel it by writing across it, as in case of a 1d. receipt stamp! what labour & waste of time!!

I fancy S—y has acted cannily in the matter; but it is something to know that D.B. owns Nos. 1 & 2.—

Day is *very fine* but the surf is very high, doubtful if we leave tonight: I am to know this evening, & if we leave we do so at 2 a.m. an awkward hour.

Several came to me in the street about “the *Building* sites,”—I told them they were too late, the show was over!

Good bye

Yours truly,
W. Colenso

1877 October 10: to Luff⁵⁸⁰

Napier, N. Zealand,
Octr. 10, 1877.

A. Luff, Esq.,

My Dear Sir,

Yesterday I recd, your welcome letter of Augt. 23, & was glad to find you were all well—in 7 *Dog days*! May this also find you in good health. It is too early to begin to write for our next *outgoing* Mail (20th. I think)—but I had better do so now—while disengaged, though suffering from Ear-ache. I should now *have* been at *Wairoa*, but have again been cruelly left behind! & *no fault of mine*. (Unless you say, I should go & lodge for a while *at the Port*.) My work was *over* on Monday night of this season of H.B. Phil. Institute; & *all last week* I was *hard* at work on School matters—after *end* of Sept. Quarter.—

Well, yesterday mgs. “*Herald*” informed us, that the Wairoa bar was still bad, & Capt. of Manaia did not know when he could go (that Bar has been *Bad* for nearly a month: goods *once* during the month landed on the *outer* beach of H. Bay!)—I even went to Spit yesty. mg. to pass the entries for case of Books & *Tea* per H. Denny,—& in talking w. them there only heard the above repeated—& yet 2 *steamers* left last night, 8, for Wairoa—the river having

opened & entrance good!! (this, of course, only known by me *this mg.*, enough to make one wild!) I telegraphed this aftn. to Wairoa—“Ready, waiting, yet again left behind, owing to information in H. of yesterday mg.—I am vexed.”—This day, too, has been nice, calm, quiet; of course, *I wait* to go by first oppory.—one thing is good, I have *now nothing to hinder me*. I quite expect to be there within a few days: so, as I said, I write to *you* now.

In your last letter to hand, you say nothing of *yourself*: what on earth you are, or can, be doing!! As to *my* buying land! or helping anyone to do so, (such blocks, or pieces, too, as you might like!)—ask me to catch a star, or bale out H. Bay. I will never never have any thing more to do with Land buying!—I wish I had *none*—save just what my house stands on: it is our eternal source of worry & anxiety: but I *will not* be worried by it: I value my time, my poetry, my books & my study,—far far beyond the land. I have tried to sell—let—anything: *no*! Yet they want it. Well then I’ll *shut it up* & let it for a term merely as a grazing paddock, & this I have just *completed*, after much humming & haaing—on part of N. & Close,—4 years @ £40.—and *now others* come to enquire!! I would have shut it up altogether but for the *Rates*—which, *altogether*, Country & town, on *unoccupied* Land, are *heavy*. To finish this Land story: no arrangement yet w. Sladen: Mackay is done up, executions out against him: Robertson & Drummond (Taradale) can do *nothing yet*: Hague has now cheated altogether, scarcely any assets, & I shall have (I fear) to pay *his last year’s* rates as well as losing that rent! P. Dolbel (I got, at last, to *see me*—he can do nothing!! (£140. per ann. & all back unpaid *Interest* (*fresh*) of some years = £500.) he has spent his money recd. for Maungaharuru in land & in sheep! at last he pays me £25. !!! P.D. told me himself last week, that he could not have thought of acting as he has towards me, *only I was so easy*!!—Besides all that,—*several* P.N. dishonoured! Were it not for my small salary, & a nest egg or two in reserve, I must have wanted.—Lascelles has 3 or 4 in hand! (of mine) w. poor prospects: I never knew such a dishonest cheating time. I have had enough to disgust me for ever & aye about land!! I leave the Land for *others*.

The *Red Kowhai* is now beautifully flowering (one shrub 10 feet high!)—and it is marked, for *its seed, for you*. I saw the Surrey Hills *Foxglove* in a day or two, and watch its growth for *L’s sake*. Miss Ross of Norsewood school has hastily & quietly married a *young* Dane up there called Thomson:—& Mrs Wood *widow*, of Roseneath, has ditto ditto another Prussian, rejoicing in the name of Hans Bygum!! Your friend Mr Sidey, performed this *latter* job, at *Roseneath*, & they went off instantan to the N. Govt. being sadly beaten, resigned yesterday! what next? (see Papers.) H.B. Sheep show on today, Stafford, Sutton & others come up to it. Giffard, Britten, Dyer, selling out. Presbytn. Ch. built at Kaikoura, to be opened next Sunday by Sidey. Mrs. Neil’s House to be the *Working Men’s* Club House, rent £120.!! (I *find* this house belongs to Tiffen). “Helen Denny” anchored here 2 days ago. Do you know that Subn. Section beyond *old* Lock-up, which was bought by a visitor: an “Indigo planter”? Well, Lee took possession of it!! & has now sold (his *possession* right) to Duncan Guy, for £50. who has made a road through it, winding from “Sebley’s Gulley,” & now calls himself “*Owner*”!! A most barefaced thing—yet *Weber* defends him!! May I be delivered from *all such* — — — !! Robjohns has built a good House for himself, up over old quarry at corner of Coote & Shakespeare Roads. I see tenders are this day called for

filling-in Browning’s 4 Sections 96–99 in Clive Sq. Dr. Gibbs’ new House is spoken of as being *the* building for the new Union Club. How, or Why, I don’t exactly know,—but *I do* know this, that the Dr. *wishes* to *remove to Havelock*. Dr. Hitchings is looking very well. G. Moore (Wellington) is just dead.

You will see in “Weekly Mercury” much about the Colorado B. for which *we* are indebted to you.—Stack’s Beetle is all *bosh*! I have some sent to me, a *common N.Z. Camex*, a nasty smelling thing if touched, often found in lettuce, & on strawberries, &c. &c.

I was not a little vexed at the Institute Monthly Meeting on Monday 18th.—the last, too, for the season. (Dr. Hector had written earnestly requesting Members to meet, & keep it going.) I had advertised, as in duty bound: & lo! only 3 besides myself!!—J.A.S., Sturm, Holder—after waiting $\frac{3}{4}$ hour, Reasden came, & I had to read an elaborately written paper of nearly 50 closely written pages to 4 Members!! the others, living *near*, would not come. I don’t intend to work any longer for them—for nothing. Rearden was vexed, & in moving a vote of thanks, gave vent to his feelings. Dr Spencer strolled in at near 10 o’clock. Christy Minstrels, Niggers, *Low fancy* Balls, & Comic Songs, are the rage at Napier,—aye, & inland, too!—

I must stop: if I don’t go to W. before M. leaves I may add something more. *Very few* Papers from you (6), & *no Illustrated* ones, which you have mentioned in your Letter.—

Goodbye from yr. old friend, W. Colenso.

Thursday afternoon, 11th.

Here I am! at it again!! This is a most glorious day, even here, where fine weather is so common. The blue above, the blue below, the sun shining (not too hot), the *gentler* Sea breeze, the white rippling waves on the beach—the town shut up & gone, by all carriages, &c, &c, to the Stock Show at Hastings—I am here suffering from tooth & ear-ache, with intervals of relief. Only this mg. (9) Fannin came over very kindly to have an hour’s chat. I had gone up stairs to my bed (after breakfast) feeling unwell & moody, & wishing to be out of the way. F’s. coming cheered me up a bit. I must try to give you *Widow Wood’s wooing*: Miller (gaoler) was one of S.W’s. trustees; having business to do with the widow, he sent his Prussian under-gaoler Hans to Roseneath: the *next* day Hans went thither of his own account, & the *next* day Mr Sidey married them!! F. says, that he & Miller were on the wharf when the trap drove down with the newly md. pair. Hans jumped out, & shook hands with M. & F. on leaving, and said to Miller that “*Mrs Wood* was in the trap”: M. responded—“You should have said Mrs. Begums.” M. says, the children will have a *good* stepf. in B.—they do not seem to be *greatly cared* for by their mother!—

Tylee sold just 12,000 ac. Land in Sept. & nearly all to 2 or 3 buyers (see D.T.) It came about in this way,—Cable having sold his Wairoa run & left that place, was here & going out, looking about,—which so frightened Kinross & his Overseer that a rush was made to secure themselves.—Bell has just sold his Land at Wainui (£34,000); & so has Bee (£15,000) at Mohaka. (see Papers). I think E. Fannin will soon seek to sell his run, as his health is bad. The S.

folks are struck with the beauty of *our perennial climate*. You & I *ought* to have *secured* a good thumping run: *one* such block is better worth having than all my scattered fragments, & gives far less trouble. F. tells me it is a fact, as to D. Guy *taking* possession of subn. sn. 37—and in that open unblushing way—and it is *likely* that he will *keep* it! I found from the Rate Book which I examined last week, he had set himself down as “Owner”—as well as “Occupier”. I told F. that if I were an R.M. & my clerk so acted—it would cost him his office: or (if such a thing could be supposed)—if I were Newton, & Tos. so acted, I should give him warning to leave. A sad sad defeat of *moral principle*. Guy has just done another *good* thing! Corporation consent to fill in his Sn. (no. 352) for him, he giving a part *as a track* from Craven Street to Railway. That street (by Newton’s *old* store & Mrs Craig’s) will be *the street* to the Station—the only *one* being from Carlyle St., but by the *other* way.!!—

I suppose Bryson is going to build—on section *above* that one you got planted for him, in his absence—(those trees have grown *well*, far beyond N. Williams’),—as there are lots of timber just carted there on top.—The Wms. have managed to carry *their* man this time as Bp.—he is named Stuart (*refused* by Synod last year) & is sd. to be a *relative*. *All have agreed*—top, bottom, & middle! See a curious bit in *D.T.* of yesterday, *re* Sutton’s sleeping & *snoring* in the House! The Gas lamps are lit, & make darkness *visible*—being so far apart: one in centre of Cl. Sq. (i.e. Tennyson St. corner of M. Road,) next at Wilson, Dentist’s, corner: one in Milton Road in the angle, just below my little *higher* gate, & one (next) by Clayton’s Cottage:—so, on White Road, & on Spit Road—stars twinkling in darkness!—A man named Elliott came in from Petane way, was taken ill, & died in a few hours; on the inquest, another m. named Elliott attended, & the deceased proved to be *his brother*, had not *seen* each other for 30 years: both wealthy: looking after runs: not much brotherly love! I ween.

H.R.R. is going to cut up his Hampden land into small 20–30 acre farms. Ellison & Turley are the *new* Borough Valuers. Manoy *sen.* has been elected to the Wairoa County Council. I see, in today’s H., that P. Dolbel got yesterday the 1st. prize (of that Class) for his imported Lincoln Ram:—it was said he *ought* to have had it *last* year.—

Sunday, 14th.—

I am giving you a Journal instead of a letter! new My.—Grey (Premier), Sheehan (Nat. Mr.), Whitmore (Col. Secy., Upper Ho.) Macandrew, Ballance, & Larnach, are the others,—*it won’t stand long, as now constituted*. Auckland & Otago *can now agree* as to *one general policy*: we shall see.

Case per “H.D.” Books & *your Tea*, in box in this house, looking as clean & fresh as when it left Dixon’s Warehouse! Fear I shall not have time to open it till *after* Xmas.

Yesterday, I had an enquirer from Waipawa after a Sn. there: suppose it will again end in O!

I had a *painful* job last week; Lear had been seen several times of late by my man, sleeping about our fences & under trees, &c.—at last he spoke with L., who sd. he had been 3

days & nights wandering,—Gray having turned him out,—& that he wished for death, &c. &c. (I had previously helped him.) So I saw Scully who sent 2 p.men, who hunted him up & took him away. I then saw S. *again*, *not* to have L. brought up as a vagrant & sent to Gaol, but to place him in the “Old Man’s House,” which S. had done. It is a sad sad story! L. was well off *here*, a free-holder & w. money.—another victim to P. Houses,—or, *rather*, to *discontent* & *seeking* to be *rich*! (a lesson to *us* all.)

Curiously enough, the 2 steamers which left in such a hurry last Tuesday night for Wairoa, both came to grief! The “Result” (screw) went out & gained no place! her crank pin broke, & after 3 days in the H. Bay, winds contrary, endeavd. to sail back to Napier! “Manaia” (paddle) on leaving Wairoa, returning, in crossing the Bar, was struck by a sea, which caused the anchor (badly fastened) to fall over & so *she dragged it through* the shingle of the Bar! the rollers going over her! had the anchor *held* she must have gone; passengers (Maney & others) much frightened. Very likely had I *known* of their going, I should have chosen the “Result,” from what Cable & others had told me,—& only fancy W.C. 3–4 days in that *wee* craft rolling about in H.B.!! & after all, *not reaching* Wairoa: *you might have heard of it from some one*,—and a bit more.—However, *I have yet to go*, & possibly, tomorrow.

Your friend Morrison has put up a *public* clock, over his verandah which is greatly enlarged (the clock): this of more real service than Sir D’s. gift, which is “stowed away,” ostentatiously, up above the Royal Yards, & is out of sight; save from Clarendon Hotel!—

I was amused the other day in passing by Conroy’s (late Hague’s) Shop—to see 52 couples of Rabbits!! The weekly Coach brings them every week now, from Wairarapa. I note, from Returns, that on some Runs, 1000 *a day* are killed, on a *single* Run! & in Dunedin 1000 per week are regularly sold.—I fear our foolish thickheaded know-nothing & thoughtless Acclimatisation Societies have done great mischief in N.Z.—*future* times will show.

Don’t send me (specially) papers contg. War news: *I never read any*: our short telegrams are quite enough. When G. Grey went to be sworn-in, he & Normanby met for *first* time! & no doubt, were *Exceedingly polite*.—

(15th.) Just got a note from Black, Wairoa, enqg. after yr. 5 ac. Sn., have replied, *that I will see him there*: send me *your lowest* fig. I heard, some time ago, it was not a very good one.

And now I must close. Kind regards to all family, & believe me, ever yours, *truly*, W. Colenso.

1877 October 20: to Luff⁵⁸¹

Napier, N.Z.,
Saty evg., Oct. 20/77.

A. Luff. Esq.,

My Dear Sir,—Here am I a-scribbling to *you* again! I returned *this mg.* about 1 a.m. from *Wairoa*! Of course my rapid movements were most unexpected: had any one assured me that I should have gone to W. & back within 48 hours I cod. not have believed him. I left *home* at XI. on Wednesday nt., land. at W. by 1 p.m. on Thursday, having anchored 2ce.—once, off Mohaka, to land cargo & passgrs.,—& once, outside Wairoa's (dreaded) Bar until the tide should flow sufficiently. During Thursday aftn. I visited the School, (merely to *look* about & to shew myself!) & also Willy's Hop gardens which are looking well,—vigorous & healthy. I went *early* to bed, & on Friday took school from IX—I (4 hours) & finding—that the next Steamer ("Result")—*under the most favourable circumstances*—would not be here before Thursday next to leave for Napier on Friday 24th.—(while judging from the past—throughout 6–8 months—I *might* be shut up *there* for a fortnight—or even more)—I made up my mind to return by the steamer which brought me, (as I could not induce the Capt. to stay even another tide—so fearful are they *now* of the 2 Bars. Napier & Wairoa,)—and left W. at 1 p.m. yesterday: *in one sense most unwillingly*. I would have staid for 2, 3, or 4, days, longer *if there were any certainty*—but there was *none*.—We had another long passage back through head wind, & heavy head sea, & then, at Ahuriri, waiting for the tide to make; as it was we dragged 200 yds over the Bar!—& glad & *thankful* was I to get safely under my own *quiet* roof again! But I am *not* yet myself; James, my man—to whom I had telegraphed was down at wharf, w. a trap.—(I would not write all this to you, did I not know that, you are a *similar* sailor to myself, & *therefore can* sympathise.)

I did *not* see D. Black at Wairoa, & only saw Witty for a few minutes, who honr. promd. to see me again at steamer, which he *did not*.—

On my return I found a note from Lambert (enclosed)—& first thing this mg. I sent him your *address*—telling him that you did *not reside* there.—

I send you 3–4 latest papers to date which will give you *last news*. Col. Whitmore is Col. Secy.—But, they say the G. Grey Ministry *cannot* stand. W. Marshall has *resigned* his curacy (or "Incumbency"!!) owing to his not agreeing with *his people*; I think he is much to blame; but he has *always* had Church *building* on the brain! He might have lived very quietly & *usefully* (in his own *little circle* at Havelock:) & now, as things are, he has left, or will leave, a hornet's nest for his successor.—You will see in "Herald" all about *Gaelic* meeting at Kaikoura *re* Sir Donald's *memory*; I find they have put *me* down prominently in their Commee.—It is true *I* was the Europn. who *recd. him here*, in '51 (at Waitangi), but he put me out of my off. as Treasr., & was the negative means of the N.Z. Exn. not being carried on: but all that is, & must now be, forgotten. There is to be an Indian Famine public meeting on Tuesday next, we must all give something,—but there is (& *will be*) much *needed* here among us.

I thought I would scrawl you a *last* word. Please send on enclosed note, it will cost you 1d.!!

Ever yours truly, W. Colenso.

I have received a copy of the Christchurch "Sun" from Mr Suter w. compliments; has *he* anything to do with it? The "Sun" has copied freely from my long letter on the Tamil Bell.

1877 November 4: to Luff⁵⁸²

Napier, N. Zealand
Novr. 4th. 1877 .

A. Luff Esq.,

My Dear Sir,

I little thought when I closed my last to you (Octr. 20th.) I should be writing to you again *so early*! I had on that day returned from Wairoa, and I have not been out since! save just over the door-step for 2 or 3 times. I must have caught a dreadful cold—w. *severe harrassing* cough, and very bad (fiery red) eyes; and I am only now really rallying; and hope to go to town tomorrow.

But I write to you now, in this letter, on *one* matter of *business* only, viz. the Books (Linnean Society's publications) shipped for me by Dixon & Co. per "Helen Denny" having lately found out a sad mistake. And this (I may say) by chance, for had I not been too unwell to go out, (I had said to my man James, on receiving the case, "Leave it there till after Christmas, when I hope to have leisure"), I should not have discovered it. However, we have opened the case, and I find that while I have *all* the *small* publications of the L. Society, the *large* ones I have *not* got: only 2 parts of a vol. issued in the year '69!—

And here I should tell you that the L. Society publishes 2 sets of works:—1. a *small* monthly publication ("Journal"), selling price 2/-,—and 2. a *large* magnificent quarto, w. many copper-plates ("Transactions")—which is published irregularly, that is 2, or 3, or 4 parts in a year, and each *part* from £1 to £2.10: so you may easily perceive the great difference between them; and the *larger work* I particularly wanted.

Now in this lot, just to hand, I have all the small monthly numbers from early '69 down to Feby. '77, regular & quite complete. While of the large 4to. work I have only 2 parts (and these not quite consecutive) which were published in '69, viz. vol xxvi. part 3, and vol. xxvii. part 1: so that all from that time, '69, are wanting. And then the next question is, where can they possibly be? Left behind in Dixon & Co's. warehouse? Of this I am not by any means sure,—& here I must tell you of the regulations of the Society, viz. that they *send out* the smaller work, but the larger one they *never* do—it *must* be *fetched* from the Society's house and a receipt for it given & filed:—Of this regulation I informed D. & Co. in '65, when I gave them the necessary authority to receive & *fetch* those works for me; at the same time sending the *requisite authority* to the Librarian at

581 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

582 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4. Letter addressed to "A. Luff Esq., 135 East India Road, Poplar, London".

Burlington House to deliver them to D. & Co. And note, further, that every *monthly* packet is carefully put up in a white wrapper addressed to me *care of Messrs. Dixon & Co.* (showing that it was *sent*) while the Transactions are *not* so, but are put up in stout brown paper with only my name on them & *nothing else*, evidencing (I think) their having been *fetched*.

And now comes the question, Where are the missing parts? Did Dixon & Co. *continue* to *send* for them, as before; or did they *omit* doing so? If they *fetched them*, then they have them still, I suppose; but if not they are not, then they are at the Society's House.

And then comes another *bother*! I *see*, among their bye-laws (just to hand) one to this effect,—*that all publications not fetched within 5 years are forfeited!!* (still, it is added, their Council *can alter* this in particular cases).—

However, to meet all exigencies (as far as I can), I shall enclose 2 notes:—one to Dixon & Co and one to the Librarian at Burlington House—to be used by you *if needed*. I shall also write to my old friend, Dr. Hooker of Kew, by this Mail, about it,—as he has great influence w. the Society, having been elected President several times.

There are still 2 or 3 peculiarities about those wanting parts of the Lin. “Transactions”.

1. Seeing that they are published *irregularly*, I do not know how Messrs. Dixon & Co. could know *when* to send for them: and, possibly, when they did send, they might only, perhaps, receive a copy of the part then *last* published,—although 2, or more, might have been printed since the former part was fetched by them.

2. Now in the lot which D. & Co. sent me in '69,—I had vol. xxvi. part 2, (the *last* part then received,) but I had *not* part 1, of *that* vol., which, too, was a bulky one, price £2.2.0 (*this* is still wanting,)—while, in this *last* lot, part 4 of vol. xxvii. was *not yet printed* when part 1 of vol. xxvii. was issued; so that of vol. xxvi. I want parts 1 and 4: and, of course, all parts from vol. xxvii. part 1 (which I have) downwards to the present time.—

3. I may also mention that, as the smaller Books were always put up in *white*, (or whitish) covers, & therefore readily distinguished in a London warehouse,—the larger ones were in common *brown* paper, hence a possibility of these having been overlooked in the packing of the case, but I doubt this.

I wrote both to Dixon & Co., and to the officers of the Linn. Society *from Wellington*, when there in '65 (Parliament!) and I have had a regular hunt to find their letters (recd. by me there) and my *answers*: fortunately I have *found* them *all*.

I have little or no fear of the large lot missing (from the last part *now* received xxvii/1.) turning-up all right, but there *may* be a back part missing (*viz.* vol. xxvii part 1),—if so, then I shall get you to buy it for me (to complete the set) from the Librarian at the price to “*Fellows*,”—which for *that* part, I *see*, is £1.11.6. I shall also mention this in my note to the Librarian.—

Of course you can, *after* seeing Dixon & Co., *either* call with my note, or send it on, and stating when you will call on him; use your own judgment on this matter. I hope if you go thither you will see the Museum, Library, &c. and *report* accordingly.—

I expect you will also have to make some definite arrangement for the *future* with Messrs. Dixon & Co., about the *sending for those* “*Transactions*”: I, of course, paying for their doing so.

Hoping you are well,
I am, my dear Sir,
Yours truly,
W. Colenso.

1877 November 7: to Gore⁵⁸³

Napier, Novr. 7, 1877.

Sir

I have the honour to ask the New Zealand Institute to be pleased to grant me a set of volumes (ix in number) of the “Transactions” of the Institute:—under section f. of clause 5 of “Abstract of Rules, &c.”—

I want them for the Public Library in Penzance, Mount's Bay, Cornwall, England, and will, on receiving them, send you a P.O.O. for the amount.

If convenient, I should like to receive them *early*, so as to send them to England per one of our first wool-ships hence.—

I have the honour to be,
Sir,
Your mo. ob. servt.,
Wm. Colenso.

1877 November 13: to Luff⁵⁸⁴

Napier, Nov. 13, 1877.

A. Luff Esq.,

My dear Sir

Yours of Sept. 14th. I received on the 8th. instant, & was pleased to find you were all then well;—may this find you so! I was also gratified—*relieved* I may say—to know you had recd. the telegram from Auckland in July, and I had the pleasing information that *all* my telms. so sent were quickly received.

I have already written so much to go to you by this Mail—that this letter must be shorter than usual. Our new Bishop *elect* is soon to be here—Witty's Ho. is taken for him, rent £100. Bp. Williams is very ill—a fortnight in bed, & it is *feared*, departing! I went there but did not *see* him.⁵⁸⁵ St. Hill (Rev.) was here yesty. & gave me the above news: and Dr. Gibbes was also here last night (ea. spent about 2 hours!! so I had compy. on the 12th!!) G. is removing to Havelock—into Braithwaite's house, the Settlers guaranteeing G. £500 per ann. G. also entered into partnership w. a Doctor in Picton—who will reside in G's house here in Town—name, *Caro*. J.N. Wilson (alias Bear)

583 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000094/003/0298

584 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

585 Williams refused to see him.

has been by Grey's Miny. called to Upper Ho., Governor would not immy. consent, & a great row about it! (You will see in "Herald" how W. *demeaned* himself—about me & my *short* letter at Pub. Mg. *re* Ind. F. Fund.)⁵⁸⁶ They are filling-in Browning's 4 Sns. in Clive Sq. adjg. Thomas'—taking the earth from his *hilly corner* one in Tennyson. St. South, & Robjohns is also going to have his sn., the next one, "cut down like a cheese"—I have given permission to Mills, the Rd. Contractor, to cut into 29 & 30, Hyderabad Road, to make Road thereabouts.—I have let a sn. ($\frac{1}{8}$ acre) at Waipawa next to Woods, for £10 year & pg. ch. £100.—& that is about all w. me. Sladen has paid off $\frac{1}{3}$ of mtge. P.D. *nil*. Robertson & D., *nil*. Mackay *nil*.—But see Miller's report *re* Land sales &c. [See N.Z. Mail, Wgn. of Octr. 27, for Judgment.]. Have sent to Wn. for Chief Justice's Judgment in case Maoris v. Bp. of Wellington, if I get it will send it).

Jo. Rhodes just back from Canterbury, says "he rode over 200 miles through a fine grain growing Cy., & that wheat & oats were now beating wool out of the market". J. is looking well, he says his bror. Barney is failing fast. Ludlum of Hutt is just dead. Old Shirley in town yesterday was seized w. paralysis! Bradley, Taradale, got dragged by his horse, & his upper teeth knocked out &c., &c. (see papers). "Mataura" w. immigrants arrd. on 9th. (holiday) all well, as *usual w. us*, but one yg. man, (21) was brought on shore to Hospital & died *yesterday*!—It is said, "sea-sickness"—all the way! poor fellow, *you & I* can symp. w. him.⁵⁸⁷ Also w. Mrs. Price (Thomas' daughter) who suffd. much from sea-s., *taken in her cot* from Eng. ship into "Rangatira", & after 8–10 days here, is gone (on her back) to Motuotaraia. She looks well, though, & is cheerful: perhaps her *children & home* may work wonders. Mr. Sidey is still in Australia.

You will see Mack's (2nd.) note & my reply. I think you did *not* act rightly w. me, in not giving me *the price* of your 5 ac. at Wairoa. Such *seems* scarcely the proper way w. a friend, or that of doing business,—which nowadays is often done "right off"—if at all.—PARDON THIS PLAIN SPEAKING. Great drought here—no vegetables in my garden, nor any in town worth having. Hot winds exceedingly high for 3 weeks—those drying-up W. ones; snapping off Poplars & willows like carrots up at Meeanee & Taradale, & a few also *here*. Do you *wish* to subscribe to D. McLean's *monument*? If so send *me* your subn. or *mention* the sum, as I have been apptd. one of the "*Collectors &c.*"! Rather *too many* calls of that kind, *just now*. Must refer you to Papers all about the Parliament! a horrid mess they are in, & doing *nothing*! yet costing the country enormous sums.—A dissolution is expd. &, it is said, J. Rhodes, R. Stuart & J.N. Wilson are coming out!! Sutton (if he is wise) had better *retire*. I have *not yet* gone to any school, since my return from Wairoa,—it pulled me down sadly & I am not yet well—perhaps *never shall be here*. I think I must give up my office; but I am going to try (D.V.) next week.—

Thanks for your 10 papers—little however in them of *int. to me*: I *never read about the War*; our telms. are *sufficient*. Should like to have had Bradlaugh's trial—complete—also his book (in which I believe to be a good deal of truth) also a copy of this book called "The Priest in Absolution" of which so much is said.

And now I must say Good-bye.
Believe me, ever yours truly,
W. Colenso.

Rev. W. Marshall has withdrawn his resignation!!

1877 December 9: to Luff⁵⁸⁸

Napier, N. Zealand, Sunday,
December 9, 1877.

A. Luff Esq.,

My Dear Sir,

Four days ago I had the pleasure of receiving your long & friendly & welcome letter of Octr. 10–17, & I was much pleased to find you were all then well. My last to you (a bulky one) was closed, I think, on 14th. Novr. I was not then very well, & since that I rallied & went to work & got laid up again—another 7, 8 days!! I am going to make another attempt tomorrow (at Campbell's) & so on to 24th. inclusive, if I can, & even then I have not time enough left to visit all *before* Xmas: so I write you *today*.

First, Business: I enclose Black's last note, which will speak for itself. Witty I write to by to-morrow's mail to let him know that his Deed is ready &c. I thank you for paying Trubner & Wesley those two sums for me. I ought to have heard from them both but didn't: they may, however, have written by Suez mail.

Of *news*, there is plenty: Parliament, I believe, prorogues *tomorrow*. Gray Ministry still in: $2\frac{1}{2}$ m. to be borrowed.—see the papers I send you; O., S., & Russell (W.) returned yesterday. I saw S., who was looking pretty well. Education Act will pass, with a few of the Amendments of the Leg. Cl.—one, the *Inspectors* to be appd. & removd. by Governor; & *this* Edl. District to comprise from S. Boundary of H. Bay on to the *other* (N.) side of E. Cape!! in Bay of Plenty! Sup. Ct. opens here tomorrow—Prendergast is come, & the Calendar *heavy* for *us*!, a sad case of murder at Woodville, a fortnight ago—& the man taken up on *suspicion* (though the sapient Coroner's Jury at W. draught him in *guilty* of *w. murder*!) there is little or no *evidence against* him but, as somebody did it, a great *furor*!—Mrs. Shepherd (Havelock) is dead. Bp. Williams is still very low, gradually sinking:—The *new* Bishop of Waipapu is to be "consecrated" today: to do this the Bps. of Christchurch, Auckland & Wn are here.—So that altogether we have a whole Bench (5) Bishops; may they be the means of doing us good. Sidey is still in N.S.W., & Fraser (senior) is gone to *their* Assembly at Wgn. Berry too, is gone to Pov. Bay on a visit.—G.P. Donnelly is just married to Renata's *grandniece* (great fuss!—we shall see!—it would have *looked better* had *D.* waited his trial for horse-stealing which is to come off in a day or two. "Helen Denny" (our *first* wool ship) is gone, and in her *several* passengers (about 24 I think) & among them Edwards & wife. I did not know of their going till the ship had sailed; but had I known, say, a few days before, I *could not* have seen them, being ill. David Hunter is *leaving* Station! It is *said*, some great falling out w. his brother George. Wellwood (it is said) is going to England.—Fannin has been unwell "gout, toothache, and neuralgia": he does not take care of himself.

586 *Hawke's Bay Herald* issues for 1 July to 31 December 1877 are missing from Papers Past.

587 Colenso suffered terribly from seasickness.

588 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4.

Tel. Off. opened at Mohaka: 2 mails a week to be hence to Wairoa overland & £10,000 voted for Ahuriri bridge (Sheehan & G. Grey!)—we shall see, if it be spent. They are shortly to be *here*, & the Catholics & “working men” (w. Knight & Lindsay!! at their head) are *moving* &c., &c.—

Troy has ret'd. to his old post at bank & seeks to part w. his place! H. Williams as trustee to R. & Drummond refused to pay me *1/4th*. of interest due—£20, saying my name was *not* in Deed—so I have to wait 12 months for them to be paid, before I can think of getting a 1d!! D. brought me L's account—it was simply *fearful*: L, so D said, had said “it would only cost a *trifle*”. D said “say the sum”. “Well about £5”. D. said “say exactly; will £10 pay you”?, “Yes, completely”. The acct. was nearly £40! & *thus* run up “Consultation £1.1.0, D. 10/6 (these often repeated); writing advt. for D.T. 6/8; copying for “Herald” 6/8; sending ditto to D.T. 6/8; do. to “H.D.” 6/8; altering do 6/8; payg. for advtg. 6/8 (*besides* the full charges for advertg.)!! loan of room & chairs (4!!) for meeting £5.5.0. (we were in his outer or clerk's room 2 hours!!!). I begin to fear that L. will also have a long & heavy acct. against *me*. Poor old Groom is dying & his old wife not much better—both in a sad state. J. Hamlin has had another portion of his lower lip cut away by Dr. S.—but, I fear, with *little benefit*. J.H. is now obliged to give in from any work. Young Irvine, too, is gone in H. Denny: some say *he* will never reach England, & that it is doubtful if Edwards will. I hope nothing very serious will happen for Mrs. Ruth (Vaughan's daughter) *must* be confined on board during voyage. Read G.T.C. Chapman's account of *his voyage* to Eng. in “Auckland Weekly News” which I send.

Decr, 11th.

I recommence. Yesterday & today I have been at Campbell's large school (over 100) & am *rather* tired; however I held out better than I had anticipated—glad that it is over.—Grey, Sheehan & Macandrew are to be here this week, & are to have (I hear) a “perfect ovation”. Our own 3 members landed in silence. Good has, already, come through the Grey Ministry—*viz.* the Colonialization of the Land Fund, which the former My., I think, would not have *attempted*! and I look for good to come to us, through the Maoris being driven to see, that they *cannot* have *their wishes*—not even from *Sheehan & Co.* Mr Orr brought a big N.Z. (*forest*) Beetle, thinking it was the *Colorado*! I was happy to undeceive him. I see a large lot of timber & several carpenters at work on T.S. 169 (opp. Church Lane). The poor girl accused of *stealing* an old 12 year old child's garment was acquitted yesterday. (She never ought to have been tried for such a *trumpery* charge). In today's Herald is a letter of Sealy's (from Jersey to Home Paper), in which *I quite agree*. I marvel at *that* Jury in the “Penge” murder case! I don't at that butcher Hawkins! (a second Judge Jefferies!)—he got his (*Govt.*) reward for his atrocious conduct in the Tichborne case, & is capable of anything! I have no doubt but that *he* would gladly have hung those 4 for Harriet Stanton, who died of *disease*.—

I have just been to the “*brow*” to look at the works below: Monroe Street is advancing, the N.E. side is carried out beyond our sales to Scandins. & Pocock's Sn., & one (next to Watt's) near Railway are now nearly filled in: 4 in Carlyle Street (see advt. in paper.) are *1st*. for filling-in, cont. taken. The worst is they are getting stuff from all around my hill; so that I have been obliged to send out two letters again, this past week, warning them of the consequences.

Our *first* rain fell on 20th. Novr.; I was at Waipukurau, of course shut up all that day—but *willingly*: it was delightful to see the good arising from that rain. It has also rained since—2–4 times, but all good & serviceable: it now seems drawing that way. In this day's *Herald* you will see a highly *characteristic* advt. by my neighbour!

Sunday. Decr., 16th.

I now proceed to close, having had a day longer for writing, through detention of steamer, S. First, let me tell you I got through my heavy week's work! (*again better* than my fears!) & tomorrow I take Hastings;—Tuesday, Havelock;—Wednesday, Kaikoura,—Thursday, Patangata,—& Friday, Tamumu: so that if I can do this & return on Saturday from Waipukurau I shall be both glad & *thankful*.

I send you yesterday's 2 papers, from which you will learn a *little* of our doings! Of course *I had* a good view of all from the brow; there were *very few* (if any) of our old first settlers present; & so of our *principal* shopkeepers, old hands,—I saw none. The day (weather) was splendid (as usual) & mob great—(partly owing to the 3 Boys' Schools (town) having broken up that morning!)—but great at *Spit* owing to Natives, who did not *stay* in Cl. Sq. I fancied they had been told to clear out, as Sir. G. & Co. would meet them all on *their own* ground yesterday; there were not 500 in Cl. Sq. & many of these were boys & servant girls. Grey made a sad error in his speech (which you will see *marked* by me), & I find that Price, *last evening* took him up for it: but Price is also a little out in his statement.—

Rev. S.W. told me on Friday last the old Bp. was sinking fast—calm & collected: I should greatly like to see him again, but he is to be “*kept very quiet*”. Donnelly has been acquitted: I fancy, however, it is not wholly over. D. Galbraith is dead, died suddenly at Clarendon. Miss Sproule (who kept Port School) was married 10th to the Capt. of the “*Mania*”, a quiet nice man. Irvine, I hear, is going to keep on his school, which I *regret*—unless he will teach his unruly ones how to behave, but I will hope for the best, because J.D. O—d is going to live in his old Town Quarters. J.N. Wilson is now a Lord! hope he, too, will polish up a bit! he needs it: I have no faith in *his* law, should he become Attorney-General! he can never *lead* in the Leg. Council.—

While selecting prizes for Cy. schools at C. & *Craig's* yesterday I saw Witty who told me he had got my letter *re* your Deed, thanked, I said that wod. be “all right”: we were *both too busy* to talk. Grubb I hear has been unwell from diarrhoea. From the hill I see a frame house (decent size & high) just up *opp.* U.M. Chapel &, I believe, on Mrs. Tuke's land. Bryson is going to build a fine Hotel on his corner *Section*. Not *seen* P.D. since my last. *We must* come to some *real* conclusion shortly. Barry (R. & Drummond's *trustee*) is in an awful way *re* Lascelles' *infamous* Bill! Mr. Sidey is to leave N.S.W. on 19th.—

The “*Lochnagar*” (our 2nd. wool ship) is to leave next week. I posted, last evg. a *lot* of papers for you, contg. many matters of interest, also a vol. of N.Z. Institute *Proceedings* for last year—omitted in the “*Transactions*” vol. The *Red Kowhai* is bearing *green* pods before my window, which, when ripe, will be for you. I hope to have a little spare time after Jany. 1st. as I have still all the Teachers' Quarterly Registers to go through, & make out all their vouchers &c., &c.—& then, all for the Board, & the Govt.—and I hope, the *very last* time, after this fashion; for all this work is (or should be) *Fannin's*. Inglis—who was

nearly starving here—has got the billet of Clerk to Waipawa Cy. Council @ £200.—

And now I must say Goodbye, with best wishes for you & yours & a Happy New Year & *many of them*.

Bel. me,

Yours truly,

W. Colenso.

J. Hague has broken his leg! his wife is now in service at W. Clive Hotel.

“This case was tried in H.B. some years ago, & was that of P. Torotoro & Rewi v. Sutton, If hon. members will read the report (which I now lay on the table) they will find how land *not* intended to be included in a claim has come to be included in that claim, and how land which clearly on the evidence should not have been included in the original transaction, has been found by a Jury of the Supreme Court to have been included in that transaction. The perusal of that report greatly shocked me. — — — I have submitted it to the opinion of another hon. member of this Council, & he agrees w. me that in that case *there has been a grievous miscarriage of justice* & that it becomes the duty of the Government of this country, if called upon to enforce the judgment of the Supreme Court in that instance to purchase the rights of the natives in the possession of that land.... I am satisfied, that, in that case there has been grievous miscarriage of Justice.”

From “Hansard”!! (Hon. Mr. Hart, in Leg. Council, Oct. 18/77 in speech on “Native Lands” with a good deal more to same effect).

re Wairoa Land

Extract from D. Black’s letter.—

—“As regards the land, I may say that Mr. Luff bought it about 4 years ago from Mr. Routledge at £5: 5: 0 per acre, and I believe when he left for England, some 2 years ago, he offered to sell for £6: 6: 0 per acre. I think £7 per acre would pay him good interest since that time; this I would give for it. The land is very rough & expensive to clear, and will need to be drained, as it is very wet in the winter season.—

I will trouble you for another line or two on the subject.

Wairoa Nov. 3/77

(signed) D. Black.

Extract from my reply:

—“I am now writing to Mr. Luff by this outg. Eng. Mail. (closing here, on 16th. at 8 p.m.) and I will let him know of your offer—but I don’t think he will sell it at that price. I wish, for your sake, that you had increased, for I believe it is worth more.—

It is nothing to the purpose what Mr. Luff gave for it: the only question is, what is it worth now? Many sections in this Town were bought for £3 each—yet now the owners ask £500 to £800 each for them.

If you should get this *in time* (before our Eng. mail closes) and you will increase your offer, you can do so by telegram: just say the gross amount of the money you will give, that will do. I will keep open my letter to Mr. Luff till the last hour.—

(signed) W. Colenso.

Napier, Novr. 10/77.

1877 December 26: to Davidson⁵⁸⁹

Napier

December 26, 1877.

Mr. John Davidson
West Clive

Sir

For some considerable time I have been thinking about your eldest son, whom I have often met at the West Clive School,—and now that my School Visitation for this year is over, I have thought it to be my duty to write you a few lines concerning him.—

Of course, I do not know your intentions concerning your son,—but, should you determine on keeping him at school a little longer, (which I should strongly advise,) I would recommend you to place him at once at some School where there are boys of his age and older, and where (no doubt) he would get on much more rapidly,—as he ought to have been much farther advanced than he now is.

Feeling interested in the lad, I have taken upon me to write to you about him;— I remain,

Your mo. ob. servt

Wm. Colenso,

Inspector Schools.

1878? to Harding⁵⁹⁰

Friday.

Mr. R.C. Harding

My Dear Sir,

I send you (in “Author’s Copy”, paper Trans. Vol.XI⁵⁹¹) the notes I had thought of for Appendix D.—as they are, they are much too long (I fear) and I see no ready & easy way of shortening them—unless we omit *all* their notes (This mg. too, I feel wholly unfitted for the task! Can scarcely sit to write this, yet *no bodily* pain) see pp 101–103.

This paper (art. V) contains the bit quot. from Ruskin—we were talking of last night. This paper (I may say *to you*) was a *favourite* one of mine, if you have *not* yet read it do so. I have always much regretted that Dr. H. & Co., *so acted* towards me as to be the means of my not going on with *that series*. I hope to find something suitable for T. p. motto, &c.

Yours truly,

W. Colenso.

please tell your Compo. to keep copy please.

589 MTGHB 47/155.

590 ATL: MS-Copy-Micro-0485-1.

591 Colenso W 1878. Contributions towards a better knowledge of the Maori Race”, *Trans NZ Inst.* 11, 77-106. Here Colenso and Harding appear to be planning a pamphlet republishing that paper; Hector did accept further papers in the series (in 1879, 80, 81).

1878? to Harding⁵⁹²

Thursday night

Mr. Harding

My dear Sir

I have to thank you for your *kind* attention this mg.—*re* quotn. W. Scott. I looked it up—but, while it agrees in the *main*—the *underlying principle*—it does not so well suit this branch of it—as that Maori *party* from the Isle were *known*—but *not then around*.

I return proof: corrections are so *few*, that I leave them to you.—

I send more copy—*all*, indeed, of the origl. paper—w. additions: hope to *see* more proofs by Saty. night.

I was in town this mg. (w. lawyers, sent for!)—but could not call on you: I hurried back (12.15) fearing rain.

Cannot yet make up my mind to go inland next week.—

Yours faithfully,
W. Colenso.

1878? to Harding⁵⁹³Friday 10th.

Mr Harding

My Dear Sir

You have a little account against me—will you kindly get it made out by (say) Monday next—when weather & permitting.—I hope to call & pay you.—A few of the Books were for the schools and I shall *need* the acct. on my way to Mr. Tylee.—

I hope you are quite well. I have not seen you for a long time. I have been again laid up (this time, 8–9 days in bed,—with plenty of pain)—

I am Yours truly
Wm Colenso.

1878 January 4: to Luff⁵⁹⁴Napier, New Zealand
Jany. 4, 1878.

My dear Sir,

Your welcome letter of Novr. 14th. arrived on 1st. Decr.—so that I really had a New Year's Gift! And, as I see, in "Herald" of this mg. that our Nov. mail hence reached London on the 1st., I hope you, too, have recd. mine. My last to you was finally closed on the 16th. Decr.,—and by a new (& a *good*) alteration in our S.F. Mail I have to write you *earlier* (by 10 days) than I had expected: this has been

done so as to have the 2 outgoing Eng. Mails (Suez & S.F.) running alternately every 2nd. week, & not, as before, absurdly leaving N.Z. *together*!—

Well, I was glad to find you were all (then) *well*, & that the blasts of your Northern Winter had *not yet* burst upon you: though, no doubt you have had them long ere this.

It is impossible for me to ansr. your letter in the way you wish. Hitherto I have had no holiday—and I see no one *here*,—and I have only been just once into Town since my last, & then hurriedly. If I can learn anything of Alley, &c., I will let you know. But you will see, in an *Auckland* paper I now send you, something about it. I have *marked* it.

My present letter cannot be a long one. I returned by last train on Satdy. evg. 22nd. Decr., having finished inspectg. Schools for that season! & was quite knocked up. No doubt in great measure owing to long rough ride (Horse) to Tamumu from Waipukurau & back on the 21st. in which (returning) I got thoroughly drenched w. rain, without any *extra* garment,—& was very cold withal, riding so many miles against it: I soon get my wet things off, & to bed, but I feel it a little still.—Ever since I have been engaged on the teachers' accounts &c., &c. for Edn. Board, which meets next week, 10th. I have not yet heard a sound respecting my office, &c., though the new Act is now law. As the work & duty is increased, the questions for me to consider are:—

1. *Can* I perform the duty?
2. *Ought* I to undertake it:—considering age, risks, & the many discomforts in travelling, &c.—

I cannot, at *present*, answer these; but, if *it be right*, then, I shall be able to get on,—as I have ever found the path of duty to be the safe one.—

Now for a little *news*.—The holidays here have been well kept by ^{19/20}ths of the people; having had very fine weather throughout. Miss Bourke has been married to a Dr. Pollen (*nephew* of old Dr. P.) and, *Miss Russell* (H.R.R.'s *daughter*) is engaged to a Mr. Ogilvy—a clerk at Wgn, w. £200 a year—but, then, a *relation* of the Governor!! (so Bridge & Gaisford are thrown over!) H.R.R. had a narrow escape in returning, coach smashing at Takapau & Sheehan fell down and broke (not *his neck*, but) a rib at Auckland. Hans Thompson was (*very properly*) acquitted. Brandon has just left B.N.Z., on ½ saly. annuity.—the directors want a *younger* man. Brooke, & Mrs. T., called here, during my absence. Bradley has given up Saddlery, & taken to *his Hotel*!! on the new Taradale Road, & near to T. He had a *narrow escape*. Brooking has left Lyndon & entd. into partnership w. Bennett. Richardson of Petane is *dead*—in Engd.—telm. just arrived. Our 3rd. Wl. Ship, "Langstone" left yesterday with 6 passengers. Newman's *bumptious* advt. is out: I pity the poor souls who may be taken in by it!! I heard it is only the land on the cold S. slope towards Motuotaraia—without wood, water, or shelter! David Hunter, I find, has settled on the W. Coast, beyond Whanganui, purchasing at £13 per acre.—From *all parties* I have heard much in praise of the Land thereabouts.—I send you a "*Wananga*" of last Saturday, in it you will see a good deal,—notably the *last Maori* declaration *here*—which is a true sign of the times. Ere long the watchman *may* call out:⁵⁹⁵—"Breakers ahead!"

⁵⁹² Undated, but content places it here.

⁵⁹³ ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-1.

⁵⁹⁴ ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4. Letter addressed to "A. Luff Esq., 135, East India Road, Poplar, London" and endorsed "Recd Feb. 18/78".

⁵⁹⁵ Colenso had used the pen name "Watchman" in his Māori tract *He Manuwiri hou, ko te Wakakite*, in 1849.

Your friend Mr. Sidey returned yestertay from Melb. to *Bluff*, &, I hear, is well. W. Marshall is still ill, unable to take duty. Last night I had 3 notices to “abate nuisances” served on me, signed by the Mayor! for Sections 29, 30 & 316: all (if *nuisances*) caused by their *own* doings,—damming in water by their roads. I have been waiting for an opportunity to fill in 316 (i.e. what is left to me of it),—but, by the Corpn. giving the Cricketer’s Cl. Sq., it will cost ever so much more to run round the sharp angled fence.—A tall young boy-like chap (rather presumptuous, called Leslie Campbell,—who has always had *your office*) was married 2 days ago to a girl who came out emigrant by “Inverness” (2 sisters—both now married): C. was *Donnelly’s* bridesman! C. is about the ruddiest *bare* faced yg. fellow I have ever seen: he would make for a capital woman,—only rather too cheeky looking!

4 p.m.

Since writing the foregoing I have been down to town: I went to see Moore, U.B.A., *re Witty* & his Deed, & I find he had not yet taken it up, though he told M. he would do so *before* this Mail leaves—which he *may* yet do,—but if not *now*, no doubt he will soon: he is hard put to for money, we know. In passing by I noticed that a good large shop (double front) is on *Mrs. Tuke’s* land; but who for I don’t know.—G.E. Richardson paid Rochfort £7.7.0 for laying-off his lot & map: afts. R. laid-off D. Guy’s, adjoining,—and now comes 6 feet into George’s land! pot boiling over!—

“P. Blom”—has been making a row about his Land: here 2–3 times in my absence. Fielder also called; & now it turns out that instead of 66 links he has *61*—he took (I suppose) the 66 *diagonal* for 66 across: I am to go there tomorrow. Monroe Street is formed just as Rochfort laid off in his Map—so giving me (or them) a few feet *more*—up to Road; & now P. Blom says, “but where my *footpath*”.—However I can put him to rights.—

During this week I have had Raspberries, Gooseberries, Cherries, & now Apricots, but only a *few* of *each*, not over 2 qts. of Gooseberries!! & about 6 pounds of the Com. red cherry.—Obliged to gather all at once, owing to horrid Birds *introduced*,—the sparrows are here now!!—And *some peculiar* unknown bird—2 pairs I have seen, & my man also—they get on the tip top long buds of the high pine, & there perch,—looking so strange.

And now I must say good bye! Hope you have managed well w. Dixon & Lin. Society. Had a letter & a book from Wesley, who has *had* the *Insurance*. Tell me what you think of him: maybe *we* can get a *better* hand for our Institute.

Believe me, yours truly, W. Colenso

Have not seen Grubb since my last!—Fannin is well but getting too red-nosed & bloated!! Have not yet seen Philip D.!! nor heard from Mackay!

1878 January 7: to Hector⁵⁹⁶

Napier
Jany 27/78
(Sunday)

Dear Dr. Hector

I hope you are *quite* well, and that this may find you so.—

My holiday (?) only began last week,—and I have been hard at work ever since, “on t’other tack,”—&, among other matters, for you.—I send you enclosed a fair & condensed account of our “*Proceedings*”, for the vol. of last year.—

While writing it out it has occurred to me,—that you have *not* replied to my queries, which I had sent you: no doubt owing to your illness and absence. One of them you will find mentioned in the concluding paragraph of my report of *Proceedings* herewith:—it embraces—Copper-plate portraits of S. Parkinson, of *Taiota* (the Hero of Cape Kidnappers), of the North Island N.Z. Chief to whom Cook first gave the seeds of the “Maori Cabbage” &c.—(as mentioned in one of my Papers, which you have,) a near ancestor of the celebrated Henare Matua, &c. &c. Then, *another* qu. was, Could I obtain a *set* of the vols. of our *Transactions* (I paying for them) for Penzance Town Library,—my native twon, in Cornwall? There were other queries too, which I do not at present remember.

May I request an early answer to these queries?

Do not forget, that I am all but *alone here*,—and (though *not young*,) may become disheartened if not occasionally aided by you & others at a distance: I hope not.

I have some Ferns still to examine, which may prove new,—some, at all events. My Books, re-ordered, are in the “*Khedive*,” among them, Beddome’s Indian Ferns, £12.12.0”!! &c, &c,—

Let me have a line from you.

Believe me, Yours truly
W. Colenso.

P.S. You may have noticed that I still keep myself a mr. of the Wgn. P. Society—although *here* I have to pay the subs. for each of 2 sons as well as myself!—I do so, fearing *this* may collapse some day! W.C.

1878 January 31: to Luff⁵⁹⁷

Napier, New Zealand.
Jany. 31st. 1878.

A. Luff Esq.,

My Dear Sir,

Last week I was much gratified in receiving your letter of Dec. 12,—doubly so, I may say, because those to me from the Country (dated 11th.) mourned the non-arrival of the N.Z. Mail, while you, living in London, had got yours *that*

596 Museum of New Zealand—Te Papa Tongarewa
MU000094/003/0334

597 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4. Letter addressed to A. Luff Esq., 135, East India Road, Poplar, London. Endorsed “rec’d March 18/78”.

morning! and so, through you, I knew the mail had arrived &c., &c.—

Much pleased to find you were all well & comfortable in the prospect of an Eng. winter! May this find you still well, & long past the worst of the northern cold!

I last wrote to you on the 5th. inst., which, I hope, may duly reach you. I have been thinking on you this month (*extra*) because of the work I had given you w. the *Linn. Society and Dixon!*

But, first, (as you say) to business. I had Mr. Parkin here yesterday (he is Redstone's successor in U.M. Church here)—he is going to Wairoa, & came to enquire if I had any Sns. there for sale,—I told him him of yours, & he is going to W. next week & will have a look at it. (He had heard that I had 7–8 Sns. there!) I hope to sell this for you also.—In town today I saw Grubb (only the 2nd. time for this year!) he told he had just finished his L. to you, & so, I suppose, will have told you of the demand made for Rates, *to him*, for your land at Wairoa (£2.5.0. I think). I hope that Black's offer may suit you—as I dread those Rates—or rather *Rates on Rates!*—Early in December I paid my Rates at Waipawa, for my few unlet sns. there—(over £4.)—to mid. of '78: last Friday I had a similar demand for “Waipawa County” rates!! and, finding I must pay, I sent the amount in yesterday, but it is for the *same* ground! T'other was “Road Board”. So *here*: I was in town to-day & with the Town Clerk *re* Rates, &c.—Scraps of Sns. 309, 311, (Rated *last year* at £5 each, & against which I had appealed & got these lowered to £3 each) were now raised to £4.10.0.!! & that by *same* valuator! who was beaten in Court!! What's the use of *appeal*? However, I *caught* old Ellison, in T. Clerk's Office, & he got a bit of my mind!! for it is no use to waste a day (or more) & catch cold for the sake of appealing—though it be for a principle—just to save 5/-. Judge Gillies has just given a decision at Auckland *against a Road Board* (£50. for damaging property) just for all the world like my case at Waipawa (see Acct. in Wkly. News).

H. Mackenzie has just *paid* for his land at Havelock (end of 2nd. 7 yrs. lease) & Troy has also paid his ½ year's rent. I walked from Taradale to P. Dolbel's (about 3 weeks ago on one of the *hottest* days of this summer) purposely to get some money—if to be had. (I had the week before sent in my acct. to Dec. 31st., & told them of my day of visit). Would you believe it? the *old story*!! “Do you want any money?” was P's. mild question! He *promised* to do something by *tomorrow* (1st. Feb.), we shall see. One thing struck me, the handsome way they had *finished & furnished* their house, particularly the large drawing room!! Lined with beautiful panel-work in picked *Kauri* and varnished, all looking A.1. It seemed a fine room *not* to be used. I could not help *having thoughts*. Mackay, & others, gave *no sign*. Ditto Robertson & Drummond: I told Barry (Trustee) you & H. Williams seem mad! suppose *I press*—where is your remaining ¾ths? Suppose I were *Landlord*, would you not have to pay rent? to *both* which B. ansd. Yes: but they *know* that I will *not* “Chaw up the 2 poor hard-working fellows.”—M. Boylan, poor fellow! is *out* of his ironing &c., &c.; what he will, or can, do, I don't know. I am sorry for him. J. Chambers' 2 daughters were married in one day: one to a Quaker from Engd, & one to Giblin. So Mrs. C. has now lost them all!! Poor Rees Watkins, the steady & much liked Railway Guard,—first lost his *only* child, then his wife (he absent), & now their *twins*—both within a few days. There has been a great mortality among the children, both in T. & in Cy.,—fortunately it began before the arrival

of the immigrants or they would have been blamed. Mrs. Gibbes & Child are going to Engd. by ship, hence, in hopes of the voyage doing her good; their only living child has been very “unlucky”; first through carelessness of girl nurse had its teeth knocked in (or out), then an arm broken and last week the Dr. was summoned home from Napier as the child had fallen & broken the other arm!

There have also been several accidents, & deaths (drowning &c.) for which I must refer you to the Papers.

The Quarantine folks came all right at last (but, I fear, a *loose* set). The Dr. (Dale of notoriety here) is *now* prosecuting the Captn.—he, yesterday, did the steward,—& I hear, he will get *nothing* from Govt.

I have had a bit of a tussle with Irvine, & Holder, & Newton, re our dividing fence—*broken down & used, & destroyed*, by the G. School Boys—still in *agitation*.

Sorry to have to say,—that my man has given notice to leave!! Of course I have accepted it. They say “it is for my comfort seeing they have 2 childn.” I say, “Time enough when I complain or find fault”.—What *lots* of partings I have seen!!

I have been (& still am) very busy w. Education Board & *such matters*. The B. meets on Monday, 4th. proxo, when (I suppose) my *fate* will be decided: in a certain sense I am careless about it—as to which way it goes. I wd. *prefer* resigning at once (or from 31st. Decr.) & getting a little compensation; or, I could hold on—though *greatly increased* work—visiting outlying places *once* a year, & an increase of pay. We shall see: by the way I may be able to tel. a brief letter to you on Tuesday mg., which if I do *you will understand it*.

During first 3 weeks or more of this mo. I suffd. daily from Neuralgia & Ear-ache, & had *much* to do in way of writing,—figures &c. for Govt. I am now better,—but *frail*. The Railway is now open to Kopua, 7 miles, or so, from Takapau. I have been called on by His Worship to abate the “nuisances” on my lands (316, 28, 29) see Advt. in Paper: not much on *mine*! Bryson's big Hotel has its framework up, & it looks well, & will fill *that* corner, would the Blks. shop, opp., were away. The road round *your dear old* office corner (leading to Councillor Williams') is substantially begun, & 30 feet wide!!!—

You will see in Herald a letter of mine *re* Archdn. Williams' 2!—he did not reply & I have been privately thanked for it,—*but not by him*.⁵⁹⁸

For 8 days I have had an Advt. in paper—calling on Members H.B.P.I. to pay their subs.—only 3 have done so!! (& one of these—Willis from Wn.) there are more than 40 *unpaid*!!! It is disheartening.—

Wesley writes me, saying, the Books are again sent—this time in *Khedive* steamer, left Ln. Dec. 9th. I believe there are errors (!) in his acct., but I'll wait till *next mail*.

I send you in a Registered packet, 10 photographs of striking natural scenery in N.Z., which *please accept from me*. I hope they may reach you safely.—

Karaitiana v. Ormond—has been heard at Wgn., but judgment not yet given. This, I believe, is the contesting of a Grantee's *right* (A. Pahoro) to sell to O.,—A.P. died & gave his trust right to a young man of the tribe; a nice legal

point. Lee went to Wgn. on behalf of O. Sir G. Grey left A. yesterday to see "King Tawhiao".—

Human Bones (& a skull!) & parts of *good* cloth-covd. coffins have been found disinterred & scattered in our cemetery!! Tiffen, Fannin, & Kennedy are *there* (privately) to day. Thanks for Paper *re* mortgages (6!!) & *other Papers* a *lot*. As to Temple Bar *site* they should neither leave nor place *anything* in *centre*.

Feb'y. 1st.

The "Wanaka" Str. is just gone in with lots of bunting, having the Australian 11 on board: too much fuss nowadays about this *Cricketing*!—Mayor, as you will see, has proclaimed a Holiday! last Friday there was another—additional 7m. of Railway to Kopua (or to nowhere!!).—

Coleman & McH., have *dissolved*: C. is going home w. his swag, see Papers! *Giffard's* property will soon be in the market; deeds are preparing to pay off Read—the *brother* in Engd. has sent out the needful.—

You will see in Papers, that the Dr. of "Renfrewshire" *lost*, and rightly so. Rees, of notoriety, (who only came here this week,) was at it again! 40 m. *talk*!! &, on his *first* case, told R.M.—*he* would *report* it!!! (If I had been R.M. I would have sent him up the hill!)

The Wesleyan "Parsonage" is to be built on Sealy's land, near to Miller's new house: Boyland had bought it, ½ acre;—and now sold for £360, 11% on money. Holder refused (me) to subscribe to Sir. D. McL's monument! I had thought that he had had his share of sops!!

You will note my letter in a D.T., *re* Hospital site;—it attracted attention, & several (Kennedy, J.N. Smith, Garry & others,—besides those in Country) have highly approved of it: we shall see.—

I send you in a *pod* (only gathered yesterday) seeds of the Red Kowhai (or Kowhai-ngutu-kaakaa = *Clianthus puniceus*) & shall be glad to hear of their growing &c., &c.—

Young Dransfield, at Spit, is *our* new J.P. Among the Waipawa County Rates was 4d.!!! for 2 Blkhead Sections. *Barney Rhodes* is dying, & Joe (& *son*) are gone down,—this is Joe's *2nd*. move *within* 1 mo.

(*Night*) I proceed to close: I have more letters to write, &c. I send you a *full share* of papers. This day I opened the 2 tenders for filling-in that corner (part of 316):—one, £148.10!! & one, £85.—My man & myself had thought about £50 or £60.

—The steamer w. "the Australian 11" arrived this mg. w. all her bunting! they are gone to Hastings to play our *picked* men—we shall see.

I had all but given up P.D.—but, lo! this afternoon he turned-up; he tells me he has paid some money in to the Bk. to my credit, but *not so much* as we had both hoped to do & promised—which was ⅓rd. of my account sent him.—

I have not said half my say. Any papers contg. ecclest. trials & judgments, (as Tooth's, MacKonochie's, &c.) send me them. Goodbye, w. kindest wishes & regards—Believe me ever—

Yours faithfully,
W. Colenso.

1878 February 7: to Hector⁵⁹⁹

Napier,
Feb'y. 7, 1878.

My dear Sir

I cannot tell you how much I feel indebted to you for your kind letter of the 5th. and for the accompanying Papers. I received them last night and have this day gone through them, making a few (a very few) corrections as I went along:—with which, however, I may not be in time.—Some one, I suppose, in the Ptg. Office must have altered my Maori word Kumara to their Kumera,—while, possibly, Hawke Bay for Hawke's Bay, sprang from a higher source; as such has been (I regret to say) attempted in our maps, & in the N.Z. Geography: I wrote, last year to Bowden about it, (as he was thinking of getting out a *new* edition of the Geography,) begging him to correct it, & to give it (& Cook Strait, &c &c) its *proper* orthography. To think of such as King George Sound, Queen Charlotte Sound, Hudson Bay, Mount Bay, St. Andrew College, St. David Head, The Queen Head, King Head, &c &c—only gives me a semi-galvanic shock! Which, I suppose, in *my case* is increased through witnessing so much of the wretched *patois* maori, in names of places & things!—

However,—far beyond all that, I (or we) feel greatly indebted to you. As to the *Portraits*, &c.,—I think I will try our photog. here, as to what they will strike off a number for: in England such could be easily and *cheaply* managed, not so here. I shall only try for *Taiota's*: Sydney Parkinson's is *not* well done, though it is highly characteristic of a young Quaker, & of the fashion of *that time*. The N.Z. Chief is exceedingly well executed, & it is also praised by *Forster* as being such a really good likeness.

You say—"on referring to my former letters you found them marked as *answd.* during your absence":—I did receive an acknowledgement of their arrival, but nothing more; I can, I think, send you *those notes*, if you wish it. Of course, had they been "*answd.*" I should not have troubled you again.

I regret I cannot obtain the *earlier* vols. of "Trans." (I had last week heard of this through Kirk.) Of the *later* vols. I have 2 copies of each here; I will try at Auckland & at Dunedin, for vols. II. III. & IV.

You may be *wholly* correct in your remark as to both dogs & moas being not so ancient as I have supposed:—but, on the *moa* I have a little more yet to say—anon.

I had hoped to spend this autumn among our ferns—as I have long wished to bring out a paper about them, & have been making sundry preparations in that direction:—and the more effectually to do this I had (*again*) resigned my off. of Insp'r. Schools,—from 31st. Decr.—but the Board, just as last year, wont have it at all! Rather, they increase the pay, &c—give the old worn Horse *extra* oats, & ribbons & bells, & say, Go on!!—Still I shall hope to do my best this coming winter.

I am *interested* in C. Philips' paper on the Maori arrow & its propulsion, & possibly may have something to say about it. I was pleased also in seeing your Report on the Gold specns. from Picton. I am, my dear Sir

Yours truly W. Colenso.

P.S. I had forgotten to ask—If it were *within* your Rules,—to allow me to have a few copies of those Papers (say 50) struck off & put up separately:—I, of course, paying for the extra work?—

I must also hunt up & send you a bit more of *good* information *re* Danaïs, I was told it by Sturm,—but he has not yet given it in writing.—

Ten days ago I found on the trunk of one of my largest acacias, & about 5 feet from the ground,—a remarkably *large* Caterpillar of a species apparently new to me: it was quiet, & stretched out: but how it got *there*, & what it lives on (seeing there was no vegn. near) is a mystery: I have it under glass, & it has spun its web, & entered into its chrysalis state: we shall see. Tell Dr. Buller this. W.C.

1878 February 23: to Hector⁶⁰⁰

Napier
Saturday
23rd. Feby.

My dear Sir

Many thanks for your kind note of the 19th. I see clearly, *now*, what you meant in your kind telegram, & marvel at my own obtuseness!—

I fear, however, I shall not *agree* w. *our* photographists here: but I have not tried them *all* yet.—I should not like, I think, to get the 3 portraits done *merely* for the *extras*: so they may stand over—for *next gen*.

I had hoped you would have succeeded w. your Whitefish ova; but, from what I have since seen in the papers, I fear you had but little (if any) chance.

I have had a small fish placed in my hands for examn.—captured here: it may prove to be the young of some other, or it may be a sp. of *Clupea*, or some allied genus; I hope to fin time to exam. it next week; & if I cannot make it out, I will send it to you.—

I hasten to send you, enclosed, Sturm's note on *Danaïs*:—I only recd. it from him *this day*, & I hope I shall be in time. Sturm was a Collector (both in Entomol. & Bot.) when he first came to this Cy., & so for years.—

Hoping you are well,—

I am, my dr. Sir, yours truly,
Wm. Colenso.

I first met w. Sturm in Poverty Bay, in 1841.

1878 March 1: to Luff⁶⁰¹

Napier, N. Zealand,
March 1st., 1878.

A. Luff Esq.,

My Dear Sir,

Yours of Jany. 2 (& 3) was received here on 17th. Feby.! Quick despatch, seeing that your January *S.F.* Mail left you, also a week *earlier* than time. I was pleased to find my letters had reached you before you wrote,—because those in the Country were not so fortunate. I had scarcely anything from Engd. by that Mail save from you: and Grubb tells me that it was the *smallest* M. (by several bags!) for a long time. We *both* think that you *acted rightly* in not allowing yourself to be imposed on at P.O. for *Xmas*. Illustd. papers.

My last to you was a month back, *also*, w. a little Roll of *photos.*, which I hope you may safely receive.—

February has been a remark. month *here*,—w. *me*, & with others too.

Several deaths,—prominently Bp. W., Barney Rhodes, & Capt. Read: those 3, with myself (making 4) were, I suppose, the *oldest* in these parts of N.Z.—including Wn. 3 are taken (within a few days of ea. other) & one, the writer, is left, *to follow*. Bp. W. died on the 10th., sank gradually like a dying lamp! he was buried on 12th. (evening) a *large* funeral, all shops closed, Wilson (lawyer) and I walked together; it was a dreadfully hot day, dry & *dusty*, & such a tramp, from the house to saddle, Shakesp. Rd.,—down that Rd. & through town, up to saddle in Milton Rd., & then to Cemetery! I was nearly done up!—"Joe" had just came back *again*, from Wgn., when, lo!, By. was gone! out came a paper (or sub-art.) on the greatness & goodness & wisdom & *riches* of By. & that "*he had died childless*", & that Mr. Jos. wd. come in, &c. &c. and away goes "Joe" to Wgn. Lo! by will, By. had left *all to his daughter* (some say, £400,000) and a *handsome* annuity to his widow &c.—Heigho! Joe returned, breathing anything but love, & won't wear mourning nor allow any of the family to do so!! and, as usual, the yg. woman is not By's daughter at all. For my part I *commend* By. *highly*; when I was at Wgn. (in '65), & visited at his House, she was there with him, just like a nice *Eng.* girl, with her Governess, & her playmates—daughters of town settlers,—& By. (I saw) was much attached to her. I must not forget to add, that Locke, too, was blowing high!—& thinking of going to England!!—

Capt. R. *dropped down* suddenly in his house, dead: he was here about 10 days before looking as well and as active as ever. (I fancy he was down about re-leasing Giffard's property).

Mr. Marshall has sold off *all*, & is going "home". So has Wellwood. Mrs. (Dr.) Gibbes has left for Engd. w. her baby—to see if the sea-voyage may save her—poor lady! Witty put his knee out & cracked some sinews in playing cricket at Wairoa: he is here now, on crutches, & in Dr. Hitchens' hands. I see all his Wairoa Property is in the market. Fannin is to lose his billet as Immig. Agent & Fox is to have it! Brought about, I believe, in a curious way. F. wrote (a 2nd. time) to the *new* Govr. to *raise* Fox's salary

(only £60) & at last, an ansr. came. Yes, it would be raised, & his (F's.) done away!! (I have *heard*, that Fox was *privately* for Sheehan & Buchanan at last election). It is *said*, that Miller, has been talked of! & Tabuteau (got a reprimand!) & Scully I think has heard *something*—Sheehan is *here* now, he arrd. 2 days ago.—

See Grey's (mad) speech at Wellington, (in Wgn. Papers)—the "Loafers" (whom every right-minded Settler dislikes, *or* hates) are some of Grey's *especial* ones who are to have the franchise,—that is, if he can effect it. And see, also, a nice little letter in *same* paper, anent Grey & his new taxation. (Speaking of taxation, *this evening* R. Williams, collector, was here, leaving his papers, *demands* for £10.18. 6!! ½ year's rates). I had called for tenders for filling in the *corner* only of 316—one t. was £150, another £85 and I find stuff. Weber told me, that he could not have his filled in, for it would cost more than it would fetch! & mark, the moment anything is done, or half done, down comes the Valuator to re-raise the Rates! It was even proposed in our M. Council, to re-value Buildings which were half-up, or altered, *since* valuation 4 months ago!! Palmer told me that Pocock paid £110 (contract) for filling-in his ¼ ac., corner of Cl. Sq., whereas Palmer had (last year) offered to do it for £80., wh. P. would not give. What makes the diff.? I asked. Why, the call, or Order, of the Corporation, *to have all done at once!*

In my last I told you I was awaiting the decision of the Edn. Bd. *re* myself. They would *not* hear of my resignation, but increased the pay: so that it is "Go on, old Horse! You'll do a little longer, there's extra oats & a ribbon & a bell!" All very kind,—but it won't make the old Horse any younger! The pay, *now*, is fair (£300. & £150. travg. allowance), but the question will be, Can I perform the duty required? The travelling I *don't* like, particularly the risky voyaging. However, I *may* yet "run away from it"; there are certain elements rising, I ken, in the composn. of the Board: & I intend to stand to my colours, no ministers have any business there,—unless they are *retired* from active duty.—

Now a little of *my own* griefs (*to you*). On 13th. Feby. some wretches killed my dog *Carlo* here near my door—*beating his head in!* they will trespass—especially by night & the dogs bark after them; our poor dog was here in his old berth, on the mat in the porch, at xi.30 he ran out after some, & they managed it. I put an advt. in papers in *hopes!* but no, now for the *sequel*: the next week they poisoned my other remaining dog (the little terrier) *here, at my door!* he never went to town alone, & never absent at night. James let him out of the kitchen at xii p.m., the dog came to his sleeping mat, folks passed (as usual) & the next mg. the poor faithful dog was cold! My man went sick over the affair, & could not eat. *You may guess my feelings.* These dogs were the pets of all the boys & others who come here—greatly liked. I am more alone than ever *now*, & I feel it, do what I may. I told James, that had this happened 2 months ago, & he also *then* giving notice, I would have stood to my resignation of Office & go home,—utterly careless of place & everything! They are leaving me & I have an advt. in our Papers—I have had *plenty* of applicants (most of them *now in places*) but which, or how, to choose, bothers me.

I have been laid up a week or more w. *severe* diarrhoea & vomiting (which left me *very weak*). James' wife said it was thinking about the dogs, but the disorder has been very prevalent, the newly arrived U.M. Minister is now confined from it.—Your friend (*Member*, I might say) Capt. W.

Russell is better, but by no means quite well: I was sorry to see him looking so altered. A curious election has just taken place at Wgn., Travers resigned (going to Engld.), Pearce stood, so did the late Mayor, and a fellow in gaol (a hot headed Irish lawyer, who has been, *after many* warnings committed for a month for contempt of Court!) well, this man got *returned!!* only, too, a new hand at Wgn. He was an Orangeman & *they* voted for him in a block! he was an Irishman! & the R.C. also voted for him, and so the respectable & well known Mr. Pearce was nowhere! And then "Who would have thought it!!" I much fear *our* Colony of N.Z. has yet a lesson to learn from *Democracy*; it may be a severe one: *you* may see it. The Scotch Ch. held their anniversary on Monday; & the Methodists on Wednesday. You will see all about both in Herald;—something said at both which I do *not* agree with.

Duncan of Waipawa bankrupt—I had expected this.

One case of our Institute books sent by "Wesley" (per "Khedive") have arrived here in good condn.: now where are they to be kept? last year we passed a resolution (of mine) to ask Govt. for leave to keep them, in a neat Book case in the Grand Jury room; & I wrote offy. to J.D.O., (our President,) but he was too busy (I suppose) & so nothing came of it: I am thinking of asking Sheehan! Strange to say, I received by last M. a letter from Mrs. Col. Wyatt, enquiring about her (late husband's) land at Havelock & Porangahau. P.D. told me, a few days back, he had lately bought 3000 sheep (Merinos) to stock his Petane Run. Strange (I have often thought) he telling *me* all that, and — — — *some* would say the strange part of the *business* is on *my side!*—

I was *grieved* this week to find poor Mick Boylan bring up F.E. Hamlin for an old debt, over £60., & H. *pleaded* Stat. Limitn.!! H.R.R. lost *both* his trials w. his Brickmaker (in spite of *Rees'* oratory) & serve him right! I hear the law costs were ever £50.

The telegrams give us *sad* news *re* the poor Turks: which I am sorry for. One *good* telegram which *pleased* me, was Bradlaugh & Mrs. Besant gaining their cause at Court of Appeal: I partly expected that. And this reminds me of *your* note, (on my asking you to get me a copy of his Book,)—"B's. book I have not seen, much was said & written against it".—Exactly so: & therefore I wished to see it. Were you not in *London* I would not have thought of asking *you* to get it for me; but in L., you or I might buy anything—a man's skull, if you will,—& no one knows you, or cares to know you. Some of your last Papers were excellent,—good sound reading, in articles (D.T.) & the judgments & sayings of the Judges,—who act (too often) like the Monkey & the Cat's Cheese! I amused both Cotterill & Lascelles w. that of the 6–7 successive Mortgages, & V.C. Hall.—

Parkin, I am sorry to say, is not yet gone to Wairoa,—the bar has been again closed, so at Mohaka & Porangahau, & the steamers shut in prisoners; but they are all out again. *Our Bar* is said to be much deeper.—I see they have put up 2 public seats, w. backs, & on a flat stone platform, on Beach; 1, near W. end of Sup. Ct. Ho. & 1, between sd. Ct. Ho. & *your* old office. A very good & substantial stone fence, dressed face, & several feet high, is putting up around the R. Cath. School ground: the Duck pool in front of Morley's is filled in—nicely. Cohen (Jew) is going in for a Hotel, corner of Sale & Munroe Streets—*opposite* my Sn. A warrant out against *Dr. Dale* for deserting wife &

daughter at Oamaru. Allanach, *Senr.*, is just dead—Friberg, too.

And that is about all my *news*!

Now to your Business remarks *re* Black, & sn. at Wairoa. It is right that we should speak “plainly” (as you say) in these matters, but, I confess, I don’t understand *you*! However I shall say little about it: if Black offers *more*, which I will try to get him to do, I will let you know. What I meant, in mine to you, was *of course*, your selling price: whoever before heard of such a thing,—as sections to be offered for sale, & no price fixed! and the owner the *other* side of the globe!! And even now, in reply, & refusing B’s offer, you have *not* given any price—or any *clue*!!—

I believe (from Grubb) that he got in reply, from Wairoa, that there was an error, overcharge, as to *your rates*. But Mr. G. has been (like myself) very busy of late, so that I have only just seen him: & he is too tired (not being *over strong*) to come *this way*—of an evening, being so far in the wrong direction. Holder’s 2nd. foreman is now leaving him! & that to set up in *opposition*!! see Advt.

Should those Books (Lin. Soc.) be *all right* & you (or D. & Co.) have *not* made any arrangements about sending them, hold on a while, or enquire of Wesley, (who *may* have some to send, & then they can come in *one case* but if so, I woud. *rather* it shod. be packed & sent by Dixon,) I am remitting to Wesley by Mail though I fear I shall have no time now to order any thing from him—may by next Mail.

And now, my dr. sr., I must once more wish you & yours *well*—which I do in every way heartily, and with kind regards.

I am, yours very truly,
W. Colenso.

1878 March 24: to Luff⁶⁰²

Tavistock Hotel,
Waipukurau.
Sunday, March 24/78.

A. Luff Esq.,

My dear Sir,

You will not wonder at my being here, neither will you require being told the lat. & long. of this place. You may however wonder at some portion of this letter.

Your long & kind letter of the 30th. Jany. I recd. before I left town, & knowing that I could not return in time, I brought it with me. First (as you rightly say) to *business* though unprofitable to *you*! I have to thank you for all you have done *re* Linn. Socys. pubs., but I must allow all to stand over until next mail (for many reasons). I have also had a letter from Dixon & Co., of which more anon,—I cannot reply by this mail. I wrote to Wesley, (Essex Street, Strand) by last mail, remitting him £20 (£15 bal. & £5 to credit). I had then hoped to write more fully by this, but I cannot. I will thank you to let him know from me, that if he has *not* sent the books I ordered (Perowne on the Psalms)

not to do so until he again hears from me, as *all* books may shortly be sent off together, & so save expenses. If, however, he has sent me that work (as I had requested) all right.

Now I have a bit of news *re* myself: in my last I told you of my *increased* salary—now I have *none*! having resigned my office. I have been treated ill by my old acquaintance & professed “friends”, (Rhodes, Ormond & Lee,)—as the Board, (acting at a sub-meeting & in the absence of Chambers a Newton) & as it was the 3rd. time within a few weeks & directly against my official letter to them of Feby., and opposed to all principle—I saw I had no alternative, acting honourably. O. & others have since tried hard w. me to withdraw my Resign. but I can’t do it, the B, too making no concession. Of course I shall *feel* the loss of £300 per annum & also the faces of the many dear children, & shall (for a time) be more lonely than ever. Were I in N. I cd. tell you a deal, which I cannot here; possibly I may write to you more anent this by the next Mail. I would it had happened *last year*, then, I, too, might have *migrated*!

I put up a *few* papers for you before I left town, & I now add 2 more from this place. In one of the Auckd. papers I send you will find my letter defending Bp. W. & *his Dicty*.⁶⁰³ I should tell you that our two Town papers (under the infl. of the Board) are trying quietly to keep down or out the pretty general feeling respecting me. I recd. a very *nice* letter from Reardon before I left Town, begging me to reconsider or withdraw my Resign. and now I see (in D.T. of last evg.) that *he* has resigned *his* office:—can he be thinking of *mine*? (A little bird (in authority) told me that Carlile had long sought it! asked for it!!) I had nearly 20 applications for the sitn. of servants: I have chosen a man & his wife named *Arnold*, been here about 5 years; man was w. Witty (who highly recommends him) wife was w. Johnston, Baker, who highly recommends her: for last 12-15 months both have lived w. Lascelles, whom they leave to come to W.C.

Gollan, Wellwood, W. Marshall—all gone! & it is whispered J. Chambers is going too. I have not been attending to my own business of late, being far too busy; soon I suppose I shall have more time for mine & *thine*. After this month something will have to be done w. Sladen, A. Mackay, P.D., & *others*. (L. & I. are waiting).

I told Fannin (I knew he wd. tell Ormond) that I had held 2 fair offices under Govt., Treasr. & Inspector; & lost *Both* at a moment’s warning (or without any,)—through my pol. friends (!) & neighbours—McL. & J.D.O.,—and salary too, same. Of course, I shall never take any office again. I would that I had £200 a year *more* than I can (at present) raise. F. is now living in Thomas’ house, I told him a few days ago that I felt sure if he did not *reform* he wd. lose his billets; poor fellow, he felt it & cried bitterly. You (although used to “Returns”) would be astonished at what I have had to execute for both Ed. Board, & Govt. Edn. Department. Had the clause in Edn. Act stood as the (late) Govt. drafted it, viz., Inspectors under Govt. & *not* Boards—I had never resigned.

Did you know Charley Mackey who was Purvis Russell’s gardener? he lately died, after a short illness. I have sent you Newman’s plans—Town & Country lands! I fear a few will be taken in. Note *his* names of Streets.

602 ATL MS-Copy-Micro-0485-4. Letter addressed: “A. Luff Esq., 135 East India Road, Poplar, London”. Endorsed “rec’d. May 14/78.”

603 *New Zealand Herald* 7 March 1878.

Grubb was well when I left; he always *promises* but *never* comes to see me! I miss *your friendly* visits much. I almost fancy the *big* wedding that was to have come off here is knocked on the head. Drover has a large house building for himself. Branch Bank of N.Z. is to be opened here; & a good road is made connecting terrace w. the lower street—just central;—Messrs. Herbert, & Smith giving each one half. I cannot write you any more, I have done this uneasily (in my bedroom on a chest o' drawers). I have enjoyed very good health during this month—though overworked. Last week I walked several miles a day, to-&-fro in 40m. Bush: tomorrow I am off again.

So good-bye; hope you are all quite well. And with kindest regards,

Believe me ever

Yours very truly

W. Colenso.

1878 April 21: to Luff⁶⁰⁴

Napier, N.Z., Easter Day,
1878.

A. Luff Esq.,

My Dear Sir

If I am to write to you at all by this mail, I must do it today—although the M. will not be closed before next Saturday. Your welcome letter of Feby. 27 (w. papers) I recd. here last week and was much pleased to find you had passed through another English winter safely. One thing in particular in your letter vexed me, viz. Witty's not settling w. Moore, as he had promised me he would do: I hope, however he has done so before this, or at all events, will soon; as I see his Wairoa property in the market, and I suppose that is sure to sell. His house on hill is let to the Bp., & his hops are, I bel., a good crop. I have heard nothing new from Black.

My last to you was from Waipukurau, on 24th. March, which I hope may reach you. By that & the few papers I then sent you (and which I got there) you will learn how it was w. me then: at end of March I returned to Napier, having done all that I had set myself to do, working hard every day. I came back then as it was end of quarter and no T. or other creditors, could get any money until I had exd. & made out & certified &c. &c. and, nowadays, all vouchers are scrutinised at Headquarters. I had agreed to remain in off. until 8th. inst., on that account & then the Board asked me—in a nice kind of way—to remain throughout the mo., & to this I have consented. The new Board (9, viz. Ormond, Sidey, W. Russell, F. Sutton, Lee, J. N. Williams, Rechab. Harding, Miss Herbert (!) and Kenrick, the R.M. of Poverty Bay) sits on 1st. May. They will have plenty to do: may they do it rightly! I have been greatly found fault with for resigning & have been asked by many old friends in town and cy. to withdraw my resn. (and in this the teachers & scholars have joined almost to the unmaning of me among them) but I cannot do that. If the new B. asks me to do so, or to remain in off. I suppose I shall consent, but their doing so is doubtful. By this M. I send you several papers—in one of which you will find a

good long "yard" of writing by me—in defence;⁶⁰⁵ I have heard that it has taken mightily & have had several letters thanking me for it. My (one) opponent "Alpha" is out again in reply,—but though Carlile⁶⁰⁶ had intimated he will allow of my "answering",⁶⁰⁷ I shall not do so. My letter did "Alpha" good, as you will see. If you ask who "A" is, I do not know, but I think it is Rees the Auckland lawyer, now resident here and M.H.R. I am not at all anxious about it—I have looked, and do look (in my old-fashioned way) to a higher source.

I have not yet had time to look at any of your papers, save one wh. I opened "The Financier" thinking it was a "P. World" or something of that kind—but when I saw what it was I immy. shut it up:—that & war accounts—I care not, to look at. I never read anything of the war save our short telegrams, these are enough for me. I shall give this paper to Grubb who is in that line.

Fear many taken in—in Arlington purchases: poor old Goodwin among them.

A grand sale of land comes off there (Pov. Bay) next mo. You will see all about it in the papers. Govt. has put high reserve prices on all....

P.D., poor fellow, has had a fortnight w. "my complaint" (as he calls it) viz. lumbago; he says that he "feels old age creeping over him" and he looks so, getting bald & gray. Kinross is just out again, arm all tied up: I saw him 2 days ago. Heard last week of death of Bp. Selwyn! W. Russell is much better. Hamilton R. is going home shortly. You will see paper list of passengers by "Adamant"—the only one I know is Stapleton—whom you may recollect. Whitmore's sn. in Cl. Sq. is filling in & the new Masonic Hall (for the Masons no. 2) is building on the next one (Pocock's)—an ugly building looking down on it from the hill, flattish roof, no windows this side & S. end & boarded close to ground! McVay has a high building (priv. res. self) erecting on part of land you leased to Tuxford;—the new road there is 30 ft. high, with hammered stone front towards sea! I thought on you when there the other day. I stood at the old corner musing!—& also of Brandon's, words (the Bk. N.Z. being torn to pieces to make great alterations to please *new* manager) B. said "Ah! they would do nothing of that kind for me!) and so, would the authorities have made that road there for you? Answer, yourself. I am told that Tuxford sold the small piece between him & the Bank and the other Mall Place where his additional shop stands, for £2000 to the Bank. I notice a good front to the house putting up 2 doors beyond Morrison's, and a house built on that piece of land you sold to Simmons of Te Kopanga, which fills that block. You will notice Joe Rhodes' price to corporation for his 5 ac. stony hill beyond Gaol £500 pr. ac.—what think you of that? Chambers, I find, has given all his land at Tarawera to Giblin his new son-in-law with also additional there wh. Ch. had lately purchd. of some absentee—well, they want Joe Price to take it on lease, to fence all in, cut down bush, lay down to grass & give it up end of 10 years: 1st 2 years £100 per ann., next 3, £300, last £600!! Mackay told L. when he served the Writ on him at Kaikoura that my land was worth at least £1000 (£8 per ac., his lease only has £4).

605 The Inspectorship of Schools. *Hawke's Bay Herald* 9 April 1878.

606 WW Carlile, briefly (1877–8) editor of the *Hawke's Bay Herald*.

607 "Alpha" responded in the *Hawke's Bay Herald* 18 April 1878, and the editor added "The answer to this, if any answer comes, must close the controversy. — Ed. H.B.H."

I have heard sad news of W. Chambers at Poverty—very wild & very immoral!! Some 3–4 children!! a warning to parents as to over strictness (which I have always said)—a sad thorn to them, I fear.... The Harbour works are “finished” and I have not yet seen them!!... The drought has done mischief & I fear may do more: the weather is delightful but no sign of rain. I told them all in March they would not get any rain in April—this being our “Indian Summer”. The stock is suffering dreadfully, Ruataniwha, Patangata, Kaikoura, Waipukurau just dry dust: how they live is a marvel....

My old servants have left, new ones in. I fear I treated them too well. Our H.B.P.I. has met, on my convening. We open in May, but your old friend is again “in for it” & so, I fear it will always be: we have some new members; wanted too. W. Marshall is gone to Australia—thence, perhaps to England.

And now, my dear sir, adieu. May our Heavenly Father ever bless & preserve you & yours, is often the prayer of.

Yours affy.,

W. Colenso.

Easter Tuesday.
April 23rd. night.

By way of a P.S. I add this—at Meanee School today (walking there from McMurray’s) I find Brandon building a large addition to his house, very lofty for a single run of rooms—I counted 17 weather-boards from floor to wall plate & huge windows from top to bottom: Holder has bought more land at Woodville & is nearly always there now superintending.

In Town the other day Lyndon was walking w. a young man. L. asked me if I knew him. I said No. It was T.H. Fitzgerald’s son! not a very fine *looking* yg. man but with much of Tom’s smile.

The other yg. men L. pointed out to me, fine *looking* enough, but *fast* (perhaps): these are 2 young Russells, from Ireland, relations of that Russell for whom Gill bought land at Porangahau. L. says they are going to settle there....

Goodbye

Yours faithfully,

W. Colenso.

1878 September 3: to Hector⁶⁰⁸

Napier, Septr. 3, 1878.

My Dear Sir,

This morning I received your kind long & explanatory letter of 29th. Aug., and I thank you for it—*very much*. All, that you have taken great pains to amass and bring forward therein, is (in the main) quite correct: what is yet *wanting* (those infinitesimal quantities—always however so necessary in your favourite chemical analyses, to make up the 1000,) cannot be supplied by me without *much* hunting-up and writing—which labour I shall spare both myself and you. One remark only will I make (as I see it *is needed* to set yours right), viz.—that our Members for ’77 (69) and

for ’78 (68) have *not* all paid “*both*” subscriptions—those for ’77 did for ’77 (69 x £1.1.0 = £72.9.0) and those for ’78 (68 x £1.1.0 = £71.8.0).—So much for *that*. And now, as to the 5 vols. which we *want*, (and must have from some quarter if to be obtained.)—as I said in my Official letter to Mr. Gore—“*I am prepared to pay for them.*” I think, I really must not write any more on this subject.

But I have 4–5 other matters to write about: & now, that you have so *kindly renewed our (old) correspondence*, I will mention them.—

1. Do you wish to have the papers which have been read here *sent in early*? Such, of course, (some 3–4,) have long been ready.—

2. If my Ms. should be printed, could not I correct the sheets?

3. With one of my Papers there will be an illustration for a plate,—and should it prove to be a *sp. nov.* (you will know), I am quite ready to pay for the lithogd. plate for our *next* vol.—

4. Is it *against* any rule or bye-law of the N.Z.I., to read a Paper (which has been already read at a regular meeting of Members) at any *other* meeting?—say, at the Athenæum, or at meetings in the Country.—A wish has been more than once expressed, to hear my “Ruahine Journey”,—“Traditions of Maoris”, &c.,—so read, but I have refused.

5. I hope to get out a short Paper on some Ferns (*sp. nov.*) for our October meeting: would the *expense* of a plate (dissections, &c.) *be allowed*?—and, Could Mr. Buchanan do it? *If not*, then could you recommend (or employ for me) any *decent* draughtsman in Wellington?

6. I have only just dipped into vol. x. (having been laid up for nearly a fortnight, & only now getting round again.)—and I have been much interested in your *Marine Spider*. I obtained one (in ’36 – ’37) from a similar locality on the islet (Motumaire) off Paihia, Bay Islands,—and I think (speaking from memory) it differs in size, &c., from yours: I believe that I have it still (in spirits) & if I can find it I will send it to you.—

7. I am thinking over the getting out a complete & fully illustrated work (both scientific & popular) on our N.Z. Ferns (all species & vars.),—*at my own expense*: Would you aid me *heartily* w. your influence, & in getting me specimens?—(but this I should not commence until summer).

8. I am considering seriously the resigning my onerous (& unpleasant) office of Hony. Secy. H. B. P. Institute at close of this year. I fear, however, if I do so the Society *may collapse*,—but I cannot help that. However, I won’t do so without again writing to *you*: but what with carelessness *here*, and coldness *there*,—it is more than I, at my age & little ailments & love of quiet, can well bear.—

I may mention,—that in my writing to Mr. Locke *yesterday*, I said to him to *see you* about those 5 vols. (L. being a member and one of our Council): of course, I did *not then* know of this kind and full letter of yours, or I should not have written.—

Hoping this may find you *quite* well, & *not* overpressed w. work (so that I may get a reply) I am

my dear Sir

Yours truly

Wm. Colenso.

P.S. In looking over your letter again this morning, I find one other point I should notice—*viz.* You say, “My last printed report, in which were 68 names including the 5 new members for this year—was too late for this vol. (x) but will appear in the Inst. Report for this year”.—

But, (1) we have *since then* six new members: (2) I got our *annl.* meeting *altered* last time from June to Jany. (so as to agree w. yours)—& in Jany./79 it will be held—when the proper & full List for ’78 will be sent to you:— WC.

1878 September 5: to Hector⁶⁰⁹

Napier
Sept. 5. 1878.

My dear Sir

I wrote to you 2–3 days ago, and I little thought I should have to write to you again so soon,—but I yesterday received a note from an acquaintance of mine, asking me to write to Wellington for parts 1 & 2 of Buchanan’s large Work on N.Z. Grasses, “published price 10/6 ea. and to be had at Col. Museum;”—and so I am again troubling you.

Please direct them to be sent to me early by Mail, carefully put up—perhaps just once folded *the long way*. I will pay you the charges in a P.O.O.—I am, (in haste)

Yours very truly
Wm. Colenso.

?date: to Hector

Wednesday
noon

My dear Sir

I return you the Copy, it has given me much trouble, & after all I have recopied it (*viz.* par. 10)—so as to be as free from error as possible.

The worst is, that by making this agree with Hooker’s *new* work & *new* nomenclature, (and also *your discoveries*,)—very much will have to be altered throughout.—It will have this good effect of *lessening* many of the plants in zones & areas—&, of course, *will be much more correct*, when finished.

I have a note from Thompson which I wish to shew you when I see you.

Yours truly
W. Colenso.

I have given you my time instead of writing to Engd.—I now set about it.

1878 November 20: to Hector⁶¹⁰

Napier, November 20th.
1878.

My Dear Sir

Thanks for your kind note of 12th. received yesterday, and for all the information therein.—

Re the 2 worms: you surprise me in saying, they are *Gondius aquaticus*. I have long known that filiform hair-like species (and have had several specimens), white, in colour, not thicker than a thread and of a uniform thickness throughout, 10–20 in. long: *these* widely differ in *appearance*,—also with Cuvier’s *descript.*, and with plate of *G. aquaticus* in Rees’ *Cyclopædia*:—still, as you say, “they are *males*,” you may be wholly right.

Re the Marine spider;—its habitat, &c. I captured it in 1836–7, at the little islet directly off Paihia (Mission Station) Bay of Islands; there are 3 islets lying off that place, and this is the smallest & central one. I was there in my little boat (fishing or collecting shells), the day was calm & water smooth, and in looking down from the stern, I saw in the deep water (3–6 feet) and tolerably steep rocky bottom, some of those spiders! they moved about, through the water, without difficulty, and seemed as if they each were enveloped in a small bubble of air: I watched them for some time, and I noticed they had holes or crevices in the rock under low-water mark into which they went: indeed, this specimen, I sent to you, I got out of its crevice or home. Not being supplied on that occasion with any proper means of obtaining them, I put it off for a season, and never afterwards found time (*through overmuch work*) to go there again for that purpose. It was meeting with your account of the Marine Spider from Cape Campbell, in vol. x. “*Trans.*”, that brought this one to mind—after 42 years!! and it was just the only small zoological specimen I had ever put up by itself—in a small glass tube. No doubt there are plenty *there* still.

Sturm tells me, that Marine Spiders are also to be found at Waikokopu in this Bay,—N. extremity.—

Apropos of Spiders:—I have a splendid specimen for you, only caught here 3 days ago. I have, however, long known it, (20 years or so,) yet only casually coming on one or two, once in 2–3 years, and then, generally, inside of inverted empty flowerpots in the garden.

In looking over yesterday Rev. O.P. Cambridge’s interesting account of 2 N.Z. spiders, (N.Z.I. “*Trans.*”, vol. vi. p.117,)—which, I confess, I ought to have read *before*,—I think this must be a species of the genus *Macrothele*, as, in certain points, it agrees with *M. Huttonii*, described there by him,—although it is much larger, and is of a different colour, &c, &c.,—but this specimen may prove to be a *fem.* (the fig. in Cambridge’s pl. is that of a *male*,—which is always smaller, &c.,)—*all* the specimens I have ever had of this spider have been quite as large as this one: I will send it to you shortly. I would now at once, but I have been hunting-up a specimen or two of a *most peculiar* black spider I used to find in the earth at the base of the Ruahine: but, at present, I cannot lay my hand on *that travelling bottle*. Of this species I had captured (at various times) several specimens; of which I must have sent some

to England, (and, probably, to the Linn. Socy.,) some 25–30 years ago. This spider is particularly mentioned by me in my Paper (part I.) Ruahine Journey, &c.,—which I lately sent you. I must endeavor to find you specimens of this *most unique* looking fellow.

I have also to thank you for this Part (containing I and II) of Buchanan's "Grasses,"—now to hand. I fear, however, you *have deprived yourself* of it.—You say— "Of course you have a copy yourself": I had *not* until I received this from you. And, allow me to add,—that I did *not* write for one *for myself*,—neither should I have mentioned it but for Mr. Nairn's letter, requesting me to obtain him a copy, as he did not know where to apply (neither did I, correctly). I now enclose a note to the Govt. Printer, which (if *all right*) please pass-on.

I have not yet seen the Maori Chief (*tohunga*) from whom I am to obtain that particular Maori information I require, & mentioned by me in a former letter,—so I still retain that Paper: but I hope to see him *shortly*, when you shall hear from me again.

I am,
my Dear Sir,
Yours truly
W. Colenso.

Do you find *Methylated* Sp. of Wine to answer equally as well as the pure Sp. for specimens? Sp. of W., *here*, is dreadfully *dear*: the *Methyd.* article is *not* so. If you get your Sp. of W. from home by the gallon & *duty free*—could you *spare any for specimens for the museum*.

1878 May 11: to D. Black⁶¹¹

(Copy)

Napier May 11/78

Mr D. Black
Clyde, Wairoa,

Dear Sir, On my return from the Country (from my last round as School Inspector) in the beginning of this month,—I found your letter of 22nd. April here, with many others, awaiting me. I could not however find time to reply to it by last Tuesday's Mail, and I will now try to do so.

With reference to Mr Luff's piece of land there at Wairoa, you say— "it would have been more satisfactory if you had been informed (by me) what difference there was between you."—and so, no doubt, it would, but *I could not* tell you any more: *I do not know* what price Mr Luff has set upon it. I know one thing, that he is a pretty good judge in all such matters, and that he is willing to sell it for what he considers a fair price.

As you say,—there is little chance (now that I am out of office) of my visiting Wairoa, otherwise I would go & look at the Land with you, & give you my opinion upon it,—but, as that cannot be, I would recommend you to make a fair or *good* offer for it, and I will send it to Mr Luff: more than this I cannot say.

I am &c
(signed) W. Colenso

P.S. I can well understand that while you are delaying about it, another may jump in & your chance is *gone*!

W.C.

1878 May 11: to McCulloch⁶¹²

(Copy)

Napier May 11/78

Mr. John McCulloch,
Collector of Rates,

Foxton:—Sir, A short printed notice (without date) addressed to Mr A. Luff, Napier, has been received here in my absence, requesting payment of Rates on property for the year ending 31st. March last, amounting to 7/- (seven shillings).

As a friend of Mr Luff (who is in England,) I have taken out this letter, and now send you enclosed a P.O.O. for the said amount of 7/-,—for which please send me a Receipt.

I think it would have been better (more regular & reasonable) if you had in your notice stated what the said property is,—if Land, its area, where situate, &c., &c. Indeed I am wholly in the dark about it, as your brief formal notice gives no information: but, I suppose it is "all right."

I am, &c

(signed) Wm. Colenso.